

# LIFE IN CHRIST

# RESURRECTION

# OR IMMORTALITY

Subtitled: The Resurrection, Our Only Hope Of Life After Death

William Robert West

Author of "The Rapture And Israel"

"The Wages Of Sin Is Death"

Or Is

"The Wages Of Sin Is Eternal  
Life With Torment In Hell"

An Immortal Soul And The Doctrine Of Hell  
Is There A Soul In You That Will Live After You Are Dead?

Updated 8/2/16  
Over 903,000 downloads

# LIFE IS ONLY IN CHRIST RESURRECTION OR IMMORTALITY

William Robert West

## Foreword

What do you believe about souls? There are many very different doctrines taught in the world today concerning souls that are believed to be in all humans. By most a soul is believed to be something that is wholly apart from the person a soul is in; that a soul is something that is that is believed to be complete in its self without the person; it will live after the person it is in is dead; it is believed that a soul will exist forever without the person; it will never be dead; therefore, a soul cannot be resurrected from the dead. It is believed that a soul must live someplace forever, and it will live either in Heaven or Hell even if there is no resurrection. The doctrine of unconditional immortality of a deathless soul being in a person, and that soul leaving that person at the death of the person makes it impossible for Christ to have give His life to save that soul from death; if a soul had immortality it would already have life and could never not have life; all Christ could do is give it a reward or punish it.

Many believe:

(1). At the death of a saved person a bodiless, deathless soul that had been in a person will fly immediately to Heaven to the very presents of Jesus and God. Many believe souls are looking down on us as they watch over the persons on earth that the souls had been in.

(2). At the death of a lost person, a soul that was in him or her will immediately be carried to Hell where it will forever be alive, suffering and screaming, while it is being eternally tormented by God with no hope that God will ever stop tormenting it.

(3). At the death of most persons that are Catholic, souls that were in them goes immediately to Purgatory where souls will suffer unto souls have suffered enough to pay for the sins of the persons they were in, then these souls will be saved by their own suffering or by money given by others.

(4). In the Abraham's bosom version souls that had been in the saved will go immediately at death to be rewarded in Abraham's bosom, the good side of hades, unto the coming of Christ while souls that were in the lost are tormented in the bad side of hades unto the coming of Christ; after the judgment the souls that were in the lost persons will be endlessly tormented by God in an endless burning Hell.

(5). A view of a soul now believed by some Protestants, called Rephaim, is that after the death of the person, a soul leaves the person and it is a shadowy something that has no substance, it is nothing more than mental thoughts without any kind of substance or body.

(6). Spiritualism: After the death of the person, the spirit becomes a ghost that sometimes haunts the house of the person it was in, it is a ghastly spook that can sometimes be seen at night among the graves and tombstones in a cemetery. According to Spiritualism, some people can and do call them back, but usually only after they are played; these ghosts or spooks roam the earth and are seen by people, and even live in the house with people. The ghost that have left the

persons they were dwelling in can come back, and these ghost can do both good and evil to living persons that still have ghosts (souls) dwelling in them. Many who do not think of themselves as being a Spiritualist and even deny that they are a Spiritualist believe much of the Spiritualist belief; most funerals that I have I have attended the preacher has a soul that had been dwelling in the dead person dwelling in Heaven, and that soul was looking down on the funeral of the dead person it had been freed from; have you ever been to a funeral where the preacher said a soul that had been in the dead person was alive in Hell and looking up from Hell at the person it had been in? **The teaching of souls going to Heaven or Hell at death without a resurrection is from Greek philosophy, and in no way can it be call Christian; it is a complete denial of Christianly.**

(7). The whole person, not a soul that had been in a person, sleeps from death unto the resurrection, the whole person is resurrected and judged, the person is given endless life, or eternal punishment of death.

(8). There are many other beliefs about what a soul is and what a soul can and cannot do, far too many to list here.

Two of the views that are commonly believed about what will happen to souls that leave mankind after death are the subject of this book.

**VIEW ONE:** The belief that there is a "soul" in all persons that W. E. Vine says is nothing but "*the immaterial, invisible part of man,*" ("Vine's Complete Expository Dictionary Of Old And New Testament Words," page 588) and Robert A. Morey says, that after the death of the body a soul will be nothing but "*mental thoughts*" ("Death And The Afterlife," page 79). According to those that believe as Vine does, this nothing but thoughts is the only thing that will have eternal life in Heaven. This immaterial something that is nothing but mental thoughts are all of you that will be in Heaven or Hell; the person (you) will be gone and there will be nothing but a soul that had been in you that is nothing but thoughts, then all of the "you" that you now know anything about will be forever be gone. Most that believe all are persons are born with an immortal "soul" that is dwelling in them have only a vague unclear understanding, or even no idea of what they believe this unknown immaterial something they believe to be in them really is, but "it" (not themselves) is what they believe must be saved, and only "it" will be in Heaven if they save "it," or in Hell if they do not. The belief that everyone has an immaterial something in them and this something, whatever this nothing but "mental thoughts" could be, will live forever and cannot die makes it not possible for death to be the wages of sin. If a person has something in them that is deathless, it would not be subject to the wages of sin, which is death, and this deathless nothing could never ever be destroyed; **this, whatever it is would be, is born with eternal life, and it could never die; therefore, it could not be resurrected from the dead.**

This view has two major divisions.

(1). That there is a "soul" in each person that cannot ever die or be destroyed, but most of these immaterial, nothing but mental thoughts beings God will forever torment after the death of the person. I know of no one that believes there is a soul that is in a person that knows what a soul is. They tell me what a soul is not, but not

what they believe a soul to be; in the many books I have read, the nearest anyone has come is to say that after a soul departs from the person it was in is Vine's definitions that it will be nothing but thoughts without any kind of substance or body.

(2). Universalism: that all mankind has a "soul" that cannot ever die or be destroyed, everyone has this something in them that will live forever, but it will be saved. If it (a immaterial bodiless beings) is not saved by the person it is in this lifetime, then that soul will be saved after death.

**VIEW TWO:** The belief that the you (the person you now are) will put on immortality at the resurrection, and it is you (not just some immaterial something that had been in you) that will live forever in Heaven; **we**, not an immaterial soul, is now in the image of Adam, **we**, not an immaterial soul, will have the image of Christ (1 Corinthians 15:49). The wages of sin is death, and after there resurrection and judgment the lost person will die the second death, they do not now have immortality and never will be immortal; those who do not belong to Christ will forever be destroyed after their judgment.

**Protestant Premillennialists:** Most Protestant Premillennialists believe the lost will be totally destroyed, but there are three Premillennial views that are common in Protestant churches on how or where the lost will be destroyed.

(1). A common Protestant Premillennialists belief is that the destruction of the lost will be on this earth and the saved will forever live on this earth; no person will ever be in Heaven. Many believe the Valley of Gehenna will be restored and the lost will literally be burn to ashes in it.

(2). Some Protestant Premillennialists believe that the saved will be with Christ in Heaven, not on earth after the thousand years, the second death will be the end of the lost, but they are not literally burned to ashes on this earth in the restored Valley of Gehenna.

(3). Some Protestant Premillennialists believe the wages of sin is eternal life with torment for souls that cannot die, which puts them in the camp of those that believe there will be endless life being torment for deathless souls that had been in unsaved persons, they do not believe death is the wages of sin.

If there is either a soul or a spirit in us that is now immortal and it can never die or be dead, how could there be a resurrection of the dead? Do you believe in the resurrection of the dead? If yes, what do you believe will be resurrected; will you be raised from the dead, or do you believe as many that only a soul that they do not believe can ever be dead, but it is the only thing that will be raised from the dead? When I first begin this study I was surprised and made to tremble at how few believed in the resurrection, and how many there are that do not really know what they believe about it. Many believe some deathless something that they believe to be in themselves will instantly be transited from this world to Heaven or Hell at death without a resurrection, before the resurrection, before the Judgment Day, and before the second coming of Christ, but when they are asked what is the reason for the resurrection, they not only do not know, but have never really thought about it. Death is looked at as being a doorway to life in another form, that death is not really death,

and there is nowhere in their thoughts or in their faith for a resurrection for their theology says no one is really dead. The resurrection has been removed from the faith of many by today's theology that says some immortal something that is believed to be in a person will go to Heaven at the moment of death. **But is there any life after death before the second coming of Christ and the resurrection of the dead?** Paul said it will be at the resurrection when, *"This mortal must put on immortality,"* but if there is a soul that is now immortal in us, then what is it that is now mortal that will put on immortality at the resurrection (1 Corinthians 15:53)? It is the mortal person, not a soul that will be raised from the dead, and the mortal person will put on immortality.

**What does the Bible say about an immortal soul and/or spirit?** Together soul and spirit are used about 1,600 times in the Bible, but not one time is immortal ever used in the same verse with either one; "immortal soul," or an "immortal spirit," "deathless or never dying soul or a never dying spirit" is not in the Bible, not even in the King James Version. Immortal and immortality is not in the Old Testament, the promise of immortality is given to no one. In the New Testament, immortal is used only one time, immortality is used five times, all six by Paul. What does he say?

1. *"Now unto the King eternal, immortal"* (1 Timothy 1:17).
2. Only God has immortality (1 Timothy 6:16).
3. Christ *"abolished death and brought life and immortality to light through the gospel"* (2 Timothy 1:10).
4. *"To them (Christians) that...seek for glory and honor and immortality"* (Romans 2:7).
5. *"This mortal must put on immortality"* (1 Corinthians 15:53) at the resurrection.
6. *"This mortal shall have put on immortality"* (1 Corinthians 15:54) after the resurrection. This mortal person must put on immortality, not this soul that is already immortal must put on immortality.

Why are we to *"seek for immortality"* if we are born immortal? Why will we *"put on immortality"* if the only part of us that will ever be immortal has been immortal from birth (or as some believe—before birth)? **The fact that a person must "seek for...immortality" and immortality must be "put on" at the resurrection is conclusive proof that a person does not now have immortality, nor does a person have some immaterial, immortal something in them that cannot die.** If Romans 2:7 and 1 Corinthians 15:53 teaches nothing more, it teaches that no part of a person now possess immortality. **Not one passage in the Bible says anyone is now immortal.** The immortal soul theology is from pagan philosophy, if all have a deathless soul, and we are told that this deathless soul is the only thing that will ever be immortal, and it is already immortal, the resurrection is made to be useless. **The question is, resurrection or immortality? Will you be saved from the dead, or is there a deathless soul in you that cannot be dead, and it cannot be resurrected from the dead, and only that soul, not you, will live in Heaven.**

- \_\_\_\_\_ -

# RESURRECTION AND IMMORTALITY

The Resurrection, Our Only Hope Of Life After Death

Table of Contents

**Chapter one:** The nature of man—what is man?

**Chapter two:** Life or Death

**Chapter three:** The reinterpretations of the great doctrines of the Bible

**Chapter four:** From where came Hell, from man or God?

- Unquenchable fire, weeping, gnashing of teeth
- Old Testament history of Gehenna
- Gehenna used by Christ on four occasions
- The vanishing Hell
- Twenty-nine plus version of Hell
  - Three Catholic versions of Hell
  - Seventeen plus Protestant versions of Hell
  - Eight other versions of Hell

**Chapter five:** Sheol, Hades, and Tartarus

**Chapter six:** The thirty-one Hell passages

**Chapter seven:** A strange and unexplainable silence of the Old Testament on punishment and life after death, life, death, torment, destruction, destroy, perish, die, and end

**Chapter eight:** Figurative language, metaphors, and symbolical passage

- Part one: The rich man
- Part two: The destruction of Israel, Matthew 24
  - A. D. 70 doctrine
  - Day of the Lord
- Part three: The symbolic pictures in Revelation
- Part four: The forever and ever of the King James Version

**Chapter nine:** Universalist: The "age lasting" Hell

**Chapter ten:** The results of attributing evil Pagan teachings to God

**Chapter eleven:** Historical proof of the changing of the teaching of the Bible

**Appendix one**

---

## CHAPTER ONE

### What Is Man?

What is a man? Are all persons born with immortal souls in them, or do only the saved put on immortality at the resurrection? Is a person a three part being, an animal body with both a soul and a spirit that will live after the body is dead? This is one of the most important questions of all time. It has more influence on our conception of our nature, our view of life in this world, and our view of life after death than any other question.

**Soul in the Old Testament is translated from nehpesh**, Strong's Hebrew word #5315—"a breathing creature" A study of the way it is translated in the King James Version, and how other translations differ greatly from the King James reveals facts that are far different than the belief of most about what a soul is, and

facts that many will find upsetting. Nehphesh is used in the Old Testament about 870 times and is translated soul only about 473 times in the King James Version, but in the New International Version (2010 updated version) only 72 out about 870 times it is used.

Of the 870 times Nehphesh is in the Bible, in the New International Version:

- Nehphesh is translated soul only 72 times.
- Nehphesh is not translated soul 798 times.

Of the 473 times nehphesh is translated “soul” in the King James Version, it was removed 401 times in the New International Version.

**Nehphesh is translated in the King James Version into about 40 words; one Hebrew word is translated (or mistranslated) into nouns, pronouns, verbs, adjectives, adverbs, etc.** Of 870 times nehphesh is used in the Hebrew it was changed into many words by the translators of many versions changed as they chose to, and all choosing many times to translate it difference even in the same passage. By today’s meaning of “soul” and “life” they means two completely difference things; “soul” and “life” are not synonymous.

In the King James Version Nehphesh is translated:

1. **Soul** about 473 times
2. **Life** about 122 times
3. **Person** about 26 times
4. **Mind** about 15 times
5. **Heart** about 15 times
6. **Personal pronouns** 44 plus times—yourselves, themselves, her, me, he, his, himself
7. **All others**, (verbs, adjectives, adverbs, etc.) about 200 times—man, creature, living being, fish, own, any, living thing, living creatures, lives, the dead, dead body, kills, slays, slay him, mortally, discontented, ghost, breath, will, appetite, hearty desire, desire, pleasure, lust, and deadly. Can any word have this many totally difference meaning; can one word be a noun, pronoun, verb, adjective, adverb, etc.? If it did could anyone know which one was being used; it is evidence that the translators of the many translations did not.

**In all 870 times that nehphesh is used it is always associated with the activity of a living being, including dying, and it never implies anything about life after the death of the living being.** In none of the 870 times, nehphesh is not an immortal, immaterial, inter something in a person that has no substance; souls (nehpheshs) are the living beings (persons, animals, or any living thing) that can die, be killed, or is already dead; **although it’s use is often hid from the English readers by the way it was translated or mistranslated.**

**Soul (nehphesh) as it is used in the Bible.**

(1) Genesis 1:20 *"The moving creature that has **life**"* (nehpheshs—mortal beings, used referring to **animals**, Strong’s Hebrew word #5315—“a breathing creature”). Footnote in the King James Version—*"The moving creature that has **soul**."* American Standard Version—*"Let the waters swarm with swarms of **living creatures**"* (nehpheshs—mortal beings).

If "soul" were an immortal *"immaterial, invisible part of man"* (W. E. Vine, Expository Dictionary Of Old And New Testament Words), why is this Hebrew word that is translated soul also translated *"living creature"* when it is speaking of animals in Genesis 1:21; 1:24; 2:19; 9:10; 9:12; 9:15; 9:16 when the same Hebrew word (nehphesh) is translated *"living soul"* in Genesis 2:7 when it is speaking of a person? According to those that believe there is an immortal soul in a person a *"living Creature"* and a *"living soul"* are two completely difference beings. If this Hebrew word (nehphesh) were an immaterial, immortal living something that is in a person, it would also be an immaterial, immortal living something that is in animals.

(2) Genesis 1:21 **"living creature"** (nehpheshs—mortal beings, used referring to **all life in the water**), *"And God created the great sea—monsters, and every living creature (nehpheshs—mortal beings) that moves wherewith the water swarmed."*

(3) Genesis 1:24 **"living creature"** (nehpheshs—mortal beings), used referring to **animals, all life on the land**), *"And God said, Let the earth bring forth living creatures (soul—nehphesh) after their kind, cattle, and creeping things, and beasts of the earth."* In Genesis 1:21—24 every living thing on earth, whether in the water or on land, every thing that has life is a nehphesh, a living being.

- All sea life are nehpheshs, are living beings
- All land life are nehpheshs, are living beings
- And mankind are nehpheshs, are living beings

None of the three are inherent indestructible immortality beings; none have an immortal deathless "soul" dwelling in them.

(4) Genesis 1:30 **"life"** (nehpheshs—mortal beings, used referring to **animals**), *"And to every beast of the earth, and to every bird of the heavens, and to everything that creeps upon the earth, wherein there is life" (nehpheshs—mortal beings); animals are "a living soul."*

**All four times that soul (nehphesh) is used in Genesis one it is used referring to animals** Strong's Hebrew word #5315 "a breathing creature, i. e., animal." **Not to a person. Animals were souls, living beings, before any man existed; why did the translators deliberately hide the fact that it is the same word that they sometimes translated soul?**

- **They translated it souls when it is speaking of people.**
- **They translated it living creatures when the same word is speaking of animals.** How could the translators possibly know when the same word is speaking of mortal being and when it is speaking of immortal being? Just as "up" cannot mean "down," "Mortal" cannot mean "Immortal."
- Although it is clear that the translators attempted to hide this from their readers, every breathing creature has the same "soul" (nehphesh) that persons have.

*"Then God said, 'Let the waters teem with swarms of living souls (nehpheshs—mortal beings), and let birds fly above the earth in the open expanse of the heavens.'* **And God created the great sea monsters, and every living soul (nehphesh—mortal**

beings) that moves, with which the waters swarmed after their kind, and every winged bird after its kind; and God saw that it was good. And God blessed them, saying, 'Be fruitful and multiply, and fill the waters in the seas, and let birds multiply on the earth.' And there was evening and there was morning, a fifth day. Then God said, 'Let the earth bring forth **living souls** (nehpheshs—mortal beings) after their kind: cattle and creeping thing and beasts of the earth after their kind'; and it was so...and to every beast of the earth, and to every fowl of the air, and to everything that creeps upon the earth, wherein there is **life** (nehpheshs—mortal beings) I have given every green herb for meat" (Genesis 1:20-30). **"Living creatures"** (nehpheshs—mortal beings) is used to describe all living things on earth, people, animals, birds, and fish, not some immaterial invisible living something that is in a person that is now eternal. If a person being a soul (nehphesh—a living being) makes that person be either immortal or in the image of God, then it makes animals, birds, and fish have an immortal soul in them, and would make them also be in the image of God.

HENRY CONSTABLE, A. M.: "The Hebrew scholar knows that when Moses, in Genesis I. 20, 29, speaks of the nature of the lower order of animals, and when in Genesis ii, 7, he speaks of the nature of man, *the inspired writer used the very same Hebrew terms of both one and the other.* Each fish, and fowl, and creeping thing, and beast is called in the Hebrew a *nephesh chajah* as much as man who was given the rule over them. **But this was in its apparent bearing wholly inconsistent with the philosophical ideas of the translators. They considered it dangerous that the similarity of description should appear in the English version, which Moses did not consider it dangerous to exhibit in the Hebrew original. Hence they must guard God's Word from its supposed dangerous language by translating *nephesh chajah* very differently in the first chapter of Genesis, where it is applied to the lower creatures, from what they translated it in the second chapter, where it is applied to man...A gross, through unintentional fraud has been committed against the English reader. He is misled in his searching of the Scriptures He is put on a false scent...Our English translators have supplied us with a commentary of their own instead of a translation, a comment we will here add, utterly alien to truth. But the result of this mistranslation is to lead astray the English reader who trusts in it.** This is not the only instance, which occurs of the thing in reference to this question. The same Hebrew word is throughout the Old Testament translated according as the Platonic notions of the translator led him to think it ought to be translated. Plato had a considerable hand in the translation of King James' Bible. The Hebrew word *nephesh* is translated 'creature,' 'soul' 'life' &c., just as squared with the notions of men who carried Plato's philosophy into their noble work of the translation of Scripture. We affirm that a grave injury has been done to the English reader, and a gross wrong to God's word," Page 31—32, "Hades or The Intermediate State of Man," 1873, public domain.

(5) Genesis 2:7 **"A living soul"** (nehphesh—a living being, used referring to a person, Strong's Hebrew word #5315—"a breathing creature") **The first time the King James Version translated nephesh into "soul," most other translations did not agree with it, not even the New King James Version. "Man became a living being," Genesis 2:7, New King James Version.**

- **"A living creature"** (nehphesh—a mortal being) Genesis 1:20
- **"A living creature"** (nehphesh—a mortal being) Genesis 1:21
- **"A living creature"** (nehphesh—a mortal being) Genesis 1:24
- **"Wherein there is life"** (nehphesh—a mortal being) Genesis 1:30
- **"A living soul"** (nehphesh—a mortal being) Genesis 2:7
  - **"Man became a living being"** New King James Version

It is obvious that the translators of the King James Version translated according to a preconceived opinion in an attempt make persons have an immortal soul dwelling in them, but keeps animals from also having souls that are dwelling in them; they made a distinction in animals and men, a distinction that dose not exist in the Hebrew Bible.

Genesis 2:7 Man became:

- **"A living soul"** King James Version.
- **"A living being"** New King James Version, American Standard Version, New American Standard Version, Revised Standard Version, New Revised Standard Version, New International Version, Amplified Version, The New American Bible.
- **"A living person"** New Century Version, The Living Bible, New Living Translation
- **"A living creature"** The Revised English Bible, Young's Literal Translation.
- **"Life"** Contemporary English Version
  - Of these many translations, none would go along with the mistranslation of the King James Version, not even the New King James Version.

According to Genesis chapter one to three man was created a mortal living being just as the animals were. *"Behold, **the MAN**...lest **HE** stretch out **HIS** hand, and take also from the tree of life, and eat, and live forever, therefore the Lord sent **HIM** out from the garden of Eden"* (Genesis 3:22-23) is speaking of the physical person eating of the tree of life and living forever physically, it says nothing about an immortal something that was dwelling in the mortal person, nothing about a soul eating that was already deathless, nothing about a soul that was already immortal without eating of the tree of life eating of the tree of life and living forever. It was the physical person (Adam) that would have eaten from a physical tree, and the physical person (Adam) that would have physically lived forever; without the tree of life Adam was not immortal, without the tree of life Adam died.

### **THREE THINGS ABOUT "MAN" IN GENESIS 2:7.**

- First, the body: God formed man's body out of dust. *"God formed **MAN** out of the dust of the earth."*
- Second: God *"breathed into **HIS** nostrils the breath of life."*
  - God breathing into the nostrils of the lifeless body give the body life; breathing into the nostrils of the lifeless body did not put a soul into the lifeless body and the soul give the body life.
- Third: *"**MAN** became a living being (nehphesh)."*
  - **MAN AND ANIMALS ARE BOTH MADE OF THE DUST OF THE EARTH.** Both man and animals are a nehphesh, a living being; both man

and animals have *“the breath of life.”* Neither one became a living being with another living being living in them. There is absolutely nothing about Plato’s immortal soul in this passage, not one word.

- Job said, *“The breath of the Almighty gives **ME** life,”* (Job 33:4); he did not say, *“The breath of the Almighty put a soul in me.”*

Paul quoted Genesis 2:7 showing that the *“natural body”* of Genesis 2:7 that was given to Adam and all mankind is not the *“spiritual body”* that will be given only to the saved by Christ at the resurrection. *“So also it is written, The first **man Adam became a living soul.** The last Adam became **a life—giving spirit.** Howbeit that is not first which is spiritual, but that which is natural; **THEN** that which is spiritual. The first man is of the earth, earthy: the second man is of heaven. As is the earthy, such are they also that are earthy: and as is the heavenly, such are they also that are heavenly. **As we have born the image of the earthly, we SHALL also bear the image of the heavenly”** (1 Corinthians 15:45-49).*

*“In the day that YOU eat from it YOU shall surely die”* (Genesis 2:17); for Adam to be told he would die is very different from Adam being told that he would not die, but he (Adam the person) would live forever in torment. **In Genesis 3:19 there is a clear statement on what dies,** *“By the sweat of YOUR face YOU shall eat bread, till YOU return to the ground, because from it YOU were taken; for YOU are dust, and to dust YOU shall return,”* (Also Genesis 18:27; Psalms 103:14; Job10:9). *“It is appointed for MEN to die once and after this comes judgment”* (Hebrews 9:27). It is the PERSON that will die, the PERSON that returns to dust, and the PERSON that will be resurrected from the dead, the person that will put on immortality, not a soul that cannot die; therefore, it could not be resurrected from the dead.

If, as some teach, Adam was not one being, but two being, an earthly mortal being and an immortal being living in the earthly mortal being, which of the two being was addressed in the singular pronoun *“YOU shall surely die”*? We are repeatedly told that an immortal soul is deathless.

- It was Adam that was made from the dust.
- It was Adam that ate.
- It was Adam that was told, *“dying YOU shall die.”*
- It was Adam that was put out and kept out of the garden away from the tree of life.
- It was Adam that died and returned to dust.

Not one word is said about a soul. If there were an immortal soul living in Adam, it suffered nothing from what Adam did. To make this be *“spiritual death,”* not real death is to change, *“In the day that you eat from it YOU shall surely die”* to be saying, *“In the day you eat you will be an immortal sinner that cannot die.”*

DR. BERT THOMPSON, PH. D. says Genesis 2:7 is teaching that Adam was given *“physical life.”* Then said it is not teaching that Adam had instilled in him *“an immortal nature.”* *“The Origin, Nature, and Destiny of the Soul,”* page 19, Apologetics Press, Inc. 2001, church of Christ.

MIKE WILLIS said expositors have generally appealed to Genesis 2:7 to prove that all men are born with and now have immortal spirits. However, in 1 Corinthians 15:45, Paul has clearly expounded the meaning of the Hebrew words *nephesh*, *chayyah*. "*The living soul*" of Genesis 2:7 is the natural body of this passage. He said this corresponds with the book of Genesis itself because the same construction is used in Genesis 1:24 to describe animals. When Moses recorded that God breathed into man's nostrils the breath of life and he became a living soul, what the writer of Genesis was saying was that the dust of the earth began to have animal life and does not prove that a person has an immortal spirit (soul); rather it states that a person has animal life. All men possess animal life through Adam. A Commentary On Paul's First Epistle To the Corinthians, page 578, 1979. For one who knows the Bible as he does, and believes a person now has an immortal soul, yet says, the living soul of Genesis 2:7 is the natural body, proves beyond doubt that a living soul is not an immortal something that is in of a person. "*The first man Adam became a living soul...the first man is of the earth, earthy*" (1 Corinthians 15:45-49).

GUY N. WOODS said the first time the word soul is used in Genesis 1:20 it is from the Hebrew *nephesh* where it is assigned to fish, birds, and creeping things. He said it is clear that the soul in these passages does not refer to anything peculiar to the constitution of man, but it signifies, as its usage denotes, and the lexicons affirm, any creature that breathes. "What Is The Soul Of Man," Gospel Advocate, 1985, Number 21.

JOHN T. WILLIS: "The last two lines of verse 7 affirm that man's life is God Given. God enables man to breathe, and thus to be alive, as he does all other creatures (see Gen. 7:22). Some have tried to justify a threefold division of man into flesh (or body), soul, and spirit from Genesis 2:7. They equate **dust** with flesh or body, **breath** with spirit, and insist that the last phrase of the verse must be translated as 'a living soul.' However, this understanding reads much more into the biblical text than it really says. (1) The Hebrew words for 'flesh' or 'body' and 'spirit' do not occur in this passage. (2) The Hebrew expression *nephesh chayyah*, which some insist on translating 'a living soul,' is used of fish and marine life in Genesis 1:20, 21; land animals in 1:24; beasts, birds, and reptiles in 1:30; and beasts and birds in 2:19. If 'soul' means the eternal part of man or the sum total of man's 'body' and 'spirit' in Genesis 2:7, it must mean the eternal part of a fish or the sum total of a fish's 'body' and 'spirit' in Genesis 1:20, 21; etc. (3) The flow of the context in Genesis 2:7 indicates that the word translated **being** in the RSV (*nephesh*) means the whole person. The author's emphasis is on the gift of life." The Living Word Commentary, "Genesis," page 103—104, 1979, Sweet Publishing Company.

ADAM CLARKE: "*Nephesh chayyah*; a general term to express all creatures endowed with animal life, in any of its infinitely varied gradations, from the half reasoning elephant down to the stupid potto, or lower still, to the polype, which seems equally to share the vegetable and animal life."

## **(2) MAN AND ANIMALS HAD THE BREATH OF LIFE (NSHAHMAH) BREATHED INTO THEM.**

- "*Breathed into his nostrils the **breath of life** (nshahmah)*" man (Genesis 2:7).
- "*And all flesh that moved on the earth perished, birds and cattle and beasts and every swarming that the swarms upon the earth, and all mankind; of all that as on the dry land, all in whose nostrils was the **breath of life** (nshahmah) died.*" Both man and animals have the same "**breath of life** (nshahmah)" both died (Genesis 7:21-22).
- "*Saved alive nothing that **breaths** (nshahmah—breath of life)*" both men and animals (Deuteronomy 20:16). "*Breath of life*" and "*breaths*" are the same in the Hebrew, both are

translated from “*nshahmah*,” but who knows why the translators choose to make them different in the English Bible.

- “*Utterly destroyed all that **breaths** (nshahmah—breath of life)*” both men and animals (Joshua 10:40).
- “*There was not any left to **breaths** (nshahmah—breath of life)*” both men and animals (Joshua 11:11).
- “*Neither left they any to **breaths** (nshahmah—breath of life)*” both men and animals (Joshua 11:14).
  - Does an immortal immaterial deathless soul, or a spirit breathe or die when breathing stops?
- “*And the breath (nshahmah) of the Almighty gives me life*” (Job 33:4).

It is the breath (*nshahmah*) of life that God puts into the body that gives life (Genesis 2:7); (*nshahmah*—breath) is not an immortal deathless soul that has an endless life of its own. If the breath of life (*nshahmah*) gives immortality to a person, then the same breath of life (*nshahmah*) would give immortality to all living being, all are given the same *nshahmah*. The “breath of life” is as much the possession of all living creatures as it is the possession of man. The “breath of life” does not make any living creature immortal, not animals, not fish, or persons. All living being depend on this breath from God for life and all die when the “breath of life” from God returns to God, and if there were no resurrection no person would ever again have life.

Question: What effect did the “*breath of life*” (*nshahmah*) in the nostrils of animals have on them? Most all would answer that it made them a living being, not that it put an immortal deathless soul in them that will live after the death of the animals. Then what effect did the same “*breath of life*” (*nshahmah*) have on mankind? It made them a living being just as it did animals; the “*breath of life*” (*nshahmah*) did not put an immortal deathless soul in mankind that the same “*breath of life*” (*nshahmah*) did not put in animals.

JAMES HERMAN WHITMORE: “What is more evident than anything else is that the Lord did not address an unconscious *body*, but a conscious and intelligent *man*. Whoever or whatever was addressed, *the same died*. According to the popular notion, the soul is the only part of man that possesses intelligence. The conclusion then is unavoidable, that it was the ‘soul’ that was addressed as ‘thou,’ and sentenced to return to dust. Hence, the soul must not only be *mortal*, but *material*. It is further evident that whatever or whoever sinned, the same died.” “The Doctrine Of Immortality,” page 118, Kellaway and Co.

**THE BREATH OF LIFE:** Many have now switched from a soul being an immortal living being in a person to a spirit being the immortal living being that is in a person; a living being that animals do not have in them; “spirit” is now the same thing that “soul” has been for hundreds of years. “*Then the Lord God formed man of dust from the ground, and breathe into his nostrils the **breath of life**; and man became a living being.*” The phrase “*breath of life*” that was breathed into man in Genesis 2:7 is the same Hebrew “*breath of life*” in Genesis 7:21-22 that is in the nostrils of birds, cattle, men and beasts; the “*breath of life*” in animals it is the same “*breath of life*” that is in

persons. The “*breath of life*” (1) is not an immortal spirit, (2) is not an immortal soul that men **now** have in them that animals do not have it in them; it does not say that the “*breath of life*” God breathed into Adam was an immortal deathless spirit, or an immortal deathless soul breathed into him, and it does not say all persons now have the same deathless something in them; the breathless body that God made from the earth is what became a living breathing being when the “*breath of life*” was breathed into the breathless body. God did not tell Adam he had a body that was made from the earth, but the real Adam was made of something not from the earth.

**(3) MAN AND ANIMALS BECAME “A LIVING BEING.” The body of dust plus the breath of life = a living being—soul** (a living being—nehphesh), Genesis 2:7.

1. The body: “*The Lord God formed man of the dust from the ground.*”
2. The life of the body: “*And breathed into his nostrils the breath of life.*”
3. The result: “*And man became a living being.*” The lifeless earthly body became alive.
  - Both man and animals became “*a living being,*” when they received the “*breath of life*” from God; neither man nor animals had another living being put into them.
  - “*You take away **their** breath, **they** die*” (Psalms 104:29). The breath of life gives life to the person; it does not put a soul in the person that has the breath of life. The breath of life that God breathed into the body gives life to the body, whither it is a person or animal; it makes the person or animal be “*a living being.*” There is life in the body only as long as there is breath in the body.
  - It was the lifeless body that God made from the earth that became a living being, a living person. Most see as Plato did, that a living deathless soul is imprisoned in the body unto the living soul is able to escape the body, and then the lifeless body goes back to the earth.

Although this passage is repeatedly used to prove that an immortal, deathless soul that was put in a person that was not put in animals, most translations, other than the King James, apply it to the living breathing being or person, not to an invisible, deathless, immaterial something that was put in a person. Adam being spoken of as a “*living being*” (nehphesh Strong’s Hebrew word #5315—“a breathing creature”) proves he was mortal, not immortal, just as all “*living beings*” (nehphesh) fish, birds, animals, are mortal, not immortal. How can this be one of the most used proof texts used to prove Adam was made with an immortal soul? If it proves Adam had an immortal soul, then it proves that fish have an immortal soul that cannot die.

“*The body without the spirit is dead*” James 2:36. Just as the body when God made it had no life unto God “*breathed into his nostrils the breath of life and the man became a living being*” (Genesis 2:7), when “*The dust will return to the earth as it was, and the spirit will return to God who gave it*” (Ecclesiastes 12:7), there is no living being and will not be unto the resurrection when life will again come from God; “soul” with the meaning it has today (the Greek immortal being that is in a person) is a total mistranslation. If the “*breath of life*” that returns to God is a conscious being that returns to God at the death of the person, that soul could not return to God if it had not previously existed with God.

Both “*a living being*” and “*breath of life*” are used by most that call themselves orthodox to prove mankind has an immortal soul that no animal has. Both mankind and all animals are “*a living being*” and both have the “*breath of life*,” but both can and do die. Having the “*breath of life*” does not make mankind or animals immortal.

**It is importance to understand that it is being said by Moses that both animals and mankind ARE A SOUL (are a living being), not that animals or mankind HAVE A SOUL, did not have something in them that is immortal, invisible, a no substitute something in them that cannot die; there is a world of different in a person or animal being a soul, and an immortal soul being that was put into a person. Many assume, with much help from the translators and theology that Genesis is saying only mankind has souls, but animals do not. Because of what most have been taught, without realizing it they read into this that only mankind has a soul that is an immortal, invisible, no substitutes something that cannot die.** This causes them to believe that only this immortal something that is in them, whatever they think it is, will be saved (more on this at the end of this chapter). A soul is not a second being, an unearthly being that exist within the earthly person any more than a soul is a second entity existing in beast. **Both man and animals are souls, living beings. We are a soul, not have a soul.** If we have a soul, have a living being in us, then we are one living being with another, a second living being living in us. According to the doctrine that we have a soul living in us, a living being is living in another living being, and it is only this immortal deathless being that is us that will be saved, or will be tormented forever is the foundation of many of the errors that have divided the churches. That *we are a soul* (we are a living being), not *we have a soul* (not have a living being living in us) is one of the most fundamental and most misunderstood teaching in the Bible.

(6) Genesis 2:19 “**living creature**” (nehpheshs—mortal beings, used referring to **animals**), “*Every beast...every bird...whatsoever the man called every living creature* (nehpheshs—mortal beings), *that was the name thereof*”

(7) Genesis 9:4 “**life**” (nehpheshs—mortal beings, used referring to **animals**)

(8) Genesis 9:5 “**lives**” (nehpheshs—mortal beings, used referring to man)

(9) Genesis 9:5 “**life**” (nehpheshs—mortal beings, used referring to man)

(10) Genesis 9:10 “**living creature**” (nehpheshs—mortal beings, used referring to **animals**)

(11) Genesis 9:12 “**living creature**” (nehpheshs—mortal beings, used referring to **animals**)

(12) Genesis 9:15 “**living creature**” (nehpheshs—mortal beings, used referring to man and **animals**)

(13) Genesis 9:16 “**living creature**” (nehpheshs—mortal beings, used referring to man and **animals**)

---

A bird's eye view of the translation of nehphesh in the first nine chapters

1. "Moving creature that has **life**" (nehphesh) Genesis 1:20 – **animals**
2. "A **living creature**" (nehphesh) Genesis 1:21 – **animals**
3. "A **living creature**" (nehphesh) Genesis 1:24 – **animals**
4. "Wherein there is **life**" (nehphesh) Genesis 1:30 – **animals**
5. "A **living soul**" (nehphesh) Genesis 2:7 – man
6. "A **living creature**" (nehphesh) Genesis 2:19 – **animals**
7. "**Life**" (nehphesh) Genesis 9:4 – **animals**
8. "**Lives**" (nehphesh) Genesis 9:5 – man
9. "**Life**" (nehphesh) Genesis 9:5 – man
10. "**Living creature**" (nehphesh) Genesis 9:10 – **animals**
11. "**Living creature**" (nehphesh) Genesis 9:12 – **animals**
12. "**Living creature**" (nehphesh) Genesis 9:15 – man and **animals**
13. "**Living creature**" (nehphesh) Genesis 9:16 – man and **animals**

This is an example of men attempting to cover up the truth when it is contradictory to their pagan theology. It takes a lot of preconceived theology to make nehphesh be an immaterial invisible no substance soul existing in a man that is now immortal that is not in animals when it is not deliberately hid as it is in the King James Version. Moses applies nehphesh four times to lower creatures before he applied it to man, then immediately after he has applied it to man he again applied the same word to animals a fifth and sixth time with no hint that he uses the same word with a different meaning. When the translators give it a different meaning in only one of the six times it is used in the first two chapters of Genesis it is nothing more than a deliberate change to add Plato's immortal soul to God word.

---

**In Genesis 9:4-16 the same word is used for both man and animals seven times in the same passage.** To animals five times, to man four times, none of the seven was translated "soul."

- **Three times to animals alone**, translated (1) life, (2) creature, and (3) creature.
- **Two times to animals and man together**, translated (1) creature, and (2) creature.
- **Two times to man alone**, translated (1) lives, and (2) life.

*"But flesh with the **LIFE** (#1. **Nehphesh** used referring to **animals**) thereof, which is the blood thereof, shall you not eat. And surely your blood, the blood of your **LIVES** (#2. **nehphesh**, used referring to man), will I require; at the hand of every beast will I require it: and at the hand of men, even at the hand of every man's brother, will I require the **LIFE** (#3. **nehphesh**, used referring to man) of man. Whoso sheds man's blood, by man shall his blood be shed, for in the image of God made He-men. And you, be you fruitful, and multiply; bring forth abundantly in the earth, and multiply therein. And God spoke unto Noah, and to his sons with him, saying, and I, behold, I establish my covenant with you and with your seed after you; and every **LIVING CREATURE** (#4. **nehphesh**, used referring to **animals**) that is with you, of the fowl, and the cattle, and of every beast of the earth with you; from all that go out of the ark, to every beast of the earth. And I will establish my covenant with you; neither shall the waters of a flood cut off all flesh be any more; neither shall there any more be a flood to destroy the earth. And God said, This is the token of the covenant which I make between me and you and every **LIVING CREATURE** (#5. **nehphesh**, used*

referring to **animals**) *that is with you, for perpetual generation: I do set my bow in the cloud, and it shall be a token of a covenant between me and the earth. And it shall come to pass, when I bring a cloud over the earth, that the bow shall be seen in the cloud: and I will remember my covenant, which is between me and you and every **LIVING CREATURE** (#6. **nehphesh**, used referring to man and **animals**) of all flesh; and the waters shall no more become a flood to destroy all flesh. And the bow shall be in the cloud; and I will look upon it, that I may remember the everlasting covenant between God and every **LIVING CREATURE** (#7. **nehphesh**, used referring to man and **animals**) of all flesh that is upon the earth."*

**All four times that soul (nehphesh) is used in Genesis 1; it is referring to animals, not to a person. IN TEN OF THE FIRST TWELVE TIMES SOUL (NEHPHESH) IS USED IT IS USED REFERRING TO ANIMALS, but the King James Version delicately hid this by using different words, and most who read the King James Version never know what was delicately hid from them. Nehphesh is translated "soul" only one time of the first thirteen times it is used in the King James Version, but it is not translated "soul" in any of the first thirteen times it is used in the New King James Version, New American Standard Version, New Revised Standard Version, New International Version, or most other translations. Mankind is the same soul (life–nehphesh) as the other "living creatures." He does not differ from other living creatures (soul–nehphesh) by having a soul (nehphesh) living in him that cannot die. His dominion over other living creatures (other nehpheshs–souls) is not his nehphesh. In the first nine chapters of Genesis soul (nehphesh—Strong's Hebrew word #5315—"a breathing creature") is used more often with reference to animals than it is with reference to persons; it is the animal life, which both a person and animals have in common. How did the translators know when it changed to an invisible immortal something that is in a person, which animals do not have?**

(14) Genesis 12:5 *"And the **people** (nehphesh—"living beings") whom they had acquired"* New King James Version ("soul" in King James Version.) Why were this translated people and not souls? The translators did not believe souls could be bought, but people could be bought.

(15) Genesis 12:13 *"That **I** (nehphesh—a "living being") may live because of you"* New King James Version ("soul" in King James Version.) Do you wonder why this was translated, "That **I** may live" and not "That a **soul** may live?"

(16) Genesis 14:21 *"Give me the **persons** (nehphesh—"living beings") and take the goods"* King James Version. Can anyone give immortal souls to another person? Is there anyone that cannot see why nehphesh could not be translated "soul" in this passage?

(17) Genesis 17:14 *"That **person** (nehphesh—a "living being") shall be cut off"* New King James Version.

(18) Genesis 19:17 *"Escape for your **life**"* (nehphesh—a "living being") King James Version.

(19) Genesis 19:19 "Saving my **life**" (nehphesh—a "living being") King James Version.

In the first nineteen times nehphesh is used it is translated "soul."

- Only three times in the King James Version
- None in the New King James Version
- None in the New American Standard Version
- None in the New Revised Standard Version
- None in the New International Version

(20) Genesis 19:20 "That my **life** (nehphesh—a "living being") may be saved" New American Standard Version (Translated soul for the fourth time in the King James Version, but only for the first time in the New King James Version). Do you wonder why the translators of the New King James Version did not think this word means "soul" in the nineteen times it was used before this, but changed their minds this time? But the New American Standard said both King James Versions are wrong.

(21) Genesis 23:8 "If it be your **mind**" (nehphesh—a "living being") King James Version.

(22) Genesis 27:4 "So that I (nehphesh—a "living being") may bless you before I die"

- "So that I (nehphesh—a "living being") may bless you before I die" Revised Standard Version, New Revised Standard Version.
- "So that I (nehphesh—a "living being") may give you my blessing before I die" New International Version.
- "So that I (nehphesh—a "living being") may give you my blessing before I die" Revised English Bible.
- "To give you **my** (nehphesh—a "living being") blessing before I die" Amplified Bible.
- "That I (nehphesh—a "living being") may give you my special blessing before I die" New American Bible.
- "Then I (nehphesh—a "living being") will bless you before I die" New Century Version.
- "Then I (nehphesh—a "living being") will pronounce the blessing that belongs to you, my firstborn son, before I die" New Living Translation.
- "I (nehphesh—a "living being") want to eat it once more and give you my blessing before I die" Contemporary English Version.
- "That I (nehphesh—a "living being") may eat of it, (preparatory) to giving you (as my first—born) my blessing before I die" Amplified Bible.
- "That my **soul** (nehphesh—a "living being") may bless thee before I die" King James Version. How would Isaac's son know if he were blessed by an "immaterial invisible" no substance something that he could not see? By this time, hundreds of years after Genesis 1:1, the King James translators must have been desperate to be able to put "soul" into the Bible.

**Up to Genesis 27:4 for hundreds of years nehphesh is translated soul**

- Only four times out of twenty-two in the King James Version.
- Only one time out of twenty-two in the New King James Version.
- None in The New International Version and most others translations.

Nehphesh has been used 22 times before the New King James Version translated it "soul" for the first time, but even then the translators of many versions have chosen not to translate it "soul." In Genesis "nehphesh" is not an immortal "immaterial, invisible part of man," but it is the life, living creature, living

being, any living thing, whether animals, fish, or man, all mortal beings are a **nehphesh**. If the translators had continued to translate **nehphesh** as life, living creature, living being, or person, as they did in the first twenty-one times it is used, there may not be the divisions there are today. Why did they not translate **nehphesh** into soul in the first part of the Bible that covers hundreds of years? Maybe because they thought it would have made animals have souls, and they did not believe animals could have souls. I find it difficult to see how anyone could not call their honesty into question for it is undeniable that they put their belief over the word of God, and they deliberately hid the truth from their readers; they deliberately hid the truth from you.

(23) Genesis 32:30 "*My **life** (nehphesh—"living beings") is preserved*" King James Version. Most translations use "life" in this passage for an immortal soul could not perish and would not need to be preserved.

(24) Genesis 34:3

- "*His **heart** (nehphesh) was drawn to Dinah*" New International Version.
- "*He was deeply **attracted** (nehphesh) to Dinah*" New American Standard Version.
- "*His **soul** (nehphesh) clave unto Dinah*" King James Version. If this translation is not saying an immaterial immortal soul clave unto a material mortal being, then what is it saying?

(25) Genesis 34:8

- "*My son Shechem has his **heart** (nehphesh) on your daughter*" New International Version.
- "*My son Shechem is in **love** (nehphesh) with this girl*" Revised English Bible.
- "*The **heart** (nehphesh) of my son Shechem longs for your daughter*" New Revised Standard Version.
- "*The **soul** (nehphesh) of my son Shechem longeth for your daughter*" King James Version. How did the translators think the father could know what an invisible, immaterial something that was in his son was longing for? Did they think an immortal no substance soul was in love with a mortal person?

(26) Genesis 35:18

- "*As her **soul** (nehphesh) was departing (for she died)*" King James Version.
- "*As she **breathed** (nehphesh) her last—for she was dying*" New International Version.
- "*Then with her last **breath**, (nehphesh) as she was dying*" Revised English Bible.
- "*With Rachel's last **breath** (nehphesh) (for she died)*" The Living Bible.
- "*With her last **breath** (nehphesh) for she was at the point of death*" New American Bible, Catholic.
- "*Rachel was about to die, but with her last **breath** (nehphesh)*" New Living Bible.

(27) Genesis 36:6 "*All the **persons** (nehpheshs—a mortal beings) of his house*" King James Version.

(28) Genesis 37:21 "*Let us not kill **him** (nehpheshs—a mortal being)*" King James Version. It was obvious to the translators that they could not translate this **nehphesh** into soul, after all an immortal soul could not be killed.

(29) Exodus 12:16 *"Except what must be eaten by every person (nehpheshs—soul)."* A soul as was believed in by the translators could not eat, therefore; nehphesh could not be translated soul.

(30) Job 12:10 *"In whose hand is the **soul** (nehpheshs—a mortal beings, used referring to **animals**) of every living thing, and the breath of all mankind."* Is it not strange that they give animals a soul, but other translations took their soul away from them? *"The **life** of every living thing"* New American Standard Bible.

(31) Job 41:21 *"His **breath**"* (nehpheshs—mortal beings, used referring to an **animal**, possibly a crocodile).

(32) Isaiah 19:10 *"All that make sluices and ponds for **fish** (nehpheshs—mortal beings, used referring to **animals, fish**)"* King James Version. Although nehphesh is in the Hebrew, many translations seems not to know what to do with it, and just took it out, or completely changed it for they did not want a soul to be in a pond.

(33) Jeremiah 2:24 *"A wild ass used to the wilderness, that snuffed up the wind in **her** (nehpheshs—a mortal being, used referring to an **animal**) desire."*

(34) Proverbs 27:7 *"The full **soul** (nehpheshs—mortal being) loathes an honeycomb; but to the hungry **soul** (nehpheshs—a mortal being)" ever bitter thing is sweet."* How could the translators think an immaterial something could be full, or that a soul could be hungry for honey?

- *"A sated **man** (nehphesh) loathes honey, but to a famished **man** (nehphesh) any bitter thing is sweet"* New American Standard Bible.
- *"**He** (nehphesh) who is full loathes honey, but to the hungry even what is bitter tastes sweet"* New International Version. "Nehphesh" is in the Hebrew two times, but one of the two it was left out in the New International Version.

(35) Numbers 31:28 *"And levy a tribute unto the Lord of the men of war which went out to battle: one **soul** (nehpheshs—mortal beings—used referring to both persons and **animals**) of five hundred, both of the persons, and of the beeves, and of the asses and of the sheep."* Of about 870 times "nehphesh" is in the Old Testament Numbers 31:28 and Job 12:10 are the only two passages where the King James translators translated "nehphesh" as "soul" when it has reference to animals, and it maybe that the only reason they did this time is that it has equal reference to people as it does to animals and they had no choice.

DAVID J. HEINIZMAN, "So carefully has the translation of nehphesh been guarded in relation to animals as 'souls,' that we can't help but wonder if it were not done intentionally to conceal the fact that animals are souls as well as men." "Man Became A Living Soul."

(36) Proverbs 12:10: *"A righteous man has regard for the **life** (soul—nehphesh) of his beast."* The translators made this one word (nehphesh) be:

1. Any earthly being,
  - Before God breathed the breath of life into body of the person or beast.
  - While they had the breath of life.
  - And the dead body after the breath of life of the person or beast was gone.

2. The life in any earthly being only while they have the breath of life in them.
3. The pagan immaterial, invisible, no substance, deathless being that lives after the person it was in is dead, but this deathless being is not in any beast.

Do you wonder, as I do, how they came up with three meaning of this one word when the three meaning are nothing alike, and how they knew when it was one living thing, and when it was an another living thing?

(37 to 870) It would be to long to quote all the 870 times the Hebrew word nehphesh is in the Old Testament with just over one—half being translated "soul," about 473 times in King James Version. Not once dose any of the 870 imply anything about life beyond the grave or about a soul being immortal. Nehphesh in the New International Version Old Testament is translated soul only 72 times out of the 870 times it is used, according to the this translation, 798 times nehphesh was not a "soul."

A nehphesh could be:

- Saved (Genesis 19:19; 1 Samuel 19:11; 2 Samuel 19:5)
- Killed (Numbers 35:11; 35:15; 35:30)
- Ransomed (Exodus 21:30)
- Destroyed (Leviticus 23:30; Joshua 11:11)
- Delivered (Joshua 2:13)
- Sought to be killed (Judges 18:25)
- Taken (Deuteronomy 19:21)
- Forfeited (Joshua 2:14)
- Risked (Judges 12:3; 1 Samuel 28:21)
- Lost (Judges 1:25)
- Jeopardized (Judges 5:18; 1 Samuel 19:50)

**All 870 times have one thing in common, they are all associated with the activity of a living being including dying, and nehphesh never implies anything about life after the death of the living being, all the 870 are all speaking of living beings that will die.** None of the 870 times are an immortal deathless being that is in a person; they are all a mortal living being that can die, be killed, or be dead, whether the living being is a person, animal or fish. **Nehphesh is always associated with the activity of earthly breathing beings, both of person(s) and animal(s). It never implies anything about life beyond the grave. IT IS NEVER TRANSLATED "SPIRIT"** Although nehphesh—Strong’s Hebrew word #5315—“a breathing creature” is translated into about forty words, thirty-nine all have reference to a mortal being, animal, or person that is not deathless, none to an “immaterial invisible part of a person” (E. W. Vine) that is deathless.

1. How could nehphesh be a mortal breathing creature that will die in thirty-nine of the words into which it is translated?
2. And it is an immortal something that does not have breath, and that will not die in only one of the forty words. Is it because this is the only word that they could use to put the Pagan immortal soul into the Bible by mistranslating, but were not able to mistranslate it into an immortal invisible deathless something most of the times it was used?

Can one word be rightly translated this way? How could the translators know when to translate this word as a mortal being that will die, and when the same word

was to be changed to an immortal being that cannot die? **No one reading some of the English translations of the Bible would have any way of knowing that all these forty words are translations (or mistranslations) of only one word.** Did the translators do so because they wanted to make a person be an "immortal being," and more than a "living creatures?" In almost one half of the times *nehphesh* is used in the Old Testament, even the King James translators could not translate it "soul." When the all-knowing God used just one word, why did the translators used forty words and change it as they wished to, changed it from a noun to pronouns, changed from a noun to verbs, changed from a noun to adjectives, changed from a noun to adverbs, etc.? Did they think that for all the years from Adam unto Christ? God people could understand the one word God used, but now many words are needed to translate that one word? If one word were all that was needed from Adam unto the translation of the King James Version, why would God's one word not be enough today? Do the translators think they have improved the Hebrew Old Testament by changing the one word that God used into about forty words, and changing this noun into about all parts of speech? The use of many words came when the Catholic Church brought in unconditional immortality, and they had to get it into the Bible. The Hebrew manuscripts still have just one word—*nehphesh*, which was the one word God inspired. Were the translators inspired to change it to many words? And changed from one part of speech into many parts of speech?

*Nehphesh* is translated *soul* far fewer times in the New American Standard Version, and in most other translations, including the New King James Version, than it is in the King James Version. Were they going as far as they dared to in correcting the King James Version?

The way *soul* is understood and used today in English (an undying living something that is in a person) makes putting the word *soul* in a translation for the English people today be a false and deliberately misleading translation, for it makes it where **today's English reader cannot know what God said, and will understand only what the prejudiced outlook the translators wanted their readers to understand when they know that most that read it would understand the word soul only as it is used today.** Without much study of Bible words, which most Bible reader will never do, they cannot know what God said to them when they read the word *soul*, and they will think that the somewhat prejudice outlook of the translator is the word of God. God's word has been deliberately replaced with the teaching of man (Matthew 15:9) in a way that will have more influence on our conception of what our nature is and the nature of all living beings than any other question.

**THE "SOUL" AND "EATING OF BLOOD": Is the immortal "soul" (*nehphesh*) in the blood?** Is a part of a person that many say it lives after the death of the body that a soul is in the blood of both men and animals? (Leviticus 17:10-15) In only six

verses nehphesh is used ten times but the translators concealed this from their readers by translating nehphesh as both life and soul, always life the four times it was speaking of animals, and soul the six times it was speaking of a person; does this not show their reluctance to let us see what God said to us?

Leviticus 17:10-15 in the King James Version, the same word (nehphesh) is translated soul six times when it was speaking of a person and life four times when it was an animal.

- Used referring to animals four times—nehphesh translated (1) life, (2) life, (3) life, (4) life.
- Used referring to man six times—nehphesh translated (1) soul, (2) soul, (3) soul, (4) soul, (5) soul, (6) soul.

**Leviticus 17:10-15 King James Version**, *"I will even set my face against that **SOUL** (person–nehphesh, used referring to man) that eats blood, and will cut him off from among his people. For the **LIFE** (soul–nehphesh, used referring to **animals** that are being eat) of the flesh is in the blood: and I have given it to you upon the altar to make an atonement for your **SOULS**: (nehphesh, used referring to man) for it is the blood that makes an atonement for the **SOUL** (nehphesh, used referring to man). Therefore I said unto the children of Israel, no **SOUL** (nehphesh, used referring to man) of you shall eat blood...For it is the **LIFE** (soul–nehphesh, used referring to **animals**) of all flesh; the blood of it is for the **LIFE** (soul–nehphesh, used referring to **animals**) thereof; therefore I said unto the children of Israel, no **SOUL** (nehphesh, used referring to man) shall eat the blood of no manner of flesh: for the **LIFE** (soul–nehphesh, used referring to **animals**) of all flesh is the blood thereof: whosoever eats it shall be cut off. And every **SOUL** (nehphesh, used referring to man) that eats that which died of itself...he shall wash his clothes, and bath himself in water."* In this passage, the King James Version translated the same word "soul" all six times when it used referring to man, and "life" all four times when it used referring to animals. Can anyone not see how the translators picked when they wanted "nehphesh" to be "soul," and when they wanted "nehphesh" to be "life"? They could not let an immortal soul be in the blood, nor could they let animals have an immortal soul in them. Their theology said a man had to have a soul in him, but an animal could not have one, and they were not willing that their reader see that the word "nehphesh" is used referring to both, and that both do not have a soul but both are a soul.

The vanishing use of soul in Leviticus 17:10-15

- In the King James Version nehphesh is translated "soul" six of the ten times it is used.
- The New King James Version used "soul" only two of the ten times.
- "Soul" is not used in the New Revised Standard Version, New International Version, The New American Bible, and others.

**Leviticus 17:10-15 New Revised Standard Version**

- Used referring to animals four times—nehphesh translated (1) life, (2) life, (3) life, (4) life.
- Used referring to man six times—nehphesh translated (1) person, (2) person, (3) lives, (4) life, (5) person, (6) persons. A soul could not eat blood; therefore, none of the six are translated soul.

*"If anyone of the house of Israel or of the aliens who reside among them eats any blood, I will set my face against that **PERSON** (nehphesh) who eats blood, and will cut that **PERSON** (nehphesh) off from the people. For the **LIFE** (nehphesh) of the flesh is in the blood; and I have given it to you for making atonement for your **LIVES** (nehphesh) on the altar, for, as **LIFE**, (nehphesh) it is the blood that makes atonement. Therefore I have said to the people of Israel: No **PERSON** (nehphesh) among you shall eat blood...For the **LIFE** (nehphesh) of every creature—its blood is its **LIFE**; (nehphesh) therefore I have said to the people of Israel: You shall not eat the blood of any creature, for the **LIFE** (nehphesh) of every creature is its blood; whoever eats it shall be cut off. All **PERSONS**, (nehphesh) citizens or aliens, who eat what dies of itself...shall wash their clothes, and bathe themselves in water"*

**Leviticus 17:10-15 New International Version**

- Used referring to animals four times—nehphesh translated (1) life, (2) life, (3) life, (4) life.
- Used referring to man six times—nehphesh translated (1) person, (2) person, (3) lives, (4) person, (5) life, (6) anyone.

*"Any Israelite or any alien living among them who eats any blood—I will set my face against that **PERSON** (nehphesh) who eats blood and will cut **HIM** (nehphesh) off from his people. For the **LIFE** (nehphesh) of a creature is in the blood, and I have given it to you to make atonement for **YOURSELVES** (nehphesh) on the altar; it is the blood that makes atonements for one's **LIFE** (nehphesh). Therefore I say to the Israelites, 'None of **YOU** (nehphesh) may eat blood, nor may an alien living among you eat blood'...because the **LIFE** (nehphesh) of every creature is its blood. That is why I have said to the Israelites, You must not eat the blood of any creature, because the **LIFE** (nehphesh) of every creature is its blood; anyone who eats it must be cut off. **ANYONE** (nehphesh), whether native—born or alien, who eats anything found dead or torn by wild animals must wash his clothes and bathe with water'."*

- *"No **soul** (nehphesh) shall eat blood"* Leviticus 17:12. No person—an immortal soul eating blood?
- *"The **life** (soul–nehphesh) of all flesh is the blood"* Leviticus 17:11. They would not translate it to say, "The soul of all flesh is the blood."
- *"No **dead body** (soul–nehphesh)"* A dead immortal soul? The same word that is translated **soul** and **life** is translated **dead body** (Numbers 6:6, also Numbers 5:2; 6:11; 9:6; 9:10). These passages would make no sense if nehphesh were a no substance, immortal something in a person that cannot be dead. It would also make animals have the same no substance, immortal, deathless something in them. It is the life of a person or animal that is in the blood, not an immortal, immaterial, invisible soul in the blood as the word "soul" is used today.

○ **THE DYING USE OF "SOUL" IN THE OLD TESTAMENT:** In translations that were made by those who believe a person has an immortal soul, why is the use of the word "soul" becoming used less? Nehphesh is used in the Old Testament 870 times. **TRANSLATED SOUL:**

- 443 times out of 870 times—King James Version in 1611.
- 289 times out of 870 times—New King James Version in 1982. **Soul is used 154 times less in the Old Testament than it is in the King James Version.**
- 111 times out of 870 times—Amplified Bible in 1954.
- 142 times out of 870 times—The Message in 1993.
- 111 times out of 870 times—New American Standard Bible in 1960.
- 188 times out of 870 times—Revised Standard Version in 1946.
- 144 times out of 870 times—New Revised Standard Version in 1989.
- 115 times out of 870 times—New International Version in 1973.
- 95 times out of 870 times—New International Version in 2010 – 2011 update.
- 96 times out of 870 times—New International Reader's Version in 1996.
- 44 times out of 870 times—New Living Translation in 1996.
- 10 times out of 870 times—New Century Version in 2005.
- 5 times out of 878 times—Common English Bible in 2011.

Most of the times that nehphesh was not translated "soul" it was translated "life," "person," "heart," or the noun was changed to a pronoun (he, him, she, her, etc.) that is related to a person, and has no reference to an immortal being that is in a person.

**THE DYING USE OF "SOUL" IN THE NEW TESTAMENT:** The Greek word translated soul (psukee) is used 106 times. **IS TRANSLATED SOUL ONLY:**

- 55 times out of 106 times that "soul" could not use the things King James Version in 1611.
- 52 times out of 106 times in the New King James Version in 1982.
- 79 times out of 106 times—Amplified Bible in 1954.
- 79 times out of 106 times—New American Standard Bible in 1960.
- 41 times out of 106 times—Revised Standard Version in 1946.
- 31 times out of 106 times—New Revised Standard Version in 1989.
- 41 times out of 106 times—New International Version in 1971.
- 23 times out of 106 times—New International Version in 2010 – 2011 update.
- 29 times out of 106 times—New Living Translation in 1996.
- 21 times out of 106 times—New International Reader's Version in 1996.
- 25 times out of 870 times—New Century Version in 2005.
- 3 times out of 106 times—Common English Bible in 2011.
- 0 times out of 106 times—Christian Bible in 1991.

**THE DYING USE OF "SOUL" IN BOTH THE OLD AND NEW TESTAMENT:** The Hebrew word translated soul (nehphesh) is used over 870 times in the Old Testament, and the Greek word translated soul (psukee) is used 106 times, both together about 976 times.

**IS TRANSLATED SOUL ONLY:**

- 498 times out of 976 times—King James Version in 1611.
- 341 times out of 976 times—New King James Version in 1982. **Soul is used 157 times less in the New King James Version than it is in the King James Version.**
- 111 times out of 976 times—Amplified Bible in 1954.
- 190 times out of 976 times—New American Standard Bible in 1960.
- 229 times out of 976 times—Revised Standard Version in 1946.
- 175 times out of 976 times—New Revised Standard Version in 1989.
- 229 times out of 976 times—New International Version in 1971.
- 136 times out of 976 times—New International Version in 1984.
- 118 times out of 976 times—New International Version in 2010—2011 update.
- 41 times out of 976 times—New International Reader's Version in 1996.
- 177 times out of 976 times—The Message in 1993.
- 73 times out of 976 times—New Living Translation in 1996.
- 35 times out of 870 times—New Century Version in 2005.
- 8 times out of 976 times—Common English Bible in 2011.
- 0 times out of 106 times—Christian Bible in 1991.

Most, if not all these translators believe in an immortal soul, but have been reducing the times this Hebrew word (nehphesh) is translated "soul" and replacing it with "life," "person," "heart," or changed it to pronouns that are related to a person. The way soul has been mostly removed in most translations, and replaced with life or person, the translators are saying the English word soul is not a true translation of the Hebrew or the Greek.

**WHY THE USE OF SOUL IS DYING:** In many passages the psukee does thing that only this earthly body can do, things that an immortal soul that has no substance could not do. *“And He told them a parable, saying, “The land of a rich man was very productive. And he began reasoning to himself, saying, ‘What shall I do, since I have no place to store my crops?’ Then he said, ‘this is what I will do: I will tear down my barns and build larger ones, and there I will store all my grain and my goods. And I will say to my **soul (psukee), Soul (psukee),** you have many goods laid up for many years to come; take your ease, eat, drink and be merry.’ But God said to him, ‘You fool! This very night your **soul (psukee)** is required of you”* Luke 12:19-21. That which the rich man laid up for his soul (psukee) in verse 19 is said to be laid up for himself in verse 21 making both psukee and himself be the same thing.

The New International Version removed “soul.” *“And I’ll say to **myself (Greek psukee–life), ‘you (Greek psukee–life)** have plenty of good things laid up for many years. Take life easy; eat drink and be merry.’ But, God said to him, ‘You fool! This very night your **life (Greek–psukee)** will be demanded from you.”*

It is those who are members of churches that believe a person has an immortal soul that are little by little taking the word "soul" out of the Bible. **Why is soul being used less in the newer translations? These translators knew "soul" is an English word that when the Bible was written did not exist, and that soul is not a translation of nehphesh or psukee;** at the time the Old or New Testament was written neither nehphesh nor psukee had the meaning that the English word “soul” has today.

A few of the many examples that show why the numbers above are difficult in difficult translations.

Numbers 29:7

- *"Ye shall afflict your **souls** (nehphesh)"* King James Version.
- *"You shall humble **yourselves** (nehphesh)"* New American Standard.

Joshua 11:11

- *"They smote all the **souls** (nehphesh)"* King James Version.
- *"Not sparing anything that **breathed** (nehphesh)"* New International Version.

Judges 16:16

- *"His **soul** (nehphesh) was vexed unto death"* King James Version.
- *"Unto **he** (nehphesh) was tired to death"* New International Version.

Numbers 30:2

- *"To bind his **soul** (nehphesh) with a bond"* King James Version.
- *"To bind **himself** (nehphesh) with a binding obligation"* New American Standard Version.

Numbers 15:30

- *"That **soul** (nehphesh) shall be cut off"* King James Version.
- *"That **person** (nehphesh) shall be cut off"* New American Standard Version.

Acts 15:24-26 is an example of how the translation of psukee was changed even in the same passage by the translators when it would not fit in with their belief about

an immortal soul. “Since we have heard that some of our number to whom we gave no instruction have disturbed you with their words, unsettling your **souls (psukee)**, it seemed good to us, having become of one mind, to select men to send to you with our beloved Barnabas and Paul, men who have risked their **lives (psukee)** for the name of our Lord Jesus Christ.” The psukee—life they risked was their earthly life, not a deathless soul.

- “Certain persons who have gone out from us, though with no instruction from us, have said things to disturb you and have unsettled your **minds (psukee)**...who has risked their **lives (psukee)**” New revised Standard Version.
- “And disturbed you, troubling your **minds (psukee)** by what they said...men who have risked their **lives (psukee)** for the name of our Lord Jesus Christ” New International Version.
- “We have heard that some of our group have come to you and said things that **trouble (psukee)**... and upset **you (psukee)**” New Century Version.

It is obvious that an immaterial, invisible, no substance soul would have no use for the things the rich man stored in his barns, it would not be able to eat and drink the thing stored in barns, that this was not speaking of an immaterial soul without any substance, but was speaking of an earthly person that can eat and drink of the substance that was stored, and would be able to use the things stored; it was life that would be required of the earthly person, not life from an immortal soul that could not die; when a persons life was required who would use the things he had stored? Translators put Plato’s “immortal soul” stored into the Bible by mistranslating, but many translations are taking much of their mistranslating out.

AARON ELLIS: “It is plain from history, that our first transcribers and translators were Romanish priests, who were interested in sustaining the profitable corruptions of the separate existence of the soul in purgatory, and the endless misery of the wicked. Every English translation made prior to the 18<sup>th</sup> century, has but too clearly copied from the Vulgate, and the translators were not able, as Macknigjht has fully prove, to translate the whole Bible from the original tongues, and the various editions only profess to be *compared with* the original. King James, who died a Papist, gave strict orders to translators of our common version, not to deviate widely from the Bishop’s Bible, to be followed, and as little altered as the original will permit.” “Bible Vs; Tradition,” page 6, 1853.

**The Hebrew noun, nehphesh has been changed to many different pronouns, but all the pronouns have a reference to an earthly being, none to Plato’s no substance soul.** Nehphesh did not mean an immaterial invisible something in a person that was not the person in the Old Testament; how could the translators think it was right to change one noun into many pronouns, verbs, adjectives, adverbs, etc.?

The Hebrew people in the Old Testament that were reading their Scriptures would have had no way to make a distinction in the life (soul–nehphesh) of animals or men for Moses made no distinction. Even today in the Hebrew Old Testament there is no distinction between a person, and an animal being a soul—a living creature, but translators have changed this. Only in the English translations, not in the Hebrew, is

there a distinction, **and this distinction is because man has changed God's word.** God used the same word to describe both persons and animals. If this one word proves one now has an immortal soul, it would prove both man and animals now have an immortal soul. Man says animals **do not have a soul** that lives in them unto their death, but people do. God says both people and animals **are a soul.**

Summary: **About one-third of the words translated soul from nehphesh in the Old Testament, and from psukee in the New Testament, both are associated with the destruction and death of a soul (life, nehphesh). This is an insoluble problem for those that believe today's theology, which says a soul cannot die.**

Since the word "soul" has a meaning in English that is not in the Hebrew word "nehphesh" or the Greek word "psuche" the question is, "Is soul a true translation," or was it the translators putting their Platonic and Hellenized philosophy into the Bible? The doctrine of an immortal soul did not exist when the Old Testament was written, and nehphesh would not have been understood to be a "soul," not until the Greek doctrine was brought into the church by the so called "church fathers," and by the Dark Age Catholic Church; they were not called "church fathers" in their day, but were called this by the Catholic Church, probably to justify the use of "father" the way they use it, and to make their writing have more authority. The translators of the King James Version still believed this pagan doctrine and they changed the word of God in this and many places, but think goodness most translations have now partly corrected this change.

INTERNATIONAL STANDARD BIBLE ENCYCLOPEDIA: **"Not, however, to dwell on the fact that many peoples have no clear conception of an immaterial 'soul' in the modern sense** (the Egyptians, e. g. distinguished several parts, the Ka, the Ba, etc., which survived death; often the surviving self is simply a ghostly resemblance of the earthly self, nourished with food, offerings, etc.), there is the more serious consideration that the state into which the surviving part is supposed to enter as death is anything but a state which can be described as 'life,' or worthy to be dignified with the name 'immortality.' It is a state peculiar to 'death;' in most cases, shadowy, inert, feeble, dependent, joyless; a state to be dreaded and shrunk from, not one to be hoped for. If, on the other hand, as in the hope of immortality among the nobler heathen, it is conceived of, as for some, a state of happiness—the clog of the body being shaken off—this yields the idea, which has passed into so much of our modern thinking, of an 'immortality of the soul,' of an imperishableness of the spiritual part, sometimes supposed to extend backward as well as forward; an inherent indestructibility." From the article "Immortal; Immortality." Also from the International Standard Bible Encyclopedia, **"We are influenced always more or less by the Greek, Platonic idea that the body dies, yet the soul is immortal. Such an idea is utterly contrary to the Israelite consciousness and is nowhere found in the Old Testament"** From the article "Death," page 812. "Soul, like spirit, has various shades of meaning in the O.T., which may be summarized as follows: 'Soul,' 'living being,' 'life,' 'self,' 'person,' 'desire,' 'appetite,' 'emotion' and 'passion'...**NEHPHESH OR SOUL, CAN ONLY DENOTE THE INDIVIDUAL LIFE WITH A MATERIAL ORGANIZATION OR BODY.**" page 2837. **"For the Hebrews a person was a unity, not to be divided into body, soul, and spirit as the Greeks did,"** page 592.

JEWISH ENCYCLOPEDIA: **"The belief that the soul continues its existence after the dissolution of the body is a matter of philosophical or theological speculation rather than of simple faith, AND IS ACCORDINGLY, NOWHERE TAUGHT IN THE HOLY SCRIPTURE...The belief in the immortality of the soul came to the Jews from contact with Greek thought and chiefly through the philosophy of Plato, its principal exponent, who was led to it through Orphic and Dleusinian mysteries in which Babylonian and Egyptian views were strangely blended,"** "Immortality of the Soul," 1925. The concept of punishment after death is not in the Old Testament. The Law given through Moses deals only with punishment in this life and has no provisions for punishment after death. From their contact with pagan philosophy, the pagan immortal soul teaching had made some inroads with some Jews by the time of Christ. Paul warned about this Philosophy (Colossians 2:8).

C. R. GRESHAM: Commenting on 1 Corinthians 15:51-52 said, **"Paul is pointing out that the resurrection truth which he is revealing was partially, if not wholly, hidden to past generations. We must take this seriously and not read New Testament revelation back into the Old Testament accounts...It is generally conceived that there is little about resurrection or after-life in what the Jews called the Torah...and the Former Prophets...Death is seen as the end, the destruction of human existence,"** page 25. "Man's soul is primarily his vitality, his life, not some separate part of a person that has independent existence and an immortal nature, God's spirit (His breath, His power) creates and sustains all living things (Ps 33:6; 104:29-30), even the human spirit (Zech 12:1), **but never is man's soul or spirit seen as an immortal part of man surviving death,"** page 40. "The widespread misunderstanding that the New Testament teaches the immortality of the soul...If one recognizes that death and eternal life in the New Testament are always bound up the Christ-event, then it becomes clear that for the first Christians the soul is not intrinsically immortal, but rather became so only through the resurrection of Jesus Christ," page 275. "What The Bible Says About Resurrection" The College Press, 1983, (Christian Church).

INTERPRETER'S DICTIONARY OF THE BIBLE: "No biblical text authorizes the statement that the soul is separated from the body at the moment of death" Volume 1, Article "Death," page 802, 1960. "The word 'soul' in English...coming from philosophical Greek (Platonism)...**In the OT it never means the immortal soul, but it is essentially the life principle, or the living being,** or the self as the subject of appetite, and emotion" Volume 4, Article "Soul," 1960.

The belief of Socrates and Plato was that when a soul is freed from the person it was in, and that freed soul would live forever in a better place without the person that it had been in. If, as Plato taught, a soul is a separate being from the person it is in, it would make it unjust for it to be tormented for what the person did. It would be like making Bill be judged and punished for what John did.

This Greek philosophy was what most of the church fathers had been taught and believed, the background from which they came. Tertullian, one of the first of the church fathers to teach this philosophy was truthful about from where he had learned it. He said, "For some things are known even by nature: the immortality of the soul, for instance, is held by many...I may use, therefore, the opinion of a Plato, when he declares, 'Every soul is immortal'" Ante—Nicene Fathers, Volume 3, page 1916. By the time of the translation of the King James Version this heathen doctrine was believed by the Roman Catholic Church and most Protestants, but had been changed from Plato's belief that all souls are freed and go on to a much better place

to a few souls go to a better place, but most souls, after being freed from the person it was in by the death of the person, will go to eternal torment in Hell; the "Hell" part had to be added by the Catholic Church, changed from what was believed by Plato that after the death of the persons all souls that was trapped in then would have gone to the same better place; if the "Hell" part had not been added the Catholic Church then it's priest would not have been needed,.

The Hebrew word "nehphesh" and the Greek word "psuche" were the only words the translators could use to put the immortal soul they believed in into the Bible; but they found only 528 times out of 976 times these two words were used that was suitable to add this philosophy. Later translations have been little by little removing it.

Neither "nehphesh" nor "psuche" are used with the qualifying words aionios, immoral, undying, endless, or everlasting, but in today's preaching these words are continually added to "soul."

The Egyptians might have been the first to believe in the dual nature of a person. They believed that death was a door to a new form of life, which may be higher or lower, depending on how good or bad a person was. They believed the body was evil and a prison to a soul. They built the pyramids and other tombs and put the things in them they thought would be needed in the next life. Death was a friend to them that freed a soul from the evil body it was in; but it was the Greeks (Pythagoras, Socrates, Plato) who adopted this Egyptian belief of the dual nature of a person and developed the philosophy of the immortal soul. Many church fathers were schooled in and believed in this Greek philosophy, and were only partly converted. They, after greatly expanding on the teaching of Plato, brought the Greek philosophy into the church in the apostasy. Unconditional immortality is the foundation of the doctrine of Hell. If a person had an unseen immortal soul in them that would not die when the person died, there had to be a place to put the evil souls after they were freed from the person. A "souls" that was in a person had to be put somewhere after the death of the person; therefore, the doctrine of a soul going to Heaven or Hell immediately after the person died without a resurrection or a judgment came into being, and the New Testament teaching of the resurrection of the dead became unneeded and of little or no importance.

In the Greek philosophy a soul never dies; only the body dies, freeing a soul to a higher life. Christ taught the resurrection of man, not the Greek "*immaterial, invisible part of man*" (W. E. Vine) that never dies. The Greeks did not believe in or need a resurrection, or a savior, or a redeemer; these would not fit into their belief. They believed in an immortal soul; therefore, there could be no death for any souls. The Greek philosophy of an immortal soul was opposed and opposite to the teaching of Christ on the resurrection. **The immortal soul doctrine was believed by most pagan religions in the time of Paul, and when he was before Agrippa, he asked, "Why is it considered incredible among you people if God does raise the**

**dead?" (Acts 26:8). To Plato and Agrippa, the resurrection of the dead would have been a step backward. It would put a soul that was freed from its prison of a body back into the prison it had been freed from.**

- The Greek and heathen belief that the immortal soul is indestructible, demands that a soul cannot die, but must be alive forever somewhere.
- The resurrection as taught by Christ demands that a person be dead, if not, there cannot be a resurrection.

The resurrection is a calling back to life the whole person God created, not a calling back to life of a deathless something that is a difference being than the person that it had been in. If the Greek doctrine of an immortal soul that cannot die, which is believed by many today were true, then the resurrection of Christ and our resurrection would be pointless even if it were possible to raise from the dead a soul that is not dead.

**PLATO and SOCRATES -- versus -- CHRIST**

Immortality ----- versus - A resurrection to life	
Death a friend ----- versus - Death is " <i>the last enemy</i> "	
Plato: A soul is immortal, therefore only "it" is alive after death	If there is no resurrection death is the end of <u>all</u> life 1 Corinthians 15:14-23
Plato: Only the body dies freeing soul to a higher life without a body	<i>"Then they also that are fallen asleep in Christ have perished"</i> 1 Cor. 15:18
Only some inter something that is in person is immortal, not the person	A person who in Christ will put on immortality, not something in a person
Souls that were in all the dead are now alive	Christ is " <i>the first born from the dead</i> "
Souls cannot perish	Souls (psukee) will perish
Souls cannot be destroyed	in Gehenna Matthew 10:28

**Plato's immortal soul and Christ's resurrection are not compatible, both cannot be. One can be true, but not both; they are alien and complete opposite to each other. The immortal soul doctrine of Plato is a total rejection of the teaching of Christ on the resurrection of a person to life. To believe Plato is to reject Christ.**

- Plato argued for an immortal, immaterial soul that was better off after the death of the person it had been in.
- Paul taught the resurrection of the dead person.

**The two are completed incompatible; it is difficult to understand why many that say they believe the Bible choose Plato's pagan philosophy over the Bible.**

Paul and Plato used the same Greek words, but not in the same way. Immortal, immortality, indestructible, never dying was used by Plato, and are used by many today to describe a soul that lives after the death of the person it once was in, but in the Old or New Testament these words are never used referring to any lost person, or to anything that had been in a person. The expression "immortal soul" is very common in the writing of the pagan philosophers and today's preachers, but is not found in the Bible.

If a soul is immortal (deathless) Christ was not dead and He was not raised from the dead.

If there is no resurrection:

- If a soul is immortal (deathless) Christ has not been raised, 1 Corinthians 15:13-15.
- If a soul is immortal (deathless) we are false witnesses, the dead have not be raised, 1 Corinthians 15:15.
- If a soul is immortal (deathless) our faith is vain and we are yet in our sins, 1 Corinthians 15:17.
- If a soul is immortal (deathless) no Christians will be raised from the dead, dead persons are dead forever, 1 Corinthians 15:18-19.

<u>PAUL USED</u>	<u>PLATO AND MANY TODAY SAY</u>
<u>Die</u>	<u>a soul cannot die</u>
<u>Death</u>	<u>no death for a soul</u>
<u>Destroyed</u>	<u>a soul cannot be destroyed</u>
<u>Corruption</u>	<u>a soul is incorruptible</u>
<u>Mortal</u>	<u>a soul is immortal</u>
<u>Perish</u>	<u>a soul cannot perish</u>

What Plato and the Greeks thought about there being a soul in a person that would not die when the person it was in died is not the word of God, it is nothing to those that believe the Bible, it is not any part of the Christian faith.

HENRY CONSTABLE: "In the very terms in which the punishment of the wicked is asserted in the New Testament. Where the latter says the soul shall die, Plato says it shall not die; where the latter says it shall be destroyed, Plato says it shall not be destroyed; where the latter says it shall perish and suffer corruption, Plato says it shall not perish and is incorruptible...But the discussion of the question was not confined to the school of Plato or to his times. Every school of philosophy took it up, whether to confirm Plato's view, or to deny it, or to heap ridicule upon it. All the phrases we have been discussing from the New Testament had been explained, turned over and over, handled with all the power of the masters of language, presented in every phase, so that of their sense there could be no doubt, nor could there be any one ignorant of their sense before Jesus spoke, or an Evangelist or Apostle wrote. The subject had not died out before the days of Christ. It never could and never will die out. In every city of the Roman world were schools of Grecian taught in the days of the Apostles. In every school the question before us was discussed in the phrases and language of the New Testament" "Duration and Nature of Future Punishment," 1871.

CATHOLIC ENCYCLOPEDIA: "**Plato established the basic Western tradition on this topic by defining the soul as the spiritual part of the human that survived death**" 1991.

Some believe that in the afterlife there will be nothing more than a collection of disembodied spirits or souls that will be just as alive and just the same from the day of birth of the persons these soul were in as these souls will be when they leave the person after the persons death. Death and the resurrection are out of step with the belief of Plato.

That there is something in a person and that something being deathless is a philosophy of man that Paul warned about (Colossians 2:8). An immortal soul was copied from heathen philosophy and superstition. Those who believe we now have "an immortal soul" get their belief from Greek philosophy, but are inconstant and self—contradicting; they say a soul cannot die, but it needs a Savior anyway. If we

were born with an immortal soul, it would have no need for Christ to save it from the death it cannot die. **Christianity did not destroy the pagan doctrine of Egypt and Greece; in the Dark Age it adopted it and made it a part of the teaching of the church.**

Death is the enemy (1 Corinthians 15:26). It is the destruction of the life given by God. It is not the liberator of an immortal soul, as Plato believed it to be. It is death, which must be conquered by the resurrection. **When we understand that death is really death, not another kind of life for an immortal living something that is in a person that has no substance, the resurrection is all—important. Without a resurrection we can do what we want for this life is all there is (1 Corinthians 15:32). Our only hope is the resurrection, and without it there will be no life of any kind for us after death. Plato's immortal, deathless soul needs no resurrection; A DEATHLESS SOUL CANNOT BE RESURRECTED.**

1. *"Set your hope perfectly on the grace that is to be brought unto you at the revelation of Jesus Christ"* (1 Peter 1:12). It is at the resurrection that we *"shall receive the crown of glory that fades not away"* (1 Peter 5:4).
2. *"Be patient; therefore, brethren, until the coming of the Lord"* (James 4:7-8). As the farmer is patient unto the harvest to receive his reward, the believers are to be patient unto the coming of Christ to receive their reward.
3. *"It is sown a natural body; it is raised a spiritual body"* (1 Corinthians 15:43). It is not a spiritual body that is now in a natural body that will go to Heaven at the death of the natural body. **"We** (persons, not souls) *shall all be changed, in a moment, in the twinkling of an eye, at the last trump: for the trumpet shall sound, and the dead shall be raised incorruptible* (dead persons raised from the dead, not already living souls raised from the dead)" (1 Corinthians 15:52).
4. *"Beloved, now are we children of God, and it is not yet made manifest what we shall be. We know that, if he shall be manifested, we shall be like him; for we shall see him even as he is"* (1 John 3:2). Every one knows what kind of body we now have, but no one knows what we shall be after the resurrection; it is "we" (persons) that do not know what "we" shall be after "we" are resurrected; if there were a soul now in a person, that soul would be the same while the person was alive, the same after the person was dead, the same after the coming of Christ; how could it not know what "it" shall be?

**The wrath of God will be "in the day of wrath and revelation of the righteous judgment of God" (Romans 2:5), not wrath at death before the Judgment Day, and not eternal wrath after the Judgment Day is over.** On that day, it will be rendered *"to them that by patience in well doing seek for glory and honor and incorruption, eternal life"* (Romans 2:8), not to souls that are believed to be in all that will be given eternal life. The judgment will be *"in the day when God shall judge the secrets of men"* (Romans 2:16), not at death. It is the Judgment Day when **"we** (not souls) *shall all stand before the judgment—seat of God"* (Romans 14:10). It is the day that the Lord will judge all, *"Wherefore judge nothing before the time, until the*

*Lord comes who will both bring to light the hidden things of darkness, and make manifest the counsels of the hearts" (1 Corinthians 4:5, also, Ephesians 4:30).*

1. *"And to wait for his Son from heaven" (1 Thessalonians 1:10). Death will not take anyone to Heaven without waiting for the second coming of Jesus.*
2. *When the Lord shall descend from Heaven, them that have fallen asleep in Jesus, "the dead in Christ shall rise first; then we that are alive, that are left, shall together with them be caught up in the clouds, to meet the Lord in the air: and so shall we ever be with the Lord" (1 Thessalonians 4:17). Their hope is to be raised from their sleep at the coming of Christ, not come back from living in Heaven or Abraham's bosom.*
3. *Paul says he will receive a "crown of righteousness, which the Lord, the righteous judge, shall give to me at that day; and not to me only, but also to all them that have loved his appearing." (2 Timothy 4:8).*

**The Bible speaks of "us," "we," and "you" that shall be with the Lord after the Judgment Day, the person will be resurrected, not a soul that once was in us, but it has already gone on to be with the Lord without us.**

The Bible teaching, *"The wages of sin is death"* leaves no lost souls alive after the judgment and second death to be put anywhere. **The teaching of Christ, that life (everlasting life or immortality) will be given only to those who obey Him, makes Hell impossible. Unless Christ gives eternal life (immortality) to the lost, they cannot live forever anywhere.** The Greek teaching of an immortal soul must be made to stand, and the teaching of Christ that He will give life only to those who come to Him must be removed, or there cannot be a Hell.

Socrates drinks hemlock and died with a smile on his face because he thought he was freeing a soul to leave his body and live with the gods, for a soul that was in him to live free of being in him. Christ *"sweats as it was great drops of blood"* (Luke 22:44). Death is the enemy of man. It destroys him, and only the resurrection frees us from death, and gives us back the life death takes. In death there is no life in Heaven, or no life in any other place for us before the resurrection. The resurrection is not just a coming back from Heaven to be judged and then going back to Heaven, it is our only hope of life after our death. Without the resurrection *"then they also that are fallen asleep in Christ have perished"* (1 Corinthians 15:18). The Greek philosophy that found its way into the Church says souls that have left the persons they were in have not perished, but are freed to live with God in Heaven, that souls are alive without the need of a resurrection; if there were an immortal soul that cannot perish then those who *"are fallen asleep in Christ"* have not perished and cannot perished even if there is no resurrection; how could Paul have been so wrong?

*"For since by MAN came death, by a MAN also came the resurrection of the dead. For as in Adam all die, so also in Christ all shall be made alive" (1 Corinthians 21-22).* If, as we are told, the soul is the only thing that will ever be immortal, and it is

already immortal and cannot die, it cannot be *“made alive.”* The pagan deathless soul doctrine makes this passage be total nonsense.

As the results of the pagan immortal soul doctrine there came into existent many other false doctrines, Hellfire, Purgatory, worship of Mary and saints, etc. The Protestant Reformation was largely a reaction to medieval superstitious beliefs, and Purgatory that is an intermediate state of temporal punishment where souls that were not good enough to go to Heaven, and not bad enough to go to Hell; in the Church in the Dark Age this was almost all souls that had left the dead persons that they had been in. The priests would have the loved ones pay for souls to shorten the time souls that had been in the dead persons were in Purgatory. Selling indulgences and paying to reduce the time deathless souls that had left the dead loved ones would spend in Purgatory was rejected by the Reformation, as was many other superstitious beliefs of the Roman Catholic Church; but the Greek dual nature of a person and the doctrine of Hell were retained. Calvin believed a soul did not sleep, but went to Heaven or Hell as soon as it left the person.

The Westminster Confession says, "Souls of the righteous...are received unto the highest heavens...soul of the wicked are cast into Hell."

Different characteristics of a person, not different parts of a person that one part can live without any other part; a person looked at from different points of view.

1. BODY: Flesh and blood.
2. SOUL: A person is a living being: the body plus the breath of life is a soul, a living being.
3. SPIRIT: The body of dust plus the breath of life from God (spirit—ruach) = a living being—soul.
4. MIND: If the intellectual part of a person is his mind, does a *“soul”* as it is used in today's theology have its own mind? Does a soul have any thoughts that our mind does not have? If not, according to today's theology, the only thing that will be in Heaven will have no thoughts.
5. HEART: The most commonly used characteristic of a person. (Genesis 6:5; Judges; 16:15, 17, 18, 20; Matthew 5:8; Luke 12:34; Romans 10:10; Hebrews 3:10). The heart is used in the place of the mind for the thing that the mind does, the seat of consciousness, intellect, affection, understanding and will, not the part of the body that pumps blood. (Matthew 13:15; 15:19; Mark 7:19; Luke 6:45; 9:47; Acts 8:21; 8:37; 28:27; Romans 10:9; 10:10; 1 Corinthians 2:9; 7:37; Hebrews 3:10; 4:12; 1 John 3:20-21). Has not the things said about the heart been transferred to a soul by those who believe a soul is an immortal being?

The whole man dies, the whole man is buried, the whole man is resurrected for judgment, and the whole person will live with Christ.

(1) The whole person dies and the whole person is buried.

- *“Aaron died and there he was buried”* (Deuteronomy 10:6).
- *“There they buried Abraham and his wife Sarah, there they buried Isaac...”* (Genesis 49:31).
- *“David that he both died and was buried and his tomb is with us to this day”* (Acts 2:29). David himself, not a part of David, is dead and in his tomb. And hundreds of others where the whole person died and was buried.

(2) The whole person is resurrected and judged, not just a deathless, immaterial something that had been in a person unto the death of the person.

- Stephen “*fell asleep*” (Acts 7:59).
- “*David slept with his fathers and was buried*” (1 Kings 2:10).

(3) The whole person will be raised and live with Christ, not Plato’s pagan soul that will never be dead, that will never be in the tombs or graves (plural graves), or will never be raised from the dead.

- “**ALL** that are in the **TOMBS** shall hear his voice, and shall come forth” (John 6:28-29). “**Graves**” (plural) in King James Version, but we are told by those that believe in souls that souls are never in “*graves.*”
- “*And I will raise HIM up at the last day*” (John 6:54), not will raise “it.”

ASHLEY S. JOHNSON, founder and president of the Johnson Bible College: “Generally the word ‘soul’ in the ordinary version should be life,” “The Resurrection And The Future Life,” page 336, Knoxville Lithographing Company, 1913.

**“MAN BECAME A LIVING BEING”** Genesis 1:26 “*Then God said, ‘Let Us make MAN in Our image,’*” not “Let Us make a soul in Our Image and put this soul in MAN unto the death of the MAN it is in.” Genesis 2:7 “*Then the Lord formed MAN of dust from the ground and breathed into his nostrils the breath of life; (not breathed into the body an immortal undying no substance soul, but breathed into “man” the breath of life, which both men and animals have), and MAN became a living being.*” Not a body plus an immortal soul, but “*a living being.*” Not two beings, a body being (a person) with an invisible soul being living in the person. How can the breath of life in your nose (breathing) be an immortal something that dose not breathe? The same “*man*” that was created “*in the image of God*” is the same “*man*” that was created “*male and female.*” It is “*man*” that was created “*male and female,*” man that is in the “*image of God;*” it is not an immaterial something in “*man*” that is in the image of God.

**The body of dust plus the breath of life = a living soul** (a living being—nehphesh), Genesis 2:7. The breath of life without the body would not be a person or animal; it would not be an immortal living being, not a nehphesh. **ALL** living creatures, whether they are animals or sea—dwelling creatures are souls (nehpheshs—living beings).

### **DEATH OF MANKIND—CREATION IN REVERSE**

*Creation*—body made of dust—breath of life from God = a living person (Genesis 2:7).

*Death*—breath of life returns to God—body returns to dust = a dead person (Ecclesiastes 12:7).

God formed **MAN**, not merely the body of man; it was **MAN** that was formed from the dust of the ground. It is **MAN**, not an invisible something that was put in the **MAN** but is not the **MAN**, not something that has no substance that is in the image of God. After Adam was put out of the garden he was still in the image of God, mankind is still in the image of God. If Adam was created innate immortal, then what was the purpose of the tree of life? If there was an immortal soul in Adam that was in Adam and it was created not subject to death, then the tree of life could have had no

purpose; an immortal soul would live forever with or without the tree of life; if there was a deathless soul that was in Adam, that deathless soul would not have died if it did or did not eat of the tree of life; it was Adam that could and did die for eating of the forbidden fruit, not a deathless soul that could not die; an immaterial soul could not eat of the forbidden fruit, or die for eating of the forbidden fruit.

Summary: The Bible says, "Man **BECAME** a living soul" is changed to, "Man had a soul put in him." There is a world of difference in a person **BEING** a living soul, and a person **HAVING** a soul in them; it is two difference gospels. Both man and animals **ARE** a living soul, neither one **HAVE** a soul that is living in them. If the breath of life in his nostrils in Genesis 2:7 makes a person have an immortal being (spirit) living in him or her that cannot die, then "all in whose nostrils was the breath of the spirit of life" in Genesis 7:22 would also prove all beasts, birds, and fish have the same immortal something being in them that cannot die.

**GOD IS A LIVING BEING** (Not God has a soul in Him). "Moreover, I will make My dwelling among you, and My soul (nehphesh) will not reject you" (Leviticus 26:11).

"I then will destroy your high places, and cut down your incense altars, and heap your remains on the remains of your idols; for My soul (nehphesh) shall abhor you" (Leviticus 26:30).

I know of no one that believes God has "an invisible, no substance" something in Him that can exist apart from Him. His soul (nehphesh) is His person, His being—life, not an immortal soul living in the immortal God, just as a soul of a person or animal is the life (the living being) of the person or animal, not an immortal being in them.

**ANIMALS ARE "SOULS"** nehphesh – a living creature—a living being, **not animals HAVE souls**. They do not HAVE an immaterial, invisible, or a no substance, deathless something living in them; they ARE a living being. In Genesis 1:20; 1:21; 1:24; 1:30, most translations try to hide this. WHY? Why is the same word translated "living creature" when used referring to animals, and the same word is changed and translated "soul" when used referring to a person? There is no excuse or defense for it; it is a deliberate attempt by the translators, who did not believe God's word as it is, to mislead their readers; all Bible teachers should point this out to all they teach (James 3:1). If "the living soul" (nehphesh) is an immortal living something that is in a person, then bugs, all sea creatures, all birds, and all animals have an immortal soul. In Genesis "Living soul" is used more of these creatures than it is of man.

Passages in which soul (nehphesh) is speaking of animals being souls, but it is deliberately hid from the English readers that the word nehphesh—souls is used.

1. Genesis 1:20 "Then God said, Let the waters swarm with swarms of living **souls** (soul—nehphesh, used referring to **animals**)."
2. Genesis 1:21 "And God created the great sea—monsters, and every living **soul** (soul—nehphesh, used referring to **animals**) that moves wherewith the waters swarmed."

3. Genesis 1:24 *"And God said, Let the earth bring forth living **souls** (soul–nehphesh, used referring to **animals**) after their kind, cattle, and creeping things, and beasts of the earth after their kind."*
4. Genesis 2:19 *"And out of the ground the Lord God formed every beast of the field and every bird of the sky, and brought them to the man to see what he would call them; and whatever the man called a **living creature** (soul–nehphesh, used referring to **animals**), that was its name."*
5. Genesis 1:30 *"And to every beast of the earth and to every bird of the sky and to every thing that moves on the earth which has **life** (soul–nehphesh, used referring to **animals**)."*
6. Genesis 9:10 *"And with ever **living creature** (soul–nehphesh, used referring to **animals**) that is with you, of the fowl, of the cattle, and of every beast of the earth with you."*
7. Genesis 9:12 *"This is the covenant which I am making between Me and you and ever **living creature** (soul–nehphesh, used referring to **animals**) that is with you."*
8. Genesis 9:15 *"And I will remember My covenant, which is between Me and you and ever **living creature** (soul–nehphesh, used referring to **man and animals**) of all flesh."*
9. Genesis 9:16 *"When the bow is in the cloud, then I will look upon it, to remember the everlasting covenant between God and ever **living creature** (soul–nehphesh, used referring to both **man and animals**) of all flesh that is on the earth."*
10. Leviticus 11:10 *"But whatever is in the seas and in the rivers, that do not have fins and scales among all the teeming life of the water, and among all the **living creatures** (soul–nehphesh, used referring to **animals**) that are in the water, they are detestable things to you."*
11. Leviticus 11:46 *"This is the law regarding the animal, and the bird, and every **living thing** (soul–nehphesh, used referring to **animals**) that swarms on the earth."*
12. Leviticus 17:11 *"For the **life** (soul–nehphesh, used referring to **animals**) of the flesh is in the blood, and I have given it to you on the altar to make atonement for your **souls** (lives—soul–nehphesh, used referring to **men**); for it is the blood by reason of the **life** (soul–nehphesh, used referring to **animals**) that makes atonement." The exact same word in the same sentence in the Hebrew (nehphesh) is translated **life** when referring to animals and is translated **soul** when referring to mankind!*
13. Leviticus 22:11 *"But if the priest buy any **souls** (soul–nehphesh, used referring to **animals** that are to be used as food) with his money, he shall eat of it, and he that is born in his house: they shall eat of his meat" King James Version.*
14. Leviticus 24:18 *"And the one who takes the **life** (soul–nehphesh, used referring to **animals**) of an animal shall make it good, **life** (soul–nehphesh, used referring to **animals**) for **life** (soul–nehphesh, used referring to **animals**)." "And he that killest a **beast** (soul–nehphesh) shall make it good, **beast** (soul–nehphesh) for **beast** (soul–nehphesh)" King James Version.*
15. Numbers 31:28 *"One **soul** (nehphesh life, used referring to both man and **animals**) of five hundred, of the persons and of the beeves, and of the asses, and of the sheep."*
16. Job 41:1 *"**Leviathan**," (soul–nehphesh, used referring to **animals**) is used six times in the Bible, probably a crocodile (Job 41:21). From over 870 times nehphesh is used, this is the only time nehphesh is translated **breath** in the Kings James Version. After all, they could not have a crocodile, a sea monster, or whatever it was having an "immortal soul" for then they would have to put its soul in Heaven or Hell for a soul in an immortal crocodile could never die, and it would have to be somewhere for all eternity.*
17. Ezekiel 47:9 *"And it will come about that every **living creature** (soul–nehphesh, used referring to **animals**) which swarms in every place where the river goes."*
18. *"For the **life** (soul–nehphesh, used referring to man and to **animals**) of every creature is the blood of it" Leviticus 17:14, Genesis 9:4.*
19. Deuteronomy 12:23 *"Only be sure not to eat the blood, for the blood is the **life** (soul–nehphesh, used referring to **animals**), and you shall not eat the **life** (soul–nehphesh, used referring to **animals**) with the flesh."*
20. Job 12:10 *"In whose hand is the **life** (soul–nehphesh, used referring to man and to **animals**) of every living thing, and the breath of all mankind?"*

21. Proverbs 12:10 "A righteous man has regard for the **life (soul—nehphesh, used referring to animals) of his beast.**"
22. And many more, but if this does not convict anyone that all living being are a soul nothing will. Note how the translators tried to hide this from their readers.

Many believe, "*The living soul*" in Genesis 2:7 is the one distinctive thing that makes a person different from an animal, but if this makes a person have an immortal soul in them, there is no way around all living things having immortal souls in them. **In these passages bugs, birds, fish, persons, are all a nehphesh, a "living beings," not a deathless, immaterial something.**

JOHN T. WILLIS: "Verse 7 affirm that a person's life is God—given. God enables a person to breathe, and thus, to be alive, as he does other creatures (see Genesis 7:22). Some have tried to justify a threefold division of man into flesh (or body), soul, and spirit from Genesis 2:7. They equate **dust** with flesh or body, **breath** with spirit, and insist that the last phrase of the verse must be translated as 'a living soul.' However, this understanding reads more into the biblical text than it really says. (1) The Hebrew words for 'flesh' or 'body' and 'spirit' do not occur in this passage. (2) The Hebrew expression nehphesh chayyah, which some insist on translating 'a living soul,' is used of fish and marine life in Genesis 1:30; and beasts and birds in 2:19. **If 'soul' means the eternal part of a person or the sum total of man's 'body' and 'spirit' in Genesis 2:7, it must mean the eternal part of a fish or the sum total of a fish's 'body' and 'spirit' in Genesis 1:20, 21; etc.** (3) The flow of the context in Genesis 2:7 indicates that **the word translated being in RSV (nehphesh) means the whole person. The author's emphasis is on the gift of life**" "The Living Word Commentary On the Old Testament—Genesis," page 103—104, Sweet Publishing Company, 1979, church of Christ.

ERDMANN DICTIONARY OF THE BIBLE: "Far from referring simply to one aspect of a person, 'soul' refers to the whole person" page 1245.

HOLMAN BIBLE DICTIONARY: "A human being is a totality of being, not a combination of various parts and impulses. **According to the Old Testament understanding, a person is not a body, which happens to possess a soul. Instead, a person is a living soul...**Because of God's breath of life; the man became 'a living being' (Gen. 2:7). A person thus is a complete totality, made up of human flesh, spirit (best understood as "the life-force"), and nehphesh (best understood as "the total self" but often translated as 'soul')" page 61.

INTERNATIONAL STANDARD BIBLE ENCYCLOPEDIA: "There is not dualism in the sense of separation, as though there could be full man either as body alone or as soul alone...together they make up the one man" Volume 1, page 134.

HASTINGS BIBLE DICTIONARY: "Soul is throughout the great part of the Bible simply the equivalent of 'life' embodied in living creature."

PARKHURST'S LEXICON: "As a noun nehphesh has been supposed to signify the spiritual part of man, or what we commonly call his soul. I must for myself confess that I can find no passages where it has undoubtedly this meaning." Parkhurst was a highly person that believer in an immortal soul, but confessed that he was unable to find his belief in the Old Testament.

T. PIERCE BROWN: "A consideration of EVERY passage in which these terms are used leads us to the consideration that the term **'soul' is a term that was applied in the Bible to every being that normally has sensory capacities (life)**, whether or not they have that capacity when the term is used referring to them. For example, one might see a body of a dead person and say, 'That poor soul is dead.' The Bible uses the term that way, even as we do, and it has nothing at all to do with the immorality or mortality of a soul. It simply means that the PERSON (the one who

HAD life—soul—sensory capacity) is dead." "Soul and Spirit" Gospel Advocate, June 14, 1979, church of Christ.

(1) *Nehphesh (soul)*: When *nehphesh* is used referring only to **animals**, it is translated nine different ways in the King James Version.

- 1). **Creature** (soul–nehphesh) Genesis 1:21; 1:24; 2:19; 9:10; 2:12; Leviticus 11:46
- 2). **Thing** (soul–nehphesh) Leviticus 11:10. Ezekiel 47:9
- 3). **Life** (soul–nehphesh) Genesis 1:20; 1:30; Leviticus 17:10-14—2 times
- 4). **The life** (soul–nehphesh) Genesis 9:4; Deuteronomy 12:23; Proverbs 12:10
- 5). **Beast** (soul–nehphesh) Leviticus 24:18
- 6). **A soul** (soul–nehphesh) Job 12:10
- 7). **Breath** (soul–nehphesh) Job 41:21
- 8). **A fish** (soul–nehphesh) Isaiah 19:10
- 9). **Her** (soul–nehphesh) Jeremiah 2:24

(2) *Nehphesh (soul)*: When it is used referring to BOTH **Animals** and **Man**, it is translated in three different ways.

- 1). **Creature** (soul–nehphesh) Genesis 9:15; 9:16
- 2). **The life** (soul–nehphesh) Leviticus 17:11; 17:14
- 3). **Soul** (soul–nehphesh) Numbers 31:28

(3) *Nehphesh (soul)*: When it has the animal appetites and desires of **Man**, when the material nature of a person is being referred to, *nehphesh* is translated in five different ways, (1) pleasure, (2) lust, (3) appetite, (4) greedy (5) and soul.

- 1). *Nehphesh* is translated **pleasure** (soul–nehphesh) Deuteronomy 23:24
- 2). *Nehphesh* is translated **lust** (soul–nehphesh) Psalm 78:18
- 3). *Nehphesh* is translated **appetite** (soul–nehphesh) Proverbs 23:2. Ecclesiastes 6:7
- 4). *Nehphesh* is translated **greedy** (soul–nehphesh) Isaiah 56:11
- 5). *Nehphesh* is translated **soul** (*Nehphesh*).

Fifteen material–physical things a "soul–person–nehphesh" does.

- 1). A soul **dried away** Numbers 11:6
- 2). A soul **can be utterly destroyed** Joshua 10:28
- 3). A soul **can be saved from physical danger by fleeing** (running away from danger) Jeremiah 51:6
- 4). A soul **can be kept back from the pit—grave** (for a short time) Job 33:18
- 5). A soul **can be deliver from death** Psalm 33:10
- 6). A soul **longs to eat flesh** Deuteronomy 12:20; **can be hunger** Proverbs 19:15; Proverbs 6:30; **can eat** Leviticus 7:25
- 7). A soul **lusts** Deuteronomy 12:15; 12:21; 14:26. A soul **lusts after** Deuteronomy 12:20
- 8). A soul **desires** Deuteronomy 14:26; 1 Samuel 2:16. A soul **desired figs** Micah 7:1
- 9). A soul **loathes** Deuteronomy 21:5; Proverbs 27:7
- 10). A soul **abhorred** Job 33:20; Psalm 107:18
- 12). A soul **breaths** 1 Kings 20:32
- 13). A soul **can be bought and sold with money** Leviticus 22:11; Ezekiel 27:13
- 14). A soul **can touch unclean things and be unclean**, bodies of dead persons, dead beast, creeping thing, Leviticus 5:2
- 15). A soul **can refused to touch** Job 6:7
- 16). A soul **can be dead, and a dead soul can be touched by living persons** Numbers 19:11

**A SOUL (PERSON—NEHPHESH) CAN BE HUNGRY, HAVE AN APPETITE, BE THIRSTY, EAT MEAT.** *"Men do not despise a thief if he steals to satisfy himself (nehphesh—living being) when he is hungry"* (Proverbs 6:30). An example of how well the translators hid the fact that this is the same word that they translated soul in other places when they did not want you to see it.

*"I will set my face against that **soul** (nehphesh—living being) that eats blood, and will cut him off from among his people"* (Leviticus 17:10).

*"And you shall say, I will eat flesh, because your **soul** (nehphesh—living being) desires to eat flesh; you may eat flesh, after all the desire of your **soul** (nehphesh—living being)"* (Deuteronomy 12:20). An immaterial something eating material flesh!

*"And it shall be as when a hungry man dreams and, behold, he eats; but he awakes, and his **soul** (nehphesh—living being) is empty; or as when a thirsty man dreams, and behold, he drinks; but he awakes, and, behold, he is faint, and his **soul** (nehphesh—living being) has appetite"* (Isaiah 29:8).

**SOUL IS THE LIFE, NOT AN IMMORTAL SOMETHING.** *"You shall not eat flesh with its **life** (nehphesh—living being)"* (Genesis 9:4).

*"For the **life** (nehphesh—living being) of the flesh"* (Leviticus 17:11; 17:14).

*"Those who seek my **life** (nehphesh—living being)"* (Psalm 38:12).

*"For those who sought the Child's **life** (soul—psukee) are dead"* (Matthew 2:20).

Many more passage that show that both nehphesh and psukee are the life of the person or animal, not an immortal something that has it's own life and lives after the person is dead. **IF A SOUL CAN DIE IT CANNOT BE IMMORTAL. Can whatever that was intended by the Hebrew word "nehphesh" die? Although it is often hid in many translations, the Bible says over 320 times that a nehphesh (soul):**

- 1). Can die
- 2). Can be killed by man
- 3). Or that it is already dead

If it can die, then whatever "nehphesh" is translated into **IS** something that can die. **If the many words that "nehphesh" is translated into is something that can die, then a soul cannot be immortal, and a soul can die.** To say that "nehphesh" (soul) is immortal and cannot die makes the Bible be wrong repeatedly. If a soul (nehphesh) is immortal and cannot die, the writers of the Bible did not know it.

**SOULS CAN DIE, SOULS CAN BE DEAD,  
SOULS CAN BE KILLED, BE MURDERED.**

(1). **Souls** (nehpheshs) **can die** Numbers 23:10, Ezekiel 18:4, 20, Joshua 11:11. *"They smote (killed) all the **souls** (nehphesh)"* King James Version. *"And they struck every **person** (nehpheshs) who was in it with the edge of the sword, utterly destroying them; there was no one left who breathed"* New American Standard Bible. An immortal soul can die or be utterly destroy. **Not only does the Bible not say a soul is immortal, it denies it by saying often that a soul can die, can be killed, or a soul is already dead.**

(2). **Souls** (nehpheshs) **can be murdered.** Deuteronomy 12:23; Numbers 35:11-15.

- (3). **Souls** (nehpheshs) **can be killed** Leviticus 24:17. An immortal soul can be killed? *"Kills any person"* (soul-nehphesh) Numbers 35:11, 15, 30, 31.
- (4). **Souls** (nehpheshs) **can be smote with the sword and utterly destroyed** Joshua 11:11.
- (5). **Souls** (nehpheshs) **can be slain**. An immortal soul can be slain? Deuteronomy 27:25.
- (6). **Souls** (nehpheshs) **can be destroyed**. An immortal soul can be destroyed? Leviticus 23:30.
- (7). **Souls** (nehpheshs) **can be taken away** 1 Kings 19:4.
- (8). **Souls** (nehpheshs) **can be sought to kill it** Jeremiah 44:30.
- (9). **Souls** (nehpheshs) **cannot be kept alive**. An immortal soul that cannot die, but it cannot be kept alive? Psalm 22:29.
- (10). **Souls** (nehpheshs) **have blood and can bleed**. *"The blood of the souls (nehpheshs) of the poor"* Jeremiah 2:34.

### **A FEW OF THE MANY PASSAGES IN THE KING JAMES VERSION THAT HID THE FACT THAT A SOUL CAN AND DOES DIE.**

- (1). *"Let us not kill him"* (soul—nehphesh). *"Let us not take his **life**"* (soul—nehphesh) New American Standard, Genesis 37:21.
- (2). *"**Life for life** (soul—nehphesh) Immortal soul for immortal soul?"* Exodus 21:23.
- (3). *"Any **dead body** (soul—nehphesh)"* Leviticus 21:11. Any dead soul?
- (4). *And he that killeth a beast shall make it good **beast** (soul—nehphesh) for **beast** (soul—nehphesh)"* Leviticus 24:17 K.J.V., *"**Life** (soul—nehphesh) for **life** (soul nehphesh) (soul for soul?)"*
- (5). *"Whosoever is defiled by he **dead**"* (soul—nehphesh) Numbers 5:2.
- (6). *"He shall come at no dead **body**"* (soul—nehphesh) Numbers 6:6 KJV. *"He shall not go near to a **dead person** (soul—nehphesh)."*
- (7). *"And he that killeth any **man** (soul—nehphesh) shall surely be put to death. And he that killeth a beast shall make it good **beast** (soul—nehphesh) for **beast** (soul—nehphesh)"* (soul for soul?) Leviticus 24:17-18 K.J.V. *"And if a man **takes the life** (soul—nehphesh) of any human being."* Does anyone believe a person can take the life of an immortal, immaterial, deathless soul?
- (8). *"Because of a **dead person** (soul—nehphesh)"* Numbers 6:11.
- (9). *"Defiled by the dead body of a **man** (soul—nehphesh)"* Numbers 9:6- 7.
- (10). *"Unclean by reason of a dead **body** (soul—nehphesh)"* Numbers 9:10.
- (11). *"He that toucheth the dead body of any man"* (soul—nehphesh) Numbers 19:11. *"The one who touches the **corpse** of any **person** (soul—nehphesh)."*
- (12). *"Whosoever toucheth the dead **body** (soul—nehphesh) of any man that is dead" "* Numbers 19:13 KJV. *"Anyone who touches a **corpse**, the **body** (soul—nehphesh) of a man who has died."* How could anyone touch the corpse of something that has no substance and cannot die? By today's definition of soul this says an immaterial deathless something is dead, and this immaterial something is touched by man. Why did they not translate this "soul"? It would have destroyed their pagan belief if they had.
- (13). *"Whosoever has **killed any person** (soul—nehphesh)"* Numbers 31:19.
- (14). *"Which killeth any **person** (soul—nehphesh)"* Numbers 35:11.
- (15). *"Everyone that kills any **person** (soul—nehphesh) "* Numbers 35:15.
- (16). *"Whoso kills any **person** (soul—nehphesh)"* Numbers 35:30.
- (17). *"And slay **him**"* (soul—nehphesh) Deuteronomy 19:6 KJV. *"And **take his life** (soul—nehphesh)"*
- (18). *"And strikes him so that **he** (soul—nehphesh) **dies**"* Deuteronomy 19:11.
- (19). *"**Life** (soul—nehphesh) for **life** (soul—nehphesh), eye for eye, tooth for tooth"* Deuteronomy 19:21.

- (20). "A man rises against his neighbor and **murders him** (soul—nehphesh)" Deuteronomy 22:26.
- (21). "Cursed be he who takes a bride to **slay an innocent person** (soul—nehphesh)" Deuteronomy 27:25.
- (23). "And **deliver our lives** (souls—nehpheshs) **from death**" Joshua 2:13. Not, "Save our immortal, deathless souls from death."
- (24). "Who **kills any person** (soul—nehphesh)" Joshua 20:9. Not, "Who kills any immortal soul that cannot be killed."
- (25). "That **kills any person** (soul—nehphesh)" Joshua 20:3.
- (26). "Let **me** (soul—nehphesh) **die**" Judges 16:30. "Let my soul that cannot die, die anyway?"
- (27). "And you **lose your life** (soul—nehphesh), **with the lives** (souls—nehphesh) of your household" Judges 18:25.
- (28). "If you do **not save your life** (soul—nehphesh) **tonight**" 1 Samuel 19:11.
- (29). "The **death of all the persons** (souls—nehpheshs) of your father's house" 1 Samuel 22:22.
- (30). "He that **seeks my life** (soul—nehphesh) **seeks your life** (soul—nehphesh)" 1 Samuel 22:23.
- (31). "He is **seeking my life** (soul—nehphesh)" 1 Samuel 20:1.
- (32). "And David saw that Saul was come out to **seek his life** (soul—nehphesh)" 1 Samuel 23:15
- (33). "Deliver him that smote his brother, **that we may kill him for the life** (soul—nehphesh) of his brother whom he slew" 2 Samuel 14:7.
- (34). "Who today have **saved your life** (soul—nehphesh) and the **lives** (souls—nehpheshs) of your sons and daughter, the **lives** (soul—nehphesh) of your wives, and the **lives** (souls—nehpheshs) of your concubines" 2 Samuel 19:5.
- (35). "Have you **asked for the life** (soul—nehphesh) of your enemies" 1 Kings 3:11.
- (36). "Prolong my **life** (soul—nehphesh)" Job 6:11. Prolong the life of an immortal, deathless soul?
- (37). "For himself that he might **die**, and said, It is enough; now, O Lord, **take my life** (soul—nehphesh)" 1 Kings 19:4.
- (38). "A man that dose violence to the **blood of any person** (soul—nehphesh) shall flee unto the pit; let no man stay him" Proverbs 28:17. A person has blood; if there were an immaterial soul it would have no blood.
- (39). "Ammon has sent Ishmael the son of Nethaniah to **take your life** (soul—nehphesh)...wherefore should he **take your life** (soul—nehphesh)" Jeremiah 40:14-15.
- (40). "By shedding blood and **destroying lives** (nehphesh—living being)" Ezekiel 22:27.

**PASSAGES IN THE KING JAMES VERSION THAT CLEARLY SAYS A SOUL CAN DIE, OR THAT A SOUL ALREADY DEAD.** The same word (nehphesh) that many times was translated life or person that will die, or is already dead is also translated into an immortal, deathless **soul** (nehphesh) that many tell us is in a **person** (nehphesh) unto the **person's** (nehphesh) death, but **it** (nehphesh) is not the **person** (nehphesh); nevertheless that deathless, immortal **soul** (nehphesh) will die just as the mortal **person** (nehphesh) that **it** (nehphesh) is in will die, or that **it** (nehphesh) is already dead.

- (1). "Whatsoever **soul** (life—nehphesh) it be that doest any work in the same day, the same **soul** (life—nehphesh) will I destroy" Leviticus 23:30 K. J. V. **That person** (soul—nehphesh) **will I destroy.**"
- (2). "And they smote all the **souls** (persons—nehpheshs) that were therein with the edge of the sword, **utterly destroying them; there were none left that breathed**" Joshua 11:11.
- (3). "He **utterly destroyed them and all the souls** (persons—nehpheshs) that were therein; he left none remaining" Joshua 10:28.

- (4). "And he smote it with the edge of the sword, and all the **souls** (persons–nehpheshs) that were therein; he left none remaining in it" Joshua 10:30.
- (5). "And all the **souls** (persons–nehpheshs) that were therein" Joshua 10:32.
- (6). "And all the **souls** (persons–nehpheshs) that were therein **he utterly destroyed** that day" Joshua 10:35.
- (7). "But he **utterly destroyed** it, and all the **souls** (persons–nehpheshs) that were therein" Joshua 10:37.
- (8). "And he captured it and its king and all its cities, and they smote them with the edge of the sword, and **utterly destroyed all the souls** (persons–nehpheshs) that were therein" Joshua 10:39. Can immortal souls be utterly destroyed with the sword?
- (9). "That his **soul** (person–nehphesh) was **vexed to death**" Judges 16:16 "**annoyed to death**" New American Standard Version. We say, "He worried me to dead."
- (10). "Yet thou huntest my **soul**" (life–nehphesh) 1 Samuel 24:11 KJV. "You **are lying in wait for my soul** (life–nehphesh) to take it" New American Standard Version.
- (11). "To pursue you and to **seek your soul** (life–nehphesh) 1 Samuel 25:29. Note: sometimes nehphesh was translated "seek your **soul**," and some times the same word was translated "seek your **life**." See 12-21 below. Did they think the Hebrew word nehphesh is a mortal person that both can and will die, or an immortal soul that cannot die?
- (12) "Which sought your **life**" (nehphesh) 2 Samuel 4:8
- (13) "Seeking my **life**" (nehphesh) 2 Samuel 16:11
- (14) "Take away my **life**" (nehphesh) 1. Kings 19:10
- (15) "They seek my **life**, (nehphesh) to take it away" 1 Kings 19:14
- (16) "Seek after my **soul**" (nehphesh) Psalm 35:4
- (17) "Seek after my **life**" (nehphesh) Psalm 38:12
- (18) "Seek after my **soul**" (nehphesh) Psalm 40:14
- (19) "Let all those that seek **thee**" (nehphesh) Psalm 40:16
- (20) "To slay **thee**" (nehphesh) Jeremiah 40:14
- (21). "The **blood of the souls** (persons–nehpheshs) of the innocent poor" Jeremiah 2:34. Dose an immaterial, invisible soul that is in a person, that has no substance, but it has blood!
- (22). "To **slay the souls** (persons–nehpheshs) that should not die and to save the **souls** (persons–nehpheshs) alive **that should not live**" Ezekiel 13:19. If a soul were something that is immortal and cannot die, this passage is completely nonsense.
- (23). "He spared not their **soul** (nehphesh) from death" (Psalms 78:50).
- (24). "Like a roaring lion ravening the prey: they have **devoured souls** (nehphesh—living being)" Ezekiel 22:25.
- (25) "The **soul** of every **living thing**" (nehphesh—living being) King James Version (Job 12:10). "In whose hand is the **life** (nehphesh) of every living thing."
- (26). "He did not spare their **soul** (nehphesh—living being) from death, but gave over their life to the plague, and smote all the firstborn in Egypt" (Psalm 78:50).
- (27). "The **soul** (person–nehphesh) who sins **will die**" Ezekiel 18:4.
- (28). Ezekiel 18:20
- "The **SOUL** (person–nehphesh) that sins, **IT SHALL DIE**" King James Version.
  - "The **PERSON** (nehphesh) who sins **SHALL DIE**" New Revised Standard Version.
  - "The **PERSON** (nehphesh) who sins **WILL DIE**" New American Standard Version, and New Revised English Bible.
  - "It is the **PERSON** (nehphesh) who sins that **WILL DIE**" The Revised English Bible.

- *"The **PERSON** (nehphesh) who sins is the one who **WILL DIE**"* New Century Version, Holman, and Christian Standard Bible.
- *"It is for a **MAN'S** (nehphesh) own sins that he **WILL DIE**"* The Living Bible.
- *"The **PERSON** (nehphesh) who sins will be the one who **DIES**"* New Living Translation.
- *"Only **THOSE** (persons—nehphesh) who sin will be **PUT TO DEATH**"* Contemporary English Version.

*"Only **THE ONE** (person—nehphesh) who sins **SHALL DIE**"* The New American Bible (Catholic), and Today's New International Version.

- *"The **PERSON** (nehphesh) who sins **WILL DIE**"* God Word Translation.
- *"**PEOPLE** (nehphesh) **WILL DIE** because of their own sins"* New International Reader's Version.

This is a person dying (being put to death) for a sin under the Old Testament law, but is almost always used referring to something that cannot die by those who believe there is a soul that will not die when the person it was in dies. **When this is misapply, as it often is, to some immaterial something that is believed to be in a person; this is an undeniable statement that the immortal something that they say cannot die will die, that if there ware a soul it will not have everlasting life with torment.** This is definitely not what they wanted, but what they made in their attempt to make there be a soul that is immortal. If "soul" means "an immortal something that cannot die," then James said, "Shall save an immortal something, which cannot die, from death" James 5:20. This theology makes nonsense of the Bible.

The divine sentence, *"The soul that sins, it shall die"* has been revised to say, "The soul that sins, it shall live eternally in torment." Not only must this be changed from "die" to "eternal life" but after making the change then torment must be added; "a soul that sins, it shall live forever being eternally torment by God." To make it teach what many want it to teach, first, God's word must be changed, and then added to.

*"Shall die"* in Ezekiel 18:4 is in contrast to *"shall surely live"* in Ezekiel 18:9. It is life or death of a living person under the Law that is being spoken of, not two kinds of life after death; if death is only a separation of soul and body as men teach, what is the death of a soul; how can a soul that is alive but separated from God be dead?

**(30). IN OVER 320, over one-third of the about 870 times that nehphesh, the Hebrew word that is translated or mistranslated soul, is used:**

- **A soul (nehphesh) is already dead.**
- **A soul (nehphesh) can die, and can be killed.**
- **A soul (nehphesh) can be buried.**
- **A soul (nehphesh) can be sought to be killed.**
- **A soul (nehphesh) can be murdered.**
- **A soul (nehphesh) can be delivered from death.**
- **A soul (nehphesh) can be smote (killed).**
- **A soul (nehphesh) can be affected.**
- **A soul (nehphesh) can be cut off.**

In most of these passages the translators of the King James and other translations have hidden from the readers that the very thing they believe to be immortal and cannot die, that it can and does die. By picking when they translated *nehphesh* into soul and picking when to translate "*nehphesh*" into "life," "person" and many other words; can such hiding have been anything more than a deliberate deceiving because they wanted to teach Plato's Greek philosophy of a deathless souls in place of the resurrection of dead persons, but even in the King James Version there are many passages which says that souls (*nehphesh*s) can and do die, or that souls are already dead. The *nehphesh* (that is often mistranslated into the pagan Greek deathless, no subjects "soul") is a physical person or animal, whether they are living or dead.

### **SOULS CAN BE KILLED BY OTHERS**

- (1). *"We feared greatly for our **soul** (*nehphesh*—life, living being) because of you"* (Joshua 9:24). They feared for their life, not for a deathless being that was in them.
- (2). *"All the men who were seeking your **soul** (*nehphesh*—life) are dead"* (Exodus 4:19).
- (3). *"Saul had come out to seek his life (*nehphesh*—life, living being) while David was in the wilderness"* (1 Samuel 23:15).
- (4). They had to flee to save their **souls** (*nehphesh*—life, living being) (2 King 7:7), their **lives** (*nehphesh*—living being) would be utterly destroyed *"with the edge of the sword"* or other weapons (Joshua 10:27; 10:30; 10:32; 10:35; 10:37; 10:39).
- (5). *"And deliver our **lives** (*nehphesh*—living being) from death"* (Joshua 2:13).

**SOULS CAN DIE FOR LACK OF FOOD.** Not only could souls (*nehphesh*—living beings) be killed by their enemies, but souls (*nehphesh*—living beings) could also die for lack of food (Lamentations 1:11; Numbers 11:6).

**SOULS CAN EAT FOOD.** Leviticus 7:18; 7:20; 7:25; 7:27 and others. Also, Genesis 9:4; 9:5; 12:13; 17:14; 19:17; 19:19; 19:20; 32:30; 32:31; 35:18; 37:21; Exodus 21:23; 30:12; 30:15; 31:14; Leviticus 7:21; 17:11; 17:12; 17:14; 19:8; 21:1; 21:11; 22:3; 24:17; 24:18; Numbers 5:2; 6:6; 9:6; 9:7; 9:10; 9:18; 19:11; 19:13; 19:20; 23:10; 31:19; 35:11; 35:15; 35:30; 35:31; Deuteronomy 12:23; Joshua 11:11; 20:3; 20:9; Judges 5:28; 12:3; 16:16; 18:25; Ruth; 4:15; 1 Samuel 1:19; 1:20; 1:23; 23:15; 23:20; 25:29; 28:9; 28:21; 2 Samuel 4:8; 14:7; 16:11; 19:5; 19:6; 1 Kings 1:12; 1:29; 3:11; 17:21; 17:22; 19:10; 19:14; 20:32; 2 Kings 1:13; 19:24; 1 Chronicles 11:19; 2 Chronicles 11:11; Esther 7:7; Job 13:14; 30:16; 33:18; 33:22; 36:14; Psalm 7:2; 17:13; 22:20; 22:21; 22:29; 22:30; 31:13; 33:19; 35:4; 35:17; 38:12; 38:13; 70:2; 70:3; 71:10; Proverbs 1:19; 7:23; 12:10; 13:3; 23:14; Isaiah 10:18; 43:4; Jeremiah 2:34; 4:30; 34:20-21; 38:2; 38:16; 39:18; 40:15; 44:30; 45:5; 49:37; Ezekiel 17:17; 18:4; 18:20; 18:27; 22:25; 22:27; Jonah 4:3; 4:6.

Summary: **The "*nehphesh* (soul)" of the Old Testament is an earthly being, man, animal, or sea creature; souls (*nehphesh*) can be either living souls or dead souls (dead persons or animals). The "*nehphesh* (soul)" can die, it can be dead, be killed, be sought to kill, be smote, die from a lack of food or water, be cut off, be murdered, be delivered from death, be born, live, sorrow, eat, drink water, desire, be discontented, be grieved, be bound with a bond, be affected, loathes, lust, have anguish, etc. Not one of the about 870 times that *nehphesh***

is used does it have reference to an invisible, immaterial something in a person that has no substance and cannot die. **Nehphesh in the Old Testament and psukee in the New Testament are together used about 967 times with over one-third being associated with the death of a soul (person).** Some (nehpheshs—souls) are dead. Some are dying. Some are in fear of death. Some have those who are trying to kill them. Some are saved from death, etc. **On the other hand, in the 976 times soul is used, not one time is a soul said to be deathless or immortal.**

**In about thirty-two passages souls (nehpheshs) are spoken of as being killed by man** *“And he that kills any man (nehphesh) shall surely be put to death. And he that kills a beast (nehphesh) shall make it good; beast (nehphesh) for beast (nehphesh)”* Leviticus 24:17-18. Nehphesh—soul is used four times in the Hebrew, but because of the bias of the translators not one time is it translated soul in the King James Version. They changed soul into both man beast to deliberately hide from their readers that animals, the same as men, are souls—that both are living beings that can and do die. (See Joshua 10:28; 30; 32; 35; 37; 39; Deuteronomy 27:25; Leviticus 24:17-18).

THE WAY THE FOUR TIMES NEHPHSH IS USED IN LEVITICUS 24:17-18 IS TRANSLATED.

As it is in the Hebrew

- *“And he that kills any **NEHPHESH** shall surely be put to death. And he that kills a **NEHPHESH** shall make it good; **NEHPHESH** for **NEHPHESH**.”*

As it is in the King James Version

- *“And he that kills any **MAN** shall surely be put to death. And he that kills a **BEAST** shall make it good; **BEAST** for **BEAST**.”*

As it is in the New American Standard Bible

- *“And if a man takes the **LIFE** of any human being, he shall surely be put to death. And the one who takes the **LIFE** of an animal shall make it good, **LIFE** for **LIFE**.”*

**In about thirteen passages souls (nehpheshs) of men are said to be actually dead** (see Numbers 6:6; Leviticus 21:11). In many of these passages, the King James Version and others translated nehphesh as life or body; and the English reader cannot see that animals are **souls** (are living beings), and that man kills souls of both men and animals, and sometimes souls are actually dead. Under the Law anyone that touched a dead body was unclean. *“Dead body”* (nehphesh) Leviticus 21:11 *“Dead body”* (nehphesh) Numbers 6:6. Corpses are dead souls, and anyone who came in contact with a dead soul was unclean.

This clearly shows that the meaning of the Hebrew word nehphesh is something that is not immortal, and that it can die, or that it can be already dead. There is no other word in the Bible that could be translated into Plato's immortal soul; therefore, the translators had to use this word and hide, the best they could, the fact that a nehphesh can and does die.

Of the hundreds of times Nehphesh is used in the Old Testament only five are used in the same passage as sheol. Of these five in the Kings James Version sheol is translated Hell three times (Psalm 16:10; 86:13; Proverbs 23:14). The other two they had to translate grave (Psalm 30:3; 89:48). In all five a nehphesh (soul–life) is delivered from or brought up from sheol (grave). What is said in all five is as far from today’s teaching on Hell as it is possible to be. The New International Version translates sheol into grave in all five passages, and translates nehphesh into, (1) me, (2) himself, (3) me, (4) me, (5) and soul.

In most translations nehphesh is sometimes translated to be immortal, sometime as mortal, often in the same passages. How could it be known when the same word was mortal and when it was immortal? The only answer is that the translators were trying to put Plato’s immortal soul in the Bible by mistranslating when they could, but many times found nehphesh would not make sense if translated into something immortal and deathless.

=====

The Companion Bible, Appendix 13 says nehphesh (life—soul) is used:

- Of the lower animals (nehphesh–soul) in 22 passages
- Of the lower animals and man (nehphesh–soul) in 7 passages
- Of man (nehphesh–soul) as an individual person in 53 passages
- Of man (nehphesh–soul) as exercising certain powers or performing certain acts in 96 passages
- Of man (nehphesh–soul) as possessing animal appetites and desires in 92 passages
- Of man (nehphesh–soul) as exercising mental faculties and manifesting certain feelings, affection and passions in 231 passages
- Of man (nehphesh–soul) being cut off by God and as being killed or slain by man in 54 passages
- Of man (nehphesh–soul) as being mortal, subject to death of various kinds, from which it can be saved and delivered and life prolonged in 243 passages
- Of man (nehphesh–soul) as actually dead in 13 passages

=====

Just one of the many examples of the absurdity of the translations of nehphesh in the King James Version with the meaning of "soul" as it is used today, an invisible, no substance something that is in a person that no one has ever seen, that no one can see this immortal something that cannot be seen. *"For mine enemies speak against me; and they that lay wait for my **soul** (nehphesh) take counsel together"* (Psalm 71:10). How could anyone lay in wait (ambush) for an undying invisible something that is now in a person that no one can see? How could anyone kill something that cannot die even if they could see it?

**"Deliver my soul"** (nehphesh) Psalm 17:13 in today's English would be **"Save my life"** (nehphesh).

- *"They also that **seek after my life**"* (soul—nehphesh). Psalm 38:12. *"That **seeks after my soul**"* (nehphesh). Psalm 40:14. Both soul and life are from the same word (nehphesh). Why were the translators so inconsistent; life and soul, according to the theology they believed, are two completely different things, yet they translated both from the same Hebrew word many times.

- *"They smote all the **souls** (nehphesh)"* Joshua 11:11 in today's English would be, "They killed all the people." *"Whosoever kills any **person**"* (soul—nehphesh) Joshua 20:9. Again, both soul and person are translated from the same Hebrew word; they could smite (kill) all the persons, but to smite (kill) all the deathless souls would be completely impossible, but the King James Version says they did the impossible.
- *"They that lay wait for my **soul**"* (nehphesh) in today's English would be, "They that are waiting in ambush for my **life**" Psalm 70:10.

Many more times "**soul**" (nehphesh) would only make sense if translated "*life*." To apply today's meaning, "An undying invisible something that is now in a person" makes many passages be total nonsense. Today's meaning of "*soul*" is very different from the meaning of nehphesh in Biblical times, which makes "*soul*" be a mistranslation. When anyone reads the Bible, and reads "*soul*," and knows only what the word "*soul*" means today, they cannot understand what God said. Many English translations use "*soul*" and "*person*" interchangeable. The Revised Standard uses "*person*" frequently where the King James used "*soul*." The problem is that most English readers would not know that when the translators said a "*person*" died, that the translators are hiding the fact that "*person*" (soul—nehphesh) is the same word that is translated "*soul*" in many places. Why did some translators do this? Was it because they believed an immortal "*soul*" cannot die, but a person can die? If a "*soul*" (nehphesh) dies, it would not be immortal; therefore, they were forced to use "*person*" or "*life*" in many places to hide the fact from you that a nehphesh can die. The truth is that they were trying to put "soul" with today's meaning in the Bible despite the fact that it is not. If they had been consistent in translating, they would not have been able to add the doctrine of an undying soul in the Bible.

*"The Lord of hosts has sworn by **Himself** (soul—nehphesh)"* (Jeremiah 51:14). By His own being or person. God *"could swear by no one greater, He swore by **Himself** (psukee—soul)"* (Hebrews 6:13). Not even the King James translators wanted God to have an invisible something in Him that would live after He was dead. God's nehphesh and man's nehphesh are their being, person, not an invisible something that is in God or in a person.

**All the Old Testament words, which are translated life, spirit, breath, or soul, are all used referring to both persons and animals. Every word that is used to prove a person has an immortal soul or an immortal spirit would also prove all breathing creatures have an immortal soul or an immortal spirit if they proved a person does.**

**(1) NEHPHESH/SOUL—LIFE—LIVING BEING** is used to describe all living beings.

- **Animal, birds, reptiles, and insects** have this same nehphesh (soul—life) that a person has. Sea creatures, birds (Genesis 1:20), every living creature that moves in water or on land are a living soul (Genesis 1:21). Every beast, bird, and insect is a soul—life (nehphesh—a living being).
- **"Man became a living being"** Genesis 2:7. See Genesis 2:19; 9:4; 9:10; 9:12; 9:15-16.

(2) **NSHAHMAH/BREATH** is also used to describe all living being/breath of life; all living things that breathes (Used 24 times in the Hebrew Old Testament).

- **Used to describe man**, "Breathed into his nostrils the **BREATH** of life" Genesis 2:7; 1 Kings 17:17; Job 27:3.
- **Used to describe man and animals**, both man and animals have the same nshahmah (breath of life-spirit).
  - "All in whose nostrils was the **BREATH** (nshahmah) of the spirit of life, of all that was on the dry land, died" Genesis 7:22. All living being, man, and animals.
  - "But of the cities of these peoples, that Jehovah your God gives you for an inheritance, you shall save alive nothing that **BREATHS** (nshahmah)" Deuteronomy 20:16. All living being, both man and animals.
  - "So Joshua smote all the land, the hill—country, and the South, and the lowland, and the slopes, and all their kings: he left none remaining, but he utterly destroyed all that **BREATHED** (nshahmah)" Joshua 10:40. All living being, both man and animals that had life, that breathed (nshahmah) were killed.
  - "And they smote all the souls that were therein with the edge of the sword, utterly destroying them; there were none left that **BREATHED** (nshahmah)" Joshua 11:11. All living being, both man and animals that breathed were killed.
  - Also, Joshua 11:14; 1 Kings 15:29; Job 34:14; Psalm 150:6.

Not one of the 24 times nshahmah is used says anything about anything that is immortal. Nshahmah as it is translated in the New International Version.

1. Genesis 2:7 "Breathed into his nostrils the **breath** (nshahmah) of life."
2. Genesis 7:22 "Everything on dry land that had the **breath of life** (nshahmah) in its nostrils died."
3. Deuteronomy 20:16 "Do not leave alive anything that **breathes** (nshahmah)."
4. Joshua 10:40 "He totally destroyed all who **breathed** (nshahmah)."
5. Joshua 11:11 "They totally destroyed them, not sparing anything that **breathed** (nshahmah)."
6. Joshua 11:14 "But all the people they put to the sword until they completely destroyed them, not sparing anyone that **breathed** (nshahmah)."
7. 2 Samuel 22:16 "At the blast of **breath** (nshahmah) from his nostrils."
8. 1 Kings 15:29 "He did not leave Jeroboam anyone that **breathed** (nshahmah), but destroyed them all."
9. 1 Kings 17:17 "He grew worse and worse, and finally stopped **breathing** (nshahmah)."
10. Job 4:9 (Hebrew dualism in Job—the same thing said in two different ways).
  - "At the **breath** (ruach) of God they are destroyed:
  - At the **blast** (nshahmah) of his anger they perish."
11. Job 26:4
  - "Who has helped you utter these words?
  - And whose **spirit** (nshahmah) spoke from your mouth?"
12. Job 27:3
  - "As long as I have life (ruach) within me,
  - The **breath** (nshahmah) of God in my nostrils."
13. Job 32:8
  - "But it is the spirit (ruach) in a man,
  - The **breath** (nshahmah) of the Almighty."
14. Job 33:4

- *"The Spirit of God made me;*
- *The **breath** (nshahmah) of the Almighty gives me life."*
- 15. Job 34:14-15 *"If it was his intention and he withdrew his spirit and **breath** (nshahmah).*
  - *All mankind would perish together,*
  - *And man would return to the dust."*
- 16. Job 37:10
  - *"The tempest comes out from its chamber, the cold from the driving winds.*
  - *The **breath** (nshahmah) of God produces ice, and the broad waters become frozen."*
- 17. Psalm 18:15 *"O Lord, at the **blast** (nshahmah) of breath from your nostrils."*
- 18. Psalm 150:6 *"Let everything that has **breath** (nshahmah) praise the Lord."*
- 19. Proverbs 20:27 *"The lamp of the Lord searches the **spirit** (nshahmah) of a man; it searches out his inmost being."*
- 20. Isaiah 2:22 *"Stop trusting in man, who has but a **breath** (nshahmah) in his nostrils."*
- 21. Isaiah 30:33 *"The **breath** (nshahmah) of the Lord, like a stream of burning sulfur, sets it ablaze."*
- 22. Isaiah 42:5 *"Who gives **breath** (nshahmah) to its people, and life to those who walk on it."*
- 23. Isaiah 57:16 *"The **breath** (nshahmah) of man that I have created." "Spirit" in King James Version.*
- 24. Daniel 10:17 *"My strength is gone and I can hardly **breathe** (nshahmah)."*
  - Of the twenty—four times nshahmah is in the Hebrew, it is translated soul only three times in the King James Version, Job 26:4, Proverbs 20:27; Isaiah 57:16.

### (3) Ruach/spirit—breath: Is used of:

- **God** (Exodus 15:8; 2 Samuel 22:16; Isaiah 4:4)
- **Spirit of the Lord** (Zephaniah 4:6)
- **Heavenly being** (Psalm 104:4)
- **All flesh, birds, cattle, beasts, and every creeping thing**—all have the same spirit (ruach) as man (Genesis 7:22).
- **Man and beasts**, *"I am bringing the flood of water upon the earth, to destroy all flesh in which is the **BREATH** (ruach) of life, from under heaven; everything that is on the earth shall perish"* (Genesis 6:17). Also Ecclesiastes 3:19
- **Man** (Ecclesiastes 12:5-7; Psalm 104:29) See Genesis 6:17; 7:15; 54:27; Job 4:9

Both ruach and nshahmah have very near if not the same meaning.

- *"All in whose nostrils was the **breath** (nshahmah) of the spirit of life, died"* (Genesis 7:22).
- *"To destroy all flesh in which is the **breath** (ruach) of life"* (Genesis 6:17).

Both are used in Hebrew dualism in Job three times as two ways of saying the same thing (Job 4:9; 27:3; 32:8).

- Job 4:9:
  - *"By the breath (ruach) of God they perish,*
  - *And by the blast (nshahmah) of His anger they come to an end"*
- Job 27:3:
  - *"All the while my breath (nshahmah) is in me,*
  - *And the spirit (ruach) of God is in my nostrils."*
- Job 32:8:
  - *"But it is a spirit (ruach) in man,*
  - *And the breath (nshahmah) of the Almighty gives them understanding."*

The above is an example of the many times ruach and nshahmush seem to be used interchangeable; they are both the breath, or both the life of a living being (man or beast). Nshahmah is limited to the air or breath of the mouth of any breathing being; ruach also means any breathing being, but has a much broader use in that it is also used of wind and any air movement. Neither the breath (nshahmah) of a person, or the breath (ruach) of a person is not an immortal entity added to the person that has life in itself apart from the life of the person any more than the breath (nshahmah) of God, or the breath (ruach) of God is an entity that has life in itself apart from God.

**RUACH IS TRANSLATED SIXTEEN DIFFERENT WAYS IN THE KING JAMES VERSION.** Of about 389 times ruach is used in the Old Testament it is translated wind about 90 times, breath 28 times, blast 4 times, air, windy, tempest, whirlwind, tempest, and breath. Both ruach and nshahmah are basically translated with the same words, both have something to do with the breath or air without which there would be no life; in Genesis 2:7 it was when God breathed into Adam's nostrils the breath of life (nshahmah) that Adam became a living being.

There is no suggestion in any one of the many times ruach is used referring both to mankind and to animals that ruach is an immaterial, immortal something that has it's own life and will live after the death of the person or animal that it is in.

**(1) Ruach translated BREATH of man and beast (ruach—spirit)**

- "All in whose nostrils was the *BREATH* (ruach) of life" (Genesis 6:17; 7:15).
- "*By the BREATH* (ruach) of his mouth" (Genesis 6:17; Psalm 104:29, Job 15:30).
- "*By the BREATH* (ruach—spirit) of his mouth" (Job 15:30).
- "*All in whose nostrils was the BREATH* (ruach—spirit) of life" (Genesis 7:22).
- "*To destroy all flesh in which is the BREATH* (ruach—spirit) of life" (Genesis 6:17).
- "*So they went into the ark to Noah, by twos of all flesh in which was the BREATH* (ruach—spirit) of life" (Genesis 7:15).
- "*No BREATH* (ruach—spirit) in them" (Jeremiah 10:14). Why not, "No SPIRIT (ruach—spirit) in them" or "Takes away their SPIRIT (ruach—spirit)" (Psalm 104:29)? How did the translators know when the same word was wind, breath, spirit, blast, air, mind, courage, cool, or anger? **In English the meaning of some of these words are not even close to being the same; how are those who read their translation to know that these are all the same word in the Hebrew?** Idols are described as not having breath (ruach) (Habakkuk 2:19) which means idols have no life just as a person without breath has no life.
- "*Every goldsmith...his molten images are deceitful, and there is no BREATH* (ruach—spirit) in them" (Jeremiah 51:17).
- "*Takes away their BREATH* (ruach—spirit), they expire, and return to their dust" (Psalm 104:29).
- "*As one dies so dies the other; indeed, they all have the same BREATH* (ruach—spirit) and there is no advantage for man over beast" (Ecclesiastes 3:19).

**(2) Ruach translated WIND (ruach—spirit)**

- "*God made a WIND* (ruach—spirit) to pass over" (Genesis 8:1).
- "*Like the chaff, which the WIND* (ruach—spirit) drives" (Psalm 1:4).

- "You did blow with your WIND (ruach—spirit)" (Exodus 15:10).
- "Clouds and WIND (ruach—spirit) without rain" (Proverbs 25:14).
- "My escape from the WINDY (ruach—spirit) storm" (Psalm 55:8).
- "A destroying WIND (ruach—spirit)" (Jeremiah 51:1).
- "A strong WIND (ruach—spirit)" (Job 8:2).
- "You shall scatter in the WIND (ruach—spirit)" (Ezekiel 5:2).
- "An east WIND (ruach—spirit)" (Exodus 10:13).
- "A mighty strong west WIND (ruach—spirit)" (Exodus 10:19).
- Also Psalm 1:4 and Exodus 15:10

(3) Ruach translated WINDY "My escape from the WINDY (ruach—spirit) storm" (Psalm 55:8).

(4) Ruach translated WHIRLWIND "A WHIRLWIND (ruach—spirit) came out of the north" (Ezekiel 1:4).

(5) Ruach translated TEMPEST "An horrible TEMPEST (ruach—spirit)" (Psalm 11:6).

(6) Ruach translated BLAST "And at the BLAST (ruach—spirit) of Thy (God's) nostrils (a blast of air) the waters were piled up" (Exodus 15:8). Also 2 Samuel 22:6.

(7) Ruach translated AIR "That no AIR (ruach—spirit) can come between them" (Job 41:16; 41:8).

(8) Ruach translated MIND "A grief of MIND (ruach—spirit)" (Genesis 26:35, Proverbs 29:11).

(9) Ruach translated COURAGE "Neither did there remain any more COURAGE (ruach—spirit) in them" (Joshua 5:1).

(10) Ruach translated COOL "Walking in the garden in the COOL (ruach—spirit) of the day" (Genesis 3:8).

(11) Ruach translated ANGER "Their ANGER (ruach—spirit) was abated" (Judges 8:3).

(12) Ruach translated SIDE (Jeremiah 52:23; Ezekiel 42:16; 42:17; 42:18; 42:19; "side wind" in footnote).

(13) Ruach translated QUARTERS (ruach—spirit) (1 Chronicles 9:24).

(14) Ruach translated SPIRITUAL (ruach—spirit) (Hosea 9:7).

(15) Ruach translated VAIN (ruach—spirit) (Job 15:2; 16:3).

(16) Ruach translated SPIRIT (ruach—spirit) (Job 27:3).

An example of how other translations differ on the sixteen ways (above) ruach is translated in the King James Version.

	King James Version	New International Version	New Revised Standard Version	The Living Bible
1 Genesis 6:17	breath	breath	breath	breath
2 Genesis 8:1	wind	wind	wind	wind
3 Psalm 55:8	windy	tempest	raging wind	storm
4 Ezekiel 1:4	whirlwind	windstorm	stormy wind	storm
5 Psalm 11:6	tempest	wind	wind	wind
6 2 Samuel 22:16	blast	blast	blast	blast
7 Job 41:16	air	air	air	air
8 Genesis 26:35	mind	grief	better life	bitter
9 Joshua 5:1	courage	courage	spirit	courage
10 Genesis 3:8	cool	cool	cool	
11 Judge 8:3	anger	resentment	anger	calmed down
12 Jeremiah 52:23	side	side	side	side
13 1 Chron. 9:24	quarters	side	side	side
14 Hosea 9:7	spiritual	inspired	spirit	inspired
15 Job 15:2	vain	winded	windy	windbag
16 Job 27:3	spirit	east wind	breath	breath

Why was the same word translated "By the **BREATH** (ruach) of his mouth" (Job 15:30), and then "And the **SPIRIT** (ruach) of God in my nostrils" (Job 27:3)? Many of the sixteen ways ruach is translated have nothing in common; their meanings are not even close to being the same.

Were they saying God has an “immaterial invisible” (E. W. Vine) something in Him that can exist after His death, as we are told that mankind has? There is no possible way that the translators could have known (1) when the same word (ruach) was breath of any mortal being, (2) and when it was an immortal deathless something that does not breath air; the two meaning are nothing alike. “*You take away their **breath (ruach)**, they die, and return to their dust. You send forth your **spirit (ruach)**, they are created: and you renew the face of the earth*” (Psalm 105:29-30). (1) When God take away ruach they die; (2) when God sends ruach, they live. The spirit as it is used today cannot die; therefore, this word (ruach) could not be translated spirit, but when the earth is renewed by new life, the translated give this new life a spirit (ruach), not just breath (ruach).

(1). HOLMAN CHRISTIAN STANDARD BIBLE “*When You hide Your face, they are terrified; When You take away their **breath (ruach)**, they die and return to the dust. When You send Your **breath (ruach)**, they are created, and You renew the face of the earth.*”

(2). AMPLIFIED BIBLE “*When You hide Your face, they are troubled and dismayed; when You take away their **breath (ruach)**, they die and return to their dust. When You send forth Your Spirit and give them **breath (ruach)**, they are created, and You replenish the face of the ground.*”

(3). COMMON ENGLISH BIBLE “*But when you hide your face, they are terrified; when you take away their **breath (ruach)**, they die and return to dust. When you let loose your **breath (ruach)**, they are created, and you make the surface of the ground brand—new again.*”

(4). NEW CENTURY VERSION “*When you turn away from them, they become frightened. When you take away their **breath (ruach)**, they die and turn to dust. When you **breathe (ruach)** on them, they are created, and you make the land new again.*”

(5). HOLMAN CHRISTIAN STANDARD BIBLE “*When You hide Your face, they are terrified; when You take away their **breath (ruach)**, they die and return to the dust. When You send Your **breath (ruach)**, they are created, and You renew the face of the earth.*”

Does the number of times “Spirit” is used in the difference translations show the scholars that translated them were easing away from the King James Version?

- 236 times in King James Version
- 221 times in New American Standard Bible
- 193 times in New International Version
- 167 times in New Living Translation
- 79 times in Contemporary English Version
- 131 times in The Message
  - “And the **SPIRIT (ruach)** of God in my nostrils” (Job 27:3)
  - “**SPIRIT (ruach)** of God” (Genesis 1:2)
  - “And the **SPIRIT (ruach)** shall return unto God” (Ecclesiastes 12:7)
  - “And the **SPIRIT (ruach)** of the beast that goes downward” (Ecclesiastes 3:21)

SPIRIT (ruach—spirit) in passages that has reference to attitude, behavior, thinking, disposition, mood, or temperament. As “A happy disposition,” “good attitude” or “bad mood.” None of these passages are speaking of an immortal, no substance something that has it own life, and it will live even after the person it is in

is dead; the teaching of Plato says a soul will live without a resurrection, it will live freed from the person it was trapped in.

- "A lying SPIRIT (ruach)" (1 Kings 22:23)
- "The SPIRIT (ruach) of jealousy came" (Genesis 1:2; 41:8, Numbers 5:14; 5:30)
- "The SPIRIT (ruach) of heaviness" (Isaiah 61:3)
- "The SPIRIT (ruach) of jealousy came" (Numbers 5:30)
- "Because he had another SPIRIT (ruach)" (Numbers 14:24)
- "The SPIRIT (ruach) entered into me" (Ezekiel 2:2; 3:24)
- "Neither was there SPIRIT (ruach) in them" (Joshua 5:1)
- "And a new SPIRIT (ruach) will I put within you" (Ezekiel 36:26)
- "God hardened his SPIRIT (ruach)" (Deuteronomy 2:30)
- "Anguish of SPIRIT (ruach)" (Exodus 6:9)
- "SPIRIT (ruach) of wisdom" (Exodus 28:3)
- "Joshua...was filled with the SPIRIT (ruach) of wisdom" (Deuteronomy 34:9)
- "Sorrowful SPIRIT (ruach)" (2 Samuel 1:15)
- "Why is your SPIRIT (ruach) so sad" (1 Kings 21:5)
- "SPIRIT (ruach) was troubled" (Genesis 41:8)
- "The sacrifices of God are a broken SPIRIT (ruach)" (Psalm 51:7)
- "Hasty of SPIRIT (ruach)" (Proverbs 14:29)
- "By sorrow of the heart the SPIRIT (ruach) is broken" (Proverbs 15:13)
- "An haughty SPIRIT (ruach)" (Proverbs 16:18)
- "An humble SPIRIT (Proverbs 16:19)

W. E. Vine, "Vine's Complete Expository Dictionary," pages 240—241 gives nine ways spirit—ruach is used in the Old Testament.

- (1). First, this word means "breath."
- (2). Second, this word can be used with emphasis on the invisible, intangible, fleeting quality of air.
- (3). Third, ruach can mean, "wind."
- (4). Fourth, the wind represents direction.
- (5). Fifth, ruach frequently represents the element of life in a man, his natural "spirit": "*And all flesh died that moved upon the earth...All in whose nostrils was the breath of life.*" (Gen. 7:21—22). In these verses the animals have a "spirit" (cf. Ps. 104:29).
- (6). Sixth, ruach is often used of:
  - **A man's mind—set, disposition, or "temper"**: "*Blessed is the man unto whom the Lord imputeth not iniquity, and in whose spirit there is no guile*" (Ps. 32:2). In Ezek. 13:3 the word is used of one's mind or thinking: "*Woe unto the foolish prophets, that follow their own spirit, and have seen nothing*" (cf. Prov. 29:11).
  - **Ruach can represent particular dispositions**, as it does in Josh. 2:11: "*And as soon as we had heard this things, our hearts did melt, neither did there remain any more courage (ruach—spirit in King James) in any man, because of you...*" (cf. Josh. 5:1; Job 15:12).
  - **Another disposition represented by this word is "temper"**: "*If the spirit (temper) of the ruler rise up against thee, leave not thy place...*" (Eccl. 10:4). David prayed that God would "*restore unto me the joy of thy salvation; and uphold me with the free Spirit*" (Ps. 51:12). In this verse "joy of salvation" and "free Spirit" are parallel and; therefore, synonymous terms. Therefore, "spirit" refers to one's inner disposition, just as "joy" refers to an inner emotion.
- (7). Seventh, the Bible often speaks of God's "Spirit."
- (8). Eight, the non-material beings (angels) in heaven are sometimes called "spirits."

(9). Nine, the "spirit" may also be used of that which enables a man to do a particular job of that which represents the essence of a quality of man...

- Just as in the New Testament, when spirit is used in reference to a person, it is the disposition of the persons mind or thinking.

Why did the translators translate the word "ruach" into "spirit" in one place, and "blast" or "wind" in others? **The meaning of "spirit" as it was used in 1611 and as it is used today, an immortality no substance something in a person is not a thirty-first cousin to "wind" or "breath," etc., yet the translators, at will, translated the same word into many words, into things that have meaning that are worlds apart.** If the same word has many completely different meanings:

- 1). One meaning that had reference to the mortal person or animal.
- 2). And another meaning of the same word that would have had reference to the immortal living being that is in a person unto the death of the person that animals do not have.

- "Ruach," is it mortal or immortal? If ruach is something that is in a person that is immortal, then ruach is also something that is in an animal that is immortal.

How could the Hebrew people know that when it was speaking of a person, when it was actual speaking not of the person, but that it was speaking of something in the person that is immortal; how could they know that when the same word when it was speaking of an animal that it was speaking of something in the animal that was not immortal? How could the translators know? They could not. The translators had to put their theology into the Bible, even if they could not be consistent. How could anyone read the Kings James Version and know that anger, cool, courage, air, mind, breath, wind, blast, and spirit are the same thing? Most English reader today would not know that "wind" and "spirit" are indiscriminately translated from the same word, and that almost without exception today's reader would understand "spirit" to be an immortal soul, but would never understand "wind" to be an immortal soul. Those who do not read Hebrew are misled by such indiscriminately translations.

Summary: **Nehphesh, nshahmah, and ruach are something that both a person and an animal have in common, and all three are something that can and does die.** Both an animal and a man are a soul, a living being of this earth. Animals or people do not have a soul, an immortal something that cannot die that will live after the death of the animal or person it is in.

**How nehphesh and psukee are translated in seven different versions, and in different verses.**

	K.J.V.	N.K.J.V.	N.A.S.V.	R.S.V.
Gen. 1:20	creatures	creatures	creatures	creatures
Gen. 2:7	soul	living being	living being	living being
Gen. 9:5	life	life	life	life
Mt 16:25-26	life & soul	life & soul	life & soul	life 4 times
Acts 3:23	soul	soul	soul	soul
1 Cor15:45	soul	living being	soul	living being
1 Pet 3:20	souls	soul	persons	persons
Rev. 16:3	soul	creature	living thing	living thing

	N.R.S.V.	N.I.V.	Robert Young
Gen. 1:20	creatures	creatures	creature
Gen. 2:7	living being	living being	living being-creature
Gen. 9:5	life	life	life
Mt 16:25-26	life 4 times	life & soul	soul

Acts 3:23	everyone	anyone	soul
1 Cor15:45	living being	living being	creature
1 Pet 3:20	persons	people	soul
Rev. 16:3	living thing	living thing	soul

A bird's eye view (below) of the way psukee is translated in four versions shows that a psukee is a living being, not an immortal no substance something. The translators wanted to put their immortal soul in the Bible, but they had a problem for if they had uniformly translated psukee into "soul," in some passages their immortal soul would have been subject to death and in other passages it would be dead.

(1) King James (2) New Revised Standard (3) American Standard (4) New International

	(1) LIFE	(2) LIFE	(3) LIFE	(4) LIFE
Matthew 2:20	LIFE	LIFE	LIFE	LIFE
Matthew 6:25	LIFE	LIFE	LIFE	LIFE
Matthew 6:25	LIFE	LIFE	LIFE	LIFE
Matthew 10:28	soul	soul	soul	soul
Matthew 10:28	soul	soul	soul	soul
Matthew 10:39	LIFE	LIFE	LIFE	LIFE
Matthew 10:39	LIFE	LIFE	LIFE	LIFE
Matthew 11:29	souls	souls	souls	souls
Matthew 12:18	soul	soul	soul	I
Matthew 16:25	LIFE	LIFE	LIFE	LIFE
Matthew 16:25	LIFE	LIFE	LIFE	LIFE
Matthew 16:26	soul	LIFE	LIFE	soul
Matthew 16:26	soul	LIFE	LIFE	soul
Matthew 20:28	LIFE	LIFE	LIFE	LIFE
Matthew 22:37	soul	soul	soul	soul
Matthew 26:38	soul	I	soul	soul
Mark 3:4	LIFE	LIFE	LIFE	LIFE
Mark 8:35	LIFE	LIFE	LIFE	LIFE
Mark 8:35	LIFE	LIFE	LIFE	LIFE
Mark 8:36	soul	LIFE	LIFE	soul
Mark 8:37	soul	LIFE	LIFE	soul
Mark 10:45	LIFE	LIFE	LIFE	LIFE
Mark 12:30	soul	soul	soul	soul
Mark 12:33	soul	HEART	HEART	HEART
Mark 14:34	soul	I	soul	soul
Luke 1:46	soul	soul	soul	soul
Luke 2:35	soul	soul	soul	soul
Luke 6:9	LIFE	LIFE	LIFE	LIFE
Luke 9:24	LIFE	LIFE	LIFE	LIFE
Luke 9:24	LIFE	LIFE	LIFE	LIFE
Luke 9:56	LIVES			LIFE
Luke 10:27	soul	soul	soul	soul
Luke 12:19	soul	soul	soul	MYSELF
Luke 12:19	soul	soul	soul	LIFE
Luke 12:20	soul	LIFE	soul	LIFE
Luke 12:22	LIFE	LIFE	LIFE	LIFE
Luke 12:23	LIFE	LIFE	LIFE	LIFE
Luke 14:26	LIFE	LIFE	LIFE	LIFE
Luke 17:33	LIFE	LIFE	LIFE	LIFE
Luke 21:19	soul	souls	souls	YOURSELVES
John 10:11	LIFE	LIFE	LIFE	LIFE
John 10:15	LIFE	LIFE	LIFE	LIFE
John 10:17	LIFE	LIFE	LIFE	LIFE
John 10:24	US	US	US	US
John 12:25	LIFE	LIFE	LIFE	LIFE
John 12"25	LIFE	LIFE	LIFE	LIFE
John 12:27	soul	soul	soul	HEART
John 13:37	LIFE	LIFE	LIFE	LIFE
John 13:38	LIFE	LIFE	LIFE	LIFE
John 15:13	LIFE	LIFE	LIFE	LIFE
Acts 2:27	soul	soul	soul	ME
Acts 2:31	soul	FLESH	FLESH	BODY
Acts 2:41	souls	PERSONS	souls	.
Acts 2:43	soul	EVERYONE	soul	EVERYONE
Acts 3:23	soul	EVERYONE	soul	ANYONE
Acts 4:32	soul	soul	soul	MIND
Acts 7:14	souls	ALL	souls	ALL
Acts 14:2	MINDS	MINDS	souls	MINDS
Acts 14:22	souls	souls	souls	DISCIPLES
Acts 15:24	souls	MINDS	souls	MINDS
Acts 15:26	LIVES	LIVES	LIVES	LIVES
Acts 20:10	LIFE	LIFE	LIFE	ALIVE

Acts 20:24	LIFE	LIFE	LIFE	LIFE
Acts 27:10	LIVES	LIVES	LIVES	LIVES
Acts 27:22	LIFE	LIFE	LIFE	YOU
Acts 27:37	souls	PERSONS	souls	US
Romans 2:9	soul	EVERYONE	soul	BEING
Romans 11:3	LIFE	LIFE	LIFE	ME
Romans 13:1	soul	PERSON	soul	EVERYONE
Romans 16:4	LIFE	LIFE	LIFE	LIVES
1 Cor. 15:45	soul	BEING	soul	BEING
2 Cor. 1:23	soul	ME	soul	.
2 Cor. 12:15	YOU	YOU	souls	YOU
Ephesians 6:6	HEART	HEAT	HEART	HEART
Philippians 1:27	MIND	MIND	soul	MEN
Philippians 2:30	LIFE	LIFE	LIFE	LIFE
Colossians 3:23	HEARTILY	YOURSELVES	HEARTILY	HEART
1 Thess. 2:8	souls	SELVES	souls	LIVES
1 Thess. 5:23	soul	soul	soul	soul
Hebrews 4:12	soul	soul	soul	soul
Hebrews 6:19	soul	soul	soul	soul
Hebrews 10:38	soul	soul	soul	I
Hebrews 10:39	soul	SAVED	soul	SAVED
Hebrews 12:3	MINDS	HEART	souls	HEART
Hebrews 13:17	souls	souls	souls	YOU
James 1:21	souls	souls	souls	YOU
James 5:20	soul	soul	soul	HIM
1 Peter 1:9	souls	souls	souls	souls
1 Peter 1:22	souls	souls	souls	YOURSELVES
1 Peter 2:11	soul	soul	soul	soul
1 Peter 2:25	souls	souls	souls	souls
1 Peter 3:20	souls	PERSONS	souls	PEOPLE
1 Peter 4:19	souls	THEMSELVES	souls	THEMSELVES
2 Peter 2:8	soul	soul	soul	soul
2 Peter 2:14	souls	souls	souls	UNSTABLE
1 John 3:16	LIFE	LIFE	LIFE	LIFE
1 John 3:16	LIVES	LIVES	LIVES	LIVES
3 John 2	soul	soul	soul	soul
Revelation 6:9	souls	souls	souls	souls
Revelation 8:9	LIFE	CREATURES	LIFE	CREATURES
Revelation 12:11	LIVES	LIFE	LIFE	LIFE
Revelation 16:3	soul	THING	soul	THING
Revelation 18:13	souls	HUMAN LIVES	souls	souls
Revelation 18:14	soul	soul	soul	YOU
Revelation 20:4	souls	souls	souls	souls

All the words used in the four translations (life, lives, yourself, yourselves, us, mind, minds, you, I, him, heart, heartily, everyone, persons, disciples, creatures, all, me, flesh, being, anyone, alive, and man), **all have a reference to the human person, not to a no substance immaterial living something that is in a person.**

**SOUL (PSUKEE) IN THE NEW TESTAMENT:** Psukee is used about 106 times, and it is the only word that is translated soul in the New Testament (translated soul only 58 of the 106 times in the King James Version), and psukee is the same word in Greek as nehphesh is in Hebrew. Both can and do die.

- The same word (psukee) is translated “soul” that many believe cannot die about 58 times.
- The same word is translated “life,” an animal type of life in both people and animals that must die about 40 times.
  - How could the translators know when the same word was (1) something that could not die, or (2) something that could not keep from dying? None of the many translations of the Bible agree on:
    - When psukee should be translated a soul that cannot die.
    - And when psukee should be translated life of a person or animal that cannot keep from dying.
- *“Lose his **life** (psukee)”* Matthew 10:39.
- *“Shall save a **soul** (psukee) from death”* James 5:20, King James Version.

- "Will save **him** (psukee) from death" James 5:20, New International Version, salvation is from death for the person, not from Hell for a soul.
- "To save **life** (psukee) or to destroy it" James 4:12.

In Old English, soul, like ghost and charity, may have been an acceptable translation then, but not today. Most of the times nehphesh and psukee are translated "soul," even those who believe a person is two beings in one have to admit it is referring only to the earthly person, earthly life, or earthly being; but today the English word "soul" has come to mean an unseen deathless something that is in a person, something that will live after the person is dead. **Therefore, when those who do not know this read the Bible, they are misled when psukee is translated "soul."**

- "For those who **sought** the Child's **life** (soul—psukee)" Matthew 2:20.
- "But rather fear Him who is able to **destroy** both **soul** (soul—psukee) and body" Matthew 10:28.
- "And he who has **lost** his **life** (soul—psukee) for My sake shall find it" Matthew 10:39, also Matthew 16:25, Mark 8:35. "Lost his soul for My sake" in King James Version. In today's theology the only way to lose your soul is by sinning; does this translation not make Christ be saying that if we sin and lose our soul for Him we will save our soul? This translation is both false and unacceptable.
- "And to **give** His **life** (soul—psukee) a ransom for many" Matthew 20:28.
- "To save a **life** (soul—psukee), or destroy it" Luke 6:9.
- "And I **lay down** my **life** (soul—psukee) for the sheep" John 10:15.
- "Men who have **risked** their **lives** (soul—psukee) for the name of our Lord Jesus Christ" Acts 15:26.
- "And they are **seeking** my **life** (soul—psukee)" Romans 11:3.
- "Will **save** his **soul** (soul—psukee) **from death**" James 5:20.

Which one is it, a mortal being that will die, or an immortal being that cannot die? If there were a soul that could not die, it is strange that both the Old and New Testament repeatedly speak of the death of this deathless soul that cannot die.

Psukee is translated "soul" and "life" interchangeably, and sometimes in the same verse; Matthew 16:25-26 where the same word (psukee) is inconsistently translated two times "soul," and two times "life" in the King James Version; but corrected in the American Standard Version and most other versions where all four times the same word is translated "life." "In exchange for his **life**." The parallel passage in Luke 9:25 says,

"And lose or forfeit **his own self**" American Standard Version.

"Yet lose...**his very self**" New International Version.

"Lose...**themselves**" New Revised Standard Version.

Human language could not be any clearer that Christ is speaking of the whole person, and not some internal unseen something in a person. If the immortal soul doctrine were true, a person could not lose a soul that can never die; when the person dies, but a soul will live on then it is a soul that will lose the person it is in.

If YOU had a soul and lost it, YOU would not have the soul you lost.

- If you have money and lose it, you do not have the money you did have.

- If both you and the money still existed, it would not be your money.
- If you have a house and lose it, you do not have the house you did have.
  - If the house still existed, it would not be your house.
- If you have anything and lose it, you do not have whatever you lost.
  - If whatever you lost still existed, it would not be yours.
- If you have a soul and lose it, you do not have the soul you did have.
  - If a soul you lost still existed, it would not be your soul.

This passage is about losing life and not having life, not having either this life or life after the resurrection. It is not about losing a soul with the meaning that soul has today, an immortal something in you; a meaning psukee did not have when the New Testament was written.

In the King James Version in the same sentence the same word (psukee) is translated into two words that have completely different meaning (Matt. 16:25-26).

- Life (psukee) the animal life of a person **that will die**.
- Soul (psukee) with the Platonic beliefs of the translators that an immortal soul **that cannot die**.

Also in Luke 12:19-23 the same word (psukee) in the same passage is translated both:

- Psukee is translated three times something that is immortal **and cannot die**.
- Psukee is translated two times something that is mortal **and cannot keep from dying**.

How could the translators of the King James Version know the same word in the same sentence has two completely different and opposite meaning? It was nothing more than a determination at any cost to put their Platonic theology into the Bible where it was not, even to put it into the mouth of Christ. In Mark 3:4 Jesus asked the Pharisees, "*Is it lawful...to save a psukee, or to kill?*" The *psukee* is something that can be saved from death, something that can be killed, not an immortal something that is deathless and cannot be killed; they did not dare translate *psukee* soul in this passage.

HENRY CONSTABLE, A.M.: "There are instances in which this is done of so flagrant a character that we venture to say that no scholar will now stand up and defend them...To 'save a soul' is, with them to turn from sin to God and avoid the punishment of hell...their own theory forbids them to translate it by 'life' in verse 26 of Matthew 16 (as they had in verse 25) for so translated, their theory would be contradicted," page 46-47, "Hades or The Intermediate State of Man," 1873, public domain.

The immortality doctrine makes the Bible contradict itself, for the Bible says repeatedly that the nehphesh (Old Testament) psukee (New Testament) both can and does die, and never says a person has a deathless, immortal something in them that is called "*soul*." Christ "*laid down His LIFE* (psukee—life, not a soul) *for us, and we ought to lay down our LIVES* (psukee—life, not a soul) *for the brethren*" 1 John 3:16. "*To give His LIFE* (psukee—life, not a soul) *a ransom for many*" Matthew 20:28.

If a SOUL (psukee) cannot die, Christ could not have "*laid down His LIFE*" (psukee) or "*give His LIFE*" (psukee), and we could not "*lay down our LIVES*" (soul—psukee).

1. If the psukee were something that cannot die, Christ did not die. He could not have been raised from the dead for He was never dead.
2. If the psukee were something that cannot die, God would be telling us to do that which we cannot do "*lay down our soul—psukee for the brethren.*" There would be no possible way to "lay down our immortal soul for the brethren." To put a soul, an immaterial, immortal; therefore deathless, something in a person, in this passage makes it total nonsense.
  - James 5:20 "*Shall save a SOUL* (psukee—life, not a soul) *FROM DEATH*" King James Version. If a person has a "SOUL" that cannot die, how can it be saved from death?
  - James 5:20 "*Will save HIM* (psukee—life, not a soul) *FROM DEATH*" New International Version.

**PSUKEE: A MORTAL BEING, OR AN IMMORTAL BEING?** Psukee is translated life, strength, us, he, heart, heartily, you, and mind. These all have a reference to this life, and not to a soul that has no substance. How could the same word mean both (1) a mortal being, (2) and an immortal being?

**Psukee (life) is the natural life from Adam.** It is the physical life common to all living creatures and it is never said to be eternal. All living creatures (animals, fish, man) by natural birth have psukee (life) from birth to death. It is never coupled with the adjective eternal or everlasting. **Even in the King James Version the only word that is translated soul in the New Testament is translated soul only about one-half of the times it is used.** Psukee is applied to the life of animals two times in the New Testament.

1. "*And there died the third part of the creatures which were in the sea, even they that had **life** (psukee)*" (Revelation 8:9).
2. "*And the second poured out his bowl into the sea; and it became blood as of a dead man; and every **living soul** (psukee) died, even the things that were in the sea*" (Revelation 16:3).
  - In one passage psukee is translated life, in the other psukee is translated soul; if psukee did mean a soul, than in both passages a soul does die. But many churches tell us, "No, to die is not to die, to die is to have eternal life being tormented by God."

**Zoe (life)** (Strong's word 2227, "Zoopoico...make alive, give life, quicken") **is a gift of life from Christ to those that believe, the life He gives only to those who are His. No one is born with it and the lost never have it.** It refers the life given by Christ only to believe in all but about ten of about one hundred thirty times it is used. "*The first man Adam become a living soul* (psukee—living being), *the last Adam became a life—giving spirit*" (1 Corinthians 15:45). All living being have psukee life, only those who are born again have zoe (life) in Christ. See Zoe life in chapter two, Life or Death.

### **PASSAGES IN THE NEW TESTAMENT THAT HAS "PSUKEE" IN THEN**

The many words the translators used to translate "psukee" are both nouns and pronouns, it refer to (1) God (2) to a person (3) or to an animal, not to an immortal no subject part of God, a person or an animal. The person or animal is sometimes dying, and is sometimes dead. This one word, which is a common noun, but it is

translated into many nouns, it is changed into a proper noun, and often is changed to a pronoun, then translated by many pronouns just as "nehphesh" is in the Old Testament. The different translations do not agree on when it should be changed from a common to a proper noun, or changed to a pronoun.

**(1) IN FIFTY-ONE OF THE ONE HUNDARD SIX TIMES IN WHICH PSUKEE (soul) IS TRANSLATED LIFE AND (like the "Nehphesh" of the Old Testament) IT CAN DIE, BE KILLED, PERISH, OR BE DESTROYED.**

(1). Matthew 2:20 *"Arise and take the young child and his mother, and go into the land of Israel: for they are dead that sought the young child's **LIFE** (life—psukee, not a deathless soul)." There is no doubt that they wanted to kill the child's body, not something in him. No immortal "soul" in this passage.*

(2-3). Matthew 6:25 *"Therefore, I say unto you, be not anxious for your **LIFE** (life—psukee), what you shall eat, or what you shall drink; nor yet for your body, what you shall put on. Is not the **LIFE** (life—psukee) more than the food, and the body than the raiment?" It is the earthly person in the image of Adam that eats and drinks, it is not an immortal soul that is in a person that is in the image of Adam. A person's life is more than what he or she has to put on the body.*

- *"Be not anxious for your **LIFE** (life—psukee), what you shall eat." It is the body that eats, not an immaterial soul.*
- *"Is not the **LIFE** (life—psukee) more than the food, and the body than the raiment?" It is the body that puts on clothing, not an immaterial soul.*
  - *It is our lives that need food, our bodies that need cloths to be warm; an immortal soul could not use either one.*

(4-5). Matthew 10:28 *"And be not afraid of them that kill the body, but are not able to kill the **soul** (life—psukee): but rather fear him who is able to destroy both **soul** (life—psukee) and body in hell (Gehenna)." See notes on this in chapter four. If psukee were an immortal soul, then God can destroy this immortal soul. **There is no stronger way in which to say God can and will destroy it.** He is to be feared by those of the world because He will. There would be no reason to fear Him if He could not, or if He will not destroy life—Psukee. **I find it strange that one of the most used passages, as it is translated in the King James Version, is used to prove a soul cannot be destroyed says a soul (psukee) can be destroy in the valley of Gehenna.** See Matthew 10:28, Luke 12:5, See "God is able to destroy (Apollumi) both life—psukee and body in Gehenna" in chapter four, and "Proves more than they want" also in chapter four. (1) Not even God could destroy a soul if it were an immortal thing that could never die, for if He did destroy this living being that is in a person that cannot be destroyed, then it would not be immortal and it could die. (2) When Gehenna is changed to Hell, is there anyone that believes that God is literally going the take earthly bodies from earth to Hell and destroy them? But we are told, "No, only the soul will be tormented in Hell, not the body." **I do not believe anyone believes a soul, whatever a soul is, is cast into Gehenna the trash dump. Only***

after the words of Christ are changed from being cast into Gehenna to being cast into Hell can this passage be used to teach the doctrine of God tormenting something in Hell even though Hell is an English word, and there was no such word as Hell in the Greek or any other language at the time of Christ. Then, "Who is able to destroy BOTH psukee and body in Gehenna," must also be changed to only the body can be destroyed in Gehenna, but psukee (translated both life and soul in King James Version) cannot ever be destroyed even by God. Both body and psukee are destroyed in Gehenna the trash dump, or both body and psukee are tormented in "Hell;" both go to the same place. Theology cannot separate them and destroy one in one place, and have God torment the other in another place because today's theology says it cannot be destroyed.

If, as many affirm, that a soul is indestructible, where is even one scripture that teaches it is indestructible or deathless; that a soul will be alive in Heaven or anyplace before the Resurrection? Is not this saying God is not able to reduce something He created back to its original state of non-existence, or that God was able to create a soul, but God is not able to destroy a soul, not able to uncreate that which He created; if He cannot, then He is not omnipotent, not all powerful.

(6-7-8-9). Matthew 10:39 "For whosoever would save his **LIFE** (psukee) shall lose it: and whosoever shall lose his **LIFE** (psukee) for my sake shall find it. 26 For what shall a man be profited, if he shall gain the whole world, and forfeit his **LIFE** (psukee)? Or what shall a man give in exchange for his **LIFE** (soul—psukee)?" **The King James Version has the same word (psukee) translated "life" two times, and "soul" two times. What made them think Christ used the same word in the same passage with two completely different meanings? In today's English, the meaning of "soul" and "life" are not even close to being the same, yet they were translated from the same Greek word in the same sentence.**

In Matthew 10:39 **Lose his life** (Greek—psukee) **must be changed to a deathless soul losing its reward, not losing its life. Lose his life** (Greek—psukee) **must be changed to mean an everlasting life of torment for a life that can never be lost, can never end, can never be destroyed** (Matthew 10:39). The life that is saved from death by a denial of Christ is the same life that is lost by martyrdom of those that confess Christ; it is this earthly life that both the lost and saved have in common.

"Lose" in Matthew 10:39 and Luke 9:24 is translated from "apollumi" and is translated, "destroy," "destroyed," and "perish" much more than it is translated "lose."

- "He who has found his life shall **lose** (apollumi—destroy) it" (Matthew 19:39).
- "Able to save and to **destroy** (apollumi)" (James 1:11).
- "How they might **destroy** (apollumi) him" (Matthew 12:14).
- "People sought to **destroy** (apollumi) him" (Luke 19:47).
- "Come and **destroy** (apollumi) these husbandmen" (Luke 20:16).
- "**Destroy** (apollumi) not him with your meat" (Romans 14:15).

- "I will **destroy** (apollumi) *the wisdom of the wise*" (1 Corinthians 1:19).
- "And were **destroyed** (apollumi) of serpents" (1 Corinthians 10:9).
- If there is no resurrection, "Then those also who have fallen asleep in Christ have **perished** (apollumi)" (1 Corinthians 15:18).

**THE SAME THING THAT HAPPENS TO A SOUL ALSO HAPPENS TO THE BODY, BOTH ARE DESTROYED.** Will the body of a person suffer eternal life in endless misery? Is it not unreasonable to say destroying a soul means eternal life in endless misery beings tormented by God, but destroying the body means death of the person a soul was in? **WHAT DOSE THIS PASSAGE SAY?**

1. "He who finds his life—shall lose it."
2. "He who loses his life—shall find it." Life is translated from psukee, the same Greek word that is translated "soul" in Matthew 10:28.

The person who saves his life by denying Christ will lose life at the judgment. The person that loses his life because he is a Christian and will not deny Christ will find life at the judgment. There is no way Christ could have said it any clearer or plainer. It is **THE "LIFE"** of a person that is being spoken of, not some deathless something in a person that has life and cannot lose it. There is not a word said about eternal life with torment for a deathless soul in this passage.

**"He who finds his life (psukee—not find his soul) shall lose it."** The person who saves his **life** (psukee) by denying Christ will lose his **life** (psukee) at the judgment. He who finds his life is one who puts this life ahead of Christ, but he will "lose it" at the judgment, not have an everlasting life with torment. (1) "The wages of sin is **death**" (Romans 6:23) (2) "A certain fearful expectation of judgment, and a fierceness of fire which shall **devour** the adversaries" (Hebrews 10:27). (3) "The day of judgment and **destruction** of ungodly men" (2 Peter 3:7). "And forfeit his **life**" (psukee) (Mark 8:36). "And lose **himself**" (Luke 9:25). **Luke used the pronoun "himself" in the place of "psukee—life" that Matthew used making (1) "LIFE" (psukee) and (2) "HIMSELF" both be the same thing. It is the "life" of the person or "himself" that will be lost or saved, not an invisible soul that has no substance that is in person, not just something inside of a person that no one can tell us what it really is. The teaching today is that this no substance soul that is in a person cannot be lost, but will just change its address to Heaven or Hell when death makes the person it is now in no longer exist. An immortal soul had to be put in the Bible, but to do so, the translators had to throw away the whole person we now are to make only an immaterial, invisible something that is in a person be immortal, and only this "invisible part of man" will have eternal life in Heaven. Those who do not obey Christ shall lose the very thing that is saved by those who do obey Him—life; the lost shall die and the saved shall live. "But the righteous shall go into eternal life" (Matthew 25:46), it is LIFE that is lost or found. Many are saying, "Not so Lord, they 'shall not lose it,' for the immaterial, invisible soul shall have eternal life in Hell"; if this is not what they say, than what are they saying? It is life that is being**

spoken of as being saved or lost, nothing more, not an immortal soul that can never lose its life being saved from eternal torment by God. There is not a word said about Hell, torment, or an immortal, immaterial, invisible soul; it takes much twisting to make "lose life" mean a soul have an endless life being tormented by God.

**"He who loses his life (psukee) shall find it."** How could Christ have said it any clearer that the person that loses his **life** (psukee), his earthly life because he is a Christian and will not deny Christ will find **life** at the judgment? If "lose his **life**" (psukee) is to lose his **life** (psukee) for being a Christian, then "lose his **life** (psukee)" cannot be to have an everlasting life with torment that cannot be lost. The same thing that is saved is the same thing that will be lost.

- The person who saves his life by denying Christ.
- Will lose the same thing, his life at the judgment.
  - It is not a soul that is saved by denying Christ, but life on earth.
  - It is not a soul that will be lost at the judgment, but life in Heaven.
- John 12:25 say the same "*He that loves his **life** (psukee—not he that loves his soul) shall lose it; and he that hates his **life** (psukee—not he that hates his soul) in this world, shall keep it unto life eternal.*" In this passage it is "lose" life or "keep" life, losing life is the opposite of keeping life, losing life is to not have life, death is not another kind of life.

**When save and lose in Matthew 10:39 are applied to an immaterial soul that cannot die as it is used in today's theology it makes nonsense.**

- To save ones soul means to save it from Hell, according to today's theology.
- To lose ones soul means to go to Hell forever, according to today's theology. When "*shall lose it*" is made mean going to Hell then "*lose his life* (psukee)" for Christ mean gong to Hell for Christ.
- "**He that finds his soul** (psukee—saves his soul from Hell according to today's theology) **shall lose it** (shall lose his soul in Hell—losing one's soul in today's theology is to go to Hell) **and he that loses his soul for my sake** (he that goes to Hell for my sake) **shall find it** (shall save his soul from Hell)." Today's theology makes utter nonsense of the Bible.

**Finding life and losing life** are not an everlasting life of torment separated from God. (1) "*He that finds his life shall lose it,*" by some kind of magic charm losing life has been turns into eternal life in Hell that can never be lost. "*Shall lose it* (his life)" is made to mean an **eternal life** of torment in Hell, not torment for the person that loses life, but torment for a soul that was in the person. How could anyone know this? (2) "*He that loses his life for my sake shall find it.*" Losing the life of the body—being put to death for believing in Christ, also by some kind of magic has been turned into eternal life for an "immaterial, invisible something that is in a person" at the death of the person it was in even though we are repeatedly told this deathless something already had eternal life even when the person it was in was alive. Their magic makes the resurrection useless for they say eternal life is given to all at birth and a soul cannot lose it, can never not have life; therefore, Christ could not give life to a soul that is already alive at His second coming. He can only give it a reward if the person the soul was in was good and can only punish a soul if the person a soul had been in

was in was bad. To make psukee be an *"immaterial invisible, immortal part of man"* that cannot die makes it be nonsense. Nothing in the Bible is more plain than the loss of LIFE in this passage is the lost of our earthly LIFE because of being faithful to Christ, (it is not speaking of eternal life with torment for a soul that had been in a sinner); finding LIFE is for a person to find endless LIFE at the judgment, and it is just as plain that the person that saves his earthly LIFE (psukee) by denying Christ, that person will lose his resurrected LIFE at the judgment.

- John 12:25: *"He that loves his **life** (psukee) loses it; and he that hates his **life** (psukee) in this world shall keep it unto **life** eternal."*
- Matthew 16:25-26: *"For whosoever would save his **life** (psukee) shall lose it: and whosoever shall lose his **life** (psukee) for my sake shall find it. For what shall a man be profited, if he shall gain the whole world (become very rich in this life), and forfeit his **life** (psukee)? Or what shall a man give in exchange for his **life** (psukee)?" (American Standard Version).*
- Mark 8:35-36: *"For whosoever would save his **life** (psukee) shall lose it; and whosoever shall lose his **life** (psukee) for my sake and the gospel's shall save it. For what do it profit a man, to gain the whole world, and forfeit his **life** (psukee)? For what should a man give in exchange for his **life** (psukee)?"*
- Luke 9:24-25: *"For whosoever would save his **life** (psukee) shall lose it; but whosoever shall lose his **life** (psukee) for my sake, the same shall save it. For what is a man profited, if he gain the whole world, and lost of forfeit **his own self**?"*
- Matthew 19:39: *"He that finds his **life** (psukee) shall lose it; and he that loses his **life** (psukee) for my sake shall find it."*
- Luke 17:33: *"Whosoever shall seek to gain his **life** (psukee) shall lose it: but whosoever shall lose his **life** (psukee) shall preserve it."*

(10-11-12-13). Mark 8:35 *"For whosoever would save his **LIFE** (psukee—not save or lose a soul that is in him or her) shall lose it; and whosoever shall lose his **LIFE** (psukee) for my sake and the gospel's shall save it. 36 For what does it profit a man, to gain the whole world, and forfeit his **LIFE** (psukee)? 37 For what should a man give in exchange for his **LIFE**" (psukee)?* The life that is prolonged for a little while by denying Christ that will be lost, but the life that is loss by being faithful to Christ will be saved at the judgment. In the King James Version the same word is inconsistently translated two times "soul," and two times "life," but corrected in the American Standard Version and most others where all four times the same word is translated "life." *"In exchange for his life,"* not "in exchange for his soul." If there were a soul a person could not exchange (trade) it for anything.

(14-15). Luke 9:24-25 *"For whosoever would save his **LIFE** (psukee) shall lose it; but whosoever shall lose his **LIFE** (psukee) for my sake, the same shall save it. For what is a man profited, if he gain the whole world, and **lose or forfeit his own self**?"* Psukee is translated "soul" and "life" interchangeably in the Bible, and sometimes in the same verse

- *"And lose or forfeit **his own self**"* American Standard Version

- "Yet lose...**his very self**" New International Version
- "Lose...**themselves**?" New Revised Standard Version

Christ is speaking of the whole person, and not of some unseen something that is in a person. Luke avoids using the word psukee (soul) in Luke 12:4-5. Why? His Gentile readers might have understood the word the way it was used by the Greeks of that time; therefore, he used a word that means the whole person, and not the Greek soul that many of the Greeks of that time believe would be reincarnated.

(16). Matthew 20:28 *"Even as the Son of man came not to be ministered unto, but to minister, and to give his LIFE (psukee—not His deathless soul) a ransom for many."* Mark 10:45 *"For the Son of man also came not to be ministered unto, but to minister, and to give his LIFE (psukee) a ransom for many."*

(17). Mark 3:4 *"And he said unto them, is it lawful on the Sabbath day to do good, or to do harm? To save a LIFE (psukee), or to kill? But they held their peace."*

(18). Luke 6:9 *"And Jesus said unto them, I ask you, Is it lawful on the Sabbath to do good, or to do harm? To save a LIFE (psukee), or to destroy it?"* "Kill" and "destroy" are used interchangeably. The translators would not translate psukee into "soul" in this passage for it would then say a soul could be killed.

(19). Luke 9:56 *"For the Son of man is not come to destroy men's LIVES (psukee), but to save them"* King James Version. This is not in the American Standard Version, and not in most others translations for it is not in many of the Greek Manuscripts; there is nothing about an immortal soul being in a person in it.

(20-21-22-23). Luke 12:19-23 *"And I will say to my soul (psukee), Soul (psukee), you have much goods laid up for many years; take your ease, eat, drink, be merry. But God said unto him, You foolish one, this night is your soul (psukee) required of you; and the things which you have prepared, whose shall they be? So is he that lays up treasure for himself, and is not rich toward God. And he said unto his disciples, therefore, I say unto you, be not anxious for your LIFE (psukee), what you shall eat; nor yet for your body, what you shall put on. For the LIFE (psukee) is more than the food, and the body than the raiment."* In this passage they found it necessary to translate psukee into both soul and life, for a soul cannot eat or use a raiment. *"You fool! This very night your LIFE (psukee) is being demanded of you"* New Revised Standard Version. His life (psukee) was demanded; he would lose his life, would die. *"So it is with those who store up treasures for themselves but are not rich toward God."* It will be their life (psukee) that will be demanded of them at the judgment. Nothing is said about an immortal soul that will be forever tormented. In this passage psukee does the things that only this earthly body can do, things that an immortal no substance soul could not do. *"And I will say to my soul (psukee), Soul (psukee), you have much goods laid up for many years; take your ease, eat, drink"* (Luke 12:19). An immortal no substance soul could not use the much earthly goods laid up for many years. Can anyone not see how foolish this passage would

be if it were speaking of an immortal soul that has no body and no substance, but that no substance soul was using the earthly goods it has laid up? Can a soul that has no earthly body eat, drink, or use any earthly goods?

- "And I'll say to **myself** (psukee), '**You** (psukee) have plenty of good things laid up for many years'" New International Version.
- "I will say to **myself** (psukee), '**You** (psukee) have plenty of good things laid by'" The Revised English Bible.
- "Then I can say to **myself** (psukee), '**I** (psukee) have enough good things stored'" New Century Version.

(24). Luke 14:26 "If any man comes unto me, and hate not his own father, and mother, and wife, and children, and brethren, and sisters, yea, and his own **LIFE** (psukee) also, he cannot be my disciple." If this was speaking of a soul it would be saying if you do not hate in immortal soul that is in you, you cannot be His disciple.

(25-26). Luke 17:33 "Whosoever shall seek to gain his **LIFE** (psukee—not a soul) shall lose it: but whosoever shall lose his **LIFE** (psukee) shall preserve it."

(27-28-29). John 10:11-17 "I am the good shepherd: the good shepherd **lays down his LIFE** (psukee) for the sheep. He that is a hireling, and not a shepherd, whose own the sheep are not, beholds the wolf coming, and leaves the sheep, and flees, and the wolf snatches them, and scatters (them): (he flees) because he is a hireling, and cares not for the sheep. I am the good shepherd; and I know mine own, and mine own know me, even as the Father knows me, and I know the Father; and **I lay down my LIFE** (psukee—not a soul) for the sheep. And other sheep I have, which are not of this fold: them also I must bring, and they shall hear my voice: and they shall become one flock, one shepherd. Therefore, the Father loves me, because **I lay down my LIFE** (psukee), that I may take it again." An immortal soul, as taught today, cannot die; therefore, the translators could not say Christ gave up His immortal soul; He gives His life, not an immortal soul.

- Jesus gives His **LIFE** (psukee) "for the sheep" John 10:11-17.
- Jesus gives His **LIFE** (psukee) as "a ransom for many" Matthew 20:28. He gave His **LIFE** for us, not an immortal soul that could not die; it is by His blood shed in His death that we are saved (Hebrews 9:22).
- Jesus "lay down his **LIFE** (psukee) for his friends" John 15:13.
  - It was not a deathless soul that died for us; it was Jesus that gave His **LIFE** for us.

(30-31). John 12:25 "He that loves his **LIFE** (psukee) shall lose it; and he that hates his **LIFE** (life—soul-psukee) in this world shall keep it unto life eternal." Who ever puts this life first shall lose his life, but who ever put God first shall live after the judgment. Those who do not put God first will lose their psukee (life). If psukee is an immortal soul that can never die, it could not be lost.

(32). John 15:13 "Greater love has no man than this, that a man lay down his **LIFE** (psukee) for his friends." Not even those who believe a person has an immortal soul believe Christ lay down his immortal soul, they do not believe an immortal soul can be dead. He did lay down His life for us.

(33-34). John 13:37-38 *"Peter said unto him, Lord, why cannot I follow you even now? I will lay down my **LIFE** (psukee) for you. Jesus answered, will you lay down your **LIFE** (psukee) for me? Verily, verily, I say unto you, the cock shall not crow, till you have denied me thrice."* "Lay down" means "to give up," "to die." It was Peter that said he would give up his life (psukee) for Christ, not an immortal soul that was in Peter.

(35). Acts 3:23 *"And it shall be, that every **soul** (psukee—person) that shall not hearken to that prophet, shall be utterly destroyed from among the people."* **An immortal soul utterly destroyed! How could God say any stronger that whatever the psukee is (life—soul—person) it can and will be "UTTERLY DESTROYED"?** If destroyed did mean torment then it would be saying, "Every soul (psukee—person) would be utterly tormented from among the people."

- *"And it will be that **everyone** (psukee)"* New Revised Standard Version.
- *"**Anyone** (psukee) who does not listen to him"* New International Version.
- *"For **anyone** (psukee) who refuses to listen to that prophet"* The Revised English Bible.

(36). Acts 15:24 *"Forasmuch as we have heard that certain who went out from us have troubled you with words, subverting your **souls** (life—psukee)."*

- *"Your **minds** (lives—psukee)"* New Revised Standard Version.
- *"Troubling your **minds** (lives—psukee)"* New International Version.
- *"Unsettled your **minds** (lives—psukee)"* The Revised English Bible.

(37). Acts 15:26 *"Men that have hazarded their **LIVES** (psukee) for the name of our Lord Jesus Christ."* An immortal part of a person that could not die could not be hazarded.

(38). Acts 20:9-10 *"And there sat in the window a certain young man named Eutychus, borne down with deep sleep; and as Paul discoursed yet longer, being borne down by his sleep he fell down from the third story, and was taken up **DEAD**. And Paul went down, and fell on him, and embracing him said, Make you no ado; for his **LIFE** (life-psukee) is in him."* He was dead, but Paul restored his earthly life that was dead from the fall, not an immortal soul that the fall could not have killed.

(39). Acts 20:24 *"But I hold not my **LIFE** (psukee) of any account as dear unto myself."* The translators would not say he held his immortal soul to be of no account. To use soul in this passage would not teach what they believed; therefore, they did not use it.

(40). Acts 27:10 *"And said unto them, Sirs, I perceive that the voyage will be with injury and much loss, not only of the cargo and the ship, but also of our **LIVES** (psukee)."* No one will lose an immortal soul in a shipwreck. It can be seen how the translators picked when they wanted psukee to be a soul, and when they wanted it to be life.

(41). Acts 27:22 *"And now I exhort you to be of good cheer; for there shall be no loss of **LIFE** (psukee) among you, but only of the ship."* This could not be translated souls for then souls would have been lost just as the ship was lost by a storm, and

we are told by those who believe we have an immortal soul that souls are lost by sin, and they cannot be lost by a storm. Both their life and the ship could have been lost in this storm, but not an immortal soul if there were one.

- *"But also of our **lives**"* (Greek—psukee) Acts 27:10).
- *"There shall be no lost of **life**"* (Greek—psukee) Acts 27:22).
- *"And we were in the ship two hundred threescore and sixteen **souls**"* (Greek—psukee) Acts 27:37). *"Two hundred and seventy-six **persons**"* New American Standard Bible and most others.
  - Why was the same word translated *"life"* and *"soul"* when nether the translators nor those that believe we now have an immoral soul do not believe *"life"* and *"soul"* to be the same?

(42). Romans 16:4 *"Who for my **LIFE** (psukee) laid down their own necks."*

(43). Romans 11:3 *"Lord, they have killed your prophets, they have dug down your altars; and I am left alone, and they seek my **LIFE** (psukee)."* They were seeking his earthly life to kill him, just as they had killed the prophets, not something that did not have any substance, not something that they could not see or kill.

(44). Philippians 1:27 *"With one **MIND** (psukee) striving together for the faith."* Striving together with one immortal soul?

(45). Philippians 2:30 *"Because for the work of Christ he came nigh unto death, hazarding his **LIFE** (psukee) to supply that which was lacking in your service toward me."* Did he hazard his immortal soul; and his soul, which cannot die came nigh unto death even if it could not die?

(46). 1 Thessalonians 2:8 *"We were well pleased to impart unto you, not the gospel of God only, but also our own **souls** (life—psukee)."* They were pleased to impart the gospel to them even at the cost of their own lives, not impart the gospel to them even at the cost of souls that could not die.

- *"But also our own **selves** (psukee)"* New Revised Standard Version.
- *"But our **lives** (psukee) as well"* New International Version.
- *"Our very **lives** (psukee)"* The New American Bible.
- *"Our very **selves** (psukee)"* The Revised English Bible.
- *"Our own **lives** (psukee)"* New Century Version.

(47). 1 Peter 2:11 *"Beloved, I beseech you as sojourners and pilgrims, to abstain from fleshly lust, which war against the **soul** (life—psukee)."*

(48). Hebrews 10:39 *"But we are not of them that shrink back unto perdition; but of them that have faith unto the saving of the **soul** (your life—psukee)."*

- *"We have the faith to preserve our **life** (psukee)"* The Revised English Bible.
- *"But among those who have faith and so are saved"* New Revised Standard Version.
- *"But of those who believe and are saved"* New International Version.

(49). James 5:19-20 *"My brethren, if any among you err from the truth, and one converts him; let him know, that he who converts a sinner from the error of his way shall save a **soul** (life—psukee) from death, and shall cover a multitude of sins."* If the sinner is not converted, his life (psukee), not a soul, will not be saved from death.

Many read "Hell" ("shall save a soul from Hell") into this in the place of "death." The only way to get "save a soul from Hell" into the Bible is by changing the Bible.

- *"Will save **him** (psukee) from death"* New International Version. The whole person will be saved from death, not an immortal living something that is in person that could not be dead, but it will be saved from death even if it could not be dead.

(50-51). 1 John 3:16 *"Hereby know we love, because he laid down his **LIFE** (psukee) for us: and we should lay down our **LIVES** (psukee) for the brethren."* Can we lay down our immortal souls for the brethren? Christ lay down His life for us, and we should be willing to lay down our life for our brethren. If this were a deathless something that is in a person, we would be told to do something that it would not be possible for us to do.

(52). Revelation 6:9 *"**Souls** (lives—psukee)...**slain**."*

(53). Revelation 8:9 *"And there **died** the third part...that had **LIFE**" (psukee).*

(54). Revelation 12:11 *"Loved not their **LIFE** (psukee) even unto **death**."*

(55). Revelation 16:3 *"Every living **soul** (living being—psukee) **died**"* (In the sea, all fish died). Can anyone tell me why the translators, who believed a soul could not die and do not believe fish have a soul, put *"ever living soul died"* in this passage?

- *"And every **living thing** (psukee) in the sea **died**"* New American Standard Bible.

(56). Revelation 20:4 *"The **souls** (lives—psukee) of them that had **been beheaded**."*

## (2) PASSAGES WITH PSUKEE USED REFERRING TO PARTS OF THE HUMAN BODY, PASSAGES THAT CONNECT THE SPIRIT (pneuma) TO THE HUMAN MIND

(1). Acts 14:2 *"And made their **minds** (psukee) evil affected"* King James Version. The Gentiles were turned against the brothers in this life, not against immortal souls that were in the brothers.

- *"And poisoned their **minds** (psukee) against the brothers"* New International Version.

(2). *"But my **mind** (pneuma) could not rest because I did not find my brother Titus there"* (2 Corinthians 2:13) New Revised Standard Version.

(3). Hebrews 12:3 *"Lest ye be wearied and faint in your **minds** (life—psukee)"* King James Version.

(4). *"Because his **spirit** (pneuma) has been refreshed by you all"* (2 Corinthians 7:13).

- *"Because his **mind** (pneuma) has been set at rest by all of you"* New Revised Standard Version.
- *"You have all helped to set his **mind** (pneuma) completely at rest"* Revised English Bible.

(5). *"And that you be renewed in the **spirit** (pneuma) of your mind"* (Ephesians 4:23). Even in the theology of today, if the spirit is an immortal something, what is *"the spirit of you mind"* in which they were to be renewed?

- *"To be made new in the **attitude** (pneuma) of your mind"* New International Version.

(6). Matthew 22:37 *"And he said unto him, you shall love the Lord your God with all your heart, and with all your **soul** (life—soul—psukee), and with all your mind."*  
Mark 12:30 *"And you shall love the Lord your God with all your heart, and with all your **soul** (life—soul—psukee), and with all your mind, and with all your strength."*

(7). *"Blessed are the poor in **spirit** (pneuma)"* (Matthew 5:3). Poor in a no substance immortal spirit?

(8). Mark 12:33 *"And to love him with all the heart, and with all the understanding, and with all the **strength** (psukee) (soul in King James Version), and to love his neighbor as himself, is more than all whole burnt—offerings and sacrifices."* Luke 10:27 *"And he answering said, You shall love the Lord your God with all your heart, and with all your **soul** (life—psukee), and with all your strength, and with all your mind; and your neighbor as thyself."*

- In the parallel passages in Mark and Luke, the same word (psukee) is translated "strength" in one and "soul" in the other.

(9). 2 Corinthians 12:15 *"Will most gladly spend and be spent for **you** (psukee)"* King James Version.

(10). *"For though absent in body, I am present in **spirit** (pneuma)"* (Colossians 2:5). Was his immortal spirit in one place, and his body was in another while he was alive? If so, then the immortal spirit can leave the body when it wants to, and the body can live without the spirit, but James tells us that the body without the spirit is dead (James 2:26). Was Paul's body dead for a time while his spirit was gone to be at Colossae? No, he was saying he was with them in his thoughts and heart, not that an immortal spirit had left his body, and it went to Colossae without his body, and returned to his body.

(11). Colossians 3: 23 *"Whatsoever you do, work **heartily** (psukee), as unto the Lord."* Whatsoever you do, work soul (pneuma), as unto the Lord?

(12). *"Walked we not in the same **spirit** (pneuma)? Walked we not in the same steps?"* (2 Corinthians 12:18). Did they all have only one immortal soul or one immortal spirit?

(13). *"Restore such a one in a **spirit** (pneuma) of gentleness"* (Galatians 6:1).

(14). *"May give unto you a **spirit** (pneuma) of wisdom and revelation in the knowledge of him"* (Ephesians 1:17). Would they not have already have an immortal soul; if another one were given to them would they have two?

(15). Ephesians 6:6 *"Not in the way of eye service, as men pleasers; but as servants of Christ, doing the will of God from the **heart** (psukee)."* "Doing the will of God from an immortal soul"?

(16). *"That you stand fast in one **spirit** (pneuma)"* (Philippians 1:27).

(17). *"A meek and quiet **spirit** (pneuma)"* (1 Peter 3:4).

**(3) PASSAGES WITH PSUKEE USED REFERRING A NUMBER OF PEOPLE.**  
In Old English, and even today souls is used to mean persons or life. A newspaper

reporting a shipwreck in which fifty people drown would say, "Fifty souls were lost." People were called "souls" about twenty-eight times in the King James.

(1). Acts 2:41-43 *"They then that received his word were baptized: and there were added (unto them) in that day about three thousand **souls** (psukee-persons). And they continued steadfastly in the apostles' teaching and fellowship, in the breaking of bread and the prayers. And fear came upon **every soul** (psukee-every person): and many wonders and signs were done through the apostles."*

- *"About three thousand **persons** (psukee)"* New Revised Standard Version.
- *"About three thousand **people** (psukee)"* Today's English Version.
- *"About three thousand were added to their number"* New International Version.

*"Three thousand were added to the number of believers"* Revised English Bible.

- *"About three thousand **people** (psukee) were added to the number of believers"* New Century Version.
- *"Three thousand were added that day"* New American Bible.
- *"About 3,000 in all"* The Living Bible.
- *"About 3,000 **people** (psukee) were added"* Simple English Bible.
- *"About three thousand **people** (psukee) were added"* Good News For Modern Man.
  - Some translations leave psukee out, just as we would say, "Three thousand persons were saved," or "Three thousand were saved."
- *"And fear came upon **every soul** (person—psukee)." (Acts 2:43 King James Version). **"Everyone"** New American Standard Version, New Revised Standard Version, New International Version.*

(2). Acts 7:14 *"And Joseph sent, and called to him Jacob his father, and all his kindred, threescore and fifteen **souls** (persons—psukee)."*

- *"And all his relatives to come to him, seventy-five in all"* New Revised Standard Version.
- *"And his whole family, seventy-five in all"* New International Version.
- *"Seventy-five **persons** in all (psukee)"* New American Bible, Revised English Bible.

(3). Acts 27:37 *"And we were in all in the ship two hundred threescore and sixteen **souls** (persons-psukee)."* Also Acts 27:10; 27:22.

- *"Two hundred seventy-six **persons** (psukee)"* New Revised Standard Version.
- *"Two hundred and seventy-six of **us** (psukee)"* Revised English Bible.

(4). 1 Peter 3:19-20 *"In which also he went and preached unto the spirits in prison, that aforetime were disobedient, when the long suffering of God waited in the days of Noah, while the ark was a preparing, wherein few, that is, eight **souls** (persons-psukee), were saved through water."*

- *"Eight **persons** (psukee) were brought safely through the water"* New American Standard Bible.
- *"Eight **persons** (psukee) were saved through water"* New Revised Standard Version.
- *"In it only a few **people** (psukee), eight in all"* New International Version.
- *"A few **persons** (psukee), eight in all"* New American Bible.

(5). Matthew 6:25 *"Take no thought for your **soul** (lives—psukee) what ye shall eat or what you shall drink."*

- *"Do not be anxious for your **life** (psukee), as to what you shall eat"* New American Standard Bible

- "Do not worry about your **life** (psukee) what you will eat or what you will drink" New Revised Standard Version.
- (6). Matthew 11:29 "You shall find rest unto your **souls** (lives—psukee)."  
  - "You will find rest for your **lives** (psukee)." New Century Version.
- (7). Luke 1:46 "And Mary said, my **soul** (life—psukee) does magnify the Lord."
- (8). Luke 2:35 "Yea and a sword shall pierce through your own **soul** (life—heart—psukee)."  
  - "And **you** (psukee) too will be pierced to the heart" Revised English Bible.
- (9). Luke 21:19 "In your patience you shall win your **souls** (lives—psukee)."  
  - "By standing firm you will save **yourselves** (psukee)" New International Version.
  - "By patient endurance you will save your **lives** (psukee)" New American Bible.
  - "By standing firm you will win yourselves **life** (psukee)" Revised English Bible.
- (10). John 10:24 "The Jews therefore came round about him, and said unto him, how long do you hold **us** (psukee) in suspense?" This has a reference to suspense in this life, not to suspense in life after death; persons, not souls, were being held in suspense at that time, not after their death.
- (11). Acts 4:32 "And the multitude of them that believed were of one heart and **soul** (life—psukee)...they had all things common." They were all united, but were not all one immortal being, not one immortal soul with many bodies.  
  - "All the believers were one in heart and **mind** (psukee)" New International Version.
- (12). Acts 14:22 "Confirming the **souls** (lives—psukee) of the disciples, exhorting them to continue in the faith, and that through many tribulations we must enter into the kingdom of God."
- (13). Romans 2:9 "Tribulation and anguish, upon every **soul** (person—psukee) of man that works evil."  
  - "There will be anguish and distress for **everyone**" (psukee) New Revised Standard Version.
  - "There will be trouble and distress for **every human being** (psukee)" New International Version.
  - "Anguish will come upon **every man** (psukee)" New American Bible.
  - "For every **human being** (psukee)" Revised English Bible.
- (14). Romans 13:1 "Let every **soul** (person—psukee) be in subjection to the higher powers." Every immortal soul subject to world governments?  
  - "Let every **person** (psukee)" New Revised Standard Version.
  - "Let **everyone** (psukee)" New American Bible.
  - "Every **person** (psukee)" Revised English Bible.
- (15). 1 Corinthians 15:45 "So also it is written, the first man Adam became a living **soul** (a living being—psukee). The last Adam (became) a life—giving spirit.  
  - "The first man, Adam, became a **living being** (psukee)" New Revised Standard Version.
  - "The first man Adam became a **living being** (psukee)" New International Version.
  - "Adam, became a **living creature** (psukee)" Revised English Bible.
- (16). 2 Corinthians 1:23 "But I call God for a witness upon my **soul** (life—psukee), that to spare you I come no more unto Corinth."

- *"But I call on God as witness against **me** (psukee)"* New Revised Standard Version.
  - (17). 1 Thessalonians 5:23 *"And the God of peace himself sanctify you wholly; and may your spirit and **soul** (life—psukee) and body be preserved entire, without blame at the coming of our Lord Jesus Christ."*
  - (18). Hebrews 4:12 *"For the word of God is living, and active, and sharper than any two—edged sword, and piercing even to the dividing of **soul** (life—psukee) and spirit."*
  - (19). Hebrews 6:19 *"Which we have as an anchor of the **soul** (life—psukee)."*
    - *"We have that hope as an anchor for our **lives**"* (psukee)" Revised English Bible.
  - (20). Hebrews 13:17 *"For they watch in behalf of your **souls** (lives—psukee)."*
    - *"They keep watch over **you** (psukee)"* New International Version.
  - (21). James 1:21 *"Receive with meekness the implanted word, which is able to save your **souls** (life—psukee)."*
    - *"Which can save **you** (psukee)"* New International Version.
    - *"With its power to save **you** (psukee)"* Revised English Bible.
  - (22). 1 Peter 1:9 *"Receiving the end of your faith, (even) the salvation of (your) **souls** (life—soul—psukee)."*
    - *"**Your** (psukee) salvation"* New American Bible.
  - (23). 1 Peter 1:22 *"Seeing you have purified your **souls** (lives—psukee) in your obedience to the truth."*
    - *"Now that you have purified **yourselves** (psukee)"* New International Version.
    - *"You have purified **yourselves** (psukee)"* New American Bible.
  - (24). 1 Peter 2:25 *"For you were going astray like sheep; but are now returned unto the Shepherd and Bishop of your **souls** (lives—psukee)."*
  - (25). 1 Peter 4:19 *"Wherefore let them also that suffer according to the will of God commit their **souls** (lives—psukee) in well-doing unto a faithful Creator."*
    - *"Trust **themselves** (psukee) to a faithful Creator"* New Revised Standard Version.
    - *"Entrust their **lives** (psukee) to a faithful Creator"* New American Bible.
  - (26). 2 Peter 2:8 *"For that righteous man dwelling among them, in seeing and hearing, vexed (his) righteous **soul** (life—psukee) from day to day with (their) lawless deeds."*
    - *"Felt **himself** (psukee) tormented by seeing and hearing about the lawless deeds."* New American Bible.
  - (27). 2 Peter 2:14 *"Enticing un-steadfast **souls** (persons—psukee) having a heart exercised in covetousness; children of cursing."*
    - *"They seduce **the unstable** (psukee)"* New International Version.
  - (28). 3 John 2 *"Beloved, I pray that in all things you may prosper and be in health, even as your **soul** (life—psukee) prospers."*
- (4) PASSAGES WITH PSUKEE APPLIED TO GOD OR CHRIST.**
- (1). Matthew 12:18 *"Behold, my servant whom I have chosen; my beloved in whom my **soul** (I am well pleased—psukee, not God's soul) is well pleased."*
    - *"My loved one in whom I (psukee) delight"* New American Bible.

- "My beloved, in whom I (psukee) take delight" Revised English Bible.
- (2). Matthew 26:38 "Then said he unto them, My **soul** (heart—psukee, does God have an immortal something in Him?) is exceeding sorrowful, even unto **death**: abide you here, and watch with me." Mark 14:34 "And he said unto them, My **soul** (heart—psukee) is exceeding sorrowful even unto **death**: abide you here, and watch."
- "Then he said to them, 'I (psukee) am deeply grieved, even to death'" Matthew 26:38 New Revised Standard Version.
  - "My **heart** (psukee) is nearly broken with sorrow" New American Bible.
  - "My **heart** (psukee) is ready to break with grief" Revised English Bible.
- (3). Matthew 20:28 "Even as the Son of man came not to be ministered unto, but to minister, and **to give his LIFE** (psukee) a ransom for many." Mark 10:45 "For the Son of man also came not to be ministered unto, but to minister, and **to give his LIFE** (psukee) a ransom for many."
- (4). John 10:11-17 "I am the good shepherd: the good shepherd **lays down his LIFE** (psukee) for the sheep. He that is a hireling, and not a shepherd, whose own the sheep are not, beholds the wolf coming, and leaves the sheep, and flees, and the wolf snatches them, and scatters (them): (he flees) because he is a hireling, and cares not for the sheep. I am the good shepherd; and I know mine own, and mine own know me, even as the Father knows me, and I know the Father; and **I lay down my LIFE** (psukee) for the sheep. And other sheep I have, which are not of this fold: them also I must bring, and they shall hear my voice: and they shall become one flock, one shepherd. Therefore, the Father loves me, because **I lay down my LIFE** (psukee), that I may take it again." An immortal soul, as taught today, cannot die; therefore, the translators could not say Christ gave up His immortal soul. He gives His life, not an immortal soul. He died our death. He took on Himself the whole penalty for sin that is due the sinner, the penalty of death, He did not suffer an eternal life being tormented by God.
- (5). John 12:27 "Now is my **soul** (psukee—now I am troubled) troubled; and what shall I say? Father, save me from this hour."
- "Now my **heart** is troubled" New International Version.
- (6). Acts 2:27 "Because you will not leave my **soul** (me—psukee) unto Hades, neither will you give your Holy One to see corruption."
- "You will not abandon **me** (psukee) **to the grave**" New International Version.
  - "You will not abandon **me** (psukee) **to death**" Revised English Bible.
    - Both replaced "my soul" with "me" as a translation of psukee. It was Christ that was in the grave, not just a part of Him.
- (7). Acts 2:31 "He foreseeing (this) spoke of the resurrection of the Christ, that neither was **HE** (psukee) left unto Hades, nor did his flesh see corruption."
- "For you will not abandon my **soul** (psukee) to Hades" (Acts 2:27).
  - "**He** (psukee) was not abandoned to Hades" (Acts 2:29) New Revised Standard Version.

(8). Hebrews 10:38 *"But my righteous one shall live by faith: And if he shrink back, my **soul** (I—psukee) has no pleasure in him."*

- *"And if he shrinks back, I (psukee) will not be pleased with him"* New International Version.
- *"And if he draws back I (psukee) take no pleasure in him"* New American Bible.
- *"But if anyone shrinks back, I (psukee) take no pleasure in him"* Revised English Bible.

In these passages psukee, which is translate both life and soul from the same word, refers to God or Christ, not to an invisible something that is in Christ and God.

**(5) PASSAGES WITH PSUKEE (soul) USED IN SYMBOLIC LANGUAGE.** For notes on these see chapter eight. Those who believe in the Pagan doctrine of an immortal soul from birth, and believe in Hell have no plain easily understood non-figurative statement. **That figurative language, metaphors and symbolic passages must be made into literal statements SHOWS THE WEAKNESS OF THEIR BELIEF**, that it is from man and not from God. Figurative language and parables are made to be superior over plain statements, and clear language must be made to agree with what is thought to be said in what they want to find in the symbolic language.

(1). Revelation 6:9 *"And when he opened the fifth seal, I saw underneath the altar the **souls** (lives—psukee) of them that had **been slain** for the word of God."* See chapter eight—the fifth seal—souls under the altar in heaven—a symbolic picture.

(2). Revelation 8:9 *"And there **died** the third part of the creatures which were in the sea, (even) they that had **LIFE** (psukee); and the third part of the ships were destroyed."* A third of the immortal undying souls died? Are immortal souls, as the word is used today, in the sea? Do fish have an immortal soul?

(3). Revelation 12:11 *"And they overcame him because of the blood of the Lamb, and because of the word of their testimony; and they loved not their **LIFE** (psukee) **even unto death.**"* If this symbolic passage were made literal, it would say a soul (psukee) does die.

(4). Revelation 16:3 *"And the second poured out his bowl into the sea; and it became blood as of a dead man; **and every living soul** (living creature—psukee) **died**, (even) the things that were in the sea."* If made literal, this symbolic passage says living souls are the things that are in the sea. Every "living creature" fish in the sea are "**souls** (psukee)" that died. When will all the fish in the sea literally die?

- *"And every **living thing** (psukee) in the sea died"* New International Version.
- *"And every **creature** (psukee) living in the sea died"* New American Bible.
- *"And every **living thing** (psukee) in it died"* Revised English Bible.

(5). Revelation 18:13-14 *"And cinnamon, and spice, and incense, and ointment, and frankincense, and wine, and oil, and fine flour, and wheat, and cattle, and sheep; and (merchandise) of horses and chariots and slaves; and **souls** (lives-psukee) of men. And the fruits which your **soul** (life—psukee) lusted after are gone from thee."* If there were an immaterial living being that is in a person, could whatever this "soul" is lust after material things, if it can, then will it still lust after things of the earth after

the person is dead? Will immortals soul be slaves in Heaven or any other place? Could an immaterial soul be bought and sold as is "cinnamon, and spice, and incense, and ointment, and frankincense, and wine, and oil, and fine flour, and wheat, and cattle, and sheep; and (merchandise) of horses and chariots and slaves"?

- **"Slaves, and human lives** (psukee)" Revised English Bible.

(6). Revelation 20:4 "And I saw thrones, and they sat upon them, and judgment was given unto them: and (I saw) the **souls** (life—psukee) of them that had **been beheaded** for the testimony of Jesus, and for the word of God, and such as worshiped not the beast, neither his image, and received not the mark upon their forehead and upon their hand; and they lived ("came to life" New American Standard Version, New Revised Standard Version), and reigned with Christ a thousand years." "The rest of the dead lived not until" ("The rest of the dead did not come to life until" New American Standard Version, New Revised Standard Version) Revelation 20:5. Some immortal souls "came to life" and some "lived not." If a soul cannot die, it cannot come to life, and if it cannot die, then all souls live and none can "lived not." This passage is a real problem when taken literal.

Five of the six times psukee is used in Revelation, is something that can and does die.

1. Revelation 6:9 "**Souls** (lives—psukee)...**slain**."
2. Revelation 8:9 "And there **died** the third part...that had **life**" (psukee).
3. Revelation 12:11 "Loved not their **life** (psukee) even unto **death**."
4. Revelation 16:3 "Every living **soul** (living being psukee) **died**" (In the sea, all fish died). Can anyone tell me why the translators, who believed a soul could not die and do not believe fish have a soul, why they put "ever living soul died" in this passage?
5. Revelation 20:4 "The **souls** (lives—psukee) of them that had **been beheaded**."

**A SOUL IS THE EARTHLY IMAGE OF ADAM. A "LIVING SOUL" IS THE "NATURAL BODY."** Psukikos: natural (earthly).

- "The **NATURAL** (psukikos) **man**" (1 Corinthians 2:14).
- It is buried "a **NATURAL** (psukikos) **body**," it is resurrected "a **spiritual body**" (1 Corinthians 15:44).
  - It is the earthly **NATURAL** body that is buried and the same body that is resurrected but changed to a **SPIRITUAL** body, not a natural "soul" that is buried and resurrected a spiritual "soul."
- "If there is a **NATURAL** (psukikos) **body**, there is also a **spiritual body**" (1 Corinthians 15:44).
- "That which is **NATURAL** (psukikos)" (1 Corinthians 15:46).

**Neither a soul nor a spirit is the spiritual body that saved persons will have after the resurrection. The spiritual body is us changed, not an immaterial something in us changed to another immortal something after it is not in us. But those that believe either a soul or a spirit is now immortal do not believe**

**the soul or the spirit will be changed to another immortal being, or changed in any way after they leaves us.**

**WE ARE NOW A LIVING SOUL THAT IS IN THE IMAGE OF ADAM**, 1 Corinthians 15

	(1) NATURAL BODY	verse 44, 46	<b>WE NOW HAVE</b>
<b>ADAM</b>	(2) A LIVING SOUL	verse 45	<b>ADAM'S</b>
	(3) EARTHLY	verse 47	<b>IMAGE</b> verse 49

**WE WILL BE A SPIRITUAL BODY THAT WILL BE IN THE IMAGE OF CHRIST**

	(1) SPIRITUAL BODY	verse 45	<b>WE WILL HAVE</b>
<b>CHRIST</b>	(2) LIFE GIVING SPIRIT	verse 46	<b>CHRIST'S IMAGE</b>
	(3) HEAVENLY	verse 48	verse 49

"**NATURAL**" in verse 46 is used in place of "**A LIVING SOUL**" in verse 45, and **ARE THE SAME THING. We now have Adam's image (a living soul—a living being, a natural being of this earth), but we will have the image of Christ (a spiritual body).**

*"For **our** citizenship is in heaven; whence also **we** wait for a Savior, the Lord Jesus Christ: who shall **fashion anew the body of our humiliation**, that **it** may be conformed to the body of His glory"* (Philippians 2:20-21 American Standard Version), "**change**" King James Version, "**transform**" New American Standard Version.

- "*The body of our humiliation*" is the body we now have that will be fashioned anew, not an immortal soul that will be refashioned.
- "*That **it** may be conformed to the body of His glory,*" The "*it*" is the earthly body we now have "*that will be conformed to the body of His glory.*" It is "*our citizenship*" that is in Heaven, not something that has no substance.
- It is **us** that will be "*fashion anew*" or "*changed*" or "*transform*" by "us" putting on immortality.

*"Beloved, now are we children of God, and **it is not yet made manifest what we shall be** (what a spiritual body is composed of). *We know that, if he shall be manifested, **we shall be like him**; (have a spiritual body, be of the same substance) for we shall see him even as he is"* (1 John 3:2).*

*"For in the resurrection they neither marry, nor are given in marriage, but **are as angels in Heaven**" (Matthew 22:30). "*For when they shall rise from the dead, they neither marry, nor are given in marriage; but are as angels in heaven*" (Mark 12:26).*

The image of Christ, the spiritual bodies we will have after the resurrection is not an earthly body in the image of Adam. **We are now a soul (a living being) in the image of Adam, but we will not be a soul (a living being) in the image of Adam after the resurrection;** it is a body (person) in the image of Christ that will be raised from the dead. All animals are souls (living beings—Hebrew *nehphesh*—Greek *psukee*), but animals will never have a spiritual body.

GUY N. WOODS commenting on "*the natural man*" in 1 Corinthians 2:14, said, "The soulish man, since the adjective 'natural' translates a form of the Greek word for soul, which may be expressed in English as psychical. Thus, this usage is supported by etymology and required by the context. See, especially, Paul's teaching in 1 Corinthians 1:18-28 and 2:6-16." Gospel Advocate, 1985, November 21.

"Natural" is translated from "psuchikos." Psuchikos is the adjective form of psukee (the only word translated soul in the New Testament), and it is used six times in the New Testament.

1. *"But the **natural** (psuchikos—soulis) man received not"* (1 Corinthians 2:14).
2. *"It (the earthly body) is sown a **natural** (psuchikos—soulis) body, it is raised a spiritual body"* (1 Corinthians 15:44).
3. *"There is a **natural** (psuchikos—soulis) body, there is also a spiritual body"* (1 Corinthians 15:44).
4. *"Howbeit that is not first which is spiritual, but that which is **natural** (psuchikos—soulis); than that which is spiritual"* (1 Corinthians 15:46). Now we are a natural being, then we will be a heavenly being.
5. *"These are they who made separations, **sensual** (psuchikos—soulis), having not the Spirit"* (Jude 19).
  - o *"These are the men who divide you, who follow mere **natural** (psuchikos—soulis) instincts and do not have the Spirit"* New International Version.
6. James 3:15
  - o *"But it is earthly, **sensual** (psuchikos—soulis), devilish"* (James 3:15). "**Natural**" in the New American Standard Bible, "**earthly**" in the Living Bible.
  - o Amplified Bible: *"This (superficial) wisdom is not such as comes down from above, but is earthly, **unspiritual (animal)** (psuchikos—soulis), even devilish (demoniacal)."*
  - o Contemporary English Version: *"That kind of wisdom doesn't come from above. It is earthly and **selfish** (psuchikos—soulis), and comes from the devil himself."*
  - o God's Word Translation: *"That kind of wisdom doesn't come from above. It belongs to this world. It is **self-centered** (psuchikos—soulis), and demonic."*
  - o Good News Translation: *"Such wisdom does not come down from heaven; it belongs to the world, it is **unspiritual** (psuchikos—soulis), and demonic."*
  - o Holman Christian Standard Bible: *"Such wisdom does not come down from above, but is earthly, **sensual** (psuchikos—soulis), demonic."*
  - o New Century Version: *"That kind of 'wisdom' does not come from God but from the world. It is **not spiritual** (psuchikos—soulis); it is from the devil."*
  - o New International Version: *Such "Wisdom does not come down from heaven but is earthly, **unspiritual** (psuchikos—soulis), of the devil."*
  - o New Living Translation: *"For jealousy and selfishness are not God's kind of wisdom. Such things are earthly, **unspiritual** (psuchikos—soulis), and motivated by the Devil."*
  - o Worldwide English (New Testament): *"God did not give you wisdom like that. But it comes from this world. **It comes from people** (psuchikos—soulis). It comes from bad spirits."*
  - o Young's Literal Translation: *"This wisdom is not descending from above, but earthly, **physical** (psuchikos—soulis), demon-like."*
  - o Wycliffe Bible: *"For this wisdom is not from above coming down, but earthly, and **bestly** (psuchikos—soulis), and fiendly."*

From the above it is clear that psuchikos, the adjective form of psukee, means something of this earth, and not something immaterial and immortal. The adjective form of a noun never has a meaning that is totally different from the meaning of the noun. Both the noun (psukee) and the adjective (psuchikos) are the earthly, natural (soulis) person, the image of Adam. If I believed the psukee (soul) was an immaterial invisible being that is now in a person, then I would hope no one would ever see its adjective form in the above six passages.

Psuchikos—a soulish body in 1 Corinthians 15:44—50.

- (1). Sown a natural (earthly—soulis) body—raised a spiritual body (1 Corinthians 15:44).
- (2). If there is a natural (soulis) body—there is also a spiritual body (1 Corinthians 15:44).
- (3). Adam became a living soul—Christ became a life giving spirit (1 Corinthians 15:45).
- (4). The natural (soulis body) is first—then the spiritual (body) (1 Corinthians 15:46).
- (5). Adam is of the earth (soulis)—Christ is of Heaven (1 Corinthians 15:47).
- (6). As Adam is of the earth (soulis), so are those that are of the earth—As Christ is the heavenly, so are those that are heavenly (1 Corinthians 15:48).
- (7). As **we** now bear the image of Adam (a soulis earthly body)—**we** shall bear the image of Christ (a spiritual heavenly body) (1 Corinthians 15:49).
  - *“Now this I say, brethren, that flesh and blood (a soulis earthly body) cannot inherit the kingdom of God”* 1 Corinthians 15:50.

**A living soul, the earthly person in the image of Adam, will be changed to a spiritual body in the image of Christ at the resurrection.** It is the person that dies, it is the person that will be raised from the dead, not a soul that cannot die or be raised from the dead; it is a person that is now mortal that will put on immortality at the resurrection, not a soul that is already immortal.

#### **THE PERSON IS:**

- Buried in corruption—raised in incorruption (1 Corinthians 15:42).
- This mortal (body)—must put on immortality (1 Corinthians 15:53).
- Buried in dishonor—raised in glory (1 Corinthians 15:42).
- Buried in weakness—raised in power (1 Corinthians 15:43).
- Buried a natural body (flesh and blood)—raised a spiritual body (1 Corinthians 15:44).
- First (now) the natural—then that, which is spiritual (1 Corinthians 15:44-49).
- The first Adam a living soul—the last Adam (Christ) a life giving spirit (1 Corinthians 15:45).
- As we bare the image of the earthy (Adam)—we shall bare the image of the heavenly (Christ) (1 Corinthians 15:49).
- Image of Adam is the earthy soul (psukee—body) that all living persons now have. Image of heavenly—Christ, the spiritual body that only the saved will put on at the resurrection (1 Corinthians 15:49).

This change of a person from the image of Adam's natural soul body, a living being, to the spiritual body in the image of Christ, from a mortal person to an immortal person, will occur **at the Resurrection, not at death**. No one now has a spiritual body, not anyone that is now alive, or anyone that is now asleep in Christ.

If there were a soul that is in a person that is now immortal, that soul would not be mortal; therefore, an already immortal soul could not put on immortality. It is the mortal person that will put on immortality at the resurrection, not something in a person that was immortal from birth that could never be mortal. *“And just as **WE have borne the image of the earthy, WE shall also bear the image of the heavenly**”* (1 Corinthians 15:49). *“There **shall be** a resurrection both of the just and unjust”* (Acts 24:14). When Paul said this many believers had died, but their resurrection had not come, putting on immortality, being changed to the image of Christ was not something that had already come at their death.

Summary: A **"living soul"** is the earthly body of flesh and blood in the image of Adam, not the **"spiritual body"** that will be in the image of Christ. There is a difference in *"a living soul"* that we now are, and a *"spiritual body"* that we will be after the resurrection. It is clear that this says after the resurrection, we will not be a *"living soul,"* but changed to a *"spiritual body"*; therefore, a *"living soul"* and the *"spiritual body"* are different things. One (*"the living soul"*) belongs to this life; the other (a *"spiritual body"*) will belong to life after the resurrection. They are opposite to each other; a person cannot be both simultaneously. Many preachers today say, "Save your soul," which is saying, "Save your 'image of Adam,'" or, "Save your earthly flesh and blood body." While we are a *"living soul,"* we cannot be a *"spiritual body."* After the resurrection, when we shall have been changed to a *"spiritual body,"* we will no longer be a *"living soul,"* no longer be an earthly creature in the image of Adam. Adam was, and we now are "a living soul—being"; but Adam did not, and we do not now have an immortal *"spiritual body"* (not unto the resurrection 1 Corinthians 15:53).

- *"It is sown a natural body: ("Greek physical" body: Footnote in American Standard Version) it is raised a spiritual body".*
- *"It is sown a physical body" (1 Corinthians 15:44). "The dead shall be raised incorruptible" (1 Corinthians 15:52).*

**Paul could not have said any stronger that a person will be raised "a spiritual body" (1 Corinthians 15:44), "incorruptible" (1 Corinthians 15:52), not raised with the physical body we now have. The physical body is the "living soul" body we now have, and it is not the body that will be raised.** If we are raised with a body that is a spiritual body and is incorruptible, we could not at the same time be raised with an earthly body that is a corruptible body. McCord's translation, printed by Freed—Hardeman College says, *"And the dead shall be raised immortal"* (1 Corinthians 15:53). Paul said that at the same time those who are asleep in Christ will be raised incorruptible, that all Christians who are not asleep shall *"be changed"* (1 Corinthians 15:51). All will be raised from the dead at the resurrection, and those in Christ will have a new body not of flesh. We will not be a *"living soul"* after the resurrection. The *"soul"* (the image of Adam) will not exist then; that which will not exist after the resurrection is what many say we must save for they think that whatever the something they believe to be in us that it will be the only thing that will be in Heaven. It is not a part of us that will be in Heaven, it is our whole self that we must save, not whatever this "immaterial invisible" deathless soul that is now in us is believed to be that we must save; it is us that we must save, not "it." We will not have the image of Adam, the earthly *"living soul,"* in Heaven. We will not be a soul in the image of Adam as we are now, but we will be the same person we now are. How is it that many cannot see that when they say, "save your soul" they are saying, "keep the image of Adam" (the earthly body)? Do you want to be raised with

an earthy body in the image of Adam, the body that you now have, or do you want to be raised with a spiritual body in the image of Christ? “*And as WE have borne the image of the earthy* (now in this life time we are a psukikos—a living being in the image of the earthy Adam) *WE SHALL also bear the image of the heavenly*” (1 Corinthians 15:49). We are born a soul—a living being, but the saved will be resurrected a spiritual being in the image of Christ, and will not have the earthly image of Adam after the resurrection.

There are many Premillennialists in the Protestants churches and others that believe the earthly body, the image of Adam, will be raised, and believe that all the saved will live on this earth forever, not in Heaven, that the earthly body will be restored to be like Adam before he sinned. I know of no passage that says Adam's body was different before and after he sinned, but if his body was different, the rest of mankind never had the body Adam had before he sinned; therefore, all but Adam would have to be raised with a physical body that will be different from this body we now have if we were raised with a body like Adam had before he sinned. Many believe the same body we now have will be raised; there are many volumes of writing on how God will be able to restore the same body with the same particles of matter it now has. All the particles of matter in our bodies are completely changed every few years; there is not a single molecule of matter in an adult that was in the baby at birth, nor in an old person that was in a young person, but the baby is the same person as the old person even despite the fact that the body is completely different; all the matter that has been in the body of a person that lives to be old has been changed many times, and it would be enough to make many bodies, it would be a mountain of matter. The resurrected body, although it will be completely different (a spiritual body) not an earthly body, not one particle of this earth in it, but it will still be you; a person—you, not a soul will be resurrected.

Synonyms for "soul" that are used in 1 Corinthians 15: earth, earthly (dust), corruption, natural body, mortal, image of Adam, flesh and blood.

How can death be a separation of body and soul if:

- A soul is the body, which is in the image of Adam?
- It is a soul, which is the earthly body in the image of Adam that dies. It would be a separation of a soul from a soul (the image of Adam from the image of Adam).

Mike Willis said a spiritual body is not an ethereal body any more than Christ's was a shadowy, ghostly, ethereal body. But rather, a spiritual body is a body that is suited for the spiritual world, which God has planned for mankind. He said just as certainly as there is a natural body, there will also be a spiritual body; and one is no more uncertain than the other, **and just as certainly as we have a body adapted to life in the world we now live in, so also shall we have a body that will be adapted to life in the world to come.** In a Commentary On Paul's First Epistle To the Corinthians, Monroe County Press, 1979. He has clearly said the "soul" he thinks

we now have is not the "spiritual body," which we shall have in Heaven. The "soul" could then only be a shadowy, ghostly, ethereal body, which he said Christ does not have. A spiritual body is not just a thin air, no substance, ghostly something, but we know not what. **A soul is the natural body, the image of Adam, a living being; it is the earthy body that will die, and it cannot inherit the Kingdom of Heaven.**

B. W. JOHNSON, Author of "People's New Testament With Notes" 1898: *"So also in the resurrection of the dead." On earth there was a body adapted to earthly condition. At death that earthly body was 'sown' or planted in the earth. 'It is sown in corruption,' or subject, to corruption. 'It is raised in incorruption...It is sown a natural body; it is raised a spiritual body.'* Our earthly bodies, like that of the earthly Adam, are of earth; the new body, *'the house not made with hands,'* is in the image of the heavenly man, the glorified body of Jesus Christ, for *'as we have borne the image of the earthly, (a living soul—living being) so shall we also bear the image of the heavenly.'* Then, to silence forever those who expect a sensual heaven in which they shall abide in the flesh eternally, he exclaims, *'Now, this I say, brethren, that flesh and blood cannot inherit the kingdom of God; neither does corruption inherit incorruption.'* This, in its connection, can only have one meaning. Flesh and blood bodies, bodies made of corruptible earthly materials, are not compatible with a home in the world of redeemed and glorified spirits. The soul's tenement, if it has one, must be adapted to the new conditions of being. Are we then denied a body in the future state? By no means. I may not be able to understand the nature of that body, because I have never seen such an existence, but I can accept the statements of the word of God and believe that it is exactly fitted to the happy sphere of glorified existence. It *'is a building of God,'* it is made 'as it has pleased him,' it is *'a spiritual body,'* it is *'incorruptible,'* it is *'immortal,'* it is after the image of the heavenly man, and *'our vile bodies (a living soul—living being) are changed into the likeness of his glorified body,'* page 413, 1891, "Christ and the Future Life" at:

<http://www.mun.ca/rels/restmov/texts/bjohnson/etc/CATFL.HTM>

B. W. JOHNSON: *"The first man, Adam, was made a living soul. Gen. 2:7. From him came our natural life. The last Adam, Christ, of whom Adam was a type. A quickening spirit. By giving life to the dead, and imparting spiritual existence. Howbeit that is not first which is spiritual. The first Adam came before the second Adam. The natural body, which proceeds from the first Adam, is our tabernacle first, after this life comes the 'spiritual body,' which the second Adam gives. The first man is of the earth. Was fashioned out of the earth, Genesis 2:7. The second man is the Lord who came from heaven. As is the earthy. All have earthly bodies, like that of Adam. As is the heavenly. When we are raised to heaven we shall have spiritual bodies like Christ's." "People's New Testament With Notes" pages 124—125.*

CARL HOLLADAY: "To the first Adam, God gave the first physical body: Adam became a living being (Gen. 2:7). To the second Adam, or the last Adam, Christ, God gave the first spiritual body. Their essential difference (and the Greek makes this clear) is that the former was essentially life-receiving, whereas the latter was life-giving. It is this that renders one physical and the other spiritual. It was the last Adam upon whom, and within whom the Spirit of God dwelt by raising him from the dead. God breathed into history a second breath of life, and vividly confirmed another mode of existence, which wholly transcended physical life: spiritual life. But, it succeeds the physical instead of replacing the physical: it is not the spiritual, which is first but the physical, and then the spiritual. Spiritual life is the hope which the resurrection of the last Adam confirmed and will eventually provide; it is inaccessible to those who are still in the physical body" "The First Letter of Paul to The Corinthians," page 209, Abilene Christian University Press, 1979.

J. W. McGARVEY: "The life principle of Adam is soul, and he was formed of the earth: the life principle of Christ is spiritual. He was in heaven (John 1:10 and from thence entered the world and became flesh (John 1:14; 3:13, 21; Phil. 2:6-8; John 1:1-3; Luke 1:35). Now, as the two heads differ, so do the two families, and each resembles it's head; the earthly progeny of Adam having earthly natures, and the spiritual progeny of Christ having spiritual and heavenly natures. But in both families the earthly nature come first, and the **spiritual children wait for their manifestation**, which is the very thing about which the apostle has been talking, for **it comes when they are raised from the dead** (Rom. 8:29; 1 John 3:2; Rom. 8:22, 23; 2 Cor. 5:1-10)" Standard Bible Commentary, page 158, 1916, Standard Publishing Company.

DR. LANGE: "The expression living soul, as used in Genesis, is often taken to indicate an order of being superior to the brute, and is the text of many an argument to prove the immortality of the soul. The incorrectness of this assumption will be readily seen by referring to Genesis 1:20, 21, 24, and elsewhere, in which passages the words translated 'living soul' are used referring to the entire lower creation. They are used indifferently of man and beast to express animal life in general; and it is in this light the apostle uses them as the very course of his argument shows. **Adam is spoken of as a living soul, not to prove his immortality, but rather his mortality**" Commentary on 1 Corinthians 15:45.

E. PERTAVEL: "That which God has created cannot be a part of God, and consequently cannot have in itself the source of life. The creature must, therefore, be always dependent upon that divine source of the continuance of its life, and cannot be essentially immortal, even though its life should be prolonged to eternity by a power outside itself...But it is the whole man, not any separate portion of his being, that can become immortal...the creation of man did not confer immortality upon him, but made him capable of acquiring it by continuing in filial relation with God." The Problem Of Immortality, 1892, page 414.

**TEN DEFINITIONS OF "SOUL," AND EIGHTEEN DEFINITIONS OF "SPIRIT" AS GIVEN BY W. E. VINE.** "Vine's Complete Expository Dictionary Of Old And New Testament Words" by W. E. Vine is one of, if not the best and most used and accepted Lexicon in use. Therefore, I will use his definitions of "soul" and "spirit" as a standard work that is used to uphold the doctrine of an immortal soul.

**Of the 106 times psukee is used, he used only 4 of the 106 in (see b and c below) to prove a person has an immortal soul.** The 4 passages he used: (1) Matthew 10:28; (2) Acts 2:27; (3) 2 Corinthians 5:3-4; (4) Revelation 6:9.

**Of the 288 times spirit—pnuma is used, he used only 8 of the 288 in (see c and d below) to prove a person has an immortal spirit** (1) Luke 8:55; (2) Acts 7:59; (3) 1 Corinthians 5:5; (4) James 2:26; (5) 2 Corinthians 5:3-4; (6) Luke 24:37-39; (7) Hebrews 12:23; (8) 1 Peter 4:6.

According to his definitions, a soul, and a spirit are not the same things, but he says both a soul and a spirit are both an *"immaterial, invisible part of man."* In only 12 times of the 394 times that both soul and spirit are used, (really 11 as he used 2 Corinthians 5:3-4 in both to prove both a soul and a spirit are immortal even though he says a soul and a spirit are two entirely difference things); therefore, according to Vine the other 383 are speaking of man as a mortal earthly being, not an immortal soul or an immortal spirit. Matthew 10:28 says God can destroy a soul-psukee. In

Acts 2:27 a soul (psukee—person) is in the grave un-resurrected. Neither says anything about an *"immaterial, invisible part of man."*

(1) W. E. Vine on psukee (SOUL), page 588.

**THE FOUR PASSAGES VINE USED TO PROVE A PERSON NOW HAS AN IMMORTAL SOUL.** He gives ten definitions of soul. He applies only two (b) and (c) of his definitions to what he thinks is an immortal soul. All the others of his definitions (a, d, e, f, g, h, i, and j) are used referring to men and animals, not to a being that lives after the death of the person or animal.

In the first two of his ten definitions of a soul, he makes a soul be **both** the natural mortal body in the image of Adam, and the *"the immaterial, invisible part of man."* How could both be right? If the word that is translated "soul" is the natural life of the mortal body, it could not be an immaterial, invisible something in man; that would be the same as saying black is white.

According to Vine, a soul means both a mortal being and an immortal being. **"(a) The natural life of the body."** **"(b) The immaterial, invisible part of man."**

According to a Vine, soul means both: **"(j) An animate creature, human or other."** **"(c) The disembodied or 'unclothed' or 'naked' man."** Again he makes the word "soul" be **both** (1) a soul is the mortal being of humans and animals, even of dead mortal humans and animals, and at the same time (even while the mortal person is alive), (2) a soul is the immortal part of a person that can never be dead.

1). **Psukee—soul: to mortal man.** W. E. Vine lists eight ways that he says "soul" applies to mortal man and animals, not to an immortal soul.

1. **(a) "The natural life of the body"** (a living being).
2. **(d) "The seat of personality...explained as = "own self,"...the seat of the sentient element in man, that by which he perceives, reflects, feels, desires."**
3. **(e) "The seat of the sentient element in man, that by which he perceives, reflects, feels, desires."**
4. **(f) "The seat of will and purpose."**
5. **(g) "The seat of appetite."**
6. **(h) "Persons, individuals..."persons"..."anyone"...of dead bodies..."dead soul" and of animals.—The equivalent of the personal pronoun, used for emphasis and effect: 1st person, 2nd person, 3rd person."**
7. **(j) "An animate creature, human or other."**
8. **(k) "The inward man, the seat of the new life."**

2). **Psukee—soul: to man.** W. E. Vine lists two ways that a "soul" applies to something that is now immortal in a person.

1. **(b) "The immaterial, invisible part of man"** Matthew 10:28; Acts 2:27. In his ten definitions of soul, he makes a soul be **both** (1) the natural body in the image of Adam, (2) and *"the immaterial, invisible part of man,"* both mortal and immortal at the same time. This is the common way of most that believe we have a part that is now immortal.
2. **(c) "The disembodied or 'unclothed' or 'naked' man"** 2 Corinthians 5:3-4 and Revelation 6:9. "Disembodied" is not in 2 Corinthians 5:3-4, he added it. He clearly says a soul and a spirit are two different things, yet he applied "naked" to both a soul (psukee) and a spirit (pneuma), even though he made a distinction in the two. He says, *"The*

language of Heb. 4:12 suggests the extreme difficulty of distinguishing between the soul and the spirit, alike in their nature and in their activities. Generally speaking, the spirit may be recognized as the life principle bestowed on man by God, the soul as the resulting life constituted in the individual, the body being the material organism animated by soul and spirit."

1. "The spirit may be recognized as the life principle bestowed on man from God"—W. E. Vine.
2. "The body being the material organism"—W. E. Vine.
3. "The soul as the resulting life" "(a) The natural life of the body"—W. E. Vine.

Body plus breath of life, spirit = a living being, a soul. This is true of both man and animals. The spirit-life principle came from God and returns to God (Ecclesiastes 12:7). A soul is a breathing creature whether a person or animal. What does he think is the immortal **part** of a person, a soul, or a spirit? He seems to say one (a soul) at one time and the other (a spirit) at another time.

If a soul (psukee) is, "*An animate creature, human or other*" how is it that he thinks people have souls but animals do not?

- He used four passages to prove a "soul" is now immortal.
- He used about forty passages to prove that a "soul" is now mortal, that a "soul" is "the natural life of the body," an "animate creature, human or other." How could he know when psukee is something that is now immortal, and when the same word, psukee, is something that is now mortal?

**THE FOUR PASSAGES VINE USED TO PROVE THERE IS AN IMMORTAL, IMMATERIAL SOUL IN A PERSON.** All the other 102 passages he says soul—psukee refers to a person; he applied them to the earthly person, not to an "*immaterial, invisible part of a man.*"

(1). Matthew 10:28: See Gehenna in chapter four, second occasion.

(2). Acts 2:27: See hades in the New Testament in chapter six.

(3). 2 Corinthian 5:3-4: See number five below on his eight passages on spirit, "*Longing to be clothed upon with our habitation which is from heaven.*" He used this passage to prove we have both a soul and a spirit, and both are an "*immaterial, invisible part of a person,*" but he said a soul and a spirit are not the same immortal being.

(4). Revelation 6:9: Souls under the altar See chapter eight, part three.

- Not one of his four passages has immortal or immortality in them.
- Not one of the four says there is a soul that cannot die.
- Not one of the four says there is a soul that will live after the death of the body.
- Not one of the four says only something that is in a person; only a no substance "*immaterial, invisible part of man*" will be in Heaven, and not the whole person in Heaven.

**W. E. VINE ON PNEUMA (SPIRIT) THE EIGHT PASSAGES VINE USED TO PROVE A PERSON NOW HAS AN IMMORTAL SPIRIT.** "*Pneuma primarily denotes 'the wind' ('to breathe, blow'); also 'breath.'*" W. E. Vine, Vine's Complete Expository Dictionary Of Old, and New Testament Words, page 593.

(Note: While they are men who have learned more than most on Bible words, and we can learn from them, they are still just as human, just as uninspired as other men are, just as subject to err and be wrong, they are still men and hold to such things as Calvinism: Vine says, "Adam died on the day he disobeyed God. Genesis 2:17, and hence all mankind are born in the same spiritual condition" W. E. Vine, page 149, New Testament; and like the men who have made translations of the Bible, their views sometime show up in their work, intentional or unintentional; and we must not believe there can be no error in even the best lexicon or translations. They all have some, and no lexicon can be taken as law. McCord said Lexicons can be and are sometimes wrong. See "Lexicons Can Be Wrong" McCord, Guardian of Truth, page 448, 1996). In the early translations, one Greek word would be translated into many English words (an example—apollumi was translated into eight English words in the King James Version). A Lexicon wrote later would give all eight English words as the meaning of the one Greek word. Lexicons sometimes define a Greek word more by the way that word is used in the English translations than that by the way it was used in the Greek New Testament, if the English translations translate one Greek word into 8 different English words, the lexicons give 8 different meanings of the one Greek word. The question is why did the early translations use many words to translate one word? By being able to translate one Greek word into many English words gives them the ability to make any verse not say something they did not want it to say. One word, nehpshesh, is rendered with about forty-four different words in the King James Old Testament.

**W. E. VINE'S EIGHTEEN WAYS "SPIRIT" IS USED.** They are almost the same as the ways he says "soul" is used—see above. **Of the eighteen ways Vine says the Greek word "pneuma" that is translated "spirit" is used in the Bible,**

- **Of the eighteen ways he says spirit is used in the New Testament, he says sixteen ARE NOT an undying "immaterial, invisible part of man."**
- **Only two—C and D** are the only two of the eighteen different ways he says spirit is used, which he used to prove a person is a two—fold being, and they do not prove it.
- Pneuma is used in the Greek New Testament 288 times. **Of the 288 times pneuma is used, Vine says only 8 passages of the 288 passages are speaking of an immortal spirit in persons.**

None of the eight passages he used say anything about an immortality soul. Those eight do not prove there is either a spirit or a soul that is in a person that is now immortal.

"Vine's Complete Expository Dictionary," page 593, he says when "spirit" is used in regard to a person it has reference to attitude, behavior, thinking, disposition, mood, courage, or temperament. As "a happy disposition," "good attitude" or "bad mood." These are all attitudes of a living person, not of an immortal something in a person.

He says spirit-pneuma when it used in regard to man:

- 1). *Pneuma*—spirit: to being not of this earth, God, Christ, Holy Spirit, angels, and other spirits both clean and unclean—(k) The Holy Spirit—(m) Unclean spirits, demons—(n) Angels.
- 2). *Pneuma*—spirit: **to mortal man.** W. E. Vine lists thirteen definition of "spirit" that makes "spirit" apply to mortal man.

- "The wind"—"The breath"
- (e) "The resurrection body"
- (f) **"The sentient element in man, that by which he perceives, reflect, feels, desires"**
- (g) "Purpose, aim"
- (h) "The equivalent of the personal pronoun, used for emphasis and effect"
  - "Character"
- (j) "Moral qualities and activities"—(1) "Bad: As of bondage, As of a slave, Stupor, and Timidity"—(2) "Stupor"—(3) "Timidity"—(4) "Good: As of adoption, liberty as of a son, Faith, Quietness"—(5) "Liberty as of a son"—(6) "Meekness"—(7) "Faith"—(8) "Quietness"
- (l) "The inward man, an expression used only of the believer, The new life"

- (o) "Divine gift for service"
- (p) "By metonymy, those who claim to be depositories of these gifts"
- (q) "The significance, as contrasted with the form, of words, or of a rite"
- (r) "A vision"

None of these says a person is a spirit being, but they all have reference to attitude or behavior of the person, none to something in the person. Question: How does he know when the one word that is used in the Greek, "pneuma" has all these different meaning? Why does pneuma means "purposes" in 2 Corinthians 12:18 and "meekness in 1 Corinthians 4:21. Purposes and meekness are not 31<sup>st</sup> cousins, they are completely difference in meaning; how did he get both from pneuma? "Character" is nothing like purposes, nothing like meekness, yet he translates all three from the same Greek word.

3). *Pneuma*—spirit: to man. Vine lists two definition of "spirit" that is something immortal in man.

1. (c) "The immaterial, invisible part of man, Luke 8:55; Acts 7:59; 1 Corinthians 5:5; James 2:26"
2. (d) "The disembodied, or unclothed, or naked, 2 Corinthians 5:3, 4; Luke 24:37-39; Hebrews 12:23; 1 Peter 4:6"

Vine's gives eight passages in (c) and (d) to prove a person now has an immortal "spirit." (1) Luke 8:55; (2) Acts 7:59; (3) 1 Corinthians 5:5; (4) James 2:26; (5) 2 Corinthians 5:3-4; (6) Luke 24:37-39; (7) Hebrews 12:23; (8) 1 Peter 4:6, but he used about sixty-two passages where he says the same Greek word is something that is now mortal.

Passages which speak or mood, an attitude, frame of mind, behavior, thinking, disposition, courage, or temperament of a mortal person(s) in this life time, feeling that we can and do know about, not an immortal separate conscious entity that we have no way of knowing if it was troubled, stirred, fervent, or no way of knowing anything about it feeling or even if it has feeling.

- "He was troubled in SPIRIT (pnuma)" (John 13:21)
  - "Jesus was deeply troubled" New International Version
- "The wisdom and the SPIRIT (pnuma) by which..." (Acts 6:10)
- "His SPIRIT (pnuma) was stirred in him" (Acts 17:16)
  - "He was greatly distressed" New International Version
- "Paul was pressed in the SPIRIT (pnuma)" (Acts 18:5)
- "Being fervent in the SPIRIT (pnuma)" (Acts 18:25)
  - "He spoke with great fervor" New International Version
- "Paul purposed in the SPIRIT (pnuma)" (Acts 19:21)
  - "Paul made up his mind" Today's English Version
- "Whom I serve with my SPIRIT (pnuma)" (Romans 1:9)
  - "Whom I serve with my whole heart" New International Version
- "But to be SPIRITUALLY (pnuma) minded is life and peace" (Romans 8:6)
- "The SPIRIT (pnuma) of bondage...the SPIRIT (pnuma) of adoption" (Romans 8:15)
- "God gave then a SPIRIT (pnuma) of stupor" (Romans 11:8)
- "Fervent in SPIRIT (pnuma)" (Romans 12:11)
- "Not the SPIRIT (pnuma) of the world" (1 Corinthians 2:12)

- "In the SPIRIT (pnuma) of meekness" (1 Corinthians 4:21)
  - "With a gentle spirit" New International Version
  - "A heart of love and gentleness" Today's English Version
- "Being absent in body but present in SPIRIT (pnuma)" (1 Corinthians 5:3)
- "They have refreshed my SPIRIT (pnuma)" (1 Corinthians 16:18)
- "I had no rest in my SPIRIT (pnuma)" (2 Corinthians 2:13)
  - "I still had no peace of mind" New International Version
- "We having the same SPIRIT (pnuma) of faith" (2 Corinthians 4:13)
- "Because his SPIRIT (pnuma) was refreshed" (2 Corinthians 7:13)
  - "By all this we are encouraged" New International Version
- "Walked we not in the same SPIRIT (pnuma)?" (Corinthians 12:18)
- "Give unto you the SPIRIT of wisdom" (Ephesians 1:17)
- "Be renewed in the SPIRIT (pnuma) of your mind" (Ephesians 4:23)
  - "To be made new in the attitude of your minds" New International Version
- "That you stand fast in one SPIRIT (pnuma)" (Philippians 1:27)
- "God has not given us the SPIRIT (pnuma) of fear" (2 Timothy 1:7)
- "Of a meek and quiet SPIRIT (pnuma)" (1 Peter 3:4)
- "For the SPIRIT of glory (pnuma)" (1 Peter 4:14)
- "The SPIRIT (pnuma) of truth, and the SPIRIT (pnuma) of error" (1 John 4:6)

**(1). W. E. VINE'S FIRST PASSAGE OF HIS EIGHT to prove there is a SPIRIT in a person that is now immortal. "And her spirit returned" Luke 8:55.** He says pneuma (soul) is *"the natural life of the body,"* page 588. In Luke 8:55 it means her life returned. Vine said, *"The spirit may be recognized as the life principle bestowed on man by God, the soul as the resulting life constituted in the individual, the body being the material organism animated by soul and spirit,"* page 589. He points out that man, as he is now, can have no life without the body. After the resurrection the saved will have a new body. The lost are not said to put on a new glorious spiritual body (2 Thessalonians 4:23ff, 1 Corinthians 15:43), or to have immortality, which they must have if they will live forever in torment. Pneuma—spirit is also translated "life" in Revelation 13:15. **Vine makes a clear distinction between a soul and a spirit, but says both are an "immaterial, invisible part of man."** On page 588 a soul is *"the immaterial, invisible part of man";* on page 593 a spirit is *"the immaterial, invisible part of man."* Does he think people have two *"immaterial, invisible parts"*? Is this proof that, as McCord says, "Lexicons Can Be Wrong"? Vine also applied, *"A building from God, a house not made with hands, eternal, in the heavens"* (2 Corinthians 5:3-4) to both a soul and a spirit, but he and most protestants believes a soul and a spirit are not the same thing, yet say both are *"a house not made with hands."* Do we have two buildings from God for the two *"immaterial, invisible parts"* of a person, (1) one is a building *"not made with hands"* for the spirit, (2) and another is a building *"not made with hands"* for a soul? According to Vine we do; do you believe him?

**(2). W. E. VINE'S SECOND PASSAGE OF HIS EIGHT to prove there is a SPIRIT in a person that is now immortal. "Receive my spirit" Acts 7:59.** If Stephen were asking for his spirit to be received at the resurrection, for this is when

we will be received in Heaven, then where is his spirit before the resurrection? For this to prove Stephen had a spirit that would be alive from death unto the Resurrection, his spirit would have to be received by God at death, both (1) received before the resurrection, (2) and received without the resurrection. Stephen was asking God to receive him at the judgment, not at death. Those who teach a soul goes to Abraham's bosom do not believe that a soul is caught up to Heaven immediately at death so why are they using this to prove what happens to a soul at the death of a person when they do not believe God receives either a soul or us into Heaven at the time of our death? To make this teach we have an immortal soul, which does not die when the body dies, (1) soul and spirit must be made to be the same thing, his spirit that he was asking to be received would be his soul, (2) then contrary to their belief about Abraham's bosom that no one will be in Heaven before the resurrection; they send Stephen's soul to Heaven at his death. Is it because there is no real proof, and scripture must be misused to make it sound as though there is proof, and even misuse them in a way that is contradictory to their own belief. Many say that a soul or a spirit left Stephen and went to Heaven, or to Abraham's bosom, but the Bible clearly tells us that Stephen, not his soul, "*fell asleep*" (Acts 7:60), not that he has "gone to be with the Lord," not told that he is now in Heaven "looking down on us" as is often preached today. If the real Stephen were a spirit, then what was the "*he*" that "*fell asleep*" (Acts 7:60)? The "*he*" that fell asleep was Stephen (the whole person), not just an earthly body that will never be in Heaven that is now asleep while the real Stephen is now awake in Heaven. Either "the real Stephen" "*fell asleep*" or he is awake, one or the other but not both.

Stephen said, "*Lay not this sin to their charge*" (Acts 7:60). The book of Job was inspired, but the speeches of his three friends were not inspired, and much in their speeches is not true (Job 42:7; Job 42:8). See "Job" By Homer Hailey and "Guide to Bible Study" by J. W. McGarvey. Was Stephen speaking by inspiration, or was Luke only inspired to write what Stephen said, just as the writer of Job was inspired to write the uninspired speeches of Job's friends even when God said that they spoke not the truth? The question is, "What did Stephen ask God to do, and when was he asking God to do it?" "*Lord, lay not this sin to their charge?*" (Acts 7:60). This shows he had love even to those who were doing him harm as he should, but what he was asking could not be unless they believed, repented, and were baptized. There is no other way that God could not lay this sin to their charge, or the death of Christ would not have been needed. Therefore, God could not do what Stephen was asking. Stephen was not speaking by inspiration when he said this, for if he were, he would not have been inspired to ask God to do something God could not do. Christ said, "*Father, into your hands I commit My spirit: and having said this, He breathed His last*" (Luke 23:46). Isaiah 53:12 in the King James Version "*because he has poured out his **soul** unto death,*" is "*because he poured out **Himself** to death*" in the New

American Standard Version, and "because He poured out his **life** unto death" in the New International Version. Christ gave his life for us, not a no substance something that according to today's theology could not die. If Christ did not really give up His life, if He were as much alive as He was before He came to earth there was no resurrection. He did not die for us. We are still in our sins with no hope. "For you will not abandon my soul to **sheol**" (Psalm 16:10). "Because you will not abandon me to the **grave**" New International Version is quoted in the New Testament, "Because you will not leave My soul unto **hades**" (Acts 2:27 and 31). "In hell" in the King James Version. Christ gave His life for our sins. Sheol is the grave. He died our death, and went to the grave, and was raised from the grave by the Father. He was not abandon to the grave.

(1). "Christ died for our sins" (1 Corinthians 15:3).

(2). "He was buried" (1 Corinthians 15:4).

(3). "He has been raised on the third day" (1 Corinthians 15:4).

- If He went to Heaven at the moment of death, He could not have been buried for He would have been alive in Heaven.
- He could not have been raised on the third day, for He would have been alive in Heaven, not dead and buried in the grave.
- If He were alive in Heaven there was no resurrection, for He would not have been dead on the third day.

Unconditional immortality completely destroys the resurrection.

**(3). W. E. VINE'S THIRD PASSAGE OF HIS EIGHT to prove the SPIRIT is now immortal, I Corinthians 5:5.**

*"To deliver such a one unto Satan for the destruction of the flesh, that the spirit may be saved in the day of the Lord Jesus."* The day of the Lord Jesus is the day of His second coming and the day of the resurrection. Is Vine saying salvation will be given to any one after the resurrection?

The context of this passage is disfellowship of the person committing fornication with his father's wife. *"To deliver such a one unto Satan"* is to disfellowship him in hope that he will repent; it is not to literally deliver him to Satan; there would be no way that the Corinthians are any one could literally take any living person to Satan. *"For the destruction of the flesh"* is the destruction of the things in his or her life for which they were to deliver him or her to Satan, not to literally destroy their flesh (body). Paul was not telling them to literally destroy the body of another living person, *"That the spirit may be saved in the day of the Lord Jesus."* *"The day of the Lord Jesus"* is the day of His second coming, the resurrection, and judgment. Even most of those who believe we have an immortal soul or an immortal spirit that is different from the person that it is in does not believe either a soul or a spirit can be saved at any time after the death of the person. It most likely means that the person disfellowshipped will be saved from the second death after the Judgment (Revelation 21:8) if being disfellowshipped makes him repent before his death.

**(4). W. E. VINE'S FORTH PASSAGE to prove there is a SPIRIT in a person that is now immortal. "For as the body apart from the spirit is dead" James 2:26.** What does this passage teach us about the spirit? Only that the body is dead without it. Nothing more. To teach anything more than this from this passage it must be read into it.

WHAT THIS PASSAGE DOES NOT SAY. It does not say a spirit is alive after death without the body, **but this is what it is used to prove.**

It does not say a spirit is an *"immaterial, invisible part of man"* that will live without the body after the person is dead; it says nothing about what happens to the spirit after the death of the person.

It does not say a spirit and a soul are both the same thing, but this passage is used repeatedly to prove a "soul" is immortal. There could not be a better example of changing and adding to God's word than this passage when it is used to teach mankind has an immortal soul, for it says nothing about a soul, Hell, torment, Heaven, or eternal life, but all these are read into it.

**How is this passage used? It is changed from saying "the body apart from the spirit is dead" to "the spirit apart from God is separated from God but not dead,"** (changed to being "spiritual dead" often while the body is still alive). **Death is removed from this passage and replaced with eternal life of a soul that is separated from God. It is changed to teach a "soul" is never dead, which is not even close to what it says.**

**(5). W. E. VINE'S FIFTH PASSAGE OF HIS EIGHT to prove there is a SPIRIT in a person that is now immortal. "Longing to be clothed upon with our habitation which is from heaven."** He used 2 Corinthians 5:3-4 to prove a person has an *"immaterial, invisible part of man"* that will live after the person is dead, will live without the person it is now in.

- In this passage there is nothing about an immortal soul or an immortal spirit.
- Nothing about a person being a dual being while in the earthly house.
- Nothing is said about there being any life in an intermediate state from death unto the resurrection.

**If it were as Vine says, that this clothing is "a never—dying spirit" it would not be possible to be unclothed. If this clothing were a spirit or a soul, then to be "unclothed" or "naked" would be not to have either a spirit or a soul. He added, "disembodied" to get his immaterial soul, but adds it to both a soul and a spirit, which he said are not the same. If all have an immortal soul from birth, not even the lost could ever be "naked" or "unclothed." If all have an immortal soul and if the "house not made with hands" were, as he says, both a soul and a spirit, even the lost would have both of these houses that are "not made with hands," and no one, saved or lost could ever not have two houses "not made with hands," not now in this life time, or not at any time after death.**

2 Corinthians 5:1-2: “For **we** know that if the earthly tent, which is our house is torn down, **we** have a building from God, a house not made with hands, eternal in the heavens. For indeed in this house **we** groan, (now while we are in this life) **longing to be clothed with our dwelling from heaven**, inasmuch as **we**, having put it on, will not be found naked (not have the life Christ gives to them that obey Him). For indeed **while we are in this tent, we groan, being burdened, because we do not want to be unclothed but to be clothed**, (the groaning and not wanting to be unclothed but clothed is now while we are in this tent, clothed while we are still in this body living on this earth) so that what is mortal will be swallowed up by life. Now He who prepared us for this very purpose is God, who gave to us the Spirit as a pledge. Therefore, being always of good courage, and knowing that while we are at home in the body we are absent from the Lord—for we walk by faith, not by sight—we are of good courage, I say, and prefer rather to be absent from the body and to be at home with the Lord.” While we are alive in this body—tent we see the Lord by faith, not by sight; when we are at home with the Lord we shall see Him as He is, this mortal body will be swallowed by immortality. **There is no way that any kind of “intermediate state” before the resurrection can be said to be “eternal in the heavens.”**

“Being conformed unto his death; if by any means I may attain unto the resurrection from the dead” (Philippians 3:10-11). This passage teaches the resurrection from the dead will not be unto the coming of Christ. To make and “be with the Lord” (Philippians 1:23) mean to be with Him at death without a resurrection makes the two be an outright conduction of each other, makes death not be death and the resurrection be useless.

OUR HOUSE, WHICH IS **FROM** GOD, or: OUR HOUSE, WHICH IS **OF** GOD? Ek in the Greek is translated **of, from, out of, by**, etc.

- “We have a building **of** (ek) God” 2 Corinthians 5:1
- “Our house which is **from** (of) (ek) heaven” 2 Corinthians 5:2
- “Rather to be absent **from** (ek) the body” 2 Corinthians 5:8
- “As **of** (ek) sincerity, but as **of** (ek) God” 2 Corinthians 2:17
- “Think any thing as **of** (ek) ourselves” 2 Corinthians 3:5
- “The light to shine out **of** (ek) darkness” 2 Corinthians 4:6
- “And all things are **of** (ek) God” 2 Corinthians 5:18

Most of the times ek is used it makes sense if it is translated **of** or **from**, but in 2 Corinthians 5:2 “A house which is **from** heaven” makes the house we will have after “the earthly house of this tabernacle were dissolved” be “**from** Heaven,” not in or “**of** Heaven.” In this passage whether it is translated “**from** heaven” or “**of** heaven” makes a big different in where our dwelling will be, it changes our dwelling from being in Heaven to being from Heaven but not in Heaven. The “*building*” of 5:1 and the “*house*” of 5:2 are the same building or house, Both times ek should have been

translated “of,” Both the “*building*,” and the “*house*” are of Heaven, not from Heaven.

2 Corinthians 5:1-10 is used to show the “*house not made with hands*” is not a dwelling place, but the house is a spirit that is now in us and that a spirit is now conscious, and it will continue to be conscious before the resurrection when the person is dead. This “*longing to be clothed upon with our habitation that is from (of) Heaven*,” is longing for our habitation that will be received at “*the judgment seat*” (5:10), not in this life, or not at our death. **If, as those who use this passage to teach, that this “*house not made with hands*” is an immortal soul, then we would now have an immortal soul living in us if we are saved, and a soul living in us even if we were lost, then why would we be “*longing to be clothed*” with our “*house not made with hands*” when we would already be clothed with it if it were an immortal soul that is already in all, and all, both the saved and the lost, even those not in Christ would already be clothed with the “*house not made with hands*” from the day of their birth, BUT THE HOUSE WE ARE LONGING TO BE CLOTHED WITH IS NOT A SOUL THAT EVERYONE WOULD BE ARE ALREADY CLOTHED WITH.** Paul is made to say we are longing to be clothed with a soul that we are already clothed with, and all have been clothed with a soul from birth. There is nothing about a “soul” in this passage. “Spirit” has to be read into this for Paul said nothing about “spirit” in 2 Corinthians 5:1-10.

(1) It is about **us** now in this life.

(2) And **us** at the judgment seat.

(3) And then **us** at home in Heaven.

It is about our whole person changing our earthly house for our house in Heaven.

OUR MORTAL NATURE NOW ON EARTH 2 Cor. 5:1-11	OUR IMMORTAL NATURE AFTER THE RESURRECTION IN HEAVEN, after second coming
<u>"The earthly house"</u>	<u>"A building from God-eternal in the heavens"</u>
<u>"Longing to be clothed upon"</u>	<u>"With our habitation that is of (ek) Heaven"</u>
<u>"At home in the body"</u>	<u>"At home with the Lord"</u>
<u>"That what is mortal"</u>	<u>"May be swallowed up of life"</u>
<u>"This mortal"</u>	<u>"Must put on immortality" 1 Corinthians 15:53</u>

Paul says nothing about any kind of existence from death to the resurrection. “*That what is mortal may be swallowed up of life*” (2 Corinthians 5:4). When will this be? It will be at the resurrection, not instantly at death (1 Corinthians 15:54).

The lost do not now and will never have “*a building from God, a house not made with hands, eternal in the heavens.*” According to the immortal soul teaching of today that a soul is now immortal, then what is “*mortal that is swallowed up of life?*” (2 Corinthians 5:4).

- At death, the body that is mortal dies and goes to the grave. The dead body has no life and is not swallowed up of life.
- Those that believe a soul is now immortal believe it is now as immortal as it will be after the death of the person, that a soul is now as immortal as it will ever be. Is there any swallowing of mortality by life here? No. According to this view the person will be dead, a soul will have the same life after death that it now has, and a soul could not be no more

immortal than we are told that a soul now is. Nothing will be swallowed up by life. According to this view, there is no way to make any sense from what Paul said.

The mortal person is swallowed up by life at the resurrection of the dead at the second coming when the mortal person will be put on immortality. *"He who has prepared us for this very thing is God, who has given us the Spirit as a guarantee"* (2 Corinthians 5:5 New Revised Standard Version). Paul is speaking of the person, the mortal person *"while we are in this tent,"* and the immortal person after *"what is mortal will be swallowed up by life."* He says nothing about something that is now immortal, but will be a naked immortal something between death and the resurrection.

We need to take care that we do not put an interpretation on any passage that will make it clash with other passages. It is evident that Paul did not expect the dead in Christ, those who have fallen asleep (1 Corinthians 15:1-28) to be with Christ before the resurrection.

1. The *"earthly house of our tabernacle"* is the earthly body that we are now in.
2. The spiritual body after the resurrection will have, *"A building from (Greek-ek—of) God, a house not made with hands, eternal in the heavens."*

If it is only something in us that has no substance as Vine says, or something that is thoughts only as Peterson says, then this no substance, thoughts only, nothing could not live in a building of any kind.

**Those who believe a soul is something that is now in a person and that it is now alive, and it will always be alive after the death of the person:**

- **Believe the same soul that is NOW in a person.**
  - **Is the same soul we that will leave the person after the death of the person.**
  - **And is the same soul that will be in Heaven or Hell; for they believe *"the immaterial, invisible part of man"* is just as immortal NOW as it will be after the resurrection and judgment; they believe it is just as immortal NOW while it is now in a person on earth as it will be after it leaves the person and is in Heaven or Hell.**

**A soul that can never not have life, makes being naked after death not be possible for it, and it makes no sense if you believe the same immortal soul that is now in person will always be the same immortal soul that will live forever in Heaven or Hell.** A soul being *"disembodied"* is not in the Bible, and therefore is a doctrine of man. Paul's words have to be changed to put an immaterial immortal soul in the Bible. Most Protestants believe a soul goes immediately to Heaven or Hell at death; therefore, Vine's teaching of a soul being in a *disembodied—naked* state after death does not fit with what most Protestants believe, it is a total contradiction to it. The Catholic or the Protestant views do not have any room for an intermediate *"disembodied"* state from death to the resurrection. **Vine's disembodied soul from death to the resurrection is saying they are both wrong, for most in the mainstream Protestants or Catholics do not believe there is a "disembodied" state for a soul from death to the**

resurrection for they believe that a soul goes instantly to Heaven or Hell at death with no state in between death and Heaven. This passage is just another of the many passages that are unexplainable passages to anyone with the Protestant view, but Vine did the best he could even if he has to be both unorthodox and change the Bible.

The passage says nothing about a "soul." Paul used "we" not "a soul." **"But that WE would be clothed upon that what is mortal may be swallowed up of life."**

#### **WHEN WILL WE BE PRESENT WITH THE LORD?**

(1) *"For the Lord himself shall descend from heaven, with a shout, with the voice of the archangel, and with the trump of God: **and the dead in Christ shall rise first;** (all the dead in Christ shall rise at the same time at the coming of Christ) *them that are alive, that are left, shall together with them be caught up in the clouds, to meet the Lord in the air: **and so shall we ever be with the Lord**"* (1 Thessalonians 4:16-17). Both (1) believers that are dead in Christ and (2) believers that will be alive at His coming will **both together** be caught up and ever be with the Lord; this clearly shows that the dead in Christ are not now in Heaven with the Lord before and without being resurrected from the dead. If they were now alive in Heaven they would not be "dead in Christ," they could not "rise first," be resurrected from the dead before those who are alive are "changed." It is (1) dead Christians (persons) that will be resurrected (2) and living Christians (persons) that will be changed from mortal to immortal, not (1) dead souls resurrected (2) and living souls changed.*

(2) *"We all shall not sleep but we shall all be changed, in a moment, in the twinkling of an eye, **at the last trump:** for the trumpet shall sound and **the dead shall be raised incorruptible, and we** (those in Christ who will be alive when Christ comes) **shall be changed.** For this corruptible must put on incorruption, and **this mortal must put on immortality**"* (1 Corinthians 15:51-53). Paul is clearly speaking of this mortal person putting on immortality, not a soul that is already immortal putting on immortality. An immortal soul is read into this passage when nothing is said about a soul in it. All will be in one of two groups. Group one: all that are in Christ that dies before Christ comes, they are now all asleep in Christ, not awake some place; none of them are awake or will be awake before and without the resurrection; all the dead are dead and will be dead unto the resurrection. Group two: All that are in Christ that will be alive when Christ comes will never be dead, but will be changed in a moment. This passage is about only those persons in Christ; nothing is said about persons not in Christ, and nothing about souls that those that believe there are deathless souls tell us immortal souls can never be asleep or dead, can never "be changed in a moment."

(3) At our gathering together unto Him at "the coming of the Lord" (2 Thessalonians 2:1).

(4) When the Lord shall descend from Heaven with a shout (1 Thessalonians 4:13-17).

(5) When Christ who is our life shall be manifest (Colossians 3:4).

(6) *"In the future there is laid up for me the crown of righteousness, which the Lord, the righteous Judge, will award to me **on that day**; and not only to me, but also to all who have loved His appearing"* (2 Timothy 4:8). If it is *"on that day"* it is not possible to be at death.

(7) *"In My Father's house are many dwelling places; if it were not so, I would have told you; for I go to prepare a place for you. And if I go and prepare a place for you, **I will come again, and RECEIVE YOU to Myself, that where I am, there you may be also**"* (John 14:2-3). Christ has not yet come to receive Paul or any one; therefore, Christ has not received any one to be in the prepared place in Heaven. He did not say to those in Heaven with Him, "I will come again, and **receive your body**, that where we are, there **your body** may be also be with us." Did Jesus say, "And if I go your death shall soon bring you to me?" No. He said, **"I will come again and receive YOU to Myself."**

- No one is now in the place Christ went to prepare, and no one will not be unto Christ comes again to receive them. All the saved are now in the church; therefore, the church is not the prepared place. *"But you HAVE COME to Mount Zion and the city of the living God, the heavenly Jerusalem"* (Hebrews 11:22); therefore the heavenly Jerusalem is not the place where Christ will come again to receive the saved.

(8) *"For this is the will of my Father that everyone that beholds the Son, and believes on him, should have eternal life; **and I will raise him up at the last day**"* (John 6:40, 44, 54). Is He going to rise up *"everyone that beholds the Son, and believes on him"* by bringing them from Heaven, or by raising them from the dead? Also 1 Thessalonians 4:16-17; John 11:24; 1 John 3:2, and many other passages.

Even though Paul know his death was near he anticipated receiving *"the crown or righteousness"* to be given to him by the Lord *"on that day,"* not at his death if he should die before the coming of the Lord, and that this crown of life would also be given to *"all them that have loved his appearing"* *"on that day"* (2 Timothy 4:6-8), both to all the saved that are asleep in Christ and to all the saved that will be alive when He comes.

In the above passages it is said when we will go to Heaven in such a simple and clear way that I cannot understand how anyone cannot understand them, or how they could say, "Not true Lord, we are not going to wait unto You come again." If an immaterial no substance soul were alive with the Lord immediately after death then that soul that is now alive could not be resurrected from the dead at His coming; an immortal soul could not *"put on immortality"* at the coming of Christ. In 2 Corinthians 5:1-10 Paul says nothing about a "soul," he is speaking of the whole person.

**According to both the Catholic and Protestant versions,** the body is now mortal and there is a soul in it that is now immortal. At the death of the person, a soul is already immortal and is not

changed, and nothing of this mortal is swallowed up of life; at death the person goes back to the earth, and nothing of the person will put on immortality, and nothing is swallowed up of life.

**According to the Bible version**, this mortal is changed and puts on immortality at the resurrection, will put on immortality that this mortal does not now have, immortality will be put on at the resurrection (1 Corinthians 15:50-55; 1 Thessalonians 4:13-17). This mortal is swallowed up of life (2 Corinthians 5:4). The Bible says this mortal person will put on immortality; it never says an immortal soul will put on immortality.

Paul says the same thing in Romans 8:23-24 and 2 Corinthians 5:1-2. *"Waiting for our adoption, to wit, the redemption of our body,"* and *"longing to be clothed upon with our habitation which is from (Greek "ek" of) heaven."* Both are the same thing and will be at the resurrection, not at death; neither of these two passages says anything about a soul or a spirit that will be alive before or after the resurrection.

Romans 8:23-24	2 Corinthians 5:1-2
But ourselves also, who have The first-fruits of the Spirit	Who give unto us the earnest of the Spirit" See Eph 1:13-14; Rom 8:11
Even we ourselves groan within ourselves	In this we groan,
Waiting for our adoption, to wit, the redemption of our body	longing to be clothed upon with our habitation which is from heaven

It is our bodies that will be changed, redeemed, clothed with our habitation from Heaven, not a soul.

Scott P. Wiley in "Eternal Torment or Annihilation" makes the grave be the place where man puts bodies, but he says sheol is not the grave, but sheol is a place under the earth where God puts souls of the dead, some souls in one part of sheol are happy and some souls in another part of sheol are in torment, and they are waiting there for the resurrection. If Paul and all the saved go to be with the Lord at death and the Lord is in Heaven there is no such place as sheol or hades, or if there where such a place no one would be in it for we are told they would be with the Lord in Heaven. If the souls that had been in the dead all go to sheol and they are with the Lord, the Lord would be in sheol under the earth, or wherever those who believe sheol is a storehouse for living souls to be at; therefore, the Lord could not be in Heaven, not setting on the right hand of God. **If all are transported to Heaven or Hell instantly at death, it would makes all the passages that speak of the dead being in sheol or hades (the grave) a lie, and all the passages that speak of the resurrection of the dead be a lie, for those in Heaven could not be dead; it makes the Bible say one thing in one place and another thing in another place.**

GEORGE STORRS, "What is immateriality? Strictly speaking it is, not material—not matter. In other words—it is not substance. What is that which has no substance?—What kind of creation is it? If the Creator formed 'all things out of nothing,' it would seem that man's soul has taken the form of its original, and is nothing still; for it is not matter, we are told. If it is said – 'It is a spiritual substance'—I ask, what kind of substance is that, if it is not matter?" "Is There Immortality In Sin and Suffering?" 1885.

COMPANION BIBLE by E. W. Bullinger, on 2 Corinthians 5:8: "It is little less than a crime for anyone to pick out certain words and frame them into a sentence, not only disregarding the scope and context, but ignoring the other words in the verse, and quote the words 'absent from the body,

present with the Lord' with the view of dispensing with the hope of the Resurrection (which is the subject of the whole passage) as though it were unnecessary; an as though 'present with the Lord' is obtainable without it."

## 2 CORINTHIANS 5:1-4 In contemporary English and paraphrased translations.

NEW LIVING TRANSLATION: "For **we** know that when this earthly tent **we** live in is taken down—when **we** die and leave these bodies—**we** will have a home in heaven, an eternal body made for **us** by God himself and not by human hands. **We** grow weary in our present bodies, and long for the day when **we** will put on our heavenly **bodies** like new clothing. **For WE will not be spirits without bodies, but WE will put on new heavenly bodies.** Our dying bodies make **us** groan and sigh, but it's not that **we** want to die and have no **bodies** at all. **We** want to slip into our new **bodies** so that these dying **bodies** will be swallowed up by everlasting life."

THE LIVING BIBLE PARAPHRASED: "For **we** know that when this tent **we** live in now is taken down—**we** will have wonderful **new bodies** in heaven, homes that will be **ours** forevermore, made for **us** by God himself, and not by human hands. How weary **we** grow of our present **bodies**. That is why **we** look forward eagerly to the day when **WE shall have heavenly bodies** which **we** shall put on like new clothes. For **we** shall not be merely spirits without **bodies**. These earthly bodies make **us** groan and sigh, but **we** wouldn't like to think of dying and having no **bodies** at all. **We** want to slip into our **new bodies** so that these dying **bodies** will as it were, be swallowed up by everlasting life."

COMTEMPORARY ENGLISH VERSION: "Our bodies are like tents that **we** live in here on earth. But when these tents are destroyed, **we** know that God will give each of **us** a place to live. These homes will not be buildings that someone has made, but they are in heaven and will last forever. While **we** are here on earth, **we** sigh because **we** want to live in that heavenly home. **We** want to put it on like clothes and not be naked. These tents **we** now live in are like a heavy burden, and **we** groan, But **we** don't do this just because **we** want to leave these bodies that will die. It is because **WE want to change them for bodies that will never die.**"

NEW CENTURY VERSION: "**We** know that our **body**—the tent **we** live in here on earth—will be destroyed. But when this happens, God will have a house for us. It will not be a house made by human hands; instead, it will be a home in heaven that will last forever. But now **we** groan in this tent. We want God to give us our heavenly home, because **it will clothe us so we will not be naked.** While **we** live in this **body**, **we** have burdens, and **we** groan. **We** do not want to be naked, but want to be clothed with **our** heavenly home."

THE SIMPLE ENGLISH BIBLE: "When the earthly 'tent' in which **we** live is destroyed, **we** know that **we** have another building which comes from God, a house in the heavenly worlds, not man-made. It lasts forever. That is why **we** groan, yearning to be clothed with **our** heavenly house. Since **we** will be clothed with a body, **we** will not be a naked spirit. While **we** are in **our** bodies now, **we** are groaning because **we** feel burdened. That doesn't mean **we** want to die; **we** only want a new life."

GOOD NEWS FOR MODERN MAN. THE NEW TESTAMENT IN TODAY'S ENGLISH VERSION: "For **we** know that when this tent **we** live in—**our** body here on earth—is torn down, God will have a house in heaven for **us** to live in, a house he himself made, which will last for ever. And now **we** sigh, so great is our desire to have our home which is in heaven put on over **us**; for being clothed with it **we** shall not be found without a **body**. While **we** live in this earthly tent **we** groan with a feeling of oppression; it is not that **we** want to get rid of **our** earthly **body**, but that **we**

want to have the heavenly **one** (body) put on over **us**, so that what is mortal will be swallowed up by life."

**CLOTHED BY PUTTING ON CHRIST IN THIS LIFE TIME.** "For all of you who were baptized into Christ **have clothed yourselves with Christ**" (Galatians 3:27). We put Christ on when we are baptism into His death and walk in newness of life (Romans 6:3-5). Christ said to the church at Laodicea, "You do not know that you are wretched and miserable and poor and blind and **naked**, I advise you to buy from Me gold refined by fire, that you may become rich, **and white garments, that you may clothe yourself, and that the shame of you nakedness may not be revealed**" (Revelation 3:17-18). **A person can put Christ on only in this life time**; the church at Laodicea were to buy white garments that they would not be naked in this life time. If a person is clothed with Christ in this life, they will be clothed at the judgment, those that are naked, without Christ at their death; they will be naked at the judgment. There is no salvation after death, if a person dies clothed with Christ they will always be, if they die naked, not clothed with Christ they will never be. Paul is speaking of being found naked "while we are in this tent." "We do not want to be unclothed but to be clothed" is before their death, not after their death." "So that what is mortal will be swallowed up by life," if we are clothed with Christ while we are mortals, our mortality will be sown a natural body and raised a spiritual body (1 Corinthians 15:44); only those clothed with Christ in this lifetime will be raised a spiritual body.

- If we are clothed with Christ at our death, we will be clothed at the Judgment and always after.
- If we are without Christ, naked, at our death we will be naked at the Judgment.

**(6). W. E. VINE'S SIXTH PASSAGE OF HIS EIGHT to prove there is a SPIRIT in a person that is now immortal. "Supposed that they beheld a spirit" Luke 24:37.** The sixth proof that Vine used to prove a person now has an "immaterial, invisible part of man" is Luke 24:37-39, "**Supposed that they beheld a spirit.**" This is what they (as men) thought based on their fear, and was not based on inspiration. The two parallel accounts of this says phantom (Matthew 14:26; Mark 6:49). Strong (page 1006) says this word is not pneuma (spirit) #4151, but "phantasma" #5326 (also #5324); "A (mere) show...i.e. specter (a hunting vision)" When Christ walked on the water is the only time this word (phantasma) is used in the Bible, and is translated "ghost" in the American Standard Version and most others. It is translated "a phantom" by Marshall, and in the "Christian Bible." The "Englishman Greek Concordance," page 783 says, "Lit. A phantom." These disciples seem to have believed they were seeing a ghost or phantom, and like these disciples, some today believe in ghosts, spooks, haunted houses, and such things. This maybe the only time Vine's thin air with no substance ghost or spirit is in the New Testament, and then it was only in the mind of these disciples, only what they thought they were seeing, and not what they did see; the Bible nowhere teaches the existence of

ghosts or phantoms. Spirits, God, Christ, Angels have a body, and mankind after judgment will have a body, and are more than just thin air nothing, but we will not have two bodies with two opposite natures both at the same time. **The use of this passage to prove a person has an immortal soul makes the proof be based on a lie, based on what the disciples thought they were seeing, based on their imagination and superstitions, not on what they did see.** What they thought they were seeing, a phantasm or ghost must be changed to say they were seeing, "*The immaterial, invisible part of man*" which Vine does not seem to know whether it was an invisible "soul" or an invisible "spirit" they were seeing, but it was not very invisible for they were seeing it. **Christ said to them that He was not a spirit,** not a phantom or a ghost, not something that has no body that they thought they were seeing, that He was flesh and blood. It seems that these disciples were familiar with the pagan teaching that was taught all around Israel at that time, and thought that they were seeing such a ghost; Christ simply pointed out to them that His having flesh and bones was completely inconsistent with the pagan concept of an immaterial bodiless soul they thought they were seeing. **Why did Vine use an uninspired statement made by men in fear, who was not seeing what they thought they were seeing to prove something to be a divine truth? Notice that Vine used it to prove the very thing that Christ pointed out to them was not true?** This passage says absolutely nothing about an immortal invisible soul being in a person, but that is what Vine used it to prove. Does he think they were inspired to believe a lie and that this lie becomes truth, but only after he changes this "phantom" to both a "soul" and a "spirit"? And that this "*immaterial, invisible part of man*" is just air, and it has no kind of substance or no body of any kind; and that a spiritual body is no body at all, with just nothing to it? Yet, Vine said these disciples thought they were seeing something that he says is "*immaterial, invisible*"; therefore, could not be seen. Although what they were seeing was not invisible, he used it to prove a person has an invisible bodiless something in them. **Most who believe a person has an immortal soul do not believe a bodiless soul has flesh and bone, or do not believe that a soul can be seen, never the less they will use this to prove these men were seeing a soul that has no substance, a bodiless soul that they say cannot be seen.**

ANOTHER GHOST IN THE KING JAMES VERSION. "*And Jesus cried with a loud voice, and give up the ghost,*" (Mark 15:37) King James Version. "*Give up the ghost*" is used three times in the King James Version all referring to the death of Christ, Mark 15:37; 15:39; Luke 23:46.

- All three times it is translated, "*Breathed His last*" in the New King James, New American Standard, New International Version.
- (1) Alfred Marshall in "The Parallel New Testament In Greek," (2) Alexander Campbell in the Living Oracles, (3) and Phillips Modern English New Testament all say Jesus "*expired.*"
- McCord's New Testament Translation (Freed—Hardeman College says, "*Jesus cried with a loud voice and died.*" Not many believe a soul is a ghost.

Ghost is not in the Greek in any of these three passages; ghost was added by the King James Version; in the parallel passage in Matthew 27:50 no ghost was added. Christ gave up His life to save our life, not a ghost to save a ghost.

LUKE 24:27-29 and ACTS 7:59: Two of the passages, which W. E. Vine used to prove a person has an immortal part, are uninspired statements. What these disciples thought they were seeing but were not, and what Stephen was asking that could not be unless they believed in Christ. (See (2) Acts 7:59 above) **Does this not say something about how weak Vine's proof is, something about how desperate he was for his proof?**

**(7). W. E. VINE'S SEVENTH PASSAGE OF HIS EIGHT to prove there is a SPIRIT in a person that is now immortal. "The spirits of just men made perfect" Hebrews 12:22-23.** He used "*the spirits of just men made perfect*" to prove that spirits of the just dead men are alive in Heaven, and were made perfect at the moment of death. Hebrews 12:22-23 is a list of seven ways the New Covenant is **now** better than the Old Covenant. Paul said they **had come**, not will come after death to the spirits of just men made perfect. This was then, while Paul and the others were alive, it was before they had died, before the Resurrection, before the Judgment, they had already come "*to the spirits of just men made perfect*" at the time Paul wrote this before anyone will be in Heaven. They could not have come to the spirits of those made perfect in Heaven for they are not yet in Heaven.

Seven ways the New Covenant is now better than the Old Covenant.

1. You have not come unto a mount that could be touched and that burned with fire, "**But you are come** unto Mount Zion, and unto the city of the living God, the heavenly Jerusalem."
2. You are come "*To innumerable hosts of angels.*"
3. You are come "*To the general assembly and church of the firstborn who are enrolled in heaven.*"
4. You are come "*To God the Judge of all.*"
5. You are come "*To the spirits of **just men made perfect.***" "*And to the spirits of the **righteous made perfect***" (New Revised Standard Version). "You are come" is present tense, the living people that Paul was writing to had come, not will come after the resurrection.
6. You are come "*To Jesus the mediator of a new covenant.*"
7. You are come "*To the blood of sprinkling that speaks better than that of Abel.*"

If "spirits" of the just dead were now in Heaven, the just dead under both the Old and New Covenants would be in Heaven, and it would not prove the New Covenant to be better than the Old Covenant. It would be out of place in this list of ways the New Covenant is better than the Old Covenant. Those who believe all, both the saved and the lost, have souls in them that are now immortal believe these souls were just as immortal under the Law as they now are under the New Covenant; therefore, it would not be a way the New Covenant is better than the Old.

**When and how are the spirits of just man made perfect? "*The spirits of just men made perfect*" refers to men made perfect by having their sins washed**

**away by the blood of Christ.** We have had our sins washed away, and we have come to have fellowship with others who have been made perfect by having their sins washed away.

ADAM CLARKE in his Commentary on Hebrews 12:23: "In several parts of this epistle *teleiouv*, the just man, signifies one who has a full knowledge of the Christian system, who is justified and saved by Christ Jesus; and the *teteleiwnemoi* are the adult Christians, who are opposed to the *nhpioi* or babes in knowledge and grace...The spirits of the just men made perfect, or the righteous perfect, are the full grown Christians; those who are justified by the blood and sanctified by the Spirit of Christ. Being come to such, *implies* that spiritual union which the disciples of Christ have with each other, and which they possess how far so ever separate; for they are all joined in one spirit, #Eph 2:18; they are in the unity of the spirit, #Eph 4:3, 4; and of one soul, #Ac 4:32. This is a unity which was never possessed even by the Jews themselves in their best state; it is peculiar to real Christianity: (See Heb 12:29)."

There is no way we could have come to the "spirits" of those in Heaven; if they were in Heaven they would be beyond our reach unto we are in Heaven with them. We would not have come to them.

*"And to the spirits of the righteous made perfect"* (New Revised Standard Version). If disembodied spirits were in Heaven and in any way we had fellowship or communication with us it would prove Spiritualism, which is forbidden by God. Most all who uses this to prove there is now an immortal soul in a person do not believe we have any communication with the dead, not if the dead are in Heaven, Hell, the grave, or any other place; therefore, they do not believe we could have come unto them, but they are desperately looking for any passage to prove we now have an immaterial, immortal soul that is now abiding in us and take *"And to the spirits of the righteous made perfect"* out of it's contexts.

**When this is used to prove that after death we have a "soul" that is alive and made perfect, it makes the judgment and resurrection be 100% totally useless.** The *"made perfect"* in Hebrews 12:23 is something that had happened at the time Paul said this, something that will happen unto the saved while they are alive, not after the resurrection.

- *"To the spirits of just men made perfect (telioo)"* (Hebrews 12:23).
- *"Herein is our love made perfect (telioo)"* (1 John 4:17).
- *"He that fears is not made perfect (telioo) in love"* (1 John 4:18).
- *"And by works was faith made perfect (telioo)"* (James 2:22).
  - Made perfect is not used to mean we have no sins or cannot sin.

**(8) W. E. VINE'S EIGHTH PASSAGE to prove there is a SPIRIT in a person that is now immortal 1 Peter 4:6.** *"For unto this end was the gospel preached (past tense) even to the dead (present tense), that they might be judged indeed according to men in the flesh, but live according to God in the spirit."*

The question is:

(1) Who were the dead? (2) And when was the gospel preached to them?

Two views of who were the dead that had the Gospel preached to them.

(1) Christians that were alive in the flesh at the time the gospel was preached to them, and were alive when they believed, but they were dead (asleep in Christ) at the time Peter wrote this. See 1 Corinthians 15:12-28.

(2) Those who *“were dead in your trespasses and sins”* (Ephesians 2:1) before the gospel was preached to them. The Gospel was preached to them when they were dead through their trespasses and sins (past tense) so that they may live (present tense).

- *“And you did he **make alive, when you were dead** through your trespasses and sins”* (Ephesians 2:1).
- *“He that hears my word, and believes him that sent me, has eternal life, and **has passed out of death into life**”* (John 5:24).

Nothing is said about any preaching to any one after they were physically dead, or nothing about preaching to souls or spirits. The Gospel is preached to save; Peter is not saying salvation is being offered to anyone after they are dead, or that the gospel was preached to anyone after their death.

**SPIRIT IN THE NEW TESTAMENT:** Spirit is translated from the Greek word *pnuma*. It is the same as *ruach* in the Old Testament.

- *“The Spirit (ruach) of the Lord God is upon me”* (Isaiah 61:1).
- *“The Spirit (pnuma) of the Lord is upon Me”* (Luke 4:18).

**GOD IS SPIRIT:** *“God is spirit (pnuma)”* (John 4:24)

**THE HOLY SPIRIT:** He is spoken of as a distinct person (John 14:26; 15:26; Luke 3:22), a heavenly being; therefore, He is a spirit as is God the Father.

**JESUS CHRIST:** Before He took on the form of man He was with the Father (John 1:1-17) *“For a little while lower than the angels”* (Hebrews 2:7). After His resurrection He is now in Heaven, a heavenly being like the Father and the Holy Spirit (Hebrew 1:1-14), just as He was before He took on the form of man.

**ANGELS:** *“Are they (angels) not all ministering spirits (pnuma)”* (Hebrews 1:14)? *“Who makes his angels spirits (ruach)”* (Psalm 104:4)?

**DEMONS:** *“A woman, whose little daughter had an unclean spirit (pnuma)”* (Mark 7:25).

**MANKIND:** Mankind are being of this earth, not heavenly spirit being; we are now in the image of Adam, and will not be in the image of Christ unto the resurrection (1 Corinthians 15:42-49). No one in the image of Adam, no one who is flesh and blood is ever said to be a spirit. God, Christ, the Holy Spirit, angels, and demons are spirits, but men are never called a spirit in the Bible; a person will not be a spirit unto after the resurrection and judgment. *“For in the resurrection they neither marry, nor are given in marriage, **but are like angels in heaven**”* (Matthew 22:30); now mankind are not like angels, not spirit being as angels now are, but are now earthly being. Not unto after the resurrection will any one be *“as angels in heaven”*

1. *“A spirit does not have flesh and bones as you see that I have”* (Luke 24:39). At the time Christ said this He was in the form of man (Philippians 2:6-11).

2. The natural body we now have will be raised a spiritual body (1 Corinthians 15:42-45). (Matthew 22:30).

**THE GREAT CONFUSION: A soul or a spirit or both? Two terms that comes from different words, and are not used interchangeable in the Bible. Vine says they are not the same thing, but he says both are an “immaterial, invisible part of man”** Does a person have an immortal soul or an immortal spirit that is not subject to death, and both a soul and a spirit now have eternal life without the resurrection? How many immortal beings does a person have in them? If two, a soul and a spirit, will both of these two immortal beings that are now in a person always exist as two independent and separate beings? If only one of the two, which one of the immortal beings that is in a person, the immortal soul, or the immortal spirit? Vine says they are different, “Generally speaking the spirit is the higher, the soul the lower element” (page 589); yet he says both are “the immaterial, invisible part of man” (soul on page 588 and spirit on page 593). Do we have both a higher and a lower “immaterial, invisible part of man?”

Those who believe all mankind have an “immaterial, invisible part of man” do not seem to know whether it is a “soul” or a “spirit” that is the “immaterial, invisible part of man” that will live without the earthly body. When preachers preach on a soul being immortal, they use passages that speak of a spirit but say nothing about a soul. **There is much confusion on what part of a person is immortal, will it be a soul, or will it be a spirit that will be in Heaven.**

**MANY USE SOUL AND SPIRIT INTERCHANGEABLY.** For their belief, a soul and a spirit must be the same. If they were not, they would be forced to say one or the other is an immortal something that is in a person, or that a person has two immortal beings inside of them. When I believed in Hell I could not see there being a separate immortal soul and immortal spirit; I used them interchangeably just as most do now without realizing it. When some read the **spirit goes back to God**, in their mind they see an immortal **soul going back to God**. Those who believe (1) a soul will take up permanent residence in Heaven at the moment of death, (2) and many who believe a soul is in Abraham's bosom and that it will not be in Heaven unto the Judgment Day, both use Ecclesiastes 12:7 to prove a “spirit” to be the “immaterial, invisible part of man” that goes back to God in Heaven at death is the “soul” that goes back to God.

A problem: If a soul is a living being that has life of its own apart from a person, and it will “return to God who give it,” then whatever it is, if it was a living being that came from God, than it was a living being that pre-existed before it came from God, before it was in a person, and it will be the same living being that “will return to God who give it” (Ecclesiastes 12:7); if the spirit that came from God is a living being, did the spirit know anything or have thoughts before it came from God, and dose it have it's own thoughts after it is back in Heaven? Dose not this make a person be just a

body that has no life of its own, just a body that a soul used and then the body returns to dust and nothing exist of the person but dust? Spirit was not a living being, not a soul that was conscious when it came from God and conscious when it returns to God as it is claimed to be conscious after it leaves the person it was in; **it was life, "the breath of life," life that came from and the breath of life that returns to God.** All life comes from God and return to God, not all souls that was in both believers and non-believers returning to God.

I have continually been told for years that lost souls go to Hell at the moment of the death of the person they were in. Then how could a soul return to God if it goes to Hell, and only a few souls that were in saved persons will return back to Heaven at the moment of death? How can they not see that they are saying (1) that all souls goes to one place, back to God in Heaven, (2) and at the same time they are saying souls goes to two places, some souls back to God, but most souls goes to Hell; therefore, most souls that came from God in Heaven would not return back to Heaven.

After Christ had been dead for three days and after His resurrection He said, *"Touch me not for I have not yet ascended to my father"* (John 20:17). Many say Christ went to an intermediate place where souls go before the resurrection, but not to Heaven. If there were such an intermediate place, then a soul or a spirit does not return to God at death. One position is taken on one passage, and then the same persons shifts to another position on another passage, and are continually shifting their position.

**A SOUL OR A SPIRIT, WHICH ONE IS IMMORTAL?** Any time 1 Thessalonians 5:23, Hebrews 4:12, etc., comes up in a Bible class the teacher has the same problem, the same confusion. What is the difference in a soul and a spirit? Which one is immortal? Many never seem to be quite sure which of the two, a soul, or a spirit they believe to be immortal, and not sure if they are the same, or if they are two entirely different immortal beings in a person. In general, a soul and a spirit have been by most regarded to be the same, synonym of each other. Most make no distinction between a soul and a spirit and use them interchangeable; Webster gives soul as a synonymous for spirit, and then gives spirit as synonymous for soul; dictionary definitions are generally biased on the way words are used. Soul (pneuma) is not one time translated spirit; spirit (psuche) is never translated soul; they are never used interchangeable in the Greek New Testament, or in the King James Version although they are continuously used interchangeable in today's preaching.

1 Thessalonians 5:23 does not say what the functions of the body, soul, or spirit is, or what becomes of them at death. It does not say one is mortal and two of them are immortal, and will forever live somewhere. This must be read into it. Whatever Paul means by the use of the word *"preserved"* it is apply equally to body, soul, and

spirit, the body is “*preserved*” just as soul and spirit that are “*preserved*”; it cannot mean one is immortal and preserved, and another is not immortal and not preserved. He said, “*The Lord shall deliver me from every evil work, and will preserve me unto His heavenly kingdom*” (2 Timothy 4:18 King James Version). It is the whole Paul (“*me*”) that will be preserved, not just an immaterial something that was in Paul, not just about a part of Paul, but his whole being will be preserved.

- **There is nothing about a person now having any kind of an immortal being in this passage.**
  - It must first be proved that there is an immortal soul before it can be proved that any soul will live forever being tormented by God.
- **There is nothing about God tormenting souls in Hell after the judgment in this passage.** This also must be read into it.

**A SPIRIT HAS TAKEN THE PLACE THAT A SOUL DID HAVE:** Many that not long ago believe a soul was the immortal something in a person now say not so, that a soul is not immortal but a spirit is. One of the many examples that could be given is, “What happens to you when you die?” by La Vista Church of Christ at: <http://lavistaachurchofchrist.org/LVanswer/2004/2004—07—20.htm>. If you, as many in the Lord’s church have, change a “soul” to a “spirit,” have you did anymore than change the name of whatever you believe to be in a person that you believe is **now** immortal? Are you not saying we **now** have immortality and Paul was wrong? Are you saying, “O. K. we were wrong when we taught the pagan doctrine of an immortal soul, but we are not going to give it up for then we would have to give up eternal torment, we will change from an “immortal soul” to an “immortal spirit,” and will still teach the same thing about a spirit that we have always taught about a soul.

Those who say a “spirit” is the “*immaterial, invisible part of man*” that is immortal must stop using passages that speak of a “soul” to prove a spirit is immortal if a soul and a spirit are not the same thing. “*The spirit returns to God*” cannot be used to prove a soul is immortal if they are not the same, if a spirit is not a soul; however, many do use this passage to prove a person has an immortal soul. “*Fear him who is able to destroy both soul and body in Gehenna*” cannot be used to prove a spirit is immortal if soul and spirit are not both the same the “*immaterial, invisible part of man*” that is immortal, but many do use passages with spirit in them to prove there is a soul, then will use passages with soul in them to prove there is a spirit. Is this what is called “reasoning in a circle”?

- Passages, which have “spirit” in them, but are used to prove a person has an immortal soul.
- Passages, which have “soul” in them, but are used to prove a person has an immortal spirit.

Body, soul—life, and spirit all are a person as he is now in the image of Adam. All three terms, body, soul, and spirit are used referring to a living person at the same time. They are not three parts that can exist without each other. If they were, a

person would have two separate immortal beings in Heaven simultaneously. They are not three separate beings with opposite natures, with two beings living within the other one.

- BODY: The body the Lord formed from the dust of the ground (Genesis 2:7).
- SOUL: *"The life...is in the blood"* Leviticus 17:10-14. The living nature of a person that he has in common with all animals, a living being.
- SPIRIT: The breath of life breathed in the earthy body. All life is from God, and returns to God at death (Ecclesiastes 12:7, Job 34:14-15). All life is a gift from God to both man and animals, and the life goes back to God at death. The spirit is not an immortal living something that is in a person that preexisted as a living being with God before the birth of the person and this immortal spirit goes back to God when the person is dead.

Paul does not say may your soul be preserved blameless without your body or your spirit. He puts the three together as being inseparable, the three make up the whole person, and not three separate living being. Mark 12:30 (1) *"And you shall love the Lord your God with all your **heart**,* (2) *and with all your **soul*** (psukee – life), (3) *and with all your **mind**,* (4) *and with all your **strength**."*

What Jesus is saying is that we are to love God with all our being, not love God with some immaterial invisible no substance something that we would have no control over, and no way to know whether it loved God or not. I can know I love God with all my heart and with all my mind, but if there were an immaterial invisible no substance being in me that will live after my death, I would have no way to know whether it loved God or not. Psukee is no more something in a person that lives after the death of the person than the heart, mind, or strength will live after death. All four are a person looked at from different points of view while the person is living, not four parts of a person that one can exist without the others.

Hebrews 4:12: *"For the word of God is living, and active, and sharper than any two-edged sword, and piercing even to the dividing of soul and spirit, of both joints and marrow, and quick to discern the thoughts and intents of the heart."*

1. Dividing of soul and spirit.
2. Dividing of both joints and marrow.
3. Dividing of the thoughts and intents of the heart.

This passage shows that a soul and a spirit are different things and can be divided, but there is nothing in it that says a soul, or a spirit is an immortal living being in a person that will exist without the person; body plus breath of life equals a soul, a living being.

Unlike animals, God made man in His image with the potential of living forever. The spirit (ruach—spirit, breath, wind), of both man and animals returns to God, but one of the differences in persons and animals is that animals will not be raised from the dead. They are forever dead, just as a person would be if there were not going to be a resurrection. After death animals will never again have life, just as the loss will never again have life after the second death. Death is death for both men and

animals. Death is not death for animals, and another kind of life for men. The second death will be death, not another kind of life that will go on forever.

**Spirit in the Old Testament is from ruach** (Strong's word number 7307). It is translated spirit, breath, and wind, in the King James Version, but it is **never translated soul**. It is never said to be a deathless something in a person.

**Spirit in the New Testament is from pnuma** (Strong's word number 4151). It is translated spirit, ghost, and wind in the King James Version, but it is **never translated soul**.

- Pneuma is translated both **wind** and **spirit** in the same passage. "*The **wind** (pneuma) blows wherever it pleases. You may hear its sound, but you cannot tell where it comes from or where it is going. So it is with everyone born of the **spirit** (pneuma)*" (John 3:8).

**Soul in the Old Testament is from nehphesh** (Strong's word number 5315). It is translated life, creature, soul, person, mind, etc., in the King James Version, but it is **never translated spirit**. Never said to be a deathless immaterial something in a person.

**Soul in the New Testament is from psukee** (Strong's word number 5590). In the King James Version it is translated life, soul, heart, heartily, mind, he, strength, and us, but it is **never translated spirit**.

- Spirit ("breath of life") returns to God.
- Soul goes to sheol-hades, the grave.

There are more than 1,600 references to soul and spirit in the Bible, but not a one of them says anything about a soul or a spirit living without the body, yet many who say they teach only the Bible teach it all the time.

*"May your spirit and soul and body be preserved entire, (may the whole person, not just an invisible no substance something) without **blame at the coming of our Lord Jesus Christ.**"*

- When is a spirit preserved entire? "*At the coming of our Lord Jesus Christ.*"
- When is a soul preserved entire? "*At the coming of our Lord Jesus Christ.*"
- When is a body preserved entire? "*At the coming of our Lord Jesus Christ.*"

This is speaking of the whole person being preserved, not just one or even two parts of the person, the whole person being preserved **when** "*this mortal must put on immortality*" (1 Corinthians 15:53). Paul dose not say may your spirit be preserved without your body, or may your soul be preserved without your body.

**Spirit and soul are not used interchangeably, and a passage that has one in it cannot be used to prove anything about the other one as many do today. Body, soul, spirit**, the whole man of Genesis 2:7 and 1 Thessalonians 5:23 "*And Jehovah God formed man of the dust of the ground (**body**), and breathed into his nostrils the breath of life (**spirit**); and man became a living being (**soul**)."* Body plus the breath of life (spirit) = soul—a living being.

**PASSAGES IN WHICH "SPIRIT" (pneuma) IS USED BY MANY AS IF IT IS THE SAME AS "SOUL" (psukee).** Not one time is a soul or a spirit said to have an

existence after death, or to be able to function without the body neither before nor after the resurrection.

**(1). THE SPIRITS IN PRISON 1 Peter 3:18-20:** Most who uses this to prove the "spirit" is immortal believe the Protestant version that lost souls go to Hell instantaneous when a person dies; therefore, to them these disobedient spirits that were destroyed in the time of Noah for being disobedient were not destroyed, but are now being tormented in Hell. **If they were in Hell, why did Christ go to these "disobedient" spirits?**

**(1) For what purpose would Christ go into Hell and preach to only some that were there? To give them a second chance to save them, can those in Hell ever be saved? The very ones who believe there is a Hell, and use this passage to prove souls of the lost are alive in Hell before the resurrection, and before they are judged, also says no, once a person is in Hell he or she can never get out, can never be saved.** Most Protestants reject the doctrine of Purgatory and say there is no chance of salvation for a soul after the death of the person it had once been in. They were "*disobedient,*" not "disembodied."

(2) What message would Christ take them that can never get out of Hell; the time when they could be saved was past; therefore, the Gospel would do them no good? Would He go to raise a hope of release that could never be, or to taunt them?

(3) It would mean that Christ was alive in the three days from His death unto His resurrection; therefore, He was never dead and could not have been raised from the dead. Any interpretation that requires that Jesus did not really die on the cross completely destroys His sacrificial death and resurrection.

(4) It would mean that Christ did not die for our sins; therefore, we are still in our sins. If a soul is immortal and cannot die, only His earthly body died. He was as much alive in the three days His earthly body was in the grave as He was before He came to earth, and as alive as He was after the resurrection of His earthly body. **Therefore, Christ could not have died for our sins if He was never dead.** If only His earthly body were dead, then He was the same "spiritual being" with all the power and glory in the three days His body was in the grave that He is now, or had before He came to earth and put on an earthly body. There would have been no difference in Christ (1) when only His earthly body was in the grave (2) than there is now when He is in Heaven, (3) or in the time before He came to earth. If He was alive His death was not a real death, than what did God gave when He gives His only Son? Just one human body for three days. Nothing more. According to today's teaching there was no real sacrifice by God or Christ, **no real death or resurrection** as Christ was not really and in truth dead. Nevertheless, Christ said, "*I am he that lives, and was dead*" (Revelation 1:18). "***I lay down My life so that I may take it again. No one has taken it away from Me, but I lay it down on My own initiative I have authority to lay it down, and I have authority to take it up again***" (John 10:17-

18). If Christ was alive in the time before His resurrection, how could He say, “*I lay down my life*” when there was never a time He did not have life? If He were alive it would mean that Jesus did not pour “*out His life unto death*” (Isaiah 53:12). “*Poured out Himself to death*” New American Standard Bible. Death is the punishment for sin; a loss of life was the penalty that Christ paid, not eternal life in torment.

- “*I am the...Living one **and was dead**, and behold, I **am alive** for evermore*” (Revelation 1:17-18). Christ Himself said He was dead, not alive in Heaven, Hell, or any other place.
- “*And the angel answered and said unto the women, Fear not you; for I know that you seek Jesus, who has been crucified. He is not here; for He is risen, even as He said, Come, **see the place where the Lord lay***” (Matthew 28:5-6). The Lord Himself lay there unto His resurrection, not just a body.
- “*But now has Christ been **raised from the dead**, the first fruits of them that are asleep.*” (1 Corinthians 15:20). Unconditional immortality says not so, only a human body was dead, Christ was alive and preached to souls between the death and resurrection of the human body, that the Christ was alive in Heaven before He came to earth, was alive when the body was in the grave for a deathless soul can never be dead. Unconditional immortality completely denies the real death of Christ.

(5) It would mean that those who were disobedient in the days of Noah were more important than all others who were disobedient, and that Christ went into Hell to preach unto them for those that say a soul is immortal and does not die, say the lost go directly to "Hell" at death; therefore, Christ had to go into "Hell" to preach to them. Christ preached to those that were “*disobedient,*” not to those that were disembodied.

(6) It would mean that these may have been given a second chance after death, but all others will not be given a second chance.

(7) It would mean that God is a respecter of persons giving some a second chance, but not to all.

(8) “*By which*” must be changed to “while He was dead.”

(9) It would be a contradiction to the traditional theology of today that says Christ went to Heaven and took the theft with Him at the time of His death; a contradiction to the traditional theology that at the moment of death the immortal spirit returns to God.

(10) Death is repeatedly pictured as being sleep. Christ is “*the first fruits of those who are asleep*” (1 Corinthians 15:20). If He was never dead He could not be “*the first fruits of those who are asleep.*” If He was asleep He could not have been awake and preached to anybody in the three days He was asleep. **If He was “the first fruits of those who are asleep,” then He was not awake in Heaven at the same time He was “asleep,”** He did not ascend into Heaven unto after His resurrection (John 20:17), after His sleep in the grave. His death and resurrection was a pattern of the coming resurrection of those that are saved, they are now asleep, and they will not ascend into Heaven unto their resurrection. “*The hour is coming in they that have*

*done good, unto the resurrection of life; and they that have done evil unto the resurrection of judgment” (John 5:28-29).*

Where will the dead be when they hear the voice of Jesus?

- Not alive in Paradise.
- Not alive in Abraham’s bosom.
- Not alive in Heaven.
- Not alive Hell.
- Not alive in any kind of “intermediate state.”
- Not alive in a holding place for souls under the earth.
- Not alive in Purgatory.
- Not alive in the Catholic Nether World.
- **The dead will be in the “graves” (plural tombs—graves) when they hear the voice of Jesus and the dead will come forth unto either the resurrection of life, or to the resurrection of judgment.** I know of no one that believes in an immortal soul that believes souls will be *“in the tombs,”* when Christ comes back. It is dead persons, not living souls that are in the tombs; it will be persons, not souls that will come forth out of the tombs.

*“Put to death in the flesh, but made alive in the spirit” (1 Peter 3:18).* Notice carefully what is said. This passage is used to prove there is an immortal spirit in all that can never die.

- If it were speaking of an immortal spirit, that immortal spirit was *“made alive,”* therefore that immortal soul had to be dead, if it was not dead it could not be *“made Alive.”*
- If *“made alive in the spirit”* was not the resurrection of Christ, then the very thing they are trying to prove is that the spirit cannot die; nevertheless, they are saying the deathless spirit that cannot die was dead and was *“made alive.”*
- **If Christ was alive and never dead, He could not have been “made alive,” but would have been “kept alive,” or “preserved alive,” and there could have been no resurrection.** Made alive: *“Quickened by the spirit”* King James Version. *“Made alive by the spirit”* New King James Version. Strong’s word #2227 “made alive, give life, quicken.”
  - Christ said of Himself that He *“was dead, and behold, I am alive forevermore”* (Revelation 1:18).
  - *“They will kill Him, and He will be raised on the third day”* (Matthew 17:23).
  - *“The Son of Man is to be delivered into the hands of men, and they will kill Him; and when He has been killed, He will rise three days later”* (Mark 9:31).
- If Christ did not actually die, to say He was not really dead for the three days He was in the grave is to deny both that He died and that He was raised from the dead; this would take away all hope and possibility of being saved. Satan has done his work well.
  - If Christ was not actually dead no ransom was paid (Matthew 20:28).
  - If Christ was not actually dead sins were not taken away (John 1:29).

If this preaching were by Christ in person, not by Christ through Noah, then the order was:

1. Put to death
2. Quickened or made alive—His resurrection
3. Preached to the spirits in prison after His resurrection. Therefore, the preaching would have been done after His resurrection, not before and would not prove that His “soul” was alive in the three days before He was quickened or made alive.

To fit with today’s theology Peter’s order must be changed to:

1. Put to death.

2. Preached to the spirits in prison in the three days before He was “*made alive*,” before His resurrection.
3. Quickened or “*made alive*”—His resurrection would have to be **after** He had preached to the spirits in prison.

**The reason this passage is used is to prove Christ had a soul that was alive before His resurrection is to prove that His soul was never dead, but they must change it to make it say Christ did the preaching after His death and before His resurrection. If they do not change it, it does not prove what they want it to.** If this preaching were by Christ during the three days He was in the grave, and if the prison were somewhere other than Hell it would prove that there is somewhere like the Catholic Purgatory, but those who are using this to prove a soul is immortal believe all the lost are in Hell.

**When was this preaching done?** In the days of Noah, or in the three days Christ was in the grave? This is the whole question, was it: **(1) After they were dead and in Hell when they could not be saved?** Those who believe a soul of the lost is transported instantly into Hell at death do not believe any that are in Hell can be saved. According to their belief, all go to Heaven or Hell at the moment of death; therefore, if Christ went and preached to souls in the three days He was in the grave, He would have had to preach to them either in Heaven or Hell. Why would He go to Hell and preach to those souls that could not be saved? Why is this verse used; is it not because they are desperate for any verse that will prove their immortal soul doctrine that they will give a few a second chance after death to be taken out of Hell if it would prove there is a soul in a person is now immortal? If Christ went and preached to them in the three days He was in the grave, “*by which*” must be change to “*while He was in the grave but not dead.*” **(2) Or was it when they were alive and could be benefited by the preaching?** Adam Clarke said Christ went and preached by Noah for one hundred and twenty years. The preaching was done in the days of Noah through Noah, a preacher of righteousness (2 Peter 2:5), not after the death of Christ. Noah warned them of the destruction to come if they did not repent. How were they in prison? “*His servants you are whom you obey*” (Romans 6:16). “*For of whom a man is overcome, by this he is enslaved*” (2 Peter 19). “*To open blind eyes, to bring out prisoners from the dungeon, and those who dwell in darkness from the prison*” (Isaiah 42:7; also Isaiah 61:1; Psalm 142:7; Luke 4:18; John 8:34-45). Those who obey Satan are in prison to him. Those who would not hear Christ preaching through Noah were in prison to Satan. “*For we also once were...enslaved to various lusts and pleasures*” (Titus 3:3). “*For of whom a man is overcome, of the same is he also brought into bondage*” (2 Peter 2:19).

A similar example: “*And He came and **preached peace to you** that were far off, and peace to them that were nigh*” (Ephesians 2:18). Christ never went in person and preached to the Ephesians, but He did preach to them through them by those

that came to the Ephesians just as He preached through Noah to those in the days of Noah.

ADAM CLARKE: "‘He went and preached’ by the ministry of Noah, one hundred and twenty years. Unto the spirits in prison. The inhabitants of the antediluvian world, who, having been disobedient, and convicted of the most flagrant transgressions against God, were sentenced by his just law to destruction; but their punishment was delayed to see if they would repent; and the long—suffering of God waited one hundred and twenty years, which were granted to them for this purpose; during which time, as criminals tried and convicted, they are represented as being in prison – detained under the arrest of Divine justice, which waited either for their repentance or the expiration of the respite, that the punishment pronounced might be inflicted" Clarke’s Commentary on 1 Peter 3:18-20.

DILLARD THURMAN: "I have heard funeral orations extol the happiness and bliss the departed has instantly with death; but on checking the New Testament assiduously, I have yet to find a single promise where the dead go to heaven on instant pass, or have immediate conscious happiness." Gospel Minutes April 2, 1990, "Notice carefully what is said. Jesus was put to death in the flesh, and died like any mortal man. But He was quickened, or made alive by the Spirit. By what Spirit? By the same Spirit by which He once preached to spirits imprisoned by sin and Satan in the days of Noah! When did this happen? The passage plainly states it: 'When once the long—suffering of God waited in the days of Noah.' The word 'when' is an adverb of time that tells when the action took place: in the days of Noah! The idea of the Son of God being off on a preaching junket for the three days and nights that His body was in the tomb is utterly foreign to any Bible teaching! If false doctrines had not first brought forth this fanciful idea, this passage would not have been twisted to support the error." Gospel Minutes, Volume 34, Number 5, February 1, 1985, West Freeway church of Christ.

*"Then certain of the scribes and Pharisees answered him, saying, Teacher, we would see a sign from you. But he answered and said unto them, an evil and adulterous generation seeks after a sign; and shall no sign be given to it but the sign of Jonah the prophet: for as Jonah was three days and three nights in the belly of the whale; so shall the Son of man be three days and three nights in the heart of the earth" (Matthew 12:38-40).* If Jesus were in the earth, the grave, from His death to His resurrection, how could He have gone to "Hell" and preached to those in it? I do not think anyone believes "Hell" is in the grave, but the grave is where Jesus was at unto His resurrection.

### **PASSAGES IN WHICH "SOUL" (psukee) IS USED AS IF IT IS THE SAME AS "SPIRIT" (pneuma).**

**(1). LOSING LIFE (SOUL) or SAVING LIFE (SOUL) Matthew 16:26; Mark 8:37:** Those who believe a soul to be immortal and cannot die, also believe it is a soul that must be saved or lost; to them, to lose your soul means a soul will go to Hell; therefore, to *"lose his **soul** (psukee—life) for my sake"* means going to Hell for Christ. Their own definition of *"lose his soul"* is going to Hell. Do they think anyone will go to Hell for Christ's sake? If "psukee" means an immortal something in a person that will live forever in Heaven or Hell, and a person loses their **soul** (psukee—life) for Christ, going to Hell for Him would be just what this passage would

say they would do. Back when I believed all the lost would be eternally tormented in Hell by God, this passage was a problem to me; I believed, as many do, to lose your soul meant it would go to Hell, but the King James Version undeniable says (1) if your soul went to Hell for Christ you would save your soul, (2) and that we are to hate our immortal soul.

**BY TODAY'S THEOLOGY DOES LOSING A SOUL SAVE IT?** Christ said, "*For whosoever would save his **psukee** (life) shall lose it: and whosoever shall lose his **psukee** (life) for my sake shall find it. For what shall a man be profited, if he shall gain the whole world, and forfeit his **psukee** (life)? Or what shall a man give in exchange for his **psukee** (life)?*" **To lose ones life for Christ's sake is to lose life because of being faithful to Christ, and many did lose their life in the first century.** Those who lose their life for Christ will find eternal life at the judgment. **But, if psukee is an immortal soul, will some lose an immortal soul because they are faithful to Christ? In today's theology, "save a soul" is to save it from Hell, and "lose a soul" is to lose it in Hell. When this passage is used to prove a person has an immortal "immaterial, invisible part of man" that will never die, it makes Christ say:**

1. "Whosoever would **save** his immaterial invisible immoral soul from Hell will **lose** his immaterial invisible immoral soul in Hell."
2. "Whosoever would **lose** his immaterial invisible immoral soul in Hell will **save** his immaterial invisible immoral soul from Hell."

Those who say a soul is immortal also say we lose it when we sin, and save it when we obey Christ. If they were right, the only way we could lose our souls for Christ's sake would be for us to sin. According to them the only possible way to lose our "immortal soul" is to sin; then did Christ say we were to sin to save our soul? No, **it is life some would lose because they will not sin and are faithful to Christ,** not lose some immaterial, invisible immortal part of them selves because they do sin and are not faithful to Christ. The promise that the **psukee** (life) will be saved when it is sacrificed for Christ makes no sense if a soul is some "immaterial, invisible" undying something that is in a person. How could we lose "our soul" for Christ's sake? "*He that loves his **psukee** (life) loses it; and he that hates his **psukee** (life) in this world shall keep it unto life eternal*" (John 12:25). How do they think a person could lose something that they believe to be the only part of his or her self that they say cannot die?

When a person has sinned and "lost his soul," is that person a living body with no soul in it? **Christ was saying that gaining much would profit us nothing if we lose our life—our very existence.** All who die without being in Christ have lost their psukee (life), they will not put on immortality at the resurrection; they will not have eternal life in Heaven. After the judgment and second death, they will have lost their very existence.

Those who do not obey Christ shall lose the very thing that is saved by those who do obey Him—life; the lost shall die and the saved shall live. No doctrine of the Bible is more plain than the loss of life in this passage is the lost of our earthly life because of being faithful to Christ, not eternal life with torment for the sinner; finding life is to find eternal life at the resurrection, and the person that saves his earthly life (psukee) by denying Christ will lose his life at the judgment.

Epaphroditus hazarded "his **psukee** (life)" (Philippians 2:30). Judas and Silas have "*hazarded their **psukee** (lives) for the name of our Lord Jesus Christ*" (Acts 15:26-27). They could put their life in danger for the sake of Christ. Many put their life in danger, and lost their life for preaching Christ, but how could they risk an immortal deathless soul that cannot die, and no man can see it or kill it? Paul says, "*But I hold not my **psukee** (life) of any account as dear unto myself*" (Acts 20:24). If this psukee is a being that has immortality from our birth, Paul must not have thought it not to be of any account, or not worth much. Just as has been said about other passages, today's theology that says psukee means an "*immaterial, invisible part of man*" makes these passages be nonsense.

ADAM CLARKE Matthew 16:26: "On what authority many have translated the word psukee in the twenty-fifth verse life, and in this verse (26) soul I know not; but I am certain it means life in both places."

**(2). "WHAT SHALL A MAN GIVE (not sell) IN EXCHANGE FOR HIS SOUL."** Matthew 16:26; Mark 8:37: This passage is used by many to show that a person has an undying soul in them that is of more value than the entire world, but many will sell this deathless **soul** for very little. Does it teach this? The American Standard Version and most other translations, translates "**psukee**" into "**life**," not "**soul**" as the King James does. A man can give all he has to someone about to take his life to get that someone to let him live, but he could in no way give anything in exchange for an immaterial soul that cannot die. **Think about this; how could anyone buy or sell an "immaterial, invisible" immortal soul that he cannot see, and it can never die?** It would be impossible for anyone to give anything in exchange for it.

Frequently, in sermons and invitations, I have heard "*what would a man give in exchange for his life*" changed to "what would a man sell his immortal soul for." To give something in exchange for something is to buy it, not sell it. "Give" (pay, to give money for something) is changed to "sell" (to take money). It is changed to say the opposite of what it does say to make it say what many want it to say. There is not one word in this verse about a person, or an immaterial living being that is in a person being tormented forever. **This passage is about how a man would pay all he has in exchange for a few more years of life, but would "forfeit his life" in Heaven in exchange for the pleasure of sin.** The wages of sin is death (Romans 6:23). Do not take the pleasures of sin for a few years in exchange for your life in

Heaven as many do. When it is translated right, as in the American Standard Version and many others, the word "soul" as it is used in today's theology is not in this verse.

**(3). SOUL REQUIRED Luke 12:19-21:** *"And I will say to my **life** (Greek psukee), **life** (psukee), you have much goods lain up for many years: take your ease, eat, drink, be merry. But, God said unto him, You foolish one, this night is your **LIFE** (psukee) **required** of YOU; and the things which you have prepared, whose shall they be? So is he that lies up treasure for himself, and is not rich toward God."* It is not eternal torment that will be required of them but life; life required of you, not life required of a soul. The New International Version reads, *"And I'll say to **myself** (Greek psukee—life), **'you** (Greek psukee—life) have plenty of good things laid up for many years. Take life easy; eat drink and be merry.' But, God said to him, 'You fool! This very night your **life** (Greek psukee) will be demanded from you. Then who will get what you have prepared for yourself?' This is how it will be with anyone who stores up things for himself (puts the world ahead of God) but is not rich toward God."* There will be a resurrection and judgment of all, not just those in Christ. After the judgment, those who have laid up treasure for themselves on earth, and are not rich toward God, their life will be required of them. **Christ could not have said any plainer that life (not torment) would be required of those not rich toward God. It would make no sense if this psukee were an undying immortal soul. If a person had a soul that was deathless and it will live forever after the person it was in is dead, how could life be required of that soul?**

*"YOUR soul (life—psukee) **required of YOU**"* King James Version. **A Soul, as the word is used today, was never required of anyone.** Psukee in the New Testament is never an undying *"immaterial, invisible part of man."* Life will be required of the sinner, not an undying soul.

Luke 12:15-25 *"Take heed and keep yourselves from all covetousness; for a man's **LIFE** (psukee) consist not in the abundance of the things which he possesses...And I will say to my **SOUL** (psukee), **SOUL** (psukee), you have much goods laid up for many years; take your ease, eat, drink, be merry. But God said unto him, You foolish one, this night is your **SOUL** (psukee) required of you...And He said unto His disciples, Therefore I say unto you, be not anxious for your **LIFE** (psukee), what you shall put on, For the **LIFE** (psukee) is more than food."* Anyone can see how the translators picked when they wanted psukee to be an earthly breathing person with animal life that will die and when they wanted the same word to be an immaterial something that cannot die to put their Platonic theology into the Bible. Of the about 106 times psukee is used in the New Testament they put their Platonic theology in where they thought they could.

**(4). God is able to destroy both soul and body in Gehenna, Matthew 10:28, Luke 12:5.** See Gehenna in chapter four, second occasion

**(5). Souls under the altar Revelation 6:9.** See chapter eight, part three

**PASSAGES THAT DO NOT HAVE "SPIRIT" (puma) OR "SOUL" (psukee) IN THEM BUT ARE USED TO PROVE A PERSON NOW HAS AN IMMORTAL SPIRIT /SOUL.** Some passages are said to "imply" that a person has an immortal soul/spirit, but do not state it. This doctrine is based on what is thought to be implied, not on what is said; based only on the assumption that there is such a thing as an immaterial invisible no substance soul in a person that is now immortal.

WILLIAM R. HUNTINGTON: "Search the Scriptures through and through, my friends, and point, if you can, to a single sentence in which it is directly asserted that man is a being who will inevitably exist forever. Strong statements to the effect that man is naturally mortal are strewn with melancholy frequency over those pages, but nowhere is he declared to be immortal apart from the quickening power of Him who only hath immortality to give. In reply to this it is sometimes argued that the immortality of the soul is a truth so generally accepted that any direct statement of it in Holy Scripture was unnecessary; and a parallel to this silence is thought to have been found in the fact that none of the sacred writers have felt obliged explicitly to state the proposition, 'There is a God.' But notice the wide difference between these two cases. The existence of a God, even if it is not distinctly asserted, is yet on almost every page of Scripture as plainly implied as it possibly can be. Everywhere the Almighty confronts us. Take His name and presence out of the Bible, and the book shrivels into nothingness in a moment. Can any such thing be said of the doctrine of the natural immortality of the soul? Where is it taken for granted? In what single sentence is it necessarily implied?" Page 56, *Conditional Immortality*, Ichthus Publications, 1878.

The argument is made by some that both God and an immortal soul are not stated to exist, but both are only taken for granted." The "taking for granted" of an immortal soul is an assumption that is not in the Bible; it is an assumption made purely because there is no other proof of an immortality soul in the Bible.

We are told that God exist "is taken for granted" in the Bible, that it is not said that God exist, but it is only assumed could not be father from the truth. The first line in the Bible says, "*God created the heavens and the earth*" (Genesis 1:1). "*Have you not read that which was spoken unto you by God, saying, 'I am the God of Abraham'?"* (Matthew 22:31-32). Take all that is said about God out of the Bible and what is left would be little or have no meaning. That there is a deathless soul that is assumed to exist through out the Bible is to assume something that is not there, not one time is it assumed that souls exist. If we were not told that a soul exist, how can we assume something exist that we know nothing about; how would we know what to assume?

JOHN HANCOCK PETINGELL: "Dr. Bartlett, in his '*Life and Death Eternal*,' tells us that all mention of it is omitted, because it is too evident to require any mention! But the immortality of God is repeatedly affirmed. He has chosen this attribute to be the very title by which He is to be known—Jehovah, 'the ever living,' 'the Eternal God,' 'the Everlasting Father,' 'who is and was and ever shall be.' 'whose years have no end,' 'who lives forever,' 'who only has immortality,' 'I lift my hand to heaven and say, *I live forever*,' etc., etc. Is this immortality of the human *psuche* so much more evident than the immortality of its Maker, that no mention or hint of it need to be given anywhere in all the entire Scriptures, while that of the Deity needs to be constantly affirmed? Or is it not rather because it is not true, and therefore no Bible doctrine at all?" Page 135, "*The Life*

Everlasting, What Is it? Whence Is It? Whose Is It?" J. D. Brown Printer, 1883.

**(1). THE THIEF ON THE CROSS Luke 23:43: Did the thief (1) know anything about the kingdom, (2) or did he know that Christ was to be resurrected when at that time no others knew, when not even the twelve know?** From Matthew one to Acts two it was believed that the Christ was to restore the kingdom to Israel and sit on the throne of David and be a king on this earth. Herod thought Jesus was born to be an earthly "*king of the Jews*" and "*slew all the male children that were in Bethlehem*" (Matthew 3:1-16) to keep Jesus from replacing him as king of an earthly kingdom. "*And Jesus said unto him, 'Do you see these great buildings? There shall not be left here one stone upon another, which shall not be thrown down.'*" And as he sat on the Mount of Olives over against the temple, Peter and James and John and Andrew asked him privately, tell us, when shall **these things** be?" (Mark 13:2-3). The disciples, thinking of what the Lord had said, asked two questions, which they supposed both would be at the same time. "**When shall THESE THINGS You speak of be and what shall be the sign that THESE THINGS are about to come to pass?**" At the time they asked these questions they did not believe or know that Jesus would be put to death and be resurrected from the dead, or that he would be going back to Heaven and coming a second time and there would be a resurrection and a Judgment Day for all. The disciples still thought the Christ would restore the earthy kingdom of Israel, just as the Jews believed. "*And they understood none of these things, and this saying was hidden from them, and they did not comprehend the things that were said*" (Luke 18:34; also Luke 19:11; 24:21-27; John 16:16-18; 20:9).

On the day of His resurrection the Disciples did not know it was the resurrected Christ they were talking to and said to Him, "**But we hoped (past tense) that it was he who should REDEEM ISRAEL**" (Luke 24:21). Forty days after He was raised from the dead the Disciples still did not understand; therefore, they still did not expect Christ to go away and return to earth a second time at the end of the world; they expected Him to restore the kingdom to Israel. "*They therefore, when they were come together, asked him, saying, Lord, do you at this time restore the kingdom to Israel?*" (Acts 1:6). "*Lord, is it at this time You are restoring the kingdom to Israel?*" New American Standard Version. **Even after his resurrection the apostles were still looking for the earthly kingdom of Israel to be restored and Christ to be it's king, and at this time the apostles had no idea that the kingdom Christ was going to set up was not an earthly kingdom of Israel.**

If this thief was not speaking of an earthly kingdom of Israel he would have had to know that Christ was going to be resurrected from the dead, and then set up His kingdom when no one, not even the twelve know.

**THE MOCKERY OF JESUS: MOCKERY AT HIS TRIAL BEFORE PILATE.**  
*"Then the soldiers of the governor took Jesus into the palace, and gathered unto him*

*the whole band. And they stripped him, and put on him a scarlet robe, and they platted a crown of thorns and put it upon his head, and a reed in his right hand; and they kneeled down before him, and mocked him, saying, Hail, King of the Jews! And they spat upon him, and took the reed and smote him on the head. **And when they had mocked him**, they took off from him the robe, and put on him his garments, and led him away to crucify him" (Matthew 27:27-30). "And the soldiers platted a crown of thorns, and put it on his head, and arrayed him in a purple garment; and they came unto him, and said, Hail, King of the Jews! And they struck him with their hands" (John 19:2-3).*

- They stripped Him.
- They put on Him a scarlet robe.
- They platted a crown of thorns and put it upon His head.
- They put a reed in His right hand.
- They kneeled down before Him, and mocked Him, saying, Hail, King of the Jews!
- They spat upon Him.
- They took the reed and smote Him on the head.
- They struck Him with their hands.

The scarlet robe, crown of thorns, a reed in His hand, and kneeling down before Him was mockery of His claim to be a king.

*"Now it was the Preparation of the Passover: it was about the sixth hour. And he said unto the Jews, Behold your King! They therefore cried out, Away with him, away with him, crucify him! Pilate said unto them, 'Shall I crucify your King?' The chief priests answered, 'We have no king but Caesar'" (John 18:14-15). Jesus was the king the Jews were looking for, but He said, "My kingdom is not of this world," and when He did not restore the earthly kingdom to Israel as they thought their savior was going to do, they rejected Him and mocked Him.*

**MOCKERY BY PILATE WHEN CHRIST WAS ON THE CROSS.** *"And Pilate wrote a title also, and put it on the cross. And there was written, JESUS OF NAZARETH, THE KING OF THE JEWS. This title therefore read many of the Jews, for the place where Jesus was crucified was nigh to the city; and it was written in Hebrew, and in Latin, and in Greek. The chief priests of the Jews therefore said to Pilate, Write not, The King of the Jews; but that he said, I am King of the Jews. Pilate answered, 'What I have written I have written'" (John 19:19-22). When Pilate put this on the cross of a man he did not think was a king, or who would ever be a king that he thought would soon be dead, it was nothing but mockery by Pilate.*

**MOCKERY BY THOSE THAT PASSED BY, THE CHIEF PRIESTS AND THE ROBBERS** Mark 15:29-32: *"**And they that passed by railed on him**, wagging their heads, and saying, ha! You that destroy the temple, and build it in three days, save yourself, and come down from the cross. In like manner also **the chief priests mocking** him among themselves with the scribes said, He saved others; himself he cannot save. Let the Christ, the King of Israel, now come down from the cross that*

we may see and believe. **And they that were crucified with him reproached him.** And when the sixth hour was come, there was darkness over the whole land until the ninth hour. And at the ninth hour Jesus cried with a loud voice, *Eloi, Eloi, lama sabachthani?* Which is, being interpreted, *My God, my God, why have you forsaken me?* And some of them that stood by, when they heard it, said, *Behold, he calls Elijah.* And one ran, and filling a sponge full of vinegar, put it on a reed, and gave him to drink, saying, *Let be; let us see whether Elijah comes to take him down."*

Matthew 27:39-48 "**And they that passed by railed** on him, wagging their heads, and saying, *You that destroyed the temple, and builds it in three days, save yourself: if you are the Son of God, come down from the cross.* In like manner also **the chief priests mocking** him, with the scribes and elders, said, *He saved others; himself he cannot save. He is the King of Israel; let him now come down from the cross, and we will believe on him. He trusted on God; let him deliver him now, if he desires him: for he said, I am the Son of God.* **And the robbers also that were crucified with him cast upon him the same reproach.** Now from the sixth hour there was darkness over all the land until the ninth hour. And about the ninth hour Jesus cried with a loud voice, saying, *Eli, Eli, lama sabachthani, that is, My God, my God, why have you forsaken me?"* **NOTE THE TIME BOTH ROBBERS MOCKED CHRIST, JUST BEFORE THE DARKNESS.** No time for one of the robbers to repent of his mockery.

THIS MOCKERY WAS OVER CHRIST CLAIMING TO BE KING BY: (1). By the soldiers, (2). By Pilate, (3). By those that passed by, (4). By the chief priests and scribes, (5). By **both** robbers.

**MOCKERY BY BOTH THE ROBBERS.** "*And robbers also that were crucified with him cast upon him the same reproach*" (Matthew 27:44). Matthew and Mark give no details of how both robbers mocked saying only that both robbers "**cast upon him the same reproach.**" Luke tells how they "*cast upon him the same reproach.*" Just as Pilate did not believe Jesus, who had never been king over any nation and was about to be put to death, was "*THE KING OF THE JEWS,*" this robber did not believe the person being put to death with him would ever be a king and come into His kingdom, and would not restore Israel. "*And the people stood beholding. And the rulers also scoffed at him, saying, He saved others, let him save himself, if this is the Christ of God, his chosen. And the soldiers also mocked him, coming to him, offering him vinegar, and saying, 'If you are the King of the Jews, save yourself'. And there was also a superscription over him, 'THIS IS THE KING OF THE JEWS'. And one of the malefactors that were hanged railed on him, saying, 'Are not you the Christ? Save yourself and us'. But the other answered, and rebuking him said, 'Do you not even fear God, seeing you are in the same condemnation? And we indeed justly, for we receive the due reward of our deeds: but this man has done nothing amiss'. And he said, 'Jesus, remember me when you come into your*

kingdom'. And he said unto him, 'Truly I say unto you, to-day you shall be with me in Paradise'" (Luke 23:33-38).

**WHAT DID THE THIEF ASK CHRIST TO DO?** One robber railed on Christ by saying, "Are not you the Christ? Save yourself and us." The other robber by saying, "**Remember me when you come into your kingdom.**" What would "remember me when" mean to the Jews of that day; they understood the kingdom to be an earthly kingdom of Israel, the Old Testament kingdom restored, and the Messiah they looked for would literally rule Israel as David did. The thief knew he was dying and was speaking to a person that he could see was dying, mocking Him about coming into His kingdom when He was dying. Neither of the robbers thought this dying man was the Christ, or that He would come into a kingdom. Saying to someone whom he knows would soon be dead, "Remember me when you come into your kingdom" was nothing more than mockery just as the sign the thief could see over His head saying "**THIS IS THE KING OF THE JEWS**" was mockery. Neither of the robbers would have understood the messianic kingdom the Jews were looking for to be anything but a physical kingdom of Israel with an earthly king; someone that the robber could see would soon be dead could not be the king that Israel was looking for.

Neither of the thieves would have thought this person that they could see would soon be dead would soon be with God in Heaven. Whatever Christ means by "paradise," to be in paradise, or Heaven, or to be anyplace with Christ after His death was not what the thief asked for.

In his mockery the thief asked that HE be remembered, not that a soul that had been in him be remembered after HE was dead; remembered by a soul that was in Christ when that soul came into it's kingdom; he was not asking that a Platonic soul that was in him be remembered although this passage is repeatedly used to prove such a soul exist. The thief knew that both "he" and Jesus would soon be dead; did he think one dead man could remember another dead man?

**CHRIST DID NOT GO TO HEAVEN THAT DAY.** If Christ went to Heaven with the thief that day, would it not make His resurrection from the dead on the third day to be nothing but mockery? Did Christ tell the theft that he would be in Heaven that day? Jesus did not go to paradise that day. **He had said He would be in the heart of the earth (grave) for three days (Matthew 12:40);** "For as Jonah was three days and three nights in the belly of the whale; so shall the Son of man be three days and three nights in the heart of the earth." It was on Friday evening just before the beginning of the Sabbath day when Christ told the robber that he would be with Him in Paradise, but on Sunday morning He said, "Touch me not; for I am not yet ascended unto the Father" (John 20:17). Paul said Christ died, was buried, **and was raised on the third day** (1 Corinthians 15:3-4; see Matthew 12:40). He was dead and in the grave unto the third day when the Father raised Him. **If Christ was alive and went to Heaven the day He died, what was His resurrection on the third**

day? It would be nothing but mockery to say He was raised from the dead when He was not dead but was alive in Heaven. Christ said, "No one has ascended into heaven, but He who descended from heaven, even the Son of Man" (John 3:13). If Moses did not ascend into Heaven at his death and had not ascended at the time this was spoken, how did the robber ascend to Heaven if Moses and David had not? In an attempt to make a passage say someone went to Heaven at death the thief has been made to be better than Moses and David? **Where was Christ from His death to His resurrection?** "He foreseeing this spoke of the resurrection of the Christ, that neither was he left unto Hades, nor did his flesh see corruption. This Jesus did God raise up" (Acts 2:31-32). This is from Psalm 16:10, "Because you will not abandon me to the grave (sheol)" New International Version. When will anyone go to Heaven? Not unto after the judgment. We must wait for the resurrection and judgment before we will go to Heaven.

- "No one has ascended into heaven," means "no one," not "some have ascended into Heaven," not that the saved have now ascended to Heaven and are now looking down on us; not that this robber went to Heaven that day.

**WHICH WAY DO THEY SEND CHRIST?** The advocates of an immortal soul say Christ went both up and down at His death.

- In **the spirits in prison** 1 Peter 3:18-20 the advocates of an immortal soul say Christ went down to Hell to preach to the spirits in prison at His death.
- In **the robber** Luke 23:43 the advocates of an immortal soul say Christ went up to Heaven at His death. They say one place one time, and another place another time.
- **The advocates of an immortal soul send Christ both down to Hell to preach to spirits in prison, AND up to Heaven with the robber, both places at the same time.**

**WHAT IS NOT SAID:** Nothing is said about the robber believing after he had "reproached him." This is added by those who say they do not believe in adding to the word of God. I have been told the robber "could have" heard Christ before this. If he did, he did not believe for he was still a robber, and even after he was on the cross he mocked Christ ("reproached him"). He may have been one of the many that could have heard Christ before this, but if he had heard Christ he did not believe for both robbers were some of the many who mocked Christ. Anyone can prove anything that they want to with a "could have."

Nothing is said about the robber having an immortal soul that would depart from his body and would live on after the death of the person it was in, **but it is almost always changed from the thief asking that "he" be remembered, to be him asking for an immortal soul to be remembered;** if it were not changed it would not prove there is an immortal soul. The thief was not asking that an immaterial, bodiless something that was in him go to Heaven, but he was a man that know he was dying that day asking a man that he know was also dying that day to remember him when he became the king of the nation that was putting them to death—it was nothing but pure mockery.

**Christ went to the grave that day, not Heaven.** Both Christ and the robber were in hades—the grave—on *"this day."*

#### **FOUR PROBLEMS:**

1. Christ did not go to Heaven that day, did not tell the thief that he would be in Heaven that day.
2. It must be assumed that mankind now have an immortal soul, and that soul will never die.
3. It must be assumed that souls that are in all the saved go to Heaven at the moment of death, before and without the resurrection and judgment, that none go to sheol (the grave), and that none go to Abraham's bosom.
4. It must be assumed that David did ascend into the heavens (Acts 2:34).

**THE KING JAMES VERSION AND THE COMMA.** The way it is worded in the Kings James Version makes Christ be asking the thief a question (*"shall thou be with me in paradise"*) with the question mark left out, and it ends the question with a period. As it is in the Kings James Version with the Old English changed to today English."

- *"I say unto thee to-day, shalt thou be with me in paradise?"* Old English.
- *"I say unto you to-day, shall you be with me in paradise?"* Today's English.

**As it is in the King James Version, Christ asked the thief a question; He made no promise that the thief would be in paradise, Heaven, or anyplace in that day, or any day.** Yet this question Christ asked is frequency used to prove Christ was telling the thief that they both would be together in Heaven that very day.

Christ went to the grave that day. **Where is Paradise?** The only other two uses of Paradise in the New Testament are:

- (1) Paul was *"caught up into paradise,"* which he says is in *"the third heaven"* (2 Corinthians 12:2).
- (2) *"To him that overcomes, to him will I give to eat of the tree of life, which is in the Paradise of God"* (Revelation 2:7); the tree of life is in the New Jerusalem (See Revelation 21:1 to 22:5); only the person that overcomes will be able to eat of the tree of life, only the saved will be in the New Jerusalem, the lost will never have any access to it. Immortality, endless life, which comes from eating of the tree of life (most likely symbol of endless life from God), is never given to the lost.

Many translations change the question Jesus asked the thief in the King James Version to a statement and make Christ be telling the thief that they both would be together in paradise (Heaven?) that day.

- Wycliffe New Testament: *"And Jesus said to him, Truly I say to thee, **this day thou shalt be with me in paradise.**"*
- English Standard Version: *"And he said to him, Truly, I say to you, **today you will be with me in Paradise.**"*
- Young's Literal Translation: *"And Jesus said to him, Verily I say to thee, **To-day with me thou shalt be in the paradise.**"*
- New International Version: *"Jesus answered him, I tell you the truth, **today you will be with me in paradise.**"*
- New American Standard Bible: *"And He said to him, Truly I say to you, **today you shall be with Me in Paradise.**"*
- English Standard Version: *"And he said to him, Truly, I say to you, **today you will be with me in Paradise.**"*
- Amplified Bible: *"And He answered him, Truly I tell you, **today you shall be with Me in Paradise.**"*

- English Standard Version: "And he said to him, Truly, I say to you, **today you will be with me in Paradise.**"
- Darby Translation: "And Jesus said to him, Verily I say to thee, **To-day shalt thou be with me in paradise.**" This Catholic Bible, like the King James Version, makes Christ be asking the thief a question, but it does not end the question with a question mark.
- Holman Christian Standard Bible: "And He said to him, I assure you: **Today you will be with Me in paradise.**"
- New International Reader's Version: "Jesus answered him, What I'm about to tell you is true. **Today you will be with me in paradise.**"
- Today's New International Version "Jesus answered him, Truly I tell you, **today you will be with me in paradise.**"
- New International Version—UK: "Jesus answered him, I tell you the truth, **today you will be with me in paradise.**"
- Marshall Parallel New Testament In Greek And English: "Truly thee I tell, **Today with me thou will be in the paradise.**"

With the comma where it is in most translations, Christ answer to the mockery of the thief was that he would be with Christ that day. That day Christ was in the grave; therefore, according to many translations Christ told the thief that he would be in the grave that day. **Telling the thief that he was going to die and be in the grave that day does not sound like an answer the thief would have received if he had truly repented and was forgiven.**

**If Christ were telling the thief that he would be with Him in Heaven, Christ was put in the grave on that day; they were not in Heaven on that day;** the comma, which is not in the Greek must be moved for both Christ and the thief went to the grave that day, not to Heaven. "I say unto you to-day, you shall you be with me in paradise." This would not make the being in paradise not be on that day, not on the day of their death. If the thief truly did repent and by "paradise" Christ was telling the thief that he would be in Heaven with Him, the comma must be put after "today" for Christ or the thief did not go to Heaven that day.

The Greek, in which the New Testament was written, did not have chapters or punctuation. Men have added the punctuation. The oldest manuscripts are all capitals, the words are not separated, and there is no punctuation.

CARDINAL HUGE DE SANCTA CARO divided it into chapters in A. D. 1250.

ROBERT STEVENS divided the Bible into verses about A. D. 1550.

MANUTIUS, a printer of Venice in A. D. 1490, invented the comma. It was put in the King James Version in A. D. 1611 by uninspired man, **but it was not used by Luke before it was invented; therefore, there was no comma in Luke 23:43.** Punctuation was put into the Bible in the medieval Dark Age.

There was not a comma in the whole New Testament. Men put all the punctuation marks in the Bible we use today, not God. The translators could sometimes make it say what was consistent with their beliefs by the way they used punctuation. Move the comma, which was not invented unto 1490 and was added by uninspired men in

the King James Version by man in A. D. 1611, and it does not say what day they would be in paradise.

VERILYISAYUNTOYOU TODAYSHALLYOULBEWITHMEINPARADISE.

The oldest Greek manuscripts have all capitals letters with no separation between words and sentences, and no punctuation marks.

VERILY·I·SAY·UNTO·YOU·TODAY·SHALL·YOU·BE·WITH·ME·IN·PARADISE

Dots were put into the Greek in the ninth century to separate the words. The dots and all later punctuation of all Greek texts, which has been added after the ninth century is entirely on human authority.

- *"Verily I say unto you, 'To-day you shall be with me in paradise.'"*
- *"Verily I say unto you today, 'You shall be with me in paradise.'"* The comma was invented in 1490 and put in the Bible by men.

*"This day"* and *"I command you today"* is a common expression in the Bible to stress the time of the promise or command. See Genesis 31:18; Exodus 34:11; Deuteronomy 4:26; 4:40; 6:6; 7:11; 8:1; 8:11; 10:13; 11:8; 11:13; 11:18; 30:5.

- *"I declare to you this day, that you shall surely perish"* (Deuteronomy 30:18). Moses told Israel that day that they would perish, but they were not told that the perishing would be on the day that they was being told; they did not perish unto sometime after the day Moses was speaking to them.
- *"Wherefore I take you to record this day, that I am pure from the blood of all man"* (Acts 20:26 King James Version).

THE COMPANION BIBLE, Appendix 173: **"The interpretation of this verse depends entirely on punctuation, which rests wholly on human authority, the Greek manuscripts having no punctuation of any kind till the ninth century, and then it is only a dot in the middle of the line separating each word."**

To put the comma where the King James Version put it makes Jesus be saying He would be in paradise that day when He know He would not be in paradise that day. The King James translators, who believed that everyone will go immediately to Heaven or Hell at death, punctuated it to makes both Christ and the thief be in Heaven **on that very day**.

H. LEO BOLES: "Evidently Jesus did not mean that this robber would go with him to heaven that day, as it seems clear from other statements that Jesus did not go to heaven that day. His day of ascension came about forty days after that time" A Commentary On The Gospel Of Luke, page 454, 1954, Gospel Advocate Company.

CURTIS DICKINSON: "It may be asked why translators of most modern version do not place the comma after the 'today' so that the verse will harmonize with other scriptural teaching on death and resurrection. We might as well ask why they do not translate the Greek *bapitizo* as 'immerse' or *diakonos* as 'servant' instead of merely spelling them with English letters. To do so would put the translation at odds with most denominational doctrine and almost insure it failure to be accepted." "The Witness" Volume 30, Number 8, 1990.

There is no grammatical justification for the placement of the comma before *"today."* By moving the comma that was added by uninspired men with a theological

prejudice, the conflict with other passages is removed even if "in paradise" did mean "in Heaven."

The claim of some that moving the comma is to change the word of God is based completely on an attempt to make the Bible teach a pagan doctrine; it is saying that a grammatical addition that was added by man hundreds of years after the Bible was written is an infallible additions.

Note: The punctuation can change the meaning of the same words.

"After he had offered one sacrifice for sin for ever, set down on the right hand of God."

"After he had offered one sacrifice for sin, for ever set down on the right hand of God."

Woman, without her man, is nothing.

Woman, without her, man is nothing.

**(2). "TO DIE IS GAIN" Philippians 1:21-23:** When this passage is used to prove that a soul immediately takes up residences in a permanent home in Heaven at the death of the person it had been in, it is taken out of context. The first chapter of Philippians is about the Gospel being preached. Paul says, "Now I want you to know, brethren, that my circumstances **have turned out for the greater progress of the gospel**, so that my bonds became manifest in Christ throughout the whole praetorian guard, and to all the rest; and that most of the brethren in the Lord, being confident through my bonds, **are more abundantly bold to speak the word of God without fear**" (Philippians 1:12-14). His imprisonment was not a personal gain, but because of it the word of Christ was being preached; therefore, it was gain to the cause of Christ. In verse 18 it did not matter the motives, Christ was being preached and he rejoiced. Verse 20 "So now also Christ shall be magnified in my body, whether by life, or by death." If he lived, he would preach Christ. If he died, others would be made more bold and preach Christ because of his death. Verse 21 "For to me to live is Christ, and to die is gain." Death is an enemy (1 Corinthians 15:26). It was not a personal gain for Paul. **He knows his death would be a gain for the cause of Christ, and that Christ would be preached because of his death, not a personal gain for himself.** Verse 22 "But if to live in the flesh, if this shall bring fruit from my work, then what I shall choose I know not" If he lived and preached Christ, or if his death would cause others to preach Christ, which one would bring the most fruit, he knew not. "Now I want you to know, brothers and sisters, that what has happened to me **has actually served to advance the gospel**. As a result, it has become clear throughout the whole palace guard and to everyone else that I am in chains for Christ. **And because of my chains, most of the brothers and sisters have become confident in the Lord and dare all the more to proclaim the gospel more courageously and fearlessly,**" (Philippians 1:12-14 New International Version). **He is not saying he did not know whether (1) living in this world was best, (2) or living in Heaven was best, but when this passage is used to prove an immortal soul this is what he says is changed to.**

Philippians 1:12-30: When it became known that Paul was in prison it was gain to the Gospel for it made others bold to preach the Gospel, and made others preached the Gospel *"thinking to raise up affliction for me in my bonds."* In the same way Paul is saying his death would be gain to the cause of Christ just as his being in prison was, it was not a personal gain before or after death.

If **"To die is gain,"** means we go to Heaven when we die?

- Why would Paul say he did not know if going to Heaven was better than living on earth?
- Why do we go to a doctor to get well and do all we can to keep from going to Heaven; why do we pray for each other when one of us is sick; would we not asking God not to take us to Heaven and are thankful if He does not?
- This passage speaks only of the person Paul, it says nothing about a soul or a spirit; a cause must be hard pressed for support when one of the main passages that the doctrine depends on for proof of the existent of a soul when there is no soul or no spirit is mentioned in it.

The reason we do not want to die is that death is not a gateway to Heaven, but death is an enemy, which makes the resurrection be absolute necessity; without it there would be no life after death for anyone. If death were a gateway to Heaven, we would be praying, "Lord, do not make us come live up there with You, let us live down here on earth where Satan can tempt us." **If there is no real death, there cannot be a real resurrection.**

We are repeatedly told **we will be with the Lord at His coming**, not at death (2 Thessalonians 2:1) when He shall appear (Colossians 3:4), yet *"To die is gain"* is used to set aside many plain and clear passages, and make the entrance to Heaven be immediately at death, not after the resurrection.

The Greek word "ex" is used hundreds of times in the New Testament, mostly translated "all" or "from." Of the hundreds of times it is used, Philippians 1:23 is the only time "ex" is translated "betwixt" (King James Version).

(3). **"TO DEPART AND TO BE WITH THE LORD"** Philippians 1:21-24; 2 Corinthians 5:8: *"For to me, to live is Christ, and to die is gain. But if I am to live on in the flesh, **this will mean fruitful labor for me**; and I do not know which to choose. But I am hard—pressed from both directions, having the desire to depart and be with Christ, for that is very much better: **yet to remain on in the flesh is more necessary for your sake.**"* Paul dose not know (1) whether it would be best to live and work for the Lord, *"Yet to remain on in the flesh is more necessary **for your sake,**"* or (2) to depart and he himself be out of his suffering. He says nothing about a deathless pagan soul that would depart from him that would go to Heaven at the moment Paul is dead; he says nothing about any kind of being—soul that is in any person.

Be with the Lord at the Judgment Day, not instantly at death: In the same letter Paul says, *"If by any means I may attain unto the resurrection from the dead"*

(Philippians 3:11). Every time Paul discusses life after death he always points to the resurrection; without it there would be no life after death. He tells the Thessalonians that we will **be with the lord** after the resurrection, *"For the Lord Himself will descend from heaven with a shout, with the voice of the archangel, and with the trumpet of God; and the dead in Christ shall rise first. Then **we** who are alive and remain shall be caught up together with them in the clouds to meet the Lord in the air, and thus **we shall always BE WITH THE LORD**"* (1 Thessalonians 4:16-17). It was Paul; *"I"* that had a desire to be with the Lord, not something in Paul that had no substance that would be with the Lord after Paul was in the grave.

- Be with the Lord *"at that day"* 2 Timothy 4:8.
- Be with the Lord at *"His appearing"* 2 Timothy 4:8.

2 Corinthians 5:8: *"Knowing that he that raised up the Lord Jesus **shall raise up us also with Jesus, and shall present us with you...are willing to be absent from the body, and to be at home with the Lord...For we must all be made manifest before the judgment—seat of Christ; that each one may receive the things done in the body"*** (2 Corinthians 4:14-5:10). The context 2 Corinthians 5:8 is the resurrection and judgment at the coming of Christ, not to be in Heaven at the moment of death; it is taken out of its context and changed to contradict its context.

Many passages show that Paul's whole hope of being with Jesus was at the resurrection, not at the moment of death. *"Henceforth there is laid up for **me** the crown of righteousness, which the Lord, the righteous judge, **shall give to me at THAT DAY; and not to me only, but also to all them that have loved His appearing"*** (2 Timothy 4:8). Paul clearly says the time of his death has come, but he will not receive the crown of righteousness unto the appearing of Christ at the Judgment Day. He will be with the Lord at the same time all the saved will be, *"**at that day,**"* at the Judgment Day, at *"**his appearing,**"* not at death, See 2 Timothy 1:12; 1:18; 4:18; 2 Thessalonians 1:10; Philippians 1:10; 1:6; 1 Corinthians 1:8; 5:6. When will Paul be given *"the crown of righteousness,"* when Christ comes, not at death? See 1 Peter 5:4. *"To be with the Lord,"* says nothing about a soul, (1) not between death and the resurrection (2) or not after the resurrection; Paul used "me," and "we," not "my soul," or "your soul," nothing is said about "your soul" in this passage. *"For the Lord himself shall descend for Heaven...and so **we shall ever be with the Lord"*** (1 Thessalonians 4:16-17); it is after the resurrection that **we** will be with the Lord, not at death. No one has ascended into Heaven but Christ; therefore, Paul has not ascended to Heaven, and he is not now in Heaven with the Lord (John 3:13). **Paul died about two thousand years ago, but like David (Acts 2:29), Paul is not yet in Heaven with the Lord, and he will not be until after the resurrection; therefore, this passage could not be saying there was an immortal, invisible soul in Paul that would go to Heaven and be with the Lord at the time of the death of Paul.**

(1). Peter says of David, "That he both died and was buried...for David ascended not into the heavens" (Acts 2:29-34).

- David is in the grave; Christ is not in the grave.
- David is not in Heaven; Christ is in Heaven.

(2). The same David that is in the grave is the same David that is not in Heaven.

(3). Today's theology says, "David is not dead, and he has ascended into Heaven; the body of David is dead, but a soul that had been in David is the real David, and it is in Heaven." If a soul that had been in David was the real David, and it went to Heaven when David's body died then Peter would have been wrong when he said, "David ascended not into the heavens." The David that is now in the grave is the real David, the only David; but this theology changes the Bible from "David ascended not" to "David's body ascended not, but a soul that was in David did ascend."

(4). John 3:13: "And no man has ascended up to heaven, but he that came down from heaven, even the Son of man which is in heaven" (John 3:13 King James Version). Today's theology: all souls that were in all the saved ascend to Heaven at death. Who do you believe? Christ or man?

Paul teaches:

1. That the dead are now asleep.
2. That the dead will not be resurrected unto the resurrection at the coming of Christ.
  - Therefore, "Absent from the body" cannot mean going to Heaven at death.

To make "with the Lord" mean we go to Heaven with the Lord at death takes away any need for a resurrection, and makes it useless and foolish. After some had been in Heaven with the Lord for centuries, why would He send them back to earth to raise them from the dead when they were not dead, and take them back to Heaven when from the day of their death they had been very much alive in Heaven and were never dead?

There are three major views on the condition of the dead.

1. The dead are now dead and will be dead unto the resurrection of the dead.
2. The souls of the dead are now alive in an intermediate state without the resurrection.
3. The souls of the dead are now alive in Heaven or Hell without the resurrection.

Although this passage is used as undeniable proof of both 2 and 3, and to set aside the many passages on the resurrection, this passage is completely silent about where the dead are before the resurrection, and it says nothing about a separate conscious entity being in a person; it was Paul that would die (depart), and Paul that would be with the Lord, not just some something that Paul could not see, or that he could not know it was in him, or he would not know if it, what ever a soul is, would be with the Lord. It is not implicated, as some say, that Paul was speaking of some immaterial something that has no substance that would be with the Lord after Paul was dead, but that it is Paul himself that will be with the Lord, the whole Paul.

Those who believe the souls that were in the dead goes to hades, some souls to be with the rich man in torment, and some to be in "Abraham's bosom" also use "be with the Lord" when they are trying to prove there is an immortal soul in a person, but in doing so they do not seem to be able to see that they are making all go to Heaven or Hell at death; therefore, they have made going to hades, to "Abraham's bosom," at death impossible. We could not be (1) in "Abraham's bosom," and (2) in Heaven

with the Lord both at the same time. When they need to, they make hades be "the grave" for the body to be in, and when they need to, they make it be "*Abraham's bosom*" for the "soul" to live in. How do they know when it should be one, and when it should be the other? In trying to make Paul and Stephen be conscious after death, the souls in them are both put directly in Heaven at death before and without the Judgment Day; sometimes even by those who do not believe anyone is now in Heaven.

We need to be very careful not to make Paul say something he did not say (2 Peter 3:16). "*To be with the Lord,*" but where and when will we be with the Lord? Not in our permanent abode in Heaven at death, for no one will not be in Heaven unto after the judgment. If we go to Heaven or Hell at death, this would mean that the final judgment takes place immediately at death, for God would have to decide our destiny then; therefore, God would have made the final judgment before the Judgment Day, before the coming of Christ.

Jesus said, "***And if I go and prepare a place for you, I will come again, and receive you to Myself, that where I am, there you may be also***" (John 14:3). Many say, "Not so Lord, the souls that are in us will be with you in Heaven as soon as we die, Your second coming and the resurrection will not be needed for our soul will already be alive and already with You in Heaven." But Paul said, "***For our citizenship is in heaven, from which also we eagerly wait for a Savior, the Lord Jesus Christ; who will transform the body of our humble state into conformity with the body of His glory***" (Philippians 3:20-21). It is us (our bodies) who will be transformed, not something that is in us that is now just as immortal as it could ever be, something that will not need to be transformed, and it is this something that is already immortal that is now in a person that will not wait for the Lord Jesus to come again, but it will immediately go to Heaven to be with Him just as soon as it is freed by the death of the person it is in. Both the how and when Paul or anyone will be with the Lord is stated in no uncertain terms in many passages. Living Christians need not sorrow as the rest who have no hope (1 Thessalonians 4:13). There are four points in this passage.

1. Those who are asleep will be resurrected from the dead at the second coming of Christ. **The departed person will not be with Christ unto He comes "*again, and receive you to Myself, that where I am, there you may be also*"** (John 14:2). The dead are not alive before, "*The Lord himself shall descend from heaven...and the dead in Christ shall rise first.*" At the coming of Christ the dead shall rise from the grave, not come back from Hell or Heaven. He is not speaking of any that are alive in Heaven, not those who are in any way awake and active, but to those who are "*asleep.*"
2. Those who are living at the time Christ comes will be changed. Living Christians will not precede (go ahead of) the Christians that are not living (them that are fallen asleep) to meet the Lord, "***And so shall we ever be with the lord***" (1 Thessalonians 4:15).
3. **Both those in Christ that are dead, and those in Christ that are living, will together go from the earth to meet the Lord in the air when He is coming from Heaven before**

we will **"be with the Lord."** **"Then we that are alive, that are left, SHALL TOGETHER with them be caught up** (from the earth) **in the clouds, to meet the Lord in the air"** (1 Thessalonians 4:17-18). **How could Paul have said any clearer that those who are now asleep are not now alive in Heaven, but that they will be raised from the dead and meet the Lord in the air as He is returning?** It is by (1) resurrection or the dead (2) and by translation of the living, both at the coming of Christ that we shall be with the Lord, **there is no other way or time that anyone will ever be with the Lord.**

4. *"And so shall we* (both the living Christians and the Christians that are not living at the time He comes) *ever be with the Lord"* (1 Thessalonians 4:17). With the Lord in the place in Heaven where He has gone to prepare for the saved (John 14:2). The future existence of the dead in Christ absolutely depends upon:
  - (1) The resurrection of those who are asleep.
  - (2) Or on a translation of those who are living when Christ comes.
    - *"That whether **we** are awake or asleep, **we** may live together with Him"* (1 Thessalonians 5:10).

The saved will not have the bodies of flesh and bones that will be renewed and made to be immortal bodies of flesh and bones, but will have new bodies made for Heaven just as the angels.

Why did Paul say he had a desire to depart? He lived a life of suffering, toil, and trials (2 Corinthians 11:23-33), and like Job, he understood death would be a relief from pain; he knew that from the standpoint of the person that departs it will be as if he or she is with the Lord the next moment, for we will know nothing of the time between death and the resurrection, that time will seem as if it was only a moment for both the person that has been asleep for thousands of years, and for the person that has just fallen asleep; one moment or ten thousand years are the same, they sleeps, they wakes with no knowledge of the time between death and awakening, to them there is no waiting, they have no fear, terror, happiness, knowledge, or thoughts before the resurrection. The dead in Christ are now asleep, and have not yet ascended into Heaven, not even David or Paul, only Christ is now in Heaven, **"But now has Christ been raised from the dead, the first-fruits of them that ARE ASLEEP...in Christ shall all be made alive. But each in his own order: Christ the first fruits, then they that are Christ's at His coming"** (1 Corinthians 15:20-23). For us, there is no life after death unto the resurrection, and never would be life without a resurrection of the dead.

**Analus is used in the New Testament only two times.**

1. *"When he will RETURN (Greek—**analus**) from the wedding"* Luke 12:36.
  2. *"Having a desire to DEPART (Greek—**analus**), and to be with the Lord"* Philippians 1:23.
- "To depart," or "Will return," which one does analus means?** The article "the" is in the Greek before analus, but was not put in most English translations. "

**(4) IN THE BODY OR OUT OF THE BODY, 2 Corinthians 12:1-2: "But I will come to visions and revelations of the Lord" Paul had not died at the time he wrote this; therefore, there are only two possibilities.**

**First possibility: Paul was taken to the third Heaven in his earthly body** and given a revelation, which was not lawful for him to utter, and then returned to Earth. He did not die. This would prove nothing about a disembodied soul from death unto the resurrection. **Being taken to Heaven alive in his body would not even be a death. At the time he says this, he was still a living human being that had not died, it was not after the death of Paul that a disembodied soul went to Heaven without the body of Paul. Then how can this be used to show that Paul had an "immaterial, invisible part of man" that would not die when Paul died? "Whether in the body,"** although it is almost certain that no flesh and blood body has ever been in Heaven or ever will be, God has the power, and He could have taken Paul to the third Heaven when he was in his body, or He has the power to have taken Paul to the third Heaven in a vision. Paul did not know which so we cannot know. If Paul were caught up to the third Heaven before his death this was a special case that was when Paul as alive, and not what happened to Paul after his death, or will happen to all mankind instantaneously at death. It is not going to Abraham's bosom, which is where many teach all the saved will go immediately at death. **There is nothing in this passage about what will be after death, (1) nether before the resurrection, (2) nor after the resurrection for Paul or for us; so how can this passage be used to prove a person has a "disembodied soul" in them that will go to Heaven after the death of the person it was in?** Paul had not died. He said, *"I know a man...how that he was caught up into Paradise"* not "I know an immaterial soul." This took place while Paul was alive; there is nothing in this passage about a soul that was in Paul that left his body, but that is what it is repeatedly used to prove.

**Second possibility: this was a vision:** Neither would a vision prove anything about there being a disembodied soul that is in a person that will be in Heaven or Hell from the death of the person unto the resurrection. "Visions" in 2 Corinthians 12:1 is translated from "optasia," and it is used only four times in the New Testament.

1. *"That he had seen a VISION (optasia) in the temple"* (Luke 1:2).
2. *"They had also seen a VISION (optasia) of angels"* (Luke 24:23).
3. *"Disobedient unto the heavenly VISION" (optasia)* (Acts 26:19).
4. And in this passage, *"I will come to VISIONS (optasia) and revelations"* (2 Corinthians 12:1).

A vision is a way that God communicated to people, but it is not a physically reality, it is something like a dream, and it cannot be used to prove that there is an immortal soul or an immortal spirit in Paul or in anyone that lives on after the person is dead.

**EITHER WAY:** If Paul were taken to Heaven, or if this was a vision.

1. This says nothing about an immaterial, invisible, whatever a soul is, nothing about a soul or a spirit.

2. Or nothing about anything that will be after death before the resurrection, this was when Paul was still alive, not after his death.

Those who use this to prove a person has an immortal soul that is now as immortal as it will be after the resurrection must say they know what Paul said even though Paul did not know. They must say only something that was in Paul, a "soul," but not Paul's body went to Heaven, and that this was not a vision. How could anyone know this when Paul did not? According to the common view, when a soul leaves the body, the body is dead; that death is the separation of body and soul. Therefore, if this something called "soul" separated from the body, and if the soul went to the third Heaven, but his body was on the earth separated from this soul that had been in him, then Paul was dead, but a soul that had been in Paul was alive. According to the belief that death is only a separation of the body and soul, Paul would have been dead, and his soul coming back to his body would have to be a resurrection from the dead. According to this teaching, his dead body was on earth at the same time that a soul was in Heaven separated from his body, he died and was raised from the dead and did not know it. We are told that *"out of the body"* means Paul's soul went to paradise and left his corpse on the earth; therefore, Paul was dead according to their own definition of death. Who can believe Paul was dead, and he was resurrected when a soul returned to his body, and he did not know he had been dead and resurrected?

"Out of" is translated from the Greek word "ektos." It is used nine times in the New Testament.

- (1). "Clean first the inside of the cup and of the platter, that the **outside** (ektos) thereof may become clean also" (Matthew 23:26).
- (2). "Saying **nothing** (ektos) but what the prophets and Moses did say should come" (Acts 26:22).
- (3). "Flee fornication. Every sin that a man does is **without** (ektos) the body; but he that commits fornication sins against his own body" (1 Corinthians 6:18). Paul is not saying all the sins of a person were by a disembodied soul without (ektos—"out of the body") the person.
- (4). "Greater is he that prophesies than he that speaks with tongues, **except** (ektos) he interpret" (1 Corinthians 14:5).
- (5). "**Except** (ektos) you believed in vain" (1 Corinthians 15:2).
- (6). "It is evident that He is **excepted** (ektos) who did subject all thing unto Him" (1 Corinthians 15:27).
- (7). "I know a man in Christ, fourteen years ago (whether in the body, I know not or whether **out of the body** (ektos), I know not; God knows" (2 Corinthians 12:2).
- (8). "And I know such a man (whether in the body or **apart from the body** (ektos), I know not God knows)" (2 Corinthians 12:3).
- (9). "Against an elder receive not an accusation, **except** (ektos) at the mouth of two or three witnesses" (1 Timothy 5:19).
  - Of the nine times ektos is used, why are only two translated in a way that would support the belief of there being an immortal something in a person, why is ektos translated seven times with only one word, and only two times ektos is translated into not one word but four words? In the Greek, body is from "soma," there is no way to get "body" from

“ektos,” but the translators added “body” to make this passage prove their pagan immortal soul, but they added it only two of the nine times ektos is used. There is no way to get out of Paul’s vision a disembodied immaterial soul that can leave the person it is in without changing God’s word.

Summary: First **ADDED**, then **CHANGED**. First "psukee (life, soul, living being)" must be **ADDED** into this passage when it is not in it, then the **ADDED** psukee must be **CHANGED** into an immortal bodiless being that can exist “*apart from the body.*” Theology had to go on a long trip to put what they wanted into this. There is nothing in this passage about the intermediate time from death unto the resurrection; but that a "soul" is alive in the intermediate time from death to the resurrection is what they are trying to prove with it. **Paul was speaking about a vision that had happened fourteen years before (2 Corinthians 12:1), not a death for at the time of the vision Paul was very much alive, and there is nothing in this passage (1) about a soul or a spirit, (2) nothing about death, (3) or nothing about anything that will be after death.** How could this possibly be used to prove that there is a soul in Paul or anyone that is immortal and cannot die; therefore, cannot be resurrected from the dead?

**(5). THE BELIEF OF THE PHARISEES AND OF THE SADDUCEES ABOUT WHOSE WIFE SHALL SHE BE.** There is much conflict and confusion in what has been written about the beliefs of both the Pharisee and the Sadducees. Below is a brief outline of their beliefs, which I think is in agreement with most writers.

**THE SADDUCEES** believed in a strict following of the Law and rejected traditions, and they believed that the Law said nothing about an immortal soul, or about the resurrection of the dead, or of any life after death. See (6). "The God of Abraham" next in this chapter.

**THE PHARISEES** were originated in the time of the Maccabees, and probably died out in A. D. 70 or soon after. A belief in some kind of resurrection was established among some of the Jews in the time of Christ, but was not believed by most; the teaching of Christ in Mark 12:26-27 on anyone having eternal life and immortality in Heaven after death was new to them (2 Timothy 1:10). The Pharisees seem to have believed much of Rabbinic Judaism, mostly writings that were written between the Testaments that were influenced by Greek pagan teaching. Some form of an immortal soul was believed by the Greeks, and is in some of the Rabbinical writings. The Pharisees did believe in both the resurrection of the dead, and in spirits and angels (Acts 23:8); they did believe the teaching of eternal (aionios) life was found in the Scriptures, and searched the scriptures for proof (John 5:39), but what kind of life and where did they believe it would be; what did they believe about the resurrection? The only resurrections in the Old Testament Scriptures that they searched were resurrections of earthly body back to a mortal life that was no different from the mortal life of those who had not been resurrected; there was no

inferring from these resurrections of a general resurrection of all, not to a resurrection back to earthly bodies on this earth, not to a resurrection to immortality in Heaven; the seven men and the wife were physically breathing people, and the Pharisees believed they would be the same when they were resurrected with the same earthly needs, marriage, need for food, sleep, etc.; just as some believed Christ was *“one of the prophets of old has risen again”* (Luke 9:19), not raised to immortality, but one of the prophets had been raised to life in the flesh and was just as all the living; just as Herod believed Jesus was *“John the Baptist; he has risen from the dead”* (Matthew 14:1-2; Mark 6:14-15; Luke 9:7-8); Herod believed the person he had put to death in the flesh was alive in the flesh. The New Testament teaching of a resurrection to immortality in Heaven is not in the Old Testament and was unknown to them. Christ abolished death, and *“brought life and immortality to light through the gospel”* (2 Timothy 1:10-11); something brought to light is made visible, something that was not seen, but now it can be seen; something not brought to light could not have been seen by them; therefore, how could the Pharisees or anyone have known about something God had not made known? They looked for the Christ to restore Israel as a great nation and to set on the throne of David in Jerusalem; a Christ that would be killed and resurrected, and He would set on His throne in Heaven over a kingdom not of this world was completely unknown to them. They may have thought Abraham, David, and others would be resurrected as mortal persons in the restored Israel under the savior they looked for, but even the prophecies of the Old Testament about Christ (Acts 2:25) were not understood by them to be a resurrection to immortality or to life in Heaven for they thought their savior would be a person just as David was, a person who would save the nation of Israel, and He would literally set on the throne of David in Jerusalem. **Whatever they believed about a resurrection, it could not have been the resurrection to eternal life in Heaven, which was not known about before Christ.** A resurrection and judgment of all, and eternal life in Heaven for believers after death was completely unknown to them. They had many traditions and were rebuked for making the Law void by their traditions. Jesus said to them, *“You hypocrites, well did Isaiah prophesy of you, saying, this people honors me with their lips; but their heart is far from me. But in vain do they worship me, teaching as their doctrines the precept of men”* (Matthew 15:7-9). Much of the teaching of Christ was a rebuke to the both the Pharisees and the Sadducees about their beliefs. See Matthew 19.

- *“But as touching the dead, that they are raised”* Mark 12:26.
- *“But that the dead are raised”* Luke 20:37.
- *“But as touching the resurrection of the dead”* Matthew 22:31.
  - The subject was the resurrection, that there will be a resurrection, not an immortal soul that could not be resurrected.
  - *“But as touching the dead”*—not a deathless soul that was never dead, that was already alive in Heaven or Hell without the resurrection. If Abraham kept on living, if

only his body was dead, but the real Abraham was alive in Heaven, or in Abraham's bosom, or anyplace, then he could not have been resurrected from the undead; **a soul that is not dead could not be resurrected from the dead.**

1. God is the God of Abraham.
2. Without the resurrection there is no life after death.
3. Therefore, Abraham will be raised from the dead and live again; proves the resurrection of Abraham, not that there was a soul in Abraham that is not dead; therefore, cannot be resurrected.

**THE QUESTION THE SADDUCEES ASKED.** The Sadducees did not believe in a resurrection; their question was an attempt to disprove the belief of the Pharisees of an earthly resurrection, a resurrection to be the same mortal persons they were before they died. *"On that day there came to him Sadducees, they that say that there is no resurrection"* (Matthew 22:23). **To prove there was no resurrection they tried to trick Jesus with a question that would prove there was not, that a resurrection would make a woman be the wife of seven men which would not be lawful according to the Old Testament law. The point of His answer was to prove there is to be a resurrection, but nothing like the resurrection to the same mortal life the Pharisees believed, they were not trying to prove anything about the state of the dead before the resurrection. There is nothing in their question or in Christ's answer about a disembodied soul, or nothing about a spirit that is alive before or after the resurrection.** Christ was asked, *"The woman also died...in the resurrection; therefore, whose wife of them shall she be"* (Luke 20:33)? They did not ask whose wife she would be after the death of the body, but whose wife in the resurrection; they seem to think that those who believed in the resurrection thought it would be a resurrection to life on this earth, life much as it now is, their question was not who now has her disembodied spirit in the intermediate state. Christ said to them, **"But they that are accounted worthy to attain to that world (aion—age) and the resurrection from the dead...but that THE DEAD ARE RAISED"** (Luke 20:35-37). **"But as touching the resurrection of the dead"** (Matthew 22:31). **"For when they shall rise from the dead...But as touching the dead, that they are raised"** (Mark 12:25-26).

*"In the resurrection; therefore, whose wife shall she be of the seven?"* (Matthew 22:28. Notice the question or the answer did not mention an intermediate state; there is nothing in this passage about an intermediate state. The fact that they thought that if there were a resurrection she would have to be the wife of one of the seven points out that they were thinking of a resurrection of an earthly mortal body with life on this earth just as it is now with husbands, wives, and children, not which of the seven immortal deathless souls that were already alive without a resurrection would she be the wife of. The only resurrections in the Old Testament, the only resurrections that they would know about, were resurrections back to a mortal life that would die again, back to life just as it was before death.

This has two parts: First part: Christ answers their argument. Second part: Christ's new revelation about believes going to be as angels in Heaven. Then He adds proof of the resurrection, *"I am the God of Abraham."*

**FIRST PART: "YOU DO ERR, NOT KNOWING THE SCRIPTURES." Marriage and the Law—women with seven husbands.** Matthew 22:29; Mark 12:24 Their err was not on what the Law said about a resurrection, but on what the Law said about marriage. *"Do you not know, brothers and sisters—for I am speaking to those who know the law—that the law has authority over someone only as long as that person lives? For example, by law a married woman is bound to her husband as long as he is alive, but if her husband dies, she is released from the law that binds her to him. So then, if she has sexual relations with another man while her husband is still alive, she is called an adulteress. But if her husband dies, she is released from that law and is not an adulteress if she marries another man"* (Romans 7:1-3, New International Version). When all seven died, the women was freed from them all, each one when he died. The New Testament says the same as the Old Testament on marriage, *"A wife is bound for so long time as her husband lives; but if the husband be dead she is free to be married to whom she will; only in the Lord"* (1 Corinthians 7:39).

**THEN CHRIST ADDS A NEW REVELATION, "IN THE RESURRECTION."** This reply by Christ is one of, if not the first suggestion of a resurrection that will not be a resurrection back to a mortal life. This was a new teaching of Christ that was not known about before He abolished death and brought immortality to light through the gospel (2 Timothy 1:10); therefore, immortality could not have been known about by either the Sadducees or the Pharisees; if Christ *"abolished death,"* there had to be *"death"* to be abolished; death could not be *"abolished"* to a deathless soul that both was not subject to death and was already immortal. *"The sons of this world (aion—age) marry, and are given in marriage: but they that are accounted worthy to attain to that world (aion—age), and the resurrection from the dead, neither marry, nor are given in marriage: for neither can they die any more; for they are equal unto the angels; and are sons of God"* (Luke 20:34-36). Jesus is speaking of life in two different ages, life in this age where there is marriage and death, and life in an age (Heaven) where there is no marriage or death. The Pharisees view of the resurrection that the Sadducees did not believe seems to be a resurrection to life as it now is in this age. Christians, while living on this earth are (1) not immortal, (2) not deathless, (3) not spirits, (4) not equal unto the angels, (5) they do marry.

#### **WHO WILL BE "ACCOUNTED WORTHY"?**

- *"They that are accounted worthy to attain to that world (age), and the resurrection from the dead"* (Luke 20:35).
- *"That you may be counted worthy of the kingdom of God"* (2 Thessalonians 1:5).
- *"They were counted worthy to suffer dishonor for the name"* (Acts 5:41).

- It is obvious that the “*they who*” does not include all, that the “*they who*” that are counted worthy are only the saved.

**“BUT AS TOUCHING THE RESURRECTION OF THE DEAD”** Matthew 22:31-33: Christ now introduces proof of the resurrection. *“But regarding the fact that the dead rise again, have you not read in the book of Moses, in the passage about the burning bush, how God spoke to him, saying, ‘I am the God of Abraham, and the God of Isaac, and the God of Jacob’? He is not the God of the dead, but of the living; you are greatly mistaken”* (Mark 12:26-27). The Sadducees understood this proof of the resurrection and were put to silence (Matthew 22:34). *“Neither dared any man from that day forth ask him any more questions.”*

But how did Christ get a resurrection out of, *“I am the God of Abraham”*?

- If Abraham were alive in Heaven then it would prove the resurrection to be both not needed and not possible.
- If Abraham was not dead then he could not be resurrected from the dead.
- David is not yet in Heaven (Acts 2:29).
- Christ is the only one that has been resurrected and is now in Heaven (1 Corinthians 16:20). He is the only one that will be alive unto after the resurrection and judgment.
- All that have died are now asleep and will sleep unto the resurrection (1 Corinthians 15:20-24).
- The Old Testament did not teach life in Heaven for anyone, Jesus *“abolished death, and brought life and immortality to light through the gospel”* (2 Timothy 1:10). See chapter seven on, “A strange and unexplainable silence the silence of the Old Testament on punishment and life after death.”

Those that teach there is a deathless immortal soul that is in a person say this is speaking of a soul that had been in Abraham, but a deathless soul could not be used to prove that there will be a resurrection of the dead.

1. **If “I am the God of Abraham” proves Abraham has an immortal soul that never died, it proves that there cannot be a resurrection.**
2. **If “I am the God of Abraham” proves Abraham is dead and must be resurrected, it proves that Abraham did not have an immortal soul that was alive at the time Christ said this.**
  - **It cannot prove both. If it proves life after death on the grounds of inherit immortality, it proves that there cannot be a resurrection.**

How *“I am the God of Abraham”* proves there will be a resurrection was understood by those hearing Christ, but the commentaries are extremely divided on this passage and I have not found even one that has a convincing answer. Luke adds, *“Now he is not the God of the dead, but of the living: **for all live unto him**”* (Luke 20:38). Even though Abraham is now asleep and will be unto the resurrection, is Christ saying Abraham exist in the mind of God and Abraham the person will be resurrected but with a new body that will be *“equal unto the angels”* (Luke 20:34-36). Abraham will be raised, but not his natural earthly body; he will be raised with a spiritual body (1 Corinthians 15:44) made for life in Heaven.

The argument seems to be this:

1. God is the God of Abraham proves life for the dead Abraham.
2. There is no life for the dead without a resurrection.
3. Therefore, there will be a resurrection to life of the dead Abraham.

Today most that are called Jews believe more like the Sadducees did, and do not believe the Old Testament says anything about an immortal soul, or anything about anyone going to Heaven at anytime after death; they do not believe their savior has come, and believed when he dose come he will restore Israel as a nation.

ALEXANDER CAMPBELL: "1. That before the Captivity, and the Macedonian and Roman conquests, the Jews observed the most profound silence upon the state of the deceased, as to their happiness or misery. They spoke of it simply as a place of silence, darkness, and inactivity. 2. But after the Hebrews mingled with the Greeks and Romans, they insensibly aided into their use of terms, and adopted some of their ideas on such subjects as those on which their oracles were silent." Appendix to "The Living Oracles," page 59, 1826, Gospel Advocate Company.

The belief of the Greeks was reincarnation back to some kind of earthly life that would die again, and would be reincarnated over and over with little or nothing being remembered about any of the earlier lives, not even what kind of plants or animals they may have been in past lives; they had no conception of eternal life in Heaven that was made known by Christ.

1. Many of the writing that are that are thought have been written between the testaments, both the date and the author are questionable.
2. Many of them falsely clam to be inspired.
3. Many of them are in the Catholic Bible as if they are equal to the inspired books of the Bible.
4. Both the Rabbinical literature and the apocryphal books are of uncertain date and have condictions both with in each book and with each other; both have many far out things that diffidently do not agree with he Bible.
5. None of these writing have any valve to prove or disprove the will of God for us. The writing of the so called "church fathers" can be used to prove what was believed by some at the time they were writing and how pagan mythology was brought into the church, but they are not God's word to us. Only the Bible has the words that God has spoken to us, not any writing of men at any time, not between the testament, not the falsely called "fathers," not any creed or counsel.

**(6). THE GOD OF ABRAHAM, ISAAC AND JACOB** Luke 20:27-38; Matthew 22:32: *"But as touching the resurrection of the dead, have you not read that which was spoken unto you by God, saying, 'I am the God of Abraham, and the God of Isaac, and the God of Jacob? God is not the God of the dead, but of the living.'"* Christ was proving to the Sadducees that there will be a resurrection, not that Abraham was alive at that time. **If the dead are living in a disembodied state, for God to say he was the God of Abraham would not prove there will be a resurrection, but would prove one was not needed. If Abraham were not dead, Christ could not have used Abraham to prove the dead will be raised.** The dead must be dead to be raised; a living Abraham would not need to be raised, would not need a resurrection to make him alive. **The whole point Christ was making is that**

there will be a resurrection, He was proving that the resurrection was absolute necessity for God to be the God of Abraham, not that Abraham was not dead and could not be resurrected. Not that there is a disembodied spirit that is now alive in Heaven or Hell while the dead body it had been in is in the grave. If a disembodied Abraham were alive anywhere it would make his resurrection impossible. A resurrection of the living would be an empty show, a fraud, not a resurrection. The belief of many says, "Not so Christ, I was born with in immortal soul in me and it cannot die; therefore, it cannot be dead, it cannot be raised from the dead"? This theology destroys the Biblical doctrine of the resurrection.

1. Either Abraham was dead, and he will be resurrected.
2. Or Abraham was alive, and he cannot be resurrected.
3. It could not be both; Abraham could not be resurrected if Abraham was alive.

Paul said of Able, "*He being dead*" (Hebrews 11:4), if language has any meaning, Abel was dead, not alive at the time Paul said this. "*For David...fell asleep, and was laid unto his fathers, and saw corruption*" (Acts 13:36); if David were living (awake) at this time, if only his body was in the tomb, Peter had no point or argument; what Peter said had no meaning.

1. Christ was not in the grave at that time.
  - o David was in the grave.
2. Christ did not see corruption.
  - o David did.
3. Christ ascended into Heaven.
  - o David has not ascended into Heaven, and he will not unto the resurrection.

"*From the day that the fathers fell asleep*" (2 Peter 3:4) shows that Abraham and David are still asleep, along with all other's that "*are fallen asleep*" (1 Corinthians 15:6). To say that Abraham has been raised is to say the resurrection is past, and Christ was not the "*first fruits*" (2 Corinthians 15:20), or the "*first born*" (Colossians 1:18, Revelation 1:5). The resurrection at the coming of Christ is the subject, and nothing is said about what will be between death and the resurrection. "*For none of us live to himself, and none die to himself. For whether we live, we live unto the Lord; or whether we die, we die unto the Lord; whether we live therefore, or die, we are the Lord's. For to this end Christ died and lived again, that he might be **Lord of both the dead and the living***" (Romans 14:7-9). **How could Christ be Lord of the dead if no one is dead if all are alive, either alive in Heaven or alive in Hell?**

Although Exodus 3:6 is constantly quoted to prove the dead Abraham was not dead, there is nothing in it that says Abraham was alive in Heaven at that time, but on the other hand the use of this passage by Christ to prove there will be a resurrection proves beyond any doubt that the dead are not now conscious, are not now alive before and without the resurrection. The, "*Resurrection of the dead*" was the issue of the Sadducees; nothing is said about departed spirits being alive in Heaven or Hell without the resurrection. It was, "*As touching the resurrection of the*

dead” that Jesus quotes, “*I am the God of Abraham...He is not the God of the dead but of the living*” (Matthew 22:31-32), and His conclusion is that there will be a resurrection of the dead. Without the resurrection there is no life after death.

“*For David, after he had served the purpose of God in his own generation, fell asleep, and was laid among his fathers, and underwent decay: but He whom God raised did not undergo decay*” (Acts 13:36-37). After the resurrection and ascension of Christ Peter said, “*For David ascended not into the heavens*” (Acts 2:34); David is asleep, not just his body is asleep, but many believe the real David is now awake in Heaven. David will be asleep unto the resurrection, **neither the real David, nor some immaterial something that had been in David has not ascended to Heaven, no one but Christ has.** John 3:13 clearly and undeniable said, “*No one has ascended into heaven, but he that descended out of heaven, even the Son of man, who is in heaven*” King James Version. John wrote this years after Jesus had ascended to Heaven when Jesus was in Heaven; this is believe by many to be a parenthetical statement (words put in as a note of explanation) by John when he was writing this probably after A. D 70, long after Christ had ascended back to Heaven in Acts 2, which would make John be saying that years after Christ has ascended back to Heaven (at the time when John was writing the Gospel according to John) that no one but Christ, not even the Old Testament saints were in Heaven. When Jesus ascended in Acts 1:9 He was alone, none of the Old Testament saints accompanied Him, and none were in Heaven before Him. None of the Old Testament saints went to Heaven at death, and they were not in Heaven at that time, not even Abraham or David was in Heaven.

Summary: If the dead are more alive than when they were living, it both takes away the need for a resurrection and made it impossible. **Christ's argument that there will be a resurrection is totally destroyed. When this passage is used to prove the dead are not dead but are conscious, that David was then alive in Heaven, then it would prove that there is no resurrection. If the dead are now alive then how would His answer prove there would be a resurrection, and what would be the need of one? This is a serious problem for those who teach unconditionally immortality. It cannot be taught that the dead are more alive than the living without destroying the Biblical doctrine of the resurrection. If Abraham, David, Job, and other saints are now alive in Heaven, death has already been destroyed. Death would have been destroyed for all at their death, not at Christ's second coming; and even those in the Old Testament would have had life, eternal life, without the death of Christ and without the resurrection and judgment.** Take away the fact that Abraham was dead, which is the very thing that those who say there is a soul in a person that is immortal and can never die are trying to do; and you take away the point of Christ's argument, and make Him be saying just so many words that say nothing. Christ's argument, that

there will be a resurrection, requires that Abraham is dead at the time Christ made the argument. Abraham being alive would have requires that he never died, or that his resurrection was past before the death and resurrection of Christ. The resurrection of Christ, Abraham, or anyone requires that they be dead at the time of the resurrection for they could not be resurrected if they were alive. If Abraham is now dead, but a soul that had been in him is now alive it would prove nothing about Abraham being alive now, or that he will ever be resurrected. How could anyone think that a coming back of either a living person, or a living soul from Heaven is a resurrection of the dead? If David were not still in the tomb then he had been raised the same as Christ, but before Christ; therefore, Christ was not the first fruit. Today's theology has changed this to read, "But that the dead are not dead to be raised," or "But that the separated are not dead to be raised." **If Jesus were saying Abraham is alive now, He would be denying the point He was making, that there will be a resurrection, for Abraham could not be raised if he were alive. If Abraham were alive at that time then Luke 20:27-38 proves that there will not and cannot be a resurrection. This passage teaches a "resurrection of the dead," it does not teach, "no one is dead to be resurrected from the dead."**

**(7). THE TRANSFIGURATION: A RESURRECTION Or A VISION?** Matthew 17:1-9, Mark 9:2-9:

**A VISION:** Christ said it was a vision. *"Tell the **vision** to no man"* (Matthew 17:9). Christ clearly said it was a vision. They were not resurrected from their graves; they did not descend down from haven. Moses and Elijah ("Elias" in the King James Version) were seen with Christ and then were gone, leaving only Christ. Vision (Greek—*horama*) is used in the New Testament twelve times, and in the King James Version it is always translated "vision" except in Acts 7:31 where it is translated "the sight." This is not the Greek word "optasia" that is also translated "vision" in 2 Corinthians 12:1.

1. *"Tell the **vision** (Greek—*horama*) to no man"* Matthew 17:9.
2. *"He wondered at the **sight** (Greek—*horama*)"* Acts 7:31.
3. *"To him said the Lord in a **vision** (Greek—*horama*)"* Acts 9:10.
4. *"And has seen in a **vision** (Greek—*horama*) a man"* Acts 9:12.
5. *"He saw in a **vision** (Greek—*horama*)"* Acts 10:3.
6. *"What this **vision** (Greek—*horama*) which he had seen might mean"* Acts 10:17.
7. *"While Peter thought on the **vision** (Greek—*horama*)"* Acts 10:19.
8. *"And in a trance I saw a **vision** (Greek—*horama*)"* Acts 11:5.
9. *"But thought he was seeing a **vision** (Greek—*horama*)"* Acts 12:9.
10. *"A **vision** (Greek—*horama*) appeared to Paul in the night"* Acts 16:9.
11. *"And after he had seen the **vision** (Greek—*horama*)"* Acts 16:10.
12. *"To Paul in the night by a **vision** (Greek—*horama*)"* Acts 18:9.

**If this were a vision, no argument can be taken from it for the existence of disembodied souls, for Moses and Elijah were only seen in a vision. Those who**

believe in unconditional immortality **MUST** reinterpret this into being a soul that was alive in Heaven and came back from Heaven to earth, and that:

- Despite the fact that Christ said no man had ascended to Heaven, Moses and Elijah had ascended to Heaven, and descended back to earth for the transfiguration.
- Despite the fact that nothing is said about where Moses and Elijah were before the vision or after it.
- Despite the fact that nothing is said about them having come down from Heaven. That they were in Heaven must be added to what is said, if not added it would not prove anything about a soul, or anything about where that soul had been.

They must say to Christ, "No it is not a vision of Moses, but the real Moses has been alive in Heaven and came back from Heaven." **It is not said or implied that Moses was in Heaven and came back to earth, or that he was alive anywhere without the resurrection.** Visions were common in the Old Testament and were not used to prove anyone has an immortal something in them that is not subject to death.

**A RESURRECTION:** (1) If Moses and Elijah were really there, then Matthew was wrong when he called it a vision. (2) If it had been a resurrection, then it would have been a resurrection like Lazarus and other resurrections in the Bible, then it would prove Moses was really dead before this resurrection, it would prove Moses was not alive in Heaven, or alive any place; it would prove that Moses had to be resurrected from the dead before he could be seen by these disciples. If Moses had been alive and immortal, he would have been brought back from Heaven; he would not have needed to be raised from the dead. For this passage to teach a person now has an *"immaterial, invisible part of man"* it must be proved both (1) that this was not a vision (2) and neither was it a resurrection of the dead Moses, but that it was a bringing back of the living Moses from Heaven. Would the apostles be able to see an *"immaterial, invisible"* disembodied spirits that had no human body? It had to be a vision or a resurrection for the apostles to be able to see them. If Moses was alive in the flesh when the apostles saw him, he had to be brought back from the dead just as Lazarus and others were. All resurrections in the Bible, other than of Christ, were only temporary restoring of the earthly life, to be a life just as it was before death, and those who were raised from the dead did not put on immortality as those in Christ will at the resurrection (1 Corinthians 15:50-54). Just as Lazarus was brought back in his earthly body to a mortal life, Moses would have been resurrected back to a mortal life, and was still in a mortal body, and was not like the resurrection of Christ, or like the resurrection of the saved at the coming of Christ. **All the temporary resurrections were all raised mortals subject to death, and they all died again. Not one of them is still alive today. Not one of them was raised immortal.** In any of these temporary resurrections, not one thing is said about what will be after our death or after the resurrection. If God raised one or ten thousand back to an earthly body that is mortal, it would not effect the resurrection of all at the

coming of Christ and would not in any way prove something in person is now mortal or immortal. These earthly resurrections of mortal bodies say nothing about the resurrection at the coming of Christ when the saved will put on immortality. From the resurrections of Lazarus and others back to the mortal earthly body, if there were no other revelation about the resurrection we would not know anything about those in Christ that are going to be raised immortal on the Resurrection Day.

Summary: **Either way**, if the transfiguration were a resurrection or a vision, it does not prove that a person is now mortal or immortal. The reason for this vision or resurrection was to show that we are not to hear the law and the prophets, but to *"hear you him."* Christ is now the one who has *"All authority"* (Matthew 28:18) not Moses. **How can death be changed to life in Heaven without a resurrection?**

**THE DEATH OF LAZARUS:** In John 11 is the account of the death of Lazarus and his restoration to life on this earth to the same mortal person that he was before his death, a mortal person that would die just as all mortal persons will. When Jesus arrived, the sister of Lazarus said, *"Lord, if You had been here, my brother had not died."* Lazarus was really dead; her grief was real. Jesus did not comfort her by saying her brother was a good person, and he was now alive and happy in Heaven with other saints and angels, and he would never again have pain, and he was much better off than when he was in this world, but He was going to take Lazarus out of Heaven and bring him back to this world; this is the way of today's theology, but it is not found in the Bible. His reply was, *"Your brother shall rise again."* Martha declared her faith in the resurrection as was taught by Jesus by saying, *"I know that he shall rise again in the resurrection at the last day"* showing she did not believe he was then alive and in Heaven. There is not a word in this passage about Plato's immortal soul; it was Lazarus that was dead, and it was Lazarus that was raised from the dead; Lazarus was not partly dead and partly alive, he was dead and was resurrected to the same life he did have before he died.

Paul says those in Christ who have fallen asleep have perished if the dead are not raised (1 Corinthians 15:14-20). If they were forever alive in Heaven, they would not have perished even if there never were a resurrection. Today's teaching is not found in the Bible, and makes a lie of the Biblical teaching. Those who have *"fallen asleep in Christ"* will be asleep unto the resurrection, and without it they will forever be asleep. *"And this is the will of him that sent me, that of all that which he has given me I should lose nothing, but should raise it up at the last day"* (John 6:39). God could not have told us any clearer where we will be after death. **In many churches Plato's philosophy of an immortal soul that can never be dead has replaced the Bible teaching of the resurrection of the dead at the coming of Christ.**

**MANY BODIES OF THE SAINTS:** In Matthew 27:52 the resurrection of **many earthly bodies** of some of the saints is sometimes used to prove the existence of

immaterial entities despite the fact that it says nothing of immortality, or says nothing of deathless souls that could not be resurrected from the dead.

- They were asleep before this resurrection, before *"the tombs were opened,"* they were not in Heaven, not in Hell, or not in Abraham's bosom. **They came from the tombs, not from Heaven.** Coming from the tombs is positive proof that they were not alive in Heaven and that it was earthly bodies that was resurrected, not immortal souls or spirits.
- Nothing is said about these *"bodies"* ascending to Heaven after they were resurrected.
- This says, *"The tombs were opened"* and bodies came out of the graves, it says nothing about immortal souls that according to the immortal soul doctrine would not have been in the tombs, but they would have to come from Heaven or Hell.
- Their resurrection was not unto eternal life, this was before the resurrection of Christ who was the *"first fruits"* (1 Corinthians 15:20). If this or any resurrection were to eternal life in Heaven Christ would not have been the *"first fruits."*
- This was before any one will put on immortality (1 Corinthians 15:54; Romans 2:7). These resurrected saints were earthly being with *"bodies"* that were seen just as Lazarus was, not immortal, immaterial, invisible souls or spirits.

**(8). GOD WILL BRING WITH CHRIST,** 1 Thessalonians 4:14-17: This is often used to prove the souls that were in those who have died are now in Heaven, and Christ will bring these souls back when He comes for the judgment. This passage is about the resurrection at the coming of Christ, and it says not a word about an *"immaterial, invisible part of man"* that is now alive before the resurrection, and it says nothing about a place called Hell. *"For if we believe that Jesus died and rose again, even so them also that fallen asleep (are dead) in Jesus will God bring with him. For this we say unto you by the word of the Lord, that we that are alive, that are left unto the coming of the Lord, shall in no wise precede (go before) them that are fallen asleep"* New American Standard Version.

- *"God will bring them to life with Jesus"* New English Bible.
- *"So too will God bring those who died"* The Revised English Bible.
- *"God will raise with Jesus those who have died"* New Century Version.
- *"God will bring back to life with Jesus all the Christian who have died"* The Message.
- *"God will bring forth with him from the dead also those who have fallen sleep believing in him"* New American Bible.

There are three points in 1 Thessalonians 4:14-17.

**(1). Second coming of Christ:** *"The Lord himself shall descend from heaven, with a shout, with the voice of the archangel, and with the trump of God."*

**(2). Resurrection of the dead in Christ:** The **dead** in Christ, those that are in their graves shall **rise, be resurrected** first, not souls that are alive in Heaven or any other place returning to earth.

**(3). Christians who will be living when Christ returns:** Then we that are alive at the time Christ descends, *"that are left, shall together with them be caught up in the clouds, to meet the Lord in the air: and so shall we ever be with the Lord"* (1 Thessalonians 4:16-17). **Both** the dead in Christ and the saved who are alive when He comes shall together be caught up from the earth to the clouds. Not as some say,

that we that are alive shall be caught up to meet Christ, and the souls that had been in the dead persons He is to bring from Heaven with Him, souls that would not be asleep if they were already in Heaven.

- This passage is a plain statement that there will be a resurrection, and it is opposed to the theory that no one is really dead. Both cannot be true. It is clearly said that they "are asleep" not awake in Heaven. "And I will **raise him up at the last day**" (John 6:40).
- "Them also that are fallen asleep," is changed to be souls that some believe Christ will bring with Him from Heaven "asleep" in Heaven?

"The dead in Christ **shall rise first.**" Those who are asleep will wake up first.

- **How could they wake up if they are not asleep?**
- **How could they rise from the dead if they are not dead?**
- **How could they meet the Lord in the air if they were coming with Him from Heaven?**

Paul says nothing about immortal souls, but persons.

1. Persons "who are asleep in Christ." Believers that are dead.
2. And persons "that are alive" when Christ comes. Believer that will be alive at the second coming.

Those who believe we have an "immaterial, invisible part of man" that is now immortal take the resurrection out of this passage and makes it be about:

1. All the souls that are now alive (not asleep) in Heaven with Christ shall come with Him from Heaven.
2. And souls that are in "we that are alive" when Christ comes, shall meet souls in the air as they come back from Heaven. **There will be no resurrection for no one's soul would be dead, not souls now living in Heaven, or souls that are in the saints that will be alive on earth when Christ returns. If you believe in an immortal soul there is no reason for a resurrection and no room for it.**

"In my Father's house are many mansions; if it were not so, I would have told you; for I go to prepare a place for you. And if I go and prepare a place for you, **I come again, and will receive you unto Myself that where I am, there you may be also**" (John 14:2-3). Those who teach we have a soul that goes directly to Heaven at death believe that souls are now in the place where Christ has gone to prepare before He comes to receive them, and have made the coming of Christ, the resurrection, and the judgment useless. Those who preach at funerals often say our loved ones are now with the Lord in Heaven, even those that teach that it is only a soul, not the person, not our loved ones that are in Heaven. This is a contradiction of Paul's detailed account of what will happen at the resurrection.

Two views:

1. The dead in Christ are now in Heaven, and God will bring them back to earth with Christ.
2. God will bring those who have fallen asleep in Christ with Christ when He returns to Heaven after the judgment.

The first view makes many problems.

(1). At the time Paul wrote this the dead Christians were "asleep in Christ," not in Heaven. "Concerning them that fall asleep...even so them also that are fallen asleep in Jesus" (1 Thessalonians 4:13-14). "Then they also that fallen asleep in Christ have perished" (1 Corinthians 15:18); not that they had merely perished for a time but that they had perished forever if there were

no resurrection. There would be no need to sorrow for the dead in Christ if they are alive in Heaven; they should have been rejoicing for their loved ones would be in a much better place and be with Jesus. The fact that those who have fallen asleep in Christ have perished if there is no resurrection clearly states (1) that they are not in Heaven before the resurrection, (2) that life after death is completely dependent on the resurrection (3) and that no one will be alive in Heaven before the resurrection of the dead. Many gospel preachers who say they speak only where the Bible speaks and are silent where it is silent, when they teach the dead in Christ are now in Heaven clearly are speaking the opposite of the Bible. *"In Christ shall all be made alive. But each in his own order: Christ the first fruits, **then they that are Christ's at his coming**"* (1 Corinthians 15:22-23). The victory over death is not instantly at death (1 Corinthians 15:54), but at the resurrection of the dead. The *"dead in Christ"* shall rise at the coming of Christ, not at death, (1 Thessalonians 4:16).

(2). When *"those who are asleep"* is used to prove a person has an immortal soul, **then it would prove the immortal soul is asleep, and they prove "soul sleeping,"** which they falsely accuse those of believing who do not believe a person has an immaterial invisible something some where inside of them. It is the whole person that is asleep unto the whole person wakes up at the Resurrection, not an immaterial something called a "soul" that is in a person that is not sleeping souls that will wake up at the resurrection.

Although "soul sleeping" and "annihilation" are often confused and thought to be the same, **the two are totally different.**

**"SOUL SLEEPING"** is the belief that a person **now** has an invisible, deathless, immaterial something living in them that will never die, but from the death of the body unto the resurrection that immortal immaterial something that is in a person is "asleep," not "annihilated," and only this sleeping immortal, no substance something that is in a person, not the person, will awake at the judgment to eternal life in Heaven or Hell.

**ANNIHILATION** is the belief that *"the wages of sin is death,"* not eternal life in torment; after the second death (called annihilation) no part of a person is asleep; no part of a person will ever wake up. Annihilation is an unbiblical way of saying *"the wages of sin is death,"* that all of a person will be annihilated after the judgment. **Those who believe "The wages of sin is death" do not believe in "soul sleeping" although they are often falsely accused of it.** It is the person that is asleep from death unto the resurrection, and not an immaterial soul that according to those that teach this doctrine of a deathless no substance something in a person that cannot be asleep.

If, as many that believe in the immortal soul doctrine teach, that at death it is the person that dies, but a soul never dies, and it is a soul only that will ever be in Heaven or Hell, then this doctrine makes the person go out of existence at death, and only an immaterial, invisible, no substance soul will ever exist after the death of the person. It is not you that will be in Heaven, but something in you that you cannot see, something that you know nothing about, not what it thinks, not what it looks like, something that you do not now know anything about and you never will know any

thing about it, something that if you were not told that it were there then you could not know if it is in you, or know that this something even exist; the Bible tells you nothing about what a soul really is.

We are told that we "have a soul." I "have a dog," but the dog is not me, it something I have that is not me. If I "have a soul" that soul would not be me but something I have that is not me. I know what a dog is, but what is this something that I could not know I have without being told that I have it? The only answer I am given is that it is an "Immaterial, invisible, something that has no substance that is in me," but I cannot tell that it is there, or if it is not there, that only this something that I have to be told that I have it in me is what will be in Heaven or Hell.

The second view solves these problems.

- Those persons who are "*asleep in Christ*" are asleep waiting for the return of Christ and the resurrection.
- Makes the resurrection necessary.
- After the judgment when Christ returns to Heaven, those in Christ will go with Him. "*We that are alive, that are left, shall together with them be caught up in the clouds, to meet the Lord in the air: and so shall we ever be with the Lord*" (1 Thessalonians 4:17). **God will bring (both those who are asleep in Christ and those who are alive) with Christ when Christ returns to Heaven after the resurrection and judgment.**

**Christ will be coming from Heaven with His "*holy ones*," the angels, not dead saints that are not dead.** "*Behold, the Lord comes with many thousands of His holy (hagios) ones*" (Jude 14 New American Standard Version). "*Saints*" in the King James Version is from "hagios," which is the same word that is translated "holy" 93 times in the "*Holy (hagios) Spirit*." **Those who come with Christ from Heaven are the holy angels, not those who are asleep in Christ.** "*When the Son of Man shall come in his glory, and all the holy (hagios) angels with Him*" (Matthew 25:31, King James Version). "*When he comes in the glory of his father with the holy (hagios) angels*" (Mark 8:38). "*For the Lord himself shall descend from heaven, with a shout, with the voice of the archangel*" (1 Thessalonians 4:16). "*The Son of man shall send forth his angels*" (Matthew 13:41). "*At the coming of our Lord Jesus with all His saints (hagios—holy)*" (1 Thessalonians 3:13), "*holy ones*" New International Version; both Jude 14 and 1 Thessalonians 3:13 use "hagios," not "saints."

**(9). "EVERYONE WHO LIVES AND BELIEVES IN ME SHALL NEVER DIE"**  
John 11:26: This passage is used to prove that all men now have an immortal "*immaterial, invisible part of man*" (W. E. Vine) that can never die, but when it is so used, it makes a problem. **Christ is clearly saying ONLY those that believe on Him "*shall never die*;" therefore, those that do not believe on Him SHALL DIE.** If all have immortality from birth and can never die, what was He saying? This passage makes "*never die*" be conditional on believing on Christ, not on a never dying "*immaterial, invisible part of man*" that is read into it. It is used to prove all unconditionally have an immortal soul and that soul can never die, even a soul in anyone that does not believe on Christ will never die. Those who believe on Him die a physical death, just as those who do not believe on Him. In what way do those who

believe never die? Their name is in the book of life, and there will be a resurrection when they will *"put on immortality"* (1 Corinthians 15:54). Their resurrection and their eternal life are so sure that it is counted as if they now have it. They will not die the second death which all that do not believe will die.

Summary: According to today's theology, when this is read, as many read it, "He that has the Son has an immortal soul in him that shall never die," then it must also be read, "He that has not the Son has an immortal soul that shall never die," for today's theology says all now have an immortal soul in them, and it shall never die if they believe, or if they do not believe. **Even though endless life and never dying are conditional on believing Christ, theology says not so, all souls are now immortal, and we have souls that are now eternal life and can never die, even souls that are in those that believe not on Christ "shall never die."**

**(10) INNER MAN AND OUTER MAN:** *"Therefore we do not lose heart, but though our outer man is decaying, yet our inner man is being renewed day by day"* (2 Corinthians 4:16); *"Though outwardly we are wasting away, yet inwardly we are being renewed day by day"* New International Version. Paul is simply saying the inner spiritual life of a Christian is renewed daily even though the body is growing old, is perishing as we age. New Christians are babes in Christ (1 Peter 2:2; 1 Corinthians 3:1, but they grow and *"leaving the doctrine of the first principles of Christ, let us press on unto perfection"* (Hebrews 6:1, also Ephesians 3:26-17; Galatians 2:20). A Christian must grow stronger in the Lord even though the body is dying; a new Christian may have a young body and be a baby in Christ, but as the years pass he or she will have a body that is decaying, but they will be becoming a mature Christian. Man is used in the sense of person; to be politically correct we would have to say, "Our outer he or she is decaying, yet our inner he or she is being renewed day by day." If, as we are told, the *"outer man"* is the person, and the *"inner man"* is a soul, it would make a soul be a totally separate from the he or she (persons), than the outer he or she would be us (the outer man or person) that is dying, and another person (the inner man or person—soul) that is growing. They must be badly in need of something to prove their immortal soul to make the *"inner man"* be another already immortal he or she that needs to be renewed daily. If the *"inner man"* were a soul, as this passage is used to prove, what would it mean to renew an immortal soul? Would it be to make it more immortal, or to a make a saved soul more saved? Would it make a soul be a baby soul at the birth of the person, but that soul would grow, be *"renewed day by day,"* and become a mature soul?

**(11) LED CAPTIVITY CAPTIVE:** *"When he ascended on high, he led captivity captive, and give gifts unto man"* (Ephesians 4:8). This is speaking of when Christ ascended back to Heaven after His resurrection; the Christ that came down to earth lived among men is the same Christ that ascended back to Heaven. When He ascended the gifts He give to men were: (1) Some to be apostles, (2) some to be

prophets, (3) some to be evangelists, (4) some to be pastors and teachers (Ephesians 4:11-16). This passage says:

- Nothing about the time from the death of Christ unto His resurrection. Nothing about anything He did or did not do in the three days He was in the grave.
- Nothing about Christ preaching to anyone, or teaching anyone in the three days from His death to His resurrection or any other time.
- Nothing about Hell. Does anyone think Hell was led captivity?
- Nothing about people or souls that were in captive in Hell or hades or any other place in the three days Christ was in the grave.

Whatever this is saying Christ did, it is saying He did it when He ascended back to Heaven, not when He was in the grave. It was death that was led captivity, death that up to that time had all in its power with no hope of any life after death.

**(12) WHAT IS ETERNAL? ENDLESSLY BEING TORMENTED BY GOD or ENDLESS DEATH? Matthew 25:46.** *“Eternal punishment”* and *“eternal life”* are not the same thing. *“Punishment”* does not mean *“life.”* If *“eternal punishment”* were *“eternal life”* then both would *“go away into eternal life.”* You either receive punishment or life, not an endless life of punishment by God in one place, or endless life of reward in another place.

The argument made often is that the **punishment** must last as long as the **life**, but this does not say what the punishment is. It is a question of whether the punishment is **life** with endless torment by God, or endless **death**; the question is not the duration of the punishment but the nature of the punishment, whether the punishment is endless life being tormented by God, or whether the punishment is endless death. It is **supposed** by many that punishment can only be endless conscious suffering by being tormented by God, and their conditioning makes them read an endless life of torment into it although we are told repeatedly that punishment will be death, destruction, perish, die, lost, etc.; but never that the punishment will be an endless life being tormented by God. Nothing could be a more eternal punishment than a death from which there will never be a resurrection. There are many kinds of punishment, but from Matthew 25 all we can say is that there will be punishment, but nothing more or less than punishment. To say Matthew 25 says where or what the punishment will be is to say more than it says; therefore, it is adding to what God said. *“Kolasis”* simply means punishment, whatever the punishment is, whether the punishment is (1) an eternal life being tormented by God, (2) eternal death, (3) or some kind of punishment that is not defined. **To know what the punishment will be we must go to other passages; to say as many do that the punishment in this passage is being eternally torment by God, it is undeniable that when *“eternal punishment”* is changed to *“eternal life”* to make this passage teach God will eternally torment the souls that at one time has been in lost persons before the death of the persons is both changing and adding to it, and is saying what is not said in it.** God's word must say what the

punishment is, and it nowhere says God will be tormenting people, or souls, or spirits forever. His word says, "*The wages of sin is death,*" not eternal life with torment. The second death is death, not a second life that will be lived being perpetual—tormented by God; death is the opposite of life, a dead person is not alive. **The life that God gives to both mankind and animals is a priceless gift; after the judgment for the lost to have life forever taken from them by the second death is the most terrible punishment possible; how can anyone say or believe death is not a dreadful, awful punishment; death is an endless punishment that deprives of the wonderful life with God throughout all the endless number of ages to come.**

- The lost will have eternal punishment (Matthew 25:46).
- Eternal destruction is eternal punishment (2 Thessalonians 1:9). Any kind of life, in Heaven, Hell, or anyplace is not eternal destruction.
- There is no resurrection from the second death (Revelation 21:8); therefore, the second death is eternal punishment; death is not life, death is punishment, a death from which there is no resurrection is eternal punishment.

The Greek word, *kelasis*, which is translated "punishment" in Matthew 25:46 is used only one other time, 1 John 4:18, which is certainly not speaking of God endlessly tormenting a deathless soul.

- If a person were restored to life after one year—their punishment would only be for one year. If a person were restored to life after one hundred years—their punishment would only be for one hundred years.
- **If a person were never restored to life—their punishment would be endless, eternal punishment; the punishment will last as long as the death, unless a person was restored to life their punishment would be eternal punishment, their death would be just as eternal as the life of those in Heaven is eternal life.**

Both the punishment and the life are eternal, the question is not whether the punishment is eternal, but WHAT is the punishment. Is it life or death? The Scripture clearly says that the punishment is death, the wages of sin (Romans 6:23). Paul clearly says what the everlasting punishment is, "*Even eternal destruction*" (2 Thessalonians 1:9). Christ contrasts "*eternal life*" for the saved with "*eternal punishment*" for the lost. "*Life*" — "*eternal life*" is promised to the saved repeatedly (See chapter two: **Life and Death**), but life is never promised to the lost. It will be "*death*" for them (Romans 6:23; James 1:15). "*They that have done good, unto the resurrection of life; and they that have done evil, unto the resurrection of judgment*" (John 5:29), not to a resurrection of eternal life for those that have done evil. In Revelation 21:3-8 the saved are given the fountain of the water of life freely, but the lost shall have their part in the lake of fire which is the second death, life for the saved, death (not eternal life in torment) for the lost. Christ said, "*If a man abide not in me, he is cast forth as a branch, and they gather them, and cast them into the fire, and they are burnt*" (John 15:6). **The punishment is not to be forever dying, or is not forever living separated from God; the punishment is forever being dead.**

**The punishment for sin is death (Roman 6:23; James 1:15), and the punishment of death is just as eternal as the life.**

Those that teach eternal torment by God must assume these things:

- (1). Must assume there is an immortal soul.
- (2). Must assume that the punishment is endless torment by God.
- (3). Must assume that there is a Hell where God will forever torment the souls that wee in the lost.

Punishment can have many forms, but because of the conditioning of some they can see only fire and torment in Hell for a deathless soul. We do not torment our children when we punish them do we? The concept of Hell is not from the Bible. The name or the place is not in it, and unto it is clearly shown that there shall be such a place, it cannot be said that this punishment is going to be eternal life in "Hell;" or shown that *"The wages of sin"* is not death, or be shown that there will be a resurrection to any kind of life anyplace after the second death. After the judgment there is much said about the saved; they will be in the image of Christ; they will be immortal and have incorruption. But, there is nothing said about the lost, not what image they will have, not where they will be, or anything at all except that they will be dead (the second death). There is not a passage in the Bible that says the lost will be raised immortal or imperishable, but many passages that say the lost will be as stubble, tares, dry branches, will be destroyed. Those who read the Bible with their Hell fire and damnation glasses on see Hell in Matthew 25:46, and on every page of the Bible; they tell us annihilation would be a deliverance from eternal torment. **FIRST:** it has not been proved that there is to be eternal torment by God to be delivered from. **SECOND:** it must deny that God said the punishment is to be death. Death must be denied to exist.

Matthew 25:46 may be the #1 proof text for Hell.

- **The name Hell is not in it.**
- **Today's concept of Hell, a place after the judgment where God will cruelly torment forever is not in it.**
- **It says that the lost will have a punishment that will be forever, but nothing is said about what the punishment will be or where it will be, yet it is continuously misused to teach both what the punishment will be (eternal torment), and where the punishment will be (in Hell).**

Before anyone could possibly see "Hell" in this passage:

1. A place called "Hell" must be assumed.
2. Then accepted as a fact.
3. Then God must be made into the most cruel, sadistic, and fiendish being there is, far surpassing even Satan in cruelty.

There is not one word in Matthew 25:46 about where or what the punishment will be. Other texts say it is death, perish, destroyed, lost, and end, but never that the punishment is eternal torment after the Judgment Day is over. To teach that Matthew

25:46 says the punishment is an eternal life of torment in Hell, as many do, is adding to it.

**WHAT?** What the punishment will be, that it will be eternal torment by God in "Hell" is added.

**WHERE?** Where the punishment will be is added. Both the place and the name of the place are added to the Bible by deliberate mistranslating.

- Both the "what" and the "where" were added by many in the reformation movement that say they do not add to the Bible or take away from it. Many are not content with what Jesus says, not content with eternal punishment, they change it to eternal torment then add the place where the torment will be, and then add the name of the place they called Hell. Only by changing eternal punishment to eternal torment in Hell can they make this passage say what they want it to say.
- "These shall go away into **eternal punishment**" (Matthew 25:46).
- "Who shall suffer **punishment**, even **eternal destruction**" (2 Thessalonians 1:9).
  - How could it be said any clearer that eternal punishment is eternal destruction, not eternal torment?

Some traditionalists say annihilation (death) is not punishment. They believe that "by no stretch of the imagination can the punishment spoken of in Matthew 25:46 be defined as an end of consciousness, for if actual suffering is lacking, then so is punishment." To say death would not be eternal punishment because there is no eternal consciousness torment is not valid for saying punishment must be torment, it simply begs the whole question. Where does Matthew 25:46 say anything about suffering; (1) the punishment must be **changed** to eternal suffering (2) and a place **added** to have anyone suffering in Hell. If death row is not punishment, then why is the death sentence the worse punishment a person can get, for worse than life in prison; why do we call it "capital punishment" (meaning the worst possible punishment that is possible if death is not punishment)? Why is being on death row considered by those on it to be in the worst part of a prison; why is the death penalty strongly opposed as being too cruel in this country, but the same persons say death is too mild a punishment for sinners at the Judgment Day? **What would those on death row say if someone told them death is not a punishment?** Throughout all of history, death has been thought of as being the worst punishment there is. Why would most on death row love to get off it, and have the punishment of life in prison instead of the punishment of death? They are told they are not fit to live, and their punishment is to be death. For the sinner to stand before God on the Judgment Day and be told he is not fit to live, and he or she will be punished with the second death is the worst kind of punishment. Most fear death more than pain, and they will do all they can to live a little longer even if it is in pain. Life is our most precious possession; death is the worse punishment because it takes everything from a person and deprives of all the life and joy a person would have had, and the second death will deprive of endless life and joy in Heaven, of ceaseless ages of joy beyond any joy we can now even dream of; **it is an infinite punishment in that it takes an infinite amount of life and joy from a person.** We cannot vision all the endless joy

that will be in Heaven; therefore, we cannot know how much death will take from them. It is much more than we can know before the judgment. **Death is a much greater punishment than any person can now imagine, and the second death will be an eternal punishment. Those who teach Hell must make them selves and all others believe death is not a punishment; therefore, there must be endless life in Hell for a soul that is now in you with that soul being tormented by God.** When a lost person comes to the judgment, he may see that the saved will have an eternal life of joy and bliss in a place of indescribable glory and to know that all this could have been his, but for him there will be only the blackness and darkness of nothing. And some say this is not punishment! To say death is not punishment, and there is no punishment if there is no torment of a consciousness soul is to make a statement that all thinking persons know is not the truth.

- Whatever a court awards for crime is punishment, whether it is a fine, imprisonment for a night, imprisonment for a lifetime, stripes, or death.
- Whatever God awards for sin is punishment, whether it is a fine, imprisonment for a night, or imprisonment for a lifetime, stripes, or death.

The opposite of life is death. If the reward for those on the right hand side is *life*, neither those on the right hand side nor those on the left could already have eternal *life*, if they did, then *life* could not be given to either one. To say Christ is promising *life* to those on the right side means those on neither side already had endless *life* before the promise. To have promised *life* to those that already had endless *life* would be a mean—less promise.

Hebrew 6:2, “*Of the teaching...of eternal judgment.*” The same kind of reasoning which insists upon the continuance of the infliction throughout eternity makes “*eternal judgment*” be a judging that will never end, makes God be forever judging lost mankind.

FRED THOMPSON: “Destruction is the thing most feared in this life; surely to be totally wiped off the scene is an awful punishment,” page 352, “What the Bible Says about Heaven and Hell,” College Press, 1988.

**GOD’S PUNISHMENT IN THE OLD TESTAMENT:** Through out the Old Testament the worst punishment was always death, never torment. If, as the argument is that God causing the lost to be eternally suffering is the only form of punishment, that annihilation would not be punishment, the Old Testament writers did not seem to know that death would not be punishment. A few of the many times death is said to be punishment in the Old Testament, Exodus 21:12; 21:14; 21:15; 21:16; 21:17; 21:23; 21:29; Leviticus 20:2; 20:9; 20:10; 20:11; 20:12; 20:13; 20:14; 20:15; 20:16; 20:27; Genesis 2:17; Ezekiel 18:4; 18:20. In none of these punishment does not implies consciousness or torment.

Wayne Jackson in the “Christian Courier” said, “Punishment implies consciousness. It would be absurd to describe those who no longer exist as being ‘punished.’” According to him, those who get “death” for killing a person would not be

punished. According to him Paul was wrong when he said, "*The wages of sin is death*" (Romans 6:23); according to him "*The wages of sin*" cannot be "*death*" for in "*death*" there is no consciousness, and it would be absurd to say, "*The wages of sin is death.*" The argument that death is not punishment is nothing but a desperate attempt to change death to life, to change, "*The wages of sin is death*" to "*the wages of sin is an endless life of consciousness suffering, an endless life of being tormented by God.*"

Summary: **Whatever the punishment is in Matthew 25:46, it is the same punishment as** Romans 6:16; 6:23; 8:6; Revelation 21:8; James 5:22; 2 Peter 2:1; 2:6; 3:7; Philippians 1:28; 3:19; 2 Corinthians 7:10; 2 Thessalonians 1:7-9; Matthew 3:12; 13:40; John 3:16, etc. The Bible does not teach one kind of punishment in one verse and then change it to a very different kind of punishment in another verse. It does not teach the punishment is everlasting life with torment in one verse and death in another verse. It comes down to the question of,

- Is the wages of sin death, or is the wages of sin everlasting life being tormented by God?
- Is the second death a death, or is the second death everlasting life?
- Did God really mean "the wages of sin is eternal life with torment," and He mistakenly said, "*The wages of sin is death?*"

**A passage that does not say what the punishment is cannot override the many passages that do say what it is. From Matthew 25:46 alone, no one can say what the punishment will be. Just that it will be after the judgment and that whatever it is it will be without end. The only way to know what is the punishment of Matthew 25:46 is to go to other passages that do say how God is going to punish the lost. THAT A PASSAGE WHICH DOES NOT SAY WHAT THE PUNISHMENT WILL BE IS THE #1 PROOF TEXT FOR HELL SHOWS THE WEAKNESS OF THE PROOF. Can anyone deny that they are going beyond what the Bible says when they say what the punishment of Matthew 25:56 will be, and deny that they are adding eternal life in Hell when it is not there?**

**Is the only difference only a difference in what the punishment will be?** Robert A. Peterson, a strong believer in Hell, says, the Old Testament judgments, the Flood, the destruction of Sodom, and Gomorrah, the Egyptian plagues and the crossing of the Red Sea, the captivities of Israel **was ALL the loss of human life** (page 23-24 of "Hell On Trial"). Then on page 26, he says the punishments described in them are consistently earthly and temporal, resulting in physical death. **None of these passages speak of life after death or eternal destinies**, but he says Annihilationist err, for their belief would entail cessation of existence at death, not the resurrection and punishment of the wicked, "Hell On Trial" P & R Publishing. The New Testament used them as a type of God's judgment after the resurrection; Peterson on page 26 says they resulted in physical death. If the result of the judgment is not **death**, but an everlasting **life** of torment, then the types are not true

for the types of the Old Testament, for the Old Testament does not show **eternal life** with punishment; but they would be true if **death** is the punishment. The New Testament writers used the Old Testament types to show the destruction of (death), not the torment of the lost. He errs in that he does not give God the power to raise the dead for judgment and punishment if the punishment is to be death; he takes away God's power to raise the dead if they are dead. God will raise and judge the dead, and just as His judgments in the Old Testament resulted "in death" (Peterson), so will His judgment at the resurrection be a second death. His statement that Annihilationist err because they believe the first death to be the end of those not in Christ, and that the lost will not be raised for judgment may possibly be true of some Annihilationist (none that I know of), but it is definitely not true of most; it is an outright lie to say Annihilationist do not believe the lost will be resurrected for judgment; most, if not all believe the Bible teaching that all the dead will be raised for the judgment at the second coming of Christ, then for those not in Christ there will be the second death, an eternal death from which there will never be a resurrection. Did Robert A. Peterson just make a make-believe man of hay or stubble so that he could pull down his stubble Annihilationist? **The only difference is in what the punishment will be after the judgment.** Believers in Hell believe the punishment, "*The wages of sin is death*" will not be death but will be "everlasting life with torment." Those who believe in Hell often argue as if they think that those who oppose Hell do not believe in the resurrection, the judgment, or punishment. They know that if Annihilationist do believe in the resurrection, judgment and punishment, they have lost much of their argument, **for if the dead are all raised for judgment then the only question is after the judgment what will the punishment be, and there is no question that the Bible says "*the wages of sin is death.*"** In much of his book he does as many, he assumes that those who do not believe in "Hell" do not believe the lost will be raised for judgment, and he assumes that there is a Hell, and assumes that Hell is its name; then he unjustly puts this name into the mouth of Christ.

**A more basic question than what the punishment will be after the resurrection is, "What is the resurrection?" "Will the resurrection be a real resurrection of the dead?"** If he is right, that there is that something in a person that **NOW** has immortality, and this something in a person is now alive, and that there is no death for this it, then there cannot be a resurrection for whatever this deathless soul is, and his belief makes him be the one that does not believe in the resurrection that he falsely says those he calls Annihilationist do believe in. What he falsely calls the resurrection would only be a bringing of those souls that are alive in Heaven, or souls that are alive in Hell back to earth for a second judgment, or will the resurrection be a real resurrection, a real raising the dead that are really dead and bringing them back to life? On page 68 Peterson says God did not send his Son into

the world to condemn the lost, but to rescue them from Hell. This is a typical example of the way Hell is added to the Bible. The Bible is changed to read the way they want it to read and Hell is added where it is not. How could he know the lost shall be rescued from Hell? Does he have a revelation that is not in the Bible? **There is no revelation in the Bible that says deathless souls are rescued from Hell, but there is much revelation that says lost persons are saved from death.** *"Let him know that he who converts a sinner from the error of his way shall save a soul (psukee—life) from death"* (James 5:20). Salvation is from death, the wages of sin (Romans 6:23), not salvation from an everlasting life of being tormented by God. *"God gave unto us eternal life, and this life is in his Son. He that has the Son has the life; he that has not the Son of God has not the life"* (1 John 5:11-12).

E. D. SLOUGH, evangelist, church of Christ: "The word '**punishment**' is not a puzzling word; it is one of the most familiar terms in the English language. Do you know its meaning? Just think a moment and try to define it. The dictionary tells us it is the infliction of **penalty** for an offense. **Is it?** If the teacher tells the pupil she will 'punish' him a question would spring up in his mind, **what way?** Even the child knows there are many ways to punish. **Though our theologians, after losing sight of the definition of the word, at last give it but one idea, that of misery.** Cunning enough, indeed, to separate it from its primary meaning in the New Testament. As if death inflicted for sin was not a punishment. If it is a recompense of the some nature, **what is the nature, how severe?** The term punishment as a retaliation for offence, **never defines the nature of the infliction to be executes.** It only announces the fact that a judicial penalty is due, without revealing the severity of it. Punishment, retaliation, recompense, penalty, are synonymous words, and may be used interchangeably. So if the Lord had said, 'These shall go into everlasting recompense' or penalty, or retaliation, we would still be forced to seek other scriptures to learn **what kind of recompense is meant.** We are told there can be no punishment without pain. I deny the assertion. **I challenge the reader to search the Old Testament for the hundreds of instances where the infliction of death was the penalty for crimes.** And that it was inflicted to satisfy the offence regardless of the pain accompanying it. Punishment lasts so long as its results last, and where death has been administered for the satisfaction of crime; **the punishment continues till life is restored, and if never restored, it is an everlasting punishment.** Lost of property, loss of liberty, loss of life, may all be meted out to the transgressors under the label of punishment. And death as the capital punishment, legalized on the statutes of all civilized nations of the world, is the highest punishment man can inflict—or so recognized, —being the deprivation of life, the first source of all pleasures and enjoyments, and recognized as being forfeited for certain crimes." "The Indictment Of Eternal Torment—The Self—negation Of A Monstrous Doctrine," page 196—197, F. L. Rowe, Publisher, 1914. Free on the web at:

[www.robertwr.com/EternalTorment.htm](http://www.robertwr.com/EternalTorment.htm)

Summary: **There is no way that those who believe all are born immortal could really believe in the resurrection, or in the need for it. By teaching that all are born with an immortal something in them that can never die the resurrection is denied and made not possible. (1) A living soul that is now alive and will be alive when Christ comes (2) and the resurrection of those that are dead are not compatible; both cannot be true. Satan has done his work well.**

**ETERNAL: ETERNAL JUDGMENT** Hebrews 6:2: The judgment will be in one "day" at the second coming of Christ, and it is not being judged forever without end; it is a judgment in which the results will last for eternity. Eternal is not describing a judging that has no end. Eternal has reference to the result of the judgment, not to the act of judging. The judging will end, but its result will never end. The punishment is after the judging, the judging is not the punishment. Will it take God all eternity to do the judging? If so, He will never get to the punishment, it would require two eternities, one eternity that would never end for the judgment, and a second eternity for the punishment after the first eternity ended. Whatever the punishment is, if it is torment in Hell, or if it is death, it will not matter if God never gets past the judging. **It is the result of the judgment, an endlessly binding verdict that will never be changed; it is an eternal verdict, not an eternal judging.**

When a person goes before a judge, the judge is judging, when the judge gives his judgment—verdict the judging has stopped; after God judges on the Judgment Day His judging will stop, He will not be forever judging, but after His judging has ended His judgment will stand for eternity. The results of His judgment, not the judging, will be eternal.

**ETERNAL REDEMPTION** Hebrews 9:12, and **ETERNAL SALVATION** Hebrews 5:9: Not redemption, or a saving that goes on without end, but saving once that will be for eternity. The time of salvation ends. God will not be saving those in Heaven for eternity. **The redemption will not be going on forever, but the results of the redemption will be without an end.** On the Judgment Day those that are saved are forever saved, forever redeemed, not forever being redeemed; their salvation is without an end. Even those who believe in Hell believe those in Heaven are redeemed, not being eternally redeemed; and those they believe to be in Hell can never be redeemed.

**ETERNAL INHERITANCE** Hebrews 9:15: The saved will not be continuity inheriting life in Heaven, life will be inherited only one time and as a result of the inheritance the saved will have an endlessly home in Heaven, not endlessly inheriting.

**ETERNAL SIN** (Mark 3:29) is a sin, which will be committed in this lifetime, and not endless sinning that will be being committed through out all eternity without end in Hell after the judgment. **It is a sin that the result (death: the wages of sin) is a death from which there will never be a resurrection.**

**ETERNAL FIRE** (Used three times—Jude 7; Matthew 18:8; 25:41) is not a fire that is still burning Sodom and Gomorrah, and it will be burning these cities from now on, but the results of the fire, the total destruction of these cities will have no end. These cities are not still burning, but the results of the fire were their eternal destruction. **The fact that Sodom and Gomorrah suffered the vengeance of "eternal fire" shows that the results are eternal, not that the fire was eternal,**

**and not that it is still burning today, and not that it will be burning these cities for eternity.** The fire that destroyed Sodom has long since gone out, but their destruction remains and will always remain, and their eternal destruction is set forth as an example of "*eternal fire*" that will eternally destroy the wicked just as it eternally and completely destroyed these cities. **Although it is continuously used to prove "Hell fire," this fire was not in Hell, but it was a fire that was on this earth that could be seen by all that were in that place on earth; there is no reference in it to Hell, or to an eternal life of suffering in fire, or an immaterial soul that has no substance being eternally burnt by God with a literal fire; it has reference to "destroyed them that believed not" (Jude 5) just as Sodom was literally eternity destroyed, literally ceased to exist.**

The fire that will destroy the lost is eternal in the same sense that judgment is eternal (Hebrews 6:2). Once the judgment is over the judging will stop but the results will be endless, not an endless judging that will never end; once anything is completely destroyed the results will be endless, not God endless destroying of the lost that He will never complete; not God endless destroying of souls that cannot ever be destroyed.

**ETERNAL DESTRUCTION** 2 Thessalonians 1:9 and **ETERNAL PUNISHMENT** Matthew 25:46: Is this a destruction that will be bit by bit, but God will never be able to complete it? No. It is destruction that the results will be final and eternal; a destruction that never destroys would not be destruction for destruction would never take place if the destroying were never completed. An everlasting process of destroying would never be destruction. Death, the wages of sin, is eternal punishment, but not eternal punishing; the death will be a permanent death, not forever dying but never dead. Eternal destruction and eternal punishment are speaking of the permanent results of both, a destruction and a punishment that will last forever, and is not describing the duration of the destroying, that it will take forever; not describing a destruction that the destroying will go on forever but never be destroyed. **There will never be a resurrection from the second death; it is an eternal destruction.** Those who teach that there is a soul in a person that can never be destroyed make God be forever destroying a soul, but never able to completely destroy it. Unconditional immoralists believe God made this living being that is in a person destruction proof, and even He cannot destroy whatever this something is, but nevertheless He will be trying to destroy it by burning it for all eternity.

**It is complete destruction that is eternal, not eternally destroying but never destroyed.** If the destroying never ended it could not be called eternal destruction for it would be eternal destroying, as long as the destroying was going on there never could be destruction; if the destroying was ever completed the destruction would be a complete destruction, past tense; then it would not be an on going, present tense, eternal destroying.

- Eternal judgment is a judgment that happens one time, but the verdict will never be changed. The judgment will not be going on for eternity, but the verdict will be eternal.
- Eternal redemption, not eternally redeeming. After the judgment those redeemed will be forever redeemed, not forever being redeemed.
- Eternal inheritance is an inheritance that will last forever, not continuity inheriting.
- Eternal salvation, not eternally saving. Eternal redemption and eternal salvation is not a saving that will be going on for eternity; not a saving that the saving will never be finished.
- Eternal sin, not eternally sinning. Eternal sin is a sin that happens in this lifetime, but the results will last for eternity.
- Eternal punishment, not eternally punishing.
- Eternal destruction, not eternally destroying. Eternal destruction and punishment is a destruction that the results will last for eternity. Eternal destruction is not, as many teach, that the destroying will be forever destroying, but never destroyed. If the dying is never complete there is no death, if the destroying is never complete there is no destruction?
  - Does anyone think the saving will go on forever?
  - Does anyone think the redeeming will go on forever?
  - Does anyone think the dying will go on forever but death will never come?

The Bible does not say the lost will receive eternal punishing, eternal destroying, eternal dying, and eternal perishing. Eternal punishment is death, destruction. There is a vast difference in “eternal punishment” and the change to “eternal punishing” that must be made to make it teach eternal torment. None of the above is an endless processes that will go on forever, but rather they have a permanent result; the result of salvation is being eternally saved, not eternally being saved.

**(12). “READY TO JUDGE THE LIVING AND THE DEAD” 1 Peter 4:5:** Christ will be ready to judge those who are living at the time of His coming, and those who have died before He comes. Nothing is said about a spirit or about a soul in this verse. Nothing is said about any of the dead being alive and having immortality before the resurrection. Before the resurrection the dead will be dead, not more alive than when they were alive.

**OLD TESTAMENT PASSAGES THAT ARE USED TO PROVE A PERSON HAS AN IMMORTAL SOUL AND/OR SPIRIT AT BIRTH.** This doctrine, "That there is an immaterial something in a person, sometimes called a soul and sometimes called a spirit, that cannot die," made it necessity for evil people to have an endless existence, and this existence has been made into souls being endlessly tormented by God for this something that is in a place that has been given the name Hell, but where did this doctrine or this name come from? The Bible says, ***"This mortal must put on immortality"*** 1 Corinthians 15:53, it does not say, “This soul is now immortal.” How could a soul put on immortality if it was already immortal? **It is the person that will PUT ON IMMORTALITY, not an already immortal something that is in the person that will put on more immortality.**

**(1). MADE IN GOD'S IMAGE Genesis 1:27:** Most probably the #1 proof text for immortality at birth. The argument is that God is immortal. A man is in God's image.

Therefore, a man must also be immortal. Man is in the image of God is changed to be not the man but a soul that was put into man that is in the image of God, and it is only this soul, not man, that is immortal.

If being in the image of God proves immortal, then it also proves:

- God is omniscient (almighty). A man is in God's image, therefore, a man must also be almighty.
- God is omnipotent (all knowing). A man is in God's image, therefore, a man must also be all knowing.
- God is omnipresent (present every where). A man is in God's image; therefore a man must also be present everywhere.

Why is only one of God's attribute singled out? When God made a man, He did not give him all His characteristics. God is omnipotent (almighty) and omniscient (all knowing). A man is not almighty or all knowing although he is in God's image, but God is both; being in God's image does not prove that a person is immortal anymore than it proves a person is almighty. Animals are "*living souls*" (Genesis 1:20, 21, 24, 30, 2:19) just as persons are "*living souls*," but animals were not created in the image of God; it is not the "*living soul*" that makes a person be in the image of God. It is obvious that immortality, not subject to death; therefore, a living something that is in a person that is not subject to death is not the way man is in the "*image of God*," and it is only assumed to be even when the Bible specifically says otherwise. We now seek immortality (Romans 2:7), and we will put on immortality at the resurrection (1 Corinthians 15:53-54), but we are not now immortal; nor do we now have an immaterial invisible something in us that has no substance, which is now as immortal as it will ever be. This argument gives the impression that the person making it thinks God has only one attribute, immortality; therefore, if a person is in the image of God, that person must also be just as immortal as God is.

A man is to rule (have authority) over all that God has put under him just as God rules over all. It maybe that man's authority over all the earth, which none of the other created being of the earth have, is the way man is in the image of God; the two are without any doubt spoken of in the same context. Mankind rules over all created beings on earth in a finite way as God does in an infinite way. Christians "*have put on the new man that is being renewed unto knowledge after the image of him that created him*" (Colossians 3:10, See Romans 3:29; 1 Corinthians 15:49; Ephesians 4:24).

**(2). THE BREATH OF LIFE Genesis 2:** The breath of life is used to prove God breathed into a person an immortal soul, which He did not give to lower animals. The fact is overlooked that **the same writer applies the same expression to both a person and animals, also to fish and birds.** "*So they went into the ark to Noah, by twos of all flesh in which was the **breath of life**...And all flesh that moved on the earth perished, birds and cattle and beasts and every swarming thing that the swarms upon the earth, and all mankind; of all that was on the dry land, **all in whose***

**nostrils was the breath of the spirit of life, died"** (Genesis 7:15-22 New American Standard Bible, also Ecclesiastes 3:19-20). Animals, fish, man, birds, and insects have the same "breath of life." When the breath of life is gone they all are dead.

- "Jehovah God formed man of the dust of the ground, and breathed into his nostrils **the breath of life** and man became a living soul" Genesis 2:7.
- "Two of all flesh wherein is **the breath of life**" Genesis 7:15.
- The reverse of Genesis 2:7 "**His breath** (ruach—spirit) **goes forth, he returns to his earth; in that very day his thoughts perish**" Psalm 146:4. The personal pronouns are of the earthly person, not to an immortal being that is in the person.
  - **His** breath (ruach—spirit)
  - **He** returns to his earth
  - **His** thoughts perish

"Stop regarding man, whose **breath of life** is in his nostrils" (Isaiah 2:22). It is difficult to understand how anyone can find an immortal soul in this. It is the body that has breath, and that breath is in the nostrils of the body. Dose anyone think the immortal soul is nothing but breath in the nostrils of man? As long as the "breath of life" is in his nostrils, a person has "life." When the "breath of life" is no longer in his or her nostrils, the person no longer has "life." Instead of saying mankind is immortal; therefore, cannot be destroyed, this is speaking of the frail and perishable nature of a person, that their life depends on the breath in the nostrils.

It is even more difficult to understand how anyone can find an immortal soul that cannot die in this when it plainly says, "And all mankind; of all that was on the dry land, all in whose nostrils was the **breath of the spirit of life, DIED**" (Genesis 7:21). Beasts and man **both** have the breath of life, and **both** die. Did souls that cannot die, die? The breath of life is not a living, thinking, conscious entity that was put into a person and it survives death, and it will live after the body is dead. "Then the Lord God formed man of the dust from the ground (the body without breath was a lifeless person that could not think, see, speak, or feel), and breathed into his nostrils the breath of life (lives, plural in the Hebrew) and man (the thing that was made of dust) became a living being (nehphesh)." Not "A living being" was put into the thing made of dust. All life comes from God, all life of any living being. There is no life apart from God. The breath of life that comes from God and returns to God has been changed into living being that has life apart from the living being it was put in, a life that is immortal, a living being that was put into a person that can never die. A life that is made to be like God, endless, cannot die, an immaterial, invisible, no substance, and deathless soul.

**(3). A LIVING BEING Genesis 2:7:** See "USE OF SOUL (NEHPHESH) IN THE OLD TESTAMENT" in the first part of this chapter. The argument of many seems to be that God made man out of the elements He had created, and then added a living being to the man making him two being, one living inside of the other. It does not say God made a living being (man), and then put another living being in the man He had

already made. It says God made the man, and then put life into him. According to Plato a soul was put into the prison house of the body at birth, and freed from the person at death. If it were a living before it was put into a body, could it see or hear before it had the use of the eyes and ears of the body it was put in, and can it do so after it leaves the body? If a "soul" is not capable of performing these functions without the body, how can it do so after the death of the person? **The body God made became a living being when God breathed into it nostrils the breath of life. When the breath of life leaves the person, he or she becomes a lifeless body. It was life that was given to the body, not an immortal living being imprisoned in a person that is better off without the person in which it was imprisoned.**

(4). **"YOU SURELY SHALL NOT DIE" Genesis 3:** WHERE DID THE IDEA OF AN IMMORTAL SOUL ORIGINATE? Not from the first lie as many believe. Adam and Eve were told, "**You** (not your soul) *shall not eat of it; neither shall you* (not your soul) *touch it lest you* (not your soul) *die.*" Satan said, "**You** (not your soul) *shall not surely die.*" Satan lie is taught in most creeds—that all men kind are born with an "immortal soul" in them that, "*Surely shall not die,*" but the "you" has been changed from Adam dying to a deathless something that was put into Adam unto his death that, "*Surely shall not die,*" that whatever it is it would live after the death of Adam. Adam and Eve were not told their "souls" would die. **They**, not their "soul" were sent out of the Garden of Eden "*lest he* (not his soul) *put forth his* (not his soul) *hand and take also of the tree of life, and eat, and live forever.*" Not an "immaterial, invisible" soul that cannot die, but that deathless soul that cannot die must eat of the tree of life to lives forever. What if Adam had not eat of the middle of the garden (Genesis 3)? If they had not eat of it they may not have been put out of the garden and may not have ever lost there life on this earth; they may still be living in the garden, but that would not have given them the "life and immortality" that was brought to light through the gospel (2 Timothy 1:10). There was no life or death apart from the life they had on this earth spoken of in Genesis 3; no life apart from the life of there bodies that had at that time.

1. **There is not one word about a soul in Genesis chapter three, but this chapter is used to prove all persons had an immortal soul put in them that cannot die**
2. **There is not one word about "Hell" in Genesis chapter three, but this chapter is also used to prove an eternal life of torment in Hell.**
  - God said, "*In the day YOU eat it DYING YOU SHALL DIE.*"
  - Eve said, "*YOU shall not eat from it or touch it, LEST YOU DIE.*"
  - Satan said, "*YOU surely SHALL NOT DIE.*"
    - "*In the day YOU eat*"
    - "*Dying YOU shall die*"
    - "*YOU shall not eat*"
    - "*YOU shall not...touch it*"

- "Less YOU die.
- "YOU...shall not die"
- The same YOU (person) that eats is the same YOU (person) that touches and the same YOU (person) that will die, and is the same YOU (person) that Satan said would not die. The YOU does not change from being a mortal person that can eat and die to being an immortal something in a person that cannot eat or die.
- Satan lie is used in today's preaching, but changed to be, "*Your body shall die, **but your soul, which is the real you, shall surely not die.***"
- "*And all the days that Adam **lived** were nine hundred and thirty years: and he died*" (Genesis 5:5). "*Adam **lived...and he died.***" Today's theology says not so, "Adam **lived** and he **continued to live.**"
- Death was the penalty for sin, not eternal life in torment, "*surely die*" cannot mean, "*surely live.*" At the time they eat of the tree their death ("*dying you shall surely die*") became a certainty. It was Adam the person, not a soul that would die; "*Dying YOU shall surely die.*"

*"Then the Lord God formed **man** of the dust from the ground, and breathed into **his** nostrils the breath of life; and **man** became a living being"* (Genesis 2:7). The warning for eating of the tree was "***YOU** ("**man**") shall surely die.*" God's sentence for eating of the tree was "*to dust **YOU** shall return*" (not your soul shall return to dust, or your soul shall be eternity tormented). In God's statement to Adam, the personal pronouns "you" and "your" are used about fifteen times (it varies in different translations). "*Then to Adam He said, 'Because **YOU** have listened to the voice of **YOUR** wife, and have eaten from the tree about which I commanded **YOU**, saying, **YOU** shall not eat from it; cursed is the ground because of **YOU**; in toil **YOU** shall eat of it all the days of **YOUR** life. Both thorns and thistles it shall grow for **YOU**; and **YOU** shall eat the plants of the field; by the sweat of **YOUR** face **YOU** shall eat bread, till **YOU** return to the ground, because from it **YOU** were taken; for **YOU** are dust, and to dust **YOU** shall return*" (New American Standard Version). The "**YOU**" is Adam that had to work to live, would sweat, and would die, not an immaterial, invisible, unseen, deathless something in Adam that would have to sweat to live but it would die. Those who use this passage to teach a person has an immortal soul pick one of the many of the "**YOU'S**" and say only this one is an immortal soul that was in Adam, but they say nothing of the others and hope you do not see the others for their immortal, immaterial, invisible soul cannot eat, will not return to the ground, does not sweat, etc.; **the YOU that eat is the same YOU that died; there is nothing obscure or vague in this statement, language could not be more definite.** This passage is used to teach the doctrine of an immortal soul (nehphesh) even though it says nothing of a deathless soul (nehphesh) or nothing of immortality, and at the same time, death, which is in the passage, is removed and it is made not to exist. **Why would an immortal, immaterial soul that cannot die have any need of the tree of life to live?** Why do many think God would tell Adam he would die if God know Adam was immortal and could not die, and why would God take the tree of life from him "*lest he eat and live forever*" if God know Adam had an "immortal

soul,” and that spirit was the only thing that would live forever, and this “immortal soul” would live forever without the tree of life?

In **“DYING** (mooth) **YOU shall surely DIE** (mooth),” die is from mooth (Strong’s world 4191), and is used two times each in Genesis 2:17; 3:4; 20:7 in the Hebrew.

- *“Dying (mooth) you shall surely die”* (mooth) Genesis 2:17.
- *“Dying (mooth) you shall surely not die (mooth)”* Genesis 3:4.
- *“Dying (mooth) you shall surely die (mooth)”* Genesis 20:7.

Mooth is used repeatedly through out the Old Testament with reference to the death of mankind, animals, fish, etc., but never means eternal life with torment. It is **“YOU”** Adam that would **“DIE”** (mooth) just as animals and fish die, not something in Adam that could not die, something that would **LIVE** some place separated from God.

- *“So all the days that Adam lived were nine hundred and thirty years and he died”* (mooth) Genesis 5:5. Adam died, not a deathless soul that cannot die but it died anyway.
- *“All that was in the dry land, died”* (mooth) Genesis 7:22.
- *“Less some evil take me, and I die”* (mooth) Genesis 19:19.
- *“Let him die”* (mooth) Genesis 44:7.
- *“And it be hurt, or die”* (mooth) Genesis 22:14.
  - Hundreds more throughout the Old Testament.

*“Dying YOU shall surely die,”* and *“a soul that is in YOU shall live in endless torment”* are as difference as night and day. That Adam would die is so clear that an attempt is made to get around it by saying that revelation is progressive and later revelation revealed that the penalty for sin is not death, but life with torment. While revelation may be progressive, there are things reviled that were not reviled before that time, the latter revelations are never contradictory to the first. Adam was told that the penalty would be death if he eat, if a later revelation said, *“No the penalty would not be death, it is an endless life of torment,”* the two revelations would be contradictory, both could not be the truth. When Adam was told, *“You shall surely die”* no revelation would say, *“No Adam, you shall not surely die, you shall live forever in torment.”* No later revelation changed *“YOU shall surely die”* changed to *“Your deathless soul shall live separated from God.”* It was Adam that the cherubim kept from the tree of life, *“Less HE stretch out HIS hand, and take also from the tree of life, and eat, and live forever,”* Absence nothing is said about Adam having an immortal soul. Neither die or death dose not mean life, not life with God, nor life separated from God, not life for Adam, not life for a deathless something that we are told was in Adam.

God said, *“Dying YOU shall surely die.”* Satan said, *“YOU shall not surely die.”* Plato said, *“Your soul shall not surely die.”* Theology says, *“Your soul shall not surely die, it just leaves you and lives forever in Heaven or Hell without you.”* The teaching of Satan, Plato, and theology is not the truth. *“YOU shall not surely die.”* If there had been an immortal soul that can never die in Adam then that soul already was

immortal, already could never die; it already would be just as immortal as God is; that soul would already *“be like God, knowing good and evil.”* But Satan said, *“YOU will be like God.”* He did not say to Eve YOU already have in immortal soul in YOU that is like God. Satan was saying to Eve, *“YOU are not now like God, but when YOU eat of this tree YOU shall be like God”* (deathless). Nothing, not one word is said about a soul in Genesis 3; there was no immortal soul in Adam and Eve before they eat of the tree and no immortal soul in them after they eat of the tree. **Eve would have understood this to mean SHE would be like God, she would not have understood that there was a soul in HER that would become like God but only like God after SHE had eat of the tree of life.** If Adam had been made immortal he would now be living on this earth and would always live. Only the saved will have endless life. Obeying Christ makes the PERSON, not a soul, be raised to an endless life.

(1). **“Surely die”** is used 21 times in the King James Version, and it always means to die a physical death (Genesis 2:17; 3:4; 20:7; Numbers 22:23; Judges 13:22; 1 Samuel 14:39; 14:44; 20:31; 22:16; 2 Samuel 12:5; 12:14; 1 Kings 2:37; 2:42; 2 Kings 1:4; 1:6; 1:16; 8:10; Ezekiel 3:18; 18:13; 33:8; 33:14). .”

(2). The opposite, **“Surely live”** is used a number of times, and like *“surely die”* was always physical life that would *“surely live.”* *“He will surely live, he shall not die”* (Ezekiel 33:15; Also Ezekiel 3:21; 18:9; 18:17; 18:19; 18:21; 18:28; 33:13; 33:16). Shall not die at that time in their life time, but they would later die at the end of there lifetime; all these passages are speaking of the lifetime on this earth

(3). **“Shall surely be put to death”** is used many times (Exodus 19:20; 21:12; 21:15; 21:16; 21:17; 31:14; 31:15; Leviticus 20:2; 20:9; 20:10; 20:11; 20:12; 20:13; 20:15; 20:16; 20:27; 24:16; 24:17; 27:20; Numbers 35:16; 35:17; 35:18; 35:21; 35:31).

- All three, *“surely die,”* *“surely live,”* and *“surely be put to death”* are always speaking of life or death of the body, not of a deathless soul that could not *“surely die,”* that could not *“surely be put to death.”*

It was a real tree with a real earthly fruit that a real person with a real earthly hand that was told **HE** would die if **HE** eats, and a real earthly person that was put out of a real garden lest **HE** (not a soul) put forth **HIS** hand (not a soul's hand), and take also of the real tree of life by eating the fruit **HE** would have had in the same hand **HE** put forth (not a soul eating), **and live forever. To what did living depend on eating of the tree of life,** to Adam, or to an *“immaterial, invisible”* immortal soul that was in Adam that could not die even if it did not eat? Would it not be a contradiction to say there was an immortal soul in Adam that could not die, and it must live forever, but this deathless soul depended on eating of the tree of life to live, or that a soul that could not die would die if it did not eat of the tree of life? Yet, we are told that all, even Adam, have an immortal soul in them that will live forever, and this deathless soul has no need of the tree of life; therefore, what could the tree of life give to a deathless soul that it did not already have? Nothing. According to this doctrine, a deathless soul could not lose it's deathlessness when Adam eat of the tree. This

doctrine makes the flaming sword useless to keep a soul from the tree of life so that a soul may eat and live forever, for we are told that a soul would live forever if it eats, or if it does not eat.

1. God placed Adam in the garden and gave him access to the tree of life to sustain his life; his life was dependent on his having access to this tree, not on his being created with unconditional immortality and not subject to death.
2. Adam was removed from the tree of life *"lest he eat and live forever"*; his life depended on his eating of the tree before he sinned. He was not remade, not recreated with a different body; he had the same body before and after he was put out of the garden, just did not have access to the tree of life.

**It was Adam that God said would die if he ate, not an immortal soul that cannot die. It was Satan that told Adam he would not die if he did eat. God or Satan said nothing about Adam having an immortal deathless soul that could not die.** *"You shall surely die"* is far from saying, "When you die, a soul that is in you will live and suffer eternal torment without you" but this is read into it. Was Adam created mortal or immortal? If immortal, how could he be threatened with death when he could not die? If he were immortal, he would be death—proof; therefore, God's sentence of death if he eats would have been a lie.

When God said, Adam shall *"surely die,"* He is saying Adam was mortal. *"It is appointed unto man to die, and after this comes the judgment"* (Hebrews 9:27). Not just part of a person, not only the body of the man. This is changed to read only your outer shell, and not the real **YOU** shall die. *"In the day YOU eat thereof YOU shall surely die"* is not, "After the death of your body a soul that is in you shall be eternity alive in Hell and tormented by God" but this is what many read into it. Some say this is not physical death but a spiritual death. Then where did physical death come from? What death was passed unto **ALL** men (Romans 5:12)? Is it appointed for a man to die is changed to be it is appointed for only something that is in a man to die a spiritual death? *"The first man is of the earth, earthy"* (1 Corinthians 15:47; Ecclesiastes 3:20).

**The death sentence:** God: *"YOU shall surely die"* (Genesis 2:17) versus Satan: *"YOU shall not surely die"* (Genesis 3:4).

**The death sentence repeated:** *"Dust YOU are, and unto dust YOU shall return"* (Genesis 2:19). The **YOU** that shall die is the same **YOU**, (the same personal pronoun for the person Adam) that shall return to dust. These words do not point to a continuation of life but to the end of it, not to an endless life for a soul, but to a literal death for Adam, to the death of a person.

**The death sentence passed to all:** *"Therefore, just as through one man sin entered into the world, and death through sin, and so death spread to all men, because all sinned"* (Romans 5:12). Adam's sin took him away from the tree of life and brought death, and death passed on to all for all are born mortal and do not have access to the tree of life, all return to dust.

**The remedy for the death that came through Adam's sin.** *"For the hour is coming, in which all that are in the tombs shall hear his voice, and shall come forth; they that have done good, unto the resurrection of life; and those that have done evil, unto the resurrection of judgment"* (John 5:28-29). If there were a deathless immortal soul it would not be in a tomb, and if this deathless

soul was in a grave on this earth when Christ comes it would be a total contradiction to souls going to Heaven or Hell at death.

Was this sentence of death given to an immortal soul that cannot die; if it is immortal then how could any kind of death sentence be given to it, how could it not live forever without the death of Christ? It would not be subject to death. It would not matter if Adam ate or did not eat for if there were an immaterial, invisible, immortal, deathless soul in Adam it could not die. In the fall of Adam and his sentence, nothing is said about an immortal soul. It was Adam that sinned, Adam that died; it was through Adam that death came into the world and passed unto all men, not death passed to all immortal deathless souls (1 Corinthians 15:21-22; Romans 5:12-14). The penalty to Adam and all his seed is death, not eternal life in Hell. There will be a resurrection from the death that came into the world from Adam's sin.

Today's preachers would tell Adam that there is a soul in him that is going to Hell because of his sin, but God said not one word about Hell. "Die" has been changed to "Hell." "Death" has been changed to "life with torment." Satan said, "**You surely shall not die.**" Satan added the "not" and many have changed his "**you shall not**" to "**your soul shall not die**" to make a person now have an "*immaterial invisible*" immortal soul that is in them and it cannot die. **Today's preachers:** "Your soul shall not surely die, for it is now immortal and will live forever some place." "*You shall surely die*" (Genesis 2:17) is changed to, "You (your soul) shall surely never die." "Die" is changed to a living, deathless death.

For a person to have an immortal soul two kinds of life and two kinds of death must be read into Genesis 2 with one of the deaths not being a death at all, but eternal life with torment. Look in your concordance and you will see that both "Spiritual life" and "spiritual death" are read into this and not one time are they in the entire Bible. It is argued that Adam did not die physically that day; therefore, "spiritual death" was Adam's penalty for eating. If this were true, why did he ever die a physical death, and how did physical death come into the world? In the Hebrew the penalty was "*dying YOU shall die.*" "*YOU shall die*" signified the certainty of death; "*dying YOU shall die*" cannot be made to mean "dying YOU shall not die." It was the "*living being*" (Genesis 2:17) that begin dying that day, not an immortal soul that cannot die; "*By the sweat of YOUR face YOU shall eat bread, till YOU return to the ground, because from it YOU were taken; for YOU are dust, and to dust YOU shall return*" (Genesis 3:19). Death came into the world through Adam and all die (1 Corinthians 15:22; Romans 5:12-21). The undying soul theory is based on the silence in Genesis chapter two and three.

EDWARD WHITE: "No word is said either before the fall, or on the approach of the Judge, or afterwards, of Adam's possession of a deathless soul, when his mortal integer was broken up; — not a word is uttered in the divine comment on the curse, of an eternity of misery to be endured by the soul after dissolution of the Man. Indeed, that notion seems to deserve little else than the scorn, which Locke bestows upon it. It is the gratuitous invention of theologians who have forfeited the

claim to be listened to in that matter by their perverse departure from the record." Life In Christ, page 212, 1878, at: <http://www.robertwr.com/LifeinChrist.htm>

A definition of death from the Bible, "**Till YOU return to the ground, because from it YOU were taken; for YOU are dust, and to dust YOU shall return.**" Without the resurrection, all of "you" would forever remain dust. But, God's definition of death cannot be believed by any that believe a soul is immortal; they tell us that by, "*You shall die,*" God really means "spiritually death," which is life separation from God, not death. Spiritual death is not to really die and return to the ground; according to the belief of many, spiritual death is life separated from God, not death, and nothing returns to the ground. The tradition of many makes changing the Bible a must; how many times have we been told that, "*You shall surely die*" means, "**Your soul shall surely die spiritually, not, "You shall die"**"?

**Another use of, "You shall surely die"** (the same words in the Hebrew). Solomon told Shimei to, "*Build yourself a house in Jerusalem, and dwell there, and go not forth thence any whither. For on the day you go out, and pass over the brook Kidron, know you for certain that you shall surely die*" (1 Kings 2:37). He did go out of Jerusalem, and he did die just as Adam did, but not on the very day he went out; their death was sealed and made certain on that day.

**If Hell were Adam's sentence:** "Die" must be changed into an eternal life for a soul that was in Adam, but not eternal life for his body. If Hell was the sentence then God was unclear in His warning and unclear in the sentence. What was the penalty God give in Genesis 3:9-24?

1. The serpent cursed
2. Sorrow in bringing forth children
3. The man ruling over his wife
4. The earth bringing forth thorns and thistles
5. Must work to eat, by the sweat of his face
6. They would die and return to the ground from which they came

**How can anyone get Hell out of this sentence? There is not one word about an immortal, immaterial soul that is a person, and not one word about Hell, or torment after death in it. There is nothing about anything after death in it. The penalty for eating of the forbidden tree ended when they returned to the ground.**

JOHN LOCKE: "It seems a strange way of understanding a law which requires the plainest and direct words, that by death should be meant eternal life in misery...I must confess that by death, here, I can understand nothing but a ceasing to be, the losing of all actions of life and sense. Such a death came upon Adam and all his posterity, by his first disobedience in paradise, under which death they should have lain forever had it not been for the redemption by Jesus Christ," "Reasonableness of Christianity," Volume 6, page 3, 1695.

Adam and Eve passed from a state in the garden where they had access to the tree of life, where it was possible for them to live forever, to a state where it was impossible for them not to die. The day they did eat was the beginning of the dying

process ("*Dying you shall die*" Genesis 2:17). There is nothing in this about a person being a dual being with an immortal soul, but most read it into this. It was the whole person as he was then, which would have lived forever if he had eaten of the tree of life. It was the whole person that God said would die. **How could an immaterial, invisible soul eat of a visible material tree?** Satan's lie was that **they**, not a soul would not die. God put a barrier to the garden when Adam was put out of Eden so the person could not "*stretch out his hand and take also from the tree of life, and eat, and live forever,*" not an immaterial soul putting out it's hand and eating of an earthly tree, (Genesis 3:22). That day the dying process began, "*Dying you shall die*" (Genesis 2:17). It would have been nonsense for God to prevent access to the tree of life if the real Adam was a soul that was immortal, and the real immaterial Adam (soul) would live forever with or without the tree of life.

THE NEW JOHN GILL EXPOSITION OF THE ENTIRE BIBLE: "For in the day thou eat thereof **thou shalt surely die; or in dying, die;** which denotes the certainty of it...**man became at once a mortal creature**, who otherwise continuing in a state of innocence, and by eating of the tree of life, if he was allowed to do, would have lived an immortal life; of the eating of which tree, by sinning he was debarred, his natural life not now to be continued long, at least not forever; he was immediately arraigned, tried, and condemned to death, was found guilty of it, and became obnoxious to it, and death at once began to work in him; sin sowed the seeds of it in his body, and a train of miseries, afflictions, and diseases, began to appear, which at length issued in death."

YOUNG'S LITERAL TRANSLATION Genesis 2:17: "*For in the day of thine eating of it—**dying thou dost die.***"

GEORGE V. WIGRAM: "**Dying shalt die.**" The Englishman's Hebrew And Chaldee Concordance Of The Old Testament, Page 675.

NEW AMERICAN BIBLE – Catholic – Genesis 2:17: "*The moment you eat from it **you are surely doomed to die.***"

CONCORDANT LITERAL OLD TESTAMENT Genesis 2:17: "*To die **shall you be dying.***"

REVISED ENGLISH BIBLE Genesis 2:17: "*The day you eat from that, **you are surely doomed to die.***"

THE LIVING BIBLE Genesis 2:17: "*If you eat of its fruit, **you will be doomed to die.***"

ADAM CLARKE: "Thou shall surely die. Literally, a death thou shall die; or, **dying thou shall die**—from that moment thou shall become mortal, and shall continue in a dying state till thou die. This we find literally accomplished; every moment of man's life may be considered as an act of dying."

JOHN WESLEY: "Thou shall die—That is, thou shalt lose all the happiness thou hast either in possession or prospect; and thou shalt become liable to death, and all the miseries that preface and attend it. This was threatened as the immediate consequence of sin."

ALEXANDER CAMPBELL: "Adam died at the end of nine hundred and thirty years after his creation, and that this was threatened in the words, 'In the day thou eatest thereof **dying thou shall die.**'" Campbell Skinner Debate On Everlasting Punishment, page 118, College Press, 1840.

A DOUBLE CHANCE:

- First change: Adam's death must be changed to be a "separation," not death.
- Second change: Then the first change much be changed again, Adam's "separation" from God must be changed from Adam to be a soul having eternal life being tormented by God.

"For as in Adam all die" (1 Corinthians 15:22). If death = separation, and separation = being tormented by God, then all will be tormented for "in Adam all die."

(5). **"IN MY FLESH SHALL I SEE GOD"** Job 19:25-27: See chapter seven, "IN MY FLESH SHALL I SEE GOD."

(6). **"SHAME AND EVERLASTING CONTEMPT" Daniel 12:2:** *"And many of them that sleep in the dust of the earth shall awake, some to everlasting life, and some to shame and everlasting contempt."* Who has this "contempt" and "shame"? It is the shame and contempt that others have for them that is everlasting, everlasting (olam—age lasting) is applied only to the contempt. Hell and eternal torment by God is added when there is nothing about them in this passage.

"And **many** of them that sleep" is not the same **"All that are in the tombs shall hear his voice, and shall come forth"** (John 5:28). When Daniel 12:2 is kept in the context of Daniel 11 and 12, Daniel is not speaking of the resurrection at the coming of Christ, but is speaking of a time of restoration of Israel when **many** would return to God just as Ezekiel pictured the dead bones as a resurrection of the dead (37:11-14) was speaking of a restoration of Israel as a nation when many did return to God. See Isaiah 52:1-2; 26:5. *"And those who have insight will shine brightly like the brightness of the expanse of heaven, and those who lead the many to righteousness, like the stars forever and ever"* (Daniel 12:3). "For the olam—age," not forever and ever, which is eternal plus eternal;" even those that believe in Hell do not believe anyone will lead many to righteousness after the resurrection when they believe many will be in Hell; therefore, the leading would be before the resurrection.

Even when Daniel 12:2-3 is completely removed from its context, even then it cannot be made to teach today's theology.

HOMER HAILEY, "Ezekiel's prophecy referred to a spiritual resurrection of the Jews in Babylon and their return to Judea; for Jehovah added, 'Son of man these bones are the whole house of Israel'" A Commentary on Daniel, page 243, 2001, Nevada Publications.

"The belief in the resurrection was nationalistic rather than individualistic" "Afterlife and Eschatology" at MyJewishLearning.com. Israel believed God would restore (resurrect) the nation when it sinned and turned back to God, but not in the resurrection of the dead individuals.

Daniel chapter 11 and 12 are about Israel coming out of the captivity and being restored as a nation. **If Daniel 12:2 were speaking of the resurrection and judgment at the second coming of Christ, there could not be a bigger conflict with the orthodoxy teaching that all go to Heaven or Hell at the moment of death. How could those in Heaven be asleep "in the dust of the ground"? How could those in Heaven "awake"? How could an immortal soul that now has everlasting life and cannot die (which some tell us is what will live in Heaven or Hell), which soul cannot sleep the sleep of death, how could it awake from the dust of the ground if that immortal soul was alive and awake in Heaven or Hell, and it was not asleep in the dust of the ground? Orthodox teaches that long before the resurrection and Judgment Day the souls that were in the saved are in**

Heaven and have everlasting life. The Abraham's bosom version would also be in conflict with it.

Kenny Boles in "The Life to Come," page 276 says this prophecy of Daniel is the first and only clear declaration of the resurrection in all of the Old Testament. Only by taking verse 12 out of context can it be made to be speaking of the Resurrection, and then it makes the problem:

- Of only some of the dead being resurrected.
- Therefore, some of the dead would not be resurrected.

Which would be an undeniable contradiction to what is said of the Resurrection in the New Testament, that "all" the dead, not "many" of the dead will be resurrected (John 5:28).

- "Contempt" (from Hebrew—derawone) Daniel 12:2
- "Abhorrence" (from Hebrew—derawone) Isaiah 66:24

*"Then they shall go forth and look on the corpses of the men who have transgressed against Me for **their** (the corpses) worm shall not die, and **their** (the corpses) fire shall not be quenched: and **they** (the corpses) shall be an **abhorrence** (derawone) to all mankind"* (Isaiah 66:24). The antecedent of these three pronouns is "corpses," dead bodies that will be looked at by living person that are on this earth; Theology has changed these decaying "corpses" that are being eaten by worms into immortal indestructible souls. Strong says both **contempt** and **abhorrence** are from the same Hebrew word. Strong's word #1860, "To repulse, an object of aversion, abhorring, contempt." Contempt and abhorrence are the way others think about, *"The corpses of the men who have transgressed against Me."* It does not say the corpses will forever be conscious or in torment, it says nothing about torment, but that others will forever have shame and contempt for them. **It is the contempt that is said to be everlasting** (olam—age lasting), **it was not said that the corpses of dead persons are everlasting**. God tormenting the corpses is read into this in an attempt to put Hell in it. How does those seeing and having contempt for the corpses of those that were killed by the Lord become "everlasting torment" for soul by God? Where is there anything about God forever tormenting souls in "Hell" in this passage? **It was the living people that saw the corpses, and living people that had contempt for the dead earthly bodies.** The reason for the contempt seems to be that in Israel it was considered a shame to a person if their dead body was left unburied to be eaten by worms (maggots) or burned, The contempt was not that a deathless soul that had been in the dead person was being tormented by God.

*"And I will put an everlasting **reproach** on you and an everlasting humiliation which will not be forgotten"* (Jeremiah 23:40). "Reproach" is the same word in the Hebrew that is translated "shame" in Daniel 12:2, and just as it is in Daniel this shame or reproach that was on this earth on the nation of Israel, not on souls.

**(7). PLEASE EXPLAIN HOW THE SPIRIT THAT RETURNED TO GOD IS**

## CHANGED TO BOTH A SOUL IN HELL AND A SOUL IN "ABRAHAM'S BOSOM"

Ecclesiastes 12:7: Some of my brothers in Christ, who believe in "Abraham's bosom," and that souls that are in no one will be in Heaven or Hell unto after the judgment use this and other scriptures to prove a soul or a spirit, the only thing they think will ever be in Heaven goes to Heaven at death, not to "Abraham's Bosom." In their own words:

L. S. WHITE, "And I wondered why my dear brother did not see the verse just preceding it, which says, 'And they stoned Stephen, calling upon God and saying, Lord Jesus, receive my spirit.' Where was Jesus? Stephen saw him alive at the right hand of God. Where could Jesus receive his spirit? He could receive his spirit only where he was. Where does the spirit go? Eccl. 12:7, 'Then shall the dust return to the earth as it was, and the spirit shall return unto God who give it.' That immortal principle of the human family that never dies. So they killed the body of Stephen, but Stephen prayed for the Lord to receive his spirit where he was." Russell—White Debate, page 51, 1912, F. L. Rowe Publisher.

When he answered his own question of where is Stephen now before the resurrection,

1. He changed spirit of **all** (Ecclesiastes 12:7), both saved and lost that returns to God who is in Heaven, to only the spirits of the saved return to God, he believes that the spirits of the lost are forever separated from God, never will return to God.
2. Then he said Stephen is now in Heaven; therefore, he is saying Stephen is not now in "Abraham's bosom," that Stephen will be in Heaven unto the resurrection.

Sometimes Stephen is said to be in "Abraham's bosom," and sometimes the same preachers will say Stephen is now in Heaven. I think where they put Stephen depends on what they are trying to prove at that time. Ecclesiastes 12:7 says the bodies of all returned to the earth and the spirit (ruach) of all returned to God. Can my brother not see that if the something he believes to be in a person is the only thing he believe is now immortal, if it is what goes back to God who gives it, **then he has this immortal living something that is in all, in both the saved and the unsaved going back to God in Heaven at the time of the death of the person the spirit had been in? What happened to his "Hell?" He is saying no spirit goes to Hell when the person the spirit had been in dies, and that no spirit goes to Abraham's bosom, for the spirits that were in all, in both the saved and the lost, return to God.** What happened to "Abraham's bosom," the second coming of Christ, the resurrection, the judgment, and the second death? If no one's soul goes to Heaven at death, which is what those who believe in "Abraham's bosom" believe, how is it that this immortal something in a person, which will not go to Heaven unto after the judgment, but it will go back to God at death? *"Do not all go to one place?"* (Ecclesiastes 6:6). The whole chapter of Ecclesiastes 12 is speaking to all mankind, not just to the saved. **All** are admonished to remember God in their youth before the evil days of old age, then **all** shall return to dust and the spirit of **all** shall return to God (the "breath of life," the life of all came from God, the only source of life, and all life, not souls, returns to God). No reference is made to the **all** being

good or evil at the time of their death. If the spirit of **all** goes back to God at death is a conscious soul, then the immortal soul in no one will not go to Hell. There is nothing in the spirit (the “breath of life”) returning to God that makes those who are saved any different from those who are not saved; the spirit that had been in all returns to God, yet, those who use this to prove a person has an immortal soul in them say, “No, Solomon was wrong. The spirit/soul that were in the lost does not return to God at death,” some says a soul or a spirit goes to Hell at death, and others says a soul or a spirit goes the bad side of hades at when the person it was in dies.

**The three places where the “soul” is sent at death by those that believe we now have an immortal deathless soul.**

1. At death does a **spirit or a soul** that had been in a lost person goes to Hell?
2. At death does a **spirit or a soul** that had been in a lost person goes to the bad side of hades (Abraham’s bosom)?
3. At death the **spirit** (“breath of life”) that had been in all, both the lost and the saved return to God.

Has the zeal to prove Plato's immortal soul, which needs no resurrection, blinded him so he does not see that he is going both ways at the same time? He believes that after a soul is freed from the body by death (as Plato put it, freed from its earthly prison) that it is just as alive as it will ever be, and when a person dies, he believes that person has everything that is ever going to be dead, already dead, and a soul that he believes will be alive after the resurrection is already, before the death of the person, as alive and as immortal as it will ever be.

The Hebrew word translated “spirit” in Ecclesiastes 12:7 is from ruach, not from nehphesh. Ruach is translated breath, wind, spirit, etc., but never translated “soul.” That which returns to God is the breath of life (Genesis 2:7), that came from God and made both man and beast “*living beings*.” In Ecclesiastes 11:4 it is, “*He who watches the wind (ruach)*.” If Ecclesiastes 12:7 did prove that a person has an immortal soul in them, and that it is this soul that returns to God in Heaven is a rational, intelligent, thinking being, then it proves that the same immortal soul preexisted with God in Heaven as a rational, intelligent, thinking being before the birth of the person; it would prove that before you were born there was a “spirit” in Heaven with God, when you were born that “spirit” or “soul” left Heaven and came to live inside of you, when you die that “spirit” will return to Heaven if “you are good,” but if “you are bad” then that spirit will go to Hell, and because of you that spirit will be eternally tormented by God. By misusing this verse to prove a person now has something in them that is now immortal, and it is this immortal something in a person goes back to God at death, then it would prove more than they want to prove. If a spirit that returns to God is something in a person that is immortal, and it came from God, this immortal thinking being had to preexist in Heaven with God before the person was born; if it did not preexist then it could not “*return to God*.” Most do not believe in **preexistence** before the birth of **ALL**, neither do they believe that **ALL**, both the

souls in the saved and the souls in the lost going back to Heaven unto second coming of Christ, they believe that souls that are in most will go to Hell at death, but if their view were right, that the spirit or soul is an immortal something that is believed to be in a person that it came from God at birth, and then it returns to God at death, there would be no way around both the saved and the lost going to Heaven at death. **The incorrect use of this passage to prove a person is born with an immortal soul in them undeniably implies the preexistence of that soul, that it existed in Heaven a living being before the birth of the person, and that at the death of the person all souls that are in both the saved and the unsaved, and also souls that are in animals, leave the person or animal it was put in and returns to God who is in Heaven, back to where a soul was before the person or animal was born. Whatever came from God, whether it was life, or a living intelligent being that was in Heaven before the birth of the person is what returns to God after the death of the person.** It does not say that what came from God was a created intelligent living being (as are the angels) that was in Heaven, but that is what is inferred when this passage is used to prove the doctrine that a person has an immortal soul or an immortal spirit in him or her that **returns** to God at death.

The misuse of this passage proves:

**BEFORE BIRTH:** It would prove the preexistence of **ALL** spirits in Heaven. In the part of eternity before birth **ALL** spirits would have been safe in Heaven.

**AT BIRTH:** It would prove the spirits of **ALL** spirits were put out of Heaven and sent down to earth and put in earthly bodies.

**FROM THE DEATH OF THE BODY UNTO THE RESURRECTION:** At the death of the earthly bodies these spirits from Heaven were put in, the spirits that were in **ALL** persons will go back to Heaven with God unto the judgment. Some of the lost will be in Heaven for thousands of years before the judgment.

**AT SECOND COMING:** It would prove that **ALL** the spirits are sent back to earth from Heaven or Hell for judgment.

**AFTER JUDGMENT:** It would prove that the spirits that had been in **ALL** persons were safe in Heaven before the birth of the person, but will now go to Heaven or Hell, the "many" to Hell. According to their teaching many spirits that preexisted in Heaven before the birth of the persons these preexisting souls were put in, these souls will go to Hell after the judgment because of the sins of the person these souls were put in. In the part of eternity that will be after the judgment, these spirits will end up in Hell with God forever tormenting them. If this view were true, why did God not leave them in Heaven? Did He want most of the spirits that were in Heaven with Him to be lost where He could torment them forever?

If the spirit that came from God is an immortal soul then:

- Birth is changed to be only a moving day from Heaven to earth for a soul that preexisted in Heaven before the birth of the person.
- Death is changed to be only a moving day from earth back to Heaven for a soul that preexisted in Heaven before it moved to earth.
- From the second coming onward: (1) The saved are brought from Heaven, but only some souls to return to Heaven where they were before the second coming, (2) and the lost that

returned back to God are brought from Heaven for a second judgment only to be sent to Hell.

- Both the souls that are saved and the souls that had been in the lost preexisted in Heaven, but most of them will never return to Heaven after the judgment.

According to the teaching of many, this immortal soul was a living, conscious, thinking being before it came from God,

(1) Did souls exist in Heaven as a living, thinking being, OR (2) What came from God was life; not a thinking being that preexisted and was immortal.

**It is the "spirit," (ruach) not "an immortal soul" (nehphesh) that returns to God.** What is the spirit that came from God? *"Then the Lord God formed a MAN of the dust from the ground and **breathed into HIS nostrils the breath of life** (ruach); and MAN (the body of dust) became a living being (a soul—nehphesh—Genesis 2:7).* A body made of dust plus the spirit, the breath of life from God (Genesis 2:7) = a soul, a living creature whether it is a person or an animal. The spirit (breath of life that was breathed into his nostrils), all life comes from God the only source of life, whether the life of a person, or the life of an animal, and this life returns to God. When the life returns to God, the body returns to dust, and we will have no work, device, knowledge, or wisdom (Ecclesiastes 9:10) unto the resurrection when life comes from God. All life is from God; when the spirit returns to God the man or animal has no life.

If the spirit that came from God is man's immortal soul then:

Then all immortal souls of both the saved and the lost return to God at death (Ecclesiastes 12:7).

But David did not ascend *"into Heaven"* (Acts 2:34; 2:29).

- Would not this make the immortal soul or immortal spirit that came from God and had been in David but returned to God be some kind of being that was in David, but it was not David? That this being that was in David has returned Heaven, but David is not in Heaven?

Ecclesiastes 12:7 is the reverse of the process in Genesis 2:7.

- Body from the ground plus breath of life from God = a soul, a living being (Genesis 2:7).
- Dust returns to the ground—spirit returns to God = a dead being (soul) (Ecclesiastes 12:7).
- Body minus the spirit = a dead soul (a dead being, person, or animal) (James 2:26).
  - *"Body without the spirit (breath of life) is DEAD"* James 2:26.
  - *"Faith without works is DEAD"* James 2:26.

Today's theology tells us two conflicting things.

Theology says that most SOULS go to Hell at death, and that some souls go to God at death.

And at the same time theology uses Ecclesiastes 12:7 to say ALL SPIRITS returns to God at death.

The way Ecclesiastes 12:7 is misused to prove a person has an immortal being in them that cannot die makes this passage prove:

1. **Before birth:** Today's theology makes a soul be both alive and immortal; **just the same as they say it was at birth and as it will always be.** The view of many implies the soul or spirit that came from God was an immortal, conscious, independent, and an intelligent being before it came from God to man, before birth.

2. **From birth to death:** Today's theology make a soul be both alive and immortal; **just the same as they say it was at birth and as it will always be.**
3. **From death unto the resurrection:** Today's theology make a soul be both alive and immortal; **just the same as they say it was at birth and as it will always be.**
4. **From the resurrection onward:** Today's theology makes a soul be both alive and immortal; **just the same as they say it was at birth, and as it will always be.** Soul and spirit are used as if they are the same thing.

According to today's theology the only thing that can change for a soul is its location. Birth, death, and the resurrection are only three moving days for it. There could not be a real death for an immortal soul, or a real resurrection for a soul that was not dead.

Most Eastern religions, most New Age believers, and many Christians, literally billions, believe in the preexistence of a soul. Many Christians believe God creates a new soul for each at birth, some at the time of conception, some at the time of the first breath, and it is only this immaterial something in a person that will be in Heaven or Hell. However, **if Ecclesiastes 12:7 is used to prove a person has an immortal soul that will live forever, there is no way to get around preexistence of a soul that came from Heaven at birth, or that all souls, both the souls that are in the saved, and the souls that are in the lost will go back to Heaven at death.**

**Proves Universalism**, but not the same Universalism taught by the Universalist. If this "spirit" that returns to God is an immortal soul, then it proves the souls that are in all, both good and bad will go back to Heaven at death without the "attitude adjustments" taught by the Universalism, but it may not last forever for, according to their doctrine, **ALL** will be taken out of Heaven and return to earth at the judgment; then if one is a Christian, or not a Christian, his or her spirit that came from God at birth goes back to Heaven to God at death, but all spirits will leave Heaven for judgment, and only some spirits will go back. If the "spirit" that came from God were an immortal soul, then **most of the all souls that was with God in Heaven before the birth of the persons that they were put in will end up in Hell after the judgment;** even if they do not believe what their incorrect use of this passage would prove, it would still prove it.

Job said, *"If He should gather to Himself His **spirit and his breath**, all flesh would perish together, and man would return to dust"* (Job 34:14-15). **"And the breath (nshahmah—sprit) of the Almighty gives me life"** (Job 33:4). The breath of life came from God and returns to God, it was not a conscious immortal being before it came from God, and is not a conscious immortal being after it returns to God. The spirit that returns to God at death is not an immortal soul, and is not the spiritual body that the dead in Christ will put on at the resurrection (1 Corinthians 15:44). In Genesis 2:7 Adam was made from the earth, then God breathed into Adam the breath of life and Adam, not something that was in Adam became a living being (soul), in Ecclesiastes 12:7 when Adam returned to the earth, the spirit or

breath of life that came from God returned to God. When the "*spirit departs*" (returns to God) the "*thoughts perish*" (Psalm 146:4); if the spirit that departs were a living being with a separate existence, would it have no thoughts? If the breath of life that came from God did have thoughts they would be its thoughts, not the thoughts of the person that it was put in.

It is said that the dead do not know anything was only, "The way the world perceives the dead" at the time Solomon wrote this, but that is not true. Most of the world at that time, other than the Jews, believed in reincarnation, and believed the dead had some kind of life and thoughts in the underworld until they were reincarnated. Egypt, where the Jews had just come from believed the dead lived and had always lived and would always live, and would keep coming back over and over again; therefore, they would have had thoughts and known something. Many Pagans believed a soul has always existed, and must always exist, that a soul is self—existence, that it has always been reincarnated over and over, and always will be. If a person has an immortal soul in them, and that soul came from God and that soul will go back to God, then that soul lived before the person was born, and that soul will live when the person is dead. The inescapable conclusion would be that the pagans were right, and all that I am, all that I think and do is just a temporary passing thing; it is only a soul that existed before me and was put in a prison in my body for a short time, and it (not me) will always exist. This is what the pagans teach, and is the source from which the church fathers brought this teaching into the church.

God gave Solomon wisdom and understanding and made him where there was none like him, (1 Kings 4:29-31; 3:11-12; Ecclesiastes 12:9). His statements on the dead are in total agreement with David, Job, and King Hezekiah.

Old age and death are the subject in Ecclesiastes 12:7. All are born and all die, and when "**it**" the spirit (ruach—breath of life—See Job 27:3; 33:4) of both men and animals returns to God. Solomon says **it is a vanity**, not a blessed event of going home to God (Ecclesiastes 12:7-8). Those who use the spirit returning to God to prove a person now has an immortal soul in them that returns to God at death overlook verse 8.

Solomon called the "*spirit*" an "*it*." Ecclesiastes 12:7 "*And the spirit (ruach) returns to God who give it.*" Psalm 104:29-30 "*You take away their breath (ruach—from sea creature and animals—see verses 24-25), they die, and return to their dust. You send forth Your spirit (ruach—to sea creature and animals); they are created.*" Psalm 146:4 "**His** breath (ruach—spirit) goes forth, **he** returns to his earth; in that very day **his** thoughts perish." If a persons thoughts perishes when the body perishes, if there were an immortal soul, would that not make its thoughts be its own thoughts? If the thinking part of a person is the earthly person, and this thinking part perishes at death, and the person's thoughts perishes at death, then if a soul lived after the death of the person, (1) that soul would be a thoughtless something like plants (2) or

a soul would have its own thoughts that were not the thoughts of the person it had been put in. If there were something that is in a person and it continues to think after the death of the person, after ***“in that very day his thoughts perish,”*** than a soul's thoughts could not be the thoughts of the person. It is not possible to reconcile today's immortal soul theology, or an immortal soul theology with God's word.

Summary: Why is this passage that says all spirits (ruach—breath of life) returns to God one of the most used passages to teach a person has an immortal soul that goes to either (1) Heaven (2) or Hell? Can you find anything about the spirit (ruach—breath of life) of anyone going to Hell in this passage? Maybe because there is no passage that really teaches it, changing spirit of both that came from and returns to God into a living, thinking, immortal soul is the best that can be found.

**(8) THE SPIRIT OF MAN AND THE SPIRIT OF BEAST** Ecclesiastes 3:18-22: *“I said in my heart, it is because of the sons of men, that I may prove them, and that they may see that they themselves are but as beasts. For that which befalls the sons of men befalls beasts; even one thing befalls them: as the one dies so dies the other; yes, they have all one **breath (Hebrew—ruach)**; and man has no pre-eminence above the beasts: for all is vanity. All go unto one place; all are of the dust, and all turn to dust again. Who knows the **spirit (Hebrew—ruach) of man**, whether it goes upward, and the **spirit (Hebrew—ruach) of beast**, whether it goes downward to the earth? And I have seen that nothing is better than that man should be happy in his activities, for that is his lot. For who will bring him to see what will occur after him?”* Why was the same Hebrew word (ruach) translated “breath” when it has references to both man and beast; were they hiding the fact they both have the same “ruach” because they did not believe beast have the same spirit as man? There is nothing in the ruach that is in a person going up and the ruach that is in a beast going down that proves the ruach that is in either one is an immortal being that will be conscious after the death of the person or the beast; if going someplace proves the ruach that was in a person is immortal then the ruach that was in a beast going someplace would prove it to be just as immortal as the ruach that was in a person. ***“For who will bring him to see what will occur after him?”*** This is speaking of the person that is dead not coming back to see what will be happening after the person is dead, not a soul that was at that time believed in the pagans coming back or having any kind of life anyplace.

Ecclesiastes 3:19-22 King James Version:

*“All (man and beasts) have the same BREATH (ruach).”* Spirit of both man and beast are from the same word, ruach, the life (ruach) of both came from God, and the life that is in both returns back to God.

*“Who knows that the SPIRIT (ruach—breath of life) of man.”*

*“That the SPIRIT (ruach—breath of life) of the beast.”*

Psalms 104:29-30 King James Version:

*“You take away their BREATH (ruach) they die.”*

*"You send forth your SPIRIT (ruach—breath) they are created."*

Innate soul advocates would not give both man and beasts the same spirit (soul), neither could they have God taking away a soul.

If this BREATH–SPIRIT (ruach) were an immortal soul that returns to God at death, then it is like Ecclesiastes 12:7 above in that it would prove ALL, both the good and the evil are saved, and both return to God at death. See notes above.

***"They all have the same breath (ruach) and there is no advantage for man over beast."***

**Who knows** whether (if) *"the spirit (ruach) of man"* goes up when the body returns to the dust?

**Who knows** whether (if) *"the spirit (ruach) of beast"* goes down when the body returns to the dust?

***"Who know* that the breath (ruach) of man ascends upward and the breath (ruach) of the beast descends downward to the earth? (Ecclesiastes 3:21 New American Standard Version).**

Solomon is asking a question, to which he gives no answer, **but his question is turned into a statement of fact when it is used to prove that man has a spirit (ruach) in him that is immortal, but the same spirit (ruach) in a beast is mortal.** When his question is changed into a statement that says Solomon knew mankind has immortal souls, and beasts do not, it makes a lie out of his statement that *"there is no advantage for man over beast,"* there would be a very big advantage.

There is an old saying, "That which proves to much proves nothing." The **spirit** of a person going up after his death is used to prove a person has a **soul** that does not die when his body dies; therefore, this soul is immortal, then the beast having a spirit that goes down after its death would prove that the beast has a soul just as immortal as a person's soul, and that it does not die when the body of the beast dies; therefore, its soul is immortal. **The "spirit (ruach) of a beast," and the "spirit (ruach) of a man" are in the same sentence, and both times "spirit" is from the same Hebrew word, there is no way to make one "spirit" be an immortal something that cannot die, and the other "spirit" be only the life of the body that is not immortal and must die.** If a beast has a soul or a spirit (Hebrew—ruach, the same soul—ruach persons have) that separates from its body, and it goes anywhere after the death of the person or beast, if it goes up or if it goes down, then the ruach of beast would be just as alive after the ruach of the beast separated from the body of the beast as the ruach of a person would be after the ruach separated from the body of the person. If the spirit (ruach) going up proves it is immortal and cannot die, then the spirit (ruach) going down would prove that it is immortal and cannot die.

Ruach is translate 16 different ways, most often as breath and wind, and is used to describe all earthly living beings. All flesh, birds, cattle, beasts, and every creeping thing, all have the same spirit (ruach) as man (Genesis 7:22; Genesis 6:17; Ecclesiastes 3:19).

**This is a question that Solomon asked, but he did not give an answer.** Yet, many give their own answer and say, “Yes I know where a soul of man goes, it returns to God all the way up to Heaven,” and then use their uninspired answer to prove that Solomon said a person has an immortal soul that is alive and goes up to God in Heaven after the death of and without the person, or a soul that is alive and goes down to Hell after the death of the person. **That the lost are transported directly down to Hell at death much be added, for if not, they have made this passage teach all will be saved at death, and that before and without the death of Christ. But was Solomon asking whether anyone knows that the dead go to Heaven?** In the time of Solomon the Pagans that were all around Israel believed in reincarnation; the resurrection and life after death was not known about in the Old Testament, “*Our Savior Christ Jesus, who abolished death, and brought life and immortality to light through the gospel*” (2 Timothy 1:10), both *life* and *immortality* were brought to light by Christ, both were not known about before Christ. With the revelation that Solomon had, with all that had been made known at that time he could see nothing after death for man or beast. All the blessings of the Law were in their lifetime, not after death (Deuteronomy 28:11). **Not one word about a blessing after death** (see chapter seven—“A strange and unexplainable silence of the Old Testament on punishment and life after death” and (6) above); having no revelation about a resurrection after death Solomon saw the same fate for both, and saw no pre-eminence of one over the other after death, they both die. Without knowing of a resurrection after death, he could not see any life for either one. See Psalm 115:17; 6:5; 146:4-5; Ecclesiastes 9:5; Job 14:21. “*As it is with the good man, so with the sinner...the same destiny overtakes all...for the living know that they will die, but the dead know nothing*” (Ecclesiastes 9:2-5 New International Version). Without the resurrection to immortality, which was not make known at that time (2 Timothy 1:10; 1 Corinthians 15:18) all blessing and all cursing would be in this life—time, no blessing or cursing after death (Deuteronomy 28:1-68).

**Reincarnation, that all living being, both men and animals, have a soul that will come back as a higher or lower life was taught by the Pagans that was all around Israel at that time. Solomon was asking a question of someone. His question might have been to the Pagans asking them how did they know about reincarnation, how did they know a spirit or soul of a person or beast goes anywhere after death and is reincarnated. According to Pagan teaching that all, both persons and beasts do have an immortal soul, and they believe this soul that came form another life before this life and it goes somewhere after death. He asked how or by what authority did they know this; how did they know some are reincarnated down to a lower life and some up to a higher life? The only answer would be they did not know; there was no revelation from God, no way to know about reincarnation but human reasoning.**

Unconditional immortality must change what Solomon said, *"For the fate of the sons of men and the fate of beasts is the same. As one dies so dies the other; indeed, they all have the same breath (ruach) and there is no advantage for man over beast, for all is vanity. All go to the same place, All come from the dust and all return to the dust.* (After clearly saying man and beast go to the same place, he is made to say in the next sentence that they do not go to the same place). *Who knows that the breath (ruach) of man ascends upward and the breath (ruach) of beast descends downward to the earth?"* His question must be changed into a statement of fact that would make it be a direct contradiction of what he had just said for it to teach today's theology. Solomon says the living knows something, but the dead do not know anything. (Ecclesiastes 9:5).

- The "living" person knows.
- The "dead" person does not know.
  - It is the person that knows or does not know, not a soul that is in the living person, but that soul has left the dead person.

He did not say, "Dead bodies do not know anything." There is no way anyone can say the dead know anything unless they say Solomon did not tell the truth, for if the dead go immediately to Heaven or Hell at death, they do know something. How could they be in torment in Hell if those in Hell do not know anything?

This is spoken of **all men**, not just the good ones. If it is an immortal spirit going to Heaven, then it would make both the good and the bad go to Heaven at death, and this was before the death of Christ. If a soul in all goes back to God, if all were going to Heaven ("up" which they say is back to God in Heaven) at death before and without the death of Christ, then why did Christ die? **Has not the death of Christ been made useless?**

In "Life and Death," Alexander Campbell argued that spirits, whether it be spirits of angels or spirits of men, cannot die just because they are spirits, is there anyway that his argument would not prove that the spirits of beast cannot die just because they are spirits? But he is changing the spirit (ruach, breath of life) into an immortal, deathless soul that has its own life that is separate from the life of men or beast, with the spirit (ruach) of beast being mortal, and the spirit (ruach) of man being immortal, even when the same word in the Hebrew is used in the same passage; by what revelation can anyone know that one spirit (ruach) is immortal, and the other spirit (ruach) is mortal?

**Is there a soul that has its own life apart from the person?** Of those that believe a soul is immortal (1) some believe "it" has always existed, that God did not make it; (2) some believe souls were once in Heaven before God set them to earth; (3) some believe God makes a soul at the birth of each person; but ALL that believe there is an immortal soul believe "it" has its own life and after the death of the person it was in it will live its own life without the dead person both (1) life before the

resurrection, and (2) life even if there is no resurrection. A deathless soul has no need of a resurrection. **Regardless of when it is believed about when a soul became immortal, it could not be immortal without its own endless life, a life apart from the life of the mortal person an immortal soul is believed to be in.**

**(9) LIFE DEPARTING AND RETURNING** 1 Kings 17:2: *"Then he stretched himself upon the child three times, and called to the Lord, and said, 'O Lord my God, I pray Thee, let this child's **life** (nehphesh) return to him."* (1 Kings 17:21 New American Standard Version). The same Hebrew word is used in Genesis 1:30. *"And to everything that creeps upon the earth, wherein there is **life** (nehphesh)."* Nehphesh is translated "life" or "lives" 108 times in the King James Version. A person having an immortal something, whatever that something is believed to be, that is not subject to death is not in this passage. Since the child later died again after his resurrection, he was still mortal after this resurrection, just as mortal as before.

1. The earthly life that left the body.
2. It is the same earthly life that returned to the body.
3. It is the same earthly life that left the body when the child died a second time of old age.

When the bodily life is restored only to die again, how could this prove an immortal soul left the body and returned? The life that left the body and was restored must be changed to a spirit left the body and returned.

**PASSAGES THAT SPEAK OF LIFE DEPARTING AND RETURNING TO THE BODY** 1 Kings 17:21: This is frequently used to prove that an immortal soul had left the child, and was in Heaven even though nothing is stated nor implies about either an immortal soul, nor about it being in Heaven; both are added to it.

**King James Version:** *"And he stretched himself upon the child three times, and cried unto the Lord, and said, O Lord my God, I pray thee, let the child's **soul** (life—nehphesh) come into him again. And the Lord heard the voice of Elijah; and the **soul** (life—nehphesh) of the child came into him again, and he revived."*

**New American Standard Bible:** *"Then he stretched himself upon the child three times, and called to the Lord, and said, 'O Lord my God, I pray Thee, let this child's **life** (nehphesh) return to him,' And the Lord heard the voice of Elijah, and the **life** (nehphesh) of the child returned to him and he revived."*

**New International Version:** *"Then he stretched himself out on the body three times and cried to the Lord, 'O Lord my God, let this boy's **life** (nehphesh) return to him!' The Lord heard Elijah's cry, and the boy's **life** (nehphesh) returned to him and he lived."*

**The New American Bible:** *"He called out to the Lord: 'O Lord, my God, will you afflict even the widow with whom I am staying by killing her son?' Then he stretched himself out upon the child three times and called out to the Lord: 'O Lord, my God, let the **life breath** (nehphesh) return to the body of this child.' The Lord heard the prayer of Elijah; the **life breath** (nehphesh) returned to the child's body and he revived," (Note: "breath" was added, it is not in the Hebrew).*

**The New English Bible:** *"O Lord my God, let the **breath of life** (nehphesh), I pray, return to the body of this child. The Lord listened to Elijah's cry, and the **breath of life** (nehphesh) returned to the child's body and he revived," (Note: "breath" was added, it is not in the Hebrew).*

**GENESIS 35:18:**

**King James Version:** "And it came to pass as her **soul** (life—nehphesh) was in departing (for she died)."

**New International Version:** "As she **breathed her last** (nehphesh)—for she was dying."

**Revised English Bible:** "Then with her **last breath** (nehphesh), as she was dying."

**New Century Version:** "As she **lay dying** (nehphesh), she named the boy."

**New Living Bible:** "Rachel was about to die, but with her **last breath** (nehphesh) she named him Bensni."

**The New American Bible:** "With her **last breath** (nehphesh)...for she was at the point of death," .

An immortal undying being that is in a person can be read into this only by misapplying today's meaning of the English word "soul" to the Hebrew word "nehphesh" See Acts 20:9-10. It was "**life**" that departed, not some inter immortal something that cannot die that some believe to be in a person, but it departed from the person it was in, and it went to Heaven or Hell before and without the Judgment, but this soul or this spirit left Heaven or Hell and returned back to the person it had been in. Psalm 104:29-30 "You take away their **spirit** (ruach—sea creature and animals—see verses 24-25), they expire, and return to their dust. You send forth Your **spirit** (ruach—sea creature and animals) they are created." When the life (ruach) of beasts and creeping things depart (Genesis 9:5), no one believes it is an immortal soul departing for someplace without the animal or creature that it was in.

**Giving up the ghost in the King James Version:** "Gahvag" is used 23 times in the Hebrew Old Testament. It is translated *die* or *died* 12 times, "Gave up the ghost" 9 times, *perished* 2 times. In 14 times of the 23 gahvag is the person that died or perished, in the other 9 times gahvag is changed to a ghost that was leaving the person it had been in. The person dying is changed to a living ghost departing from a person. One Hebrew word was changed to four English words "gave up the ghost," and dying is changed to departing; ever one knows departing and dying do not mean the same thing.

Genesis 25:28: The King James Version was made when they were coming out of the Dark Age and it seems as if the translators still had many of the Dark Age beliefs that they wanted to put into the Bible; beliefs that the translators of later translations did not have.

- "Then Abraham **give up the ghost**" King James Version.
- "Abraham *breathed his last and **died***" New American Standard Bible, New Revised Standard Version, New International Version.
- "He **died** at a great age" Revised English Bible.
- "Then he *breathed his last, **dying** at a ripe old age*" New American Bible, (Catholic).

The same as the Old Testament, one word was translated into four words to put the ghost they believed in into the Bible, but most newer translations translated it as "dead" or "breathed his last." There is no such thing as a ghost of a person and the Dark Age Roman Catholic ghost of the King James Version has been removed by most translations.

In the New Testament, King James Version:

"Ekpneo" is translated "give up the ghost" three times, Mark 15:37; 15:39; Luke 23:46. There is no "ghost" in the Greek in these passages, it was added by the translators to put their Dark Age pagan belief in the Bible.

- Ekpneo in Revised Standard Version and in many other translations.
  - "And Jesus uttered a loud cry, and **breathed his last**" (Ekpneo) Mark 15:37.
  - "He thus **breathed his last**" (Ekpneo) Mark 15:39.
  - "And having said this he **breathed his last**" (Ekpneo) Luke 23:46.
- Ekpneo in the New International Version:
  - "Jesus **breathed his last**" (Ekpneo – one word into three words) Mark 15:37.
  - "He **died**" (Ekpneo) Mark 15:39.
  - "He **breathed his last**" (Ekpneo – one word into three words) Luke 23:46.

"Ekpsuhe" translated two times "give up the ghost," Acts 5:5; Acts 12:23. One time "yielded up the ghost," Acts 5:10. Neither was there a "ghost" in the Greek in these three passages; it was also added by the translators to put their pagan belief in the Bible.

- Ekpsuhe in the Revised Standard Version:
  - "When Ananias heard these words, he fell down and **died**" (Ekpsuhe) Acts 5:5.
  - "Immediately she fell down at his feet and **died**" (Ekpsuhe) Acts 5:10.
  - "He was eaten by worms and **died**" (Ekpsuhe) Acts 12:23.
- Ekpsuhe in the New International Version:
  - "When Ananias heard this, he fell down and **died**" (Ekpsuhe) Acts 5:5
  - "At that moment she fell down at his feet and **died**" (Ekpsuhe) Acts 5:10.
  - "Was eaten by worms and **died**" (Ekpsuhe) Acts 12:23.

**(10) GATHERED TO HIS PEOPLE** Genesis 25:8-9. See chapter three.

**(11) DAVID'S SON** 2 Samuel 12:23: "I shall go to him, but he will not return to me" 2 Samuel 12:23. How and where did David think he would go to where his son was? See (10) above. Many years after David's death, Peter said David has not gone to Heaven (Acts 2:29).

**(12) SAMUEL OR A DEMON** 1 Samuel 28:7-28: From the days of the "church fathers" it has been debated whether this was Samuel or a demon. Those who believe in an immortal "immaterial, invisible part of man" say this was Samuel to prove all are living after death. If it were Samuel, then it proves he was down in the earth, in the ground (in sheol—the grave). Whether it was Samuel, or a demon, he "came up out of the earth." **Saul did not believe today's theology that the dead are in Heaven; he believed they are in the grave. He asked the women to "bring up" Samuel, not "bring down" Samuel. The woman saw something "coming up out of the earth,"**

- "And **bring up** for me whom I shall name to you" (1 Samuel 28:8).
- "Whom shall I **bring up** for you?" (1 Samuel 28:11).
- "I see a divine being **coming up out of the earth**" (1 Samuel 28:13). Saul did not see anyone.
- "Why have you disturbed me **by bringing me up**?" (1 Samuel 28:15).

If this was Samuel he was not in Heaven. Those who believe that all have an immortal soul that goes to Heaven or Hell at death have no choice but to say (1) that

Samuel was not in Heaven, Hell, or Abraham's bosom, (2) or that this was not Samuel that came up out of the earth.

If Samuel was in Heaven, could a medium bring him down out of Heaven, or could a medium bring him over the *"great gulf fixed, that they that would pass from hence to you may not be able, and none may cross over from hence to us"* (Luke 16:26)? If Samuel was in Heaven, do you think Saul would be with him the next day?

**What is a "familiar spirit"?** "Familiar spirit" did not come from ruach or nehphesh. The two words comes from one Hebrew word, "ohv," and it is used 16 times in the Old Testament and translated into two words, "familiar spirits" in all but one where "ohv" is translated, *"burst like new bottles"* (Job 32:29). It is never used of a soul or spirit; ohv is not the spirit (ruach) that returns to God at death (Ecclesiastes 3:21); even though the translators translate both Hebrew words into "spirit" they are nothing alike; Hebrew readers would know that two completely different words are used, but the translators did not let their English reader see this.

STRONG'S WORD 178, "A mumble, i. e., a water—skin (from its hollow sound); hence a necromancer (ventriloquist, as from a jar):—bottle, familiar spirits."

Familiar spirits are spirits of devils (See Numbers 25:13). They are just as real as Satan. It shows us that Satan has been successful in making his lie, *"You shall not die"* be believed, and even today Satan is using demons to promote his lie by passing themselves off as the spirit of a dead loved one to convince some that souls that were in their loved ones are now alive, and that they have an immortal soul that is alive before the resurrection. By believing his lie, *"You shall not die"* is the truth then you have choosing Satan over God. There are so few passages that can be use to teach we have an immortal *"immaterial, invisible part of man"* that some are willing to use it despite the problems it creates for them. *"So Saul died for his trespass which he committed against the Lord, because of the word of the Lord which he did not keep; and also because he asked counsel of a medium, making inquiry of it, and did not inquire of the Lord. Therefore He killed him, and turned the kingdom to David the son of Jesse"* (1 Chronicles 10:13-14).

This being did not come from Heaven or Hell, but *"up out of the earth."* An immortal *"immaterial, invisible part of man"* being in the earth is not what is believe by many today, and this woman would not have been able to see the invisible spirit that a soul is believed to be by many that believe there is now an immortal soul that is in a person. If it were Samuel, instead of proving he was alive, it proves he was dead and in the grave; to bring one back from the dead is a resurrection of the dead, if not, why not? If it were Samuel, it would have been as all the other temporary resurrections of the Bible. Lazarus and other temporary resurrections lived a normal human life, and died as all others do; they were not raised immortal; they were raised still in the image of Adam, not with the spiritual body in the image of Christ. **If this were a resurrection of Samuel, then Samuel knew that he would be back in**

the grave the next day; therefore, he was not raised immortal. How can this be used to prove a person now has a something in them that is believed to be an invisible immortal soul that Saul could not see, but the woman could see? Neither a temporary resurrection of Samuel from the grave, or an evil spirit impersonating Samuel would tell us (1) nothing of life after death, (2) or that a person now has an immortal *"immaterial, invisible part."*

God had refused to answer Saul by any of the ways He spoke to man at that time, He did not answer by prophets, by dreams, and not by Urim and Thummim (1 Samuel 28:6). Then why would God answer by a way that He had forbidden Saul or anyone to use? She did not say this was Samuel but "a God." Saul did not see Samuel.

If this were Samuel, it would be a contradiction to today's theology of the souls in the saved going to Heaven at death for Samuel would be **up in Heaven**, and he would be in Heaven both (1) without the death of Christ, (2) and without the resurrection, not **down in the grave** (sheol-hades) unto the resurrection of the dead. It must first be assumed (1) that there is a soul in a person that is now immortal and cannot die, (2) then assumed that a person using witchcraft can call a "soul" out of Heaven which is where those who believe that this was a soul that had been in Samuel believed this soul would have been, for they believe that souls that had been in the saved go to Heaven at the moment of death, (3) then assumed that an *"immaterial, invisible part of man (soul)"* can be seen, but only by the person using witchcraft, not by Saul. Would not this make Satan and those who practice witchcraft have the power to actually reach into Heaven and remove a "soul" from the very presents of God?

**What about "Abraham's bosom"?** Those who believe all go to the good or bad side of hades believe none can come back to earth. How is it that they have Samuel coming back from the good side of hades, and telling Saul that he would be with him in Abraham's bosom the next day? It would not only teach that the living can converse with the those in hades, but also teaches that a witch can bring someone back to earth from hades, or Heaven even when their "immortal soul" did not want to come. If Samuel could come back why was Lazarus not permitted to come back to the rich mans five brethren (Luke 16:24-31)?

**(13) "WHO CAN LIVE WITH CONSUMING FIRE?"** Isaiah 33:14: *"Sinners in Zion are terrified; trembling has seized the godless. Who among us can live with the consuming fire? Who among us can live with continual burning?"* First: whose words are these, who said this? The most common opinion of commentators on Isaiah says it was those in fear of threatened destruction by Sennacherib's army. They (*"who among us"*) could see that they were as stubble to be consumed by the Assyrian army, *"Like thorns which are burned in the fire"* (Isaiah 33:12). It was the sinners in

Zion in fear their complete destruction by the Assyrians that uttered these words, not God. Second: there was no relevance to sinners being endlessly burned by God.

J. M. DENNISTON: "But nothing, I think, can be more plainly unwarrantable than to suppose a company of alarmed Jews in Isaiah's day launching out into an expression of their dread at the thought of an eternity of torment. How did such a thought get into their minds? Their conscience surely was not so very lively as to force it upon them. No revelation to that effect had ever been given them," "The perishing soul according to scripture."

What does the Bible say about immortal souls and/or immortal spirit? Nothing. Together soul and spirit are used almost 1,100 times in the King James Version, but not one time is immortal even used in the same verse with either one. Immortal and immortality are in the Old Testament 0 times, in the New Testament, immortal one time, immortality five times, all by Paul. What does he say?

1. Only God has immortality (1 Timothy 6:16).
2. "Now unto the King eternal, immortal" (1 Timothy 1:17).
3. Christ "abolished death and brought life and immortality to light through the gospel" (2 Timothy 1:10).
4. "To them (Christians) that...seek for glory and honor and immortality, eternal life" (Romans 2:7, King James Version).
5. "This mortal must put on immortality" (1 Corinthians 15:53) at the resurrection.
6. "This mortal shall have put on immortality" (1 Corinthians 15:54) after the resurrection.

**ONLY GOD NOW HAS IMMORTALITY:** If a person had something put in them that is immortal, how is it that only God has immortality? If only God has immortality at this present time, then being "*created in the image of God*" cannot mean a person was created with immortality. How can anyone who says, they "speak where the Bible speaks, and are silent where the Bible is silent," say all persons now has an immortal deathless soul in them when the Bible clearly says only God now has immortality (1 Timothy 6:16).

**SEEK FOR IMMORTALITY:** "*To those who by perseverance in doing good seek (zeeteo) for glory and honor and immortality, eternal life*" (Romans 2:7). Zeeteo is used 119 times in the New Testament, and it is always something that the person that is seeking for but does not have.

- "*But seek (zeeteo) you first the kingdom*" (Matthew 6:33).
- "**Seeking** (zeeteo) of him a sign from heaven" (Mark 8:11).
- "*For Herod will seek (zeeteo) the young child*" (Matthew 2:13).
- "*For I seek (zeeteo) not yours but you*" (2 Corinthians 12:14).
- "*In doing good seek (zeeteo) for glory and honor and immortality*" (Romans 2:7).

Why are we to "seek for" that which we are born with? Why will we "*put on immortality*" if the something that is in us is the only thing that will ever be immortal and it has been immortal from birth (or before birth)? **The fact that a person must "seek for...immortality," and immortality must be "put on" at the resurrection is conclusive proof that there is nothing that is in a person now has immortality. Immortality is a promise, a hope, not a present possession; we (persons, not**

immortal souls that are in the persons) **seek for it and must put it on**. If Romans 2:7 and 1 Corinthians 15:53 teaches nothing more, they teach that no part of a person now possess immortality, not that a part of man's nature is **now** mortal, and a part of man's nature is **now** immortal. Could it be said in a more positively way that no man is now immortal; that immortality will not be given to anyone before the second coming of Christ?

**PUT ON IMMORTALITY:** *"For this perishable must **put on** (enduno) the imperishable, and this mortal must **put on** (enduno) immortality. But when this perishable will have **put on** (enduno) the imperishable, and this mortal will have **put on** (enduno) immortality"* (1 Corinthians 15:53-54); most every one understands that a person cannot **put on** something they already have on. *"This mortal"* is this person that is not immortal, this mortal person will **"put on immortal,"** not this soul that is already immortal will **"put on immortal."** The argument that this is speaking of our bodies that are **now** mortal, that there is a soul in us that is **now** immortal will not hold up, it is what is **now** mortal that **will be** immortal by putting immortality on at the resurrection, not a soul that is **now** immortal putting on immortality. Psukee is the only word that is translated "soul" in the New Testament is never used with immortality or immortal.

- *"Be not anxious for your life...nor yet for your body, what you shall **put on** (enduno) (Matthew 6:25)*
- *"**Put not on** (enduno) two coats" (Mark 6:9)*
- *"**Put on** (enduno) the whole armor of God" (Ephesians 6:11)*
- *"And we shall be changed. For this corruptible **must put on** (enduno) incorruption, and this mortal **must put on** (enduno) immortality" (1 Corinthians 15:52-53).*
- *"For when this corruptible **shall have put on** (enduno) incorruption, and this mortal **shall have put on** (enduno) immortality" (1 Corinthians 15:54).*

We seek for that which we do not now have, we put on that which we do not now have on. It is said so simple that it is the person, not a soul that will be immortal that only those who do not want to see will not see it.

- If we now have a soul that is not corruptible, how can that soul *"put on incorruption"* when it would now has incorruption on? *"Be changed"* from what, from corruptible bodies to incorruptible bodies, not from corruptible souls to incorruptible souls.
- If we now have a soul in us that is now immortal, how can that soul *"put on immortality"* when it would now has immortality on?
- If we now have a soul in us that cannot die, how can a soul inherit *"eternal life"* when it would now has eternal life?
  - Will a soul *"put on"* and *"inherit"* that which it already has?

What is the something that is in a person that is now mortal, but will put on immortality (1 Corinthians 15:53)? **It could not be a soul that is now immortal that will put on immortality at the resurrection, but a person that is now mortal that will put on immortality at the resurrection.** *"This mortal"* is a person as he now is

in the image of Adam, and this person will become an immortal person with a spiritual body in the image of Christ. Only the body will be different, not the person.

Corruption and mortal are both used throughout the Bible, but incorruption and immortal are used only by Paul, and are never used referring to the lost, or never to a soul or to a spirit. Immortality was brought to light by the Gospel, and will be "*put on*" by the saved at the judgment. **It is never said the lost will ever "*put on immortality,*" or that they will ever have either incorruption, or immortality, or that anyone (lost or saved) now has immortality before the resurrection.** There is not one verse that teaches all men, both good and bad are born with an immortal soul that is inside of them and it can never die, and God cannot kill it. An "*immaterial invisible*" part of a person called an "immortal soul" is not in the Bible. If this doctrine is not changing the Bible, it cannot be changed. **For a person to have a soul and/or spirit, which will live forever in Heaven or Hell, that person must now have immortality. According to the teaching of some, a soul is the only part of a person that will ever be immortal, and it is now as immortal as it will ever be. This teaching makes Paul's statement in 1 Corinthians 15:53, "*This mortal must put on immortality*" not possible.** With today's teaching there is no sense to what Paul said for it would make him be saying, "This immortal soul must put on immortality" and become an immortal soul at the resurrection.

- The doctrine and precepts of man. An immortal soul from birth—a soul, which many teach is the only thing that will ever be immortal, would already be immortal before the resurrection.
- Bible doctrine. A mortal person will put on immortality at the resurrection (1 Corinthians 15:53). **Both cannot be true.**
  - **Not one passage in the whole Bible says a person is now immortal.**
  - **Not one passage in the whole Bible says a person has an immortal soul that is now inside of the person.**
  - **Not one passage in the whole Bible says a person has an immortal spirit that is now inside of the person.**

The Bible is not silent on this question for there are many passages that say loud and clear that all are now mortal, and not one passage of scripture says any person will be immortal before the resurrection.

DR. ROBERT A. MOREY: Even though he believes there is an immortal soul that is in a person said, "From our examination of the terms 'immortal' and 'incorruptible,' it is obvious that they describe the attributes of the resurrection body and do not speak of the condition of man's soul after death. As a matter of fact, the phrase 'the immortality of a soul' is never found in Scripture." "Death and the Afterlife," page 95, 1984, Bethany House Publishers.

**Three words are translated immortal and incorruptible in the New Testament.** Not one time are they used referring to a soul, every time they are used referring to a person, not to an "*immaterial invisible part of man*" (W. E. Vine). Immortality is always something a person will have, but does not now have. **Only**

**when they are used referring to God are they in the present tense. When used referring to a person they are always in the future tense.**

**(1) ATHANASIA** (immortality) is used three times. Not one of them is used referring to a person now in this life before the resurrection, or to a no substance invisible living being that is in a person. **Immortality (athanasia) is never used referring to the lost.**

Athanasia used referring to God.

- 1 Timothy 6:16 "*Who alone possesses **immortality** (athanasia) and dwells in unapproachable light.*" Only God now has immortality. If there were souls that are now immortal then how could it be that God is only one that is now immortal?
- 1 Corinthians 15:53 "*This mortal must put on **immortality** (athanasia).*
  - "Athanasia is used referring to a person only after the resurrection, immortality is not now attributed to a person, or to anything that some believe to be in a person unto their death. After the resurrection it is the mortal person that will be immortal, not something in a person that is already immortal.
- 1 Corinthians 15:54 "*But when...this mortal shall have put on **immortality** (athanasia).*" Immortality for a person is in the future, not the present. A resurrected person must put on immortality, not a soul that is already immortal.

**(2) APHTHARTOS** (incorruptible) is used seven times. Not one of the seven is used referring to a person, or to a no substance being that is in now a person in this life.

- Apthartos used referring to God.
  - (1) Romans 1:23 "*The glory of the **incorruptible** (apthartos) God.*" In this passage man now being corruptible is in contrast with God being incorruptible.
  - (2) 1 Timothy 1:17 "*Now unto the King eternal, **immortal** (apthartos), invisible, the only God.*"
- Apthartos used referring to a person only after the resurrection.
  - (3) 1 Corinthians 15:52 "*And the dead shall be raised **incorruptible** (apthartos), and we shall be changed.*"
- Apthartos used referring to our inheritance after the resurrection.
  - (4) 1 Peter 1:4 "*Who...begat us again...unto an inheritance **incorruptible** (apthartos), and undefiled, and that fades not away, reserved in heaven for you.*"
- Apthartos used referring to our crown that we will receive after the resurrection.
  - (5) 1 Corinthians 9:25 "*Now they do it to receive a corruptible crown; but we an **incorruptible** (apthartos).*" (An incorruptible crown, not an incorruptible soul).
- Apthartos used referring to the word of God.
  - (6) 1 Peter 1:23 "*Having been begotten again, not of corruptible seed, but of **incorruptible** (apthartos), through the word of God, which lives and abides forever.*"
- Apthartos used referring to our adorning.
  - (7) 1 Peter 3:4 "*But let it be the hidden man of the heart, in the **incorruptible** (apthartos) apparel of a meek and quiet spirit.*"

**(3) APHTHARSIA** (incorruption) is used eight times. Not one of them is used referring to a person before the resurrection, or ever to an immortal "*immaterial, invisible part of man*" if there were such a thing, only to a person after the resurrection.

- Aphtharsia used referring to a person only after the resurrection, something we seek for, but do not now have (the body we will have, not something that now exist).
- (1) Romans 2:7 *"Who will render to every man according to his works: to them that...seek for glory and honor and **incorruption** (aphtharsia), eternal life."*
- (2) 1 Corinthians 15:42 *"So also is the resurrection of the dead. **It** is sown in corruption; **it** is raised in **incorruption** (aphtharsia)." Note: it is the dead person, not a dead immortal soul that is resurrected; incorruption is only after the resurrection of the dead person. It is the dead person that is sown in the grave; a deathless soul could not be put in the grave. **There is nothing about a "soul" in this, nothing about a "soul" in 1 Corinthians 15.***
- (3) (4) and (5) 1 Corinthians 15:50, 15:53 and 15:54 *"Now...flesh and blood cannot inherit the kingdom of God; neither does corruption inherit **incorruption** (aphtharsia). Behold, I tell you a mystery: We all shall not sleep, but we shall all be changed, in a moment, in the twinkling of an eye, at the last trump: for the dead shall be raised incorruptible, and we shall be changed. For this corruptible (body) must put on **incorruption** (aphtharsia), and this mortal must put on immortality (thanasia). But, when this corruptible (body) shall have put on **incorruption** (aphtharsia), and this mortal shall have put on immortality (thanasia)."*
- (6) 2 Timothy 1:10 *"Christ Jesus, who abolished death, and brought life and **immortality** (aphtharsia) to light through the gospel." The only way we can know about immortality after the resurrection is through the gospel, not from philosophy or science, not from the Old Testament.*
- Aphtharsia used referring to our love for Christ.
- (7) Ephesians 6:24 *"Grace be with all them that love our Lord Jesus Christ with a love **incorruptible** (aphtharsia)."*
- Aphtharsia used referring to our doctrine.
- (8) Titus 2:7 *"In all things showing yourself an ensample of good works; in your doctrine showing **uncorruptness** (aphtharsia), gravity, sound speech."*

Immortality or uncorruption is not used in the Old Testament; eternal is used in the King James Version two times, translated from two different Hebrew words.

- Strong's Word 6924—kehdem It is used referring to God one time, *"The eternal God"* Deuteronomy 33:27. It is translated *"ancient"* many times, in Deuteronomy 33:15 it is translated *"the ancient (kehdem) mountains,"* and just a few verses later the same word is changed to *"eternal (kehdem) God;"* why did they not translate kehdem "eternal" when it had reference to mountains? In Psalm 68:34 *"the heavens of heavens, which were of old (kehdem)."* It is translated ancient, old, past, before, and east many times, but today's concept of eternal that was unknown to the ancient Hebrew people and was translated "eternal" only this one time, but in all the other passages where kehdem also has references to God it is *"even he that abideth of old (kehdem)"* Psalm 55:19; *"before his works of old (kehdem)"* Proverbs 8:22; *"whose goings forth have been from of old (kehdem)"* Micah 5:2.
- Strong's word 5769—olawn, and is used in Isaiah 60:15. This Hebrew word (olawn) is used hundreds of times but is translated eternal only this one time.

The doctrine that God made a person with an immortal soul that cannot cease to exist, and that even God cannot destroy this something that is believed to be in a person is based on pagan philosophy, not on the word of God; therefore, the

argument that the lost must live somewhere for they cannot cease to exist is also based on pagan philosophy. **If a person were born with something in them that is now immortal and not subject to death, would it not be strange that there is but one clear passage in the entire Bible that says, "You shall not surely die" (Genesis 3:4), and it is from the father of lies (John 8:44).**

**THE MANY VIEWS OF "SOUL" and/or "SPIRIT."** A brief review of some of the many divisions in what people believe about immortality and a soul; views of a soul that require death to mean eternal life somewhere, and that in all there is a deathless soul that possess immortality at or before birth.

**(1). THE PAGAN VIEW OF REINCARNATION OF A SOUL.** Ancient Egyptian belief was that a soul had a gloomy existence in the underworld (transmigration). The Greeks and Romans believed almost the same with some changes. Oriental and Pythagorean philosophy, Hindus, Burmans, Buddhists, and Grand Lama all believed in some form of reincarnation. They believed the "soul" of the evil had some punishment, but not all believed it had the same punishment, or that the punishment is eternal. Today, worldwide there are more who believe in reincarnation than all other afterlife beliefs combined. Many religions that are not Christian believe in some form of reincarnation.

**(2). THE CATHOLIC AND PROTESTANT VIEW.** Mankind is born with an immortal soul in them that can never die or be destroyed. A very small percent of these souls will go to Heaven at death, but most of the souls will go to Hell and be endlessly tormented by God.

**(3). THE HADES VIEW.** This view is that no soul goes to Heaven or Hell at death, but all souls that were in the saved are rewarded in a place many call Abraham's bosom, and the souls that were in the lost are tormented before they are judged, before the resurrection and judgment. Death is changed to life before the resurrection, but not life in Heaven or Hell.

**(4). THE UNIVERSALIST VIEW.** All souls will be saved. Those who do not obey Christ in this lifetime will have an "attitude adjustment" after death, and a soul that is believed to be in the person will end up in Heaven with no souls in Hell.

**(5). THE RESURRECTION TO IMMORTAL LIFE ON THE RESTORED EARTH.** This view is that the earthly body will be raised and restored to be like Adam before his sin on a restored earth. No soul will be immortal in Heaven or Hell. Some believe the lost will be raised with the same mortal bodies we now have, and Christ will return to earth and will rule forever over the earth from Jerusalem; the lost will literally be cast into Gehenna, which will have been restored. This is believed by many of the Premillennialists that are in many of the Protestant churches.

- Many other minor views in religions around the world.

- There are some minor differences within all the above views. The fate of those who do not obey Christ is made to fit with their view of immortality. Protestants now have many minor differences, and some differences that in no way could be called minor.

**(6). THE BIBLE VIEW.** It does not teach the natural immortality of a person, or immortality of anything that is in a person. All are now mortal. Persons that are in Christ will be raised immortal at the coming of Christ. All others will be raised to judgment and will have their part in the lake of fire, which is the second death.

THE PHILOSOPHICAL ARGUMENT sometimes used to prove innate or inborn immortality.

1. There are only two substances, matter, and spirit.
2. Matter has no power of thought or life.
3. Therefore, matter has life and the power of thought then an immortal soul or an immortal spirit had to be added.

Many of the theologians of today have without any proof come up with “matter cannot think,” therefore, there has to be an immortal soul, or there would be no thinking. If being able to think means there is an immortal soul in a person, all living animal think, some think better than other, therefore, all animals would also have an immortal soul for all animals have the power of thought; therefore, all animals have a soul. If animals had no power to think, your dog would not remember you. If thinking proves a person has an immortal soul living in them, it would also prove all animals have an immortal soul in them, it would prove more then they want to prove, more than they believe.

- If it were true that the body (matter) cannot think, that only a soul can think it would give an immortal soul to every kind of life, to all insects, all animals, even worms would be immortal.
- If this were true Jesus could not have given eternal life to anyone, they would all have it without Him.

If it is an immortal soul that does the thinking, when it is put into a person at birth what is its thinking ability of a soul at the birth of the person? Why does this immortal soul that does the thinking have to learn before the infant can speak? If a soul thinks through a person brain, sees through a persons eyes, hears through a persons ears, speaks through a persons lips, how could a soul do any of these things after it leaves the person it had been in? God did not make a body them put an immortal soul that has a life of its own, and that soul will live without the body, and the only life in the body is the life of the soul? No, God made the body them breathed into the body the “breath of life” and the body became a living being.

---

An abridgment from Miles Grant, “Positive Theology,” chapter 5 “Conditional Immortality,” 1885.

“The Hebrew word nehphesh and the Greek word psukee are translated in **fifty different ways in the Bible**. These fifty may be reduced to three. **(1) The LIFE of any living being. (2) ANY living being. (3) The DESIRE of any living being.**” **All fifty words have a reference to this life, not one to an immortal soul.**

### (1) "The LIFE of any living creature"

**SOUL:** Nehphesh and psukee "The word soul occurs in our English Bible 535 times." (Note: Mr. Grant was using the King James Version where nehphesh and psukee are translated soul about 535 times. If the New International Version 2011 update were used, they are translated soul only 95 times. Life, person, heart, or a pronoun for a person is used much more than in the list he gives below).

- Nehphesh is used over 870 times in the Old Testament and translated soul 475 times in the King James Version. Psukee is used 106 times in the New Testament and translated soul 58 times in the King James Version.
  - From ndeevah 1 time (Job 30:16, the only time this word is in the Bible).
  - From nshahmah 1 time" Nshahman is used 24 times, mostly translated "breath" or "breath of life," It is translated "souls" only 1 of the 24 times in the King James Version (Isaiah 57:16), but is changed to "breath" in the New American Standard.
1. *"The **soul** (nehphesh) that sins, it shall die"* Ezekiel 18:4, 20. How is it that Ezekiel did not know an immortal soul couldn't die?
  2. *"No **soul** (nehphesh) of you shall eat blood"* Leviticus 17:12. Can a soul that has no earthly substance can and does eat blood?
  3. *"That **soul** (nehphesh) shall be cut off"* Leviticus 7:20.
  4. *"Our **soul** (nehphesh) dried away"* Numbers 11:6.
  5. *"They have dug a pit for **soul** (nehphesh)"* Jeremiah 18:20. Could they put an immortal soul in a pit?
  6. *"To slay the **souls** (nehphesh) that should not die, and to save the **souls** (nehphesh) alive that should not live"* (Ezekiel 13:19). By today's definition of soul, "an invisible something that cannot die," makes this passage be nonsense and foolish. It was lives, or persons that were saved or killed, not invisible souls that cannot be killed.
  7. *"For you have delivered my **soul** (nehphesh—life) from death"* (Psalm 56:13). His life (nehphesh) had been saved from death. Not a soul that could not be dead. He had been saved from death, past tense, not will be delivered from death, future tense.
  8. *"Let them be put to shame and confounded that seek after my **soul** (nehphesh—life)"* (Psalm 70:2).
  9. *"Let the enemy pursue my **soul** (nehphesh—life), and overtake it"* (Psalm 7:5).
  10. *"Deliver my **soul** (nehphesh—life) from the wicked"* (Psalm 17:13).
  11. *"Deliver my **soul** (nehphesh—life) from the sword"* (Psalm 22:20).
  12. *"Rescue my **soul** (nehphesh—life) from their destructions"* (Psalm 35:17).
  13. *"For strangers are risen up against me, and violent men have sought after my **soul** (nehphesh—life)"* Psalm 54:3.
  14. *"But those that seek my **soul** (nehphesh—life) to destroy it"* (Psalm 63:9).
  15. *"Let them be put to shame and confounded that seek after my **soul** (nehphesh—life)"* (Psalm 70:2).
  16. *"They that lay in wait for my **soul** (nehphesh—life)"* (Psalm 71:10).
  17. *"He spared not their **soul** (nehphesh—life) from death"* (Psalm 78:50).
  18. *"You have delivered my **soul** (nehphesh—life) from death"* (Psalm 116:8). Clearly the writers of Psalm did not understand nehphesh to mean a part of a person that cannot die. Even the King James translators repeatedly translated nehphesh as life.
  19. *"They devised to take away my **life** (nehphesh)"* (Psalm 31:13).
  20. *"They also that seek after my **life** (nehphesh) (Psalm 38:12 and many more like this)." Today's readers would have understood it better if they had been more uniform for if someone were trying to kill us, we would not say they were after our "soul" but after our "life." Most translations are somewhat better than the King James and a few are much better translated*
  21. *"Able to destroy both body and **soul** (psukee)"* Matthew 10:28.
  22. *"Shall save a **soul** (psukee) from death"* James 5:20.

23. 515 more. Some have reference to man, both to living men and to dead men. Some have reference to any living beings (living creatures). Some have reference to both man and other living beings.

#### LIFE:

- Nehphesh "is rendered **life and lives** one hundred and twenty times, and is applied indiscriminately to man and beast." Genesis 1: 20. Genesis 1: 30; 9: 4; 9: 5; 19:1 7; 19:19; 32:30; 44:30; Exodus 4:19; 21: 23; 21:30; Leviticus 17:11; 17:14. Numbers 35:31. Deuteronomy 12:23. Deuteronomy 19:21. Deuteronomy 24:6. Joshua. 2:13; 2:14; 9:24; Judges 5:18; 9:17; 12:3; 18:25; Ruth 4:15. 1 Samuel: 19:5. 1 Samuel. 19:11. 1 Samuel. 20: 1. 1 Samuel. 22:23. 1 Samuel. 23:15. 1 Samuel. 26: 24; 1 Samuel. 28:9; 1 Samuel. 28:21; 2 Samuel. 1:9; 4:8; 14:7; 16:11; 18:13; 19:5; 23:17; 1 Kings 1:12; 2:23; 3:11; 19:2; 19:3; 19:4; 19:10, 14; 20:31; 20:39; 20:42; 2 Kings 1:13; 1:14; 7:7; 10:24; 1 Chronicles 11:19; 2 Chronicles 1:11; Esther 7:3; 7:7; 8:11; 9:16; Job 2:4; 2:6; 6:11; 13:14; 31:39; Psalm 31:13; 38:12; Proverbs 1:18; 1:19; 6:26; 7:23; 12:10; 13:3; 13:8; Isaiah 15:4; 43:4; Jeremiah 4:30; 11:21; 21:7; 21:9; 22:25; 34:20, 21; 38:2; 38:16; 39:18 (2 times); 44:30; 45:5; 46:26; 48:6; 49:37; Lamentations 2:19. Lam 5:9; Ezekiel 32:10; Jonah 1:14; Jonah 4:3.
- Psukee **life and lives** forty times. Matthew 2:20; 6:25; 10:39; 16:25 (2 times); 20:28; Mark 3:4; 8:35 (2 times); 10:45; Luke 6:9; 9:24 (2 times); 9:56; 12:22, 23; 14:26; 17:33; John 10:11; 10:15; 10:17; 12:25 (2 times); 13:37, 38. (2 times); 15:13; Acts 15:26; 20:10; 20:24; 27:10; 27:22; Romans 11:3; 16:4; Philemon 2:30; 1 John 3:16; Revelation 8:9; 12:11.
- GHOST (nehphesh) two times. "*The giving up of the **ghost** (nehphesh)*" Job 11:20. "*She has given up the **ghost** (soul-nehphesh)*" Jeremiah 15:9.
- MORTALLY (nehphesh) one time. "*If any man hate his neighbor...and smite him **mortally** (nehphesh)*" Deuteronomy 19:11.
- BREATH (nehphesh) one time. "*His **breath** (nehphesh) kindles coals*" Job 41:21.

#### (2) "ANY living being" (living creatures)

#### CREATURE (nehphesh) nine times

1. "*Let the waters swarm with swarms of **living creature** (nehphesh)*" Genesis. 1:20.
2. "*And God created the great sea—monsters, and every **living creature** (nehphesh)*" Genesis. 1:21.
3. "*Let the earth bring forth **living creature** (nehphesh) after their kind, cattle, and creeping things, and beasts of the earth*" Genesis 1:24.
4. "*And whatsoever the man called every **living creature** (nehphesh), that was the name thereof*" Genesis 2:19.
5. "***Living creature** (nehphesh)*" Genesis 9:10 birds, cattle, every beast of the earth.
6. "***Living creature** (nehphesh)*" Genesis 9:12 every living creature.
7. "***Living creature** (nehphesh)*" Genesis 9:15 every living creature of all flesh.
8. "***Living creature** (nehphesh)*" Genesis 9:16 every living creature of all flesh.
9. "*Every **living creature** (nehphesh) that moves*" Leviticus. 11:46.  
Birds, cattle, every beast of the earth are a nehphesh, a living being, just as man, but you cannot see this in most English translations.

#### PERSON (nehphesh) thirty times

1. "*Give me the **persons** (nehphesh)*" Genesis 14:21, not, "Give me the immortal souls of the persons."
2. "*And dip it in the water, and sprinkle it upon the tent, and upon all the vessels, and upon the **persons** (nehphesh) that were there, and upon him that touched the bone*" Numbers 19:18. Is water to be sprinkled on immortal souls that have no substances just as it is on the tent and vessels? How can this be? Even the King James translators know water could not be sprinkled on a soul that could not be seen.
3. "*That the manslayer that kills any **persons** (nehphesh) unwittingly...everyone that kills any **persons** (nehphesh)*" (Numbers 35:11-15). Could anyone kill an immortal soul that can never die?

4. "Whoso kills any **persons** (nehphesh), the murderer shall be slain at the mouth of witnesses; but one witness shall not testify against any **persons** (nehphesh) that he die" (Numbers 35:30). How could anyone be a witness to the killing of a soul that they cannot see?
5. "I have occasioned the death of all the **persons** (nehphesh) of your father's house" (1 Samuel 22:22).
6. "They traded the **persons** (nehphesh) of man and vessels of brass for your merchandise" (Ezekiel 27:13). How could they trade souls if no one can see souls?
7. 7 to 30 **person(s)** twenty-three more times: Genesis 36:6; Exodus 16:16; Leviticus 27: 2; Numbers 5:6; 31:19; 31:35; 31:35; 31:40; 31:46; Deuteronomy 10:22; 27:25; Joshua 20:3; 20:9; 2 Samuel 14:14; Proverbs 28:17; Jeremiah 43:5; 43:6; 52:29; 52:29; Jeremiah 52:30; Ezekiel 16:5; 17:17; 33:6.

**MAN** (nehphesh) four times

1. "Every **man** (nehphesh) must eat" Exodus. 12:16. Not "Every immortal soul must eat."
2. "He that kills the life of a **man** (nehphesh)" Leviticus. 24:17.
3. "The money that every **man** (nehphesh)" 2 Kings 12:4.
4. "To him whom **man** (nehphesh) despised" Isaiah 49:7.

**MEN** (nehphesh) one time

1. "And of **men** (nehphesh) a hundred thousand" 1 Chronicles 5:21. A hundred thousand invisible immortal souls or a hundred thousand people?

**HIM** (nehphesh) four times

1. "Let us not kill **him** (nehphesh)" Genesis 37:21, it does not say, "Let us not kill an immortal soul that cannot be killed?"
2. "Less the avenger of the blood...slay **him** (nehphesh)" Deuteronomy. 19:6.
3. "And slay **him** (nehphesh)" Deuteronomy 22:26. Slay an immortal soul or a person?
4. "Seven are an abomination unto **him** (nehphesh)" Proverbs 6:16.

**HE** (nehphesh) two times

1. "**He** (nehphesh) was laid in iron" Psalm 105:18. An immortal soul in iron?
2. "**He** (nehphesh) that labors" Proverbs 16:26.

**ME** (nehphesh) three times

1. "Let **me** (nehphesh) die" Numbers. 23:10; this is "let **me** die" not "let my immortal soul die."
2. "Let **me** (nehphesh) die with the Philistines" Judges 16:30.
3. "I pray thee, let **me** (nehphesh) live" 1 Kings 20:32.

**YOUR SELVES** (nehphesh) six times

1. "You shall not make **yourselves** (nehphesh) abominable" Leviticus. 11:43.
2. "Neither shall you defile **yourselves** (nehphesh)" Leviticus 11:44.
3. "Take you good heed unto **yourselves** (nehphesh)" Deuteronomy. 4:15.
4. "Take good heed therefore unto **yourselves** (nehphesh)" Joshua. 23:11.
5. "Take heed to **yourselves** (nehphesh)" Jeremiah 17:21.
6. "Deceive not **yourselves** (nehphesh)" Jeremiah 37:9.

**YOU** (psukee) one time: "And I will very gladly spend and be spent for **you** (psukee)" 2 Corinthians 12:15.

**HER** (nehphesh) one time: "At **her** (nehphesh) pleasure" Jeremiah 2:24.

**SHE** (nehphesh) one time: "Let her go whither **she** (nehphesh) will" Deuteronomy 21:14.

**THEE** (nehphesh) two times. "To slay **thee** (nehphesh)...wherefore should he slay **thee** (nehphesh)" Jeremiah 40:14; 40:15.

**US** (psukee) one time: "How long do you make **us** (psukee) to doubt?" John 10:24.

**WE** (nehphesh) one time: "Ah, so would **we** (nehphesh) have it." Psalm 35:25.

**THEY** (nehphesh) one time: "**They** (nehphesh) die in youth" Job 36:14.

**HIMSELF** (nehphesh) eight times

1. "Requested for **himself** (nehphesh)" 1 Kings 19:4.
2. "He tears **himself** (nehphesh) in this anger" Job 18:4.
3. "He justified **himself** (nehphesh)" Job. 32:2.

4. "The Lord...sworn by **himself** (nehphesh)" Jeremiah 51:14. The Lord sworn by Himself, not by a deathless soul that was in Him.
5. "Neither shall the mighty deliver **himself** (nehphesh)" Amos 2:14.
6. "And he that is swift of foot shall not deliver **himself** (nehphesh)" Amos 2:15.
7. "The Lord God has sworn by **himself** (nehphesh)" Amos 6:8.
8. "Wished in **himself** (nehphesh) to die" Jonah 4:8.

**MYSELF** (nehphesh) one time: "I have behaved and quieted **myself** (nehphesh)" Psalm 131:2.

**HERSELF** (nehphesh) two times

1. "Hell has enlarged **herself** (nehphesh)" Isaiah 5:14. Does Hell (Hebrew—grave) have an enlarged immortal soul?
2. "Backsliding Israel has justified **herself** (nehphesh)" Jeremiah 3:11. Does a nation have an immortal soul?

**THYSELF** (nehphesh) one time: "Think not with **thyself** (nehphesh)" Esther 4:13.

**THEMSELVES** (nehphesh) three times

1. "They have decreed for **themselves** (nehphesh)" Esther 9: 31.
2. "But **themselves** (nehphesh) are gone into captivity" Isaiah 46:2.
3. "They shall not deliver **themselves** (nehphesh)" Isaiah 47:14.

**ANY** (nehphesh) three times

1. "And when **any** (nehphesh) will offer a meat offering" Leviticus. 2:1.
2. "He that touches the dead body of **any** (nehphesh) man" Numbers. 19:11. Can anyone touch a dead soul that has no body to be touched and it cannot be dead?
3. "A man be found stealing **any** (nehphesh)" Deuteronomy. 24:7.

**OWN** (nehphesh) one time: "The heart knows his **own** (nehphesh) bitterness" Proverbs 14:10.

**DEAD** (nehphesh) five times

1. "Any cutting in your flesh for the **dead** (nehphesh)" Leviticus. 19:28.
2. "There shall none be defiled for the **dead** (nehphesh)" Leviticus 21:1.
3. "Anything unclean by the **dead** (nehphesh)" Leviticus 22: 4-6.
4. "Whosoever is defiled by the **dead** (nehphesh)" Numbers. 5:2.
5. "He sinned by the **dead** (nehphesh)" Numbers 6:11.

**BODY** (soul-nehphesh) seven times

1. "Any dead **body** (nehphesh)" Leviticus 21:11.
2. "Shall come at no dead **body** (nehphesh)" Numbers 6:6.
3. "Defiled by the dead **body** (nehphesh) of a man" Numbers 9: 6.
4. "Defiled by the dead **body** (nehphesh) of a man" Numbers 9:7.
5. "Unclean by reason of a dead **body** (nehphesh)" Numbers 9:10.
6. "Whosoever touches the dead **body** (nehphesh) of any man" Numbers 19:13.
7. "Unclean by a dead **body** (nehphesh)" Haggai 2:13.

**FELLOWS** (nehphesh) one time: "Lest angry **fellows** (nehphesh) run upon you, and you lose your life" Judges 18:25.

**DEADLY** (nehphesh) one time: "My **deadly** (nehphesh) enemies" Psalm 17:9.

**TABLETS** (nehphesh) one time: "The **tablets** (nehphesh) and the earrings" Isaiah 3:20.

**BEAST** (nehphesh) three times. 1, 2, and 3 "And he that kills a **beast** (nehphesh) shall make it good; **beast** (nehphesh) for **beast** (nehphesh)" Leviticus. 24:18 (3 times). Can anyone make an immortal soul good, soul for soul? Can anyone deny that beasts ARE a soul—a living being?

**THING** (nehphesh) two times

1. "Any living **thing** (nehphesh)" Leviticus 11:10.
2. "Every **thing** (nehphesh) that lives" Ezekiel 47:9.

**ONE** (nehphesh) four times

1. "Let **one** (nehphesh) die with the Philistines" Judges 16:30. Can anyone "let" an immortal soul die or live?
2. "Let **one** (nehphesh) die the death of the righteous" Numbers 23:10.

3. "I pray you, let **one** (nehphesh) live" 1 Kings 20:32. Let one soul live but let the rest of the souls die?
4. "If any **one** (nehphesh) of the common people sin" Leviticus. 4:27.

**FISH** (nehphesh) one time: "All that make sluices and ponds for **fish** (nehphesh)" Isaiah 19:10.

**(3) "The DESIRE of any living creature"**

**DESIRE** (nehphesh) five times

1. "The wandering of the **desire** (nehphesh)" Ecclesiastes 6:9.
2. "The land whereunto they **desire** (nehphesh) to return" Jeremiah 22:27.
3. "To the which they have a **desire** (nehphesh)" Jeremiah 44:14.
4. "He utters his mischievous **desire** (nehphesh)" Micah 7:3.
5. "Who enlarges his **desire** (nehphesh)" Habakkuk 2:5.

**MIND** (nehphesh) fifteen times

1. "If it be your **mind** (nehphesh) that I should bury" Genesis. 23:8.
2. "In mine heart and in my **mind** (nehphesh)" 1 Samuel. 2:35.
3. "My **mind** (nehphesh) could not be toward this people" Jeremiah 15:1.
4. Twelve more: Deuteronomy. 18:6; 28:65; 2 Samuel. 17:8; 2 Kings 9:15; 1 Chronicles 28:9; Ezekiel 23:17; 23:18 (2 times); 23:22; 23:28; 24:25; 36:5.

Psukee—soul three times

1. "And made their **minds** (psukee) evil affected against the brethren" Acts 14:2.
2. "With one **mind** (psukee) striving together for the faith of the gospel" Philemon 1:27.
3. "Less you be wearied and faint in your **minds** (psukee)" Hebrews 12:3.

**HEART** (nehphesh) fifteen times

1. "And cause sorrow of **heart** (nehphesh)" Leviticus. 26:16.
2. "Sets his **heart** (nehphesh) upon it" Deuteronomy. 24:15.
3. "The wicked boasts of his **heart's** (nehphesh) desire" Psalm 10:3.
4. Twelve more: Exodus. 23:9; 1 Samuel. 2:33; 2 Samuel 3:21; Proverbs 23:7; 28:25; 31:6; Jeremiah 42:20; Lamentations 3:51; Ezekiel 25:6; 25:15; 27:31; Hosea 4:8.

Psukee—soul one time: "Doing the will of God from the **heart** (psukee)" Ephesians 6:6.

**LUST** (nehphesh) two times

1. "My **lust** (nehphesh) shall be satisfied upon them" Exodus. 15:9.
2. "By asking meat for their **lust** (nehphesh)" Psalm 78:18.

**WILL** (nehphesh) three times

1. "Unto the **will** (nehphesh) of mine enemies" Psalm 27:12.
2. "Unto the **will** (nehphesh) of his enemies" Psalm 41: 2.
3. "Delivered thee unto the **will** (nehphesh) of them" Ezekiel 16:27.

**PLEASURE** (nehphesh) three times

1. "When you come into your neighbor's vineyard, then you may eat grapes your fill at your own **pleasure** (nehphesh)" Deuteronomy. 23:24.
2. "To bind his princes at his **pleasure** (nehphesh)" Psalm 105:22.
3. "Set at liberty at their **pleasure** (nehphesh)" Jeremiah 34:16.

**DISCONTENTED** (nehphesh) one time: "Everyone that was **discontented** (nehphesh)" 1 Samuel 22:2.

**GREEDY** (nehphesh) one time: "They are **greedy** (nehphesh) dogs" Isaiah 56:11.

**HEARTY** (nehphesh)

- Nehphesh—one time. "Of a man's friend by **heartly** (nehphesh) counsel" Proverbs 27:9.
- Psukee—one time. "And whatsoever you do, do it **heartily** (psukee), as to the Lord" Colossians 3:23.

**APPETITE** (nehphesh) two times

1. "If you be a man given to **appetite** (nehphesh)" Proverbs 23:2.
2. "The **appetite** (nehphesh) is not filled" Ecclesiastes 6:7.

From the above, it is clear that all the words into which nehphesh and psukee are translated clearly show that a person does not have an immortal something in them that has any existence without the body, or that has any function without the body, or that has any life after the death of the person. "Nehphesh" or "psukee" is not something that has a life of its own that can live without the person; it is any living being, a person, or animal. In a person nehphesh and psukee is the earthly person who is in the image of Adam, not an immortal something in a person that is less than the whole person, and can live without the whole person. Both persons and animals are nehpheshs (living beings, souls); neither one has a living being in them, a nehphesh (a soul) that will live without them.

---

The following quotation from an unknown author will illustrate the vague idea of many in relation to what may be saved through Christ.

"A man stands looking over the rail of a vessel into the surging water, and cries out, 'Save it!' Men come rushing up with, 'Save what? A man overboard?' 'No.' 'A woman?' 'No.' 'Then it must be a child.' 'No, it is not a child.' 'What then can it be?' 'I cannot tell.' 'Well, what does it look like?' 'I do not know, it has never been seen.' 'What form is it?' 'It has no form.' 'How large is it?' 'Why, it has no size.' 'Well, about how much will it weigh?' 'It has no weight.' 'Will it perish in the water?' 'No, no; it can never perish but save it, save it.'"

---

**"IT" OR "ME."** Most pagan religions believe that there is a soul in a person that will leave the person at their death, and that soul will live on without the person it had been in; that "it" will be better off after "it" is freed from "me." Some pagan religions believe that souls will eventually come back to a new person or another living being many times. The teaching of Plato that was believed by many of the church fathers was that a soul is imprisoned in a person unto the death of the person and then it was freed to go on to a much better place. In general the teaching of both Protestants and Catholics is that there is a soul in each person that will be saved or lost according to how good or bad the person it was in. That after the death of the person a soul that was in them will go instantly to Heaven or Hell, and like most pagan religions a soul, not the person a soul was in, is all that will ever be in Heaven. **In the religious beliefs about a soul, many Christian and Pagan both believe that when the person dies a soul that had been in the person lives on without the person.** "IT" is not the person, whatever the "IT" that is in "ME" is, whether another being or whatever the "IT" that is in "ME" is, "IT" is not "ME", and after my death "IT" will be better off without "ME."

Many who believe the doctrine of unconditional immortality often say "IT" when they speak of a soul. Will "IT" be "ME" in Heaven, or will "IT" be a soul in Heaven? If I had a soul and "IT" had thoughts and emotions that were not my thoughts and emotions, then "IT" could not be "ME," but another thinking being living in me.

The whole person will be raised from the dead at the resurrection. It will be "ME" changed from a "soul" (nehphesh—psukee) a living creature in the image of Adam into a new spiritual body in the image of Christ. Some believe and teach it will only be an immaterial (no substance) invisible something in "ME," which they call a soul "IT" that will be in Heaven.

If "IT" thinks, has any thoughts, or any knowledge, has any kind of sensibility different from, or apart from "ME" then "IT" is not "ME," but is another being. If the spirit "IT" is not my mind, then "IT" must have a mind of "ITS" own and thoughts of "ITS" own. Is "IT" intelligent and has a brain of "ITS" own? If not, then "IT" has no sensibility; then "IT" is only a nonliving thing.

If a "soul," ("nehphesh" and "psukee") as used in the Bible, is not my life, mind, feeling and emotions, if "IT" is not the whole of a person, then "IT" could only be another being existing within "ME", but "IT" and "ME" are not the same living being, and only a soul "IT" shall be in Heaven, but not the real "ME" (the part that now feels, thinks, and lives). Only this no substance thinking being living in "ME," which I can know nothing about, not what this living being "IT" looks like, or what "IT" thinks, how "IT" feels, or any other thing about "IT."

I could not even know "IT" is in "ME" without being told that "IT" is there. Therefore, "IT" could only be another being that will live on after "ME" is dead. When "IT" lives in Heaven, it will be "IT" living, not "ME," and my mind and thoughts will be dead, and "ME" will not even know that "IT" is living.

If a spirit "IT" that is in is not "ME," then when "ME" dies, my mind will be dead. If "IT" is different from my mind, heart, feeling, thoughts, then how can "IT" be condemned for what "ME" thinks, and feels, and does? In the very day that "ME" dies "MY" thoughts will perish (Psalms 146:4); any thought "IT" has after "MY" death is "ITS" thoughts, not the thoughts of "ME."

If what will be in Heaven after the resurrection is "ME" (my mind, feeling, thoughts, heart, life) with a spiritual body in the image of Christ; where will the "soul" ("IT") be, which is now in "ME", but I cannot see, or know anything about what "IT" is like; after the resurrection will "IT" be in Heaven with "ME," and I still will not know any more about "IT" or see "IT" than "ME" can now know or see about "IT"?

If "IT" is not my mind, what does "IT" think? If "IT" is only something living in "ME," which I know nothing about; and "IT" will leave "ME" at my death and go on to another home without "ME"; and I still will not know anything about "IT," or what "IT" is, or what "IT" thinks, or where "IT" is, or what "IT" is doing, or looks like.

After MY death, "IT" will live without a body or substance where "ME" (my mind, feeling, thoughts, heart) cannot live. If I am a "dual being" and "IT" is the second of the two beings, when "ME" will be dead, and only "IT" will be alive. Only something that is now in "ME" is immortal, and only this immortal something in "ME" will ever be in Heaven or Hell, then "ME" that will never know anything about what "IT" is like.

If a spirit ("IT") came into existence when I was born or before "ME" was born, and "IT" is different from my earthly being, then "ITS" thoughts are not the thoughts of "ME" (not the thoughts of my mind); therefore, how do I know "IT" has ever had any thoughts, or that "IT" knows anything?

If "IT" is immortal, "IT" has no need of the tree of life to live forever; but "ME" is not immortal, and could not live forever without the tree of life. Death is not the enemy of "IT" for "IT" cannot die for the sins of "ME." "IT" cannot pay the wages of the sins for "ME."

**Will you have eternal life in Heaven, or will "IT" have eternal life in Heaven?**

The Bible does not teach there is something living in a person, but the whole of a person as he is now, and only the body will be different in Heaven from what we now are. A person is only one being, and will be the same one being in Heaven. We do not have a soul (do not have an "IT"), but we are a living soul, which is the image of Adam, a living being—a living person. Men and animals do not have a soul, but both are a living soul (living creatures). There is a world of differences in being a living soul, as is taught in the Bible, and having an "immaterial invisible" soul that is in us as is taught today.

After death the Bible never speaks only of the sleep of the body, or of the sleep of a soul, but of the sleep or death of the person. God's creation of this earth is very good even with the thorns caused by sin; but His creation of Heaven is far better and does not have the thorns. Nevertheless, if there were a soul "IT" would be of neither creation, just some thin air something with no substance. When Lazarus was raised, he was the exact identical person he was before his death, with the same body, a "soul" (nehphesh—psukee) living creature in the image of Adam. At the resurrection the saved will be the exact identical person as now, but with a new "*spiritual body*," in the image of Christ, not some thin air no substance "IT" that is different from the person we now are.

Many can see only Plato's immortal soul that is in a person, and "IT" lives on after the death of the person. It will not be Plato's immortal no substance soul that will exist after the death of the body. It will be "ME" not just something that is in "ME" that will be raised from the dead, not "IT" that is not dead. It is "ME" that will sleep and "ME" that will wake up at the resurrection. Not "IT" that I will know nothing about.

If "IT" (a soul) is immortal from birth, "IT" can never die for "IT" is immortal. If "IT," whatever a soul is, only "IT" is what will be in Heaven, there can be no resurrection, for "IT" is not dead to be resurrected. If "IT" can never die, "IT" did not need Christ to die in "ITS" place to keep "IT" from dying, for "IT" is immortal and cannot die. "IT" has no need of the death of Christ to save "IT" from the death that "IT" cannot die.

It is a person "ME" that will put on immortality at the resurrection, and not just something that is in a person "IT," which is both alive and immortal before the

resurrection. It will be my life, mind, feeling and emotions, my whole person "ME" that will be immortal in Heaven, not just some unknown something that is in me.

I do not know how God can raise "ME" from the grave and give "ME" a new spiritual body and it still be "ME"; not just some "IT" which was not dead to be raised; but I have complete faith that He can and will. My faith is in Christ and the resurrection He taught. Will faith in the pagan doctrine, or in the immortal soul it teaches save you or condemn you?

There is no revelation telling about an "IT" that is in "ME," or anything about an "IT"; therefore, no one could know anything about "IT," not one thing.

A pagan deathless soul is added to the Bible by changing personal pronouns, "me," "us," "we," etc., to "IT" to make the passages that are speaking of mortal persons be changed to be speaking of an immortal deathless soul.

In Plato's doctrine of an immortal soul, the person dies, but a soul lives and is much better without the prison of being in a person. Yet from this heathen philosophy is where the so-called church fathers got their doctrine of an immortal soul that will live after the death of the person it had been in.

Do you believe that it will be **you** that will be saved or lost, or that there is **something** in you that you and only "IT" is what will be saved or lost, something that you cannot see or know what "IT" is, something that nobody knows what "IT" really is, something that you cannot now know anything about, and after your death you will not be able to know if "IT" is saved or lost, or if "IT" is being rewarded, or "IT" is being tormented? **The doctrine of a never dying immortal soul is in direct conflict with hundreds of the plainest statements of the Bible. How can anyone say they believe the Bible when they have replaced it with the teaching of the heathen philosophy of Plato?**

The orthodox theology that a soul that had been in a person unto the death of the person, then that soul goes to Heaven at the moment the person is dead denies the resurrection. **You cannot believe both (1) Plato's Greek philosophy of a deathless soul (2) and believe Christ's resurrection of dead persons, the resurrection of you; both cannot be true; the two are completely incompatible. Who do you believe, Christ's resurrection of dead persons (of you), or Plato's Greek philosophy of a deathless soul? I choose Christ.**

JOHN HANCOCK PETTINGELL: "it is said that if the soul be a simple, pure, un-compounded, unorganized entity or substance,' then it must be indestructible and necessarily immortal. But who knows that such is the nature of the soul? It is a sheer assumption, without one particle of evidence to sustain it. The argument that is founded on it amounts simply to this: If the soul be indestructible, it is indestructible. If it be immortal, it is immortal. But the assumption leads to a broader conclusion that this. The logical mind of Plato saw it, and therefore he concluded that the soul, if such be its nature, could have no beginning, as well as, will have no end...But granting the assumption, that the soul is a simple, pure, un-compounded, unorganized substance or entity,' and that it has a beginning, the question arises: When is that beginning? Are souls made beforehand and kept in

readiness to meet human demand? Or are they made to order, and put into the child's body at birth, or as some period before or after its birth? We press this question upon those, who hold that the soul is an entity separate and separable from the body, and independent of it. It is not an idle question, but one that it is important for them to consider. If they are unable to answer it, let them tell us, at least, if they can, whether it be a full grown, mature, responsible soul, at the outset, or does it grow in strength and maturity and responsibility with the body? ...How can they show that the soul does not follow the fortunes of the body, but is independent of it? ...If the soul had no conscious life or activity until it as united with the body; what evidence is thereto show that it can maintain its individual life, fulfill it function, after the bodily organization is destroyed? ...And so it with arguments in regard to the immortality of the soul founded on the supposition that it is 'a pure, simple, uncompounded, unorganized entity.' Let them show that such is the nature of the soul, or, at any rate, tell us what the nature of the soul is, before they challenge us to show that the conclusion, or rather the half of the conclusion the are willing themselves to adopt is false...We may add to what had has been so truly said, we never knew one man ever, who was able to demonstrate the immortality of the soul from the Scriptures, or to point to one text in all the Bible that asserted or even hinted at any such doctrine. But there are hundreds of texts, as we have shown, that assert the contrary, and as many more, that expressly declare that immortality is the special gift of God and only received by a now birth." "The Life Everlasting, What Is It" Whence Is It? Whose Is It?" Pages 500—503, J. D. Brown Printer, 1883.

## CHAPTER TWO

### Life or Death

In John 5 and 6 when the Pharisees, Sadducees, and the great multitude that followed Christ heard Him say those that hears his word and believes on Him He will give life (John 5:21), they have passed out of death into life (John 5:24-29), and will come *"unto the resurrection of life,"* they would never have understood Him to be saying He would give a reward to already immortal souls that were in the believers; souls that if they did exist, would have life and would always have life without Christ. It is clear that Christ is promising a resurrection to life to the persons that believed (John 5:29), not promising life to deathless souls. The death *"they have passed out of"* (John 4:24) is not a life of misery for souls that cannot die that cannot ever be dead; therefore, cannot *"pass out of death into life"* (John 5:24).

Eternal life or immortality is never said to be something a person is born with, but something that only Christians will inherit in the future.

- **Eternal life will be inherited**, *"And shall inherit eternal life"* (Matthew 19:29). A promise, not a present possession by a person, or by the pagan soul some believe to be in a person.
- **Eternal life is a gift**, *"For the wages of sin is death; but the gift of God is eternal life through Jesus Christ our Lord"* (Romans 6:23).
- **Eternal life is now a hope**, *"We might be made heirs according to the hope of eternal life"* (Titus 3:7).
- **Eternal life is promised**, *"And this is the promise which he promised us, even eternal life"* (1 John 2:25).

Many continually preach, "*The wages of sin is death,*" but then by what they preach they contradict themselves by preaching that all now have a soul in them that now has eternal life, and souls that are in unbelievers will have eternal life in Hell. If no "souls" are dead are will ever be dead, the "wages of sin" cannot be death. Life is as essential to suffering as it to happiness; without all having eternal life there could be no eternal suffering in Hell, or any other place; therefore, believers in Hell must change, "*The wages of sin is **death***" to, "*The wages of sin is an eternal **life** being tormented by God*"; "*destruction*" must be changed to mean "everlasting preservation in misery undestroyed."

The changing of life and death.

- "*Life*" has been changed to mean only a "*reward,*" or "*happiness*" for a soul that has life and cannot die.
- How is it that when Christ promised "*life*" to those that believed Him that He did not mean "*life*?"

HENRY HAMLET DOBNEY, "How was life to be better designated than by the self-same word itself?" "On The Scripture Doctrine Of Future Punishment," page 193, 1850.

- The argument is made that all already had "*life*" and that when and when Christ promised "*life*" to those that believed Him that He was only promising happiness to those that already had "continues existence". Life is existence. Those that do not have "*life*" do not have any existence. Those to whom Christ does not give "*life*" will have no existence.
  - There cannot be "*life*" without existence.
  - There cannot be existence without "*life*". A soul cannot exist in misery without "*life*."
  - Death is not a living existence.
- "*I say to you, an hour is coming and now is, when the dead will hear the voice of the Son of God, and those who hear **will live**. For just as the Father has **life** in Himself, even so He gave to the Son also to have **life** in Himself; and He gave Him authority to execute judgment, because He is the Son of Man. Do not marvel at this; for an hour is coming, in which all who are in the tombs will hear His voice, and will come forth; those who did the good deeds to a resurrection of **life**, those who committed the evil deeds to a resurrection of judgment.*" (John 5:26-29).
  - The Father has **life**.
  - The Son had **life** with the Father (John 1:1-10), but give it up and became a man and He die in man's place (Hebrews 2:14-16); God raised Him up from death and give Him the **life** He had had before He became a man.
  - Those that believe and obey Christ will be **resurrected to life** (John 5:29). After the resurrection they will not die, will not have tears, death, mourning, crying, or pain (Revelation 21:4); there will be endless happiness in Heaven, but to have the endless happiness they must have endless life, but no one will live without the resurrection to life.
- "*Death*" has been changed to "*life*"
  - Changed from death to an endless life of miserable existence.
  - Changed from death to eternal life being tormented by God.
  - Changed to be a deathless death.
  - The orthodox view changes *death* into a different mode of *life*, a deathless death. "*The wages of sin is death, but the free gift of God is eternal life in Christ Jesus our Lord.*"

Romans 6:23 is changed to mean the wages of sin is not death, but the wages of sin is eternal life with torment.

- Changing “*life*” to happiness and “*death*” to endless life in misery is nothing more than feeble attempts to make a person have a soul in them that leaves a person at the death of the person, and that soul has eternal life even if the person a soul had been in did not believe in Christ.
- Death is the opposite of birth, just as birth is the beginning of life death is the ending of life; just as we know the day and hour of birth, the day, and hour of death of death will be known. Neither birth nor death is a continuous action that never ends, but for unconditional immortality to be true death must be changed into a never ending dying, which we are told is not death but an endless life being tormented by God; death is life!
- The Greek in which the New Testament was written is one of the best and most expressive languages the world has known. If the Greek had no words to express the ideas of happiness and misery, then the use of life to mean happiness and death to mean endless life in misery would have been an exceedingly poor choice. They are saying that they will accept happiness from Him, but “no think to life; we already have endless life and do not need life.”
  - Death does not mean life, death dose not mean misery; a dead person has no life or misery after their death. Life and death mean existence and non-existence. Death and misery are not even close to being the same thing.
  - Many persons have life but little or no happiness. We may possess life without happiness, but we cannot possess happiness without life; life and happiness are not the same thing.
  - Life is necessary to both happiness and misery; there is no misery without life.

Eternal life is a conditional gift to the saved at the resurrection and judgment; it is not something that every person is born with, only those in Christ will ever have it. **“He that has the Son HAS ETERNAL LIFE. He that has not the Son HAS NOT LIFE”**; therefore, cannot have immortality (1 John 5:12); how could it be said any clearer that those that do not believe in Christ dose not have eternal life? *“He that hears My word, and believes Him that sent Me, has eternal life, and comes not into judgment, but has passed out of death into life”* (John 5:24).

Life and death are two of the most misused words in the Bible. Many are unwilling to believe that when God said, *“The wages of sin is death”* that He did really mean what He said, that death is death, death is not eternal life in some place other than Heaven and being tormented by God. Death is not life; death is not a lifelong imprisonment with torture. **Death is death; not a better life in Heaven, or a worse life in Hell; it is life or death.** Death is the exact opposite of life, and death cannot be changed to be eternal life with torment. For a person to have an immortal soul from birth, death as the wages of sin must be explained away. Innate inborn immortality is hostile to God's word. If a person is born with an immortal *“immaterial, invisible part of men”* (W. E. Vine) that is not subject to death, and this “soul” is the only being that will survive death, the law of God would have no power over whether

that soul lives or dies, for according to innate inborn immortality a soul cannot die; God can only say how or where this *"immaterial, invisible part of men"* is to live if a soul is not subject to death, and it is only this soul that will always live some place.

*"He that hears my word, and believes him that sent me, **has eternal life**, and comes not into judgment, but has passed **out of death into life**...they that have done good, unto the resurrection of life"* (John 5:24-29). It is a person, not a soul *"that hears my word, and believes"* that that has eternal life, but passes out of one kind of eternal life into another kind of eternal life, but a person (*"he"*) that has passed **out of death into life**. If there were a soul that now has eternal life, it could not be resurrected *"out of death into life."* The life could not be literal (real) life if the death was not literal (real) death.

*"It is appointed unto man once to die, and after this comes judgment"* (Hebrews 9:27). *"For the hour comes, in which all that are in the tombs shall hear his voice, and shall come forth; they that have done good, unto the **resurrection of life**; and they that have done evil, unto the **resurrection of judgment**"* (John 5:28-29). We now bear the image of Adam, and like Adam, we all will die, but both the saved and those not saved will be raised at the second coming of Christ. The saved will bear the image of Christ and have life forever (1 Corinthians 15:45-49). The church at Smyrna was told, *"Be you faithful unto death, and I will give you the crown of life...He that overcomes shall not be hurt of the **second death**"* (Revelation 2:10-11). Throughout the Gospels, Christ promised life to all who believed Him. Paul says, *"His servants you are whom you obey; whether of **sin unto death, or obedience unto righteousness**"* (Romans 6:16). *"What fruit then had you at that time in the things whereof you are now ashamed: for **the end of these things is death**. But, now being made free from sin and become servants to God, you have your fruit unto sanctification, and **the end eternal life**"* (Romans 6:21-22). As clear as human language can be, Paul says, *"For the wages of sin **is death**; but the free gift of God is eternal **life** in Christ Jesus our Lord"* (Romans 6:23).

JESUS THE BREAD OF LIFE (John 6). After Jesus fed the five thousand He taught them that He is the bread of **life** that came down out of Heaven. The bread He gave the five thousand preserved life for a short time, the bread He give them from Heaven preserved life without end. *"I am the living bread which came down out of heaven: if any man eat of this bread, he shall live forever"* (John 6:51). Bread is not a symbol of happiness but a preserver of life, if a person has no food that person would die. Believing in Christ gives **life** to the person that believes, and without Christ that person will die. Endless **life** depends on having Christ, the bread that came down out of Heaven; without Christ a person will have no **life**, will perish just as a person that has no food. *"**You have not life in yourselves. He that eats my flesh and drinks my blood has eternal life: and I will raise him up at the last day**"* (John 6:53-54). It is the person that eats and drinks, it will be the person, not a

deathless soul that will be raised up from the dead at the last day. Those not in Christ will not “live forever.” Christ gives to the person “that eats my flesh and drinks my blood” exactly what He said, **life**, not a reward to a soul that already has life.

- It is the person that if he or she eats that person will live.
- If the person dose not eat, he or she will not live.
  - The literal endless life of a person depends on receiving Christ and being faithful to Him.
  - “He (the person) *that eats this bread shall live for ever*” (John 6:58). John 6 is speaking of the person that believes or dose not believe. Nothing is said about a deathless soul.
  - It is the literal life or death of a person at the last day, the Judgment Da ay, not the well-being, or the lost of well-being of a soul that has life and cannot die even if the person that soul was in did not believe in Christ.

In Romans 6:23, the issue is:

**LIFE ----- OR -- DEATH**

Not life in one place-Heaven—OR—life in another place-Hell

Death is the absence of life—NO—another kind of life

(1) Not either a better life—OR— (2) a worse life in misery

**All who obeys Christ and “overcomes,” will at the judgment be given the crown of life, and shall not be hurt of the second death** (Revelation 2:11). **The clear implication is that anyone who does not overcome shall be hurt of the second death at the judgment.** “He that **overcomes** shall inherit these things: and I will be his God, and he shall be my son. **But** for the fearful, and unbelieving, and abominable, and murderers, and fornicators, and sorcerers, and idolaters, and all liars, their part shall be in the lake that burns with fire and brimstone; **which is the second death**” (Revelation 21:7-8). Death dose not mean life; to have a conscious existence there must be life, not death. The dead do not have conscious existence; if they did have an endless existence they would not be dead.

- The first death is not any kind of life.
- The second death is not a second life of any kind any place.
  - Both the first death and the second death are death, neither death means life.

There may be more in the New Testament on life and death than any other subject. If God can destroy a person, the whole person, Matthew 10:28, unconditional immortality cannot be true. If a person can lose his life (Matthew 10:39) unconditional immortality cannot be true. Those who believe there is something that is in a person, and believe that this something cannot die knows “*the wages of sin*” (Romans 6:23) must be changed to be something other than death, for if “*death*” means “*death*” the sinner will die, he cannot live forever in Hell. **The Bible teaching on death must be done away with or there can be no Hell**; Christ is made to say God will destroy souls that cannot be destroyed.

**John 3:16:** It is “*perish*” or “*life*,” to “*perish*” is not to live, “*perish*” is not to have good life in one place, or bad life in another place. If all have a “soul” in them that now has eternal life and will always have eternal life and cannot perish, why did God

give His Son that the "soul" of all who believe on Him would have eternal life and not perish? How could the gift of God be life to the deathless souls if these souls already have eternal life? Eternal life is only for the persons that believe. Just as sure as those that believe on Christ will have eternal life, the persons that do not believe on Christ will not have eternal life any place. Life will be received in the future (John 3:16). The gift of God to those who believe on His Son is eternal life (John 3:16), and this gift is something they did not already have; not something ALL were born with. If all have eternal life from birth, even those who do not believe, how could life be a gift only to believers? When those who believe that all now have a "soul" that is inside of them and this soul now has eternal life read the Bible, and change "life" into "a reward" and they must change death, die, perish, destroyed, and destruction into "endless life." To them, the Bible cannot mean what it says and they must change it. Only those that believe will be given eternal life, life that those that are not in Christ will never have, is changed by those who say they do not change God's word changed to be to all are born with something in them that now has eternal life, and only whatever a soul is that is in a person, only it will live forever, either in Heaven or Hell.

Life could not be given to a soul that is already deathless. *"Should not perish, but have eternal life,"* it is a person that will perish, or will have eternal life.

(1). The unbelieving person that will perish will not have eternal life anyplace.

(2). The believing person that will have eternal life will not perish.

When a newspaper says, "Twenty persons perished in a plane crash," twenty persons died, perish means die. Perish is not eternal life with a "lost of well-being," perish is not eternal life in torment, perish is not any kind of life anyplace.

**1 John 3:11-12:** *"God gave unto us eternal life, and this life is in his Son. He that has the Son has the life; he that has not the Son of God has not the life."* The immortal soul doctrine, that all are born with a soul that has eternal life, makes John be completely wrong when he said, *"He that has not the Son of God has not the life."* How could those that have not the Son and, therefore, has not life have immortality without life? Would they not be like an immortal rock that will always exist but has no life, no thoughts?

**John 11:25:** *"I am the resurrection, and the life: he that believes on me, though he die, yet shall he live; and whosoever lives and believes on me shall never die."* If no one "shall never die," then why did Jesus promise something that all, even sinners already had? *"And declare unto you the life, the eternal life"* (1 John 1:1). Only those who are raised with Christ through baptism have life. Only those in Christ are the only ones who, *"Though he die, yet shall he live"* (John 11:25), there will be no life or immortality for those that are not in Christ, no immortality for those that die in sin. Christianity without a resurrection to life for those in Christ is inconceivable.

**(1) LIFE: The gift of God is eternal LIFE, but only to those in Christ. God's gift of LIFE, life could not be a gift to a soul that has life and can never not**

**have life; God's gift is not just a reward to a soul that was born with eternal life and cannot die.**

1. The Greek concept of an immortal soul assumes that a soul already possess eternal life and is not subject to death.
2. The orthodox view is that a person has an *"immaterial, invisible part of men"* (Vine), and only this soul that is in a person possessed eternal life at the birth of the person it is put in; the orthodox view is that it is only this deathless soul that will be in Heaven or Hell, not the person that it was in,
3. **The Bible says that Christ "abolished death, and brought life and immortality to light through the gospel"** (2 Timothy 1:10). Without the resurrection there would be no life after death. Before the resurrection, no person, or nothing that is now in a person, now has immortality. Both (1) *"life"* and (2) *"immortality"* (2 Timothy 1:10) were brought to light; both were not known about before Christ; there cannot be one without the other, cannot be immortality without life, or endless life without immortality. If there were a soul in a lost person and that soul already had endless life, Christ could have been brought neither life nor immortality to light.

**Psukee (life) is the only word that is translated soul in the New Testament. The adjectives eternal and everlasting (aionios--ageless) are never used with psukee.** Psukee is translated: life 40 times, you 1 time, us 1 time, mind 3 times, heart 1 time, heartily 1 time, soul 57 times in the King James Version. Psukee (life) is the natural life of a person, and the natural life of any living being (Revelation 8:9; 16:3). It is the life common to all living creatures, man, and all animals. All living creatures by natural birth have psukee (life) from birth to death. *"The first man Adam become a living soul* (psukee-living being)" (1 Corinthians 15:45): psukee is the same as nehphesh in the Old Testament. Adam became *"a living soul"*—nehphesh—a living being (Genesis 2:7). It is the life Adam had in common with animals and all living creatures, life that can be destroyed, saved, lay down, end, loss, put in danger, or die.

Psukee is used 50 times in the four gospels. In spite of the belief of the King James translators they were compelled to translated it "life" 28 of the 50 times, "us" 1 time, and "soul" only 21 of the 50. Life and soul are not synonymous in English; they do not mean the same thing, life and soul are not even close to being the same thing. In trying to put Plato's teaching into the mouth of Christ they were forced to translate the same word into two words that are not even close to meaning the same thing; baselessly they used "life" when it was speaking of animal life and "soul" when it was speaking of mankind. Unfortunately most English readers never see what the translators did, **that they made psukee be both (1) any earthly mortal life that will die, (2) and the same word, psukee, be immortal souls that cannot die;** psukee is not both (1) sometimes a mortal being that dies, (2) and sometimes an immortal being that cannot die, if it did mean both there would have been no way the translators could have known when a psukee was a deathless immortal being that cannot die, and when a psukee was a mortal being that will die. In spite of their belief

that souls are immortal and cannot die they were forced to translate psukee as mortal life that can die more than they were able to mistranslate it as Plato's immortal being. *"Whosoever will save his **life** (psyche) shall lose it; and whosoever will lose his **life** (psyche) for my sake shall find it. For what is a man profited if he gains the whole world and lose own **soul** (psyche life)? Or what shall he give in exchange for his **soul** (psyche, life)"* (Matthew 16:25-26); they made psyche mean both (1) animal life that they believed must die, (2) and soul that they believed could not die.

**Aionios (ageless) zoe (life), ageless life is a gift from Christ to those who believe, the life He gives to those who are His, an ageless life that those that are not His will never have.** "Zoe" is used about one hundred thirty times, and is translated "life" every time. It refers to the life given by Christ to believes in all but about ten that it is used, and in those ten it is life or existence in this life time, *"Seeing He Himself gives to all life (zoe), and breath, and all things"* (Acts 17:25); all life to persons or animals is a gift from God.

Zoe (life) aionios (ageless) is the ageless life Christ gives to believers; a life that is beyond this earthly life that nonbelievers do not now or will ever have. Life (zoe) that Christ gives to a believer is existence for a believer as opposed to non-existence or death for a nonbeliever; neither endless life nor any kind of endless existence are not once used to describe the future state of the lost, not to neither a lost person nor a soul that many believe to have been in a lost person. Aionios (ageless) life is never used with the word "psuche." **The penalty for sin is death, but Christ made the atonement for our sins by his death; life for a believer is only through Christ's atonement, and without His atonement there is only death, not endless life anyplace with or without torment.** The wages of sin is death, and Christ has not made the atonement for the sins of the wicked that never believe Him, and there is no life for them; neither a person nor a soul cannot be endlessly tormented without endless life.

- **"Shall inherit eternal** (aionios) **LIFE** (zoe)" Matthew 19:29.
- *"That whosoever believes may **in him have eternal** (aionios) **LIFE** (zoe)"* John 3:15. The only way to have eternal life is through believing in Christ, not by birth, not being born with an immortal soul that is in you that already has eternal life even if the person a soul is in never believes in Christ.
- **"Whosoever believes on him should not perish, but have eternal LIFE** (zoe)" John 3:16.
- *"He that believes on the Son **has eternal LIFE** (zoe); but he that obeys not the Son **shall not see LIFE** (zoe),"* John 3:36. He or she that obeys not the Son is not now immortal, and will never be immortal in Hell or any place, will never have eternal life any place. If this were not speaking of the person, but is speaking of an immortal soul that *"shall not see life,"* then how is it that the immortal soul that we are repeated told is deathless, but that deathless soul *"shall not see life?"*
- *"The water I shall give him shall become in him a well or water **springing up unto eternal LIFE** (zoe)"* John 4:14.

- *"Fruit unto LIFE (zoe) eternal John 4:36.*
- *"Son also gives LIFE (zoe)" John 5:21.*
- *"Out of death into LIFE (zoe)" John 5:24.*
- *"That you may have LIFE (zoe)" John 5:40.*
- *"Unto the resurrection of LIFE (zoe)" John 5:29.*
- *"Food which abides unto eternal LIFE (zoe)" John 6:27.*
- *"Should have eternal LIFE (zoe); and I will raise him up at the last day" John 6:40.*
- *"And I give unto them eternal LIFE (zoe)" John 10:28. He is not giving them life that they had, or life to a being that is in them had eternal life at birth, but life that they did not have before the new birth. When Jesus said, "He that believes not the Son shall not see life," will these that shall not have eternal life have eternal life in torment?*
- *"He should give eternal LIFE (zoe)" John 17:1-3.*
- *"And that believing you may have LIFE (zoe)" John 20:31. This life is a free gift given to the person that believes; it is not a gift of life to a soul that those that believe in unconditional immortal tell us that soul already has life, and according to them all souls will always have life someplace.*
- *"The free gift of God is eternal LIFE (zoe) in Christ Jesus our Lord" Romans 6:23.*
- *"Believe on Him unto eternal LIFE (zoe)" 1 Timothy 1:16.*
- *"Lay hold on the LIFE (zoe) eternal, whereunto you were called" 1 Timothy 6:12.*
- *"May lay hold on the LIFE (zoe) which is LIFE (zoe) indeed" 1 Timothy 6:19.*
- *"Abolished death and brought LIFE (zoe) and immortality to light" 2 Timothy 1:10.*
- *"In hope of eternal LIFE (zoe)" Titus 1:2.*
- *"We might be made heirs according to the hope of eternal LIFE (zoe)" Titus 3:12.*
- *"Shall receive the crown of LIFE (zoe)" James 1:12.*
- *"Declare unto you the LIFE (zoe), the eternal LIFE (zoe), (Christ) which was with the Father" 1 John 1:2.*
- *"And this is the promise which he promised us, even the LIFE (zoe) eternal" (1 John 2:25). At the resurrection the saved shall put on immortality (eternal life). This is so sure that it is spoken of as if we now have it.*
- *"And in the world (age) to come eternal LIFE (zoe)" Mark 10:30.*
- *(1) "God gave unto us eternal LIFE (zoe), (2) and this LIFE (zoe) is in his Son. (3) He that has the Son has the LIFE (zoe); (4) he that has not the Son of God has not the LIFE (zoe)" 1 John 5:11-12. No invisible immaterial soul in a person that is not in Christ now has eternal life, or the promise of eternal life.*
- *"And the end, eternal LIFE (zoe)" Romans 6:22.*
- *"Looking for the mercy of our Lord Jesus Christ unto eternal LIFE (zoe)" Jude 21.*
- *"That of all that which he has given me I should lose nothing, but should raise it up at the last day" (John 6:29). "For this is the will of my Father, that every one that beholds the Son, and believes on him, should have eternal LIFE (zoe); and I will raise him up at the last day" (John 6:40). "And I will raise him up at the last day" (John 6:44) "And I will raise him up at the last day" (John 6:54).*
- *"Who will render to every man according to his works: to them that by patience in well doing seek for glory and honor and incorruption, eternal LIFE (zoe)" Romans 2:7.*
- *"I AM THE RESURRECTION AND THE LIFE (zoe)" "Jesus said unto her, I am the resurrection, and the LIFE (zoe): he that believes on me, though he die, yet shall he live; and whosoever lives and believes on me shall never die" (John 11:25-26).*

- "Our Savior Christ Jesus, who **abolished death**, and **brought LIFE** (zoe) **and immortality to light through the gospel**" (2 Timothy 1:10). Christ is the Word of life. "Concerning the Word of life (and the life was manifested, and we have seen, and bear witness, and declare unto you the life, the eternal life, which was with the Father)" (1 John 1:2). Only those raised with Christ through baptism have the promise of eternal life and will not be subject to the Second Death.

**LIFE, NOT IMMORTALITY IS TAUGHT IN THE BIBLE, A RESURRECTION TO LIFE, OR A RESURRECTION TO JUDGEMENT.** The promise of eternal life at the judgment only to those who believe in and obey Christ is positive proof that no person does not now have immortality, but this promise of eternal life to the faithful is so certain that it is often spoken of as something they now have; "And this is the record, that God has given to us eternal life, and this life is in his Son. **He that has the Son has life; and he that has not the Son has not life**" (John 5:11-13); life depends on having a relationship with Christ; "Therefore if you have been raised up with Christ, keep seeking the things above, where Christ is, seated at the right hand of God. Set your mind on the things above, not on the things that are on earth. For you have died and **your life is hidden with Christ in God.** When Christ, who is our life, is revealed, then you also will be revealed with Him in glory" (Colossians 3:1-4). A born again person cannot be given immortality at the judgment if all are now immortal and cannot die, for all, both souls in the saved and in the lost, would have eternal life. The theology that says a person is born with an immortal soul in them that is deathless gives life to all and robs Christ of giving the gift of life only to all who believes, it gives life to a soul that is in all even the worst sinner at birth. **These passages make no sense if we are born with a soul that has life, and that can never die, and this soul that is not subject to death is all that will every be in Heaven. This theology makes Christ give life only to a soul that already is immortal, already has eternal life and it cannot die.** Immortality is conditional on being in Christ; there is no eternal life except to these in Christ. It would be nonsense for Christ to promise life in the age to come to a deathless soul if that soul couldn't not have life. "God gave unto **us** eternal life, and this life is in his Son. **He that has the Son has the life; he that has not he Son of God has not the life**" (1 John 5:11-12). Yet we are told that "he that has not the Son" has a soul that has life, that it is not "us" but "it" that will have eternal life.

- "Your fathers ate the manna in the wilderness, and **they die**. This is the bread, which came down out of heaven, that **a man** may eat thereof, **and not die**. I am the living bread which came down out of heaven; if **any man** eat of this bread **he shall live for ever...He that eats this bread shall live forever**" (John 6:51-57). The comparison is undeniable that a person will die if that person does not eat of this bread, but that person will live if he or she does eat the bread; absolutely nothing is said about a deathless soul that cannot die, not that a soul will live if it eats, or of a soul that cannot die if it does not eat of this bread.
- "I am the resurrection and the life; **he** who believes in Me shall live even if **he** dies, and **everyone** who lives and believes in Me **shall never die**" (John 11:25-26).

- “As the **living Father** sent me, and **I live** because of the Father; so he that eats me, **he also shall live** because of me” (John 6:57). Dose anyone believe this is not speaking of endless life—endless existence, that it is only speaking only of endless happiness of the person that eats? Happiness would beyond any doubt be included in the endless life, but it is life that is given only to believers.

Because those that believe still die, many apply this promise of life only to a soul, not to the person.

- (1). If this promise of life was to a soul, not the person, then a soul that is in the person that does not believe will die; therefore, it would make souls that are in all that do not believe be mortal and will die.
- (2). If, as we are told, all souls have always been immortal and can never die, then this promise of life does not give anything to a soul that it did not already have. It would be a useless, empty, meaningless promise to a soul that already had life, and that soul could never die, that a soul could never be without life even if the person did not eat the bread Christ gives.
- (3). It is mortal man that is “*faithful unto death*” that is promised life, not an immortal something that has always and always will have life even if it were not “*faithful unto death*”. To change the person (“*he*” and “*everyone*”) that is given life for believing to an “*it*” that has life even if “*it*” never believe is not “speaking where the Bible speaks and keeping silent where the Bible is silent.”
- (4). The “**he**” is the person that believes that “**shall live forever.**” There are all kinds of attempts made to change this from “he” to “it, to being all soul will live forever, either live a better life, or live a worse life; the person living forever just will not work with unconditional immortality, therefore; it is a must with them to change this from a person being given life to a soul that has life even if the person does not eat of “*this bread,*” after all, according to them it is only a soul that will live forever, not the person.

- “For if... **we shall be also in the likeness of His resurrection**” Romans 6:5.
- “And **this mortal must put on immortality**” 1 Corinthians 15:53.
- “**Made alive**” Ephesians 2:1-5.
- “Who according to his great mercy begat **us** again unto a living hope by the resurrection of Jesus Christ from the dead, **unto an inheritance** incorruptible, and undefiled, and that fades not away, **reserved in Heaven for you**, who by the power of God are guarded through faith unto **a salvation ready to be revealed in the last time...receiving the end of your faith, the salvation of your souls**” (*psukee-lives*) “the salvation of your lives.” Our lives are saved from death by the blood of Christ who gave His life to save our life, not just something that is in a person. “**Set your hope perfectly on the grace that is to be brought unto you at the revelation of Jesus Christ**” (1 Peter 1:3-13).
- “But if by the Spirit, **you put to death the deeds of the body you shall live**” Romans 8:13.
- “That **we may be also glorified with Him**” Romans 8:17.
- “**With the glory which shall be revealed to us-ward**” Romans 8:18. When? Not now, but at the resurrection.

- **"Waiting for our adoption"** Romans 8:23. (Not an immaterial being waiting for "its" adoption).
- **"Foreordained to be conformed to the image of His Son"** Romans 8:29.
- For this hope we must **"with patience wait for it"** Romans 8:25.
- **Four times in John 6:39-54 Christ says He will rise up those that are his "at the last day"** (John 6:39, 40, 44, and 54).

Eternal life is the gift of Christ only to those who obey Him, not something all mankind now possess without obeying Christ. **Innate immortality denies that Christ will give eternal life to those that believe by teaching that all souls already have eternal life; eternal life cannot be given to a soul that already has eternal life.** It cannot be changed to a better life in Heaven, or a worse life in Hell; it is life of death, not life or life. We can choose between life and death, not a better life, or a worse life of torment.

EDWARD WHITE: "The second line of doctrine which runs throughout the gospel of John from the first paragraph to the last, is that this Incarnation of the Divine Logos of God has for its object TO GIVE LIFE ETERNAL TO MANKIND. This is repeated more than thirty times in the most emphatic manner. And if the epistles of John are added to the account, it will be found that nearly fifty times does this apostle declare the gift of LIFE, or LIFE EVERLASTING, to the end of the incarnation...The statement is reiterated in every possible form that His work on earth is to give life, everlasting life, to prevent men from dying, from perishing," Life In Christ, Chapter 17, Section 2, 1875. <http://www.robertwr.com/LifeInChrist.htm>

HENRY HAMLET DOBNEY: "The holders of the popular doctrine, proceeding on the assumption that all man have eternal life, in the literal sense, **must of course deny altogether that the idea of existence is even included in the terms 'life,' 'everlasting life,' and the like.** For seeing, according to the common notion, that the wicked have everlasting life (taking the phrase literally) as well the righteous, when this is promised to the followers of Christ, as something peculiar to them and unutterably glorious, that must perforce affirm that the phrase is used metaphorically, and only so." On The Scripture Doctrine Of Future Punishment, An Argument, page 180, Kessinger Legacy Reprints, 1850.

WHEN DO WE RECEIVE ETERNAL LIFE? Paul writing to Titus said, **"In hope of eternal life, which God who cannot lie, promised"** (Titus 1:2). Eternal life will be given at the Day of Judgment to those who **"seek for glory and honor and incorruption...in the day when God shall judge the secrets of man"** (Romans 2:5-16); could it be said in a more positively way that immortality is something Christians **"seek for,"** and not something that they or souls now have? **"Should have eternal LIFE (zoe); and I will raise him up at the last day"** (John 6:40). Those who are believers will "sleep" just as all believers will be raised up to eternal life. This life is so certain that it is often spoken of as if believers now have it.

- Will **be received** in the future (John 3:16), **"but have"** is future tense.
- Will **be inherited** (Matthew 19:29), not something that a "soul" now has. **"Unto an inheritance incorruptible, and undefiled, and that fades not away, reserved in heaven for you, who by the power of God are guarded through faith unto a salvation ready to be revealed in the last time"** (1 Peter 1:5).

- **Is the gift of God** (Romans 6:23) only to those who obey God, not something all souls now have?
- We now have the **hope of eternal life** in the future (Titus 3:7); something only believers shall receive, but sinners never will have eternal life.
- Eternal life **is promised** (1 John 1:25). If all have it from birth, then life could not be the gift of God promised only to believers.
- Christians are **“waiting for our adoption...if we hope for that which we see not, then do we with patience wait for it”** (Romans 8:23-25). Are we waiting and hoping for something we already have?
- *“Since, then, you have been raised with Christ, set your hearts on things above, where Christ is seated at the right hand of God. Set your minds on things above, not on earthly things. For you died, and your life is now hidden with Christ in God.*
- **When Christ, who is our life appears, then you also will appear with Him in glory”** (Colossians 3:1-4).
- **“Be faithful unto death, and I will give you the crown of life”** (Revelation 2:10). The crown of life is not given before the second coming of Christ (2 Timothy 4:8).

Summary: If there were now a soul in everyone that is immortal and deathless, that soul could not be given life even if the person it was in was a believer, it could not be given life or immortality at the resurrection, it would make much of the New Testament be complete nonsense. If there were a soul that is now immortal and deathless, that soul would not be subject to death, it could not die, it could not pay the wages of sin which is death, it could not be resurrected for it would not be dead. All deathless souls, even these in the lost, would now have eternal life; all would now be immortal and have no need for Christ to have died in their place to give them eternal life. The immortal soul doctrine that all have a soul that is immortal, that all now have eternal life is a gospel that is totally different than the gospel of the New Testament (Galatians 1:6-9), which teaches that only those that believe and obey Christ will be given eternal life and immortal, and that no one now has, or will have eternal life without the resurrection.

BREAD FROM HEAVEN—THE RESURRECTION—ETERNAL LIFE: *“Truly, truly, I say to you, you seek Me, not because you saw signs, but because you ate of the loaves and were filled. Do not work for the food which perishes, but for the food which endures to eternal life, which the Son of Man will give to you, for on Him the Father, God, has set His seal.” Therefore they said to Him, “What shall we do, so that we may work the works of God?” Jesus answered and said to them, “This is the work of God, that you believe in Him whom He has sent.” So they said to Him, “What then do You do for a sign, so that we may see, and believe You? What work do You perform? Our fathers ate the manna in the wilderness; as it is written, ‘He gave them bread out of heaven to eat.’ Jesus then said to them, “Truly, truly, I say to you, it is not Moses who has given you the bread out of heaven, but it is My Father who gives you the true bread out of heaven. For the bread of God is that which comes down out of heaven, and **gives life to the world.**” Then they said to Him, “Lord, always*

give us this bread.” Jesus said to them, “I am the bread of life; he who comes to Me will not hunger, and he who believes in Me will never thirst. But I said to you that you have seen Me, and yet do not believe. All that the Father gives Me will come to Me, and the one who comes to Me I will certainly not cast out. For I have come down from heaven, not to do My own will, but the will of Him who sent Me. This is the will of Him who sent Me, that of all that He has given Me I lose nothing, **but raise it up on the last day.** For this is the will of My Father, that everyone who beholds the Son and believes in Him **will have eternal life, and I Myself will raise him up on the last day.**” Therefore the Jews were grumbling about Him, because He said, “I am the bread that came down out of heaven.” They were saying, “Is not this Jesus, the son of Joseph, whose father and mother we know? How does He now say, ‘I have come down out of heaven?’” Jesus answered and said to them “Do not grumble among yourselves. No one can come to Me unless the Father who sent Me draws him; **and I will raise him up on the last day.** It is written in the prophets, ‘And they shall all be taught of God.’ Everyone who has heard and learned from the Father, comes to Me. Not that anyone has seen the Father, except the One who is from God; He has seen the Father. Truly, truly, I say to you, **he who believes has eternal life.** I am the bread of life. Your fathers ate the manna in the wilderness, **and they died.** This is the bread, which comes down out of heaven, **so that one may eat of it and not die.** I am the living bread that came down out of heaven; if anyone eats of this bread, **he will live forever;** and the bread also which I will give for the life of the world is My flesh.” Then the Jews began to argue with one another, saying, “How can this man give us His flesh to eat?” So Jesus said to them, “Truly, truly, I say to you, unless you eat the flesh of the Son of Man and drink His blood, **you have no life in yourselves. He who eats My flesh and drinks My blood has eternal life, and I will raise him up on the last day.** For My flesh is true food, and My blood is true drink. He who eats My flesh and drinks My blood abides in Me, and I in him. As the living Father sent Me, and I live because of the Father, so he who eats Me, **he also will live because of Me.** This is the bread which came down out of heaven; not as the fathers ate and **died;** he who eats this bread **will live forever**” (John 6:26-58). The fathers were given bread in the wilderness, but that bread was only to sustain earthly life for a little time, while the bread of Christ gives eternal life; those who eat of it will be resurrected to life that never ends.

- Those that eat the bread in the wilderness **died.**
- Those that eat the bread that Christ gives will **never die.**
  - This is speaking of the persons that died in the wilderness, and the persons that will not die if they eat the bread Christ gives. If it were speaking of an immortal something that cannot die that was in a person, then Christ would be giving no life that they did not already have.

J. M. DENNISTON: “The one thing really announced is that, through Christ the living Bread, there comes to believers an endless duration which did not come by the manna—the clear

understanding being that in no other way than through that Bread can such duration be theirs...life, *including existence*, comes to us only through the Son as the Bread of Life." "The Perishing Soul According To Scripture," pages 55-56, Longmans, Green, and Co., 1874.

The usual orthodox argument is that to be dead does not mean to be without an existence, to be given life does not mean to be given existence.

- Death is changed to life separated from God.
- "Shall live" does not mean life, but is changed to mean for a deathless soul finds favor with God.

There cannot be life without existence, or existence without life.

- Existence is life, to existence is to be alive.
- Life is existence; when Christ gives endless life to believers He give endless existence.

For a person to have life, or for a person to have existence is exactly the same thing. If there were souls that have endless existence, to say Christ gives them life would be to say Christ gives them nothing.

Those who do not eat of the bread Christ gives will die; to teach that all will live some place is to teach that all that does not eat of the bread Christ gives will have life that is just as eternal as those that do eat; therefore, even if they do not eat of this bread of life they can never die; only the place where they will live their eternal life they already had will be in a different place than those that do eat it, but both will have life, both will have existence. "Even as You gave Him authority over all mankind, that to all whom You have given Him, He may give eternal life" (John 17:2).

While it is beyond all doubt that there will be endless happiness in Heaven, life cannot be changed to be only happiness, death cannot be changed to be endless existence being tormented by God. In this world there can be life without happiness, there cannot be happiness without life. In Heaven there will be both endless life and endless happiness.

#### **IN REVELATION ONLY BELIEVERS WILL BE GIVEN LIFE.**

The tree of life (Revelation 2:7; 22:2; 22:14)

The crown of life (Revelation 2:10)

Name written in the book of life (Revelation 20:12; 20:15; 21:27; 22:19)

A river of water of life (Revelation 22:1-2)

Those who are not in the book of life are cast into the lake of fire (Revelation 20:15), "which is the second death" (Revelation 21:8).

In the Book of Revelation it is life for those in Christ, death for those not in Christ. God "will take away his name from the tree of life" (Revelation 22:19).

**Eternal life is a gift from God (Romans 6:23) only to believers.** Death is the oppose of life, not another kind of life. Life is the oppose of death.

**(2) DEATH: ARE THE DEAD REALLY DEAD? IS DEATH THE ABSENCE OF LIFE? OR IS DEATH ETERNAL LIFE WITH TORMENT? IS DEATH DEATHLESS?**

**DEATH has been made into instant glorious LIFE with Christ for believers with everything that is promised at the resurrection. Platonic theology makes**

**death into the best of friends.** Death has been made into an illusion where when a person dies that person is not dead, but is more alive than when he or she were alive; death is made to mean more alive than life does. If, as we are repeatedly told, death is not death, but death means eternal life some place, then what word could have been used to mean completely dead? There is not one word that we would not be told that it does not mean to be actual dead. If death were not death, what would it take to be dead?

**Salvation is from death, not from torment by God for souls that cannot die.**

Whether it is in plants, animals, or person, death by definition is the absence of life; there is no life in a dead plant just as there is no life in a dead person; eternal life with torment in Hell would mean there is no absence of life, no death; death is not an eternal deathless life of being endlessly burned in fire by God. **Death is death, not life.** If death were death it would completely destroy the pagan immortal soul doctrine that the real person does not die, but goes on to live endlessly without the resurrection. The breath of life is given by God, it is a priceless blessing; death is the removal of the priceless life that came from God; death ends life; the second death, the end to all life will be a terrible punishment for sin. It is life or death, not a bad kind of life in one place, or a good kind of life in another place, death is not any kind of life; if death is not literal real death then life is not real life. Death being life is a change to God's word made by those that say they do not change God's word; a change they must have to make God be an eternal tormentor.

- Life is changed from life to endless joy for a deathless soul.
- Death is changed from death to endless life being tormented by God.

According to the immortal soul doctrine, that a soul that is in a person has never been subject to death, it cannot be dead; at the death of the person a soul had lived in, that soul only changes the place where it lived while it is in a person for a better place to live without the person.

- **The penalty of sin is death** (Romans 6:23), not eternal life in Hell for a soul that is not subject to death. This passage is preached continually, but very few that preach it believe it. They preach, "*The wages of sin is death,*" and in the same breath preach a person has a deathless something in them that cannot die, and the wages of sin for that deathless something in a person is not death; according to them "*the wages of sin*" is life, an eternal life of being tormented by God in Hell for a soul.
- If "*the wages of sin is death,*" then after the penalty, the second death, there will be no life; death is total nothingness, no awareness of anything, no love, no hope, no relationships, no joy, no torment, no thoughts, no nothing. **Eternal death is eternal punishment, the punishment last as long as the death.** Eternal suffering would be a saving from the wages of sin, a saving from death.
- "*Whether of sin unto death, or of obedience unto righteousness*" Romans 6:16.
- "*For the end of these things is death*" Romans 6:21. Death for a deathless soul?
- "*For godly sorrow works repentance unto salvation, a repentance which brings no regret: but the sorrow of the world works death*" 2 Corinthians 7:10.

- *“Sin, when it is full grown, **brings forth death**”* James 1:15.
- *“And you shall call His name Jesus; for He shall **save his people from their sins**”* Matthew 1:2.
- *“Christ Jesus made me free from the law of sin and **death**”* Romans 8:2.
- *“That He might **redeem us from all iniquity**”* Titus 2:14.
- *“Who **delivered us out of so great a death**”* 2 Corinthians 1:10.
- *“**Will save him from death**”* New International Version, James 5:20.
- *“For to be carnal minded **is death**; but to be spiritually minded is life and peace”* Romans 8:6.
- *“But when this corruptible shall have put on incorruption, and this mortal shall have put on immortality, than shall come to pass the saying that is written, **Death is swallowed up in victory**”* (1 Corinthians 15:53-54). If, as we are repeatedly told, a soul never dies, and only a soul will be in Heaven, *“flesh and blood cannot inherit the kingdom of God”* (1 Corinthians 15:50), then how would it be possible for death to be *“swallowed up in victory”* if death is not death, if a soul cannot be dead, what would be *“swallowed up?”* If death is endless life separated from God, how could life separated from God be *“swallowed up in victory”* if life for souls separated from God never ends? **The victory is not a victory over Hell; it is a victory over death. It is not a soul deathless saved from endless life in Hell; the “victory” is a person saved from death.**

It is difficult not to understand this passage; it is difficult to explain away *“the wages of sin is death,”* and to change *“death”* to *“life.”* All attempts to explain death out of the Bible fall far short. Death is death, not an eternal dying, but never dead; death is not eternal life with torment for a soul that we are told had been in a person.

Death and life in torment are not synonymous terms; a dead person cannot be tormented. Salvation is from death; there is no passage that says anything about being saved from an eternal life of torment. All have sinned; the wages of sin is death. Death is God's penalty for sin; how could God have said this anymore clear and simple? The gift of God canceled the wages of sin and gives life. The free gift of God is not changing one kind of life for another kind of life, or life in one place for life in another place. **It is giving life in place of death.** This is made possible not by Christ being eternally tormented for us, but by Christ dying our death for us. **The free gift of God is life, not just a change of address from Hell to Heaven for a soul that already has eternal life and cannot die. NO PROCESS OF DYING IS NOT DEATH UNTIL DEATH IS COMPLETED. Any process that goes on forever without ever coming to an end is not death.** The *“wages of sin”* is not death if there is no death. If *“the wages of sin is death”* the penalty of the law has not been inflicted on any that are not dead. The immortal deathless soul doctrine must make death not be death but changes death is an endless imprisonment for a deathless soul that will be endless tormented by God; for them there is no such thing as an actual death, their theory requires that they change God's word to make it sustain their teaching of a deathless soul.

Death is changed into two doors that open instantly into two parallel eternal lives.

1. Door one: opens into instant eternal life in Heaven.

2. Door two: opens into instant eternal life in Hell. Death is changed from death to life, to an unending life of endless torment.

- o Both doors change death into life without a resurrection of the dead, and without a Judgment Day.

**"Shall save a soul** (psukee-life or person) **from death**" *"Will save him from death,"* New International Version, James 5:20. The person saved is saved from death, not saved from an eternal life of torment. It is the person that is converted that is saved from death, not a deathless soul that had been in a person that is dead, saved from a death a soul could not die, saved because the dead person had been converted. From the many sermons I have heard, and the many books I have read, the belief of most Protestants is the conversion of the person will give endless life in Heaven to a soul, but nothing to the person. The mistranslation of psukee into soul in the King James Version makes a soul that is believed to be deathless be saved from death.

When the second death is changed from death to endless life with torment then who or what will have the endless torment, it has been changed from the person that sinned to a soul that had been in the person that sinned having endless torment because the person it has been in sinned.

*"Receiving the end of your faith, **even the salvation of your souls** (life-psukee)"* 1 Peter 1:9. **"Sin unto death"** Romans 6:16: Not sin unto an eternal life of torment.

*"What fruit then had you at that time in the things whereof you are now ashamed? **For the end of those things is death.** But now being made free from sin and become servants to God, **you have your fruit unto sanctification, and the end eternal life** (at the judgment). **For the Wages of sin is death; but the free gift of God is eternal life**"* Romans 6:21-23, **death** is not a gateway to a better **life**. Death is an *"enemy,"* and our only hope for life is the resurrection, not death being life. *"For you shall be recompensed in the resurrection"* (Luke 14:14), not recompensed instantly after death.

*"Be you faithful unto death (end of this life) and I will give you **the crown of life** (at the judgment)...shall not be hurt of **the second death**" ("I will give you," not life to a soul that is in you) Revelation 2:10. And with the world **they shall "passes away"*** 1 John 2:17.

*"For if you live after the flesh, **YOU MUST DIE**; but if by the Spirit you are putting to death the deeds of the body, **YOU WILL LIVE**"* Romans 8:13 ("You" must die, not something that is in "you" must die). Why did Paul not say, "If you live after the flesh, you must be tormented"? Did Paul not know there is a big difference in dying and in living in torment; did Paul not know that if you die you cannot be tormented? In *"You must die,"* the dying is in the future and is a penalty.

**"We have passed out of death into life"** 1 John 3:14. "We" not "it" passed out of death into life.

Death is so sure to those not in Christ that they "**abides in death**" 1 John 3:14.

*"If we have only hoped in Christ in this **life**, we are of all men most pitiable. But now has Christ been **raised** from the **dead**, the first fruits of them that are **asleep**. For since by man came death, by man came also the resurrection of the **dead**. For as in Adam all **DIE**, so also in Christ shall all be made **alive**"* (1 Corinthians 15:21-23). In the plainest language possible, Jesus said, *"If you believe not, **YOU shall die in your sins**"* (John 8:21-24). Many read this passage and see, "If you believe not, your soul that cannot die is now dead."

*"The wages of sin is death, but the gift of God is eternal life"* (Romans 6:23). There are two reasons why the sinner will die in this passage. (1) They will receive the wages they earned for sin, which is death. (2) Eternal life, immortality, is given only to those who are in Christ. There is not one text that says the lost will ever be given the gift of immortality.

J. W. McGARVEY: "But now having been made free from the slavery of sin, and having become a servant of God, your present reward is the blessedness and joy of a clean life, and your future reward is life eternal. And this is obvious, for, following my figure of slave, masters and wages to the end, the wages which men earn and receive from your former master, sin, is death; but the wages which you cannot earn, or deserve, but which God freely gives you for serving him, is eternal life in Christ Jesus our Lord." Commentary on Romans 6:23, 1916, Standard Publishing Company.

Those who believe in eternal torment are saying:

- To the unsaved that they already have eternal life, but they will spend it in the wrong place.
- They are saying to the lost that they can never die, but that they will live an unhappy everlasting life.
- They are saying the lost will be in Hell, and they will be just as alive as those in Heaven, and in no sense can the lost be said to be dead; in no plain common sense language can the wages of sin be said to be death to an immortal being that cannot die for if it could die; if it were dead it would not be an immortal being.
- They are saying that death cannot be death, but that death is only a transfer of life from this realm to life in another realm. For a person to now have an immortal soul that can never die, death, particularly the second death must be changed to a second life. Those who believe men are now immortal must take death out of the Bible. **Death is not life**. In all the repeatedly times Christ promised eternal life to believers, He must be made not to mean what He promised is not eternal life, but He promised only a reward or happiness. "*Life*" and "*death*" cannot be twisted to mean the same thing, but the immortal soul doctrine says both are the same, that the "*wages of sin*" is eternal life in Hell. 1 John 3:5 says, "*No murderer has eternal life abiding in him,*" but the immortal soul doctrine says, "Yes, there is an immortal soul in a murderer that has life abiding in it, and life will abide in it forever in Hell." This doctrine that gives eternal life to all souls is a complete contradiction of the Bible doctrine that says Christ gives eternal life only to person that believe.

**"WAGES OF SIN IS DEATH," not an eternal life of torment for a "soul" that cannot ever be dead** (Romans 6:23). Death is not life in a different form; death ends life, and without the resurrection death means the utter destruction of life to both believers and unbelievers. Death is to be abolished at "*the end*" (1 Corinthians

15:24-26) by casting it into lake of fire. Jesus endured the wages of sin in our place so that we would not have to. **Christ could not be our savior, if the wages of sin is eternal torment.** Jesus died in our place (Romans 3:24-25; 1 Corinthians 15:1-4; Ephesians 1:7; Colossians 1:21-22; Hebrews 9:12-15; 1 Peter 1:18-19), but He did not endure eternal torment in our place; therefore, if the wages of sin were an eternal life of torment He could not be our savior; He would not have paid our debt. He did "*taste of death for every man*" (Hebrews 2:9); He paid our debt in full with His death. When today's theology says that death is only life in a different place, and death is not really death, then it makes our salvation impossible by making the death of Christ not to have happened if there is no death, it makes Christ not have died for our sins.

1. It destroys the Bible doctrine of the wages of sin being death.
2. It destroys the Bible doctrine of a Judgment Day to come by making all be judged at death.
3. It destroys the Bible doctrine of a resurrection by making no soul be dead to be resurrected from the dead.
4. It changes the gift of God from being life to all the faithful to the gift of God is only an escape from eternal torment in Hell for souls that were born with eternal life.

Robert Turner: "Sin separates us from God, and 'the soul that sinneth, it shall die.'" Florida College Annual Lectures, 1986, page 172. Which one is he saying? (1) That a soul that sins lives forever separated from God, (2) or that "*The soul that sins shall die.*" The two are a total contradiction of each other and both cannot be true, but many are so blinded by their theology that they are unable to see the contradiction, that he is saying both a soul cannot die and a soul that sins will die.

- "*For the end of these things is death...for the wages of sin is death*" King James Version.
- "*For the outcome of these things is death...for the wages of sin is death*" New American Standard.
- "*These things result in death...for the wages of sin is death*" New International Version.
- "*These things only bring death...when people sin, they earn what sin pays--death*" New Century Version.
- "*And they lead to death...sin pays off with death*" Contemporary English Version.
- "*Things that end in eternal doom...for the wages of sin is death*" New Living Translation.
- "*The result of those things is death...for sin pays it wage--death*" Today's English Version.

There is not the slightest sign of an immortal soul that is not subject to death in this passage; it is the person that sins that will die.

Romans 8:5-13, "*For those who are according to the flesh set their minds on the things of the flesh, but those who are according to the Spirit, the things of the Spirit. For the mind set on the flesh **is death**, but the mind set on the Spirit **is life and peace**...for if you are living according to the flesh, **you must die**; but if by the Spirit you are putting to death the deeds of the body, **you will live.***" Again, it is life or death, live, or die, not two kinds of life.

James 1:15: **The three steps to death.** (1) **Lust** (when it has conceived) (2) gives birth to **sin** (3) Sin (when it is accomplished) brings **death**. In today's preaching the three steps are changed to (1) **lust** (2) **sin** (3) **eternal life in Hell**.

- "Then when **lust** hath conceived, it bringeth forth **sin**; and sin, when it is finished, bringeth forth **death**" (King James Version).
- "Then, when **desire** has conceived, it gives birth to **sin**: and sin, when it is full-grown, brings forth **death**" (New King James Version).
- "Then the **lust**, when it hath conceived, beareth **sin**: and the sin, when it is full grown, bringeth forth **death** " (American Standard Version).
- "Then when **lust** has conceived, it gives birth to **sin** and when sin is accomplished, it brings forth **death** " (New American Standard Version).
- "Then, when that **desire** has conceived, it gives birth to **sin**, and that sin, when it is fully grown, gives birth to **death** " (New Revised Standard Version).
- "Then, after **desire** has conceived, it gives birth to **sin**; and sin, when it is full-grown, gives birth to **death** " (New International Version).

2 Corinthians 7:10: "Godly sorrow brings repentance that leads to salvation and leaves no regret, **but worldly sorrow brings death.**" Many read this and change death to life in Hell even when there is nothing said about Hell or eternal life with torment in it; why do they not believe God? Death is not eternal life any place.

It is **life or death**, not reward or torment, never an everlasting life of torment with God doing the tormenting. There is so much teaching in the New Testament on life and death that it is as if God foreknew men would change the death that is the wages of sin into an everlasting life of torment, and He gives them no way to say at the judgment, "I did not know." Why do men not believe God? **Death is in contrast to life; it is the opposite of life, and not just another kind of life. Death is not life in Heaven, Hell, Purgatory, or hades. Death is not life of any kind anywhere; death is death, not everlasting life with torment, not a mere change in the mode of existence; death is not life in another condition, not life separated from God.** After death the unsaved cannot be both eternally dead and eternally alive and conscious; they cannot be both dead and alive at the same time. Why would God say one thing to us, and mean the opposite of what He said? Why would God say the wages of sin **is death** if the wages of sin **is life**? Today's theology has changed God's **death into life** because Plato said man has a soul that cannot be dead, a soul that will live after the person it is in is dead.

Death is understood by all to be death when we say, "The dog is dead," but when we say, "The person is dead," death must be changed to only be a separation but not death.

- The dog is dead. – The person is dead.
  - Which one is dead? How can this mean one is dead and the other is alive?

"For if you live according to the flesh, **YOU will die**: but if by the Spirit **YOU** put to death the deeds of the body, **YOU will live**" (Romans 8:13). "**YOU**" will live or die, not just an "immaterial, invisible part of man" (W. E. Vine). **A person that is lost "will die," a person that is saved "will live," but we are told that a soul cannot die; therefore, the "YOU" that can live or die could not be a soul that cannot**

**die**, nevertheless this passage that says, "*YOU will die*" is often used to prove there is a soul that cannot die.

- Narrow way = **life**—Broad way = **destruction** (Matthew 7:13-14)
- **Life**, or **death** (Romans 6:23; 4:17; 1 Corinthians 3:22)
- **Life**, or **perish** (John 3:16)
- **Life**, or **die** (Romans 8:13)
- **Life** and **peace**, or **death** (Romans 8:6)
- **Salvation**, or **death** (2 Corinthians 7:10)
- **Saved**, or **destroy** (James 4:12)
- **Life**, or **destruction** (Matthew 7:13-14)
- Into **life**, out of **death** (1 John 3:14)
- Under the Old Testament Law (earthly life or death)
  - **Life** and **death** (Deuteronomy 30:15-20)
  - **Death** and **live** (Ezekiel 18:23)
  - **Death** and **live** (Ezekiel 18:32)

The Bible says what it means, and means what it says. God inspired John to say, "*Should not perish*," but many say God did not mean, "*perish*," but "shall have an eternal life of torment." Death has been made not to exist, no one ever dies, they just pass from one kind of life to another kind of life; death is made to be a transfer of life to life in another realm.

Is the world on Satan's side?

- God said, "**You shall surely die**" (Genesis 2:17).
- Satan said, "**You shall surely not die**" (Genesis 3:4).
- Most Protestant theologians say, "**Your soul shall surely not die**."

In Romans 1:28-23, Paul gives a list of sins, and then he said, "*They that practice such things **are worthy of death***." Not worthy of an eternal life of torment in Hell, but of death, but many today say, "They that practice such things **are worthy of eternal life in Hell**." Will you believe them or Paul? You cannot believe both. "*What fruit then had you at that time in the things whereof you are now ashamed? For **the end of these things is death**... You have your fruit unto sanctification, **and the end eternal life**, for the wages of sin is **death**; but the free gift of God is **eternal life** in Christ Jesus our Lord"* (Romans 6:21-23). The gift of God to those who believe on His Son is eternal life (John 3:16), and this gift is something they do not already have; not something ALL were born with. If all have eternal life from birth, even those who do not believe, how could life be a gift to believers? When those who believe that all now have eternal life (an immortal soul) read the Bible, and change "*life*" into "a reward" and change death, die, perish, destroyed, and destruction into "punishment." To them, the Bible cannot mean what it says and they must change it.

**FROM WHAT ARE WE SAVED:** We are saved from death by the death of Christ and given life, not saved from Hell. Christ died our death; He did not suffer an eternal life in Hell.

**ADDITIONS TO THE BIBLE:** “Eternal Hell,” “immortal soul,” “save your immortal soul,” and “eternal suffering in Hell fire,” are not in the Bible, but are used often by preachers and Bible teacher, and are falsely presented as being the teaching of the Bible.

The first death is the end of life of the flesh (life as it exist now). The second death then must also be the end of life (life as it will exist then), or it is not a second death, but something altogether different from death, it is a second life; those that believe there is a soul in a person that has endless life much change the second death to life; an endless life of torment is not a second death. The traditional concept is that a person has an immortal soul, which neither the first or second death can kill; therefore, death must be changed to be something other than death for that soul; death is changed to be a translation to eternal life in Heaven or Hell, the second death is changed to be only a translation from one life form to another life form, a translation from this life to eternal life in Heaven for immortal souls that are already in Heaven and already had eternal life, or a translation to eternal life in Hell to souls that are already in Hell, for we are told that they were already translated to eternal life in Hell by the first death. On about every page throughout the New Testament it is life or death, not reward or punishment. **The unsaved die, perish, are destroyed, and are lost. The obedient are saved from death and are given life and immortality at the judgment. Why is there so much in the Bible on death if there is no death?** Many have believed what their preacher or church says, and they have rejected the Bible as being untrue, although most do not realize that have put the teaching of a church or preacher over the Bible. Eternal life is frequently promised to the righteous, but never to the wicked. If the wicked do not have eternal life they cannot endure eternal torment. Our **body** will be:

- "Fashion a new" American Standard Version, Philippians 3:21
- "Change" King James Version
- "Transform" New American Standard Version
  - If it were going to be only a soul, not our earthly bodies that will be in Heaven, then why would our earthly bodies be, "Fashion a new," "Change," "Transform"?

Philippians 3:20-21: *"But when this corruptible shall have put on incorruption, and **this mortal shall have put on immortality**, then shall come to pass the saying that is written, Death is swallowed up in victory...but thanks be to God, who gives us the victory through our Lord Jesus Christ."* If the lost will live forever in Hell, do they also have the victory over death; will not their life (not their death) be just as eternal as the saved?

Summery: If it were true that there is no real death, that death is only a separation from God, a deathless death, then there could not be a resurrection of the dead for no one could be really dead. The pagan doctrine of the immortality of a soul makes the Bible doctrine of the resurrection of the dead both impossible and useless. Any life after death depends wholly on the resurrection of the dead persons at the coming

of Christ, not on a deathless soul (Luke 14:13-14; 1 Thessalonians 4:16; 1 Corinthians 15:51-55).

**THE BIBLE HAS BEEN CHANGED TO TEACH THAT DEATH IS ETERNAL LIFE.** *"We have passed out of death into life"* (1 John 4:14). It is us (the whole person) that were dead in our relation to God, not a dead soul that *"passed out of death into life"* and is now alive. **If we did have a soul that was dead, but that soul is now alive, it would be a contradiction of the doctrine that a soul can never die, for an immortal soul that cannot be dead would have been dead, and a deathless soul that could not be dead would have "passed out of death into life;"** a soul, which we are told can never be dead would have been dead at one time, but now a soul that was a dead soul is now alive. It was the person that was dead before they were in Christ, but is now alive in Christ, it is the person that has passed out of death into life, not an undying immaterial soul that could never be dead.

Believers in immortality from birth must change the Bible to say:

Those who are destroyed **are not destroyed** (James 4:12; 2 Peter 2:12; 2 Peter 3:7). What kind of destruction can that be which destroys nothing? There is no similarity between destruction and endless torment.

1. Those who perish **do not perish** (1 Corinthians 1:8; John 3:16).
2. Those who die **do not die** (Romans 6:23) (Death is not death).
3. The end of the wicked **is not their end** (Philippians 3:19; Hebrews 6:8).
4. Those who are consumed **are not consumed** (Hebrews 10:27).
5. **Mortals are born immortal** (1 Timothy 6:16); therefore, how can there be any such thing as being mortal? There are no mortals and could never be a mortal if all were created immortal.
6. It is believed by many that the second death **is not a death, that death is eternal life with torment** (Revelation 21:8). That death is only a miserable condition of endless life being tormented by God, death is not an actual death; therefore, life that is given by Christ to believers is not actual life, but endless joy and well-being.

Are they really teaching the Bible when they corrupt it into saying the opposite of what it really says, or when they teach what they want the Bible to say?

**IS "THE WAGES OF SIN IS DEATH" Or "IS THE WAGES OF SIN AN ETERNAL LIFE OF TORMENT FOR A DEATHLESS SOUL?"** It cannot be both. If all are immortal from birth, then death could not exist; no one will ever die; no one will ever be dead; therefore, the wages of sin could not be death.

**Death, the enemy defeated for believers:** *"Jesus said unto her, your brother shall rise again. Martha said unto him, I know that he shall rise again in the resurrection at the last day. Jesus said unto her, I am the resurrection, and the life: he that believes on me, though he die, yet shall he live; and whosoever lives and believes on me shall never die"* (John 11:23-26); the same **he** that shall die is the same **he** that shall live, not the same soul that cannot die that shall live. *"If a man keep my word, he shall never see death"* (John 8:55). *"I am the living bread which came down out of heaven: if any man eat of this bread, he shall live forever"* (John

6:51). It is evident that Jesus was not speaking of physical death, for like Lazarus believers shall die, but unlike nonbelievers they shall have a new existence, a new life in Christ that is no longer subject to the enemy, death. After the resurrection they will have a victory over death, and the saved will be able say, "*Death is swallowed up in victory, O death, where is your sting? The sting of death is sin: and the power of sin is the law: but thanks be to God, who gives us the victory through our Lord Jesus Christ*" (1 Corinthians 15:55-56). We are told twice that the second death has no power over believers (Revelation 2:11; 20:6). They are not subject to it and shall live forever. "*Our Savior Christ Jesus, who abolished death, and brought life and immortality to light through the gospel*" (2 Timothy 1:10); for all faithful believes Christ defeated the enemy by His resurrection.

ALEXANDER CAMPBELL: "The words of the Bible contain all the ideas in it. These words, then, rightly understood, and the ideas are clearly perceived. The words and sentences of the Bible are to be translated, interpreted, and understood according to the same code of laws and principles of interpretation by which other ancient writings are translated and understood; for, when God spoke to man in his own language, He spoke as one person converses with another-**in the fair, stipulated, and well-established meaning of the terms.** This is essential to its character, as a revelation from God; otherwise, it would be no revelation, but would always require a class of inspired men to unfold and reveal its true sense to mankind" Alexander Campbell, "The Christian System," page 3, Gospel Advocate Company, 1835. "It is absolutely essential to the very idea of a Divine communication in the form of a revelation, that its words and sentences be understood according to their usual sense at the time when that communication was made, and amongst the people to whom it was addressed and to whose care it was committed," An essay on "Life And Death" from the Millennial Harbinger, 1844.

ASHLEY JOHNSON, Founder and president of the Johnson Bible College: "'Perish'! 'Perished'!! And 'Perishing'!!! What do these words mean? They occur in the sacred scriptures about one hundred and forty times. Again, I ask what do they mean? I answer in every reference the word carries the thought of destruction, in numerous cases, utter annihilation, utter destruction. Let us suppose that all we can know of the destiny of the ungodly we must get from the passages in which these words are found. What would we conclude? Eternal conscious punishment for all the wicked, without regard to how wicked? **Not if there is any meaning in the language?** The word is used in the scriptures in the exact sense in which the word as it stands in English is used, or its corresponding word in every language and dialect. We say: 'His hand has perished.' We say: 'For want of rain our crops have perished.' We say: 'Babylon has perished.' We say: 'The seed we sowed perished because it was without life.' What do we mean? We can only mean one thing. Absolute destruction! So far as we know God has but one way of communicating with man; namely, language. This language is clear, pointed, unmistakable. Christianity has life, or immortality, and he offers it to men here, and those who reject the light and the life must perish. Here is the definition by one of the greatest lexicographers in history: 'To go or run through, come to nothing, perish.'" "The Resurrection And The Future Life," page 420-421, 1913, Knoxville Lithographing Company.

E. D. SLOUGH: "When the Lord talked with men, and used human language, if he placed other meanings on the words than those understood by men, **how could God teach us?** Or if he used them in a figurative sense, in their last and most important application, why were we not apprised of the change...**if the Bible doesn't mean what it says, then nobody knows what it does**

mean.” page 195-206, “If the people would allow the words in the Bible to teach them the same thought they get from the Dictionary, and from common use—**allow God to mean the same thing when talking to us that we mean when talking to one another**—these disputes would quickly adjust themselves. The condition of unrest everywhere on these issues of the Bible is ample argument that something is needed as a standard which makes words mean the same whether in or out of the Bible.” page 42, “The Indictment Of Eternal Torment—The Self-negation Of A Monstrous Doctrine,” F. L. Rowe, Publisher, 1914, evangelist, church of Christ. This book is free on line at: [www.robertwr.com/EternalTorment.htm](http://www.robertwr.com/EternalTorment.htm)

J. M. DENNISTON: “Many seem to think that they can at once demolish all our arguments by a simple application of such of such statements as—“to be carnally minded is *death*; to be spiritually minded is *life* and peace;”—the inferences which they draw from them being these, (1) That neither does *life* refer to existence, nor *death* to the cessation of it. (2) That *life* signifies simply a right spiritual condition, and *death* a wrong one. (Which two conditions, extended into the next world, and there developed, become respectively everlasting life and everlasting death. Hence, it is maintained, all the statements in the New Testament as to the ‘living,’ the ‘never dying,’ the everlasting life’ of believers have no reference at all to the continuance, but only the character of their being; — while the multiplied assertions and descriptions of the ‘perishing,’ ‘destruction,’ ‘death’ of the ungodly do not mean what such language invariably means elsewhere—in the Bible or out of it—but, instead of that, endless evil and misery of souls that are imperishable. A serious conflict indeed betwixt the Old Testament and the New in their employment of the same language—yes, betwixt the New and everything else, not excepting them self!” “The Perishing Soul According To Scripture,” page 68, Longmans, Green, and Co., 1874.

EDWARD WHITE: “That the persistent resolution, through many ages, to strip these converse terms Life and Death, in their application to Christ’s work and Man’s destiny, of their proper signification, has resulted in eclipsing fully one-half of the light of the Sun of Righteousness, of the glory of Christ, of the truth of Christianity...But, indeed, this has been the delusion alike of Jews and Gentile, that the Bible scarcely ever means what it says...The notion is deeply rooted that when God speaks, as in the person of Christ, the Incarnate WORD, scarcely any of His words are to be taken in their obvious sense. Surely the rule of thought ought to be the opposite, and we ought to think that He who was the Truth as well as the Life employed human speech in its most direct signification.” Life in Christ, chapter 17. Free on line at: [www.robertwr.com/LifeInChrist.htm](http://www.robertwr.com/LifeInChrist.htm)

THOMAS DAVIS: “Putting together all the passages which teach, either expressly or constructively, that the end of sinners is absolute destruction, the number may be counted by hundreds. Sometimes the word used is ‘*destruction*’ itself; and destruction, we say, cannot mean endless preservation in misery. Sometimes it is ‘*death*,’ and death, we say, cannot mean eternal life in suffering. Sometimes it is being ‘*burnt up like chaff*,’ and being burnt up like chaff, we contend, cannot mean being kept unconsumed, like the bush of old, in the flames. Sometimes it is ‘*being devoured*’ (as in the Scripture, ‘*Judgment and fiery indignation shall devour them*’); and being devoured, we assert, cannot rightly be thought to signify being kept whole and living to undergo suffering for ever. So of several other expressions, such as ‘*to perish*,’ ‘*to be slain*,’ ‘*to be killed*,’ ‘*to lose life*,’ ‘*to be consumed*,’ ‘*to reap corruption*,’ ‘*to be blotted out*,’ ‘*to be rooted up*,’ ‘*to be cut off*,’ ‘*to be cut down*,’ ‘*to be dashed in pieces*,’ ‘*to be lost*,’ ‘*to be ground to power*,’ ‘*to be cut asunder*,’ ‘*to be cast away*,’ ‘*to have the house broken up*,’ ‘*to be torn to pieces*,’ ‘*to be put away as dross*,’ ‘*to melt away*,’ ‘*not to abide for ever*,’ ‘*to be as nothing*.’ Many of these are doubtless figurative phrases; **but if they do not indicate finality, no language would suffice to do so.**” Endless Sufferings Not The Doctrine Of Scripture; pages 16-17; 1867; Longmans, Green, and Co.

PHILIP E. HUGHES: "It would be hard to imagine a concept more confusing than that of death which means existing endlessly without the power of dying" page 223, "Facing Hell: The Story of a Nobody," Paternoster Press, 1998.

Those who believe men are now immortal have to make the words that God used not mean what they say. Is it not unreasonable to make words in the Bible have a meaning attached to them that is unlike the way they are used in any other book in the world, unlike the way they were used in the language of the people God was speaking to?

**Death is a lost of life, not an endless life of a lost of all joy, happiness, and well-being.** To Traditionalists death is just an illusion, the dead are not dead, the dead are more alive than when they were alive; to Traditionalists the souls that were in the lost are incapable of ever being dead.

#### **CHANGES THAT MUST BE MADE:**

**(1) LIFE** must be changed to be not life, but to be only a reward to those who are born with something in them that already has eternal life. Is it not unreasonable to say the many times Christ promised eternal life to those that believe Him, that He only promised them only a reward, not eternal life? And just as unreasonable to say that He promised life to only to something in a person that already has eternal life and cannot die. This doctrine of an immortal soul that cannot die makes Christ promise something over and over that souls already had. Throughout the Book of John Christ repeatedly promised life to persons who believed, not life to souls, and those persons who did not believe would not see life (John 3:36; 4:14; 4:36; 5:21; 5:40; 6:33, 39, 44, 47, 57, 63, 68), **"shall not see life," shall not be alive, but those that "shall not see life" is changed from persons to souls that will have life in torment!** *"That to all whom You have given Him, He should give eternal life. And this is life eternal, that they should know You the only true God, and Him whom you did send, even Jesus Christ"* (John 17:2-3). There could not be a stronger statement saying only those persons who believe in Jesus will have life, and those persons who do not believe will not be given any life anywhere.

ALEXANDER CAMPBELL in the preface to "The Living Oracles," his translation of the New Testament said, "The reader will please to consider, that, when God spoke to man, he adopted the language of man. To the fathers of the Jewish nation he spoke in their mother tongue. By his Son, and his Son by the Apostles, spoke to every nation in its own language. When he spoke to any nation, he uniformly adopted the words of that nation in expressing his will to it. And that he used their words in the commonly received sense, needs no other proof than this, that if he had not done so, instead of enlightening them in the knowledge of his will, he would have deceived and confounded them: than which, no hypothesis is more impious. For example: were God to speak to us in *English*, and select from our vocabulary the words *death, punishment, perpetual, and wicked*; were he to use the last term as we use it, and annex to the others a significant different from that we affix to them--**such as to mean life by the term death, happiness by the punishment, and a limited time by the word perpetual**; and without apprising us of such a change, in their meaning...what a deception would he practice on us!"

How many changes "*death*" to "*life*," by changing "*the wages of sin is death*" to "*the wages of sin is eternal life with torment*"?

HENRY CONSTABLE: "Its uniform testimony (the New Testament) is that 'eternal life' hereafter will be the exclusive possession of the just, and that the wicked will certainly not obtain it: 'He that believeth on the Son hath everlasting life; and he that believeth not the Son shall not see life.' **Our simple enquiry is, what is meant by that Greek word translated 'life' in the passages referred to.** Our Lord in addressing Himself to the Jewish people, Luke in writing a Gospel for the Gentile world, Paul in writing to Rome, the metropolis of heathenism, or Corinth priding itself on the Grecian tongue, James, Peter, and Jude writing to Christians wherever scattered over the earth, all alike use this word as universally understood. We have only, therefore, to refer to our classical dictionaries, and there we find its primary and universally accepted sense to be *existence*. If we want any further confirmation, let us listen to the Apostle James defining it's meaning. 'What is your life? It is even a vapor, that appeared for a little time, and then vanishes away.' On the classical usage, and express definition of the New Testament, we take our stand. Dictionaries of the New Testament, and commentators on it, may, if they please, put upon the phrase the sense of 'happiness' in the numberless passage where it occurs, but we deny to them the right to alter the meaning of a well understood Grecian word for the sake of bolstering up their baseless and horrid creed" *The Duration and Nature of Future Punishment* 1871.

**(2) DEATH** must be changed so that it does not mean death, but an eternal life with torment for a soul that can never be dead. The dead cannot really be death if death is only "a loss of well-being," a loss of happiness and if death were really eternal life with endless torment by God. Death must be changed to be not death, but changed to a doorway to a spiritual world where souls of **all**, both souls of the saved, and souls of the lost are alive, and both must have eternal life; to the saved death must be changed to means an instant doorway to a greater and fuller life, but only for a soul that is thought to be in them, not for the person; to the lost an instant doorway to an eternal life of pain. **In no plain language can death be said to be the wages of sin to an immortal being that cannot die.**

Death is made to be not death, but a mere change in the mode of existence for a soul. To many, death means for a soul to be alive, to have eternal life, but life that is separated from God, yet tormented by the God that they are separated from. To make the word "*death*" fit their view; they must make death figurative. The true meaning of the word "death" will destroy their view. All plain passages like Romans 6:23 ("*the wages of sin is death*") must be changed into figurative language, but they cannot tell us how they know what the figurative language means, how they know death is not death but is endless life separated from God. They cannot tell us how they know "*death*" means "*life*." Figurative language always draws it meaning from literal language, it never means the opposite of the literal; "*death*" in figurative language could not mean any kind of "*life*." A basic rule of Bible study, which is accepted by most, is a word or a passage must be assumed to be literal unless the context demands that it must be taken figuratively. They cannot tell why the word "*death*" literally means "*death*" when it is an animal or a person that is dead, but

“death” means “life” when it relates to a soul. They cannot tell why death must be made figurative other than it would destroy their teaching that there is a deathless something in a person that lives after the person is dead if it were used with its true meaning, if death is really death with its universally understood meaning. If there were a Hell, for souls in it to feel pain they could not be dead, they would literally have to be just as alive as souls in Heaven; they would have to have life just as eternal as souls that we are told are in believers.

When the death of anyone is spoken of in the Bible, the modern phraseology (they have gone to be with Christ, have gone to their reward, have gone to be with their loved ones in Heaven, etc.) is never used. Not even Abraham is said to have gone to his home in Heaven at his death before the judgment. *“And Abraham breathed his last and died in a ripe old age, an old man and satisfied with life; and he was gathered to his people”* (Genesis 25:8 New American Standard Version). Such a radical change of death to be a life in torment is a denial of death; an attempt to evade death by saying in each person there is a deathless soul that will live after the death of the person it is in; therefore, a soul is not subject to death. It is a deliberate carefully thought out wresting of the scriptures (2 Peter 3:16). If the Bible does not mean what it says, then nobody can know what it does mean; when the Bible says, *“The wages of sin is death,”* if the wages of sin is not an actual real death, then who can know what the wages of sin is? Death is definitely the forfeiture of life, and without a resurrection there would never be any kind of life anyplace.

**DEATH HAS BEEN CHANGED TO LIFE.** Those that refused to have God in their knowledge *“are worthy of death”* (Romans 1:28-32), but instead of death Platonism gives them endless life in Hell being tormented by God.

Sin is *“unto death”* (Romans 6:16) *“Leads to death”* New International Version, has been changed to sinners live forever in torment.

*“The wages of sin is death”* (Romans 6:23), but the wages can never be paid because man teaches an immortal soul cannot die.

*“For if you live according to the flesh, you must die”* (Romans 8:13), but an immortality soul would have eternal life and can never die.

*“For the end of these things is death”* (Romans 6:21). *“These things result in death”* New International Version. This has been changed to, “For the end of these things is eternal life in torment.”

*“Acts that lead to death”* (Hebrews 9:14) New International Version.

*“His servants you are whom you obey; whether sin unto death, or obedience unto righteousness”* (Romans 6:16).

*“For to be carnal minded is death”* (Romans 8:6).

*“Sin...brings forth death”* (James 1:15), but we are repeatedly told that an immortal soul is not subject to death.

*“For except you believe that I am he, you shall die in your sins”* (John 8:24), but we are told you (your soul) cannot die! Then what did Christ say, the person will die, but after the death of the person a soul that was in the person will live?

Those that teach death is an eternal life of torment are as one writer said, "Forced to argue that a horse could not die so dead that it must keep dying deader." The dead must keep on dying; the destroyed must keep on being destroyed.

Why would God say one thing to us and mean the opposite of what He said? Why would He say the wages of sin is DEATH if the wages of sin is LIFE? How could the wages of sin be death to a soul that cannot die!

#### LIFE AND DEATH IN ROMANS CHAPTERS FIVE AND SIX

DEATH OF CHRIST: *"For while we were yet weak, in due season **Christ died** for the ungodly. For scarcely for a righteous man will one **die**: for peradventure for the good man some one would even dare to **die**. But God commended his own love toward us, in that, while we were yet sinners, **Christ died for us**. Much more then, being now **justified by his blood**, shall we be saved from the wrath of God through him. For if, while we were enemies, we were reconciled to God **through the death** of his Son, much more, being reconciled, shall we be **saved by his life**; and not only so, but we also rejoice in God through our Lord Jesus Christ, through whom we have now received the reconciliation"* (Romans 5:6-11). Can anyone read of how Christ was put to death, was buried, and resurrected on the third day and say His death was not a real death? His death was not just a "lost of well being." Death is death, not any kind of life anyplace, Christ died for us. When Christ died for us, died our death, He ceased to live; to have any kind of life unto God raised Him from the dead.

ALL DIE. *"Therefore, as through one man sin entered into the world, **and death through sin; and so death passed unto all men**, for that all sinned; for until the law sin was in the world; but sin is not imputed when there is no law. Nevertheless **death reigned from Adam until Moses**, even over them that had not sinned after the likeness of Adam's transgression, who is a figure of him that was to come But the free gift is not like the transgression. For if by the transgression of the one the **many died**, much more did the grace of God and the gift by the grace of the one Man, Jesus Christ, abound to the many. The gift is not like that which came through the one who sinned; for on the one hand the judgment arose from one transgression resulting in condemnation, but on the other hand the free gift arose from many transgressions resulting in justification. For if by the transgression of the one, **death reigned through the one**, much more those who receive the abundance of grace and of the gift of righteousness will **reign in life** through the One, Jesus Christ. So then as through one transgression there resulted condemnation to all men, even so through one act of righteousness there resulted justification of **life** to all men. For as through the one man's disobedience the many were made sinners, even so through the obedience of the One the many will be made righteous"* (Romans 5:12-19). When a person dies and is buried, without the resurrection that person is really dead, and will be forever dead if there is no resurrection.

DEATH BY SIN: *“The Law came in so that the transgression would increase; but where sin increased, grace abounded all the more, so that, as **sin reigned in death**, even so grace would reign through righteousness to **eternal life** through Jesus Christ our Lord. What shall we say then? Are we to continue in sin so that grace may increase? May it never be! How shall we who **died to sin** still live in it?”* (Romans 5:20-21).

LIFE IN CHRIST: *“Or do **YOU** not know that all of **US** who have been baptized into Christ Jesus have been **baptized into His death**? Therefore **WE have been buried with Him through baptism into death**, so that as Christ was **raised from the dead** through the glory of the Father, so **WE** too might walk in **newness of life**. For if **WE have become united with Him in the likeness of His death**, certainly **WE** shall also be in the **likeness of His resurrection**, knowing this, that **OUR** old self was crucified with Him, in order that **OUR** body of sin might be done away with, so that **WE** would no longer be slaves to sin; for **HE who has died is freed from sin**. Now if **WE have died with Christ**, **WE believe that WE shall also live with Him, knowing that Christ, having been raised from the dead, is never to die again; death no longer is master over Him. For the death that He died, He died to sin once for all; but the life that He lives He lives to God**. Even so consider **YOURSELVES** to be dead to sin, but alive to God in Christ Jesus. Therefore do not let sin reign in **YOUR** mortal body so that **YOU** obey its lusts, and do not go on presenting the members of **YOUR** body to sin as instruments of unrighteousness; but present **YOURSELVES** to God **as those alive from the dead**, and **YOUR** members as instruments of righteousness to God. For sin shall not be master over **YOU**, for **YOU** are not under law but under grace”* (Romans 6:1-14). All the pronouns in this passage are to the living person, not to a soul. It is the person, not a soul that **“shall also live with Him.”**

SIN BRING DEATH, NOT TORMENT: *“What then? Shall we sin because we are not under law but under grace? May it never be! Do you not know that when you present yourselves to someone as slaves for obedience, you are slaves of the one whom you obey, either of **sin resulting in death**, or of obedience resulting in righteousness? But thanks be to God that though you were slaves of sin, you became obedient from the heart to that form of teaching to which you were committed, and having been freed from sin, you became slaves of righteousness. I am speaking in human terms because of the weakness of your flesh. For just as you presented your members as slaves to impurity and to lawlessness, resulting in further lawlessness, so now present your members as slaves to righteousness, resulting in sanctification. For when you were slaves of sin, you were free in regard to righteousness. Therefore what benefit were you then deriving from the things of which you are now ashamed? For **the outcome of those things is death**”* (Romans 6:15-21).

*"But now having been freed from sin and enslaved to God, you derive your benefit, resulting in sanctification, and the outcome, eternal life. For the wages of sin is death, but the free gift of God is eternal life in Christ Jesus our Lord"* (Romans 6:22-23). TO MAKE DEATH NOT BE DEATH IS A DELIBERATE CHANGE OF GOD'S WORD, A DELIBERATE SAYING NOT SO GOD, YOU ARE WRONG.

**(3) DIE:** *"If you live after the flesh, you must die; but if by the spirit you put to death the deeds of the body, you shall live"* (Romans 8:13). The immoral soul doctrine must make **die** to mean exactly the same thing as **live**, just live in two different places; therefore, die and live both mean endless life!

(1). "You" must be changed to "your soul" will live after "you" are dead.

(2). "Die" must be changed to endless life with torment. It must be changed from speaking of **you** that will die if **you** live after the flesh, to **your soul that cannot die** will live forever in Hell if **you** live after the flesh. This passage is speaking of you the person; there is nothing about a soul that cannot die in it, or about being "spiritual dead," it is saying the whole person shall die, the whole person will be dead. The way many read this is: "If you live after the flesh, your soul must live forever in torment; but if by the spirit you put to death the deeds of the body, a soul shall live in Heaven." If **you** sin, it is not **you** that will be torment in Hell, but **a soul that is now in you will be tormented for your sins after you are dead.**

Die and live must be interpreted to both means to live forever! Who can believe it? It is obvious that die is only interpreted to mean "eternal life in torment" when it serves the purpose of the doctrine of eternal torment, and all other times "to die" really means "to die"; just as obvious that we must have someone tell us when "die" means "eternal life in torment" and when "die" really means "die"; and without this help we could never know when God intended us to understand the opposite of what He said, and when He intended us to understand what He said in the way He said it.

**(4) DESTRUCTION** must be changed to be only a loss of well-being. The traditionalist argument is that the words "*destroy*" and "*destruction*" should not be taken with their established meaning, but be interpreted as "a loss of well being," or an "irreparable loss." How could anyone know this without a revelation from God? How can the Scriptures speak of the destruction of the lost if they are not destroyed? The word destruction would be meaningless if there is not a point where the destruction is complete. Why would God say He were going to destroy the lost if He knows a soul is immortal and He could not destroy it? **Destruction has been changed to existing forever in torment, living forever in misery.** For destruction to mean existing in torment they much find a way to somehow have a destruction that will preserve the destroyed person undestroyed. "*Broad is the way that leads to destruction,*" (Matthew 7:13) is changed to "Broad is the way that leads to eternal life in misery" for a soul that cannot not be destructed; **Christ is comparing life to**

**destruction, not life in one place, or life in another place.** Paul said, *“What if God, willing to show his wrath, and to make his power known, endured with much long-suffering vessels of wrath fitted unto **destruction**”* (Romans 9:22). Anyone that is willing to change God’s word from destruction to eternal life being tormented by God has no respect for His word; they would change anything to make it say what they wanted it to say.

*“Whose end is **destruction**”* (Philippians 3:19) cannot be changed to, “whose end is endless life of torment.” Destruction means destruction, not indestructible life. It is life or death, not a high quality life in Heaven or a low quality life being tormented. Death is not life; death is death.

E. D. SLOUGH: “But these as natural brute beasts made to be taken and destroyed, speak evil of the things they understand not and shall utterly perish in their own corruption’ (2 Peter 2:12). **What is the plain and natural sense of perish? Is it not a literal destruction? The people of the flood perished. Sodom and Gomorrah perished. Fifteen hundred in the great Titanic tragedy perished. Five hundred people in the Iroquois Theater fire perished. And thousands, tens of thousands, perish annually in one manner or another. Oh, Yes. We too keenly realize what the plain and natural sense of perish means...Peter says they shall “utterly perish,” utterly, completely, absolutely, put an end to. Why not plead for the plain, natural sense of the word then? Listen, reader, he knows his theory would “utterly perish” that instant.**”  
Indictment of Eternal Torment—The Self-negation of a Monstrous Doctrine. Evangelist Church of Christ, F. L Rowe Publisher, Free on line at: [www.robertwr.com/EternalTorment.htm](http://www.robertwr.com/EternalTorment.htm)

**(5) DESTROY** does not mean unable to be destroyed; destroy must be changed to mean to preserve forever. "Can never be" must be added to destroy and make it read, "Can never be destroyed." It is argued that an immortal soul cannot die; therefore, "destroy" cannot mean "destroy," and the Bible did not really mean "destroy" when it said "destroy," just as "death" cannot really mean "death," but these words must mean something; therefore, they are changed and given a meaning that is the opposite of their true meaning; many words must always be changed and used with a meaning that is the opposite of what the words mean. It is argued that annihilated in the scientific sense, that nothing is annihilated by fire; it just changes its form; it assumes that God is bound by the laws of science, that He can neither make or destroy matter, just change it form as man does; the power to create and destroy is taken from God, that matter is uncreated and is just as eternal as God is, that God did not create anything, only changed the form of matter in the creation. They overlook the fact that the Bible is not a scientific book, and is not written in today's scientific language, and that God made all things out of nothing, and all things will go back to nothing. Those to whom Paul was writing would not have thought that if a book were burnt up that it was not destroyed. Just as they would not have thought the elements that the book was made of was a book before the book was printed. When destroy is applied to things it is always the end of them, they no longer exist even though the elements that were in them may still exist.

In Matthew 10:28 there is no figurative language, but we are told that one word must be taken out of its literal context and used in a figurative way to mean just the opposite of its true meaning, that the one word "destroy" must be changed to mean "an eternal life of torment for souls;" one word must be made figurative, even when nothing is figurative in the context that the word is in. There is no figurative language in 2 Thessalonians 1:9, but two words, "destruction" and "perish" must both be changed to figurative, changing both words to the same meaning "an eternal life of torment."

- In the Old Testament God **destroyed** many cities and nations. Sodom was completely destroyed, not just lost its well being; it is an example of the destruction that is coming to the lost (2 Peter 2:6).
- The lost will be **destroyed**, not live forever in torment.
- "Destroyed" cannot be made to mean both (1) death, going out of existents and (2) eternal life, never going out of existents; not endlessly being destroyed but never destroyed, not a destroying that God will never be able to complete.
- **Death**, when made figuratively, death is changed to **eternal life** in Hell for a soul that is separated from God, **but definitely not dead**, the dead could never be dead.
- **Destruction**, when made figuratively, is changed to a loss of well-being, an endless life of misery.
- **Destroy and perish**, when made figuratively, means to preserve forever. Did God intend to say imperishable when He said perish?
- **Sleep**, when made figuratively, is **to be awake** in Heaven or Hell, **but definitely not asleep**, that would make their *"immaterial, invisible part of men"* be asleep in Hell; therefore, they have labeled this "soul sleeping." It is true that the Bible says nothing about "soul sleeping" of an *"immaterial, invisible part of men,"* but it repeatedly says a person sleeps unto the person wakes at the resurrection, not an immaterial something in a person that sleeps; it is the resurrection that turns the death of a person into a sleep from which that person will wake up.

**(6) PERISH** like destruction and destroy, perish must be changed to mean, "can never perish, or never be destroyed, but to live forever in an unhappy and miserable condition in Hell." It is difficult to imagine a perpetually but inconclusive process of perishing that never ends. Forever perishing, but imperishable! To say "to perish" is to "live forever" is a complete contradiction. How can anyone believe that "parish" is synonymous with "living forever in misery?"

**Do you wonder why the writers of the Bible said the lost will die, be destroyed, perish, but today we are told souls that were in the lost cannot die, cannot be destroyed, and cannot perish?**

According to many, both Catholic and Protestant:

1. Death means endless life in misery.
2. Die means to live in endless misery.
3. Destruction means endless life in misery.
4. Perish means endless life in misery.
5. Sleep means endless life awake in misery for lost souls.

*“If Christ has not been raised then our preaching is vain, your faith also is vain. Moreover we are even found to be witnesses of God, because we witnessed against God that He raised Christ, whom He did not raise, if in fact the dead are not raised. For if the dead are not raised, not even Christ has been raised; and if Christ has not been raised, your faith is worthless; you are still in our sins. **Then those also that are fallen asleep in Christ have perished**”* (1 Corinthians 15:14-18). Certainly Paul did not say that those who are asleep in Christ are alive and in torment if there is no resurrection; he clearly said that they have **perished** if the dead are not raised, that they would forever remain dead, they had perished; if Christ was not raised there is neither a resurrection nor immortality; if Christ was not raised He has perished, and there is no savior from death; He would now be dead, and there would be no life after death for neither the saved nor the lost. Perished cannot be made to mean one thing when it is speaking of the saved, those in Christ, and another thing when it is speaking of the lost; without the resurrection then perish means all that died have ceased to exist forever, and when we die we will also cease to exist. There is no way it could be said any plainer that not one dead person will be alive anyplace before the resurrection at the second coming of Christ at the end of this Christian age.

Perished cannot mean both life and death.

- PAUL: Death, no resurrection, therefore no life after death (**“have perished”**) when it is speaking of those in Christ if there is no resurrection.
- TODAY: Eternal life in torment, life with a loss of well being that **can never perish** when it is speaking of souls of the lost.
- Why would their labor be in vain if there is no resurrection if a soul is immortal and alive without a resurrection?

H. L. HASTINGS: “We shall be guided by the literal meaning of these word, refusing to give them a strange or unusual signification for the purpose of saving or up building a cherished theory.” “After The Verdict,” 1982, page 4.

JACOB BLAIN: “When I read that all who came out of Egypt over twenty years of age—of the fate of Sodom and Pharaoh’s army—of the 2,000 swine which ran into the sea, I shall not go to the learned to find out whether they *died*, or were only made *miserable*, when it is said they *“perished”* and were *“destroyed.”* If perish and destroy means to *live* in misery, as preachers say, then beasts live in endless woe, for the terms are often applied to them. It is a perfect contradiction in language to say a thing is to be “consumed,” “devoured,” “burned up,” &c., if it is indestructible, as divines say a soul is. Page 21, “Death Not Life: Or, The Theological Hell and Endless Misery Disproved,” Public domain.

FRED THOMPSON: “Without the Divine gift of immortality man is doomed to die, perish, cease to exist. His mortal condition is terminal. Immortality is neither a part of his nature nor an unconditional bestowal of God. Only those who meet God’s terms are beneficiaries of the promise. Thus, not to be included in the company of the saved is to be excluded from life,” page 299, “What the Bible Says about Heaven and Hell,” College Press, 1988.

- *“For the preaching of the cross is to them that **perish**, foolishness”* (1 Corinthians 1:18).
- If there is no resurrection, *“Then those also how have fallen asleep in Christ have **perished**”* (1 Corinthians 15:18). **Perish** would be the same to both those that are saved and those that are lost, neither one would have eternal life with a lost of well-being.

*"Whose end is destruction"* (Philippians 1:28). "End" cannot be changed to "endless."  
*"Destruction"* cannot be changed to eternal life with "a lost of well being."

**(7) FIRE** causes things to disappear, it completely destroys useless things like chaff, we know what fire is and what it does, fire consumes, devours and destroys; fire is used in the Bible as a symbol of utter destruction, never as a preservative; no life can survive in fire, no life can continue to live in fire; there is no life that is not utterly destroyed by fire. Fire brings death to any living thing making it the perfect symbol of a complete end of life. For today's theology to be true **fire must be changed into figurative language of something that is nothing like fire**, something that is altogether different from fire, something that preserves and cannot consume. With the kind of "fire" that we are told will be in Hell you would only have to put wood in your fireplace one time and it would heat your house forever. It took some thought to come up with a fire that does not do what fire does, a fire that burns but never burns, which consumes but never consumes. Literal fire destroys, consumes; in figurative language there is always a parallel; if it were figurative language total destruction would be symbolized, just as real fire consumes the chaff, the wicked will be consumed, devoured, destroyed by the wrath of God (Hebrews 10:27). **If being consumed as chaff is consumed by fire does not denote the utter destruction of both the chaff and the wicked there is no language that would. No life can exist in fire.**

It is argued that an immaterial soul cannot be destroyed by fire and worms; if there were an immaterial soul that fire cannot destroy then that soul could not be tormented by fire, this argument is self destructive.

In neither the Old Testament nor the New Testament fire is not used by God to eternally torment an immortal soul after the death of the person it had been in.

#### **FIRE IN THE OLD TESTAMENT:**

- (1). Consumed the burnt offering, no one thinks the burnt offering was torment (Leviticus 9:24).
- (2). Consumed Nadab and Baihu, *"And they died before the Lord"* (Leviticus 11:1-2)
- (3). *"Fire also came forth from the Lord and consumed the two hundred and fifty men who were offering the incense"* (Numbers 16:35), consumed, not tormented.
- (4). *"And it shall be that the one who is taken with the things under the ban shall be burned with fire, he and all that belongs to him."* Zerahites, his family, and all that belonged to them were burned with fire (Joshua 7:15-26).
- (5). *"Then the fire of God came down from heaven and consumed him and his fifty"* (2 Kings 1:10-12).
- (6). *"Therefore thus says the Lord Jehovah: Behold, mine anger and my wrath shall be poured out upon this place, upon man and upon beast, and upon the trees of the field, and upon the fruit of the ground; and it shall burn, and shall not be quenched"* (Jeremiah 7:20). If this was the Lord's anger being poured out in

Hell, it would make beasts, trees, fields, and the fruit of the ground be in unquenchable fire in Hell. In Jeremiah 17:27 it is *"the palaces of Jerusalem"* that would be destroyed by an unquenchable fire; are *"the palaces of Jerusalem"* now burning in Hell or any other place?

(7). **Ezekiel speaks of Judah being destroyed by Babylon using the imagery of a forest burning.** *"And the word of Jehovah came unto me, saying, son of man, set your face toward the south, and drop your word toward the south, and prophesy against the forest to the field in the South; and say to the forest of the South, Hear the word of Jehovah: Thus says the Lord Jehovah, Behold, I will kindle a fire in you, and it shall consume every green tree in you, and it shall devour ever green tree in you, and ever dry tree; the flaming flame **shall not be quenched**, and all faces from the south to the north shall be burnt thereby. And all flesh shall see that I, Jehovah, have kindled it; **it shall not be quenched**"* (Ezekiel 20:47-48). This fire that could not be quenched by mankind was not in Hell, it was not a literal fire, it was God using Babylon to destroy Israel for their sins (Ezekiel 21:19; Nehemiah 1:3).

(8). Living people on this earth go out to look at dead bodies that were slain by the Lord and were being consumed by an unquenchable fire (Isaiah 66:15-24). No one could put it out, but when it had did what the Lord wanted it to do it went out, it is not burning today.

(9). Cities, nations, people, Israel, Israel's enemies, and fortresses were consumed and destroyed by fire, Hosea 8:14; Amos 1:7; 1:14; Jeremiah 17:27; 49:27; Numbers 21:28; Obadiah 18; Joel 2:2-3; Isaiah 1:31; 34:6-15; 47:14; Malachi 4:1-3; 1 Kings 14:10; Ezekiel 20:47-48.

#### **FIRE IN THE NEW TESTAMENT:**

(1). **Fire will burn up** the useless chaff of wheat (Matthew 3:12, Luke 3:17)

(2). **Fire will burn up** the weeds, tares and bad fish (Matthew 13:30-50)

(3). **Fire will burn up** the withered branches (John 15:6)

(4). God will **burn up** the chaff with unquenchable fire (Luke 3:16-17)

- When fire burns up broken off branches, dead weeds, and stubble, they are already lifeless and worthless; it is not torment, but the outcome of being useless. Chaff, tares, weeds, stubble, dry branches are highly combustible materials that are soon completely destroyed by the fire, but the "figurative fire" of today's theology is nothing like fire, and the "figurative fire" of theology burn up nothing.
- These parables are symbolic language, the burning up of weeds is the complete destruction of the weeds, fire as we know it destroys; it is not possible to say the weeds continue in existence after they were burned up. Complete destruction of weeds, chaff, or branches by fire cannot be symbolic of an endless life of torment of something that cannot be destroyed; anything that is burned up cannot be changed to or made to be symbolic of forever existing.

(5). The end of worthless ground **is to be burned** (Hebrews 6:7-8).

(6). **Fire totally destroyed**, not forever tormented Sodom and Gomorrah (Jude 7; 2 Peter 2:6-9; Luke 17:28-29).

(7). *"For if we sin willfully after that we have received the knowledge of the truth, there remains no more a sacrifice for sins, but a certain fearful expectation of judgment, **and a fierceness of fire which shall devour the adversaries**"* (Hebrews 10:26-17). *"For our **God is a consuming fire**"* (Hebrews 12:29).

(8). *"But the heavens that now are, and the earth, by the same word have been stored up for fire, being reserved against **the day of judgment and destruction of ungodly men**...But the day of the Lord will come as a thief; in the which the heavens shall pass away with a great noise, and the elements shall be dissolved with fervent heat, **and the earth and the works that are therein shall be burned up**"* (2 Peter 3:7-9).

(9). *"**The lake of fire which is the second death**"* (Revelation 21:8).

**(8) SPIRITUAL DEATH** is not found in the Bible, but it has been added, and it is used repeatedly in today's preaching. To escape from death being death the word "spiritual" is added to death despite the fact that "spiritual death" is not in the Bible. The wages of sin is not spiritual death, which we are told would be a death that is not really a death to a soul if a soul or a spirit can never be dead. The wages of sin is death to the person whom sins are not washed away by the blood of Christ. If adding to God's word were a sin, why would both adding "spiritual death," and preaching "spiritual death" that is not in the Bible not be a sin? Many who say they, "Speak when the Bible speaks and are silent where the Bible is silent," then add "spiritual." Romans 6:23 is changed to, "The wages of sin is spiritual death." What is spiritual death?

- If physical death is the end of all life of the body.
- Then spiritual death would be the end of all life of a spirit.
- Death would be death to both, not death to one, and eternal life to the other. Death is death; death is not eternal life anyplace.

Spiritual (pneumatikos) is used in the New Testament 21 times, but "spirituality dead" not one time, yet many preach it continually. From where did they get this? Do they mean a spirit is dead? If they mean "lost," why do they use an unscriptural term that does not say what they mean? In his review of my "From Where Came Hell" Csonka says, "We are spiritually dead when, as Isaiah says, 'your sins have separated you from your God,'" Guardian of Truth, (now "Truth Magazine") January 5, 1995, page 17, (Isaiah 59:2). He must know that Isaiah is speaking about *"the house of Jacob their sins"* (Isaiah 58:1) *"A nation"* (Isaiah 58:2). This is about a nation that had left God being separated from God, and there is not one word about any kind of death of a person in it, but he reads it in. He changes this from a nation (Israel) being separated from God to a person "we" being separated from God, and then changes this person "we" from a living person separated from God to a soul that

is not really dead, but alive and this soul has eternal life in Hell forever separated from God. Has he heard this verse misused so often he does not know that he is misusing it? He must add changes to changes to make the nation of Israel be a deathless soul that was in a person, but he did not seem to know whether he wanted it to be (1) a soul that is alive in Hell that had been in a dead person, (2) or a living person that is "spiritually dead."

If there were such a thing as "spiritual death," it would have to be when a spirit had no life for if it still had life it would not be dead. If a soul were living somewhere with eternal life, how could that soul be dead? It could not be "dead" if it were "alive." Most who believe in Hell say:

- After the resurrection the second death will be a "spiritual death," that is separation of a deathless soul from God, not a real death.
- And say lost persons are now "spiritual dead" even before they die.

Do they not make the second death be nothing more that a continuation of the state they say the lost are now in, just a continuation of the lost being separated from God? Therefore, they have done away with the second death, for they tell us that the lost are already "spiritual dead," and will always be "spiritual dead," even when the souls that had been in them are alive in Hell. The use of "spiritual dead" is not to "speak where the Bible speaks, and be silent where the Bible is silent." *"The second death"* (Reversion 21:8) there is a parallel between the two deaths, between death as we know it and the death of the lost after the judgment. Look at a dead person and there is no life; there will be no life for the lost after the second death.

**(9) SLEEP** could not really mean sleep; asleep must be changed to awake. If souls are being tormented in Hell, how could they in any way be sleeping? **All** the dead persons are sleeping unto the resurrection; it is the resurrection that turns death into a sleep from which the person will awake, without the resurrection death would be the end of life. The metaphor of the dead being asleep that is used repeatedly in the Bible is made void and foolishness by the doctrine of an immortal soul being awake in Heaven or Hell. The Bible does not use words in such a self-contradictory manner. Death is referred as sleep about 67 times in the Bible, about 47 in the Old Testament, and about 20 in the New Testament with both the righteous dead and the unrighteous dead being asleep; asleep does not mean awake, not awake in Heaven, not awake in Hell. The second death is never called sleep; there will be no waking up from it.

BILL REEVES: "The body of our humiliation, that it may be conformed to the body of His glory (Phil. 3:20, 21). We do not expect this at the moment of each one's death, for at death we sleep in Jesus and rest, but when He comes from heaven." Truth Magazine, February 15, 1973.

"May they rest in peace" that is often on graves would make no sense if the person in the grave was not asleep, but were awake and enjoying Heaven or suffering in Hell. Sleep would be a very inappropriate and misleading word if the dead were awake in Heaven, if they were more awake than we are. That a person

sleeps between death and the resurrection, and then wakes up at the resurrection makes going to Heaven at the time of death not possible; innate immortality and being asleep are contradictions, both cannot be.

**(10) KILL** "*And I will kill her children with pestilence*" (Revelation 2:23). Kill is used interchangeably with die and destroyed. "To be killed," "to die," "to be destroyed."

Summary: Death and all these words must be changed into figurative language even when they are in plain passages. All these words must be given a theological meaning that is not found in the words, but we are never told how they know what this theological meaning is. But, one thing is clear, if they did not change them into figurative language, their theology would be destroyed. Death, destruction, destroy, and perish are simple words, and there is no hint of them being figurative language when they are used in plain passages; therefore, they must be taken in their simple literal meaning. These words cannot be changed to be figurative, and given a meaning not found in the words to save a theology that is not in the Bible. They can and; therefore, must be taken literally. The only reason these words are made to be figurative language is that if these words are taken with their literal meaning they make the doctrine of an immortal soul and eternal life in Hell not possible.

When figurative language (Lake of Fire) is made literal, then the literal language must be changed to agree with the figurative language that has been changed into literal language. If not, the Bible would say in one place that destruction is not destruction, and in many others that destruction is destruction. Death is not eternal life in Hell. When we say anything, a plant, animal, or person is dead, we do not mean that plant, animal, or person is alive and being tormented. Death must be made to mean one thing when it is a plant or animal that is dead, and another when it is a person that is dead. **There are no stronger words that could have been used to say the end of the wicked is a total end of existence; death is ceasing to live. Is there any word God could have used that they would not say it does not mean what it says?** No, there is not a one that would not be changed if it would conflict with their theology.

R. F. WEYMOUTH: "My mind fails to conceive a grosser misinterpretation of language than when the five or six strongest words which the Greek tongue possesses, signifying 'destroy,' or 'destruction,' are explained to mean maintaining an everlasting but wretched existence. To translate black as white is nothing to this," "Life In Christ," page 365. R. F. Weymouth is the translator of "The New Testament in Modern Speech."

DR. C. CAMPBELL, who believed in eternal torment said, "If the words and phrases employed by the apostles and evangelist, in delivering the revelation committed to them by the Holy Spirit, had not been agreeable to the received usage of the people to whom they spoke, their discourse being unintelligible, could have conveyed no information, and consequently would have been no revelation to the hearers" Preliminary Dissertation, Part 1, Sect. 1, 1854.

EDWARD WHITE: "There must exist some argument of almost overpowering influence which has thus determined the interpretation of masses of language to a sense exactly contrary to its

natural meaning. **For the process by which such terms as death, perishing, destruction are made to stand for the idea of endless misery, is one so remarkable as to arrest attention and demand instant inquiry.** A corresponding action on the word 'life' so often used in the Bible to denote the eternal reward of the saints would result in making it stand for the strange idea of a *happy extinction*, or a blessed abolition of existence—an *euthanasia*. The radical idea of destruction, that is extinction of being, if first taken out of the term *Death*; then the word is made to stand for its opposite, eternal being; and then the associated idea of misery is grafted upon the stock of the converted primary; the result being, that *destruction* stand for endless misery. An exactly parallel treatment of the promise of Life, therefore, will result, first, in taking out of it its radical idea or conscious existence—next, in making it stand for its opposite, extinction—and lastly, in joining the idea of happiness with the converted primary, —so that you obtain the complex result of a *happy extinction*. It would require some argument of overmastering force to persuade nine-tenths of the scholars of Christendom to perform this operation upon the promise of life to the righteous" "Life in Christ," 1875, At: <http://www.robertwr.com/LifeinChrist.htm>

GEORGE STORRS: "The next principle of interpretation I would lay down is that it is a truth, from which we are not to depart without the clearest evidence, that words are never used to mean more than their primary signification...Not to adhere to this principle is to make revelation no revelation. Those who abandon it may as well admit, at once, that the common people ought not to have the Bible, for it will only lead them astray. Why should Protestants boast over the Catholics in this respect? Do not both, virtually, claim that the language of Scripture is mystical, or has a meaning that does not appear in the common signification of the words? And, therefore, the Priests must interpret them to the people? Might we not as well give our Bibles altogether into the hands of these interpreters? Especially, if the plain common sense meaning of words is not to be followed, when there is no clear necessity for departing from it...**What should we think of a law that says, "For murder thou shalt die," if we were told the meaning is not, that the transgressor shall actually die, but be kept alive in indescribable torments, protracted to the greatest possible extent?** Would any man think he was fairly dealt with by such an administration? And would he not have just cause of complaint at the want of definiteness in the terms used to denote the punishment threatened!" Sermon One, page 13.

JOHN LOCKE: "By death some understand endless torments in hell fire; **but it seems a strange way of understanding a law, which requires the plainest and directs of word, that by death should be meant eternal life in misery."**

DEAN ALFORD: "A canon of interpretation, which should be constantly born in mind, is that a figurative sense of words is never admissible except when required by the context" Commentary on Acts 10:42. "Death" used in a figurative sense to be "eternal life separated from God" is never required by the context but that "death" means "eternal life" is a must for today's theology. Today's teaching is that the Bible almost never means what it says and must be interpreted, and one of the ways it must be interpreted is to explain the meaning of death to be life.

H. L. HASTINGS: "Eight times he (Paul) speaks of the wicked as destined to perish. Death is used to express their destiny seven times; nine times they are spoken of as be destroyed, *once* as devoured by fire, and *once* as burned. Not one of these words has, in the original or the translation, the meaning of eternal torment. Not one of them means any such thing in common conversation, **and it is only by a 'theological' or false definition, alike repugnant to the laws of language and common sense, that such an idea can be conveyed by such language.** Paul does not tell us that he used these words in a *peculiar* or *theological* sense. No Greek would have supposed so, had they heard him; and we are led to conclude that as Paul would not use words calculated to mislead; therefore, **we should take these words in their most obvious and current**

**signification.** Paul did teach the utter DESTRUCTION or PERISHING, or DEATH, or EXTERMINATION of ungodly men...**No stronger expressions can be found in Greek or English, to denote the utter extirpation of the ungodly. If these words can be evaded or explained away, then, if the doctrine be ever so true, it would be impossible to teach it. If these words do not convey the idea, than no words can be made to do it"** After The Verdict, reprinted 1982, page 30, 31.

The Bible must be made to use opposite words than what the words means. The theological use of these words today is the same as saying white is black, sweet is bitter, night is day.

- White must be changed to mean black.
- Sleep must be changed to mean awake.
- Death must be changed to mean life. Death is made to be deathless, to be "always dead yet never dead."
- To die must be changed to mean to live forever in torment.
- Destruction must be changed to mean eternal torment; the destroyed are not destroyed.
- To perish, to be destroyed, must be changed to mean for a soul to be preserved incorruptible and imperishable in Hell. Perish and destroy do not and never has a meaning of a loss of well-being.
- Fire must be changed into something that preserves, not something that devours or consumes. The "*consuming fire*" could not consume.

**The only way the force of these words can be broken is to deny that life means life, that death means death. With definitions such as are given by today's theology, anything, whatever anyone wants can be proved, and whatever anyone does not want can be disproved.** To put eternal torment by God in an eternal Hell in the Bible is the exactly opposite of what the scripture clearly say, and it must be read into the Bible.

Those who believe in Hell give God the power to "*destroy both body and soul in Gehenna,*" but only after they put their own meaning on both destroy and Gehenna, and they say the meaning of both destroy and Gehenna is an eternal life of misery and suffering in Hell being tormented by God.

There is no way that anyone could know that death is not death, but that death is eternal life in torment. How could the wages of sin be death when souls that had been in sinners will have an eternal life in Hell? Without a revelation from God, no one could know that God meant only a loss of well being when He used these words. If Hell exists then death cannot be death; if death is death there cannot be a Hell.

**THE MISSING WORDS:** Words that are not in the Bible, but are preached today as if they were on every page, (1) Immortal soul (2) Hell (3) An eternal life of torment. The Bible is made to say what the readers want it to say, and their faith (what they believe) is only a projection of their own desires. **Many words, life, death, die, dead, destroy, perish, destruction, consumed, kill, end, burned up, and sleep, must be redefined in a way that the world does not use them.** We must have "a class of inspired men to unfold and reveal its true sense to mankind." The belief that

men are born with an immortal soul in them it and can never die makes death impossible, and death must be redefined as a different kind of life in a different place. This is just what they have done by saying death does not mean to be dead, but death means a soul is alive and living a deathless eternal life with torment. Anyone who reads the Bible believing that a soul is an *"immaterial, invisible part of a person"* (W. E. Vine) that is immortal and can never die, is compelled to change all texts that speak of the lost being destroyed to mean that they are only tortured forever but cannot ever be destroyed. "Destroy" cannot be understood, **"In the fair, stipulated, and well-established meaning of the terms,"** (Alexander Campbell). Interpretation of parables, symbols, and figurative languages are made to be superior over plain statements. What is clear language must be made to agree with what is thought to be said in the symbolic language. God said it the way He meant it.

- 1). **Life** is life, not just a reward to an immaterial invisible being that is in a person that now has eternal **life** and can never be dead.
- 2). **Death** is death and it is the opposite of life, not a different form of life. Not eternal life with torment; death is not eternally dying but never dead.
- 3). **Destruction** is destruction. Destruction does not mean there is a part of a person that can never be destroyed. Destruction does not mean kept alive in eternal torment. Not after being destroyed by God for thousands of years yet are no more destroyed then when God first began the destroying.
- 4). **End** is end, not going on forever without an end.
- 5). **Kill** is to end life, and does not mean never able to be killed, never able to end life.
- 6). **Burned up** is burned up, does not mean never able to be burned up.
- 7). **Consumed** is consumed, does not mean never able to be consumed.
- 8). **Perish** is perish, not just a loss of well-being to those who cannot perish.
- 9). **Sleep** is sleep, not to be awake in Heaven or Hell.

**These words do not teach what many believe; therefore, they must change the meaning of these words to make the Bible say what they believe, changed to be the opposition of their meaning** (death changed to endless life in endless torment, etc.), **changed even by those who say they do not believe the Bible should be changed.** Why we are told that the words used in the New Testament must be changed—they give us no reason but that the belief in Plato's pagan philosophy requires these words to be given a new meaning that is the very opposite of there true meaning, death cannot be death if Plato's immortal soul was true, destruction cannot be destroyed but must be changed to be an undestroyed soul that just lost its well being; death cannot mean perpetual endless life. In the traditional death cannot be death, death must be changed to be anything but death; *"the wages of sin is death"* must be changed to be *"the wages of sin is some kind of endless miserable life."* The deathless soul doctrine makes Christ not to save us from death, but it makes a deathless soul not live in torment; Christ did not give His life to save a soul, according to them Christ gives life to save no ones life from death, or save no soul from death, but He just give His life to change where a soul will live the life that

a soul already has. The orthodox position is that Christ gives happiness only, not life to a deathless soul that Christ does not save from death; they must substitute (1) happiness in place of life, (2) torment in place of death.

There was words in the Greek that was used by the writers of the New Testament that would have conveyed the same thoughts that we are told by preachers that tell us that death is not death but only a lost of well being, that the wages of sin is eternal torment, but not once did God lead them to use those words.

**CHANGES THAT MUST BE MADE BY THOSE WHO BELIEVE IN ETERANL LIFE IN HELL MUST MAKE TO MAKE THE BIBLE AGREE WITH THEM. If there were a deathless soul, changing the meaning of these words is the only way in which the force of these words can be broken is to make them mean the very opposite of there true meaning.**

- 1). Death changed to life with torment.
- 2). To die changed to live.
- 3). To *"lose life"* changed to be preserved alive in a miserable existence.
- 4). *"Burn up"* changed to burning without end.
- 5). *"Destroy"* changed to preserved without ever being destroyed.
- 6). To be devoured, to perish, and to be consumed, all these must be changed to being immortal and indestructible.
- 7). *"End"* changed to be endless.
- 8). Traditionalist must change the Bible to say the opposite of what it says.
- 9). *"He that believes on the Son has eternal life; but he that believes not the Son shall not see life"* (John 3:36) must be changed to, "He that believes not the Son was born with eternal life, and that person will see life in Hell where he will live forever."
- 10). *"For the gate is narrow and the way is hard that leads to life, and few are they that find it"* (Matthew 7:13-14) must be changed to, "For the gate is narrow, and the way is hard that leads to life in Heaven, and most shall see life in Hell."
- 11). *"For God so loved the world that He give His only begotten Son, that whosoever believes on Him should not perish, but have eternal life"* (John 3:16) must be changed to, "Souls that had been in all will have eternal life someplace, in Heaven or in Hell."
- 12). *"Even He who is able to save and to destroy"* (James 4:12) must be changed to, "Even He who is able to save alive in Heaven, or save alive and undestroyed in Hell."
- 13). *"For he that sows unto his own flesh shall of the flesh reap corruption: but he that sows unto the Spirit shall of the Spirit reap eternal life"* (Galatians 5:8) must be changed to, "Both shall reap eternal life, just not both in the same place, some eternal life in Heaven, some eternal life in Hell."
- 14). *"For the wages of sin is death, but the free gift of God is eternal life in Christ Jesus our Lord"* (Romans 6:23) must be changed to, "For the wages of sin is eternal torment in Hell for those who were born with eternal life, and the gift of God is eternal life must be changed to an escape from eternal torture for a 'soul' that already has eternal life, and a reward for the 'soul' that is in you that now has eternal life."
- 15). *"Whosoever shall seek to gain his life shall lose it: but whosoever shall lose his life shall preserve it"* (Luke 17:33) must be changed to, "Whosoever shall seek to gain his life shall preserve life in eternal torment in Hell, but whosoever shall lose his life shall preserve his life in Heaven, but only for 'it,' not for 'you.'"

The changes that must be made by those who teach eternal life in Hell for a deathless soul could be extended to many pages, but this should be enough for anyone who loves the truth more than the *"doctrines and precepts of men"* (Matthew 15:9).

**The reinterpretation of the many words used that mean the end of life has no equal. Other reinterpretations are based on the changing of a few passages; Peter being the first Pope is based mostly on a reinterpretation of Matthew 16:18; but for souls to be deathless and tormented forever, there had to be many plus many more changes and many adding to God's word. Was Paul trying to deceive by using the word "destruction," and today's theology has to correct him by saying, "No Paul, you really meant to say everlasting torment"? Destruction does not mean to preserve alive in eternal torment.**

***"And you know that no murderer has eternal life abiding in him"*** (1 John 3:15). Was John wrong when he said no murderer has eternal life? If, as many say, mankind has a "soul" that is now immortal and cannot die, and that soul is the only part of a person that shall live after the judgment is an ever-living soul that is now in all, even in all murderers, then all the murderers would now have an *"immaterial, invisible part of man"* (W. E. Vine); without eternal life a murderer cannot have an immortal soul; **if he did have an immortal soul, he would have eternal life abiding in him; if he does not have eternal life abiding in him he does not have an immortal soul.** To teach all have a soul in them that is eternal and it can never die make there be a soul in them and it now has eternal life, it can only be a question of where that soul will spend its eternal life. John said, *"And this is the promise which he promised us, even the life eternal"* (1 John 2:25). ***"We have passed out of death into life...no murderer has eternal life abiding in him"*** (1 John 3:14-15). Is there anyway John could have said any clearer that a murderer does not have an immortal soul that now has eternal life, that murderers have not *"passed out of death into life"*?

**DEATH IS NOT HELL: A dead person cannot be tormented; they can feel no pain. Only the living can be tormented. If Hell were a real place, souls in it would be alive, not dead; their life would be just as eternal as the souls that had been in the saved.**

1. Death makes Hell impossible.
2. Hell makes death impossible.
3. Hell makes the resurrection of the dead impossible.

If there is no death, there cannot be a resurrection of the undead. If there is no resurrection, we have no hope 1 Corinthians 15:16-19. **Can there be a doctrine more harmful than the doctrine of Hell, which takes away our resurrection; therefore, our hope of salvation?**

#### **WHAT THE DEAD DO NOT DO?**

1. There is no activity (Ecclesiastes 9:10).
2. They do not have plans (Ecclesiastes 9:10).
3. They have no wisdom (Ecclesiastes 9:10).

4. Their bed is in darkness (Job 17:13).
5. They do not mention God (Psalm 6:5).
6. They give God no thanks (Psalm 6:5).
7. They have no thoughts (Psalm 146:4).
8. They know nothing (Ecclesiastes 9:5).
9. The wicked are silent, no speech (Ps. 31:17).

What do the dead do, think, and know? Nothing. Does anyone think this is a picture of Heaven or Hell? **Without the resurrection the dead would never know anything after death** (1 Corinthians 15:12-22).

**Unwilling to accept God's word:** Inspired writers speak often about death being a sleep, and about its unconscious nature. *"His breath goes forth, he returns to the earth; in that very day his thoughts perish"* (Psalm 146:4). If Solomon had said, "Their love, as their hatred and their envy will continue...for there is work, and device, and knowledge, and wisdom, in Sheol, whither you go" (Ecclesiastes 9:5-10), then those who teach a immaterial, invisible soul that is alive from our death unto the resurrection could rightly say this ends all debate on this subject. But, when it is put the way God inspired it **they reject it**. If you try for the rest of your life, you would never be able to say any stronger than Solomon that there is nothing after death, and without the resurrection taught by Christ there never would be life after death. Unconditional immortality must have knowledge in sheol, the grave; therefore, many plain statements that there is no knowledge in the grave must be rejected, and many plain statements that death is a sleep must be rejected. See Isaiah 38:18-19; Psalm 115:17; 6:5; John 11:11-14; Daniel 12:1-2; Job 14:12-15; 1 Corinthians 15:20.

Some say that Ecclesiastes is the view of those in the world, the way they see life when God is left out, but it is not the way a child of God sees life. Ecclesiastes has statements that are so conductivity to a soul being immortal that many try to make the whole book not be the truth, but it is only "life...viewed from the perspective where God is left out." Because it was conductivity to his belief that salvation is by faith only without works, Calvin did with the book of James the same as many do to Ecclesiastes. There is much in Ecclesiastes that cannot be said to be the way those in the world look at life (see Ecclesiastes 12:1, 12:13, and many other statements throughout the book), but to do away with these statements, they are willing to do away with all. If Ecclesiastes is "life...viewed from the perspective where God is left out," why is it not use it that way when Ecclesiastes 12:7 is used to prove the "soul" is immortal? If Ecclesiastes is, "life...viewed from the perspective where God is left out," then nothing in the book is the truth. Was a book that is not the truth inspired by God? If the book is only "life...viewed from the perspective where God is left out," what good could it have been to those that read it? Then why do we have this book in the Bible? Because it is not true that it is only the way the world sees life with God left out.

**Death that never dies! The living dead! The undead dead!** If this sounds like something out of a horror film, it is the teaching of many about some deathless something which is an "immaterial, invisible part of man." If there is something in a person that can never die, the lost could never be dead; common sense tells you that an immortal being can never die, that deathless soul would have no need of a savior to die in its place to keep it from dying. Death is not life, whether it is good life in Heaven, or bad life in Hell. To die is not to live. There cannot be life after death without a resurrection that ends the death.

**FIRST RESURRECTION—SECOND DEATH:** *"He that over comes shall not be hurt of the second death"* (Revelation 2:11, 20:6). The first resurrection is when a person is *"born anew...born of the water and the Spirit"* (John 3:3-5). *"And you did he make **alive** when you were dead...made **us alive** together with Christ (by grace have you been saved), and **raised us up with him"*** (Ephesians 2:1-6; Galatians 2:18-19; 3:1).

1. *"But God is so rich in mercy, and he loved us so much, that even while we were dead because of our sins, he **gave us life** when he raised Christ from the dead...**for he raised us from the dead along with Christ"*** (Ephesians 2:4 New Living Bible).
2. *"But God, rich in mercy, for the great love he bore us, **brought us to life with Christ...He raised us up"*** (Ephesians 2:4 New English Bible).

The first resurrection is when a person (not a soul, whatever a soul is thought to be) put on Christ, *"We were buried therefore with him through baptism into death: that like as Christ was **raised from the dead"*** (Romans 6:3-4). *"And you did he make alive, when you were dead through your trespasses and sins...even when we were dead through our trespasses, made us alive together with Christ...and raised us up with him"* (Ephesians 2:1-10), it was "us" "we" that were dead and made alive, not a soul. *"I say unto you, the hour comes, and now is when **the dead shall hear the voice of the Son of God; and they that hear shall live"*** (John 5:25). The first resurrection is when a person *"like as Christ was **raised from the dead"*** when they were buried through baptism and resurrected to a new life in Christ, a resurrection to a life that the unsaved never will never have; a life that begins when a person is buried through baptism and *"And you did he make **alive** when you were dead...made **us alive** together with Christ."* Just as the resurrection at the coming of Christ will be, it is a resurrection that will happen only one time; in both it is the person that is resurrected, not a pagan immaterial, deathless soul. The endless life that begins when a person comes up out of the water or baptism, *"That like as Christ was **raised from the dead"*** (Romans 6:3-4). *"If then you have been raised up with Christ...you have died and your life is hidden with Christ in God. When Christ, who is our life, is revealed, then you also will be revealed with Him in glory"* (Colossians 3:1-4). Life after the resurrection for *"those alive from the dead"* (Romans 6:13) is not a different life but a continuance of the life that began when a person was *"raised up*

*with Christ*" when baptized. All the faithful in Christ have been raised from the dead when we were *"buried with His through baptism into death, in order that as Christ was raised from the dead through the glory of the Father, so we too might walk in newness of life"* (Romans 6:4), and now have life as long as they remain faithful and *"shall not be hurt of the second death"* (Revelation 2:11). At the second coming of Christ, those that are alive in Christ, whether they have fallen asleep in Christ or remain unto He comes, when He come they will be changed and put on incorruption, immortality, and forever have the victory over death (1 Corinthians 15:52-55).

The first resurrection is pictured under two figures.

**(1). A RESURRECTION: Resurrected to a new life in Christ**, a death burial and resurrection to life in Christ (Romans 6). Coming up out of the water is the first resurrection when persons that are dead because of sin, not deathless souls, become *"alive unto God in Christ Jesus"* (Romans 6:11).

**(2). A BIRTH: Born to a new life in Christ**, a new birth of water and the spirit (John 3:5). *"Except one be born of water and the spirit, he cannot enter into the kingdom of God."* *"According to his mercy he saved us, through the washing of regeneration"* (Titus 3:5).

In John 5 Christ gives *"eternal life"* to those that believe, *"He that hears my word, and believes him that sent me, has eternal life, and comes not into judgment, but **has passed out of death into life**"* (John 5:24). All persons that hear and believe Christ have now passed out of death and have endless life, but are still in the image of Adam, have not yet put on the spiritual body; they will sleep with their life *"hidden with Christ in God."* But *"the hour comes in which all that are in the tombs shall hear his voice and shall come forth; they that have done good, unto the resurrection of life."* At that time they will awake in the image of Christ with spiritual bodies that will be suitable for endless life in Heaven. All others, *"They that have done evil, unto the resurrection of judgment"* (John 5:29). In this passage Christ speaks both (1) of the believers passing from death to life in this lifetime, (2) and also a resurrection to immortality for believes that will take place at His second coming. It is a continuance of life for believes that never will have an end even when they have *"fallen asleep in Christ"* (1 Corinthians 15:18). Believes *"comes not into judgment,"* but are raised from sleep to life, those that do not believe will be raised for judgment, not life; those that believe not *"shall not see life"* (John 3:36), after they have been raised for judgment (John 5:29), they shall be hurt of the second death (Revelation 21:8).

In John 11:25-26 Christ speaks of the life the believer will receive both now and after the judgment. *"I am the resurrection, and the life; **he** who believes in Me shall live even if **he** dies, and **everyone** who lives and believes in Me shall never die"* Even when the saved are asleep in Christ they live unto God; it is the person that is asleep in Christ that will wake up from their sleep.

All that are in the grave, both saved and lost, will hear His voice and come forth at the resurrection. All will be raised and stand *"before the judgment-seat of Christ; that each one may receive the things done in the body, according to what he has done, whether it be good or bad"* (2 Corinthians 5:10). All who were born again,

made alive by being raised with Christ through Baptism, and live faithful shall not be hurt of the second death, which will be after the judgment. Christ paid the wages of sin for them. All others will pay their own wages of sin, which is death (Romans 6:23). *"But the fearful, and unbelieving, and abominable, and murderers, and fornicators, and sorcerers, and idolaters, and all liars, their part shall be in the lake that burns with fire and brimstone; **which is the second death**"* (Revelation 21:8). The second death is after the second coming of Christ, after the resurrection and judgment; from this second death there will never be a resurrection. The results will be eternal. An endless life of torment is not a second death; it is eternal **life** with torment; **an endless life of torment bears no resemblance to a death**. There is a "second death," but there is nothing said about a "third life" after the second death.

1. This life.

2. Then death—the first dead that all will die, but those that will be alive when Christ comes.

3. Then a resurrection from the dead for judgment of both lost and saved.

4. Then a second death for the lost.

5. Nothing said about a third life for the dead lost. The second death is an endless nothing.

Those who are in Christ that had part in the first resurrection will sleep unto the coming of Christ and will awake to live in the place Christ has gone to prepare for them in His Fathers house.

To feel pain, those in Hell would have to be just as alive as those in Heaven are. If a dead person were in a lake of fire, that dead person would not feel or know about the fire; if an immaterial soul that, according to Dr. Morey in "Death And The Afterlife," page 79, is nothing but thoughts and will not have a body, that immaterial soul that has no substance, no body could not feel fire.

Summary: All are dead unto they are buried with Christ *"through baptism into death and **raised from the dead** through the glory of the Father"* (Romans 6:3-5). All saved persons now have eternal life even though there bodies are still in the image of Adam (John 3:15; 3:16; 3:36; 4:14; 5:24; 6:47; 11:28; 20:31; many more). They will sleep with there life *"hidden with Christ in God"* unto the second coming of Christ; at that time the persons that believed and has been given life, the same persons will put on immortal bodies in the image of Christ. The life a person will have after putting on the image of Christ is a continuation of the endless life given to them when they first believed.

HOMER HAILEY, "There are only two alternatives, the crown of life-eternal life-or the second death" Revelation, page 128, Baker Book House. It is life or death, not life in Heaven or life in Hell. Death is real.

I. D. WILLIAMSON, "Relative to the question, whether the lake that burns with fire and brimstone is to be understood literally or figuratively, I have little to say. During the dark ages, it might have been necessary to discuss that question; but the day has passed when any man, claiming even a tolerable share of theological knowledge, would risk his reputation, as a man of sane mind, in an attempt to maintain the existence of a real lake of literal fire and brimstone, in

which immortal and immaterial spirits are to be burned. It is a figure used to represent a reality, and this reality is the second death." "An Examination Of The Doctrine Of Endless Punishment."

"**The Second Death**" is used four times, all in Revelation.

(1). He that overcomes shall not be hurt of the second death (Revelation 2:11). The saved will not have a part in the second death; only the lost will.

(2). Those who are buried and raised with Christ (Romans 6) in the first resurrection, "*Over these the second death has no power*" (Revelation 20:6).

- The first two times "the second death" is used say that those in Christ will not die the second death.

(3). Death and hades, and any not found written in the book of life are cast into the lake of fire; which is the second death. All three come to the same end. All three end in death (Revelation 20:14-15). The symbolical lake of fire brings all three to an end just as a literal lake of fire would bring any living thing to an end. The lake of fire is a symbol of total destruction of any thing cast into it, an endless death, not an endless life.

(4). He that overcomes shall inherit and be God's son, but for all others, "*Their part shall be in the lake that burns with fire and brimstone; which is the second death*" (Revelation 21:8). No ransom has been offered for the second death; it is without an end. The second death is not said to be sleep as the first death is, no one will wake up from it, there will be no resurrection from it.

**SECOND DEATH IN PLAIN UNSYMBOLIC LANGUAGE:** "*There remains no more a sacrifice for sins, but a certain fearful expectation of **judgment**, and a fierceness of fire which shall **devour** the adversaries*" (Hebrews 10:27). For the lost (1) judgment then (2) devour in the lake of fire, which is the second death. Not as it is preached today (1) judgment (2) then an eternal life of torment in Hell forever, but never devoured, or as preached by many an eternal life in Hell at death before and without the resurrection and Judgment Day.

- The Bible speaks of two deaths, the first, and the second, if the first death is death, but if the second death is eternal life being tormented by God, but then the second death would not a death.
- The second death is a real death, just as real as is the first death; both the first and second death are the end of life, neither one is not life in another form or place.
- The second death is never spoken of as a sleep; there is no waking up or resurrection from it.
- The first death is the end of living in this temporal life, which all die and is not the wages of sin. The second death is the end of living in whatever kind of life the lost will have when they are resurrected from the dead (when the dead are resurrected for judgment they will have life of some kind, but not eternal life that is given only to believers—resurrection means life restored, if not then it would not be a resurrection).
  - "*And the sin, when it is full grown, **brings forth death***" (James 1:15).
  - "*Whoever turns a sinner away from his error **will save him from death***" (James 5:20) New International Version.
  - "*For the **end of these things is death***" (Romans 6:21).

- “They that practice such things are **worthy of death**” (Romans 1:32). “Those who practice such things **deserve to die**” New Revised Standard Version.
- “For if **you** live after the flesh, **you must die**” (Romans 8:13).
- “The **wages of sin is death**” (Romans 6:23).
- “And their part shall be in the lake that burns with fire and brimstone: **which is the second death**” (Revelation 21:8).
- Death, not eternal torment is the end of the sinner. The second death is a real death, just as real as is the first death; both the first and second death are both an end of life, as the first death deprives a person of all psychical life and is the final end of all earthly existence, so the second death is the final end of all existence after the resurrection to judgment.

**“IF YOU LIVE AFTER THE FLESH, YOU SHALL DIE.”** “For if **you** are living according to the flesh, **you must die** (apothncsko); but if by the Spirit **you** are putting to death the deeds of the body, **you will live**” (Romans 8:13). All mankind, even the faithful, have been dying the first death since the sin of Adam, this is not a reference to the first death but the second when only those who live according to the flesh will die. Paul did not say, “If you live after the flesh you are now spiritually dead,” (present tense), but “**you shall die**” (future tense). Not A soul shall live forever separated from God, but “**you shall die.**” Why do many that say they believe God, but work hard to change His word? “But if by the Spirit **you** put to death the deeds of the body, **you shall live.**” It is **you** that will live or die, not something that will always live and cannot die. “For the wages of sin is death” (Romans 6:23). Not the death of the flesh, which all die, but the second death.

“I am the bread of life. Your fathers ate the manna in the wilderness, and they died (apothncsko). This is the bread which came down out of Heaven, that a man may eat thereof, and not die (apothncsko)” (John 6:48-50). All die the first death, even the apostles, but there will be a resurrection, and those who eat of the bread that came down out of Heaven will not die the second death, all that do not eat of it will die the second death.

- “Your father ate the manna in the wilderness, and **they died**” (John 6:49).
- “This is the bread which comes down out of heaven, that a man may eat thereof, **and not die**” (John 6:50).
- Eating of one bread is contrasted with eating the other bread; one “*died*” and the other did “*not die.*” No way can both lived be gotten from this. It is life or death, dying or not dying, not two kinds of life.

J. M. DENNISTON, “The one thing really announced is that, through Christ the living Bread, there comes to believers an endless duration which did not come by the manna—the clear understanding being that in no other way than through that Bread can such duration be theirs”

“I am the resurrection, and the life: he that believes on me though he die (apothncsko), yet shall he live; and whosoever lives and believes on me shall never die (apothncsko)” (John 11:25-26). Although those who believe will die the first death just as all do, they will be resurrected, and will never die the second death; those who do not believe will also die and be resurrected for judgment, and will die the second death. “For the hour comes in which all that are in the tombs shall hear

his voice, and shall come forth; they that have done good, unto the resurrection of life; and they that have done evil, **unto the resurrection of judgment**" (John 5:28-29).

*"For the land which has drunk the rain that comes often upon it, and brings forth herbs meet for them for whose sake it is also tilled, receives blessing from God: but if it bears thorns and thistles, it is rejected, and nigh unto a curse; **whose end is to be burned**"* (Hebrews 6:4-8). Those that fall away will be burned in the lake of fire, which is the second death, just as thorns are burned.

ASHLEY JOHNSON, founder and president of the Johnson Bible College. "Why do we burn briars and thorns? To destroy them, to get permanently rid of them." "The Resurrection And The Future Life," page 413, 1913, Knoxville Lithographing Company.

HOMER HAILEY. "As there is a second higher life, so there is also a second and deeper death. And as after that life there is no more death, SO AFTER THAT DEATH THERE IS NO MORE LIFE" Afford. As quoted by Homer Hailey in his commentary "Revelation."

The resurrection of all at the coming of Christ makes death be a sleep from which all will awake, but there will be no resurrection from the second death. It will be permanent and everlasting death.

**Made alive at His coming, not at death:** *"In Christ all will be made alive. But, each in his own turn: Christ, the first fruits; then, when he comes, those who belong to him"* 1 Corinthians 15:22-23 New International Version. Paul says that those who belong to Christ will be *"made alive"* at His coming. If there was a soul that is very much alive in Heaven or Hell it could not be *"made alive"* at the resurrection. Christ the first fruits of them that are asleep (now), then they that are Christ's at his coming.

**Death is the end:** Paul says of those who are servants of sin that *"the end of those things is death"* (Romans 6:21-22). But, many now say, "The end of those things is eternal life with torment without an end"? Who are you going to believe, God, or man?

**The sting of death** 1 Corinthians 15:54-57: After the resurrection when the saved will have put on immortality, **death** would have been swallowed up in victory. Victory over what? Over death. After the resurrection we will have put on immortality, and will never again be subject to death, but we are now subject to it, and it takes away our life. If we now have immortality we would now have the victory over death. If there is no death, then death has no sting. If there were a soul in a person that is deathless, that soul would have always had the victory over death, it would never have been subject to death. The doctrine of unconditional immortality from birth makes nonsense out of 1 Corinthians 15:54-57, and gives all, those in Christ, and those not in Christ the victory over death; and gives all this victory without the death and resurrection of Christ. If all are born with an immortal soul and it cannot die, then no soul that is in anyone is subject to death from the day of their birth and never will be. What kind of victory could there be over the nothingness of death that is not death to a soul that was never subject to death?

**Is death an enemy, or a gateway to Heaven?** A companion of Paul, Epaphroditus, was nigh unto death but God had mercy on him (Philippians 3:27). If death is a gateway to Heaven, then when God had "*mercy on him,*" was God not being cruel by keeping him out of the glories of Heaven and making him suffer the pains and temptations of earth longer? Why do most do all they can to live a little longer, even if it is in pain? If death is a friend, why is this friend not a welcome visitor? Why are we grief-stricken and not rejoicing when our "friend" takes someone we love to be with Christ and God in Heaven? How could going from this life (from pain and troubles for many) to Heaven be an enemy? If death is a doorway by which we go to Heaven at the moment of death, why would a person who had lived in pain for years do everything possible to stay out of Heaven and live a little longer, even if it were in pain? Why do we mourn and not rejoice if a love one who lives in pain would go to their everlasting residence in Heaven immediately after death where there is no pain? Is it not because we know death is an enemy, not a friend, not a doorway to instant joy (1 Corinthians 15:26), and the dead are under the power of death onto the resurrection, not alive in Heaven; do they not by their actions demonstrate beyond any doubt that they do not believe what they profess, that death is a friend that takes there loved one to be with Christ? We will not have the victory over death unto the resurrection? But, many say going to Heaven is just what happens at death, even for the Old Testament saints who died before the death of Christ: therefore, before their sins were paid for by His death. If this were true, death would then be a friend, not an enemy. **How can death be an enemy to an immortal, immaterial, invisible soul that is not subject to death, to a soul that cannot die?**

What is it that will be destroyed (1 Corinthians 15:26)? Just what is the "*enemy?*" **Death** (moving to Heaven or Hell) **would be an enemy only to the lost who were moving to Hell. It would be a friend to the saved who were moving to Heaven.** But there is a problem, **how can there be a resurrection if it is only souls, not us will be in Heaven and souls are never dead to be resurrected?** If no one is dead, the Bible teaching of a resurrection is out of place and should not be in the Bible. Maybe this is why the teaching of the resurrection is being abandoned in many churches. **If death is not real, there is no resurrection. If death is real, the resurrection is our only hope.** Without the resurrection, we perish forever when we die (1 Corinthians 15:18). Without the resurrection, the enemy of death will never be destroyed and we will be forever dead.

**IS DEATH LIFE SEPARATED FROM GOD? IS THERE LIFE WITHOUT GOD?** **Death is to be "abolished"** (1 Corinthians 15:26) American Standard Version, "**destroyed**" King James Version. How? By being cast into the lake of fire (Revelation 20:14). Yet, some teach that when evil men are cast into this same lake of fire, they are tormented by it, but not abolished or destroyed. Fire is a consumer, if

it did not consume it would not be fire, to use fire to illustrate something that does not do what fire does, does not consume, would make the language unintelligible. **Does the Lake of Fire abolish death but does not abolish people?** "*Death shall be no more*" Revelation 21:4. Therefore, being cast into lake of fire cannot be "being separated from God" (a definition of death that is believed by many), for then death will last forever, and could never be "abolished." Death is to be "abolished" before Christ will be subjected" to God (1 Corinthians 15:28ff), before when we will be in Heaven, "*death shall be no more*" (Revelation 21:4); therefore, all "*wages of sin*" (Romans 6:23) shall have been paid; if not, they can never be paid as there will be no death, and cannot go on being paid in Hell forever; for then death would last as long as the "*wages*" were being paid, which would be forever for if death is only "being separated from God," then death must last forever. If death (being alive separated from God) did not last forever then Hell could not last forever, the last enemy (death) can never be abolished (1 Corinthians 15:26). The people in Bible times would not have understood death to mean alive but separation any more than the people of the world today understand it or use death to mean alive. We use death in our everyday language to mean to be dead, not to have life, but in the theology use of the word, it does not mean dead, to be dead is to have life, and be more alive than we are while we are living! Why did God not just say what He means, that death means alive not dead? Did God in some way apart from His word revealed to some that He did not mean what He said in the Bible, but He only revealed this to some and not to all?

Many who do not want to say, "You are going to Hell and be eternally tormented by God" say, "You are going to be eternally alive separated from God." They really believe God is going to forever be tormenting most of humanity, but this is so revolting that they water down what they really believe. All who believe in Hell must use their theology to explain death out of the Bible. Trying to put separation in the place of death is a poor try, but it seems to be the best they could do. Such a radical redefining of death to be life is nothing more than a denial of death.

**SEPARATION:** Wayne Jackson in an article he called, "The 'Second Death'—Separation or Annihilation?" printed by the "Christian Courier" redefined the Second Death to be separation. Jackson changed death to eternal life separated from God. I understand him to be saying that after the person is dead a soul that was in an unsaved person lives forever being tormented by God. Does he think a soul has life if it is separated from God? Where does the life of a soul that is separated from God come from? If this soul was separated from God, who does he think is doing the tormenting, if a soul were really separated from God than God could not be the one that was doing the tormenting? But separation is not usually used to mean that souls are spirits are really separated from God, but usually only in an attempt to make death mean life, to make death not really be death.

**Reason why death is called “separation.”** It sounds better to say death is “separation” from God than to say death is endless life being tormented by God, but when endless torment by God is added to the separation, which those that believe death is separation from God always do, it is only a way to try to make their belief not make God as evil as endless torment in Hell does.

**SECOND DEATH:** *“But for the fearful, and unbelieving, and abominable, and murderers, and fornicators, and all liars, their part shall be in the lake that burns with fire and brimstone which is the second death”* (Revelation 20:8). Who did all these things? (1) Was it persons? (2) Was it souls? (3) Was it spirits? Did spirits murder other spirits? Did souls commit fornication? Did souls or spirits lie to each other? Could God have said any clearer that the person, not a soul, which committed these sins, will die? This is speaking of persons after they have been resurrected from the dead, the persons that had committed these sins will die the second death, not deathless souls that cannot die. Wayne Jackson had to change death to separation to be able to change it from persons after the resurrection that would die the second death to souls that he believes can never die a first or second death, therefore; they must live someplace forever separated from God even though the persons these souls had been in was dead. The wages of sin is death for the person that sins, not eternal life separated from God for a soul that had been in the person that sinned.

**If death means, "separated but alive," a deathless death, then we can use it in place of death. Try it.**

- **"I was separation from God but alive some place without God, and behold, I am alive without God for evermore"** Revelation 1:18. Therefore, if Jesus were always alive, **separated**, but alive, there could not have been a resurrection. Jesus just returned from somewhere, just a reunion, but He could not have been resurrected from the dead if He were alive.
- **"It is Christ Jesus that was separation from God but alive, yet rather, that raised from the separated but alive "** Romans 8:34.
- **"The firstborn from the separation from God but alive some place without God"** Colossians 1:18.
- **"He that raised up Christ Jesus from the separation from God but alive some place without God "** Romans 8:1. This redefining of death to be life would make Christ not to have died for our sins; therefore, Christ could not have been raised from the dead; He was never dead, **just separated from God**. It would make His death not be a genuine death, but a reunion of Jesus and God when neither one was dead, just separated from each other. **If the Father and the Son were just separated from each other for the three days the Son was in the grave, the Father would have been just as separated from the Son as the Son was from the Father, neither one would have died, God would have been separated from God. There is no death in separation, no shedding of blood, no New Covenant bought with the blood of Christ.** If death were only a spiritual separation from God, and not real death, the death of Christ on the cross would have no meaning, would not have been a death.
- **"Christ was separation from God but alive some place without God for our sins"** 1 Corinthians 15:3. **Was He separated from God, but alive, not really dead? Was God separated from God?**
- **"They also that are separation from God but alive some place without God in Christ have perished"** 1 Corinthians 15:18.
- **"The law of sin and separation from God but alive some place without God"** Romans 8:2.

- "For the mind of the flesh is **separation from God but alive without God**" Romans 8:6.
- "I through the law am **separated from God but alive** to the law" Galatians 2:19.
- "Again from the **separation but alive**" Hebrews 13:20.
- "Was translated that he should not see **separation but alive**" Hebrews 11:5.
- "How are the **separation but alive** raised?" 1 Corinthians 15:35.
- "So also is the resurrection of the **separation but alive some place without God**" 1 Corinthians 15:42.
- "**Separation but alive some place without God** is swallowed up" 1 Corinthians 15:55.
- "Abolished is **separation but alive some place without God**" 1 Corinthians 15:26. If separation is abolished or swallowed up, then where are the separated or dead going to be?
- "And the **separated from God but alive**, shall be raised incorruptible" 1 Corinthians 15:52.
- "By man came **separation but alive**, by man came also the resurrection of the **separation but alive**" 1 Corinthians 15:21.
- "You proclaim the Lord's **separation but alive** till he comes" 1 Corinthians 11:26.
- "Whosoever lives and believes on me shall never **separate**" John 11:26.
- "Except a grain of wheat fall into the earth and **separates**" John 12:24.
- "It is Christ Jesus that **separated but alive**" Romans 8:24.
- "The body is **separated but alive** because of sin" Romans 8:10.
- "Sin revived, and I **separated**" Romans 7:9.
- "These all **separated** in faith" Hebrews 11:23.
- "And I will kill her children with **separation**" Revelation 2:23.
- "A name that you live, and are **separated from God but alive**" Revelation 3:1.
- "**Separation** shall be on more" Revelation 21:4. Also "The last enemy that shall be abolished is **Separation**" 1 Corinthians 15:26. This would be the same as saying "separation shall be unseparated."
- "*Though he **die**, yet shall he **live***" John 11:25. This would be saying, "Though he be **separated but alive**, yet shall he be **unseparated**."
- "*And whosoever lives and believes on me shall never die*" John 11:26. Shall never have a **separation** of body and soul.
  - It is life or death, not life or life; if death is not literal death, then life is not literal life.

Whatever death is, (1) if death is really death, (2) or if is that death is not death, but death is alive separated from God, but tormented by God who would not be where they are if they were separated from Him, it would be undeniable that James 2:26 says it is the earthly body that is separated (dead); therefore alive, "*For as the body apart from the spirit is dead*" is used repeatedly to prove death is not death, that a spirit that had been in the lost is alive, but it is separated from God, yet it is somehow tormented by God; in this passage it is speaking of the body that is dead, it says nothing of a dead (separated) soul, (spirit and soul are not the same); therefore, according to this passage it would be the body that has turned to dust that is alive separated from God. If death is only separation from God, James would be saying, "For as the body apart from the spirit is separated," nothing is said about the spirit being dead, it dose not say, "For as the spirit apart from the body is dead," nothing about the spirit being alive but separated from God, **but they do not want to make the dead body be separated but alive, they want this to be saying only the spirit is alive without the person it had been in.** The change they want to make is

that death is not death but only separation from God. It is the body that James says is dead, he says nothing about a deathless spirit being dead.

But we are told that the body (person) is dead if separated from a soul, but a soul will live and will live better after it is separated from the person it was in. Is only one side of separation death? I do not believe anyone will say a body in the grave is alive.

If death is only separation, not death, when the body and the spirit were separated from each other:

1. The would a dead body not be dead, would it would be alive (separated) in one place, just as alive as the spirit from which it is separated.
2. The spirit (pnuma) would be alive (separated) in another place, but no more alive then the body from which it would be separated.
  - o What kind of problems are made by making death be life separated? Both the dead body and the spirit (pnuma) would be equality separated from each other, would both be alive? If death were only separation, not a real death, the body that was separated from the spirit would be just as alive as the spirit that is separated from the body. **The spirit would be no more separated (alive) then the body.** "So also faith without works is dead." If death is not death but life separated from God, than it would not be possible for faith to be dead.

*"For the wages of sin is **death**, but the free gift of God is eternal **life**"* (Romans 6:23). **If "life" is literal then "death" in the same passage is just as literal.** How could anyone know that just one word in a literal sentence is not just as literal as all the other words? If the death of sinner is not a literal death, the life for believers is not a literal life. The same persons that tell us death is not a literally death tell us that death literally means death when it is used in reference to animals; dead animals are dead, not separated from God, but alive some place where God is not at. **But, according to this theology, death cannot mean separation for the saved. Death means alive but separated from God only when they want it to.**

If death is only eternal separation from God, that separation would be forever, and death could never be destroy, the lost would always be separated form God and Paul was wrong in 1 Corinthians 15:54. Any kind of life is not death. When we say God cannot die, we mean God cannot cease to exist, not that God is separated.

**The same ones that tell us death is separation from God also tell us that God will forever be with the lost in Hell tormenting them, that the lost can never be separated from God. Which time do they believe what they say?** All life depends on God the giver of life; therefore, separated from God no one could have life, not life in Hell, or any other place. **The only way to be separated from God is to be made not to exist; to exist anyplace makes being separated from God not possible.**

This theology makes nonsense of the Bible. The Bible speaks repeatedly of death, and the wages of sin being death, but this theology tells us that everyone has a deathless soul in them. If no one is dead, the resurrection will not be from the dead

to living, but just a change of address from the living who are separated to the living who are unseparated. The English word death and the Greek word from which it is translated both mean death, not life.

"Spiritual death" and "death is a separation" are not Biblical expressions. They are interpretations. They are additions used to teach what some wants to hear, not what the Bible teaches. Death and separation are different words in both the Hebrew and the Greek, and have different meanings just as they do in English. When someone dies we say that person is dead, not that person is separated but alive.

How can death be a separation of the body and soul when a soul (a living being, person) is the earthly body that is in the image of Adam? 1 Corinthians 15:48-50?

**Is there life without God?** If death is life separated from God, then mankind can live without God, and life can exist that is not sustained by God. But, the truth is the dead can never be separated from God if the dead are not dead, if they have eternal life with torment it would be God is both keeping them alive and He is doing the tormenting. There could be absolutely **no existence** if a person or a soul were separated from God, for there can be **no life** without God, and without life there can be **no torment; all life in Heaven, earth, or where ever there is life, all life comes from God, and without God there is no life.** If any have life in Hell, God must be in Hell with them giving them this life, and He must be where they are doing the tormenting, for if He were not, there would be no life and no torment. **To be separate from God can only mean to be nowhere. If a person can exist separated from God, that person is self-existing; they are a God for only a God can be self-existing; therefore, according to today's theology, all the lost who are separated from God are self-existing Gods.** How far will they go to prove "Hell"? Death is a separation from life, but not eternal self-existing life separated God.

The King James Version puts God in Hell. *"If I make my bed in Hell behold thou art there"* (Psalm 139:8). If those in Hell are separated from God, then God cannot be in Hell, but by its mistranslation to put Hell in the Bible it is undeniable that the King James Version says that God is in Hell. Did they think God has forever given the lost to Satan to do with them what he wants to? Will Satan have his own kingdom where he is in total control, which will have more in it than God's kingdom? He will if the dead are separated alive from God and God is not in Hell with them. If there were a Hell, which way is it? (1) Either God is in Hell doing the tormenting, and God is sustaining the life they have, and they are not separated from Him, (2) or God is not in Hell, and the lost are separated from Him and He is not doing the tormenting or sustaining the life they have. It cannot be both ways. Where did the concept come from that there is any life when one is separated from God, the source of all life? It is not a matter of eternal life with Christ, or eternal life separated from Christ, for there is no life separated or apart from Christ. A sinner does not have any kind of immortal life. Only those in Christ will have immortality only after the resurrection.

If death is "separation" of a soul from the earthly body, and not a real death, then the resurrection could only be the return and reuniting of a soul to the earthly person, and they must forever be together or the resurrection would not last forever. If all earthly bodies end at the end of this earth, then death (separation) of the saved will last forever; a soul would be forever separated from the earthly body for the body would not exist. But those who teach death is separation only want death to be separation when death is a soul that is alive but separated from God, all other times death is death; death cannot mean eternal life part of the time and death part of the time.

ALEXANDER CAMPBELL: "Every word not specially explained or defined in a particular sense by any standard writer of any particular age and country, is to be taken in the current or commonly received signification of that country and age in which the writer lived and wrote." Christian System, page 3.

Theological meaning of words came about after the New Testament. Both the Old Testament and New Testament use the words as those to whom God was speaking used them. Did God say one thing, but mean something different from what He said? If so, there is no need for us to read the Bible, for no one could know that God used "death" to mean "separated but alive" without a revelation from God, or someone who is inspired to tell us. Who was the inspired person that told us "death" means "separated but alive?" If no inspired person did tell us, many preach that which they have no way of knowing, for they would have no revelation to tell them that when God said death that He really intended to say separated but alive.

#### **Reasoning in an endless circle.**

- (1). Eternal separation from God is used to prove all have an immortal soul that cannot die.
- (2). An immortal soul that cannot die is used to prove death cannot be death, but that a deathless soul is alive but separation from God, that a soul will have life that does not come from God.
- (3). Then eternal separation from God is used to prove death cannot be death, but that death is eternal life separation from God.
- (4). Then an immortal soul that cannot die is used to prove death cannot be death, but that the deathless soul is alive but separation from God.

After the second death the dead will not be with God, but how can being dead, and not with God prove that they have an immortal soul that is alive some place, a place where God is not there? Death is the opposite of life, another kind of life is not death, not even if it was possible to exist and to have life separated from God; if anyone were alive some place, that person would not be dead.

**If death is separation, what is separated from what?** At death the dead body goes back to the earth, the person goes to the grave and is really dead. But we are told that a soul that was in a dead person is separated from the person that it had been in, but the soul was just as alive as it was when it was in the person; the person is without life—the deathless soul lives; what could be resurrected from the dead?

Only the dead body of the dead person, only the body that has gone back to the earth from which the body came.

Summary: If, as some teach, that Hell is the punishment for sin, then being eternally tormented by God, not separation or death is "*the wages of sin.*" Being tormented by God, not separation from God is made to be the thing they call death, but those who change death from being death, to death being alive but separation from God do not seem to see they are teaching two completely different doctrines at the same time.

(1). Death is an eternal life of torment with God doing the tormenting.

(2). And death is an eternal life separated from God. But who do they believe would be doing the tormenting if the living dead were separated from God?

Most that believe unconditional immortality do not think of the lost as really being separated from God, but of God being where the lost are and tormenting them forever. They say separation, but that is only an attempt to take death out of the Bible when they actually think and teach God is the one who will be where the lost are, and God will be the one who will be eternally tormenting them. They do not really believe separation from God, they do not believe there could be life any place where God is not.

(1). They seem to be somewhat confused for they say death is separation from God and "a loss of well being," but tell those who grieve at funerals that their dead loved ones are not separated from God, but they are in Heaven with God, and their well being is now much better than it was before death.

(2). Then tell the lost that the dead lost are not separated from God, that God will always be with them, and that God will always be tormenting them. This redefining of death to be life has caused much of the confusion and division in the church.

**John 3:36:** "*But, he that obeyed not the Son shall not see life, but the wrath of God abides on him.*" Implied: he shall see death, the opposite of life. You are alive, or you are dead, no in between. Will those in Hell that cannot die have no life? If they "*shall not see life,*" how can they be alive to be tormented when they are in Hell? Can a rock that does "*not see life*" be tormented? "*Shall not see life*" is not to be alive anywhere, not to be alive in Hell. How much clearer could Jesus have possibly have been, how much clearer could He have said whoever rejects Him shall not see life, shall not see an eternal life of torment?

**Everlasting life, or everlasting destruction** Matthew 7:13-14: "*Enter through the narrow gate; for the gate is wide and the way is broad that **leads to destruction**, and there are many who enter through it. For the gate is small and the way is narrow that **leads to life**, and there are few who find it.*" There are two gates, (1) one gate leads to life, (2) and one gate leads to destruction. Destruction is used in contrast to life; destruction is not life, not both gates leads to life, not the narrow gate to eternal life in one place and the broad gate to eternal life in another place. Jesus said as clear as language can be that the wide gate leads to destruction, not to life. "Or

those eighteen, upon whom the tower in Siloam fell, and **killed** them...except you repent, you shall all **likewise perish**" (Luke 13:4-5). "Killed" and "likewise perish" are both the same, both mean death, neither one means eternal life.

**"Worthy of death," but cannot die** Romans 1:32. "They that practice such things are worthy of death," but if they have an immortal never dying something from birth, and this something cannot ever die. Why did Paul bother to say they are worthy of death if he knows whatever it is that is in them could not die?

**When does a sinner die?** If death means only separation, the sinner is separated from God now. Is the second death to be a "double separation?" Will they be any more separated than they now are? If the lake of fire, which is the second death, is only a separation from God, and souls are now separated from Him, they cannot be any more separated after the second death than they are now.

**Literally or figuratively:** THOMAS ANDREWS said that those who accept annihilation as the end of mankind claim that the words destroy and death that are used to describe eternal punishment should be understood literally (1997 Florida College Lectures, page 169). On the same page Andrews said, "The Biblical concept of eternal extends to both life and death."

- The Biblical concept, eternal death.
- The Biblical concept, eternal life.
  - Death will last just as long as life, if life is without end, death is also without end.

The Biblical concept is that the death is just as eternal as the life. If death is figuratively and not real death, then life is figuratively and not real life. If death is figurative, then there are two kinds of figuratively life.

Those who believe in Hell must change "death" to be figuratively or allegorical, not a real death; but they make "life" real even when both are used together in the same sentence. **If death is figurative, then life must be figurative.**

1. **Eternal "death"** is as literal as **eternal "life."** Does a real sin have a figurative punishment? Death must be "wrest" (2 Peter 3:16) into something that is not death to make it fit around the doctrine of an immortal, immaterial, invisible "soul" that cannot die; therefore, death of a deathless "soul" has to be changed to be only a figurative death.
2. "There is only one Lawgiver and Judge, the One who is able to **save and to destroy**" (James 4:12). "But we are not of those who shrink back and are **destroyed**, but of those who believe and are **saved**" (Hebrews 10:39). If the destroying is figuratively, and is not literally destroying, then the saving is also figuratively, and is not literally saving.

Three blind men were told to feel an elephant and tell what it looks like. One felt the tusk and said, "It is hard and smooth." One the leg—"It is like a tree." One the tail- "It is like a brush." None told what the elephant is like. "It is like a brush" is not a description of an elephant, and "separated" from God, but are alive without Him is not a description of death.

**"Dead while she lives" 1 Timothy 5:6, What was dead?**

- Her body was alive at the time Paul wrote this, (2) and according to those that believe there was a deathless soul in her, believe that soul that was in her was alive at the time

Paul wrote this, that is cannot ever be dead. **Then what was, “Dead while she lives,” If neither her body nor a soul that was in her was not dead?**

- Even though this passage is used to prove she had an immortal soul, it says nothing about a soul or a spirit; **“spiritual death” is not in the Bible**, not in the Old or New Testament, but is added and used repeatedly to prove a soul or a spirit cannot be dead.
- She (a person, not a deathless soul) was dead in her relationship to God. She did not have a dead body, or a dead soul.

Dead and alive at the same time. In what sense is she alive? Physically **she** was not dead, but **she** was alive. In what sense is **she** dead while **she** lived? The **she** that was dead is the same as all other sinners and unsaved people, dead in their relationship to God. **Their death is so certain that they are spoken of as being dead** (See Luke 9:60). They do not have Christ living in them, and the *“life”* He came to give (John 5:21-29). They have only the *“resurrection of judgment”* (John 5:29) to look forward to, and the wages of sin, death (Romans 6:23), not the *“resurrection of life”* (John 5:29). Both life for those who believe, and death for those who do not believe, are so certain that through out the New Testament it speaks as if we now have the eternal life or death, which will come at the judgment. **The only life she has is physical life. How can an immortal soul that will always have life be gotten out of “dead while she lives”?** It was her body that *“lives,”* not an immortal, immaterial, invisible something that lives without her body; therefore, if a *“soul”* were in this passage it could only be in the part of her that was *“dead,”* which is changed to *“spiritual dead.”*

- Because the passage speaks of her being dead while her body lived, her having a soul that is alive while she is dead is read into this passage even when nothing is said about an *“immortal soul,”* or an *“immortal spirit,”* nothing about any kind of life after death; nothing about her or any thing that was in her being immortal.
- This passage is often used to prove that the *“soul”* cannot be dead, but it has another kind of life, even when there is nothing said about a *“soul”* in it. *“Dead while she lives” must be changed to be, “Alive while she is alive.”*
- Death **must** be removed from this passage, and life with torment for something that cannot be dead that is in a person added to it; this is what is called pulling something out of thin air, or reading into a passage something that is wanted to be in it.
- **She** is of the world, which will *“pass away,”* will come to an end; just as the world will *“pass away” she* will *“pass away,” she* will not *“abide forever.”*

The Bible uses death in both a literal and a figurative application. In the literal use of death life has ceased to exist. The figurative use of a word must take its meaning from its literal use. The figurative use of death is often confused with the literal use of death. The Christian widow that *“has her hope set on God”* had a relationship with God but if she *“gives herself to pleasure”* that relationship is dead; it no longer exists, the relationship is dead. She *“is (figuratively) dead while she lives,”* but the real death will not come until after the judgment.

The literal use of death—something has ceased to exist. Life ceased to exist.

The figurative use of death—something has ceased to exist. Her saved relation with God ceased to exist.

In Luke 15:11-32, Matthew 8:21-22: *"Follow me; and leave the dead (those who have no relationship with God) to bury their own dead."* There is nothing about an "immaterial invisible part of man" that is alive in the persons that are to bury the dead persons. Neither the dead that was doing the burying, nor the dead that were being buried were not a dead immortal soul that cannot be dead, both the one that was alive, and the one that was dead were both dead in their relationship to God even though one was alive as the widow was. The prodigal son had a relationship with his father, the relationship ceased to exist, then was restored when the son returned. The son was alive, then dead, then alive in his relationship with his father, but the son was never literally dead, and there was no literal resurrection of the dead; in this passage there is absolutely nothing said about an immortal soul although it is repeatedly used to prove the prodigal son was an immortal soul, not a person, that was separated from his father. Even today a Jewish family often have a funeral for a person that has been converted to another religion, or leaves the Jewish religion.

Frequently one person is separated from another, but not counted as dead; when a child leaves home we do not say our child is dead, but in Bible times the Hebrews would say the child (not a deathless soul) was dead when the child left home and had no relationship with the father or mother, it was as if the child was dead to them; it was the child, not a soul, that had no relations with the father. When God gives a revelation, He used words and customs just as the persons to whom He gave the revelation used them. To the Hebrew mind and some Oriental cultures even today, the prodigal son, a person, is counted as dead and the father no longer has a son.

*"Truly, truly, I say to you, he who hears My word, and believes Him who sent Me, has eternal life, and does not come into judgment, but has passed out of death into life. Truly, truly, I say to you, an hour is coming **AND NOW IS**, when **the dead shall hear the voice of the Son of God; and those who hear shall live**"* (John 5:24-25). He was not saying the hour had come when He was going to the graveyard, and the dead there would hear His voice and live, be resurrected from the grave. He was not speaking of a physical or literal resurrection, but of those who are not believers (dead by the Hebrew and Oriental cultures) becoming believers and alive to God. The widow was dead to God just as the prodigal son was dead to his father because she had put something ahead of God in her life. The resurrection at the second coming of Christ is not spoken of in this passage.

- "And YOU were dead in YOUR trespasses and sins" (Ephesians 2:1).
- "But SHE who gives HERSELF to wanton pleasure is dead even while SHE LIVES" (1 Timothy 5:6).
- Nothing is said about an immortal something that cannot die being dead, it is the person that is dead to God. She was dead to God even while she was still alive just as the Ephesians were dead to God before they became Christians, not one thing is said

about a soul, not about it being alive or it being dead, not that a soul even exist; why then is this passage used repeatedly to show all have in immortal something in them.

MATTHEW HENRY: "**She that lives in pleasure is dead while she live**, is not a living member of the church, but as a carcass in it, or a mortified member. They are in the world to no purpose, buried alive as to the great ends of living" Matthew Henry's Commentary, page 1891.

The widow is under the sentence of death, but the sentence of death has been removed for those in Christ, and the promise of life (immortality, incorruption) given to them. For those not in Christ, there is only death, the wages of their sin. They will be raised only to face the judgment and the second death "*a savor from death unto death.*"

There are two groups that are living but are dead.

1. Those that never have believed in Christ have never been given the life that believers have been given.
2. Those that believed and were given life but became unfaithful by putting something ahead of Christ.

Both will be raised at the coming of Christ and judged, then the second death, not life.

**Die in the Old Testament:** Die is from "moosh" in the Old Testament and occurs over 800 times. None of the 800 has any references to death being anything but death. In not one of them is death a separation of a dead earthly body from a living soul, or that anything is alive while it is in a person, and will be alive after the death of the person. Throughout the Old Testament, "moosh" is used of both men and animals, and makes no distinction between them. Both die. "*For the fate of the sons of men and the fate of beasts is the same. As one dies (moosh) so dies (moosh) the other*" (Ecclesiastes 3:19). Fish, cattle, frogs, men, dogs, lions, a city, and flies all die (moosh). For all, death is the end of life, and if there were no resurrection, a person would be as all the above, dead forever.

In "Truth Magazine," June 7, 2001, page 343, Johnie Edwards has an article, "What Death Says."

- o What does death say? It says that for there to be life after death, there must be a resurrection from the dead.
- o What does the resurrection say? It says if there is to be a resurrection, there must be death to be resurrected from, not a higher kind of life than life that we now have that would not need a resurrection.
- o The resurrection says death is a real death; it says someone who is not dead cannot be raised from the dead by a resurrection.

J. B. COFFMAN, 2 Corinthians 2:16: "'The meaning therefore is, the Gospel, which arises from Christ and which is preached through us, is to the unbelieving, but the incense arising from one crucified and dead, and so it is to them a savor from the dead and producing death. But to the believing it is a savor FROM THE LIVING, PRODUCING LIFE.' J. W. McGarvey, 1916. McGarvey pointed out the extremely significant phrases 'from death' and 'from life' as used in this passage. To the unbelieving, the news of the Gospel is from one who was crucified and is dead: so, for them, it is an odor from death unto death EVEN ETERNAL DEATH; but to Christians, the news of the Gospel is 'from life unto life' in them that are saved."

**"A Savor from life unto life"** The new birth (John 3:3). "*Walk in newness of life*" (Romans 6:4). "*Have passed out of death into life*" (1 John 3:14). At the second

coming of Christ the saved shall "*put on immortality*" (1 Corinthians 15:53), after which there will be no death.

**"A Savor from death unto death"** Dead while she lives (1 Timothy 5:6). "*Abides in death*" (1 John 3:14). The lost will be raised from the dead at the second coming of Christ, then judgment and the second death after which there will never be any life, never a resurrection from this death.

H. L. HASTINGS: "In all classical literature no instance can be found where the word death has this signification of eternal torment" "The Last Judgment," 1853

For those who are not in Christ, there is no eternal life anywhere.

## CHAPTER THREE

### A Deathless, Immaterial, Invisible Soul That Has No Substance Versus The Resurrection Of The Dead

The main point of an article, "Reinterpretation Of The Scripture" in Truth Magazine, August 7, 2003, page 458 is about reinterpreting Genesis 3 to mean the Serpent was not real, but was taken from well-known pagan myths. The article points out that when one reinterpretation is accepted more will soon come, and gives some reinterpretations the writer thinks may come. Without doubt, many have made reinterpretations of many scriptures, and many more will make more reinterpretations; reinterpretation that the magazine said nothing about have been made and accepted by many. Some reinterpretations that have been made in the past that are historical facts, and are believed by many today, reinterpretations that have caused many of the divisions we now have are Purgatory, Limbo, worship of Mary and Saints, Nether World, holy water, the rosary, forbidding Priest to marry, the crucifix, Monks and Nuns, forbidding eating of meat on Friday, and candle-burning. About all Protestants believe Purgatory to be a change or reinterpretation, and there are hundreds more reinterpretations that are historical facts, and are believed by many today, but no one believes all to the hundreds of reinterpretations made in the past. Most believe only a few of them, and all the many others they believe to be the doctrine of man, not God.

On what does anyone basic his or her belief that most reinterpretations are not from God, but believe that a few are from God? Going to God's word is the only way anyone can know whether any teaching is from man or if it is from the Bible.

#### THE SUBJECTS OF THIS CHAPTER

- (1) The reinterpretation of the death of Jesus.
- (2) The reinterpretation of the second coming of Christ.
- (3) The reinterpretation of the resurrection of the dead from the grave into an instant translation to Heaven.
- (4) "*The wages of sin*" reinterpreted to be the wages of sin is an eternal life of torment in Hell for an immortal soul that is not subject to death.
- (5) The reinterpretation of the Judgment Day makes the Judgment a mockery and not needed.

- (6) The reinterpretation of death to be not death but eternal life.
- (7) The reinterpretation of sleep, are the dead asleep or awake?
- (8) The reinterpretation of the life that Christ promised to them that obey him made not needed by eliminating death.
- (9) The reinterpretation of fire to be something that cannot anything burn up.
- (10) The reinterpretation of the final destiny of a person changed from Heaven to earth.

Unconditional immortality makes many of the great doctrines of the New Testament useless and/or impossible.

**(1) THE REINTERPRETATION OF THE DEATH OF JESUS.** *"Him who knew no sin he made to be sin on our behalf; that we might become the righteousness of God in him"* (2 Corinthians 5:21). Jesus actually died for our sins (Romans 5:8). *"We were reconciled to God through the death of his Son"* (Romans 5:10). The wages of sin is death (Romans 6:23), and Christ died our death that we may have life, not to keep us from an eternal life of torment, but to give us life (eternal life). He paid the wages for our sin, and died our death in our place, but He is not forever being tormented in our place. Death is the penalty for sin, not eternal life with torment for a person or a soul. (Hebrews 9:11-28; 1 Peter 2:24; 2 Corinthians 5:16-19; Matthew 27:20; John 10:15; 12:23-26; 1 Corinthians 15:3; Hebrews 2:14; 9:16-17; 10:14; Isaiah 43:12). **If, as many teach, the wages of sin is eternal life in torment, Christ did not suffer eternal torment for us; therefore, He would not have paid the wages of sin for us.** Jesus bore the punishment of sin that the sinner will bear at the judgment, but He is not suffering eternal torment; therefore, if eternal torment were the wages of sin, He is not paying it for us. Life is His gift to us, not just a reward for an immaterial, invisible "soul" that has eternal life and cannot die. Those who do not reach the blood of Christ (His death) will die, for the wages of their sin is death, *"For if we have become united with him in the likeness of his death, we shall be also in the likeness of his resurrection"* (Romans 6:5). If those not united in the likeness of His death will not be in the likeness of His resurrection, then what likeness will they have in Hell? **The wages of their sin is death, not having the likeness of Christ, or Adam, or any other likeness when in Hell.** Those who believe there is an immortal soul in a person believe the only thing that will be in Heaven or Hell is an undying soul that can never die; therefore, Christ could not have died in its place to save a deathless soul from the wages of sin for that immortal soul would not be subject to death and would have no need for Him to have died in its place, die a death that a soul could not die.

If Christ were as much alive in the three days His earthly body was in the grave as He was after the resurrection, then there was no difference in Christ (1) than when before He came to earth (2) than when His earthly body was in the grave (3) and now when He is in Heaven, If His death were not a death, if only His earthly body were dead, then He was the same spiritual being with all the life, power, and glory in the three days His body was in the grave that He had before He came to

earth, or that He now has in Heaven. Jesus could have given nothing but His earthly body for our sins. According to those who believe there is a soul, which is the only thing that cannot die, a soul of Christ could not and did not die; therefore, **according to their teaching Jesus did not die for our sins for he was never dead.**

The death of Jesus was not just a door by which He went instantly back to Heaven before His resurrection. He was not "*received up from you into heaven*" (Acts 1:11) unto 50 days after His death, not at the time of His death, not before His resurrection.

**Christ "poured out his being unto death"** (Isaiah 53:12). "*He poured out Himself to death*" New American Standard Bible. Christ poured out His being, His life, not just a human body, unto death. Unto His resurrection He was dead, not alive in Hell or any other place; if He had not been dead He could not have been resurrected. Christ was as dead and as much under the power of death as mankind will be after death. He was not somewhere very much alive with the same body (spiritual body), and the power and glory He had before He came to earth, and His resurrection was not just His coming back from someplace where He was alive, just coming back to His human body; **that would not have been a death or a resurrection.** The Wages of sin is death (Romans 6:23), and Christ died in our place with all God's wrath that we would have had upon us at the judgment. Jesus paid our debt in full. He "*lay down his life*" for us (John 15:13), but He is not suffering eternal torment for us; therefore, if the wages of sin were an eternal life in torment is, Christ is not now paying our debt.

The death Christ died and his resurrection are opposites. **If His death was not a real death, His resurrection could not be a real resurrection.** Then what would God has given when He gave His only Son, nothing more than one human body for three days. There would have been no real sacrifice by God or Christ, **no real resurrection** as Jesus would have been alive while His body was in the grave. We are repeatedly told that **God raised Christ from the dead** (Acts 2:24; 2:32; 3:15; 3:26; 4:10; 5:30; 10:40; 12:7; 13:22; 13:23; 13:30; 13:33; 13:34; 13:37; 23:50; 17:31; Romans 4:24; 4:25; 8:11; 9:17; 10:9; 1 Corinthians 6:14; 15:15; 2 Corinthians 4:14; Galatians 1:1; Ephesians 1:20; Colossians 2:12; 1 Thessalonians 1:10; 1 Peter 1:21). "*Now the God of peace, who brought again from the dead the great shepherd of the sheep with the blood of an eternal covenant, even our Lord Jesus*" (Hebrews 13:20). Suffering is never said to be the wages of sin, but **many change the wages of sin (death) and add an eternal life of suffering in Hell in its place.** Not to take anything away from the suffering of Christ, but if He had suffered all He did right up to His death, and then not have died for our sin; we would still have to pay the penalty of our sin, which is death; there is nothing said about Christ being tormented in the time from His death unto His resurrection, Christ was dead unto God raised Him up.

- "He laid down his **life** for us" (1 John 3:16).
- "Tell the vision to no man, until the Son of man **be risen from the dead**" (Matthew 17:9).
- "And go quickly, and tell his disciples, **he is risen from the dead**" (Matthew 28:7).
- "Thus it is written, that the Christ should suffer, and **rise again from the dead the third day**" (Luke 24:46).
- "This is now the third time that Jesus was manifested to the disciples, after that **he was risen from the dead**" (John 21:14).
- "And **killed the Prince of life; whom God raised from the dead**" (Acts 3:15).

**(a) Christ is our Passover:** Exodus 20: The lamb died in the place of the first-born. It was slain, not forever tormented. Its blood was placed on the doorpost, and the death angel passed over. If there were no blood, there was death for the first born, not an eternal life of torment. "For our Passover also has been sacrificed, even Christ" (1 Corinthians 5:7). "That by the grace of God he should taste of death for every man" (Hebrews 2:9). Christ died in the place of the sinner. It is by His blood that we are saved from death just as the blood of the lamb saved the first-born from death; the saved will be passed over by the second death. He tasted of death for all, but He is not forever being tormented for all.

**(b) No atonement:** If God's penalty for sin is not death, it would not have been necessary for Christ to die to redeem us from the curse of the law; for if the law did not inflict death on the sinner, and yet required the death of Christ for the redemption of the sinner, it inflicted on Christ as payment for our sins something it would not have inflicted on us as payment for our sin.

If a soul does not die, but is translated to Heaven or Hell at death, then Christ was not dead. He was not raised the third day, but only came back from Heaven or Hell, **but it could not be a resurrection.** In Old Testament types, it was the **life** given up in the blood poured out on the altar that atoned for sin; it was **life** given up by Christ that atones. Sin must be atoned for; the wages of sin is death. If Christ did not die, no atonement was made. If the wages of sin is an everlasting life of torment, then Christ did not pay it, and no atonement was made. When "soul" (nehphesh—life) is reinterpreted to be an immaterial, invisible, undying soul that is in a person, then when Christ "*poured out his soul (nehphesh—life) unto death*" (Isaiah 53:10-12), was this undying part of Him dead? If He were not dead, He did not pour out his life (nehphesh) unto death, and there was no atonement.

- Wages of sin is death.
- Christ died in our place, died our death.
- Therefore, believers are saved from death by the death of Christ, not saved from an eternal life of torment. Death is death; death is not life.

CURTIS DICKINSON: "If the punishment for our sins is not ACTUAL DEATH, then Christ could not have made atonement for us BY HIS DEATH. Under the Mosaic Law there was no such punishment as imprisonment for life, much less imprisonment for life under continuous torture. The penalty for the greatest offenses was always and only death." What The Bible Teaches About Immortality And Future Punishment, page 16, 1984, church of Christ.

BASIL F. C. ATKINSON, Cambridge University: "It is sometimes forgotten that we have in history at the center of our faith an open example and illustration of the punishment of sin...the facts of the suffering and death of Christ Jesus prove conclusively that the punishment of sin is death in its natural sense" *Life and Immortality: An Examination of the Nature and meaning of Life and Death as They Are Revealed in the Scripture* page 103.

AL MAXEY: "Jesus did NOT suffer (and is not *currently* suffering) perpetual torture. He did NOT pay that price. Jesus has demonstrated, however, that the penalty for sin is exactly what the Bible declares it to be: DEATH. He DID pay THAT price!! And He would have *remained* dead had not a very special promise been made to Him: He would not be abandoned to the grave; He would be delivered. That promise has NOT been made to the wicked. Thus, when THEY experience the 'wages of sin' (death) there will be no future rescue. Just as in the death of Christ we have a demonstration of the fate of the unredeemed, so also in His *resurrection to life* do we have a demonstration of the fate of the redeemed. 'If Christ has not been raised, your faith is worthless; you are still in your sins. Then those also who have fallen asleep in Christ have perished' (1 Cor. 15:17-18)...If the wages of sin is perpetual torture in fire, then the wicked will be forced to suffer an *infinitely greater* penalty than Jesus paid for the sins of mankind Indeed, the suffering and death of Christ would be trivial in comparison...That is a real problem for the traditionalist who proclaims perpetual torture as the penalty for sin—the penalty we have been told Christ Jesus PAID IN FULL." Maxey – Thrasher Debate, Al Maxey # 5, March 28, 2002, church of Christ.

**(c) No New Covenant:** *"For where a testament is, there must of necessity be the death of him that made it. For a testament is in force where there has been death: for it never avail while he that made it lives"* (Hebrews 9:16-17). If Christ only changed from living on earth to living any other place, whether it was Heaven, Hell or wherever; He did not die, there was no death, and the New Covenant is not in force.

1. If Christ was alive before Christ came to earth.
2. And Christ was alive while He was on earth.
3. And was alive when His earthly body was in the grave.
4. Just as He is now alive in Heaven.

*"He was cut off out of the land of the living: for the transgression of my people was he stricken. And **He made his grave with the wicked, and with the rich in his death"** (Isaiah 53:8-9). *"Him being delivered by the determinate counsel and foreknowledge of God, you have taken, and by wicked hands have crucified and slain: **whom God has raised up, having loosed the pains of death:** because it was not possible that he should be held of it...Men and brethren, let me freely speak unto you of the patriarch David, that he is both dead and was buried, and his grave is with us unto this day. Therefore being a prophet, and knowing that God had sworn with an oath to him, that of the fruit of his loins, according to the flesh, **he would raise up Christ** to sit on his throne, he seeing this before **spoke of the resurrection of Christ**, that his soul (psukee—life) was not left in hades, neither did his flesh see corruption. **This Jesus has God raised up, whereof we are all witnesses"** (Acts 2:24-32). This passage speaks of the death of David, and the death of Christ with both being dead with David still dead, still in the grave, but Christ rose from the dead**

after three days. Christ was as dead for the time He was in the grave as David still is and will be unto the resurrection.

*"And therefore it was imputed unto him for righteousness. Now it was not written for his sake alone, that it was imputed to him; but for us also, to whom it shall be imputed, if we believe on him that **raised up Jesus our Lord from the dead**; who was delivered for our offenses **and was raised for our justification**" (Romans 4:22-25). "For He has **made Him to be sin for us**, that we might be made the righteousness of God in him" (2 Corinthians 5:21). "Who in the days of his flesh, when he had offered up prayers and supplications with strong crying and tears unto him **that was able to save him from death**, and was heard in that he feared, though he were a Son, yet learned he obedience through the things that he suffered; and being made perfect, he became the author of eternal salvation unto all them that obey him" (Hebrews. 5:7-9). "For Christ is not entered into the holy places made with hands, which are figures of the true; but into heaven itself, now to appear in the presence of God for us: nor yet that he should offer himself often, as the high priest entered into the holy place every year with the blood of others; for then must he often have suffered since the foundation of the world: but now once in the end of the age (aion—age, not world, probably the end of the Jewish age that ended at the death of Christ) has he appeared to put away sin **by the sacrifice of Himself** And as it appointed unto men once to die, but after this the judgment: **so Christ was once offered to bear the sins of many**; and unto them that look for him shall he appear the second time without sin unto salvation" (Hebrews 9:24-28).*

**We are saved by the death of Christ.** We were baptized into the death of Christ, and raised from the dead. Those that are in Christ have died with Him, and His death became our death for our sins. See 2 Corinthians 5:14; Romans 6:3-8; Colossians 2:12; Galatians 2:20; Philippians 3:10; 2 Timothy 2:11.

**(d) Makes Christ's death be inadequate:** Many who say they "speak where the Bible speaks, and are silent where the Bible is silent," say "We cannot fully grasp the righteousness and holiness of God, nor the sinfulness of sin in His perfectly created universe." They believe that the sinfulness of sin makes eternal torment in Hell necessary, and eternal death would not be enough for God to be a just God. If they, "Speak where the Bible speaks," then how do they know that sin is not evil enough to require the supreme penalty of the death of the sinner; therefore, the sinner must be let off with a lesser penalty of a life of torment. The Bible clearly says death is required. *"The wages of sin is death,"* not just a life of torment. They are clearly speaking where the Bible does not speak. It is often said that the sinfulness of sin makes Hell necessary, but not once does the Bible say this; it says, *"The wages of sin is death."*

**When Christ paid the wages of sin for us, it was with His death. He is not suffering eternal torment for us; therefore, if the wages of sin is eternal**

torment and not death, then the death of Christ was inadequate to pay for our sins. The wages of sin is death and death is definitely the forfeiture of life, if eternal torment is the wages of sin, Christ did not pay it, and there is no salvation for anyone.

**(2) THE REINTERPRETATION OF THE SECOND COMING OF CHRIST.** If all the saved are now in Heaven with Christ, and all the lost are now in Hell, why is He coming back to this earth? Death the "*last enemy*" has been made to do what Christ would have done at His second coming, namely taken all the saved to Heaven. There would be no need for Him to come back to do what death has already done; if the saved go to Heaven at death, they would not be on earth and they would not be dead. The doctrine of an immortal undying soul has supplanted the second coming of Christ by making death, the enemy of mankind be his best friend that takes him instantly to Heaven. **This view has Christ coming back to earth for those who are not on earth, but are already with Him in Heaven.**

The Abraham's bosom view says Christ is coming back to the earth for the resurrection, but the ones He is coming back to earth to raise from the dead are those who are not dead; they are already alive somewhere other than on earth. This view makes souls be alive wherever they think Abraham's bosom to be. No one is dead; therefore, there cannot be a resurrection of the undead who are alive either in Heaven, or alive in Abraham's bosom.

**(3) THE REINTERPRETATION OF THE RESURRECTION OF THE DEAD FROM THE GRAVE INTO AN INSTANT TRANSLATION TO HEAVEN.** Those that are not dead cannot be raised from the dead. Unconditional immortality says a person has an immaterial "soul" in them that is now immortal, is now alive, and it is not subject to death, and that this "soul" that is in them goes to Heaven or Hell at the person's death. If this were true, it would make the resurrection be of no consequence, impossible, and not needed. Most unconditional immoralists say whatever the immaterial something is it is not now dead, it is not now in the grave, it will not be dead, or in the grave at the coming of Christ. If it were true that only a soul that can never die is all that will ever be in Heaven, and it is already in Heaven, then there could not be a resurrection of the dead, for this undead soul that is in a person would not be dead. The resurrection is at the coming of Christ; if souls that had been in those who have died in Christ are now alive in Heaven, some for two thousand years or more, what would be the point of the second coming of Christ to receive these souls unto Himself (John 14:3). Would it not be ridiculous for Christ to come to earth for His people when they had been with Him in Heaven, some for thousands of years? There would be nothing on earth to rise, but the earthly body that will never be in Heaven. 1 Corinthians 15:50 "*Flesh and blood cannot inherit the kingdom of God.*"

It is the person that died, and it will be the person that will be resurrection from the dead with a wonderfully changed body; anything that happens to a soul that is not dead would not be a resurrection of the dead, it would not be a resurrection of anything; this pagan teaching completely changes and destroys the teaching of the Bible of the resurrection. The body that will be raised will be changed, but it will be the same person, not a resurrection of the dead of a soul that is not dead and cannot be resurrected.

**JUDGED TWICE:** The doctrine of a soul going to Heaven or Hell immediately at the death of the person would make the souls of both the lost and the saved be judged two times. What about the immaterial souls that would now be in Hell? Are they to be resurrected and judged a second time for the same sins; what could possibly be the purpose of their resurrection, they have already been judged worthy of Hell.

(1). The lost souls must be judged at death and found worthily of eternal torment in Hell, then be called out of Hell at the coming of Christ for a second judgment for the same sins that they had already been judged for, found guilty, and condemned again to the same eternal torment by God.

(2). The souls that were judged at death and found worthily of eternal life in Heaven would have to be called out of Heaven, be judged, and found not guilty a second time, and then enter Heaven a second time.

**THE RESURRECTION OF THE DEAD IS AN UNSOLVABLE PROBLEM.** For those who believe an undying soul is translated to Heaven or Hell at the moment of death without the resurrection at the second coming of Christ, the resurrection is a problem for which they seem to have no solution. What do they think will be raised from the dead when Christ comes? What body will be raised; if the earthly body is raised, what will be done with it after it is raised from the dead? It cannot go to Heaven; what would happen to the earthly body if it were raised? A resurrection of those souls that are already alive in Heaven or Hell is no resurrection at all; it would be an empty show. It is an inescapable fact that according to the popular teaching, that there is no place for a resurrection in the popular view of today, and no logical reason for it. The Bible teaching of the resurrection of the dead at the coming of Christ cannot be reconciled with the heathen doctrine of an immortal soul; it is dead persons that will be resurrected, not living deathless souls. How could life be restored to souls that are alive?

FRED P. THOMPSON, JR, "Nevertheless, there is a sturdy realism about the way the Bible handles death. No effort is made to avoid its impact. No plastic disguises are attempted to make the dead seem still alive. No circumlocutions or euphemisms are employed in an effort to make death seem something more pleasant than it is. In biblical stories men and women die and are buried and appropriately mourned. They neither 'pass away' nor 'expire.' They die. For death is more than ceasing to breathe and more than a stage on the great journey of life. It is an end, a period placed after the last chapter of the book or mortal existence. Scripture never skirts that fact." "What The Bible Says About Heaven And Hell," page 54, College Press, 1983.

ANTHONY F. BUZZARD M. A., "The Hellenic idea that the soul departs from the body at death is a flat contradiction of the Old and New Testament scheme, and its introduction into Christian thinking has led to the utmost confusion. For what sense can be made of a scheme, which places each dying Christian immediately in, heaven at death (although David *'has not ascended into heaven'*), only to have him raised from the grave with all his fellows at a future time? An attempt to reconcile the Hebraic and Hellenic systems has led to the idea of the resurrection of the *body only*, implying that the soul is already 'alive.' But such language is quite unbiblical. The Scripture nowhere speaks of the resurrection of *the body* or the flesh. It speaks of the resurrection of *the dead*. It is specifically said, as has been shown, that David himself, the whole person, is not in heaven, and that the dead, not their bodies only, are sleeping in the grave pending the resurrection...It is the resurrection of dead *people* that the New Testament preaches, not the resurrection of dead *bodies!*" "What Happens When We Die? A Biblical View of Death and Resurrection," Page 11, 2002, [www.restorationfellowship.org](http://www.restorationfellowship.org)

**THE RESURRECTION OF THE DEAD IS A FUTURE EVENT** John 5:28-29; Acts 24:15: If a person has an immortal soul that will never be dead, and this "soul" is the only thing that will be in Heaven, the New Testament teaching of the resurrection has been destroyed. The Greek concept of the immortal soul assumes that this soul already posse's eternal life and the only question is, "Where will this eternal life be spent?" It cannot be said that something that is now living can be raised from the dead. It is utterly impossible to harmonize the New Testament teaching of a resurrection with the pagan teaching of an immortal soul.

**There is no stronger way Paul could have said that there is no hope of life after death if there is no resurrection; that those who are fallen asleep in Christ have perished; that they are not now in Heaven before the resurrection. If they were in Heaven they could not have perished in any way.** What ever you think will be in Heaven, the whole person or just a soul, it is clear from this passage that neither one will be in Heaven if there is no resurrection, both (1) the person or (2) a soul if there were a soul it has ceased to exist; neither a person or a soul is now in Heaven before the resurrection.

**The dead have not yet been raised or judged – NOT – the dead are now alive in Heaven without being raised or judged.**

(1). Before the resurrection and judgment "*they also that are fallen asleep in Christ have perished*" if the dead are not raised.

—————OR—————

(2). Before the resurrection and judgment they that are fallen asleep in Christ have not perished, even if there is no resurrection, for they are now alive in Heaven before and without the resurrection.

The two are incompatible.

- An immortal deathless soul makes the resurrection from the dead impossible.
- The resurrection from the dead makes an immortal deathless soul impossible.

**Both cannot be true.** Death is the end of life. The resurrection is a return to life. If death is life in another place, the resurrection is nothing more than a moving day,

from being alive at one place to being alive at another place, just a continuation of life in another place, not a real resurrection from the dead.

**THE RESURRECTION OF THE DEAD IS THE ONLY HOPE OF LIFE AFTER DEATH.** The Bible could not say any stronger than it does that an awakening from the dead by the resurrection is our only hope of life after death. Without the resurrection to life from death, there would be no existence after death. Being raised from the grave to immortality is the teaching of the New Testament (See 1 Corinthians 15; Matthew 22:31; Luke 14:14; John 11:25; Acts 17:31; Philippians 3:8-11; John 6:3-9). **Without the resurrection, "Your faith is worthless; you are still in your sins. Then those also who have fallen asleep in Christ have perished"** (1 Corinthians 15:17-18). *"If from human motives I fought with wild beasts at Ephesus, what does it profit me? If the dead are not raised, let us eat and drink, for tomorrow we die"* (1 Corinthians 15:32); not tomorrow immortal souls live forever some place without the resurrection; if there is no resurrection there is no future existence of any kind, death ends all life, eat, drink, do what ever you want to for death ends everything for you. Both reincarnation and the immortal soul from birth are a poor substitution for the truth. As clearly as life and death, the return of Jesus, the resurrection from the grave, and the Judgment Day are taught in the New Testament, how could anyone read the New Testament and believe reincarnation, or that Plato's immortal soul is alive before and without the resurrection?

1 Corinthians 15:18 – if there is no resurrection.

- *"Then those also who have fallen asleep in Christ **have perished**"* New American Standard Bible.
- *"Then those also who have fallen asleep in Christ **are lost**"* New International Version.
- *"If follows also that those who have died within Christ's fellowship **are utterly lost**"* Revised English Bible.
- *"And those in Christ who have already died **are lost**"* New Century Version.
- *"And all of those who died in Christ **are gone**"* The Simple English Bible.
- *"In that case all Christians who have died **are lost!**"* The Living Bible.
- *"Moreover those who have died believing in Christ **are utterly dead and gone**"* J. B. Phillips.
- *"Those who have fallen asleep in Christ **are the deadest of the dead**"* New American Bible (Catholic).

*"If the dead are not raised"* (1 Corinthians 15:16-19).

- *"Neither has Christ been raised."*
- *"Your faith is vain (useless)."*
- *"You are yet in your sins."*
- *"They also that are fallen asleep (are dead) in Christ have perished."* If there is no resurrection of the dead, there will be no hereafter for anyone who has died. This "perishing" would have been so complete and so final that there would be no hope of any kind of life after the "perishing."
- *"If we have only hoped in Christ in this life, we are of all men most pitiable"* for there would be no resurrection, no Judgment Day, no second death, no eternal life.

If an immaterial soul is the only thing that will never be dead, it will always live independent of the resurrection; it is a fact that the doctrine of an immortal soul that cannot die has pervaded over the doctrine of a resurrection in most churches. **There could not be a gospel that is more different to the New Testament Gospel than is the gospel of an immortal soul that will never die. Nothing is more plainly taught than that there will be no life for anyone after death without the resurrection of the dead at the coming of Christ.**

**AFTER THE RESURRECTION OF THE DEAD IS THE ONLY TIME ANY OF THE DEAD WILL BE ALIVE AND WITH THE LORD.** *"For the Lord Himself will descend from heaven with a shout, with the voice of the archangel, and with the trumpet of God; and the dead in Christ shall rise first. Then we who are alive and remain shall be caught up together with them in the clouds to meet the Lord in the air, and thus we shall always be with the Lord"* (1 Thessalonians 4:16-17). *"I have kept the faith; henceforth that is laid up for **me** (not laid up for a soul) the crown of righteousness, which the righteous judge, shall give to **me** at the day; and not to **me** only, but **also to all them that have loved his appearing,**"* (all persons that are in Christ, not laid up for the souls that had been in all believers) (2 Timothy 4:7-8). The pagan theology of souls that had been in believers going to Heaven at the death of the believers makes the resurrection completely useless.

**THE RESURRECTION OF THE DEAD IS WHEN THE JUST SHALL BE RECOMPENSED, NOT RECOMPENSED AT DEATH FOR THOSE WHO ARE NOT DEAD.** *"For **you** shall be recompensed in the resurrection of the just"* (Luke 14:14). No one is recompensed by going instantly to Heaven at death before the resurrection and judgment. *"In my Father's house are many mansions; if it were not so, I would have told **you**; for I go to prepare a place for **you**. And if I go and prepare a place for **you**, I will come again, and will receive **you** unto myself that where I am, there **you** may be also"* (John 14:3). No one, or no deathless immaterial being that will at the death of the person go to His Father's house in Heaven before Christ comes again. *"Unto an inheritance incorruptible, and undefiled, and that fades not away, **reserved in Heaven for YOU**, who by the power of God are guarded through faith unto a **salvation ready to be revealed in the last time**"* (1 Peter 1:4-5). The "**you**" is the person, not something in a person that will leave that person at death. It is "**you**" not "it" that Christ is preparing a place for.

**1 CORINTHIANS 15:** This entire chapter is devoted to the subject of the resurrection of the dead. In it, it is clear that Paul believed in the resurrection of the dead as being our only hope of life after death, not in an instant translation of a soul to Heaven at the moment of death.

**(1). The dead are asleep:** Christ was *"the first fruits of those who **are** asleep"* (1 Corinthians 15:20). *"Are asleep"* is present tense, the Corinthian Christians who had

died were asleep at the time Paul was writing this, not awake in Heaven. The dead in Christ are spoken of as being asleep through out this chapter.

1. "Some have fallen asleep," some had died, (1 Corinthians 15:6).
2. "Those who have fallen asleep in Christ have perished" if there is no resurrection, (1 Corinthians 15:18).
3. Not all Christian will fall asleep before the coming of Christ (1 Corinthians 15:51).

**(2). The first fruits:** In the Old Testament the first of the harvest was to be offered unto God, and then the harvest would come after the first fruits. "But now Christ has been raised from the dead, the first fruits of those who are asleep" (1 Corinthians 15:20). The harvest will come at the coming of Christ, "But each in his own order: Christ the first fruits, after that those who are Christ's at His coming" (1 Corinthians 15:23). The resurrection of the dead will be when Christ comes, if those who has pass on are alive they could not be resurrected as Christ was resurrected from the dead. To deny the resurrection by teaching an instant translation into Heaven is saying there will be no harvest at the coming of Christ. **A more direct or positive statement about how long the dead will be dead, and when the dead will no longer be dead ("at His coming") could not be made. Yet many say no Paul you are wrong, the dead are never dead.** The doctrine of an immortal soul that grow out of Plato's teaching makes Christ being the first fruits or firstborn from the dead not possible, for it makes those who lived and died before His resurrection be alive before Him.

**(3). "Utterly lost"** if Christ was not raised, if there is no resurrection. "For if the dead are not raise, it follows that Christ was not raised; and if Christ was not raised, your faith has nothing in it and you are still in your old state of sin. It follows also that those who have died within Christ's fellowship are utterly lost" (1 Corinthians 15:16-18, New English Bible). Unconditional immortality says the real you never dies; therefore, cannot be resurrected, the real Christ could not die; therefore, was not resurrected. If the souls that are in dead saints goes to Heaven at death it makes this statement by Paul be totally wrong for there would be no way that the souls that were already alive in Heaven could be "utterly lost," even if there were no resurrection. If Paul was wrong he could not been inspired by God. If this passage were not inspired there would be no way we could know that anything Paul said was inspired.

**(4). "In Christ all shall be made alive"** (1 Corinthians 15:22). If those in Christ were alive in Heaven they could not be made alive, they would already be alive. **Nothing is said about an immaterial soul in this chapter on the resurrection,** it is *us* that are saved, not an "it" that nobody knows what "it" really is, those in Christ, not "IT" that will be resurrected with a spiritual body. Is there any way that God could have told us any stronger that no one will have life after death before the resurrection?

(5). **The inconsistency of making death a friend:** (1 Corinthians 15:52-57). According to the belief of many, the dead are instantaneous translated to Heaven at death and are with God. Yet they do all they can, pray to God to keep the sick alive and out of Heaven, spend a great sum of money to keep them on earth, and grieve when they think a loved one goes to be with Jesus. It is obvious there is an inconsistency in what they claim to believe, and what they really believe, it is obvious that they believe death to be an enemy, not a friend. Death is not an instant pass to Heaven before the resurrection. No place in the Bible is anyone excited about dying to be in Heaven; death is always an enemy, never a friend (1 Corinthians 15:26).

**PAUL'S FUNERAL SERMON:** *"But we do not want you to be uninformed, brethren, about those who are asleep, so that you will not grieve as do the rest who have no hope. For if we believe that Jesus died and rose again, even so God will bring with Him those who have fallen asleep in Jesus. For this we say to you by the word of the Lord, that **we**, who are alive and remain until the coming of the Lord, will not precede those who have fallen asleep. For the Lord Himself will descend from heaven with a shout, with the voice of the archangel and with the trumpet of God, and the dead in Christ will rise first. Then **we** who are alive and remain will be caught up together with them in the clouds to meet the Lord in the air, and so **we** shall always be with the Lord. Therefore comfort one another with these words"* (1 Thessalonians 4:13-18). The Thessalonians were not concerned that some of their members had died and were with the Lord in Heaven, they were concerned about there members that had died before Christ came, that they would not be there to meet Christ when He came. Paul points out that those was no difference in privilege between those that had fallen asleep and those that were alive, that both would be caught up to meet the Lord when He comes. Paul did not comfort them then by telling them that there loved ones were already up in Heaven looking down on them, he comforted them by telling them that:

1. Their loved one who had fallen asleep in Jesus *"will rise first,"* not a soul that they know nothing about. It is by knowing that loved ones who are now asleep in Jesus will be resurrected to life that gives both the Thessalonians Christians and us comfort, not an immortal soul that is not dead. *"And the dead in Christ will rise first,"* Christ will raise them that are dead from the grave, not resurrect souls that are alive from Heaven. The immortal soul doctrine is Pagan, not Christian; immortality is promised to persons in Christ, it is not now possessed by living saints or possessed by sleeping saints after death; **no one will ever be alive and have immortality after death before or without the resurrection at the coming of Christ.**

2. Then any that are alive when Christ comes will be *"caught up together with them in the clouds to meet the Lord in the air."*

3. *And so **we** (both the persons who are resurrected from sleep when Christ comes and those that are alive when Christ come) shall always be with the Lord."*

The doctrine of being awake in Heaven at death, or awake any other place before the resurrection, is both a rejection of Paul's inspired teaching and is changing God's word to the Pagan teaching of Plato. How can anyone say they believe in the

resurrection if they believe no one is asleep to wake up, if they believe no one is dead to be resurrected? If all Christians that died were now alive in Heaven, no one would be dead to be resurrected.

NEW BIBLE DICTIONARY: "The most startling characteristic of the first Christian preaching is its emphasis on the resurrection. The first preachers were sure that Christ had risen, and sure, in consequence, the believers would in due course rise also. This set them off from all the other teachers of the ancient world...Nothing is more characteristic of even the best thought of the day than its hopelessness in the face of death. Clearly the resurrection is of the very first importance for the Christian faith" page 1010, 1996. The resurrection is a New Testament teaching. The word resurrection is used forty-one times in the New Testament but not once in the Old Testament.

ADAM CLARKE on 1 Corinthians 15:32: "I believe the common method of pointing this verse is erroneous; I propose to read it: 'If, after the manner of men, I have fought with beasts at Ephesus, what does it advantage me? If the dead rise not, let us eat and drink; for tomorrow we die.' **What the apostle says here is a regular and legitimate conclusion from the doctrine that there is no resurrection; for if there be no resurrection, then there can be no judgment—no future state or rewards and punishment;** why, therefore, should we bear crosses, and keep ourselves under continual discipline? Let us eat and drink, take all the pleasure we can; **for tomorrow we die, and there is an end of us forever.**"

JERRY CROSS: "It is important to notice that Paul argues for a resurrection, and not a release. Paul does not have in mind some disembodied existence such as advocated by Greek thinkers such as Plato. Furthermore, Paul is arguing for a resurrection that is a transformation and not a continuation or resumption of life just as it had been laid down. **The resurrected body is to be radically different from the body of this earthly life** (vv. 35-49). This is the same position argued by Jesus against both the view of the Sadducees and that of the Pharisees (Matt. 22:23-33; esp. v. 30)" Magnolia Bible College 1984 Lectures, pages 47-48.

DILLARD THURMAN, Brown Trail church of Christ: "The hope and aspiration of many has been shifted from His coming again to receive His own, to an immediate immortality and heavenly bliss immediately at death! Jesus DID NOT promise that!" Gospel Minutes, Volume 34, Number 5, February 1, 1985. "I have heard funeral orations extol the happiness and bliss the departed has instantly with death: but on checking the New Testament assiduously, I have yet to find a single promise where the dead go into heaven on an instant pass, or have immediate conscious happiness" Gospel Minutes, Volume 34, Number 5, February 1, 1985.

The resurrection was the backbone of the belief and teaching of the New Testament Church (Philippians 3:10-11; Acts 17:31, 23:6, 24:15, John 6:39-54, Luke 14:13-14, Hebrews 9:27, 1 Corinthians 15:1-58). If the body is only a house in which a soul lives, then the putting off this house is not a death, but only an immaterial what ever it is moving from this house to were ever an immaterial something moves to; according to the pagan teaching if a soul is alive, and if anything comes forth out of the grave, it could only be the body of flesh; and then the "soul" must come back from Heaven to rejoin the body, or (1) if a soul that were in Heaven did not leave Heaven and come back to earth we would have our dead earthly body resurrected on earth, but with no "soul" (2) with our "soul" alive in Heaven with a disembodied existence, both at the same time. **The apostles never preached a disembodied**

**life after death, but a resurrection of the person that is dead.** *"God both raised the Lord, and **will** raise up **us**"* (1 Corinthians 6:14).

**If we were now a two parts being of (1) body and (2) spirit; then what is the spiritual body that the saved soul, or the saved spirit will "*put on*"** (1 Corinthians 15:44)? Is the "soul" (as the word is used today) different from the spiritual body that the resurrected persons that are in Christ will put on at the resurrection? Is the immaterial spirit, which some teach is now in a person going to put on a body at the resurrection and become a become a material being, or will this immaterial being put on a spiritual body that will be just as immaterial as "it" now is? Will it be a second spiritual body? If we now have this spirit or soul, how can it be changed in any way? Will it be a different soul from the soul that is now in us? If it will not be different, all we could do would be to put off the body of flesh; then the immortal disembodied something that is in us would now be just as it will be in Heaven; if not, why not? There could be no other change or a resurrection; nothing other than putting off the body of flesh at death, and those who have died would have already done this, and without the resurrection are **now** just as they will always be. **If the "soul" is now immortal, there will be no resurrection, and no spiritual body to be put on at the resurrection.**

Paul makes it clear that the immortal bodies we (persons, not souls) will receive at the resurrection is different from and is not the mortal earthly bodies we now have. *"How are **the dead** raised* (dead persons, not deathless souls raised from the dead), *and with what manner of body do **they** come* (what kind of body will the dead persons be raised with at the resurrection)?" (1 Corinthians 15:35).

- *"You sow (bury) not the body that shall be"* (1 Corinthians 15:37).
- *"**It** is sown (buried) in corruption; **it** is raised in incorruption"* (1 Corinthians 15:42).
- *"**It** is sown (buried) in weakness; **it** is raised in power"* (1 Corinthians 15:43).
- *"**It** is sown (buried) a natural body; **it** is raised a spiritual body"* (1 Corinthians 15:44).
- *"And as **we** have borne the image of the earthy (Adam), **we** shall also bear the image of the heavenly (Christ)"* (1 Corinthians 15:49).
- *"**We** all shall not sleep, but **we** shall all be changed, in a moment, in the twinkling of an eye"* (1 Corinthians 15:51).
- *"The dead shall be raised incorruptible and **we** shall be changed"* (1 Corinthians 15:52).
- *"It is not yet made manifest what **we** shall be. **We** know that, if He shall be manifested, **we** shall be like Him; for **we** shall see Him even as He is"* (1 John 3:2).

Unconditional immortality teaching is that:

- (1) A soul is alive now; souls that are in both the saved and the lost now have the same eternal life.
- (2) A soul will be alive after death before the resurrection; and it will be *"at home with the Lord"* from the time of the death of the person before and without the resurrection.
- (3) A soul will be no more alive after the resurrection than it now is before the resurrection.
- (4) The wages of sin cannot be death for a soul cannot be dead.

DAVID OWEN said in 1996 Florida College Lectures, page 216 that it should be noted that Paul said we would be raised with a *spiritual body, not a spirit*. It will be "us" that will be raised with a

new "spiritual body," not an undying spirit that is now in a person that is not dead being raised from Heaven.

STEWART SALMOND: "The new body will be *our* body, and yet will be different from that of which we have experience, superior to it in incorruptibility, in honor, and in power, in freedom from waste, decay, and death, in the glory of perfection, in ability to discharge its function. It shall ease to be a natural or sensuous body, fit only for earthy, dependent conditions, and it shall become a 'spiritual body.' The congruous instrument of a higher order of life for which the limitations of sense and time no more subsist." "The Christian Doctrine Of Immortality," page 456, 1901.

If the resurrection were taken from the Bible, it would not affect the theology of many churches today. They take a short cut and go directly to Heaven at death without the resurrection. Because they believe they are born with an immortal soul in them, which is the only thing that they believe will be in Heaven, "it" does not need to put on immortality at the resurrection; this disembodied "it" will have bypassed the resurrection by going straight to Heaven when it leaves the person it was in.

A believer in unconditional immortality said, "Therefore, at the Second Coming, all the resurrected saints are brought together and publicly displayed, not raised at that time." From a web site at: <http://www.tranexp.com/win/intertrans.gif>.

JUSTIN MARTYR, One of the "church fathers" said those, "Who say there is no resurrection of the dead, and that their souls, when they die, are taken to heaven are not Christian at all."

Satan's lie, "*You shall not surely die*" after being changed to, "My soul shall not surely die" has succeeded to the point that many now say, "No Christ, there is something in me that needs no resurrection, this being that has no substance is now immortal and at my death it will come to You in Heaven; this invisible being that is in me will not wait to go to Heaven unto after your second coming and the resurrection." **A faith in something God has not spoken is a vain useless faith; therefore, a faith based on life after death because there is an immortal soul that is not subject to death is a vain faith that is based on a lie.** The belief in the resurrection and the need for it is being abandoning by many, but the Bible teaches that all die, and none will live before the resurrection; without it there would be no life for anyone after death, no life for the saved, or no life for the lost.

**(4) THE REINTERPRETATION OF THE WAGES OF SIN MAKES "THE WAGES OF SIN" IMPOSSIBLE BY ELIMINATING DEATH** (Romans 6:23). If a soul cannot die, it cannot pay the wages of sin, which is to die; therefore, the wages of sin had to be changed from death to an eternal life of torment.

- Romans 6:23: "*The wages of sin is death*" has been reinterpreted to be an eternal life with torment. I cannot understand how anyone can read "*death*" and understand death to be an endless life, "the wages of sin is endless life of suffering." Nor can I understand why anyone would want to have the lost endlessly suffering.
- James 1:15: James should not have said, "*And sin, when it is accomplished, it brings forth death.*" According to many he should have said, "And when it is accomplished, sin brings forth eternal life in Hell to be eternally tormented by God."

**As long as a person has life, that person is not dead; therefore, as long as any "immaterial part of a person" (W. E. Vine) is alive, that "part of a person"**

**has not received the wages of sin. Nor can that “part of a person” be said to be dying if death can never be reached.** To an immortal soul that cannot die, death cannot be the wages of sin. Mankind does not like death, and many have made themselves believe **there is no real death.** Even at the time of our death, many believe we do not die, and have reduced death to life in prison. And as a soul that is in us now has immortality, the promise of “*eternal life*” must be reduced from being eternal life to just being a reward (Heaven). If only the earthly body dies, not the real “us,” then the resurrection could not be the center of the gospel (1 Corinthians 15:1-10); it could not even be a part of the Gospel; therefore, the undying immortal soul doctrine takes the resurrection out of the Gospel; both the resurrection of Christ and our resurrection.

**NEVER A VICTORY:** Evil and good beings must live side by side. If death is only separation from God, the separation must go on forever. **There never can be an end to death.** There never can be an end to separation, for if the separation did end, both the lost and the saved would then be together. There will never be an end to evil. Satan, evil angels, and evil men are just moved to another place, not ended, and not defeated. They will remain just as evil, just as much in rebellion to God as they are now. According to the traditional doctrine of Hell there will be two kingdoms, the Kingdom of God and the kingdom of Satan with the kingdom of Satan being many times larger than the Kingdom of God. What kind of victory would that be? It makes Satan win. Death will be our enemy only unto our resurrection at the coming of Christ.

**(5) THE REINTERPRETATION OF THE JUDGMENT DAY MAKES THE JUDGMENT A MOCKERY AND NOT NEEDED.** The Judgment Day at the coming of Christ is opposed to an immortal soul being translated instantly to Heaven or Hell at death; if there is a judgment day of all, both saved and lost persons that is to come after the second coming of Christ it is positive proof that the doctrine of a soul going to Heaven or Hell when the person it had been in dies is not true. If souls are now in Heaven or Hell, all would have been judged at death, and the judgment is going on now for each person would have to be judged at death to know which souls would be sent to Heaven, or which souls would be sent to Hell. To take souls that have already been judged and sent to Hell, or judged and sent to Heaven out of Heaven or Hell **for a second judgment** only to put them back in the same place where they now are makes the Judgment be a useless and empty show. It would make a mockery of both the resurrection and the judgment. The popular idea of an immortal soul going instantly to Heaven at death makes the resurrection and judgment to be out of place, useless, and meaningless; many have abandoned it. At the most, the Judgment Day could be nothing more than another reward day for these souls that has been already judged and rewarded.

The judgment of all, both the saved and the lost person, not souls, will take place on a special day **in the future**, the day of the second coming of Christ, **not at death**. Matthew 16:27; John 5:27-29; 2 Timothy 4:1; 1 Corinthians 4:5; 2 Peter 3:7; Acts 17:31; Matthew 10:15; 11:22; 11:24; Mark 6:11; Matthew 7:22; Luke 19:22; John 6:39, 40, 44, 54; 11:24; 12:48; Romans 2:5; 2:16; 1 Corinthians 1:8; 3:13; Ephesians 4:30; 6:13; Philippians 1:6; 1:10; 2:16; 1 Thessalonians 5:2; 5:4; 2 Thessalonians 2:2; 2:3; 2 Timothy 1:12; 1:18; 4:8; 2 Peter 2:9; 3:7; 3:10; 3:12; 1 John 4:17; Jude 6. The Bible is so clear on when anyone will be judged that I find it difficult to understand how anyone can read the Bible, and then say we are judged to be saved or lost at the time of our death.

**A SECOND JUDGMENT:** If all are translated instantly to Heaven or Hell at death as is taught by today's theology, **would not a second judgment make God unsure of Himself?** If in all the billions would have had judged at death and sent them to Heaven or Hell, if He found just one that He had misjudged, just one that was in Hell that should not be, or if just one soul was in Heaven that should not be God would not be infallible; therefore, He would not be God. Satan fashions himself as an angel of light and his ministers as ministers of righteousness, and they have done their work well (2 Corinthians 11:14-15).

KENNETH FORTIER: "The immortality of the soul makes a mockery of all this. Resurrection becomes superfluous, since we can relate to Christ "out of body." Because the saints have already spent long ages with Christ, the Parousia becomes something less than the great 'revelation' portrayed by Scripture. Finally, the Judgment is transformed into a farce. After spending thousands of years in heaven, will Abel have to pass before the bar of divine justice to determine whether or not his name is written in the Book of Life? Conversely, will Judas be summoned from a hell he has occupied for two millennia to discover if he is really among the damned? Any doctrine, which allows for such scenarios ought to be suspect from the very outset" Resurrection Magazine, Volume 95, Number 2, 1992.

CATHOLIC ENCYCLOPEDIA: "Hell" by P. Kreeft: "God must appoint some fixed term for the time of trial, after which the just will enter into the secure possession of a happiness that can never again be lost in all eternity...Accordingly, it is the belief of all people that eternal retribution is dealt out immediately after death." Most Protestants also believe a person goes to Heaven or Hell immediately after death; therefore, their judgment must be immediately after death, not at the second coming of Christ.

*"Inasmuch as He has appointed a day in which He will judge the world"* (Acts 17:31). *"It is appointed unto men once to die, but after this the judgment"* (Hebrews 9:27). *"For we must all be made manifest before the judgment—seat of Christ; that each one may receive the things done in the body, according to what he has done, whether it be good or bad"* (2 Corinthians 5:10). **There will be a day of judgment when all, every person, not every soul, will come before the judgment—seat of Christ, not a judgment of each person at death.**

*"Do not marvel at this; for an hour is coming, in which all who are in the tombs will hear His voice, and will come forth; those who did the good deeds to a resurrection*

of life, those who committed the evil deeds to a resurrection of judgment" (John 5:28-29, also 2 Corinthians 5:10). Those resurrected will be in two groups, (1) those resurrected to life, (2) those resurrected to judgment. **The dead will hear the voice of Jesus "when they are in their graves" and "come out" of their graves, not hear when they are in Heaven, Hell, or Abraham's bosom.** The resurrection is not a bringing back from Heaven or Hell those who are not dead; it will be a real resurrection from a real death. Jesus clearly said, "**All who are in their graves.**" He did not say, "Souls of **all** who are in Heaven or Hell;" only the person, not a soul, is in the grave. If the dead now have life in Heaven or Hell, then Christ was wrong. "*For this is the will of my Father that everyone that beholds the Son, and believes on him should have **eternal life**; and I will raise him up **at the last day***" (John 6:39-40) "*And I will raise him up **in the last day***" (John 6:44) "*And I will raise him up **at the last day***" (John 6:54). "*I know that he **shall rise again in the resurrection at the last day***" (John 11:24).

**(6) THE REINTERPRETATION OF DEATH TO BE NOT DEATH, BUT ETERNAL LIFE, EITHER ETERNAL LIFE IN HEAVEN, OR ETERNAL LIFE IN HELL BEFORE THE RESURRECTION AND JUDGMENT, AND BEFORE THE SECOND COMING OF CHRIST. "To die" never signifies "to live in torment."** If Abraham, David, and all the saints of the Old Testament were in Heaven they were there before and without the resurrection or the death of Christ; neither His death or His resurrection would have been needed, nor would there be any death to abolish to a "soul" that cannot die.

1. Death would have been destroyed by changing death into eternal life for everyone at the time of their death, not at Christ's second coming. Death would have been destroyed for those in the Old Testament before and without the death of Christ by putting them all in Heaven or Hell at the time of their death.
2. If death takes anyone to Heaven it would be no enemy to him or her.
3. Death would not be death. Changing from life on this earth to life in Heaven, or to life in Hell would be life, not death.

**There cannot be eternal life in Hell** for "*the free gift of God is eternal life in Christ Jesus our Lord*" (Romans 6:23). Without being in Christ there is no eternal life. "*He that believes on the Son has eternal life; but that obeys not the Son **shall not see life***" (John 3:36). **DEATH IS NOT LIFE. The doctrine of the immortality of a soul, which gives eternal life to the lost, is in direct contradiction to the Bible.** There is not a passage in the Bible that says a soul that is in the lost now has immortality, or will be raised immortal, or imperishable, but many passages that say the unsaved persons will perish, will be destroyed. "*He that believes on the Son of God has the witness in him: he that believes not God has made Him a liar; because he has not believed in the witness that God has borne concerning His Son. And the witness is this that God gave unto us eternal life, and this life is in His Son. He that*

has the Son has the life, **he that has not the Son of God has not the life**" (1 John 5:10-12). What we believe does make a difference.

- God said, "**You shall surely die.**"
- Satan said, "**You shall not surely die.**"

**(7) THE REINTERPRETATION OF ASLEEP. ARE THE DEAD ASLEEP OR AWAKE?** What is asleep, the body, or soul, or spirit, or the whole person? The scriptures never speak of a soul being asleep, nor is it only the body being asleep, nor a spirit being asleep, but the whole person as being asleep, and the whole person will be asleep unto the resurrection day when the whole person will be resurrected. If Christ were not raised the dead are gone; those who are asleep in Christ will never wake up. The Bible must be changed, and made to say that a soul, the only part of a person that many believe will be in Heaven is not asleep, and it can never sleep. 1 Corinthians 15:18 "*Then they also that are fallen asleep in Christ have perished* (Apollumi)." **When Paul said those who are asleep in Christ have "perished," he is saying they will never live again anywhere if there is no resurrection from the sleep of death. They are gone "perished" forever. He is not saying they have just "lost their well being" but souls that had been in the dead saints are alive somewhere even if Christ were not raised from the dead.** Perished cannot mean tormented, but a total end, for if "*perished*" means "tormented," then Paul said those who are "*asleep in Christ*" will be "tormented" if there is no resurrection (1 Corinthians 15:12-19). Paul is not saying that if Christ were not raised, the dead in Christ have just "lost their well being" because they are alive, and will forever live in pain and torment, but he is saying that they are dead and will never live again anywhere if there is no resurrection. If whatever it is that is believed by many to be in a person cannot die, if whatever the something is that had been in the dead saints, if it must forever live somewhere then Paul has no argument, and there cannot be a resurrection of the undead that cannot die. Paul's argument has been neutralized, and he is made to be saying nothing; the death and resurrection of Christ has been made to be useless and not needed? **Paul said the dead in Christ are asleep, the theology of many says not so Paul, all the dead in Christ had a soul in them that after their death it is awake in Heaven.**

- Jesus said, "*Lazarus is fallen asleep*" (John 11:11).
- Then said, "*Lazarus is dead*" (John 11:14).

He did not say Lazarus's body is asleep, but a soul is now alive in Heaven. Lazarus would have spent four days in Heaven, but Lazarus or none of the others in the Bible that were raised from the dead ever said one word about what Heaven was like. Do you think that if they had seen the joy of Heaven, or the pain of Hell, which many believe they would have seen, that a single one that was brought back from Heaven or Hell could have kept quiet about what they had seen? Could you? They said nothing because, as Christ said, they were "*asleep*" not more alive than the

living; they had seen nothing. Lazarus was a problem to the chief priests and Pharisees because everyone knew he had been dead and was alive (John 11:47), not because he was telling of what he had seen. Not a one that was brought back from the dead had an "afterlife experience." Why? Because they were "asleep." Is earth better than Heaven; if Lazarus were in Heaven for four days, would he want to come back to earth? Would you or anyone want to leave Heaven and come back to this earth? Why would Christ have been cruel to Lazarus by taking him out of the joy of Heaven?

**The sleeping dead saints will not precede the living saints.** *"For this we say to you by the word of the Lord, that we who are alive and remain until the coming of the Lord, will not precede those who have fallen asleep. For the Lord Himself will descend from heaven with a shout, with the voice of the archangel and with the trumpet of God, and the dead in Christ will rise first. Then we who are alive and remain will **be caught up together** with them in the clouds to meet the Lord in the air, and so we shall always be with the Lord"* (1 Thessalonians 4:15-17). Just as the saints that are awake (alive) shall not go before the saints that are asleep, **those saints who are asleep have not already gone before the living saints.** Both will "be caught up together" and "meet the Lord in the air" together. It is the person that is asleep, not an immortal soul that is asleep; "soul sleeping" is not in the Bible, but a person sleeping unto the awakening, which is at the resurrection, is Biblical.

- *"To be the judge the living and the dead"* (Acts 10:42).
- *"Who shall judge the living and the dead"* (2 Timothy 4:1).
- *"Ready to judge the living and the dead"* (1 Peter 4:5).

The judgment of neither the living or the dead has taken place, and will not unto the resurrection; their judgment has not already preceded the judgment of the living. At His coming Christ will judge both (1) the living, those who will be alive on earth, (2) the dead, those who will have died before He come (2 Timothy 4:1).

**Gathered to his people:** Abraham (Genesis 25:8-9) and others died, and were "gathered to his people." The argument is made that this could not refer to Abraham but only to a soul that was "gathered to his people," therefore, it must be changed from Abraham that was gathered to his people to a soul that had been in Abraham that was gathered to his people despite the fact that there is nothing said about this soul. If that were true then souls that were gathered together would be asleep together, not awake together; therefore, it would not prove the sleeping souls are conscious after death. The Hebrew belief was that both the good and the bad went to sheol—the grave. See Genesis 3:7-35; Job 7:21; 14:12; 24:19; Psalm 13:3; 16:10; 31:17. "Slept with his fathers" is in the Old Testament about 38 times.

- Abraham "was **gathered to his people**" (Genesis 25:8-9).
- *"Moses, Behold, **you shall sleep with your fathers**"* (Deuteronomy 31:16).
- *"So **David slept with his fathers**"* (1 Kings 2:10; 11:21). *"David...fell asleep, and was laid among his fathers, and underwent decay"* (Acts 13:36). The David that fell asleep and

underwent decay was the same David that was laid (buried) among his fathers; nothing is said about an immaterial soul that had been in David being buried ("laid") among his fathers.

- *"From the day that the fathers fell asleep"* (2 Peter 3:4). Those that use this to prove that there are souls that never die do not believe what they make this passage teach, that souls sleep; it was the fathers that fell asleep, not souls that had been in the fathers that are asleep. They change *"fathers"* to *"souls of the fathers"* fell asleep, but they do not believe their own change—that souls that have left the dead are asleep.
- *"Christ...the first fruits of them that are asleep"* (1 Corinthians 15:20). Christ is the only one who has been raised from the dead, and He is the only one who is not now *"asleep."*
- *"That are asleep"* is present tenses, **ALL** the dead but Christ was *"asleep"* when Paul wrote this; **ALL** dead persons are asleep, nothing is said about souls that are asleep or awake.

If, *"Gathered to his people,"* means *"awake"* then, *"asleep"* has to mean, *"awake."* If not, then wherever Abraham was he would be *"asleep,"* and he would not know where he was, or who was with him. How could Christ be the first fruits if Abraham were alive before Him?

**Abraham's father served other gods.** *"Terah, the father of Abraham, and the father of Nahor: and they served other gods"* (Joshua 24:2), which, according to most Catholics and Protestants, would send his soul to Hell, but both believe Abraham went to Heaven, and was *"gathered to his people,"* which would include his father. Both seem to be somewhat unsure of where Abraham is; not sure if Abraham was *"gathered to his people"* in sheol, which is the grave, or if he is in Heaven and not gathered to all his people for his father the idolater they believe is in Hell for idolaters cannot be in Heaven.

Not one of the passages, which speak of persons being *"gathered to his people,"* is speaking of any person or of any soul being gathered in Heaven. Sheol (the grave) is not Heaven; therefore, these passages are not speaking of a soul being translated to Heaven, even though they are often used to prove it.

**The state of the dead. The analogy of sleep is used throughout the Bible,** about 47 times in the Old Testament and about 17 in the New Testament. If death does not indicate unconsciousness, then the analogy of sleep, which is used throughout the Bible, would be meaningless if the dead are not asleep. (Deuteronomy 31:16; 2 Samuel 7:12; 1 Kings 1:21; 2:10; 11:21; 11:43; 14:20; 14:31; 15:8; 15:24; 16:6; 16:28; 22:40; 22:50; 2 Kings 8:24; 10:35; 13:9; 13:13; 14:16; 14:22; 14:29; 15:7; 15:22; 15:38; 16:20; 20:21; 21:18; 24:6; 2 Chronicles 9:31; 12:16; 14:1; 16:13; 21:1; 16:2; 26:23; 27:9; 28:27; 32:33; 33:20; Job 3:13; 7:21; 14:12; Psalm 13:3; 76:5; 90:5; Jeremiah 51:39; 51:57; Matthew 9:24; 27:52; Mark 5:39; Luke 8:52; John 11:11-14; Acts 7:60; 13:36; 1 Corinthians 11:30; 15:6; 15:18; 15:20; 15:51; 1 Thessalonians 4:13; 4:14; 4:15; 5:10; 2 Peter 3:4). **The scriptures often speak of persons being asleep after death, but never says animals sleep when they die, just as it is never said that the lost will be asleep after the**

**second death.** With so much prominent being given to the state of the dead being asleep, how can anyone believe in the immortal soul doctrine that says souls that were in the dead are not asleep, but are now alive in Heaven or Hell?

**The state of those who are asleep:**

- (1) They have perished if there is no resurrection (1 Corinthians 15:18).
- (2) Their thoughts have perished (Psalm 146:4).
- (3) They are as though they had never been (Job 3:11-18; Psalm 39:13; 146:2).
- (4) They have no remembrance of God (Psalm 6:5).
- (5) They rest in the dust of the earth (Job 17:13).
- (6) They cannot give thanks to God (Isaiah 38:18).
- (7) *"The dead know not anything"* (Ecclesiastes 9:5; 9:10).

The resurrection is the only hope for the dead. Without it, the dead will never have life again.

E. D. SLOUGH, evangelist, church of Christ: "While these patriarchs and prophets were talking so much about the '**dead body**' having no wisdom, no thoughts, no praises, no knowledge, and no intelligence of any sort, why did they not draw on the spirit a little for our special edification, and teach us that there is wisdom and knowledge and thoughts and praises where it goes? Why not? Why talk so much and so dramatically about the dead body, and tell us that which all know, and say not one encouraging word about the joys and praises the spirits are giving God in the unseen world? Is there nothing significant about that omission? Why did they not cheer up our earth life, by painting a picture of the hosts of happy spirits in the unseen world of the dead? That would have been real instruction. That would have been, indeed, information, and would have settled a long drawn argument. Do you want the real reason for this action on the part of inspired men? Here it is. Obviously, they were speaking of the whole creature man. They saw no spirit off yonder praising God as Milligan, McGarvey, and others. They saw death the end of man, and they pointed it out as such, including his thoughts perishing in death, which means the dissolution of all his faculties. They did not talk of the thoughts being transferred, but perishing. The only possible result of death, destroying the organism by which thought is possible. Never a time did they say, 'There is wisdom and knowledge with the spirits of the dead.' How easy it would have been to say it. But had they said it, they could not have said the other. There are two propositions—one or the other must be untrue. Look at the incongruity of reasoning standing out like a huge knot on a limb. Some one says, 'John Doe is dead.' And that there is no remembrances or praise where he went. He knows not anything. But immediately they tell us 'the real John Doe is the spirit' and that it knows better than before. The man of God said, 'whither thou go' there is no wisdom, etc. 'Thou' John Doe. Men say 'Thou' means the spirit, and that it never ceases to think. Our clergy and the wise men are at variance again. What shall we do? We will leave them that way—if they can't see the truth. Thus, **John Doe is dead, and he is not dead.**

**His thoughts perish, and they do not perish.**

**He praised God, and he does not praise Him.**

**He remembers, and he does not remember.**

**All at the same time—the same John Doe...**They can not even suggest a reason why those ancient mouth pieces of God should argue and repeat and emphasize and affirm and declare over and over that the 'dead body' knows nothing, remembers nothing, praised nothing, thinks nothing and does nothing, which is only a deep and solemn fact known by all the living, **and never open their mouths once about the spirit being able to do all these things.** It would have been in

perfect accord with their enthusiasm along this line to have said, 'Cheer up and rejoice, for though the dead body has no knowledge, no wisdom, no thoughts, etc., yet the spirit is rejoicing and happy, thinking and praising God.' What a relief that would have been to modern theology. But the fact that such was not the case, is proof that it is not true." pages 191—194, "Indictment Of Eternal Torment—The Self-negation of a Monstrous Doctrine," F. L. Rowe, Publisher, 1914, This book is free on line at: [www.robertwr.com/EternalTorment.htm](http://www.robertwr.com/EternalTorment.htm)

D. Padfield seems to make knowing, or not knowing each other in Heaven to be dependent on Abraham now being awake with his people. He leaves out the resurrection, and makes Abraham now be alive without it. He jumps from the dead being in sheol, the grave, before the resurrection to Heaven after the resurrection as if they are the same place, and everything is the same in both. What we will be and know in Heaven after the resurrection does not depend on what we will know while in the grave, and will not depend on souls being awake while we are in the grave. He is so desperately trying to prove a person now has an immortal something in them that he is saying to God, "Abraham being with the fathers proves he is not *'asleep with the fathers.'*" Those who believe in "Abraham's bosom" use this view, but in this attempt to prove that the dead are not asleep, they make both the saved and the unsaved be awake together, even though this view is that those in Abraham's bosom are not dead; therefore, cannot be resurrected from the dead. This view makes:

1. Makes the dead not be dead but alive.
2. Makes those who "*sleep with the fathers*" are not asleep, but are "awake with the fathers."
3. Makes the resurrection impossible, a soul that was in a person is not dead.
4. Makes the Bible not mean what it says. The many times it says "*sleep with the fathers*" must be changed to be "awake with the fathers," and the many times the Bible uses the metaphor of sleep for death are not true.

**The awakening, wakening up at the resurrection:** The resurrection will be an awakening. Death is likened to sleep because it is a state of unconsciousness, which will be followed by an awakening. Christ is the first fruits, and the rest will be resurrected "*at his coming*" (1 Corinthians 15:23). Abraham and his people fell asleep, and will be asleep unto the resurrection, "*From the day that the fathers fell asleep*" (2 Peter 3:4). **The Christian hope is not on death, not on a soul being awake anywhere before the resurrection, but on the resurrection to life, on a person being resurrected from the dead at the second coming of Christ.**

ALBERT BARNES: "In the Scripture sleep is used to intimate that death will not be final: that there will be an awakening out of this sleep, or a resurrection. It is a beautiful and tender expression, removing all that is dreadful in death, and filling the mind with the idea of calm repose after a life of toil, with a reference to a future resurrection" Barnes' Notes On the New Testament.

What is the resurrection?

- Is it spirits who are now awake and living in Heaven or Hell returning to their earthly bodies?
- Or is it all persons that are asleep in the grave will wake up at the judgment?

It was Lazarus who was asleep. Not just his body while his soul was alive (John 11:11). Some of the saints had fallen asleep. Not just the body had fallen asleep, but

the "living being," the whole person (1 Corinthians 15:6). The Bible nowhere speaks of the body being asleep while some immaterial, invisible something that had been in a person is awake. It is the whole person that sleeps unto the resurrection, and the whole person that will wake up at the resurrection. If only the body were asleep with a spirit alive in another world, why would there never be a hint that the real person was not asleep in any of the passages that use sleep as a metaphor of death?

**Abraham, where are you?** Three views about where Abraham is:

1. **Bible view:** Abraham is asleep with the fathers.
2. **Catholic and Protestant view:** Abraham is awake in Heaven.
3. **A newer after judgment view:** Abraham is awake in Abraham's bosom, the good side of hades. This view has been widely taught in the church of Christ and the Christian Church.

Many who do not know whether they believe #2 or #3 will say some loved one had gone to be with Jesus in Heaven, but if they are trying to prove a soul is alive before the resurrection will use Luke 16. Abraham is moved back and forth from Heaven to Abraham's bosom as they need to, but most of them do not seem to know they are moving him.

**(8) THE REINTERPRETATION OF THE LIFE THAT CHRIST PROMISED TO THEM THAT OBEY HIM.** John 4:14; 4:36; 5:21; 6:40 See chapter two, Life or death: If all are born with an immortal soul that cannot die, all have eternal life, and Christ could only give them a reward, but not eternal life. Unconditional immortality gives both the sinners and the saved eternal life without the death of Christ.

**(9) THE REINTERPRETATION OF FIRE TO BE SOMETHING THAT CANNOT BURN UP.** See chapter eight, part two, symbolic pictures, the lake of fire:

**TWO VERY DIFFERENT GOSPELS: Unconditional immortality of a "soul," and the resurrection of the dead are two very different Gospels** (Galatians 1:6-9). There is a dividing line between unconditional immortality and conditional immortality so sharp that the two are completely different Gospels, as far apart as night and day. Both cannot be true. One is a "*delusion*" (2 Thessalonians 2:11, King James Version) "*A working of error*" (American Standard Version). Unconditional immortality is very different from anything preached in Paul's day (Galatians 1:6). It is the "*doctrines and precepts of men*" (Matthew 15:9), and is wresting the writings of Paul and the other scriptures (2 Peter 3:16). It takes away a need for the death of Christ, and the need of the resurrection.

**TWO INCOMPATIBLE BELIEFS:** Either one makes the other one impossible.

1. The resurrection: **Makes an immortal never dying soul impossible.** If a soul is not dead, that soul that is alive cannot be raised from the dead.
2. Unconditional immortality: **(1) Makes the resurrection an unanswerable problem.** If a soul is immortal and never dies, what will be the use of the resurrection? What will be raised from the dead? **(2) Makes a real resurrection impossible.**

These two Gospels, (1) the resurrection of the dead, (2) or an undying immortal soul, are so opposed and contradictory to each other that if one is true, it makes the other one a lie of Satan that will destroy you at the judgment; they are not compatible. If one is true, then the other one cannot be. Believing unconditional immortal is disbelieving God; believing this doctrine, or not believing it, can be the difference in whether you believe God or man. One came from man and is vain worship (Matthew 15:9). Christ taught the resurrection. It is our only hope of life after death, not the existence of an immortality and never dying soul. The undead cannot be raised.

**THE SILENCE OF THE BIBLE:** All the great doctrines of the Bible are clearly expressed. The doctrine of God, of Christ, the resurrection, the church, the judgment, sin, etc., and are all as clear and plain as our language can say them, but the doctrine of an "immortal soul," or "a never—dying soul," which is constantly expressed today, cannot be found in the Bible. From where did it come? If anyone believes, practices, or teaches anything in the name of Christ, they are obligated to prove it from the Bible. If they do not or cannot, it is a sin to believe, practice, or teach it. It is up to the person who affirms anything to prove it. Have those who believe in and teach Hell proved it to be from God's word? Hell **must** be proved if it is taught. At the judgment, what will you say to God if there is no Hell and you have taught many that God was the cruel and sadistic God of Hell, and He will torment most souls forever?

**How many times can a person make Christ a liar by believing and teaching the opposite of what He taught and attributing these lies to Him?** How often can we attribute the teaching of man to Christ before it becomes the "*precepts of man*" and "*vain worship?*" (Matthew 15:9). Will you say to God at the judgment that you loved your theology, a different gospel, more than His word?

**It adds to the book of Revelation:** Most all who believe in Hell misuse many symbolic passages in Revelation to prove it. John said, "*If any man shall add unto them, God shall add unto him the plagues which are written in this book*" (Revelation 22:18). Do some love this cruel and evil teaching enough to have these plagues added to them selves?

**"Heavier judgment"** James 3:1 and "**vain worship**" Matthew 15:9. When we teach things that slander God, and makes the resurrection of Christ not needed, etc., we teachers will answer to God at the judgment with a heavier judgment. As teacher we will be judged for not knowing and teachings the truth. We teach that following the teaching of man is vain worship and sinful for others, but it is as sinful for us when we do the same things. If we are not sure beyond any doubt that God's word teaches that God will eternal torment souls, but teach it anyway, and it is the commandments of men, it may be the difference in living or the second death for us. "*Whatsoever is not of faith is sin*" (Romans 14:23), and faith comes by hearing the

word of Christ (Romans 10:17); therefore, **if the doctrine of Hell is not taught in the Bible it is sin to believe or teach it.** Do we think this would not apply to us if we teach anything that we have any doubt about? At the judgment we will give an answer for both what we teach, and for what we do not teach. If we teach Hell or that when a person is born there is an immortal something in him or her that will not die when the person dies, and that God cannot destroy it, then we better make sure that what we teach is from the Bible; for we will answer to God in the very same way as anyone teaching "faith only," or any other doctrine of men. Do some condemn themselves by teaching it is a sin to change God's word, and then preaching what may be the biggest change ever made to it? There is no acceptable reason for a gospel preacher not to know and teach the truth. What will they say to God at the judgment?

It is taught by some that the promise of being immediately in Heaven with God has more comfort than the promise of being in Heaven after the resurrection.

- Comfort that is based on a lie ("*you shall not surely die*") is a vain useless comfort.
- To add to or change God's word is a sin.
- Only by teaching the truth can a preacher save those who he preaches to and save himself.

**Is a person born with an immortal soul in them, or do the saved put on immortality at the resurrection? THIS IS ONE OF THE MOST IMPORTANT QUESTIONS OF ALL TIMES.** It has more influence on our conception of our nature, our view of life in this world, and life after death, the nature of God, than any other question. **YOUR WHOLE THEOLOGY (all that you believe) IS DETERMINED BY WHAT YOU BELIEVE ABOUT SOUL.** Not only does having an immortal soul now being in a person make the resurrection impossible, it makes the judgment be passed, and the second coming of Christ pointless for **there could not be a resurrection or a judgment at His coming.**

Summary: the doctrine of unconditional immortality

- Changes the nature of God, makes Him cruel and sadistic.
- Changes the hope set forth in the New Testament that there will be a resurrection. It makes no one ever be dead to be resurrected from the dead. At funeral services we are told the departed are not dead, but souls that were in them are now in Heaven looking down on their loved ones, and any who point out that the Bible says the dead are not in Heaven before the resurrection are branded as being a part of a cult, often even by those who believe the dead are now in Abraham's bosom unto the Resurrection, and the dead are not now in Heaven.
- Changes the resurrection of Christ, which gives us a hope of being resurrected, by reducing the death and resurrection of Christ to His earthly human body only if His soul were immortal and could not have died; therefore, the resurrection of Christ must be the "first fruits" only of the resurrection of this earthly body. If we have an immortal "soul" that is now in us, then it could not die; therefore, could not be resurrected. Makes the immortal something that is in a person that cannot be dead or resurrected be the only thing that will be in Heaven.

- Changes the message we preach to the lost and their fate, whether a soul that is in the lost will have an eternal life with torment, or a second death for persons from which there will never be a resurrection.
- Changes from the wages of sin being death, to the wages of sin is eternal life with torment in Hell for a soul.
- Changes the nature of a person from mortal, to being a mortal being with an immortal being in the mortal being. Two opposite natures at the same time is not a possibility.
- Changes the nature of the resurrection of Christ, whether He was dead and raised by God, or only His earthly body was dead, and He just came back from Heaven to it.
- Changes the nature of the resurrection from whether the dead are resurrected, or just come back from somewhere. It makes a real resurrection impossible.
- It makes the second coming of Christ pointless.
- It makes the judgment be passed.
- Changes many words (die, death, perish, destroyed, lost, end, sleep) to mean the opposite of the way they were used by those living then, and the opposite of the way the world now uses them (see chapter two).
- **Changes eternal life to eternal reward, and changes eternal death (the wages of sin) to eternal life with torment.**

**Anything more different from the gospel than the immortal soul theology would be difficult to imagine.** It makes judgment a second time of those who were already judged and put in Hell at the moment of death be nothing but pure folly. If it is not a total different gospel there could not be one, for not just some part of it is different, but it is one hundred percent different, one hundred percent pagan.

The belief in an immortal deathless soul (Satin's lie "*thou shall not surely die*" is the foundation of:

- Much of philosophy beginning with the Egyptians, the Greeks, and today
- Reincarnation—transmigration of souls to other bodies after death
- Most Eastern religions
- The Catholic and the Protestant immortal soul at birth
- The doctrine of Hell
- Purgatory
- Limbo
- Nether World
- Worship of Mary and the reported sighting of her
- Intercession of and worship of saints
- Original Sin
  - a. Total Hereditary depravity
  - b. Infant baptism
    - "Baptismal regeneration," the removal of original sin in infants
- The belief that Abraham's bosom is a real place where all saved deathless immortal souls are now living unto the resurrection, but living in speaking and seeing distance of the lost deathless souls that are now in torment
- Spiritualism
- Communication with the spirits of the dead
- The "New Age" movement and channeling craze with spirits of the dead. If there is no life after death and before the resurrection, there could be no communication with the dead; these communications are the work of demons impersonating the dead.

- Near—death experiences or out—of—body experiences. Those who claim to have died and gone to Heaven or Hell are claiming to have been resurrected from the dead, that they have been in Heaven or Hell and then came back to earth. All near—death experiences are totally dependent on the belief of the person; Hindus, Muslims, and others claim to have near—death experiences, but their experiences are always what are taught by their beliefs; those who do not believe in Heaven or Hell have near—death experiences, but never believe they go to Heaven or to Hell.
- An evil, cruel, and sadistic God who made most of mankind just so he could torment them.

All of the above teachings are completely depend upon there being a soul in a person that is immortal and indestructible, which is of pagan origin; unconditional immortality is the major premise on which they all stand. Without the doctrine that there is something in a person is not subject to death none of the above could be true. **The pagan doctrine of a deathless unconditional immortality soul is the mother or foundation of more false doctrines than any other teaching, and is the greatest deception, and most harmful of all deceptions in the church.** Eternal torment of a soul cannot be unless Plato's immortal soul is true, Mary could not be seen or make intercession if she is asleep, there could be no communication with souls of the dead if the whole person were asleep. If unconditional immortality were true, then the resurrection as taught by Christ could not be true, for there could be no resurrection of those who are not dead. **As long as one believes this pagan doctrine, and reads it into the Bible, it makes it virtually impossible to understand the Bible correctly.** If one believes the pagan teaching of Socrates and Plato over Christ can they truly say they are a believer? *"They worship me in vain; their teachings are but rules taught by men"* (Matthew 15:9 New International Version).

**Unconditional immortality makes modern spiritualism possible.** The teaching, that a person is conscious after death makes it possible and even probable that spirits can and do return to earth and speak to us. This has prepared the way for spiritualism. Satan may be using this to send his angels with lies to lead those who go to spiritualists into his way and keep them from the truth of God. If the truth, that all mankind are asleep from death to the resurrection were believed, and not the pagan doctrine of an immortal soul, then spiritualism would not be possible. If Mary is asleep, then the appearances of her ghost are the manifestations of a demon that makes many believe a lie. Satan is using spiritualism to make many believe his lie, *"You shall not surely die."*

**Unconditional immortality makes some believe in "after death experiences," and makes them believable to many.** If a person now has a deathless soul in them, which does not die when the body dies, it makes it possible for some to believe a person can come back and tell things they saw on the other side of death. The truth, that a person is *"asleep"* from death unto the resurrection, and has no knowledge in the grave (Ecclesiastes 9:10) makes "after death experiences"

impossible and unbelievable. A person who is asleep unto the resurrection has no afterlife experiences to tell us. In the many after death experiences I have read, no two are the same.

Not to take anything away from the power of Satan in the world, or his danger to us (see 1 Peter 5:8, etc.), but by making him be an eternal being, and the eternal ruler over Hell, Satan is being given a power he does not have that may add to his being worshiped by many. Some seem to think that to exist in torment with Satan over them may be better than not to exist, and they worship the one who they think will be over them. But, if they knew the truth, that Satan's end will be the same as theirs, and he will have no more power over them, he may not have the appeal of a being to be worshiped. Satan has had many victories, but his lie that mankind now has something in them that is already immortal; therefore, **there is no real death, and the invention of Hell maybe his biggest victories. Many preach his lies!**

CHARLES WELCH says, "If a man would become satisfied of modern Spiritualism, he must first be satisfied that he is an immortal being. The visitations and manifestations of the spirit world are to convince you of the immortality of the soul. The first, the greatest, and the grandest truth coming through modern Spiritualist is the immortality of the soul. Here it will be seen that Orthodoxy has nothing to say against these doctrines of demons, but rather, in Pulpit, Press, and Song, this great lie is echoed and enforced, coloring as it does the whole evangel. We give in our next quotation a Resolution passed at an important Spiritualist Convention, which shows how important a place this doctrine holds in their Creed:—RESOLVED—That Spiritualist, according to the modern acceptance of the term, embraces all those who believe in the immortality of the soul...Beyond this common faith, there is no doctrine or creed necessarily incident to modern Spiritualism.' It must come as a great shock to many godly Christians, who constantly pray for the 'never dying souls' of men, to find themselves sharing a 'common faith' with the enemy of truth! Yet so it is. A spirit says of this doctrine, 'When once that is established, this one simple germ of knowledge will work out all the rest.' The first lie of Satan was, 'Ye shall not surely die.' This was the 'simple germ.' It will culminate in the fruition of the second lie, 'Ye shall be as God,' for 'Spiritualist and its doctrines are the precursors and forerunners of antichrist..." From "The Immortality of the Soul and the Doctrine of Demons" at: <http://www.truthaccordingtoscripture.com/documents/death/immortality—of—the—soul—doctrine—of—demons.php>

**THE SAVED PERSONS WILL HAVE A NEW BODY AFTER THE RESURRECTION AND JUDGMENT** 1 Corinthians 15:35-45. *"But someone will say, 'How are THE DEAD raised? And with what kind of BODY do they come?' You fool! That which you sow does not come to life unless it dies; and that which you sow, you so not sow the BODY which is to be, but a bare grain, perhaps of wheat or of something else. But God gives it a BODY just as He wished, and to each of the seeds a BODY of its own. All flesh is not the same flesh, but there is one flesh of men, and another flesh of beasts, and another flesh of birds, and another of fish. There are also heavenly BODIES and earthly BODIES, but the glory of the heavenly is one, and the glory of the earthly is another. There is one glory of the sun, and another glory of the moon, and another glory of the stars, for star differs from star in*

glory. So also is the resurrection of the dead. **It** (the body) **is sown a perishable BODY, it** (the body) **is raised an imperishable BODY;** it (the body) is sown in dishonor, it (the body buried) is raised in glory; it (the body) is sown in weakness, it (the body) is raised in power; **it** (the body) **is sown a natural BODY, it** (the body) **is raised a spiritual BODY. If there is a natural BODY, there is also a spiritual BODY.** So also it is written, ‘The first man, Adam, became a living soul.’ The last Adam became a life—giving spirit. Howbeit that is not first which is **spiritual**, but that which is **natural**; then that which is **spiritual**...and as we **have** borne the image of the earthly, we **shall** also bear the image of the heavenly...**We** all shall not sleep, but **we shall all be changed**, in a moment, in the twinkling of an eye, at the last trump: for the trumpet shall sound, and the dead shall be raised incorruptible, and **we shall be changed.** For **this corruptible must put on incorruption, and this mortal must put on immortality**” (1 Corinthians 15:35-54). It is this mortal person, the “*natural BODY*” that we now are that will be “*raised a spiritual BODY.*” The “*spiritual BODY*” does not now exist and will not exist unto the resurrection; the “*spiritual BODY*” is not an immaterial, bodiless something that is now in us. Just as when we plant a seed, that seed is not the tree that will be; the “*natural BODY*” that “*is sown*” is not the “*spiritual BODY*” we will have after the resurrection. If the “*spiritual BODY*” were an immaterial bodiless soul that we already have it would make all that Paul said above be total nonsense. **“However, the spiritual is not first, but the natural; then the spiritual”** (1 Corinthians 15:46). The “*natural BODY,*” and the “*spiritual BODY*” does not exist together, not both at the same time, yet we are told that the immortal soul exist from the day of birth of the “*natural body,*” and that it will exist in the person as long as the “*natural body*” lives, and are told that a soul continues to live after the death of the “*natural body*” that it was in.

**Could it be say any clearer that:**

- **The “*spiritual BODY*” is not a soul that is now in the natural body.**
- **Any clearer that the “*spiritual BODY*” is not a spirit that we now have.**
- **Any clearer that the “*spiritual BODY*” does not exist while the “*natural BODY*” is alive.**

**Before the resurrection no one has a “*spiritual body.*”**

**“ AND WITH WHAT KIND OF BODY?”** Just as a seed that is put in the ground does not have the body that will come out of the ground, the body that will be resurrected will not be the body we now have, it is the person that is put in the ground, and the person that will be raised.

If there were a soul that could never be dead:

- Souls that are not dead could not be put in the ground.
- Souls that are not dead could not be raised from the dead.

The “*natural body*” is the seed, a “*bare grain*” of the incorruptible “*spiritual body,*” that will be raised in glory and power, **The “*bare grain*” is not the seed of a soul,**

**or the seed of a spirit that we now already have in us;** it is difficult for us to understand how the body we now have, the “*natural body*” will be the same body but “*changed*” to a “*spiritual body*,” but God is able to do it; “*But some one will say, ‘How are the dead raised and with what manner of body do they come’...you sow not the **body** that shall be...God gives it a **body** even as it pleased Him*” (1 Corinthians 15:35-49). “*Who shall fashion anew the **BODY** of our humiliation, that it (the body of our humiliation—the body we now have) may be conformed to the **BODY** of his glory*” (Philippians 3:21). The body that goes into the grave will come forth, but just as the seed comes forth is in a different form, the body that comes forth from the grave will be changed from a “*natural BODY*” to a “*spiritual BODY*.” It is our changed body, not a soul, not a spirit that will be like “*the BODY of his glory*.” The question was, “**How are the DEAD RAISE,**” not how are souls that are not dead raised.

FRED P. THOMPSON: “If the body comes forth from the grave, restored/transformed, the verdict against death is sealed. (3) Body life is the only kind of life Paul can imagine...(4) It is the body of flesh which is the ‘perishable nature’ spoken of in v. 53. Because nothing perishable is appropriate for the land of eternity, the body must undergo that miraculous change into imperishability.” Page 167, *What The Bible Says About Heaven And Hell*, College Press 1983. Note: it is the body that undergoes the change, not a deathless soul that cannot be changed.

I know of no one that believe:

- A dead soul will be raised from the dead.
- Or that believes a soul will be given any “*kind of body*.”
- Or that a soul will ever have any kind of body.
- Or that a soul they believe in will ever be any more immortal than they believe a soul now is. They believe that a soul is now as immortal as it will ever be, not that it will “*put on immortality*” at sometime in the future.
- Or that a soul is now just a seed to what a soul will be after the resurrection, nothing is said about a soul being changed, or fashion anew.
- Or about a dead soul being resurrected to life.

**IT IS THE RESURRECTION THAT GIVES US HOPE OF LIFE AFTER DEATH, immortality will come at the resurrection. The resurrection is a restoring to life the person, but with a changed body.**

### **A comparison between the earthy body and the spiritual body.**

“*How are the dead raised: and with what manner of body do the come*” 1 Corinthians 15:35

You sow a bare grain	of the BODY that shall be 15:37
The BODY IS	The BODY IS
(1) Buried in corruption	(1) Raised in incorruption
(2) Buried in dishonor	(2) Raised in glory
(3) Buried in weakness	(3) Raised in power
(4) Buried a natural body	(4) Raised a spiritual body

“*As we have borne the image of the earthy, we shall also bear the image of the heavenly*” 1 Corinthians 15:49.

“*That what is mortal may be swallowed up by life*” 2 Corinthians 5:4.

“*Who shall fashion anew the body of our humiliation, that it may be conformed to the body of his glory*” Philippians 3:21.

(1) Is a soul buried in corruption and raised with incorruption?

Can you believe we now have an immortal soul that when we die this soul will be buried in corruption and raised in incorruption? **Or is this is speaking of the resurrection of the person, not a soul that is believed not to be subject to corruption and cannot be buried?**

(2) Is a soul buried in dishonor and raised in glory?

Can you believe we now have an immortal soul that when we die this soul will be buried in dishonor and resurrected from the dead in glory? **Or is this speaking of the burial and resurrection of the person, not some immaterial something that is now in a person?**

(3) Is a soul buried in weakness and raised in power?

Can you believe we now have an immortal soul that when we die this soul will be buried in weakness and raised from the grave in power? **Or is this speaking of the resurrection of the person, not something that is now in a person that many believe it not to be subject to corruption?**

(4) Is a soul buried a natural body and raised a spiritual body?

Can you believe we now have an immortal soul that is now a natural body that will die, be buried, and be resurrected a spiritual body? **Or is this speaking of the burial and the resurrection of the person, not something that is now in a person?**

None of the above says anything about a deathless soul or a deathless spirit that has no substance, that is now immortal and not subject to corruption, **all four are speaking of a PERSON that can die, can be sown (buried), and be resurrected; the PERSON that is now corruptible but will be resurrected incorruptible, the PERSON will have glory and power, the PERSON that now has a natural body, but the PERSON will have a spiritual body in the image of Christ.**

John 5:28 "All who are in the tombs shall hear His voice." Only persons are in the tombs. Those that believe there is a soul do not believe that a soul will ever be in a tomb, do not believe that a soul can be buried in a grave.

### **A CHANGE OF THE NATURE OF A PERSON FROM IMAGE OF ADAM TO IMAGE OF CHRIST. "God gives it a body even as it pleased him" 1 Corinthians 15:38.**

<b>EARTHLY BODY</b>	<b>RESURRECTED BODY OF THOSE IN CHRIST</b>
"As <b>WE</b> have borne the image Of the earthy 1 Cor. 15:49	<b>WE SHALL</b> also bear the image of the heavenly" 1 Cor. 15:49
"Flesh and blood cannot inherit kingdom of God"15:50	<b>WE SHALL</b> all be changed in a moment, in the twinkling of an eye, at last trump]
Buried a perishable body	- Raised an imperishable body 1 Cor. 15:42
Buried a natural body	- Raised a spiritual body 1 Cor. 15:44
Buried (sown) in dishonor	- Raised in glory 1 Corinthians 15:43
Buried (sown) in weakness	- Raised in power 1 Corinthians 15:43
The dead in Christ	- Raised incorruptible 1 Corinthians 15:52
Living saints	- Will be Changed in a moment 1 Cor. 15:52
"This corruptible - must put on Incorruption"	1 Corinthians 15:53
"This mortal - must put on Immortality"	1 Corinthians 15:53
Body of humiliation	"Conformed to the body of his glory" Phil 3:21
Earthly tent	"A house not made with hands" 2 Cor. 5:1-10
Earthly image of Adam	Heavenly image of Christ 1 Corinthians 15:49
Adam a living soul	Christ a life giving spirit 1 Corinthians 15:45
All now have the body of Adam	Saints to be like Christ 1 John 3:2

**"It is not yet made manifest what WE shall be. WE know that when He appears, WE shall be like Him, because WE shall see Him just as He is" (1 John 3:2). "Just**

as *He is*,” just as Christ is now, not as He was when He was in the flesh and blood image of Adam.

**THE PERSON IS BURIED AND RAISED:** A deathless soul cannot be dead, buried, or raised from the dead. **“How are the dead raised? And with what kind of body:”** According to 1 Corinthians 15 **we**, not a soul, will have a body. “Body” or “bodies” are mentioned eleven times (15:35; 15:37; 15:38, 2 times; 15:40, 2 times; 15:44, 4 times; 15:44). The first time in verse 35 asks the question what kind of body will **we** have in the resurrection. That the body that is put in the ground is not the body that will be resurrected is illustrated by giving an example of planting a seed; the body that comes forth is nothing like and is far greater than what was put into the ground, but it is a body, not a bodiless thin air nothing.

Faithful Christian live, die, and are BURIED with a body that is in the image of Adam, Christian (not a pagan Dark Age soul) will be raised with a body in the image of Christ. “As **WE** have born the image of the earthy, **WE** shall also bear the image of the heavenly” (1 Corinthians 15:49). The pagan soul that many believe in, they do not believe it has ever been in the image of Adam. Christ speaking to person, not to souls said, “I go to prepare for **YOU**, and if I go and prepare a place for **YOU**, I will come again, and will receive **YOU** unto myself; that where I am, there **YOU** may be also” (John 14:2-3). **We**, not souls, will have bodies in our glorified state in Heaven, but very different from the imperfect earthly bodies that we now have that are unfit for Heaven.

- “It is sown a perishable body, it is raised an imperishable body.”
- The body we now have is buried and it perishes, it is perishable.
- The body that is resurrected is imperishable, but it is a body, not just an immaterial, invisible, no substance nothing that existed before “it is raised an imperishable body” at the resurrection.
  - The “perishable” body that is in the image of Adam that is buried. “Corruption” King James Version. It is the person’s body that is perishable or corruptible that is put in the grave, not Plato’s bodiless soul.
  - The “imperishable” or “incorruptible” body that is resurrected is in the image of Christ. It is the person’s changed body that is resurrected imperishable in the image of Christ, not Plato’s bodiless soul.
- “It is sown in dishonor, it is raised in glory.” The decaying body that is put in the grave has no honor, in the resurrection the saints will be resurrected like Christ, “It has not appeared as yet what we shall be. We know that, when He appears, we shall be like Him, because we shall see Him just as He is” (1 John 3:2). “Who (Christ) will transform the **body** of our humble state into conformity with the **body** of His glory” (Philippians 3:21), not an immortal soul that will be in glory before it is raised, or not be transformed (changed), and not see Him and be like Him at the moment of our death; if it were at death, it would make these passages have no meaning.
- “It is sown in weakness, it is raised in power.” The earthly body that is put in the grave has no power, and it is a body, not a soul, that will be resurrected with power.

- *"It is sown a natural body, it is raised a spiritual body."* The *"natural body"* is the image of the earthy Adam, the first man, the *"spiritual body"* with which the saints will be resurrected with is the image of the second man from Heaven (1 Corinthians 15:42-49). There is (1) this earthly, natural body that now is and (2) the spiritual body after the resurrection, there is no kind of body between death when it is *"sown a natural body,"* and the resurrection when it is *"raised a spiritual body."* Nether are there two kinds of bodies before death; there is not a *"spiritual body"* before it is *"raised a spiritual body,"* at the second coming of Christ. *"Natural"* is translated from *psukikos*, which is derived from *psukee*; *psukee* is the natural body (life) we now have, not an immaterial, invisible, no substance something that has no body, and that no one knows what it really is, or what it is like.

**It is this corruptible mortal person that will put on incorruption and immortality, not a soul that already is both incorruptible and immortal.**

*"This corruptible - must put on Incorruption" 1 Corinthians 15:53*

*"This mortal - must put on Immortality" 1 Corinthians 15:53*

If we have a soul that is now immortal, how could this immortal soul it be changed to immortal?

1. *"This mortal"* is without doubt the earthly person that is now in the image of Adam; even those that believe we now have an immortal soul do not believe that a soul is now mortal, or that it is now in the image of Adam. It is the saved **person** that is now mortal that will put on immortality, a soul would already be immortal. This is speaking of the saved, these in Christ at the resurrection, nothing is said in this passage about the lost that will also be resurrected for judgment at the same time.

2. It is this mortal person that is to be changed to an immortal person, not a soul that is already immortal changed from immortal to immortal. It is the person that is now in the image of Adam that will be changed to the image of Christ.

- I know of no one that believes the immortal soul they believe in is now in the image of Adam, but this soul will *"be changed, in a moment, in the twinkling of an eye,"* or that an immortal soul they say is now immortal is now *"this mortal."*
- To change 1 Corinthians 15 from speaking about a person, and make it be speaking about a deathless immortal soul or about a deathless immortal spirit makes it pure nonsense.

It is the person that died that will be raised from the dead. If it were not the same person that that died that was raised, it would not be a resurrection of the dead. Anything that happens to a soul that is not dead would not be a resurrection of the dead. **The body will be changed, but it will be the same person.** According to the theology of today, the person is the only thing that dies; therefore, if the person is not raised from the dead there cannot be a resurrection of the dead. *"And just as **WE** have borne the image of the earthy, **WE** shall also bear the image of the heavenly"* (1 Corinthians 15:49). It has become commonly said that if there is no soul that is deathless, for God to make a new body and it have life it would be a new creation, not the same person that was put in the grave. I do not know how I can now have the image of Adam and be resurrected with the image of Christ, and it still be me, but God has said the saved will bear the image of the heavenly and I believe Him even if I do not know how He can do it. To say, as many do, that if the soul is not alive that

the resurrection would be a new creation and not the same person that died is to disbelieve God when He said He will raise the dead, that a real resurrection is not possible; it is to say God does not have the power to raise the dead if they are really dead.

- It is a person, not a soul that is in the image of Adam, it is a person that will be in the image of Christ, not a soul that will be in the image of Christ (1 Corinthians 15:49).

FRED P. THOMPSON: "Neither Paul nor any other main—stream Christian theologian has been content with the idea of immortality without resurrection. Some kind of body is essential to personality as we know it. Resurrected, we shall not be naked but appropriately clothed, **not phantoms or pure spirits but embodied persons.**" Page 168, What The Bible Says About Heaven And Hell, College Press, 1983.

WAYNE JACKSON in "Do Human Beings Have an Immortal Soul?" Christians Courier, says First Corinthians 15:53 speaks of the nature of the future **resurrected body**.

- Then it is the corruptible person that must put on (become) an incorruptible person (1 Corinthians 15:53).
- Then it is the mortal person that must become an immortal person (1 Corinthians 15:53).

**It is the person that is now in the image of Adam that will be in the image of Christ, not as taught by Plato, an immaterial soul that has no substance that was never in the image of Adam.** If the person is resurrected an incorruptible and immortal person, a spiritual being, and if there were an immortal spiritual being already in a person, then there would be two immortal spiritual being, (1) an immortal spiritual "soul," (2) and an immortal spiritual person. Will the two ever know each other anymore than the person can now know a soul that he or she is told is in them? I know nothing about an "immaterial, invisible" (Vine, page 588) being that is nothing but "*mental thoughts*" (Merrey, "Death And The Afterlife," page 79); it has not contacted me or in any way let me know it is in me; I know no more about "it" than a person that has never heard of the Bible and never heard about "it," but I am told that I must believe, repent, and be baptized to save "it" from Hell.

**A strange change:** When I first became a Christian in the fifties almost every sermon ended with an invention in which the sinners were told to repent and be baptized to save a soul that is in them from Hell. Today "soul" is almost never used in preaching and it has been years since I have heard anyone told to "save your soul" or God will forever torment "it" in Hell.

Body of humiliation	" <i>Conformed to the body of his glory</i> " Phil 3:21
Earthly tent	" <i>A house not made with hands</i> " 2 Cor. 5:1-10
Earthly image of Adam	Heavenly image of Christ 1 Corinthians 15:49
Adam a living soul	Christ a life giving spirit 1 Corinthians 15:45
All now have the body of Adam   Saints to be like Christ 1 John 3:2	

*"For since by man came death, by man came also the resurrection of the dead. For as in Adam all die, so also in Christ shall all be made alive. But each in his own order: Christ the first fruits, then they that are Christ's at his coming"* (1 Corinthians 15:21-23). When many read this passage they see both: (1) A soul that cannot die but it dies, (2) and soul that is dead but it is not dead, nevertheless that soul is made

alive by the resurrection. It is the mortal person that dies—the same mortal person that will be made alive by the resurrection, not a deathless soul make alive by the resurrection.

*"Behold, I tell you a mystery: **WE** all shall not sleep, but **WE** shall all be changed, in a moment, in the twinkling of an eye, at the last trump: for the trumpet shall sound, and **THE DEAD** shall be raised incorruptible, and **WE** shall be changed"* (1 Corinthians 15:51-52). (1) It is the person that is asleep, that is dead that will be incorruptible when the person is raised from the dead, (2) and the person that is alive when Christ comes that will be changed. "Changed" means something will be changed, it is the mortal person that will be changed to an immortal person, not an immortal soul, or an immortal spirit changed to an immortal soul or spirit. "And **WE** shall be changed," not "our souls or our spirits shall be changed." Why do those that say they do not change the Bible change the "WE" to "IT"? It is the transformation of the person that is in the image of Adam to the image of Christ, the survival of the person, not a soul. It is not a soul, whatever you believe a soul to be that will be raised from the dead; it will be **you** changed from mortal to immortal. It is **you** that will always live in Heaven with Christ, or **you** that will always be dead. That it is only a soul, not you, that will be in Heaven is the doctrine of man. The resurrection means the restoring of the person, not just something that is now in the person that will leave the person at death.

(1). *"**Flesh and blood cannot inherit the kingdom of God**"* (1 Corinthians 15:50).

(2). *"**WE** all shall not sleep, but **WE** shall all be changed, in a moment in the twinkling of an eye, at the last trump: for the trumpet shall sound"* (1 Corinthians 15:51-52). It is the transformation of the flesh and blood body to a spiritual body; no person could inherit the kingdom of God without the transformation from earthly bodies to heavenly bodies. Those that are asleep and those that will be living are both changed in the same moment at the sound of the trumpet; therefore, no one is changed at the moment of death.

(1). *"And **THE DEAD** shall be raised incorruptible"* (1 Corinthians 15:52).

(2). *"And **WE** shall be changed"* (1 Corinthians 15:52). Not a soul or spirit changed.

(3). *"For **this corruptible must put on incorruption**"* (1 Corinthians 15:53).

(4). *"And **this mortal must put on immortality**"* (1 Corinthians 15:53). This mortal person, not this mortal soul or spirit.

*"But some one will say, 'How are the dead raised and with what manner of body do they come'...you sow not the body that shall be...God gives it a body even as it pleased Him"* (1 Corinthians 15:35-49). (1). *"It is sown in corruption; it is raised in incorruption"* not "sown and raised in corruption, then changed to incorruption." (2). *"It is sown in dishonor; it is raised in glory"* not "sown and raised in dishonor then changed to honor." (3). *"It is sown a **natural body**; it is raised a **spiritual body**"* not "sown and raised a natural body then changed to spiritual body." It is a **spiritual**

**body** that will be raised, not an “immaterial invisible no substance” **soul or spirit** that is not dead and has no body.

**Nowhere is it said only a soul will be resurrected, or that only a soul will be in Heaven. The Bible always says it is the person that will be resurrected, and the mortal person that will put on immortality, it is the person that is now in the image of Adam and will be in the image of Christ.**

If all the saved are **alive** in Abraham's bosom, who are the **dead** that shall be **raised**? If the dead are neither mortal in the image of Adam, nor immortal in the image of Christ, then if they are now living, what kind of being are they, what image are they in? How can anyone deny that 1 Corinthians 15:53 is speaking of persons being changed from mortal bodies to immortality bodies, not of immortal souls being changed to immortal souls, that would be no change? It is persons that will be changed from mortal to immortal persons that will be in Heaven, not souls that we are told they are somehow now living in persons.

**New International Version:** *“For the perishable must clothe itself with the imperishable, and the mortal with immortality.”*

**New American Standard Bible:** *“For this perishable must put on the imperishable, and this mortal must put on immortality.”*

**American Standard Version:** *“For this corruptible must put on incorruption, and this mortal must put on immortality.”*

**English Standard Version:** *“For this perishable body must put on the imperishable, and this mortal body must put on immortality.”*

**New Living Translation:** *“For our dying bodies must be transformed into bodies that will never die; our mortal bodies must be transformed into immortal bodies.”*

**King James Version:** *“For this corruptible must put on incorruption, and this mortal must put on immortality.”*

**International Standard Version:** *“For what is decaying must be clothed with what cannot decay, and what is dying must be clothed with what cannot die.”*

**Darby Bible Translation:** *“For this corruptible must needs put on incorruptibility, and this mortal put on immortality.”*

**English Revised Version:** *“For this corruptible must put on incorruption, and this mortal must put on immortality.”*

**Weymouth New Testament:** *“For so it must be: this perishable nature must clothe itself with what is imperishable, and this mortality must clothe itself with immortality.”*

The body of a caterpillar is nothing like the body of the butterfly it changes into, but it is still the same insect; the body of a mortal person is nothing like the immortal body the person will change into, but it will still be the same person.

**The two "all's."** *“We all shall be changed.”* Both **all** those who are asleep in Christ, and **all** those who are alive at the second coming will **both** be changed. The immortal soul doctrine says, “None of us shall sleep for this would be soul sleeping.” It is the whole person that sleeps, not an immaterial soul.

- In 1 Corinthians 15:50-53 Paul said nothing about a soul or about a spirit that needs no resurrection or change; he is speaking of the resurrection of the dead in Christ changed to a spiritual body.

- "For in the resurrection they (persons, not souls)...are as the angels IN HEAVEN" (Matthew 22:30). Angels are not in the image of Adam and have never been in his image.
- "And as **we** have borne the image of the earthy (Adam), **we** shall also bear the image of the heavenly (Christ)" (1 Corinthians 15:49).
- "Beloved, **we** are now children of God, and it is **not yet made manifest what we shall be. We** know that, if he shall be manifested, **we shall be like him**; for **we** shall see him even as he is" (1 John 3:2).
- "In my Father's house are many mansions; if it were not so, I would have told **you**; for I go to prepare a place for **you**. And if I go and prepare a place for **you**, I come again, and will receive **you** unto myself that where I am, there **you** may be also" (John 14:2-3). Christ was speaking to people, not to spirits; He has not yet come to receive them.
- "The dead in Christ shall rise first; then **we** that are alive, that are left, shall together with them be caught up in the clouds, to meet the Lord in the air: **and so shall WE ever be with the Lord**" (1 Thessalonians 3:16-17).
- "For **our** citizenship is in heaven; whence also **we** wait for a Savior, the Lord Jesus Christ: who shall **FASHION ANEW the body of our humiliation, that it may BE CONFORMED to the body of his glory**" (Philippians 3:20-21 American Standard Version). "CHANGE" King James Version. "TRANSFORM" New American Standard Version.

**The body will be changed, fashion anew, transformed, not an immortal soul "changed."** "The body of our humiliation" is not an "immaterial, invisible, no substance" soul that will be remade ("fashion anew") into another "immaterial, invisible, no substance" soul, but it is us that will be changed from an earthly body to a body like the body Christ now has, changed from a body that is suitable for life on this earth to a body that will be suitable for life in Heaven. **It is our body that will be changed, not an immaterial something in us that is now just as it will be in Heaven, and it cannot ever be changed.** I do not know how I can be raised without this earthly body and still be me, but I believe God when He says that it will be me raised to life with a spiritual body. Those who believe a person now has an immortal immaterial soul now living in them believe this invisible something in them is already "conformed to the body of His glory," not the person that will be changed to the image of Christ at His coming. Just as we now have the right bodies for life on this earth, we will have the right bodies for life in Heaven. It is our bodies (us, not souls) that will be transformed to be like His heavenly body. **What body will be resurrected?** Many believe that without the resurrection of the earthly body it would not be us but a new creation. Are they saying God dose not have the power to resurrect us immortal without first resurrecting the earthly body?

- Some believe the dead in Christ will be, "**Raised with an earthly body and soon after the resurrection the earthly body will then be changed to a spiritual body.**"
- Others believe it will be, "**Raised an earthly body, and restored to be like the earthly body of Adam before he sinned.**"

Both are adding to and changing what the Bible says, "Raised a spiritual body" (1 Corinthians 15:44), not resurrected with an earthly body and then changed to a spiritual body.

**The image of Christ is not just a glorified earthly image of Adam.** The body made for this earth that is put in the ground will be raised a spiritual body suitable for life in Heaven. There is now no way we can know anything about what a "*spiritual body*" is like, but we shall know at the coming of Christ. It is not just a glorified natural earthly body, not a glorified image of Adam.

The immortal soul doctrine says not so.

- The innate immortality doctrine says, "While the person is living, the immortal soul is just as immortal as it will ever be; the immaterial invisible no substance soul that will be in Heaven is now existing; a soul will not be changed after the death of the body that a soul is now imprisoned in."
- The innate immortality doctrine says, "Souls will be alive in Heaven from the moment of death; these immortal souls that are now in a person can never be dead; therefore, they cannot be raised from the dead." Who is wrong, Paul or today's theology?

**Image of Adam versus image of Christ:** We are now a living soul in the image of Adam. We will be raised in the image of Christ (1 Corinthians 15:45-49). **The "*living soul*," is the physical body in the image of Adam that we now have** (Genesis 2:7; 1 Corinthians 15:44-45) **it is not the "*spiritual body*" that will be in the image of Christ** (1 Corinthians 15:44). We will be the same person we now are, but our bodies will be changed from the image of Adam to the image of Christ, from earthly bodies to spiritual bodies. All of us, our whole person, will be in Heaven; not just some thin air, immaterial, invisible something that has no body.

*"If there is a natural (psuchikos–soulish) body there is also a spiritual body"* (1 Corinthians 15:44-45). Paul is quoting Genesis 2:7, the first man, Adam became a living being (psuche), not had a pagan immaterial deathless soul put in him.

Terms Paul used of the natural (*psuchikos–soulish*) body.

- The natural soulish body is now "*a living being (psuche)*" (1 Corinthians 15:44).
- The natural soulish body is now a living being is "*of the earth, earthy*" (1 Corinthians 15:47).
- The natural soulish body is now a living being that is in the "*image of the earthy*" (Adam) (1 Corinthians 15:47), a living being that is "*flesh and blood*" (1 Corinthians 15:50).

When God made the earth He give fish bodies that are appropriate to live in water, and birds bodies that are appropriate to fly. He gives Adam a body that was appropriate for life on this earth, a body of flesh and blood. Where will we be after the Judgment Day, if in Heaven we will need to have a spiritual body suitable for life in Heaven? Flesh and blood cannot inherit the kingdom of God, but the earthly body in the image of Adam both before and after he sinned is flesh and blood. In the resurrection we will be like angels who are in Heaven (Matthew 22:30). Is there anyone who believes angels have earthly bodies of flesh and blood in the image of Adam? After the resurrection Christians will have spiritual bodies in the image of Christ, not earthly bodies in the image of Adam that **cannot inherit the Kingdom of God** (1 Corinthians 15:50).

**Where will the saved be after the resurrection, on earth, or in Heaven?**

(1). If, as some teach, the kingdom of Heaven is to be on this earth, "*Flesh and blood*" bodies that are in the image of Adam could not inherit it (1 Corinthians 15:50). "*That which is born of the flesh is flesh*" (John 3:6). "***It is sown a natural body (It is the body of "flesh and blood" that is put in the grave); it is raised a spiritual body***" (1 Corinthians 15:44); **this passage is not complicated, the body is put in the ground is a natural body, and the body that comes out of the ground will be a spiritual body.** The spiritual body is not just a glorified earthly body.

- The natural body is sown in the ground in corruption, dishonor, and weakness.
- The spiritual body is raised with incorruption, glory, and power.

(2). Or if, as others teach that the "soul," the "immaterial, invisible, no substance" something is to be reunited with the body of "*flesh and blood*" at the resurrection, neither the body nor the "soul" could inherit the kingdom of Heaven as long as the "soul" is reunited to the "*flesh and blood*" body.

**How could it be said any more clearly that this earthly body will not be raised, or that we do not now have the body we shall have after the resurrection?** (1) Or that it is not an inter immortal soul, which is now existing in us, which needs no change, which will never be dead, but will be raised from the dead anyway? (2) Nor any more clearly that we are now "mortal," but we will be raised "immortal"?

*"But now has Christ been raised from the **dead**, the first fruit of them that are asleep. For since by man came **death**, by man came also the resurrection of the **dead**. For in Adam all **die**, so also in Christ shall all be made **alive**. But each in his own order: Christ the first fruits, then they that are Christ's at his coming"* (1 Corinthians 15:20-23). The term "*dead*" or "*die*" means the same every time it is used in this passage. When Adam sinned he lost the right to the tree of life for himself and all that came after him; therefore, all die. It is the person that dies, and the person that will be made alive by Christ at the resurrection. Death is death, and cannot be made to mean alive.

If the dead are now living in some kind of paradise somewhere, why do they hope for a resurrection of the mortal earthly body, and what good would it be? "*In a moment, in the twinkling of an eye*" (1 Corinthians 15:52) what would be the reason for raising the natural body for such a short time? Will the deathless "soul" come back from Heaven to put the earthly body back on, only to put it off ("*Be changed*") in a moment all before the judgment? See 1 Corinthians 15:50; 1 Thessalonians 5:15-17; Philippians 3:21). Then it would have the earthly body resurrected only for the "*twinkling of an eye*" (1 Corinthians 15:52). If this deathless soul were living in Heaven or Hell, the resurrection of the body for only a moment is all there could be to the resurrection, why have it; no part of a person would be dead but his body; no part of a person could be raised from the dead but his body. The only part of a

person they believe will be in Heaven or Hell, the immaterial, invisible soul, would be as alive as it will ever be, and already be where they think it will always be.

ROBERT C. WELCH says we will not come forth with the same kind of body, which is planted. Florida College Lectures, page 238, 1975.

**What kind of body will we have for eternity?** When we are caught up to meet Christ in the air, will He bring us back to earth, and have His kingdom on earth where we will have an earthly body, or will we be caught up from earth to be with Him in Heaven and have a spiritual body? If you believe on earth, an earthly body is a must, if you believe in Heaven it cannot be an earthly body. **Where we will be for eternity will determine what kind of body we will have.**

**Not one kind of body living in another kind of body:** 1 Corinthians 15:42 is a simple and undeniable statement that says that we do not now have incorruption and immortality, and will not have them unto the resurrection (1 Corinthians 15:54). No one knows anything about what our spiritual body will be like, but it is not something we now have inside this body of flesh, just waiting to get out at death. Those that are in Christ will have a body, not be just a thin air nothing, or some kind of ghost; therefore, the resurrected body will have substance of some kind, but not any kind of earthly substance, not flesh (1 John 3:2). And not something that will fit within this body and not be seen. **Not one kind of body, made with one kind of substance, living inside another kind of body that has another kind of substance.** Likewise, Heaven is a place with substance (most certainly far greater than this earth), and not just a cloud in the sky. This world and universe are so complicated and large that there is much on this earth that man does not yet know, and he does not yet even know the size of this creation with it's many galaxies. My opinion is that the universe is small and insignificant in both size and splendor when compared to Heaven, and this body is an insignificant seed, an acorn compared to a large oak tree (1 Corinthians 15:35-39). Seeds are unlike the trees yet the same identity is in them; we cannot know what the characteristics of the spiritual body will be by looking at our physical body. If there were a Hell would the lost have the same great new and splendid spiritual body in Hell that the saved in Heaven will have?

We cannot see God's greatest work (Heaven and spiritual beings), or know anything about what they are like; therefore, this universe shows us only a small part of the power of God. We each do different things in a day, not all the same things, or all think the same thoughts. Today we do not do the same thing that we did the day before. While there will not be days as we know them, Heaven will not be an eternity with everyone doing and thinking the same thing, or all seeing the same thing with never any change. Heaven will not be just a glorified earth, but each person we will be the same individual as we now are, not just carbon copies of each other. Heaven will be great far beyond this earth or anything that can come into our minds now, but many act in such a way that shows going there is not the most important thing to

them, and taking others to it is even less important. What Heaven is like that we do not know would fill many books, what Heaven is really like, not the metaphors of streets of gold, but what we know about what it is really like would not take up one line in a book. The Bible is silent about what Heaven is like, just as it is silent on what a "*spiritual body*" is like. We know that Heaven is where God is, and where Christ was before He came to earth, and is where He is now at the right hand of God. We know that Heaven is where the angels are, but nothing about what it is like, and not really anything about what angels are really like. We know that Heaven is where Christ has gone to prepare a place for us, but nothing about what Heaven or the place He has prepared will be like when we get there.

**No substance then no place. No substance then no body.** This earth and the earthly body have substance; without substance there would be no earth and no body. A spiritual body has substance; without substance there would be no spiritual body. Heaven is a place, a place must have some kind of substance, or there would be no place. If Heaven is not a real place with substance it could have no beauty; the symbolism showing it's perfection and beauty would have no meaning. Christ could not have gone to a place to prepare a place for us in a place that does not exist.

Many believe Revelation 21 is a vision of the church before the second coming, a vision of the perfect bride of Christ on earth, or if, as many others believe it is a vision of Heaven. If it is a vision of Heaven, it is a vision of the utterly magnificent and perfection of Heaven, but nothing about what is really there, or nothing about what Heaven will really look like.

We are told some things that will not be in Heaven.

- No tears, no death, no mourning, or crying, or pain (Revelation 21:4)
- No curse (Revelation 22:3)
- No night (Revelation 22:5)

In Revelation 21 and 22 we are given a vision of a city (an earthly city as we know), but it is a city of perfection and beauty far beyond any city on earth. It is symbolism of perfection to tell us of Heaven's perfection and magnificent, but we are not to think that Heaven will literally have streets of pure gold that are transparent as glass, or walls of precious stones. Heaven will be composed of spiritual substance for more spectacular than any earthly substance, even more spectacular than gold.

B. REEVES: "I do not know what all we will be doing in heaven, but I do know we will not be dormant and inactive" Guardian of Truth, page 8, 1996.

We now have a "*natural body*," and after the resurrection the saved will have a "*spiritual body*." Do evil spirits have a body? If God, angels and evil spirits have no substance of any kind, if they are nothing but thoughts with no body, there cannot be a "***spiritual body***" (1 Corinthians 15:44). If there were a being in us, it would now be like the angels, but Christ said **we, not "it,"** will be "*as angels*" in the resurrection, **but we are not now "as angels"** (Matthew 22:30). Though we can now know only of material substances of this earth does not mean there is no spiritual substances. If

there were not, there could be no Heaven and no spiritual body; just as this earth is a real place made up of real substance, Heaven is a real place, and spiritual being are real being. We are not now a spirit as the angels and demons are, and will not be unto the resurrection.

Can you imagine such a thing as people standing before God clothed with white robes and praising God, but they have no body? It is inconceivable. A thin air nothing cannot wear a robe; if Robert Peterson were right, there could not be white robes for there will be nothing but thoughts. If this earthly body "*the body of our humiliation*" that shall be fashioned anew "*that it may be conformed to the body of his glory*" shall be a thin air ghost with no body, then it would make Christ also be a thin air nothing. How can nothing have "*glory*"? How can thin air nothing be like anything "*conformed*" ("*fashioned*" King James Version)? There would be nothing to "*conform*" to anything. "*What we will be has not yet been revealed, what we do know is this: when He is revealed, we will be like Him, for we will see Him as He is*" (1 John 3:2, New Revised Standard Version). I do not know how God made this world out of nothing, but He said in His word that He did and I believe Him. I do not know how God can raise me with a spiritual body without this earthly body and it shall still be me, but His word says He will, and I believe Him.

Summary: The resurrection will be from the **dead**, not from life. **It shows we are now mortal, and we will die, and we will be dead, that we are not immortal before the resurrection.** The resurrection will be a bringing back to life those who are **dead**.

**"But each in his own order"** 1 Corinthians 15:23-38: (1) "*Christ the first-fruits*" (2) "*Then they that are Christ's at His coming.*" Those that believe a soul is the only thing that will live after death must change the order of being raised from the dead.

- Changes the dead in the Old Testament to have been raised **at their death**, before Christ and without His resurrection.
  - Therefore, Christ was not the first—fruits
- Changes "*Then they that are Christ's at His coming,*" to souls **at death souls go to Heaven before the coming of Christ**, and Paul is made to be wrong both times. (1) Wrong when he said Christ was the first fruits, (2) and wrong when he said, "*They that are Christ's at His coming.*" **Do you believe man or God?**

Guardian of Truth, page 254, 1994 said in 1 Thessalonians 4:13-18 Paul deals with one-half of the resurrection; he is speaking only of those in Christ, and Paul says nothing about those not in Christ. This is also true of most of 1 Corinthians 15 "*They that are Christ's at His coming*" 15:23. The lost will not be "*raised in glory*" 15:43, in "*power*" 15:43, or in "*the image of the heavenly*" (Christ) 15:49. **Can you find one thing said about the body of the lost after the judgment? What will it be like?**

- Will the body of the lost be in the image of Christ if there were a Hell?
- Will the body of the lost still be in the image of Adam if they were in Hell?

- Will God give the lost a spiritual immortal body only so He can torment them forever?
- The doctrine of eternal torment makes the Bible need to be rewrote.
- "*Wages is sin is death*" (Romans 6:23) must be rewritten to be, "Wages of sin is an eternal life of torment."
  - "*You shall surely die*" (Genesis 2:16-17) must be rewritten to be, "You shall surely suffer eternal torment in Hell."
  - "*Through one man sin entered into the world, and death through sin*" (Romans 5:12) must be rewritten to be, "Through one man sin entered into the world, and eternal Hell through sin."
  - "*For God so loved the world, that whosoever believes on him should not perish*" (John 3:16) must be rewrote to be, "For God so loved the world, that whosoever believes on him should not go to Hell."

<b>THE BIBLE TEACHES -----</b>	<b>BUT MAN TEACHES</b>
We put on immortality at the Judgment 1 Corinthians 15:53	We are immortal from birth (also we "seek" it Romans 2:7)
Wages of sin is death Rom 6:23	Human soul can never die
The end of the lost is to be burned Hebrews 6:8	Lost will be burned, but will have no "end"
The word the or idea of Hell is not in Bible	Hell is taught as though it is on most every page of the Bible
"Raise up even from the dead" Hebrews 11:19	Living souls to be brought back from somewhere, not raised from death
The evil shall perish be destroyed	The evil can never perish, or be destroyed, or die
Death to be abolished 1 Corinthians 15:26 and 15:55	Death is "separated from God" and can never be abolished
Lost will be devoured Heb 10:2 Consumed Hebrews 12:29	The lost can never be devoured or consumed, they must burn forever
God can destroy soul in Gehenna Matthew 10:28	God can torment a soul, but He cannot destroy it
Christ died (give His life) for our sins	His soul did not die: only His human body was dead
Christ came to give us life John 10:10; 10:28	All humans are eternal from birth (have life and immortality) therefore already have "eternal life"
"Eternal life" John 17:2	
God is everywhere	God is not everywhere (if death is separation from God)
God is just and loving	This teaching makes God unjust, sadistic, cruel, evil
First the natural (now) <b>Then that which is spiritual</b> (after the resurrection)	We were born with a natural body with a spiritual body inside the natural body
A day of wrath and judgment (same day) Romans 2:5ff	A Day of Judgment but an eternity of wrath
Nothing about God tormenting anyone or wrath of God on the lost after Judgment Day	Both are taught as if they were gospel facts
The resurrection is unto life John 5:29 And is "from the dead" Romans 1:4; Acts 23:6	The dead are now living in Heaven or Hell - have life and rewarded or punished without the resurrection
Christ said "I give unto them eternal life" John 10:18	He gives eternal (immortal) life to all at birth
Earthly body is but a bare seed of spiritual body which we will have after Judgment Day 1 Corinthians 15:35-49	We now have the full-grown spiritual body, a soul, before death and the judgment not just a seed of it
Judgment and punishment are at the second coming of Christ	We are judged good or bad at death and punished/rewarded at that time
"They are worthy of death" Romans 1:32	But they cannot die and God cannot kill them
"For there is no work, nor device nor knowledge, nor wisdom, in Sheol, whither you go" Ecclesiastes 19:10	"For there is work, and device, and knowledge, and wisdom, in Sheol whither you go"
"Soul that sins, it	A soul is immortal,

*shall die*" Ezekiel 23:4\* | therefore, it cannot die \*This is a person bring put to death under the law, but many almost always apply it to a soul dying at the judgment, even while they are teaching that there is a deathless soul that cannot die. See Hebrews 10:28.

GOD ----- VERSUS --- THEOLOGY	
God said "destruction"	God meant "torment"
God said "death"	God meant "separation"
God did not say man has an immortal soul from birth	Plato and theology says and teaches it for him
Nothing is said about wrath after the Judgment Day	Some know and teach it will last for eternity in hell

**NOT FLESH OR SPIRIT! - WHAT IS THIS THIRD KIND OF BODY BEFORE THE RESURRECTION?  
NOT EARTH OR HEAVEN! - WHERE IS THIS THIRD KIND OF PLACE WHERE THOSE WHO ARE NOT ASLEEP ARE NOW IN?**

BEFORE DEATH	AFTER DEATH	AFTER SECOND COMING
Natural Body	What Body?	Spiritual Body 1 Cor. 15:44ff
Image of Earthly	Who's Image?	Image of Heavenly 1 Cor. 15:49
Corruption	Neither one	Incorruption 1 Cor. 15:42-43
Dishonor	Neither one	Glory 1 Corinthians 15:43
Weakness	Neither one	Power 1 Corinthians 15:43
Mortal	Neither one	Immortality 1 Corinthians 15:54
By man (Adam)	(Asleep in Christ)	By man (Christ)
Death	1 Corinthians 15:21	Resurrection of Dead
Die in Adam	Alive Before Being	In Christ MADE ALIVE
1 Cor. 15:22	"Made Alive"	at His Coming
"Unto Death"	? ? ? ? ? ? ? ?	"Crown of Life" Revelation 2:10
"Once to Die"	The Silence of God	"After This Comes
	But We Speak	Judgment" Hebrews 9:27
"This world"	The Thunderous	"That which is to come"
Ephesians 1:2	Silence of God	

**Unconditional immortality makes 1 Corinthians 15 impossible** by teaching that we are now immortal and now have incorruption from birth. We cannot put on that which we now have on. If we now have an immortal *"immaterial, invisible part of man,"* (W. E. Vine) which cannot die, then Paul's argument in 1 Corinthians 15 to prove there is a resurrection is destroyed. If the Corinthians that had died had a soul in them that could not die, that soul had not perished, and could not perish; if it was alive in Heaven it could not be resurrected from the dead, there will be no resurrection and 1 Corinthians 15 is nothing but pure footlessness.

**Unconditional immortality makes Paul's "changed" impossible** 1 Corinthians 15:51. If there is now an immortal incorruptible soul in a person, then that immortal soul could not be **"changed"** from mortal to immortal, it could not *"put on immortality"* at the resurrection. It is "us" not just something that is in "us" that will come forth from the grave *"changed."* We do not have immortality before the resurrection. The doctrine of immortality from birth makes a soul now have incorruption. Paul says, *"This mortal must put on immortality"* 1 Corinthians 15:53. **"This mortal" is what will put on immortality, not a soul that is already immortal;** it is "us" that will be *"changed"* at our resurrection.

**Unconditional immortality makes tree of life not needed** Genesis 3:22-24: If a person now has an immortal "soul" in them, this soul could not die; it will live forever somewhere, on earth or wherever. A soul leaving the person it is in and moving from earth too wherever; and having more joy, more power, more blessing, etc., when it

gets there than it had while it was in our body would not be a death. Without the tree of life, this soul will always live for it would already be immortal and cannot die.

**Unconditional immortality makes the Bible contradict the Bible.** A soul that cannot die **versus** death, perish, destroy, lost, end. If the wages of sin is death, there cannot be an eternal life of torment. By misusing some scriptures, those who teach there is a soul in a person that can never die makes the Bible contradict itself.

**It maybe a delusion to some** 2 Thessalonians 2:9-12. *"And with all the deception of wickedness for those who perish, because they did not receive the love of the truth so as to be saved. And for this reason God will send upon them a deluding influence so that they might believe what is false, in order that they all may be judged who did not believe the truth."* The delusion can be any doctrine of man that is not the truth. **How big a lie and how many lies can you believe and still say you believe Christ?** Where do you draw the line on how much error you can believe? Some believe there is no line, and God will accept anything as worship. Some believe God will accept worship only if it is by faith, which comes from hearing His word (Romans 10:17; 14:23).

- Most do not believe Pagan worship is acceptable to God.
- Many do not believe worshipping the Pope, or a saint is acceptable to God.
- Many do not believe infant baptism and sprinkling are acceptable to God.
- Many do not believe having many wives is acceptable to God.
- Many do not believe the error that there is an immortal soul that is in a person at birth, which is the foundation of many other errors and it is used to make the doctrine of Hell to be acceptable to God. The doctrine of Hell is based entirely on the doctrine of there being an immortal soul that is now deathless.

Worshiping after the doctrines and precepts of men is not acceptable to God (Matthew 15:9). Not in the time of Christ and not today. If something is not clearly taught in the Bible, you cannot say that something is of faith that comes by hearing (Romans 10:17; 2 Corinthians 5:7). The truth shall make you free (John 8:32). Can anyone who believes any of Satan's lies over God's word be made free by the truth? **What you believe and teach can be a delusion, and can be the difference in whether you live or die at the judgment if you make God more sadistic and evil than Satan.**

Summary: **Unconditional immortality reduces God and all spirit beings to being nothing but "mind," to being nothing but mental thoughts with no body, no substance, just thin air nothing.** Although most who believed unconditional immortality does not realize it makes God, angels, and mankind after the judgment to be nothing more than mental thoughts, but some have realized what it does to God and men. Robert Morey in "Death and The Afterlife," on page 79 says from the meaning of rephaim, when the body dies, a person enters a new kind of existence and exists as a spirit as angels and other spirits, they are nothing but thoughts. If that were true then both men and angels would be only energy beings, and they would

be composed only of mind or mental energy, and be capable of supradimensional activity as thought and speech without any kind of body. Although he did not mention God, he has reduced God to being nothing more than thoughts, an "energy being." According to him both God and a soul he believes to now be in a person has no substance of any kind, they are only a bodiless mental energy being.

RON HALBROOK said God is an immortal spirit, without a body, page 117, Florida College Annual Lectures, 1986.

W. E. Vine says, "*Immaterial, invisible part of man,*" Vine's Complete Expository Dictionary Of Old And New Testament Words, page 593.

According to them Heaven can exist only in the mind of God; it cannot be a real place if spirits are nothing more than thoughts with no substance; could a soul or a spirit be any more real than a dream is, for a soul would have no more actual existence, and no more substance than a dream. Not only is this doctrine the same as the Pagan doctrine from which it came (we have an immaterial soul in us that has no body or substance), but also it makes God be the same and be nothing but thoughts. Most who believe there is a soul in a person that is now immortal have not come to the realization of where this belief takes them. The concept of a real resurrection and a deathless soul that is only thoughts is completely incompatible, just as incompatible as the resurrection of a "soul" that is now as alive as it will ever be; therefore, it would be as alive before it's resurrection as it will be after it's resurrection. "*And will raise up US through his power*" (1 Corinthians 6:14), not "it."

If you remain a conscious being after your body dies, have you really died? **Anything that is not taught in the Bible is not a Bible doctrine. Faith comes by hearing God's word. Can anyone who believes something not taught in the Bible truly say he or she has faith?**

## CHAPTER FOUR

**From where came Hell, from man or God? How did a real earthly valley near Jerusalem, which existed in the time of Christ and is still today called by the name "Gehenna" become a place of eternal torment named "Hell," which is a place that is not on this earth?** The word Hell in the King James Version is translated from four different words, three in the Greek New Testament (Gehenna, hades and Tartarus), and one in the Hebrew Old Testament (sheol). Both sheol in the Old Testament, and hades in the New Testament mean grave; Sheol is translated both (1) grave (2) and Hell in the King James Version, and Tartarus is translated Hell one time. Most other translations (American Standard Version, New American Standard Version, Revised Standard Version, New Revised Standard Version, New International Version, and others) translate only one word (Gehenna) into Hell, and only in the New Testament, not four different words that have completely different meanings. The word Hell is not in the Old Testament in any of

the above translations, or is not in most other translations. Although this valley is mentioned thirteen times (Joshua 15:8 two times, Joshua 18:16 two times; 2 Kings 23:10; 2 Chronicles 28:3; 2 Chronicles 33:6; Nehemiah 11:30; Jeremiah 7:31; 7:32; 19:2; 19:6; 32:35;) in the Old Testament always called the valley of Hinnom, always a proper noun, the name of a particular place, the name of a well-known valley and was never changed to another proper noun, even the King James Version did not change it to "Hell," another proper noun as they did in the New Testament.

Tophet, the name of a smaller place that is in another bigger place, a smaller place that is in Gehenna, "*which is in the valley of the son of Hinnom,*" (2 Kings 23:10). Tophet is not in Hell. It is named 9 times; 2 Kings 23:10; Isaiah 30:33; Jeremiah 7:31; 7:32; 19:6; 19:11; 19:12; 19:13; 19:14 and it is always a proper noun, the name of a place that is on this earth, a place that is in the valley of Gehenna.

Gehenna was a well-known valley south of Jerusalem long before it was made into a trash dump, and the valley exists and still has the name "*Gehenna*" to this day. Josiah might have made this valley into a rubbish dump (2 Kings 23:10; 2 Chronicles 28:1-4). In the time of Christ this valley was the city dump. Most newer translations, and most all Bible students now admit sheol, hades, and Tartarus do not mean Hell, but some still believe Gehenna, a proper noun should be changed to Hell, another proper noun, the name of another place; this makes a detailed look at this valley as it is used in both the Old and New Testament be necessary.

**HOW DID ONE PLACE BECOME ANOTHER PLACE? Gehenna is the name of a valley south of Jerusalem; it is a real location on this earth in both the Old Testament and the New Testament, and it is still a real location today, and many tourists now take "tours of Hell" into it.** The valley of Gehenna was used in the time of Christ as the city dump of Jerusalem. In the fifties I did some work at the dump of a city about the size of Jerusalem in the time of Christ. The refuse would be put in large piles and set on fire, and all day rains could not put it out. There would have been no way for the people of Jerusalem to quench it (put out) before it burnt up all there was to burn. Back in the fifties and before, cities did not have landfills, but had garbage dumps where they would put the garbage in piles or in pits, and burn the garbage. Big city garbage dumps were always burning night and day, and the smoke could sometimes be seen for miles. The remains of animals were put in it, and they would be full of worms (Greek, Maggots-Young, page 1074) before the fire got to them. They were the same as Gehenna was in the time of Jesus, and were literally used for the destruction of the unwanted city garbage. Brimstone (sulfur) was added to Gehenna to keep the garbage burning; it was always burning night and day, and those near by could see the smoke always rising. Those He was speaking to may have been able to see the smoke of Gehenna in the background while Jesus was speaking. The people of Jerusalem did not have a trash pickup as we do, and had to take their own trash to Gehenna; therefore, many of those Christ was

speaking to would be very familiar with the never-ending fires and worms that were in Gehenna; they would see Gehenna as a place where they destroyed their trash and the bodies of dead criminals only after the criminals had been put to death, only after they were dead, but never would have understood Gehenna as a place of torment, it was a place of complete destruction, annihilation by fire of anything they cast into it. They used Gehenna as an incinerator or furnace for the purpose of destroying useless things. **How did the name of a valley that is near Jerusalem that exists to this day, and it's name is still called Gehenna today become "Hell" in the Bible. "HELL" IS A NAME THAT WAS UNKNOWN IN THE TIME OF CHRIST AND UNKNOWN TO ANYONE UNTO LONG AFTER THE NEW TESTAMENT WAS WRITTEN. In the time of Christ Gehenna was a place of destruction with no torment, how did the name that Christ used, "Gehenna" get changed into an English word "Hell" that means an eternal place of torment, changed from Gehenna, a place that is on this earth to Hell, a place that is not on this earth, changed from a place of destruction to a place where there is no destruction as there was in Gehenna?** The answer is simple; the translators were willing to change the Bible to put their pagan doctrine into the Bible.

**GEHENNA:** A place of destruction with no torment, a place that is on this earth.

**HELL:** A place of torment with no destruction, a place that is not on this earth.

ALEXANDER CAMPBELL: "In the time of our Savior, it (Gehenna) was the place to which all the filth, and the dead bodies of animals and criminals from the city of Jerusalem, were conveyed. Here worms were ever reveling on the carcasses of the dead, and fires were ever kept burning to consume the noxious matter and to purge the air from its pestilential stench" "Five Discourses On Hell," 1848.

MOSES STUART: "After these sacrifices had ceased, the place was desecrated, and made one of loathing and horror. The pious king Josiah caused it to be polluted, 2 Kings xxii. 10; i.e., he caused to carry there the filth of the city of Jerusalem. It would seem that the custom of desecrating this place, thus happily begun, was continued in after-ages down to the period when our Savior was on earth. Perpetual fires were kept up, in order to consume the offal, which was deposited there. And as the same offal would breed worms (for so all putrefying meat of course does), **hence came the expression, "Where the worm dies not, and the fire is not quenched."** "Exegetical Essays On Several Words Relating To Future Punishment," pages 192-193, Presbyterian Publication Committee, Public Domain.

JACOB BLAIN: "For Dr. George Campbell says, 'Our Lord, we find from the evangelists, spoke to his countrymen in the dialect of their own Scriptures, and used those names to which the reading of the Law, and the prophets had familiarized them.' Not observing this fact has been the great cause of the woeful mistake about future punishment. I affirm, then, that *Hinnom*, (*Gehenna*) is never used in the O. T. to mean a place of infernal punishment, or world of woe." Page 49, "Death Not Life: Or, The Theological Hell and Endless Misery Disproved," public domain.

ALBERT BARNES: "Gehenna became extremely offensive; the sight was terrific; the air was pollute and pestilential; it was necessary to keep fires burning continually there. The extreme loathsomeness of the place, and filth and putrefaction, the corruption of the atmosphere, and the

lurid fires blazing by day and by night, made it one of the most appalling and terrific objects with which a Jew was ever acquainted," Commentary on Matthew 5:22.

In the time of Jesus Gehenna was used as a place of destruction, but there was no torment in it; **those who heard Jesus would understand the use of Gehenna as a place of complete destruction, but would not have been able to look at Gehenna, their city dump and understand how it could be used as a place of endless torment by God, for there was no torment in their city dump, and nothing alive was thrown into it after the valley was made into a dump; after it became a dump living persons were not tormented in the fire of Gehenna in the Old Testament or the New Testament.** When most who use the King James Version read Hell they never understand that Christ was speaking of the city dump, for they cannot from the King James Version for the translators have completely hid this from their readers. It was mistranslated to make the readers understand Christ to be speaking of a place that is not on this earth where God will be forever tormenting immortal souls even after the earth is destroyed when Gehenna will have been destroyed with the earth.

**A proper noun is the name of "a particular person, place, or thing." Gehenna is a proper noun, the name of a well-known particular place near Jerusalem, a place where many tourists now visit. To change Gehenna into Hell, another proper noun, the name of a completely different particular place, is more than a bad translation; it is a deliberate changing. Bethlehem, Dead Sea, Gehenna, Rome, and Jericho are all proper nouns and should not be changed into another name. Proper nouns (names) are the same in most languages; therefore, they are not translated, but Gehenna was changed, not translated, into Hell, into another proper noun, the name of another particular place just because the King James translators needed to. Hell is not a translation of Gehenna in the same way that New York is not a translation of Jerusalem. GEHENNA AND HELL ARE TWO DIFFERENT PROPER NAMES OF TWO COMPLETELY DIFFERENT PLACES. From where did the King James translators get this name, and why did they want to deliberately mislead all who read their translation? Changing Gehenna into Hell is not a translation; it is a complete change, an unjustifiable change; NO ONE CAN DENY THAT JESUS USED "GEHENNA" AND THE TRANSLATORS DELIBERATELY CHANGE "GEHENNA," TO "HELL;" CHANGED THE NAME THAT JESUS USED CHANGED TO "HELL," the name of one place on earth changed to the name of another place that is not on earth. GEHENNA IS NOT HELL, GEHENNA IS GEHENNA; no one can deny that Jesus NEVER used the name "Hell," or used any Greek word that has the meaning that the English word Hell has today. The name of this valley is used in the New Testament only when speaking to the Jews for it was not a locality or a name that would not be known to most Gentiles that did not**

live near Jerusalem. Gehenna was a local particular place; Gehenna would be a name known and used only to those who lived in or near Jerusalem. The names of the city dumps of most cities are not well known to any but to some who live near the dump, and those not from that city would not know or use it. Christ and James spoke of Gehenna only to Jews; it was never used when speaking to Gentiles. Paul did not say anything about Gehenna in any of his letters to those not at Jerusalem; if Gehenna were Hell, a place of eternal torment for souls as many teach it to be, the silence of Paul and the other New Testament writers would be unexplainable. Paul speaks of (1) death, Romans 6:23; (2) perishing, 1 Corinthians 1:18; (3) destruction, Romans 9:22; "those who are destroyed, Hebrews 10:39, but never of Hell.

Mistranslating Gehenna into Hell is a deliberate mistranslation. There is no other literal place that the translators changed into another literal place as they did when they changed Gehenna (a literal real place) into Hell (another completely different literal place).

Changing Gehenna into Hell,

- Is the same as mistranslating New York into Jerusalem would be.
- And the same as mistranslating Jericho into Florida would be.

The name of this valley that is on this earth was not changed into Hell that is not on this earth in the Septuagint, a translation of the Old Testament from Hebrew to Greek that was used in the time of Christ; in it Gehenna was left untranslated the same as all other names. "Hell" is not a translation but a deliberate changing of one place for another completely different place. I believe it was deliberately changed to put "Hell" in the Bible. A place has been made up that is not in the Bible; and a name given to it that is not in the Bible; if this is not adding to the Bible then what would it take to add to the Bible? **That Christ used the name of a valley, which was the city dump, is completely hid from the reader of the King James Version, whether intentional or not; and the readers are led to believe He spoke of a different place that men have named "Hell" long after the new Testament was written.** The teachings of Christ have been deliberately changed. Gehenna is a real well known location on this earth, not somewhere under the earth or out in space, in the time of Christ Gehenna was a real place where real fires were constantly kept burning since it served as an incinerator for the useless refuse of the city. Gehenna cannot be changed into Hell, no one has the right to change what Christ said, to do so is not translating but deliberately changing one place to another place, deliberately deceiving his or her readers. To say Gehenna, as used by Christ, is Hell, is to say it has no reference to the Gehenna (the city dump) near Jerusalem.

**Fire destroys anything cast into it, maggots destroys only what is already dead, they do not eat or torment the living. In the time of Christ there was no torment, and no idol worshipped in Gehenna (the city dump).** Christ was not alluding to idol worship or torment, but to the destruction of those who rejected him.

Worms (maggots) do not eat living being, but dead ones, not to torment them, but to consume (eat up for food), neither do maggots eat “souls.” As long as there was something to burn or eat, the maggots would never die out, and the fire would not go out, but be consuming, not tormenting what was being cast in. In the time of Christ the valley of Gehenna was a place used to dispose of useless things, not to torment them. Many misuse this to show that living being will be tormented forever, and make God be doing the tormenting. **Living victims were not preserved alive and tormented in Gehenna (as we are told they are in Hell), but fire or worms completely devoured dead victims.** To make it a place of eternal torment is without any base whatsoever. **Before the name of a place can be used as symbolic of another place, the place and it’s name for which the emblem is used must first be known to exist; no such place as the Hell that is taught today, or it’s name, was not known about in the Old Testament and was not known or used by anyone in the time of the New Testament.** Also there must be a parallel between the two; there is no parallel between:

- Gehenna, a place of destruction with no torment.
- Hell, a place to torment with no destruction.

Gehenna that existed in the Old Testament and in the time of Christ is not symbolic of the Hell that is taught today. **We are told that both Gehenna and the Lake of Fire are metaphors of Hell; there is no way anyone could know they are metaphors of Hell if they did not know about Hell, but there is not one passage in the Bible that tell us there is such a place, that there is a Hell.**

Gehenna and the Lake of Fire are often thought to be the same metaphor by many.

- Gehenna was a place of destruction.
- A lake of fire would be a place that would destroy all life, as we know it, a place where no life could exist.

Both Gehenna and the Lake of Fire picture the total destruction of whatever was thrown into them; neither one is a symbol of an eternal life of torment; Gehenna was a place of destruction of trash, or destruction of what ever was cast into it, anything that was alive and cast into a lake of fire would be totally destroyed, no living thing can live in fire; neither Gehenna, nor the Lake of Fire are not a place of eternal life. Both picture complete destruction, not endless life.

STEVEN CLARK GOAD: On 11/1/2010 I found this on the web by Steven Clark Goad, church of Christ Christian Ekklesia Podcast: “In summation, isn’t it strange indeed that false teachers have taken a “real place” (Gehenna) referred to by Jesus himself as a metaphor of destruction and have changed it into another made up/fabricated “real place” (hell) where souls (spirits, living beings, whatever) will be tortured unendingly by a loving heavenly Father? If Gehenna is a metaphor of “hell” as it is traditionally taught, isn’t it a poor one, for Gehenna (the Jerusalem city dump of Jesus’ era) was a real place of destruction and consummation with no torment and no torture involved, while “hell” is a made up place of torment and torture with no destruction at all? Is this twisted thinking the height of misguided thinking?” “Thoughts on Punishment of the Wicked” at:

<http://www.godsmessagetheweb.net/2010/07/25/thoughts-on-punishment-of-the-wicked/mp3>  
No longer on the web.

THOMAS WHITTEMORE: "The Sanhedrim of the Jews, for some offenses, sentenced the bodies of the offenders to lie unburied in that valley, to burn with the carrion cast there, which, among the Jews, was considered a great disgrace." *The Doctrine Of Eternal Hell Torments*," page 15,1833.

An effect is now being made by some to disprove that the trash dump of Gehenna was what Christ was speaking of by saying there is no evidence that Gehenna was ever a trash dump. How can anyone that believes the Bible say that it was not in Gehenna where the worm dies not and the fire is not quenched? Christ used the name Gehenna, which no one can deny was the name of the trash dump; they do not believe Christ used the right name of the right valley and have changed the name He did use, Gehenna, into the name Hell that He did not use. A city the size that Jerusalem was would have had much trash, where do they think the fire that burnt it were; where do they think the maggots were that were as real as the fire? In A. D. 70 when Jerusalem was destroyed the valley stopped being used as a trash dump; after about 2,000 years there would be no trash to be found. Those that say Gehenna was not a trash dump because there is no sign of trash today have not found any other place near Jerusalem where there is any trash from before A. D. 70.

**WEeping AND GNASHING OF TEETH:** Both are used in the Old and New Testament. (1). **Weeping** for miseries and grief, both for personal miseries, and miseries and grief as a nation are used to often to list them, use any good concordance. It is used in the New Testament the same way it was in the Old Testament. See Matthew 2:18; Mark 5:28; Luke 7:38; 8:52; John 11:33; 20:11 Acts 9:39; 21:13; Philippians 3:18; James 5:1. The weeping is the Jews when they see Israel being cast out as God's chosen people, and Jerusalem and the Temple being destroyed, and the end of their national identity. See Matthew 24, Daniel 9, and 10. Two parables in Matthew 13 have the tares and the bad fish gathered out of the kingdom "*at the end of the age,*" there will be both weeping and gnashing of teeth. The "*end of the age*" was the end of the age that then was, the Jewish age. The weeping is never said to be eternal, never said to be immortal souls weeping.

(2). **Gnashing of teeth** shows anger and rage of the persons gnashing their teeth, not that those that are gnashing their teeth are being tormented; Gnashing of teeth is used in both the Old and New Testament, but both weeping and gnashing of teeth are not used together in the Old Testament; in the New Testament "*weeping and gnashing of teeth*" is used only by Matthew and Luke, six times by Matthew (8:12; 13:42; 13:50; 22:13; 24:51; 25:30) and one time by Luke (13:28). They are all in parables about the Jews weeping and gnashing their teeth because when they rejected Christ they were rejected as God's chosen nation and the Gentiles became God's chosen people.

- *"All your enemies have opened their mouths wide against you; **they hiss and gnash their teeth**"* (Lamentations 2:16).
- *"Like godless jesters at a feast, **they gnashed at me with their teeth**"* Psalm 35:15-16.
- *"The wicked plots against the righteous, **and gnashes at him with his teeth**"* Psalm 37:12.
- *"His anger has torn me and hunted me down, **he has gnashed at me with his teeth**"* Job 16:9.

This gnashing of their teeth is living persons gnashing their teeth on others living persons in barbarous anger; it is not souls in Hell. If this were speaking of souls in Hell than souls that we are told have no substance will have teeth and will be gnashing on other immaterial souls while they themselves are being gnashed on by other immaterial, no substance souls that also have teeth that can bite other immaterial souls!

It is used the same way in the New Testament. *"And they gnashed on him with their teeth"* (Acts 7:54). **Who gnashed on whom?** Those who stoned Stephen were angry with him, they were not in pain; they were not dead, and they were not in Hell, they were alive and on this earth when they gnashed on Stephen who was also alive. If gnashing of teeth were in Hell, as many teach it is, whom are they going to gnash with their teeth in Hell, each other? Does anyone believe some in Hell will be angry with others in Hell, and will gnash on them with their teeth? The gnashing of teeth is the anger and rage of the Jews towards those doing the destroying (the Roman army), and maybe even toward God for letting the destroying be happening. **Gnashing of teeth is because of anger or rage. It is not because of the persons doing the gnashing of their teeth are being tormented in Hell. In the Bible in both the Old and the New Testament, gnashing of teeth is always because of anger of the person doing the gnashing. It is changed from "gnashing" to "gritting" and misused today to show souls being tormented in "Hell" are "gritting" their teeth because of their own pain.** Does anyone that believes God will be tormenting souls in Hell believe that one soul that is being tormented by God will gnash it teeth on another soul that is also being tormented by God?

- In the Old Testament: Gnashing of teeth is because of violent anger and rage on the part of the person that is doing the gnashing.
- In the New Testament gnashing of teeth is because of rage and anger on the part of the persons doing the gnashing (Acts 7:54).

Weeping and gnashing of teeth are two different things, which are sometimes both are found together, but most often they are not together.

- Weeping is because of sorrow, not because of rage.
- Gnashing of teeth is because of rage or anger, not because of sorrow.

That either one will be in Hell is an assumption that is preached over and over. Could an immaterial, invisible something that had been in a person gnash its teeth on another immaterial, invisible something that had been in another person?

**Both weeping and gnashing of teeth are always by living persons on this earth. Of the many times both are used in the Bible, not once are souls weeping or gnashing their teeth after the Judgment Day because of being tormented by God.**

(1). **The Centurion Gentile** Matthew 8:5-13: The Gentile centurion ends with a parable about the rejection of Israel. Jesus marveled at the faith of this Gentile centurion. *"And when he was entered into Capernaum, there came unto him a centurion, beseeching him, and saying, Lord, my servant is lying in the house sick of the palsy, grievously tormented. And he said unto him, I will come and heal him. And the centurion answered and said, Lord, I am not worthy that you should come under my roof; but only say the word, and my servant shall be healed. For I also am a man under authority, having under myself soldiers: and I say to this one, Go, and he goes; and to another, Come, and he comes; and to my servant, Do this, and he does it. And when Jesus heard it, he marveled, and said to them that followed, Verily I say unto you, I have not found so great faith, no, **not in Israel**. And I say unto you, that many shall come from the east and the west, and shall sit down with Abraham, and Isaac, and Jacob, in the kingdom of heaven: **but the sons of the kingdom shall be cast forth into the outer darkness:** (Israel shall be excluded from being the children of God by birth, cast into darkness of the world without the light of God's word) **there shall be the weeping and the gnashing of teeth.** And Jesus said unto the centurion, Go your way; as you have believed, so be it done unto you. And the servant was healed in that hour."* Where Matthew says, "Sons of the kingdom" were cast forth Luke says, **"And yourselves cast forth without"** (Luke 13:24-30). At that time the Jews were the sons of the kingdom, but because to their rejection of Christ they were "cast forth without." After seeing the faith of this Gentile, Jesus says the Gentiles will sit in the kingdom, and the sons (Jews) will be cast forth. The same as at the marriage feast (above), the Jews, because they rejected Christ as their king, they were cast out of the kingdom. The church, not Israel, is now God's kingdom. Those who teach Hell read the prophecies of Christ about the judgment of Israel in AD 70 and move the weeping and gnashing of teeth to be souls weeping in Hell after the Judgment Day is over. They have not found one passage that says anything about the lost after the judgment. Nothing can happen to nothing. After the second death there could be nothing said, for there will be nothing to say anything about. There is (1) this life (2) the first death, (3) a resurrection to life from the first death, (4) then the second death for the lost. But nothing is said about a third life for the lost after the second death. They need something to prove eternal life in their Hell, and try to make it look as if weeping and gnashing of teeth could only be because of God is eternally tormenting souls in Hell; although both weeping and gnashing of teeth are used throughout the Old Testament and those who believe in Hell do not believe weeping and gnashing of teeth in the Old Testament have any reference to a time of

punishment after the Judgment Day, but they assume that in the New Testament both are used in reference to punishment in Hell after the Judgment Day. Weeping and gnashing of teeth has a reference to Hell only when they want or need them to. **Even according to those who believe in Hell, no one is cast out of Heaven, but if this "weeping and the gnashing of teeth" is changed and made to be after the judgment in Hell, it is (1) "sons of the kingdom" that are cast out into the outer darkness (2) "sons of the kingdom" that are weeping and gnashing their teeth. In using this passage to prove the outer darkness is Hell it makes some be in Heaven, but it makes them be cast out of Heaven into Hell after the judgment. If "and yourselves cast forth without" is cast into Hell where those who believe in Hell say the "weeping and gnashing of teeth" will be, then this makes those from the east and west go to Heaven after the Judgment Day. If this "weeping and gnashing of teeth" were after the coming of Christ, it would have some going into Heaven, and some being cast out of Heaven after the kingdom has been delivered up to God; therefore, after the judgment.** This is more than those trying to prove Hell want to prove, for they do not think any will be cast out of Heaven after the judgment, and no one who is in Heaven after the judgment will go to Hell, so why is this passage used in a way that makes it prove there will be some cast out of Heaven into Hell after the judgment?

(2—3). The parable of the tares (Matthew 13:36-43), and the parable of the net (Matthew 13:47-50). Matthew 13:18-50 contains seven parables about the end of the Jewish age (aion), not the end of the world.

(4). The parable of the wedding feast (Matthew 22:1-14) spoken to the Pharisees. The invited guest did not come to the marriage of the king's son and killed the king's servants. The king then sent his armies and destroyed them and burned their city; Jews were destroyed and their city burned in A. D. 70. All people were then bidden to the wedding; one guest that came in unprepared, without a wedding garment and was cast back out of the wedding into the outer darkness.

(5—6). The parable of the wicked slave (Matthew 24:45-51), and the talents (Matthew 25:14-30). Both of these parables are both part of a two chapter long discourse about the coming destruction of Jerusalem. See chapter eight, part two. The man with one talent (1) loses the one talent, (2) is cast out into the outer darkness, (3) where there is both weeping (because of his sadness) and gnashing of teeth (because of his anger); the outer darkness is away from the lights inside into the night outside, the weeping because of being excluded from the joy of being inside, not because of being tormented in "Hell." Israel has been excluded from being the children of God by birth because they are descendants of Abraham.

(7). The parable of the narrow door (Luke 13:22-30). Those that Christ had eat and drink in their presence and taught in their streets shall not be known, there shall be weeping and gnashing of teeth by those that Christ taught in their streets; in Luke

13:28 *"there"* is from the Greek ekei which means "in that place" not *"there,"* in the place where Christ had taught in these streets *"in that place shall be weeping and gnashing of teeth"*. Those from all parts of the earth, the east, west, north and south, shall *"sit down in the kingdom of God,"* after yourselves are *"cast forth without."*

Summary:

- If *this "weeping and the gnashing of teeth"* is changed and made to be in Hell after the judgment, then it is the *"sons of the kingdom"* that are:
  - Weeping and gnashing their teeth.
  - Are cast into the outer darkness.
  - If the *"weeping and the gnashing of teeth"* is because of being in Hell, then the *"sons of the kingdom"* that are doing the gnashing of teeth would have to be in Hell.
- Then after the judgment, which **would be after the coming of Christ, and after the resurrection**, *"Many shall come from the east and the west, and shall sit down with Abraham, and Isaac, and Jacob, in the kingdom of heaven."*
  - If this were after the judgment, where will they come from? From Hell or where?
- Whether this is (1) the Jews that rejected Christ and are cast out of the light of the word of God into the darkness of the world without God, (2) or Christians that become unfaithful, there is no way that any persons not with a white robes washed white by the blood of Christ could come from any place, not the east or the west, and set down in the kingdom after it has been delivered up to God in Heaven, therefore; this could only be speaking of coming into the kingdom (church) in the life time of persons while they are alive on earth, not anyone coming into the kingdom after their death, or after the resurrection.

J. W. McGARVEY on Matthew 8:12: ***"And I say unto you, that many shall come from the east and the west, and shall sit down with Abraham, and Isaac, and Jacob, in the kingdom of Heaven"*** (Jesus here predicts the conversion of the Gentiles, since that fact is suggested to him by the faith of this centurion. The east and the west represent the extreme points of the compass in the directions in which the world was most thickly inhabited...12 But The Sons Of The Kingdom (The child of anything in Hebrew phraseology expressed the idea of special property which one has in the thing specified, as, for instance, children of disobedience (Eph. ii. 2). Jesus here means, then, the Jews, to whom the kingdom belonged by hereditary descent—Rom. ix. 4) ***shall be cast forth into the outer darkness: there shall be the weeping and the gnashing of teeth.*** (In this paragraph Christ's kingdom is set forth under the simile of a great feast, a familiar simile with Jesus (Matt. xxvi. 29; Luke xxii. 30). The Jews were accustomed to speak of the delights of the Messianic kingdom as a feast with the patriarchs (Luke xiv. 15), but lost sight of the fact that Gentiles should share in its cheer and fellowship (Isa. xxv. 6). Marriage feasts and other great feasts of the Jews were usually held in the evening. Inside, therefore, there would be joy and light and gladness, but outside there would be darkness and disappointment, tears and bitter self-reproach (Matt. xxv. 10—13). The despised outcasts should be brought in and placed at the festal board, while the long—invited guests—the natural and fleshly heirs of Abraham's invitation—would be excluded (Matt. xxi. 43)" The Fourfold Gospel, page 272, Standard Publishing Company, 1914, church of Christ.

J. W. McGARVEY on Luke 13:28-30: *"There shall be the weeping and the gnashing of teeth, when you shall see Abraham, and Isaac, and Jacob, and all the prophets, in the kingdom of God, and yourselves cast forth without. 29 And they shall come from the east and west, and from the north and south, and shall sit down in the kingdom of God. 30 And behold (little as you may think it), they are last who shall be first, and they are first who shall be last.* (A familiar proverb of Christ's

(Matt. xix. 30; xx. 10), to be interpreted by such passages as Matt. xxi. 31 and Rom. ix. 30, 31. The Jew who thought the Gentile had no hope at all, and that he himself was sure of salvation, would be surprised to find that his opinion was the very reverse of the real fact as time developed it)." The Fourfold Gospel, page 490, Standard Publishing Company, 1914, church of Christ. The **Jews were cast forth out of the kingdom, cast out as Gods chosen people, but nothing is said about casting into "Hell."**

B. W. JOHNSON on Matthew 8:12: "***But the children of the kingdom.*** The Jews, the natural children of Abraham, the 'Father of the faithful,' heirs of the promises made to him. **Cast out** because they rejected the Messiah, in whom all the promises center." The People's New Testament With Notes, Gospel Light Publishing Company, church of Christ.

H. LEO BOLES on Matthew 8:11-12: "The '*sons of the kingdom*' were the Jews; they were heirs of the kingdom according to the promise; to them it was first offered, and it was because they rejected it that they were to '*be cast forth into the outer darkness.*' While the Jews rejected Christ as their Messiah, the Gentiles would accept him as their Savior; this prophecy of Jesus has literally been fulfilled. These Jews were '*sons of the kingdom*'...while at the same time others, Gentiles, shall be enjoying a feast with Abraham, Isaac, and Jacob. '*The weeping and the gnashing*'...they shall weep because they have lost their favor with God, and shall gnash their teeth because others have obtained it." A Commentary On The Gospel According To Matthew, 1954, Gospel Advocate Company, church of Christ.

JAMES BURTON COFFMAN on Matthew 8:10-12: "The centurion's faith contrasted sharply with the lack of it in the Jewish leaders who, although they should have been the first to recognize Christ and believe on him, were nevertheless his carping critics and sworn enemies. Jesus' first comment was directed toward that shameful and tragic condition. It was, then and there, announced by Jesus that the Gentiles would be received into the kingdom of God and that many '*sons of the kingdom,*' that is, Jews, would not enter." Commentary on the Gospel of Matthew, Firm Foundation Publishing House, page 105, 1968, church of Christ.

ADAM CLARKE on Matthew 8:12: "*I have not found so great faith, no, not in Israel.*"—That is, I have not found so great an instance of confidence and faith in my power, even among the Jews, as this Roman, a Gentile, has shown himself to possess...'*Many shall come from the east and west*'—Men of every description, of all countries...The rabbins represent the blessedness of the kingdom of God under the notion of a banquet...'*With Abraham, and Isaac, and Jacob*'—In the closest communion with the most eminent followers of God...'*Shall be cast out into outer darkness*'—As the enjoyment of that salvation which Jesus Christ calls the kingdom of heaven is here represented under the notion of a nuptial festival, at which the guests sat down in a reclining posture, with the master of the feast; so the state of those who were excluded from the banquet is represented as deep darkness; because the nuptial solemnities took place at night. Hence, at those suppers, the house of reception was filled with lights...so they who were admitted to the banquet had the benefit of the light; but they who were shut out were in darkness, called here outer darkness, i.e. the darkness on the outside of the house in which the guests were; which must appear more abundantly gloomy, when compared with the profusion of light within the guest-chamber."

R. C. H. LENSKI on Matthew 8:12: "As the physical descendants of Abraham the Jews were, indeed, the first heirs of the Messianic covenant and kingdom. The only trouble was that they failed to inherit. John 8:37-41 states why. Although they were beyond question '*the sons of the kingdom*' because they were '*Abraham's seed*' and thus the potential heirs, they forfeited their inheritance of the kingdom by unbelief."

JOHN WESLEY on Matthew 8:12: "Many from the farthest parts of the earth shall embrace the terms and enjoy the rewards of the Gospel covenant established with Abraham. But the Jews, who

have the first title to them, shall be shut out from the feast. Luke xiii, 29." Founder of Methodist Church.

Although many of the wisest preachers and writers (above) whose writings have stood the test of time say the *"weeping and gnashing of teeth"* is speaking of the Jews being rejected as God's chosen people, and the Gentiles coming into the kingdom, the church. Some still misuse this as did Stephen Wiggins in the Firm Foundation, 2006, page 6. Gehenna is not in any of the passages with *"weeping and gnashing of teeth."* If he did any study it would be difficult to believe he did not know the weeping and gnashing of teeth has no reference to "Hell." The use of this passage is just a desperate attempt to find a passage that teaches eternal torment?

Because of their desperate need for proof of the doctrine of Hell they try to make this have a hidden double meaning.

(1) The clear meaning: Israel will no longer be God's chosen people.

(2) The assumed hidden meaning: God is going to forever torment most of mankind in Hell.

There is absolutely no hidden meaning, nothing about Hell, eternal torment, or anything after the judgment in this passage.

**UNQUENCHABLE FIRE AND WORMS OF GEHENNA. "Unquenchable fire" and "their worm dies not" as they are used in the Old and New Testaments: complete destruction.** Unquenchable fire is commonly used in the Old Testament only when speaking of God's earthly judgments on wicked nations (Jeremiah 7:20; 7:31-33; 19:6-9; 17:27; 4:4; 21:12; Ezekiel 20:47-48; 21:19; Nehemiah 1:3; Amos 5:6; Isaiah 66:24); it never had any reference to Hell, or to judgment, or punishment after death. In Jeremiah 17:27 God said He would burn the gates of Jerusalem, *"And it will devour the palaces of Jerusalem and not be quenched."* *"Therefore thus says the Lord God 'Behold, My anger and My wrath will be poured out*

1. *on this place,*
2. *on man*
3. *and on beast*
4. *and on the trees of the field*
5. *and on the fruit of the ground;*

*and it will burn and not be quenched"* (Jeremiah 7:20). No one thinks any of these but man will be tormented in Hell but they are all burn with the same unquenchable fire that men is.

John the Baptist, the used *"unquenchable fire"* on one occasion as a judgment on Israel just as it was used in the Old Testament as a warning of a coming judgment. He said Christ *"will gather his wheat into the garner, but the chaff he will burn up with unquenchable fire"* (Matthew 3:12; Luke 3:17). Will this unquenchable fire forever torment the chaff, which John said would *"burn up?"* John compared the unfruitful Jews to which he was speaking to unfruitful trees that will be cut down and burned up (Matthew 3:10); **burned up** trees do not live forever in torment; neither

trees nor the chaff of wheat are preserved alive by fire in endless misery being torment by fire, both trees and chaff are completely destroyed by fire. John could not have used any language that would show complete destruction just as it was always used in the Old Testament any clearly than what he did, yet this is used to teach that fire cannot "**burn up**" the lost. "*As therefore the tares are gathered up and **burned with fire**; so shall it be in the end of this age,*" the Jewish age (Matthew 13:40). After A. D. 70 the material were no longer supplied to keep the fire going and the fire of Gehenna went out.

Fire always consumes whatever it is burning, it never preserves alive; a fire that cannot be extinguished before it has done its work of consuming the chaff. The meaning of "**burn up**" cannot be reversed so that the chaff is preserved by the fire and is not "**burn up**." The imagery is the complete destruction of what is worthless, whether it be Israel at the end of that age that ended at the death of Christ, or the lost persons after the judgment, not God endlessly burning souls that cannot be "consumed" or "burned up." "*And remove the foreskins of our heart, men of Judah and inhabitants of Jerusalem, **Lest My wrath go forth LIKE FIRE and burn with none to quench it**, because of the evil of your deeds*" (Jeremiah 4:4); this is speaking of God's wrath on Israel, on "*Men of Judah and inhabitants of Jerusalem,*" if they did not keep His word then God's wrath will completely consume them because of the evil of their deeds as fire consumes what it is burning, and none can stop His wrath before they are consumed; the unquenchable fire was not a literal fire but was symbolical of God's unstoppable judgment on Israel. The unquenchable fire went out.

Unquenchable fire is used on one occasion by Christ of the burning of trash in the city dump in Mark 9:43 where He repeats it a second time in verses 48 in the American Standard Version, Revised Standard Version, New International Version. "*Unquenchable fire*" is repeated four times in Mark 9:43, 44, 46 and 48 in the King James Version. In verses 44 and 46 the American Standard footnote says they, "Are omitted by the best ancient Authorities." If on the only occasion Christ used "*Unquenchable fire*" was repeated two times or four times, what He was telling them was the same, whatever was cast into Gehenna was consumed by the fire, it was not tormented. "*Shall never be quenched*" King James Version, these four words are translated from the one word. The translators have added, "Shall never be", then they changed "*Gehenna*" to "Hell" to make the Bible teach the Hell they believed in, but "Hell" is not in the Greek; they are willing to make you think Christ said something He did not say to make you believe in the pagan Hell. In many translations this one word is translated "*unquenchable*;" an unquenchable fire, not a fire that "*Shall never be*" quenched, it is a fire that can not be put out until there is nothing more to burn; the unquenchable fire in Isaiah 66:24 and Jeremiah 4:4 has long ago burned out. "*Where their worm dies not, the fire is not quenched*" in Mark

9:43 is a direct quotation of Isaiah 66:24, in Isaiah it is an earthly judgment of a nation, and on those *“Who eat swine’s flesh, detestable things, and mice”* (Isaiah 66:17). Living persons *“shall go forth and look on the CORPSES of the men who have transgressed against Me.”* Even those that believe there are souls do not believe that souls have corpses so why are they using this passage? Living persons on this earth were looking at lifeless corpses of dead persons that were literally being burn by a literal fire and literally being eaten by worms, living persons did not go out and look at corpses of lifeless souls; DEAD earthly bodies were be destroyed by fire and worm AFER the Lord had killed the Assyrian people, there was no life in the dead bodies and no torment. Neither Isaiah, nor Christ said anything about these corpses, dead bodies that had been slain by the Lord being conscious, in torment, or alive; it would make no sense to the Jews in the days of Isaiah, nor to those Christ was speaking to say “corpses” (dead bodies) could suffer any kind of torment even though the literal dead bodies were literally being burn up and eaten by worms. If the fire and worms were after the judgment, as some tell us they are, will there be dead bodies after the judgment that the saved will go out from Heaven to look at? After the judgment will these bodies and the worms be immortal, or will both past away? Both the chaff and trash are utterly destroyed by burning to get rid of something unwanted. The chaff or the trash was not tormented. Without changing Gehenna to Hell and then changing dead persons to living souls there is nothing about eternal torment by God, there is no way to find “Hell: in the Bible; it is real worms and real fire burning real things on this earth; NOTHING is said about any burning that is not on this earth. When dead bodies of Jews were cast into Gehenna, when many thousands of Jews were cast over the wall into Gehenna in A. D. 70, (1) there was nothing about anyone in Hell, (2) nothing about God endless tormenting living souls anyplace or at anytime.

ADAM CLARKE: "He will burn up the chaff that is, the disobedient and rebellious Jews, with unquenchable fire that cannot be extinguished by man."

EDWARD WHITE: "It is difficult to believe that if John the Baptist had before his imagination the thought of the indestructibleness of the wicked in the fires of hell, he would have likened them to chaff which is proverbially the thing in creation least fitted to withstand the action of the flames. This is an image, which no orthodox preacher in modern times can be induced to employ...It is a fire, which thoroughly accomplishes its object and burns up the chaff." His book is free on line at: <http://www.robertwr.com/LifeInChrist.htm>

THOMAS BALDWIN THAYER: "Now, if the Savior used the same phraseology used by the prophets and the Jew, he would undoubtedly employ it in the same sense, if he wished or expected them to understand him. The prophets had employed these expressions, and the people were familiar with the use of them, a symbols of terrible judgments and punishment sent upon the guilty nations, falling on the transgressors in this life. **Their Scriptures never use them in any other sense, and the significance of the language was in regard to the severity, and not the duration of the punishment.**" The Origin And History of Doctrine of Endless Punishment, page 147, 1881.

You tell someone that a building caught on fire. They ask, "Was the fire put out? When you reply, "No we were unable to put it out;" it is not understood that the fire is still burning, but that it was unquenchable and did not cease to burn until the building was utterly consumed by the fire; though the fire was unquenchable it is not an eternal fire. When a fire surpasses the ability of fire fighters, and they cannot put out a burning building they say it is an unquenchable fire, but it is not a fire that will burn forever; no one will be able to escape from it by putting it out, but it will go out when there is nothing more to burn; if a fire burned for six hours and the firefighters were unable to put it out and the building burned to the ground, they would say the fire was unquenchable. John the Baptist is not saying that God is going to literally burn all the rebellious Jews without an end, but that no one can stop His destruction of them before the destruction is complete; this happened in A. D. 70.

Unquenchable fire is used on one occasion by Christ of the burning of trash in the city dump in Mark 9:43 where He repeats it a second time in verses 44 and 46 in the American Standard Version, Revised Standard Version, New International Version. "*Unquenchable fire*" is repeated four times in Mark 9:43, 44, 46 and 48 in the King James Version. In verses 44 and 46 the American Standard footnote says they, "Are omitted by the best ancient Authorities." If on the only occasion Christ used "*Unquenchable fire*" was repeated two times or four times, what He was telling them was the same, whatever was cast into Gehenna was consumed by the fire, it was not tormented. "*Shall never be quenched*" King James Version, these four words are translated from the one word. "*Shall never be*" has been added by the translators to make the Bible teach the Hell they believed in, but "Hell" is not in the Greek; they are willing to make you think Christ said something He did not say to make you believe in the pagan Hell. In most translations this one word is translated "*unquenchable*;" an unquenchable fire, not a fire that "*Shall never be*" quenched, it is a fire that will burn until there is nothing more to burn; the unquenchable fire in Isaiah 66:24 and Jeremiah 4:4 has long ago burned out. "*Where their worm dies not, the fire is not quenched*" in Mark 9:43 is a direct quotation of Isaiah 66:24, in Isaiah it is an earthly judgment of a nation, and on those "*Who eat swine's flesh, detestable things, and mice*" (Isaiah 66:17). Living persons "*shall go forth and look on the CORPSES of the men who have transgressed against Me.*" Even those that believe there are souls do not believe that souls have corpses so why are they using this passage? Living persons on this earth were looking at lifeless corpses of dead persons that were literally being burned by a literal fire and literally being eaten by worms, living persons did not go out and look at corpses of lifeless souls; DEAD earthly bodies were destroyed by fire and worm AFTER the Lord had killed the Assyrian people, there was no life in the dead bodies and no torment. Neither Isaiah, nor Christ said anything about these corpses, dead bodies that had been slain by the Lord being conscious, in torment, or alive; it would make no sense to the Jews in the days of Isaiah, nor to

those Christ was speaking to say "corpses" (dead bodies) could suffer any kind of torment even though the literal dead bodies were literally being burn up and eaten by worms. If the fire and worms were after the judgment, as some tell us they are, will there be dead bodies after the judgment that the saved will go out from Heaven to look at? After the judgment will these bodies and the worms be immortal, or will both past away? Both the chaff and trash are utterly destroyed by burning to get rid of something unwanted. The chaff or the trash was not tormented. Without changing Gehenna to Hell and then changing dead persons to living souls there is nothing about eternal torment by God, there is no way to find "Hell: in the Bible; it is real worms and real fire burning real things on this earth; NOTHING is said about any burning that is not on this earth. When dead bodies of Jews were cast into Gehenna, when many thousands of Jews were cast over the wall into Gehenna in A. D. 70, (1) there was nothing about anyone in Hell, (2) nothing about God endless tormenting living souls anyplace or at anytime.

(1) The only occasion Christ used *"unquenchable fire"* is in Mark 9:43 and 9:48 (changed in King James Version), where He was quoting from Isaiah 66:24; and living persons looked upon the **carcasses** of the men, King James Version, *"on the corpses of the men"* New American Standard Version. Carcasses or corpses are dead persons that living persons was to look at; both fire and worms destroy dead bodies; they do not torment the dead persons that was being burnt or eaten; there is not even a hint of God endlessly tormenting souls that are in Hell. **To understand His words, they must be understood in the way the Old Testament used them**, just as much of Revelation is to be understood by the way the same symbols are used in the Old Testament. **"Unquenchable fire" was a well-known expression in the Old Testament, and it would be understood by those hearing Christ.** *"And the strong man will become tinder, his work also a spark, thus, they shall both burn together, and there will be none to quench them"* (Isaiah 1:31); it is both (1) the strong man that will burn (2) with his works and not be quenched, not the soul of the strong men. Jeremiah warned Jerusalem of the consequence of their sins, *"But if YOU do not listen to Me to keep the Sabbath day holy by not carrying a load and coming in through the gates of Jerusalem on the Sabbath day, then will I kindle a fire in the gates thereof, and it shall devour the palaces of Jerusalem and it shall not be quenched"* (Jeremiah 17:27). Jeremiah's warning was fulfilled in 2 Chronicles 36:19-21, and was the literal destruction of Jerusalem by the Babylonians when **Jerusalem was destroyed with an "unquenchable fire" that no one could stop before God's destruction of them was complete. God's judgment consumed all, and was not quenched. Jerusalem is not literally burning today. The unquenchable fire in the Old Testament was always a judgment on a city or nation on this earth, a judgment that no one could stop.** Jerusalem was destroyed as a nation by a judgment from God, but was later restored. In some of

the uses of unquenchable fire in the Old Testament it was not a literal fire, but it was symbol of a destruction that could not be stopped by man. Those who believe in Hell make two changes.

(1). Change dead bodies on this earth being burned up by the unquenchable fire in the Old Testament to deathless souls, which they say cannot be burned up.

(2). Then change "unquenchable" into "eternal," then move the unquenchable fire that destroyed Jerusalem from Jerusalem on this earth, and put this "eternal fire" in their "Hell," which they say is not on this earth. The Jews that knew the Old Testament and were hearing Christ would have never understood "unquenchable fire" to be eternal torment of a living soul after the person it had been in was dead; a soul that those that make this change tell us that this soul has no substance that fire can burn.

- First, the fire must be changed.
- Second, after the fire has been changed, then it must be moved from Jerusalem on this earth to Hell that is not on this earth.

Isaiah says, *"For behold, the Lord will come in fire and His chariots like the whirlwind, to render His anger with fury, and His rebuke with the flames of fire. For the Lord will execute judgment by fire and by His sword on all flesh, and those slain by the Lord will be many...Then they shall go forth and look on the corpses ("dead bodies" in American Standard Version) of the men who have transgressed against me. For their (the corpses, dead people killed by the sword of the Lord) worm shall not die, and **their (the corpses) fire shall not be quenched; and they (the corpses) shall be an abhorrence to all mankind**" (Isaiah 66:15-24); "carcasses" in King James Version, "dead bodies" New International Version. The worms consumed the corpses, dead bodies, and the fires were not quenched unto there was no more flesh to consume or burn. It was corpses, carcasses, dead bodies, which were on the earth that were being consumed by the unquenchable fire and undying maggots, it was "those slain by the Lord" slain "by His sword," dead bodies that was being burn up by fire and eaten by maggots (Isaiah 66:16), not "those tormented by the Lord," not deathless immortal souls in Hell that cannot be slain, not deathless souls are screaming in anguish and pain because God is tormenting them. Isaiah 66:16; 66:24 describes the aftermath of a battle with the bodies of the dead unburied people; there is no suggestion of unending torment, or of any torment of the dead bodies that were being eaten by the worms. Those people back in the time of Isaiah did not look from Heaven down into Hell, and see living souls being eaten by maggots; it was the living people on this earth that went out to the battle field, and saw real dead bodies on this earth being eaten and burned, not immortal souls in Heaven that "shall go forth and look on the corpses" and see living souls that are that are being tormented by God in Hell as worms and fire are consuming, but never consume them. How can fire or worms eternally torment a dead body? Dead bodies cannot suffer, cannot be tormented. After the resurrection there will be no dead bodies of flesh to look upon. **This unquenchable fire was a judgment on Babylon, not on individuals.** It is*

difficult to conceive how those that believes a soul is an immaterial, no substance something, that it can be eat by maggots, and made more difficult by the fact that maggots eat only dead flesh, not anything that is alive. It is the fire that is unquenchable, and both Isaiah and Christ speak only of the maggots being alive, not that the corpses were alive while they were being burnt up or eaten, they were dead, they have been slain, there is nothing said about them being alive and in torment, but today's theology changes the dead bodies to living souls and says the souls are both alive and are being forever tormented by fire. There is not even a hint that the corpses that were in the unquenchable fire were aware of anything. For this to prove a soul is immortal they would have to be viewing disembodied immortal souls that had been "*slain by the Lord*" (Isaiah 66:16), but were still living and being tormented by the Lord after the Lord had killed these souls, and it must be proved that they were not viewing dead bodies that were on this earth, but were viewing invisible deathless souls that were souls in Heaven viewing souls in "Hell." **Without doubt, this unquenchable fire was burning those that had been slain by the Lord, it was a judgment and punishment on this earth, a judgment on the nation of Babylon;** both Babylon and the judgment on it ended lone ago.

- **There is no mention of torment.** The ungodly had been killed; it says nothing about the Lord **tormenting** them after He killed them, but many add to the Bible by adding torment where there is none.
- **There is no mention of living immortal souls that are being eaten by maggots, and being consumed by fire.** The witnesses are living people that see the **result of this destruction (slaying); they see real corpses, carcasses, dead bodies that are laying on this earth** being consumed by real fire and maggots; neither the worms or the fire causes any suffering to the dead bodies, it was not a living, immaterial, invisible something that had been in a person that was being eaten by maggots after the person it had been in was dead.
- **They do not see these dead bodies in pain and anguish,** they do not see God endlessly torturing souls in Hell that He will never let die; it was living people on this earth that seen corpses that were dead and were on this earth, not in Hell. To teach eternal torment in Hell the dead bodies that were being eaten by maggots on this earth have been changed to living souls suffering eternal torture by God in an endless Hell after the persons these souls were in are dead; there is nothing about souls, nothing about eternal torment by God, or nothing about Hell in this passage, but all three are added.
- Some believers in Hell change the Bible by changing the worms into undying souls. Maggots being changed into souls in torment is nothing more than a desperate attempt to prove something that there is no proof of. If the maggots were souls what would these souls (the maggots) be eating, other souls?
- "*Their worm*" is worms that are in dead bodies. If "their worm" shall not die proves immortality then it would be proving the immortality of the carcasses, and prove the immortality of the worms that were eating the immortal carcasses. **How can anyone find anything about a deathless "soul" in dead bodies being eaten by maggots?**
- When the fire and maggots have done their work there is no body; could a better picture of the complete destruction of the lost be found?

ALBERT BARNES, "A scene where a people whose lands have been desolated by mighty armies, are permitted to go forth after a decisive battle, and to walk over the field of the slain, and to see the dead and putrefying bodies of their once formidable enemies."

Changes that must be made to make this prove the doctrine of Hell.

1. Dead bodies that were lying on this earth, and were visible to living people must be changed to living souls that are not visible; those that went out to see them could not have seen immaterial, invisible souls.
2. Maggots and fire that devour must be changed to immortal maggots and fire that cannot devour.
3. The word fire is used throughout the Old Testament as a symbol of complete destruction. Fire always kills any living thing that is cast into it; it is never a preservative, but the theology of today must change fire into something that preserves alive and cannot kill or destroy. Just as death must be changed to eternal life, fire must be changed into something that cannot destroy but keeps alive in endless torment.
4. The Gehenna of the New Testament that is on this earth must be changed into Hell that we are told is not on this earth.

(2) *"Therefore thus says the Lord Jehovah: **Behold, mine anger and my wrath shall be poured out upon this place, upon man and upon beast, and upon the trees of the field, and upon the fruit of the ground; and it shall burn, and shall not be quenched**"* (Jeremiah 7:20). If this was the Lord's anger being poured out in Hell, it would make beasts, trees, fields, and the fruit of the ground be in unquenchable fire in Hell. In Jeremiah 17:27 it is *"the palaces of Jerusalem"* that would be destroyed by an unquenchable fire; are *"the palaces of Jerusalem"* now burning in Hell or any other place?

(3) **Ezekiel also speaks of the destruction of Judah using the imagery of a forest burning.** *"And the word of Jehovah came unto me, saying, son of man, set your face toward the south, and drop your word toward the south, and prophesy against the forest to the field in the South; and say to the forest of the South, Hear the word of Jehovah: Thus says the Lord Jehovah, Behold, I will kindle a fire in you, and it shall consume every green tree in you, and it shall devour ever green tree in you, and ever dry tree; the flaming flame **shall not be quenched**, and all faces from the south to the north shall be burnt thereby. And all flesh shall see that I, Jehovah, have kindled it; **it shall not be quenched**"* (Ezekiel 20:47-48).

ADAM CLARKE, "The forest of the south field is the city of Jerusalem; which was as full of inhabitants as the forest is of trees. I will kindle a fire, i. e., I will send war; and it shall devour ever green tree, i. e., the most eminent and substantial of the inhabitants; and every dry tree, i. e., the lowest and meanest also; it shall not be quenched, i. e., **till the land be utterly ruined.**"

**This "unquenchable fire" was God using Babylonian to destroy Israel** (Ezekiel 21:19; Nehemiah 1:3), not a literal fire. God's judgment on Israel was unquenchable, no one could stop it, but it ended when Israel was utterly ruined and in captivity.

(4) **Isaiah describes the desolation of Edom,** *"For my sword has drunk its fill in heaven; behold, it shall come down upon Edom, and upon the people of my curse, to*

judgment...For Jehovah has a day of vengeance, a year of recompense for the cause of Zion. And the streams of Edom shall be turned into pitch, and the dust thereof into brimstone, and the land thereof shall become burning pitch. **It shall not be quenched night or day; and the smoke thereof shall go up forever; from generation to generation it shall lay waste; none shall pass through it forever and ever. But the pelican and the porcupine shall possess it; and the owl and the raven shall dwell therein**" (Isaiah 34:6-15). If this fire that, "**Shall not be quenched night nor day,**" is the Hell that is taught today, how is it that "None shall pass through it forever and ever;" is there no one that shall be in Hell but pelican, porcupine, owl, and ravens shall dwell therein? This is clearly an earthly judgment on Edom that has long passed, not an unquenchable fire in Hell after the Judgment Day. Sodom was literally destroyed by fire, but there was no literal fire and smoke in Edom nor is it burning today; the fire, smoke, streams turned into pitch and the earth into brimstone was symbolical of God's judgment and the total destruction of the nation of Edom; many tourist now pass through the land that was Edom and there is no sign of fire; travelers tell us that the land is mostly sand and no one dwells in it. After the destruction of Edom the land that was Edom became a desert that is inhabited by pelicans, porcupines, owls and ravens. After Edom's destruction Isaiah description of the land that had been Edom is nothing like the Hell that is taught today, yet, because there is nothing about Hell in the Bible this passage is changed from the destruction of a nation on earth to God tormenting souls in Hell that will never have an end to God's tormenting them even though there is nothing about torment, souls, or Hell in this passage. "*From generation to generation it will be desolate; none will pass through it forever and ever. But pelican and hedgehog will possess it, and owl and raven will dwell in it; and He will stretch over it the line of desolation and the plumb line of emptiness. Its nobles—there is no one there whom they may proclaim king—and all its princes will be nothing. Thorns will come up in its fortified towers, nettles, and thistles in its fortified cities; it will also be a haunt of jackals, and an abode of ostriches. The desert creatures will meet with the wolves, the hairy goat also will cry to its kind; yes, the night monster will settle there and will find herself a resting place. The tree snake will make its nest and lay eggs there, and it will hatch and gather them under its protection. Yes, the hawks will be gathered there, every one with its kind*" (Isaiah 34:10-15). If this were a description of Hell, would those that love deserts find Hell to be a wonderful place? Edom did not literally burn up; the land is now uninhabitable to mankind with no way to grow food and very little water to drink; Edom is not a burning Hell that is not on this earth where God torments souls.

(5) For more examples of God's judgments in this world being spoken of as an unquenchable fire see Isaiah 1:31; (6) Jeremiah 17:27; (7) Jeremiah 21:12; (8) Amos 5:6; (9) 2 Kings 22:16-17; (10) 2 Chronicles 34:24-25. **These passages and many**

others show that the writers of the Old Testament used "*unquenchable fire*" as a symbol of judgment by war and famine both on Israel and wicked nations when they sinned; a judgment that no one could stop before God's purpose was accomplished. When Jesus was speaking of the fire and worms of Gehenna, he was giving a description of the finality of the coming destruction of Israel who rejected Him. His audience would know the way "*unquenchable fire*" was often used in the Old Testament even when there was no literal eternal fire, and they would understand His use of them. They would have known the Gehenna that Christ was speaking of was a foul place of destruction where worthless things were disposed of, and would have known He was saying the destruction He was speaking of would be like the destruction of the garbage in Gehenna, like the destruction of Jerusalem by unquenchable fire in the Old Testament. They knew they were being threatened with complete destruction just as the trash in the city dump was destroyed. Jerusalem was burnt and completely destroyed in A. D. 70, and historians say many dead bodies were burned and many were left unburied for the maggots.

CURTIS DICKINSON: "There are some 70 cases in scripture where fire is used as judgment upon wickedness...never was it used for the purpose of torture." "A Place Called Gehenna. Free on line at: <http://kenfortier.com/site/cdickinsonarticles>

Summary: The worm that dies not, and the unquenchable fire, as used in the Old Testament and by Christ, proves **utter destruction**, not everlasting torment. Gehenna is believed by those who teach everlasting torment to be their strong hold, but maggots eating dead bodies on this earth, and fire consuming everything that was cast into it is a picture of complete destruction, not symbols of torment. Many think this is the strongest proof of everlasting torment in the Bible, but it is the other way around, it is a strong proof that the lost will be everlastingly destroyed. It does not prove that a sadistic God will forever torment anyone.

If, as most Protestant and Catholic believe, that a soul is immaterial and has no substance, it would not be possible for fire or worms to hurt or torment it in any way.

**THE OLD TESTAMENT HISTORY OF THE VALLEY OF GEHENNA:** Gehenna was first mentioned in Joshua 15:8; 18:16 although it was never called "Gehenna" in the Old Testament. Ahaz "*burnt incense in **the valley of the son of Hinnom**, and burnt his children in the fire*" (2 Chronicles 28:3; 2 Kings 16:3). Manasseh also burnt his children in the fire in this valley (2 Chronicles 33:6).

Jeremiah 7:31-32: Children of Judah burned their sons and daughters in the fire in this valley, and Jehovah said, "*And they have built the high places of Topheth (Gehenna), which is in the valley of the son of Hinnom, to burn their sons and their daughters in the fire, which I did not command, and it did not come into My mind. I shall no more be called **Topheth**, nor **The valley of the son of Hinnom**, but **the valley of slaughter**: for they shall bury in **Topheth** (Gehenna), till there be no place to bury. And the dead bodies of this people shall be food for the birds of the*

heavens, and for the beasts of the earth; and none shall frighten them away." Those who teach "Hell fire" are saying to God, "O yes it came into Your mind; You have said You are going to burn most of Your children in an endless fire much hotter than the fire in which they burnt their children."

Jeremiah 19:1-15 *"Thus says the Lord, Go and buy a potter's earthenware jar, and take some to the elders of the people and some of the senior priests. Then go out to the **valley of Ben-hinnom** (later was changed to valley of Gehenna), which is by the entrance of the potsherd gate; (A gate to Jerusalem) and proclaim **there** the words that I shall tell you, and say, Hear the word of the Lord, O kings of Judah and inhabitants of Jerusalem: thus says the Lord of hosts, the God of Israel, Behold I am about to bring a calamity upon **this place**, at which the ears of everyone that hears of it will tingle. Because they have forsaken Me **and have made this an alien place** and have burned sacrifices **in it** to other gods that neither they nor their forefathers nor the kings of Judah had ever known, and because they have filled **this place** with the blood of the innocent and have **built the high places of Baal to burn their sons in the fire as burnt offerings to Baal**, a thing which I never commanded nor spoke of, nor did it enter My mind; therefore, behold, days are coming, declares the Lord, **when this place will no longer be called Topheth or the valley of Ben-hinnom, but rather the valley of Slaughter**. And I shall make void the counsel of Judah and Jerusalem **in this place**, and I shall cause them to fall by the sword before their enemies and by the hand of those who seek their life; and I shall give over their carcasses as food for the birds of the sky and the beast of the earth. I shall also make this city a desolation and an object of hissing; everyone who passes by it will be astonished and hiss because of the disasters. And I shall make them eat the flesh of their sons and the flesh of their daughters, and they will eat one another's flesh in the siege and in the distress with which their enemies and those who seek their life will distress them. Then you are to break the jar in the sight of the men who accompany you and say to them, Thus says the Lord of hosts, Just so shall I break this people and this city, even as one breaks a potter's vessel, which cannot again be repaired; **and they will bury in Topheth** (Gehenna) because there is no other place for burial. This is how I shall treat **this place** and its inhabitants, declares the Lord so as **to make this city like Topheth** (Gehenna). And the houses of Jerusalem and the houses of the kings of Judah **will be defiled like the place Topheth** (Gehenna), because of all the houses on whose rooftops they burned sacrifices to all the heavenly host and poured out libations to other gods. **Then Jeremiah came from Topheth** (Gehenna), **where the Lord has sent him to prophesy**; and he stood in the court of the Lord's house and said to all the people; thus says the Lord of host, the God of Israel, **Behold, I am about to bring on this city and all its towns the entire calamity that I have declared against it**, because they have stiffened their necks so as not to heed My words." Jeremiah used the*

**valley of Gehenna to warn Israel of their destruction as a nation. Christ also used the valley of Gehenna to warn Israel of their destruction as a nation.** It was outside the gate of Jerusalem named the "potsherd gate" in the time of Jeremiah (Jeremiah 19:1-15). Dead bodies are buried, but deathless "souls" cannot be buried on this earth in the valley of Topheth.

Many believe the angel of the Lord killed the 185,000 Assyrians in this valley when they were laying siege to Jerusalem (Isaiah 37:36). They were killed near Jerusalem, and it could have been in this valley, but I can find no proof that it was. See Isaiah 30:31-33.

Josiah "*defiled Topheth (Gehenna), which is in the valley of the children of Hinnom, that no man might make his son or his daughter to pass through the fire to Molech*" (2 Kings 23:10). When he defiled Gehenna maybe when it became the trash dump that it was in the New Testament.

It is also mentioned in Nehemiah 11:30; Jeremiah 19:2: Because of their worshiping other gods in it, God made it a place of destruction, not torment. Topheth (Gehenna in the New Testament) literally means a place of burning, "*The valley of slaughter*" (Jeremiah 7:31).

**Every reference to Gehenna in the Old Testament was to a place on this earth; not one of them says anything about eternal torment after the judgment.** It is admitted by all that Gehenna in the Old Testament was not a place of eternal torment, and it was not changed to "Hell" in any Old Testament passage, not even in the King James Version which is sometimes called "Hell's Bible."

HENRY THAYER: "Gehenna, the name of a valley on the S. and E. of Jerusalem...The Jews so abolished the place after these horrible sacrifices had been abolished by king Josiah (2 k.xxiii, 10) that they cast into it not only all manner of refuses, but even the dead bodies of animals and unburied criminals who had been executed. And since fires were always needed to consume the dead bodies, that the air might not become tainted by the putrefaction, it came to pass that the place was called (Gehenna)." "A Greek—English Lexicon Of the New Testament" page 111. He also said in "Theology," "Our inquiry shows that it is employed in the Old Testament in its literal or geographical sense only, as the name of the valley lying on the south of Jerusalem—that the Septuagint proves it retained this meaning as late as B. C. 150—that it is not found at all in the Apocrypha; neither of Philo, nor in Josephus, whose writings cover the very times of the Savior and the New Testament, thus leaving us without a single example of contemporary usage to determine its meaning at this period—that from A. D. 150—159, we find in two Greek authors, Justin and Clement of Alexandria, the first resident in Italy and the last in Egypt that Gehenna began to be used to designate a place of punishment after death, but not endless punishment since Clement was a believer in universal restoration—that the first time we find Gehenna used in this sense in any Jewish writing is near the beginning of the third century, in the Targum of Jonathan Ben Uzziel, two hundred years too late to be of any service in the argument—and lastly, that the New Testament usage shows that while it had not wholly lost its literal sense, it was also employed in the time of Christ as a symbol of moral corruption and wickedness; **but more especially as a figure of the terrible judgments of God on the rebellious and sinful nation of the Jews,**" Henry Thayer, "Theology," author of "A Greek—English Lexicon Of the New Testament."

CANON FARRAR: "In the Old Testament it is merely the pleasant valley of Hinnom (GeHinnom), subsequently desecrated by idolatry, and especially by Moloch worship, and defiled by Josiah on this account. (See 1 Kings 11:7; 2 Kings 23:10; Jer. 7:31; 19:10-14; Isa. 30:33; Tophet). Used according to Jewish tradition, as the common sewage of the city, the corpses of the worst criminals were flung into it unburied, and fires were lit to purify the contaminated air. It then became a word which secondarily implied (1) the severest judgment which a Jewish court could pass upon a criminal—the casting forth of his unburied corpse amid the fire and worms of this polluted valley; and (2) a punishment—which to the Jews as a body never meant an end—less punishment beyond the grave. **Whatever may be the meaning of the entire passages in which the word occurs, 'Hell' must be a complete mistranslation, since it attributes to the term used by Christ a sense entirely differently from that in which it was understood by our Lord's hearers, and therefore, entirely different from the sense in which He could have used it.**" From the preface to "Eternal Hope." "Gehenna, the Greek word translated hell in the common version, occurs twelve times. It is the Grecian mode of spelling the Hebrew words, which are translated, 'The Valley of Hinnom.' This valley was also called Tophet, a detestation, and an abomination. Into this place were cast all kinds of filth, with the carcasses of beasts and unburied bodies of criminals, who had been executed. Continual fires were kept to consume these. Sennacherib's army of 185,000 men was slain there in one night. Here, children were burnt to death in sacrifice to Moloch. **Gehenna, then, as occurring in the New Testament, symbolizes death and utter destruction, but in no place symbolizes a place of eternal torment"** From the Emphatic Diaglot.

GEORGE LEMASTERS said Gehenna is said to have been a receptacle of bones, bodies of beasts and criminals, and all unclean things. Page 265, Florida College Annual Lectures, 1975.

RON HALBROOK said Gehenna became a common refuse dump for the dead bodies of criminals, animal carcasses, and other kind of filth. Page 123, Florida College Annual Lectures 1986.

"Hell" From Iron Chariots Wiki "The accurate use of the word 'Hell' as a translation of Gehenna is open to interpretation. The subjects about which Jesus speaks, when referring to Gehenna, have no less significance when referring to that literal valley of the damned (as opposed to the eternal concept of punishment and torture interpreted after the fact). There is no suggestion that Gehenna need to be translated to 'Hell' any more than any other proper noun for a place or region. Similarly there is no reason to believe that Hell as a concept even occurred to the Jewish prophet or his followers." At: <http://wiki.ironchariots.org/index.php?title=Hell>.

**Whatever was cast into Gehenna (the city dump), if it were trash or the bodies of criminals that were cast into the trash dump to be destroyed, both the trash and the dead bodies were destroyed, not tormented; trash or dead bodies cannot be tormented. The fire and worms soon consumed whatever was cast into Gehenna, nothing was cast into Gehenna to be preserved, and no Jew hearing Jesus could have understand it in any way but a place of total destruction. Gehenna was a real place they could walk out and look at, and literally see the smoke ascending out of it. If Christ had used their trash dump in a way that was different from what would have been understood by those hearing Him without any explanation of the new way He used it, they could not have known what He was saying to them. The fate of Israel is compared to trash and dead bodies that were cast into the city dump to be disposed of.**

We are often told Christ used the name "Hell" eleven times, which is wrong two ways; (1) He never used "Hell," (2) He used "Gehenna," but not eleven times. The same use of Gehenna is quoted in two of the Gospels (as in Matthew 10:28 and Luke 12:5) and they count it as two times when it is only one time. Both Christ and James used the name of the city dump (Gehenna). Although the translators have changed Gehenna to Hell in most translations and have James using the word Hell, but when James wrote this the English word "Hell," did not exist, nor was there a Greek word for "Hell." **Christ never used the word Hell, He used Gehenna, and He never said one thing about Hell.**

- Even in Old English where the word Hell was first used, Hell did not have the meaning it has in today's English.
- Hell in Old English did not have the meaning that Hell now has in today's Protestant theology.

**THE USE OF GEHENNA BY CHRIST:** Gehenna, not Hell, was used on four occasions by Christ, and was used one time by James, the brother of the Lord (James 3:6). The name Gehenna is in three of the gospels eleven times, but as the three gospels repeat the same discourses, Jesus really used it in only four occasions (four sermons). None of the four occasions mentions the duration of Gehenna, none mentions endless torment.

(1). **First occasion, in the Sermon on the Mount.** *"Shall be in danger of **Gehenna**...your **whole body** be cast into **Gehenna**...and not your **whole body** go into **Gehenna**"* Matthew 5:22, 29, 30.

(2). **Second occasion, in a lesson to the twelve disciples.** *"Fear him who is able to destroy both soul and body in **Gehenna**"* Matthew 10:28. *"Fear him, who after he has killed has power to cast into **Gehenna**"* Luke 12:5.

(3). **Third occasion, in another lesson to his disciples.** *"Rather than having two eyes to be cast into **Gehenna**"* Matthew 18:9. Also in the parallel account in Mark 9:43, 45, 47.

(4). **Fourth occasion, to the Scribes and Pharisees.** *"You make him twofold more a son of **Gehenna** than yourselves...How shall you escape the judgment of **Gehenna**"* Matthew 23:15, 33.

**And one time by James, to the twelve tribes.** *"The tongue, which defiles the whole body, and sets on fire the wheel of nature, and is set on fire by **Gehenna**"* James 3:6.

**THE FIRST OCCASION IN THE SERMON ON THE MOUNT:** Gehenna is used 3 times in Christ's sermon in Matthew 5. Christ is teaching those who that at that time were under the Law.

**Judgments the disciples had heard that the Law said. Judgment of the Old Testament Law** Matthew 5:21-26, *"**You have heard** that the ancients were told, (1) 'You shall not commit murder,' and 'whoever commits murder shall be **liable to the***

*court.* ' But I say to you that everyone who is angry with his brother shall be **guilty before the court**; (2) and whoever shall say to his brother, 'Raca,' shall be **guilty before the Supreme Court**; (3) and whoever shall say, 'You fool,' **shall be guilty enough to go into the fiery hell (Greek—Gehenna of fire changed to "Hell")**" New American Standard Bible. Gehenna, the city dump of Jerusalem was always burning, day and night, 24/7.

**The three crimes that were judged by the courts under the Old Testament Law:** All three have to do with the way a person felt toward his or her brother, all three were living persons, not souls, that was being judged according to the Law by an earthly court; the Sermon on the Mount is not information about the fate of the unrighteous after death. "*Murder shall be liable to the court,*" the murder was a living person that was being judged and punished by other living persons.

**First you have heard:** Everyone who is "*Angry with his brother*" **guilty before THE COURT** (New American Standard Version): An earthly judgment by man under the Old Testament Law. "*You have heard that the ancients were told,*" what death sentence were they told would be given to a murder? A judgment for death passed by an earthly court according to the Old Testament Law, not a judgment after the resurrection.

J. W. McGARVEY: "Not the final judgment of the world, but the tribunal established by the Law of Moses in each city for the trial of murders and other criminals. (See Deut. xvi. 18.) Every man slayer was tried before this tribunal, and either put to death or confined in the city of refuge." The New Testament Commentary, page 53, The Standard Publishing Company, 1875.

**Second you have heard:** Whoever "*Shall say to his brother, 'Raca'*" **guilty before the SUPREME COURT** (New American Standard Version). A judgment made by man according to the Old Testament Law. "*Shall be in danger of the judgment,*" (American Standard Version) shall be in danger of being taken before the court and judged just as we are if we run a red light are in danger of judgment only if seen by a police. Being in danger of judgment is not a certainty of judgment, but all will be before the judgment of God after the resurrection is a certainty, not just be in danger of being there.

B. W. JOHNSON: "An epithet of contempt; 'empty head'" The People's New Testament, Gospel Light Publishing, 1889.

J. W. McGARVEY: "The council mentioned is the Supreme Court provided for by the Law of Moses (Deut. xvii. 8-13), and represented in the days of Jesus by the Sanhedrim." The New Testament Commentary, page 54, Standard Publishing Company, 1875.

**Third you have heard:** Whoever "*Shall say, 'You fool'*" **guilty enough to go into the fiery Gehenna:** Like the first two, this is a Jewish judgment where the bodies of criminals that were thought to be unworthy of a burial were cast into the city dump to be burned.

- To whom will they say, "*You fool*"? Could it be anyone other than "*His brother,*" just as the first two were? Could the difference in the sinfulness of saying to your brother "*raca*"

- (empty headed), and saying to him, "You fool" be enough difference to jump from a judgment of the Jewish court to the judgment of God at the coming of Christ?
- How could anyone know if Christ changed from judgments of individuals under the Law to a judgment of all after the resurrection when there is no indication that He changed? According to the teaching of some, a person can be angry with his brother and have contempt for him and not go to Hell, but if you say, "You fool" to your brother, then you will go to Hell.
  - Only one, the last of these sins, is said to be judged and cast into the fire of Gehenna, which if it were to be understood as some would have it, it will follow that the others of these sins did not deserve eternal torment by God in Hell, and they shall not be punished there, which is contrary to those that teach that the least unforgiven sin deserves eternal Hell; it is taught by most that believe in Hell that any sin no matter how big a sin it was or how many sins can be forgiven, even to say, "you fool," can be forgiven, and all these sins will not send a soul that was in the person that sinned to Hell, but any unforgiven sin, even just one small sin will send a soul that is in you to Hell. If this were not judgments by the Jews, judgments under the Law, if this were saying that only this third sin, this one sin would send a soul to Hell (it is the only one of the three that Jesus said is judged worthy of Gehenna) then the teaching of today makes this teaching of Christ be compliantly wrong.
  - All three of these judgments are each a judgments on a living person by other living persons. It is not one soul that will say to another soul "you fool," it is a living person that will say to another living person, "you fool" and the body of a person that will be cast into the fiery Gehenna. Not one soul that "shall say to his brother, 'Raca.'" In any of these three "judgments" nothing, not one thing is said about a soul being judged by God, not before or after the death of the person. **Nothing is said about the second coming of Christ, and nothing said about the judgment of everyone at His coming.** To the Jews having their corpse cast into Gehenna unburied was a dishonorable thing. Those that were buried were thought to be honorably; those that were judged not fit to be buried and were thrown into Gehenna to be burned were considered to be disgraceful.

DR. R. F. WEYMOUTH: "Gehenna of Fire Or 'Hell,' the severest punishment inflicted by the Jews upon any criminal. The corpse (after the man had been stoned to death) was thrown out into the Valley of Hinnom (Ge Hinnom) and was devoured by the worm or the flame." "New Testament in Modern Speech, Mark 3:29, page 10.

ALEXANDER CAMPBELL: "The fact is, that the allusions in this verse are all to human institutions or customs among the Jews; and the Judges, the Sanhedrim, and the hell-fire here introduced, and *all human punishments*" "The Campbell Debate On Everlasting Punishment," page 123, College Press, 1840.

ADAM CLARKE: "There are *three* kinds of offenses here, which exceed each other in their *degrees* of guilt.

1st. *Anger* against a man, accompanied with some injurious act.

2dly. *Contempt*, expressed by the opprobrious epithet *raca*, or *shallow brains*.

3dly. *Hatred* and *mortal enmity*, expressed by the term *moreh*, or *apostate*, where such apostasy could not be proved. Now, proportioned to these *three* offenses were *three* different degrees of punishment, each exceeding the other in its severity, as the offenses exceeded each other in their different degrees of guilt.

1st. The *judgment*, the council of *twenty-three*, which could inflict the punishment of *strangling*.

2dly. The *Sanhedrin*, or great council, which could inflict the punishment of *stoning*.

And 3dly. The being *burnt alive* in the valley of the son of Hinnom. This appears to be the meaning of our Lord." Notes on Matthew 5:22. (Note: Clarks says, "Burnt alive" but it was only the dead bodies of those who were thought to be unfit to be buried that were cast into Gehenna for their dead bodies to be burnt).

THOMAS WHITTEMORE: "Fourthly, because the last, only, of the three sins is said to be judged to the fire of *Gehenna*, which **if it were to be understood as some would have it, it will follow that some sins deserve not hell eternal, and shall not be punished there, which is contrary to themselves, who teach that the least sin deserves hell eternal.** Fifthly, Mat. 5:22 shows the severity of the Jews and Pharisees in punishing anger with out a cause. *Racha* is a word of disgrace, which signifies a crafty fellow, or wicked wretch. To apply it to any one was as great fault as to say *fool*, if not greater, yet it was punished less: Thus,

1. He who was guilty of rash anger was in danger of the *judgment*;
2. He who contemptuously said *racha*, was in danger of the *council*;
3. But if he said *fool*, he was in danger of *hell—fire*, i. e. in the true sense, to burn in the valley of the son of Hinmom."

"The Doctrine Of Eternal Hell Torments Overthrown," page 16, 1833.

J. M. DENNISTON: "Thus we have in the Sermon on the Mount (Matt. v. 21,22), a striking view of divine judgment in regard to transgressions against the sixth commandment. This matter, as our Lord intimates, the scribes were in the habit of settling with great ease. For, according to them, the whole amounted to this, that the outward act of 'murder' entailed the punishment of natural death by the sentence of the court called the 'judgment.' Starting from this circumstance, He states three forms of anger—each more guilty than the preceding one—but all of which He represents as virtually *murder*, in the sight of God, and punishable as such by His judgment. Then, as answering to these three degrees of guilt, He mentions as many degrees of punishment. Now here is the important circumstance. All these are figuratively stated in language borrowed from the three modes of capital punishment in use among the Jews. Thus the 'Judgment' employed one mode; the 'Council' (Sanhedrim) a severer; while the sentence might be further aggravated by consigning the carcass to the fire in the valley of the Son of Hinnom. 'The most important thing to keep in mind is that **there is no distinction of kind between these punishments, only of degree.** In the thing compared the judgment inflicted death by the sword, the (council) death by stoning, and the disgrace of the Gehenna of fire (hell—fire, K.J.V.) followed as an intensification of the horrors of death; but the punishment is one and the same—death.' Alford on the passage," pages 126—127, "The Perishing Soul According To Scripture," Longmans, Green, And Co., 1874.

#### **FIVE JUDGMENTS**

- These five judgments are all judgments of the Law.
- They all have sentences that are carried out in this lifetime.
- They are all judgment that are made by living people on other people while both are living on this earth, or on their body being cast unburied into Gehenna after they are dead.
- Not one of the five judgments are on a soul, not on a soul that some believe to be in a person while the person is living, and not on this soul after the person it had been in is dead.

**(1) THE FIRST JUDGMENT:** Matthew 5:23-26, A lesson on how to make your offering acceptable to God. *"Agree with your adversary quickly, while you are with him in the way; lest haply the adversary deliver you to the judge, and the judge deliver you to the officer, and you are cast into prison. Verily I say unto you, you shall by no means come out till you have paid the last farthing"* (Matthew 5:25-26).

*"Make friends quickly with your opponent at law"* New American Standard Version. **When it is paid, then the person in prison shall come out.** This is speaking of a judgment and punishment under the Law, not at the resurrection.

- **Who is to agree with whom?** It is the person charged who is to *"Make friends quickly with your opponent at law"* that charged him, *"while you are with him in the way"* (in the way to the judge).
- **What will happen if there is not an agreement?** *"Lest haply the adversary (opponent at law) deliver you to the judge, and the judge delivers you to the officer, and you are cast into prison."* Does this sound to you like the judgment at the last day and being cast into "Hell," or does this sound like an earthly opponent at law, judge, officer, and prison?
- **How long will the person who is cast into prison be in the prison?** *"You shall by no means come out thence, till you have paid the last farthing."* **When** the debt for which the person that was cast into prison is paid, **then** he will come out of prison. Those who believe in Hell tell us no one will ever come out. If this were speaking of punishment after the judgment, then it would teach a limited punishment, which would end when the last farthing (a corn of little worth) was paid.
- That this use of "Gehenna" is taken completely out of the context of an earthly courts and law by today's theology is beyond any doubt. This is speaking of a judgment and punishment under the Law, not at the resurrection.
- To teach "Hell" from this passage, Christ must be made to jump from judgments and punishments under the Law of Moses in verse 21-22, to the judgment and punishment at His coming in last part of verse 22 and then back to judgment and punishment under the Law in verse 25-26 without anything to show He was speaking of a different judgment and punishments. **First**, a part of one verse must be taken out of context. **Second**, then it much be changed from Gehenna that is a valley on this earth to Hell that we are told is not on this earth. **Third**, it must be renamed "Hell."

**(2) THE SECOND JUDGMENT:** *"You have heard that it was said, 'You shall not commit adultery'"* Matthew 5:27-30. *"And if your right eye makes you stumble, tear it out, and throw it from you; for it is better for you that **one of the parts of your body perish, than for your whole body to go into Hell** (Greek—Gehenna was changed to the hell of the Dark Age). And if your **right hand** makes you stumble, cut it off, and throw it from you: for it is better for you that **one of the parts of your body perish, then for your whole body go into hell** (Greek—Gehenna changed to "Hell" by the translates)"* New American Standard Version. Jesus is saying to them that they had heard that it was said (in the Law), *"You shall not commit adultery"* for which they would be put to death under the Law of Moses (Leviticus 20:10), and their body thrown into the valley of Gehenna. **"Eye," "hand," "one of the parts of your body,"** or **"your whole body to be thrown into Gehenna,"** thrown into a real valley is changed to, "your soul will be thrown into Hell" even though nothing is said about a soul or Hell in this passage; how could the "hand" of a soul be thrown into Hell? Those that Christ was speaking to would understand Gehenna just as it was used in the Old Testament, a real valley on this earth, that their bodies being thrown into Gehenna was their actual dead bodies that would be thrown into Gehenna, they

would not have understood it as it has now been changed by theology to be a soul thrown into Hell after the death of the *"whole body"* it had been in; they would not have understood it to be bodiless souls thrown into Hell neither before or after the resurrection.

The lesson to them, based on what they know of the use of Gehenna from the Old Testament, was that if there is a danger that they may look on a woman to lust after her, if their eye causes them to stumble, pluck it out and cast it away. If taken literal a disfigurement of their body would have been unlawful by the Old Testament Law they were under. The lesson to them was not that they were latterly to cut their hand off but that they were to remove anything from their lives that would cause them to be judged unworthy to be buried, and cause their bodies to be cast into Gehenna. Under the Law adultery had a death penalty, and could cause their whole bodies after their death to be cast into the fire and maggots in Gehenna (Leviticus 20:10-16). **Those that use this to prove Hell do not believe that to "cut off" any part of the body of a living person will keep a soul that they believe to be in a person out of Hell after the death of the person; to them the hand and the eye are a literal hand or eye, but according to their teaching "the whole body" is not a body at all, but a formless, no substance, invisible, deathless something in a person that has no body, no hand to cut off.**

The loss of a hand or eye is contrasted with the lost of the whole body, of which the hand was a part, by either the hand or the whole body being cast into the same place, both cast into Gehenna, not the loss of a hand being contrasted with a soul, of which the hand was **not** a part, the hand that was cut of was not the hand of a soul being cast into Hell. The *"eye"* and the *"right hand"* are a part of the *"whole body."* **No one can cut off the hand of a soul, which they say has no substance, a soul that no one can see or touch,** and Christ does not change from parts of the earthly body to something that most who believe in "it" says "it" has no body. No one that I know of believes Hell is an eternal place of torment believes the human body, or God will eternally torment a cut off hand. In the same sentence, did Christ change from a literal physical hand to a hand of a "soul"?

In Matthew 5:21-47 Christ is giving a lesson on how a living person was to live in this lifetime.

- *"You shall not kill"* (Matthew 5:21) is one living person killing another person, not one soul killing another soul.
- Being angry with your brother (Matthew 5:22) is also a living person being angry with another living person, not one soul angry at another soul.
- Committing adultery (Matthew 5:27) is a living person committing adultery. Can souls commit adultery, either before or after the death of the person it was in?
- Putting away your wife (Matthew 5:31) is also done only by a living person. Do souls have wives?
- Swearing (Matthew 5:34) is a living person swearing.
- An eye for an eye (Matthew 5:38) is by living persons only in this lifetime.
- Love your neighbor (Matthew 5:43); one living person is to love another living persons.

- If a living person cuts off a hand and cast it into Gehenna (if Gehenna was Hell) there would be a living person on earth that had cast a hand into Hell that is not on this earth. Christ is not saying to literally cut off your hand and cast it into the trash dump to be burned up, but to remove anything from your life that causes stumbling. Dead whole bodies were cast into the same place the hand of a living person would have the hand would be cast that was cut off a living person . Many of the people of Jerusalem would had seen bodies cast into the city dump and had seen them burned up or being eaten by worms. Whole dead bodies were literally cast into the same place on earth that the hand of the person that was alive would have been cast.
- There is not a word about a pagan soul that is living in a person, or about a place where God will eternally torment souls.

**If the "whole body" were a formless no substance soul, then the "hand," which was cut off this body is a part of the "whole body," and would also be a formless no substance something that we could not cut off, and if we could cut the hand of a soul off, then the cut off hand of an immortal soul would be as immortal as the rest of the no substance formless soul from which it was cut off. In today's theology no one believes you can cut off the hand of a soul and cast it into Hell so that the rest of that soul will not go to Hell.** No one that I know of believes the "soul" shall *"enter into life,"* which he or she says is Heaven with a cut off hand of that soul in Hell. The "soul" in Heaven, but its "hand" in Hell! They don't believe that a disfigurement of the earthly body, whether it is a self inflicted disfigurement, or any other disfigurement, will be passed onto the immaterial, invisible soul, which they believe is to be something that is now in a person and that only this "it" will be in Heaven. Neither do they believe any person has the power to cut off any part of his immaterial soul. Gehenna must be changed to Hell and be literal, but the cut off the hand that is cast into Hell cannot be literal.

*"Perish"* must be changed to mean, "preserve." God's word says He will destroy a soul, but many change this and make it say God will not let a soul perish, but will preserve it forever. There seems to be no end to the changes they are willing to make. ***"Destroy the body and soul" must be changed to "preserve a soul after the body (person) is destroyed."***

A dead body part, or a whole dead person being cast into the city dump (Gehenna) to be destroyed by fire or worms is not a picture of a living immortal soul being tormented forever in some place other then the valley of Gehenna. There is no suggestion of eternal torment in this. **There is nothing, not one word about an immortal soul or an immortal spirit in this passage.** It was their *"whole body"* that would be literally cast into the valley of Gehenna. **Instead of saying that immortal souls will burn forever in the valley of Gehenna, it says the body of a person will be cast into Gehenna and be destroyed in Gehenna.** Nothing is said about an immaterial something that is in a person in Matthew 5:22, 29 or 30. "Soul" is not in Matthew 5; it has been added, and is preached today that the "soul" will be cast into

"Hell;" changed from the "hand," "foot," "eye," or the "whole body" being be cast into the Gehenna that those hearing Christ would know about. Christ's disciples were very familiar with the valley of Gehenna where the garbage of the city and bodies was cast, but they know nothing of the Hell that is taught today. This passage is one of the most used passages to prove a person has in immaterial something that has no body that is in them, and whatever this bodiless something is it will be in an eternal place of torment after the death of the person it is in. Neither (1) an immaterial, deathless something that is now in a person, but leaves the person at their death (2) or a place where God will eternal torment is not in Matthew 18:8-9. Everything that Christ said is changed, and that by those that say they do not change the Bible. (1) "Whole body" must be changed to a bodiless "soul," (2) Gehenna, a place on this earth where there was no torment changed into Hell, a place that is not on this earth (3) then is added a god that endlessly will be tormenting many millions of bodiless souls without ever a drop of mercy.

In Matthew 18:8-9:

- Being "Cast into the everlasting (aionios—age lasting) fire" (18:8) and being
- Being "Cast into the Gehenna fire" (18:9) are used interchangeable.

It is the fire that is said to be age lasting, not one thing is said about how long a person or how long a soul that had been in a person unto the death of the person would or would not last in the fire although it is repeatedly used to teach that a soul that is now in you will be tormented in Hell after you are dead if you do not save "it," whatever "it" is. The aionios (age lasting) fire of Gehenna went out in A. D. 70; today there is no fire in Gehenna and no dead bodies are being cast into it; Gehenna is now a place for tourist.

(3) THE THIRD JUDGMENT: "You have heard you shall not forswear yourself" (Matthew 5:33).

(4) THE FOURTH JUDGMENT: "You have heard...an eye for an eye" (Matthew 5:38).

(5) THE FIFTH JUDGMENT: "You have heard...love your neighbor" (Matthew 5:43).

**Summary: All five of the "you have heard" are about judgments of the Old Testament Law that had punishment of persons only in this life, not anything about any punishment of souls after the resurrection and judgment. Being cast into Gehenna is an earthly judgment that is in the same context with other earthly judgments.** This is the first occasion Christ used the term Gehenna; if He had used it to teach endless torment, He said nothing that those hearing Him, or those who read His words today could know He was speaking of any judgment other than the judgments in the Law given through Moses; there is absolutely no indication He was speaking of eternal torment of a "soul."

#### **ALL FIVE ARE JUDGMENTS OF THE LAW.**

- They all have sentences that are carried out in this lifetime.
- They are all judgment of the Law of Moses that are made by living people on other living people while both are living on this earth (whether a person is guilty of murder or not

guilty), or on the body of the murderer being cast unburied into Gehenna after he or she is dead.

- Not one of the five judgments are on a soul, not on a soul that some believe to be in a person while the person is living, and not on a soul after the person it had been in is dead.

**THE SECOND OCCASION IN A LESSON TO THE TWELVE DISCIPLES:** There are three views on who is doing the casting into Gehenna.

- View one: Gehenna is a real place on this earth where dead “killed” bodies were cast into it, and the dead bodies were burned up or were eaten up by worms.
- View two: This is speaking of God destroying the life (psukee) of the lost after the Judgment Day; bringing the lost to a complete end.
- View three: This view is speaking of a place not on this earth, not Gehenna, a place that has been given the name “Hell” where immortal deathless souls that were in the lost persons before their death will forever be tormented by God.

**GEHENNA IS A REAL WELL KNOWN PLACE THAT IS ON THIS EARTH.** This was spoken to the twelve apostles when they were sent forth to preach, *“The kingdom of heaven is at hand”* (Matthew 10:1-28). He was persecuted, and they would be, but they were to *“Fear them not.” “But I will warn you whom (YOU) shall fear: **fear him, who after he has killed (YOU, killed the ones Christ sent out) has power to cast (YOU, cast those Christ sent out) INTO GEHENNA**”* (Luke 12:4-5). *“Has the **authority** to cast into Gehenna”* New American Standard Version. *“Those who kill the body”* (12:4), and *“**after** he has killed”* (the body) (12:5) are both speaking of killing the body. *“**Fear him who is able to destroy** (Apollumi) **both soul** (life—psukee) **and body IN GEHENNA**”* Matthew 10:28; the same thing happens to *“both soul and body,”* both are destroyed, not many believe the body is cast into “Hell.” *“Be not afraid of them that kill the body, and after that have no more that they can do. But I will warn you whom you shall fear: Fear him, who after he had killed has the power to cast into Gehenna”* (Luke 12:4-5). It seems to be as clear as it could be said that the destroying is the body being *“cast into Gehenna;”* the killing of a person comes before their dead body being cast into the valley of Gehenna, not, as this is changed to be, killing a deathless soul that cannot be killed before that killed soul is cast into Hell. Fear him who has the authority to cast the killed earthly body into Gehenna, the trash dump where the bodies of those who were not thought to be worthy to be buried were cast into Gehenna to be destroyed. *“**Destroy both...in Gehenna**”* in Matthew 10:28, and *“killed”* and then cast into Gehenna in the parallel account in Luke 12:4-5 does not mean a soul that cannot be “killed” or “destroyed” and will always be alive and torment in a completely difference place then Gehenna, a difference place called “Hell;” the fate of the one being cast into Gehenna is destruction, *“able to destroy,”* nothing is said about any kind of torment of a living soul at any time, if a soul can be “killed” (Luke 12:4-5) the “killed” soul cannot be immortal. *“Destroy”* in Matthew and *“killed”* in the parallel passage in Luke, and then cast into Gehenna is not Plato’s pagan soul that is “alive” in Hell and is

being tormented by God. Christ was speaking to the twelve apostles, He was not telling His apostles to fear for a soul being tormented by God in Hell by God after God had killed their bodies.

- Fear him who is able to destroy a soul (life—psukee) in Gehenna.
- Fear him who is able to destroy the body in Gehenna.
  - The same destruction of body and psuche, (translated soul in King James Version) shows the completeness of the destruction, both have the same destruction, one is not destroyed, and the other one is not destroyed but is tormented by God.

If this were changed to a soul being tormented in Hell, then it would also make the body be tormented in Hell. Being killed and then cast into Gehenna is not being alive and tormented in Hell. **This passage speaks only of persons that have already been “killed,” persons that are already dead being cast into Gehenna only after they were dead.**

**The only place spoken of in this passage is Gehenna.**

- **Nothing is said about a place called “Hell.”**
- **Nothing is said about torment after death, not in Gehenna or Hell.**
- **Nothing is said about any kind of life after death in this passage, not life in Gehenna, not life in Hell, or life in Heaven.**
- **Nothing is said about any torment in Gehenna, or anyone being cast into Gehenna before being *killed* or *destroyed*. No living person was cast into Gehenna.**
- But when Gehenna is changed to Hell, then Hell is said to be a place of endless torment for a living soul that cannot be killed or destroyed.

Explain this change!

- The killing is done **before** being cast into Gehenna.
- When Gehenna is changed to Hell and the “*killed*” is changed to an eternal life of torment for a soul that cannot be killed, this passage would then makes the torment (killing) be before being cast into Hell, not torment that is after being cast into Hell. But this seems to be no problem for those that change, after they have changed the “*killed*” to eternal life in torment, and changed Gehenna to Hell, they just make another change and change the time of the torment from before being cast into Gehenna, to after being cast into Hell.

Christ speaks of being destroyed in Gehenna, but never says anything about Gehenna being eternal, or about torment in Gehenna, but those who change Gehenna into Hell add both eternal life and torment to Gehenna.

To have the “Hell” that is taught today, Gehenna must be changed from a place of desertion to a place of torment with no desertion.

(1). Then the changed place must be moved.

(2). Then after the place that have been changed and moved, it must then be given a new name (Hell), a name that is not in the Hebrew Old Testament or the Greek New Testament.

**There is no ground for the traditional view of an immortal soul that cannot be killed or destroyed in this passage, or any other passage. Jesus used both kill and destroy, but said nothing about torment. Theology must be used to change “*killed*” and “*destroy*” to life in torment, for if the words killed and**

**destroy are not changed to mean life, there would be no living "souls" to be tormented in Hell; therefore, no Hell.**

By translating (1) life into soul and (2) destroy into lose, what Christ said was changed from:

(1). The person that loves the world will destroy his or her life.

(2). Changed it to the person that loves the world will lose a soul that is in them, but not destroy it for it is deathless and when the person that lost it is dead, a soul will go on living without the person that lost it. Will God torment a soul because of the sins of a person?

Luke makes it as clear that it is the person that will be destroyed, not an immortal something in a person, "*For what is a man profited if **he** gains the whole world, and loses (apollumi—destroys) or forfeits **himself***" (Luke 9:25)? The translators were not able to change Luke 9:25 from the person being lost to an immortal something being lost that no person knows what that something really is. If whatever a "soul" is, if it were being tormented in "Hell" "it" would know where it was, only the person that lost it would not know where it was, or would not know anything that was happening to whatever "it" is.

If a soul is something in a person, that soul will be alive after the person is dead, would that not make it be a soul that had lost the person it was in, not as it is taught that a person that sins loses a soul that was in them? All this is to show how completely foolish they made Christ by trying to put Plato's immortal soul into the mouth of Christ.

Apollumi (destroy) is used 95 times in the New Testament. **Matthew 10:28 and 39** (with the parallel accounts in Luke, Mark, and John) **is the only time it is used with psukee—life, and it says fear him who is able to destroy (apollumi) a soul (psukee—life).**

- What ever happens to a soul (psukee—life) also happens to the body.
- What ever happens to the body also happens to a soul (psukee—life).
  - If one is "*destroyed*" in Gehenna, both are destroyed in Gehenna.
  - If one is never destroyed, but it is tormented in Hell then both are never destroyed and both are tormented in Hell.

Those who believe this "psukee" is a deathless soul that cannot die must deny this plain statement made by Christ that it could be destroyed.

Men did kill the bodies of many disciples, and Christ warned His disciples that they would be killed, but this has no effect on their ultimate existence. Death is but a brief sleep, which will be as if it were only a moment from death unto the resurrection. (Deuteronomy 31:16; 2 Samuel 7:12; 1 Kings 1:21; Job 7:21; 14:12; Psalm 13:31; Jeremiah 51:39, 57; 1 Kings 2:10; 11:21, 43; 14:20, 31; 15:8, 24; 16:6, 28; 22:40, 50; 2 Kings 8:24; 10:35; 13:9, 13; 14:16, 22, 29; 15:7, 22, 38; 16:20; 20:21; 21:18; 24:6; 2 Chronicles 9:31; 12:16; 14:1; 16:13; 21:1; 26:2, 23; 27:9; 28:27; 32:33; 33:20; Job 3:13; Isaiah 26:19; Matthew 9:24; 25:5; 27:52; Mark 5:39; Luke 8:52; John 11:11-14; Acts 7:60; 13:36; 1 Corinthians 15:6, 18, 20, 51; 1 Thessalonians 4:13-15; 5:10; 2 Peter 3:4). While there is nothing about a resurrection in Luke 22:4-5 or Matthew

10:28, there will be a resurrection, and in the ultimate eternal sense man cannot kill the psukee (life). God can destroy and make our memory to perish (Deuteronomy 32:39; 1 Samuel 2:6; Ecclesiastes 9:4-6; Psalm 31:12; 88:5; Isaiah 26:14; Ecclesiastes 9:10; Matthew 10:28; Luke 12:5; Romans 6:23). If death does not indicate unconsciousness, then the analogy of sleep, which is used throughout the Bible, is meaningless for the dead are not asleep. It is more than just meaningless, saying the dead are asleep when they are awake in Heaven or Hell would be an outright lie that is repeated frequently. The second death is never called a sleep because there will be no waking up or resurrection from it.

**If the words "immortal soul" were substituted for "soul" and "life," it would be absurd.** *"But are not able to kill the immortal soul (life—psukee): but fear him who is able to destroy both the immortal soul (life—psukee) and body in Hell (Gehenna)...He that finds his immortal soul (life—psukee) shall lose his immortal soul (life—psukee); and he that loses his immortal soul for my sake shall find his immortal soul"* (Matthew 10:28-39). When this is used to prove that a person has an immortal soul in them, which cannot be destroyed, it proves that an immortal soul can be destroyed (killed, Luke 12:5). If psukee were an immortal soul, then God would be able to destroy (kill) this immortal soul. **There is no stronger way in which to say God can and will destroy it (psukee—life).** He is to be feared by those of the world because He will. **I find it strange that one of the most used passages to prove there is an "immaterial, invisible part of man" (Vine) that cannot be destroyed says the psukee (life) can be destroy, the very thing that some are trying to prove cannot be destroyed can be destroyed; but no stranger then the use of death to mean an eternal life of torment with God doing the tormenting.** By saying black is white you can prove anything.

The point some are trying to make from being *"able to destroy"* is that there is life after death, and this life can only be an immortal soul that cannot be destroyed, which this does not prove. At the resurrection there will be life that **God can destroy**, not that there is an immortal soul that God cannot destroy. **It says nothing about an "immaterial, invisible part of man" that is alive before the resurrection that cannot be destroyed.** It does not say there will be any life from death unto the resurrection. That there will be a resurrection is taught through out the New Testament, but if all are alive when Christ comes, there cannot be a resurrection of those that are not dead. **God can destroy the life that now is, and the life that will be after the resurrection.** He is to be feared by the lost because He will destroy the life they will have after the resurrection.

**Would prove more than the advocate's of an immortal soul want to prove.** If Matthew 10:28 were changed to be speaking of torment in Hell it would prove more than they believe and more them they want to prove, for they do not believe this earthly body will be tormented in "Hell," or that the *"immaterial, invisible part of man"*

will be destroyed. But, to prove their Hell, they make destroy be just a loss of well being, but still alive and being tormented in Hell. If the immaterial, invisible part of a person is not destroyed, but just lost its well—being, then the earthly body is not destroyed, but has just lost its well—being. The same thing would happen to both the body and “*the immaterial, invisible part of a person;*” therefore, if destroy means one is tormented, not destroyed, then destroy means the earthly body will be tormented in Hell just as we are told that a soul will be tormented in Hell. Most who believes in Hell do not believe the flesh and blood “body” will be tormented, but it is clear that whatever happens to the “body” also happens to the “soul” (psukee—life), both are destroyed. If one is killed, both are killed, if one is tormented, both are tormented. **If God is able to kill or destroy both the body and soul (psukee—life), neither one could now be immortal.**

Psukee as it is used in Luke 12, New International Version.

- “*Fear him who after the killing of the body, has power to throw **YOU** (psukee) into hell*” (Greek—Gehenna, throw your body he has killed it into Gehenna) (Luke 12:5).
- “*And I’ll say to **MYSELF** (psukee), ‘**YOU** (psukee) have plenty of good things lain up for many years’*”(Luke 12:18).
- “*But God said to him, ‘You fool! This very night your **LIFE** (psukee) will be demanded from you’*” (Luke 12:20).
- “***LIFE** (psukee) is more than food, and the body more than clothes*” (Luke 12:23).

“*Fear him, who after he has killed has power/authority to cast INTO GEHENNA*” (1) Is this speaking of the Jewish governing authorities that after they killed, then cast the bodies into Gehenna of those they thought not to be worthy of a burial (see “The five Judgments” in the first occasion above), (2) or is it speaking of God destroying Israel in A. D. 70 when many were killed and left unburied, many of them unburied in Gehenna (see Chapter Eight, Part Four). It definitely is not speaking of a dead (“*killed*”) soul being cast into Hell.

In summary: **There is absolutely nothing in this passage about an immortal deathless soul that cannot be killed being endlessly tormented in Hell by God.** Those that believe there is an immortal soul do not believe that deathless soul can be killed. The name “Gehenna” designates a known location that is on this earth, a location that is known even to this day; every use of Gehenna in the Bible is to a real place that is on this earth, not once is the name Gehenna applied to any place after death, not once did God say anything about a place called Hell; only by a mistranslation can Gehenna be changed to Hell. Hell is 100% a man made up place, a place that does not exist in the Bible.

**THE THIRD OCCASION: IN ANOTHER LESSON TO HIS DISCIPLES:** This was a different discourse than Matthew 5:29-30 above, but He was teaching the same thing. See the notes on the first occasion above. Matthew 18:9 “*And if **your** right eye makes **you** stumble, tear it out, and throw it from **you**; for it is better for **you** that one of the parts of **your** body perish, than for **your** whole body to be thrown into hell*”

**(Greek—Gehenna).**” *“Whole bodies”* were cast into Gehenna, but I know of no one that believes in Hell that believes the *“whole body”* will be cast into Hell, most believe that a soul that had been in the *“whole body”* will be cast into Hell but only after that soul leaves the *“whole body”*. Mark 9:43, 45, 47 *“And if **your** hand cause **you** to stumble, cut it off: it is good for **you** to enter into life maimed, rather than having **your** two hands to go into **Hell (Greek—Gehenna)**, into the unquenchable fire. And if **your** foot cause **you** to stumble, cut it off; it is good for **you** to enter into life halt, rather than having **your** two feet to be cast into **Hell (Greek—Gehenna)**. And if **your** eye cause **you** to stumble, cast it out; it is good for **you** to enter into the kingdom of God with one eye, rather than having two eyes to be cast into **Hell (Greek—Gehenna)** where their worm dies not, the fire is not quenched”* *“Where their worm dies not, the fire is not quenched”* in Mark 9:44 is a direct quotation of Isaiah 66:24. Mark 66:46 and 48 are in some translations but not in others are also a direct quotation of Isaiah 66:24. **Not many believes the human body is going to be cast in “Hell” and be tormented, yet this passage about the human body, a person, being cast into the valley of Gehenna is often used to prove an immaterial “soul” will be eternally tormented by God, not in the valley of Gehenna, but in Hell; the “hand,” “eye,” and “body” are parts of a live person, not parts of an immaterial soul that has no earthy parts; the “whole body” is the same body that the “eye” is to be pluck out of; the “foot” that is latterly cut off and cast into Gehenna is a part of the earthy body, not a foot of a soul that is somehow cut off of a soul and then cast into Hell to keep the rest of a soul from being cast into Hell.** A body or parts of a body could have been cast into Gehenna; a body or no part of a body cannot be cut off and cast into the Hell that is taught today. The foot that is cut off and cast into Gehenna is a part of the “whole body” that is alive on earth at the time the foot is cut off; it was a living person that were to cut off their foot and cast it into the earthly Gehenna.

- *“It would be better for **him** if...he had been **CAST INTO THE SEA”** (Mark 9:42).*
- *“It is better for **you** to enter life maimed...then be **CAST INTO GEHENNA”** (Mark 9:43).*
- *“It is better for **you** to enter halt into life then...be **CAST INTO GEHENNA”** (Mark 0:45).*
  - Both the sea and Gehenna are places on this earth. It is a person, not a soul that is *“cast into the sea,”* and a person, not a soul, that is *“cast into Gehenna.”*
- *“It is better for **you** to enter into life maimed”* (Mark 9:43).
- *“It is better for **you** to enter life halt”* (Mark 9:46).
- *“It is better for **you** to enter the kingdom of God with one eye”* (Mark 9:47). Throughout Mark the kingdom of God is the earthly kingdom, the church; it is not saying “it is better for a soul to enter Heaven with only one eye. No person in Heaven will be maimed or have only one eye. If this was either a soul while it is still in a person, or a soul after the resurrection, what could possibility be the meaning of cutting off a hand of a soul?

**“Where their worm dies not, the fire is not quenched”** is a direct quotation from Isaiah 66:23-24 where it is speaking of dead bodies on this earth being literally burned with fire and dead bodies being literally eaten by worms just as

anything that was cast into Gehenna was literally burned with fire or literally eaten by worms; if, as we are repeatedly told, an immaterial soul has no body, then how could it be eaten by worms? Gehenna, a real place on this earth, has been changed to Hell, a place not on this earth that there is not one word about it in the Bible that says such a place exist, and bodies has been changed to souls that have no body and these souls are tormented in a place that not one Bible passage tells of. *"It is better for you to enter **life** crippled"* (Mark 9:43), what **"life"** is Christ speaking of, this life *"crippled,"* or life in Heaven *"crippled"*? If Christ were speaking of Heaven, unless it is possible to be crippled with only one foot and one eye in Heaven, this passage would make no sense. Do unconditional immoralists believe Christ is saying it is better for an immortal soul to enter life in Heaven a *"crippled"* soul; *"it is good for **you** to enter into life halt, rather than having **your** two feet to be cast into **Hell (Greek—Gehenna)**"*? If Christ were speaking of immortal souls entering life in Heaven or being cast into Hell, would there be any way to say there will not be crippled souls in Heaven? These are teaching that if there is anything in our lives that would be in the way of entering into the kingdom of Heaven we need to remove them; a person who uses drugs needs to repent, a person who is a thief needs to repent—to remove (cut off) the things from their lives that would prevent him or her from entering into the kingdom.

**THE FOURTH OCCASION: IN A SERMON TO THE SCRIBES AND PHARISEES:** Gehenna is used two times in a sermon to the Scribes and Pharisees warning them of God's rejection of Israel. In Matthew 23 and 24 Christ speaks of the destruction of Israel. *"All these things shall come upon this generation"* (Matthew 23:36). **The context of these two uses of Gehenna are clearly an in time judgment of Israel, a judgment that came in A. D. 70 and has now passed, not of anything that will be after the judgment at the coming of Christ. THEY HAVE NO REFERENCE TO "HELL."** The judgment and destruction of Israel did come on that *"generation,"* but **"damnation of Hell"** as it is preached today did not come on that *"generation."* Damnation" is from krisis which means judgment, not damnation as it is mistranslated in the King James Version, the Greek says, "judgment of Gehenna," not the "damnation of Hell," as it was changed to in the King James Version. These two uses of Gehenna are in a context of a rebuke toward the Pharisees and religious leaders of that time, and not about anything after the Judgment Day. Added to this is that it is followed by the lamentation of Jesus over the doomed city of Jerusalem, *"Truly I say to you, all these things shall come upon this generation. O Jerusalem, Jerusalem that kills the prophet's and stones them that are sent unto her! How often would I have gathered your children together even as a hen gathers her chickens under her wings, and you would not! **Behold, your house is left unto you desolate"*** (Matthew 23:37-38). Matthew 24 is about the coming judgment and destruction of Jerusalem,

**Israel the wicked husbandmen** Matthew 21:33-46: Before looking at this use of Gehenna it may help understand it to first look at the parable of the wicked husbandman that comes just before it, and it is a part of the same sermon spoken to the Scribes and Pharisees. *"When; therefore, the lord of the vineyard shall come, what will he do unto these husbandman? They say unto him, **He will miserably DESTROY these miserable men, and will let out the vineyard unto other husbandmen, who will render him the fruits in their seasons.** Jesus said unto them, did you never read in the scriptures, the stone, which the builders rejected, the same was made the head of the corner; this was from the Lord, and it is marvelous in our eyes? **Therefore say I unto YOU, the kingdom of God shall be taken away from YOU, and shall be given to a nation bringing forth the fruits thereof.** And he who falls on this stone will be broken to pieces; but on whomever it falls, it will scatter him like dust. And when the chief priests and Pharisees heard his parables, **they understood that He was speaking about them.**"* How is it that today most do not understand this parable to be about Israel, do not understand *"that He was speaking about them"*? Many parables deal with the rejection of Christ by Israel and Israel's destruction. See chapter 8, part 1, and part 2.

**(1) SON OF GEHENNA:** Matthew 23:15 *"Woe unto **you**, Scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! For **you** compass sea and land to make one proselyte; and when he is become so, **you** make him twofold more a son of **Hell (Greek—Gehenna)** then **yourselves.**"* In speaking to the Pharisees, Christ said, *"For **you** are like unto whitewashed tombs, which outwardly appear beautiful, but inwardly are full of dead man's bones, and of all **uncleanness**"* (Matthew 23:27). The Scribes and Pharisees made their proselytes' twofold more a **son of Gehenna** than them selves (Matthew 23:15). A place cannot give birth to a person. No one, not even those who believe in Hell believe Hell is literally the father or mother of anyone. To call a person a son of a place is not to say that place is literally the person's mother, but is to say a part of his or her character is similar to the place. **Gehenna was a place of filth and uncleanness.** To use the metaphors *"son of Gehenna"* is to say they were **unclean** like the filthy city dump. To be a *"son of Gehenna"* means to be like Gehenna and the things in it: to be filthy and contemptible, fit only to be destroyed. The proselytes were made twofold more **unclean** than the Pharisees, this is speaking of them being sons of Gehenna (unclean) while they were alive, not a soul twofold more unclean in Hell. Because Gehenna does not literally have sons, this is a figure of speech, and is not intended to be taken literally, not in this life, or after death. James and John are called *"sons of thunder"* (Mark 3:17). Thunder did not give birth to them, but a part of their character is similar to thunder, *"And if a son of peace be there"* (Luke 10:6), *"Son of exhortation"* (Acts 4:36), *"Sons of disobedience"* (Ephesians 2:2), *"The son of destruction"* (2 Thessalonians 2:3). These *"sons of Gehenna,"* were people that

were living on this earth at the time Christ said this, it was not souls in Hell that was "sons of Gehenna."

J. W. McGARVEY, Matthew 8:11: "The child of anything in Hebrew phraseology expressed the idea of special property which one has in the thing specified, as, for instance, children of disobedience (Eph. ii. 2)" *The Fourfold Gospel*, Standard Publishing Company, 1914.

ROBERT W. YARBROUGH: "In biblical usage 'son of' normally means physical descendent. But it also has a metaphorical use. It can mean 'to share the characteristics' of someone or something. 'Sons of thunder' are boisterous and impulsive young men (Mark 3:17; cf. Luke 9:54). 'Sons of light and sons of the day' (1 Thess. 5:5) are people whose lives reflect God's moral brilliance." *Hell Under Fire*, page 73, 2004, Zondervan printers.

**This metaphor is taken from the filth and uncleanness of Gehenna. Although this passage is repeatedly used to prove eternal torment of a soul after the death of a person, there is nothing about any torment in it, not in this lifetime, or after death, or after the judgment.**

In the same address to the Scribes and Pharisees, Christ gives two more examples of their uncleanness.

(1). The Pharisees washed the outside of the cup to make it clean, *"But within they are full from extortion and excess. You blind Pharisee, cleanse first the inside of the cup and of the platter, that the outside thereof may become clean also"* (Matthew 23:25-26).

(2). The Pharisees were like whitewashed graves, *"Which appear beautiful, but inwardly are full of dead man's bones, and all uncleanness. Even so you also outwardly appear righteous unto men, but inwardly you are full of hypocrisy and iniquity"* (Matthew 23:27-28).

Matthew 23:13-39 is a list of seven woes to the Scribes and Pharisees. *"Twofold more a son of Gehenna."* Matthew 23:15 is the second of the seven woes on the Scribes and Pharisees (Matthew 23:13-39).

(1). The Pharisees shut the kingdom of Heaven against men, and enter not in (Matthew 23:13-14).

(2). **The Pharisees made their proselytes' twofold more a son of Gehenna than them selves** (Matthew 23:15).

(3). The Pharisees said to swear by the temple is nothing (Matthew 23:16-22).

(4). The Pharisees left undone the weightier matters (Matthew 23: 23-24).

(5). The Pharisees were full of hypocrisy and iniquity; they cleaned only the outside of the cup (Matthew 23:25-26).

(6). The Pharisees are like whitewashed tombs, full of dead men's bones and all uncleanness (Matthew 23:17-28).

(7). **The Pharisees are sons and partakers with their fathers that slew the prophets. "How shall YOU escape the judgment of Gehenna"?** (Matthew 23:29-39).

**(2) JUDGMENT OF GEHENNA:** Matthew 23:33-36 *"Fill you up then the measure of YOUR fathers. YOU serpents, YOU offspring of vipers, how shall YOU escape the judgment of Hell (Greek—Gehenna)? Therefore, behold, I send unto YOU prophets, and wise men, and Scribes: some of them shall YOU kill and crucify; and some of them shall YOU scourge in YOUR synagogues, and persecute from city to city: that upon YOU may come all the righteous blood shed on the earth, from the blood of Abel the righteous unto the blood of Zechariah son of Barachiah,*

whom **YOU** slew between the sanctuary and the altar. Verily I say unto **YOU**, **all these things shall come upon this generation.**" All the "you" are the Pharisees; Christ had just told the Scribes and Pharisees they made their proselytes more a "**SON of Gehenna,**" more unclean than themselves; then He calls them "**offspring (SONS of) vipers,**" and "**all these things** (all the righteous blood from Abel to Zechariah) **shall come upon this generation.**" Matthew 23 is a discourse to the Scribes and the Pharisees, and they knew that Jesus was speaking to them; the "you" is the Pharisees that Christ was speaking to, it is not about things that are happening today, or about things that will happen after the Judgment Day; many take one word of this discourse out of it context, and then changed this one noun (Gehenna) to another noun (Hell) that is not in the Bible.

The Scribes and Pharisees knew the law, but did not keep it. Outwardly they were as beautiful as white sepulchers, but inwardly were full of dead man's bones. They would not escape the judgment to come. "*Verily I say unto you, **all these things shall come upon this generation***" (Matthew 23:36). Matthew 24 is a discourse to His disciples about the destruction of Israel of which He had spoken of to the Pharisees in the chapter before. **That generation would not escape the judgment of Gehenna.** It came in A. D. 70 when historians say Gehenna had many dead bodies of Jews from the destruction of Jerusalem (See Jeremiah 19). To the Jews, to be judged as not being fit to be buried were the worse of all insult. It was the most severe judgment of contempt upon a criminal known to the Jews. In the judgment soon to come upon them Josephus said six hundred thousand dead bodies of the Jews were carried out of Jerusalem and left unburied.

**CONDEMNATION, DAMNATION, AND DAMNED of the King James Version.** In Matthew 23 the seventh woe of this lecture and warning to the Scribes and Pharisees and Matthew 24 are about the judgment coming to them and on Israel. Why did the King James translators change, "**The judgment (krisis) of Gehenna**" into, "**The damnation (krisis) of Hell**" (Matthew 23:33)?

"*Judgment of Gehenna*" for Israel that "*shall come upon this generation*" (Matthew 23:36) is changed to: "*Damnation of Hell.*" That generation is long pasted and there has been no "*damnation of Hell*" yet, but the judgment of Gehenna did come on that generation in A. D. 70 when Israel was destroyed. I would really like to know how the translators thought they had the right to change this warning to the Scribes and Pharisees about a judgment of Gehenna that was coming on that generation to the Hell they believed in, especially when **neither the word "damnation" nor "Hell" is not in the Greek from which they translated it.**

Krisis is used in the New Testament 48 times and in the King James Version it is translated "*judgment*" 41 times, "*damnation*" 3 times, "*condemnation*" 2 times, "*accusation*" 2 times. The translators must have thought that if they put damnation with Hell that it would make the threat of Hell stronger? Krisis should have never

been translated damnation or condemnation. In the American Standard Version Krisis is translated "judgment" 47 times, and "sin" 1 time in Mark 3:29.

**THE RESURRECTION OF DAMNATION** (krisis) (KJV), **JUDGMENT** (krisis) (ASV), "*The resurrection of judgment* (krisis)" (John 5:29) says nothing about an eternal life of torment in Hell after the second coming of Christ although this passage is continually used to prove eternal torment. **The verdict of the judgment**, if it were death, or eternal life with torment **is not in this passage**. In an attempt to put Hell in the Bible, the translators of the King James Version (1) changed the judgment and made it be the verdict of the judgment, (2) and then made the verdict be what they needed it to be, namely eternal torment by God. This probably deliberate mistranslation is based on the translator's belief of the doctrine of an endless life in Hell being tormented by God.

John 5:29

- "*Unto the resurrection of ~~damnation~~* (krisis)" King James Version, New King James Version.
- "*Unto the resurrection of judgment* (krisis)" American Standard Version.

John 5:24

- "*Shall not come into ~~condemnation~~* (krisis)" King James Version.
- "*Shall not come into judgment* (krisis)" New King James Version, American Standard Version.

Matthew 23:33

- "*Escape the ~~damnation~~* (krisis)" King James Version, New King James Version.
- "*Escape the judgment* (krisis)" American Standard Version.

John 3:19

- "*And this is the ~~condemnation~~* (krisis)" King James Version, New King James Version.
- "*And this is the judgment* (krisis)" American Standard Version.

If "krisis" means "damnation," then we are all in trouble for. "*It is appointed unto men once to die, and after this comes ~~damnation~~ judgment* (krisis)" (Hebrews 9:27), judgment will come to all, both the saved and the lost, but not damnation. When it is applied only to the lost the King James translators translated "krisis" condemnation or damnation, but when it is applied to all (Hebrews 9:27) they translated "krisis" judgment. Just one more example of how they were willing to mistranslate to put "Hell" into the Bible. The American Standard Version and most others do not translate "krisis" into condemnation or damnation. **Two words had to be changed in Matthew 23:33 to put today's Hell in the Bible. "Judgment" had to be changed to "damnation," and "Gehenna" had to be changed to "Hell."**

FOY E. WALLACE Jr.: NO ROOT, NO BRANCH, NO HOPE OF LIFE FOR ISRAEL. "The prophet declares that 'the day shall burn as an oven' and 'it shall burn them up'—a pronouncement against the Jewish nation and governments that rejected and condemned the Christ, and persecuted his saints." "God's Prophetic Word," page 545.

Krino is translated judge, judged, 86 times in the King James Version, damned 1 time, condemn 1 time, condemned 2 times, condemneth 1 time in the King James Version.

John 3:17-18

- "For God sent not his Son into the world to **condemn (krino)** the world; but that the world through him might be save. He that believeth on him is not **condemned (krino)**: but he that believeth not is **condemned (krino)** already" King James Version.
- "For God sent not the Son into the world to **judge (krino)** the world: but that the world should be saved through him. He that believeth on him is not **judged (krino)**: he that believeth not has been **judged (krino)** already" American Standard Version.

Romans 14:22

- "Happy is he that **condemneth (krino)** not himself" King James Version.
- "Happy is he that **judgeth (krino)** not himself" American Standard Version.

2 Thessalonians 2:12

- "That they all might be **damned (krino)**" King James Version.
- "That they all might be **judged (krino)**" American Standard Version.

There is a vast different in "damned" and "judged," both cannot be a true translation of the same word. Condemnation, damnation, and damned were all taken out of the American Standard Version and most others. How many millions have been made to believe a lie by this deliberate changing of the Bible?

The Jews would have been acquainted with the language of judgment on nations in the Old Testament. Malachi's pronouncement is against the Jewish nation. "For behold, the day is coming, burning like a furnace; and all the arrogant and every evildoer will be chaff; and the day that is coming will set them ablaze, says the Lord of hosts, so that it will leave them neither root nor branch" (Malachi 4:1). Job says when a tree is cut down there is hope that the root will sprout (Job 14:8); there is hope of life. In the last chapter in the Old Testament of our English Bible Malachi says Israel will not be left a root to sprout a branch or a branch to sprout roots; therefore, there will be no hope for life.

Summary: Just as every reference to Gehenna in the Old Testament are to a place on this earth, to the valley south of Jerusalem, and it is never translated "Hell." Every reference to Gehenna by Christ is also to the same place on this earth, to the same valley. In the four occasions that Gehenna is used, not in a one is Gehenna said to be eternal or everlasting, not once is there any torment of living persons in it, and not once is it used in connection with the resurrection, but today preachers most always add everlasting and say it will never end. How do they know this? **None of the apostles ever preach anything about Gehenna. If it were a place of torment where God shall torment all of the lost, why did they never say anything about it? They used death, destroy, destroyed, perish, die, and end; but never "Hell."**

**AND ONE TIME BY JAMES TO THE TWELVE TRIBES OF ISRAEL: "SET ON FIRE BY GEHENNA."** "And the tongue is a fire; the world of iniquity among our members is the tongue, which defiles the whole body, and sets on fire the wheel of

*nature, and is set on fire by Hell (Greek—Gehenna).*" James used the same proper noun (the name of a particular place) that Christ used in Matthew 23:15 as a metaphor of uncleanness. The tongue is a fire and is set on fire by Gehenna, the filthy, contemptible garbage dump. Most who are given to gossip look for some filthy rotten garbage on someone, and then cannot wait to tell it. James did not use Gehenna to teach the Jews about what was going to happen to them after death if they rejected Christ; those that believe in Hell do not believe what James said, he used Gehenna to tell them that the tongue, a part of the earthly body, is now while the person is living is set on fire. To say, "The tongue is set on fire by the place of eternal torment after the judgment," which is what many teach, makes no sense. This metaphor is not taken from the destruction by the fire and maggots in Gehenna, but **Gehenna is a metaphor taken from the filth and uncleanness of Gehenna just as Christ used the filth and uncleanness of Gehenna in the fourth occasion He used Gehenna in Matthew 23.** The tongue that is set on fire is in living people before their death; it speaks of what is happening to people in this lifetime, there is nothing in it about what will happen to persons or souls after the judgment. There is nothing about being killed and then cast into Gehenna, nothing about torment or destruction in it, and nothing about anything after death. The tongue is a fire now in this lifetime. When Gehenna is changed to Hell that is believed to be a literal place that is not on this earth and this Hell sets on fire a literal tongue that is in a living person on this earth it would somehow make that person's tongue be in contact with a place that is not on this earth while the person was alive. **James used Gehenna as a place of uncleanness, which he figuratively applied to a vile unclean tongue of a living person. This passage says nothing about any kind of punishment before or after death, or nothing about the fate of the unrighteous after death although it is often used to prove both.**

**Dose a PLACE torment?** "Set on fire" James 3:6. According to those that believe in Hell, Hell is a PLACE where some believe Satan will be doing the tormenting, but most believe Hell is a place where God will be doing the tormenting. Both when Gehenna is not changed to Hell, and when Gehenna is changed to Hell, if there were any tormenting in James 3:6 it would be undeniable that it is either a PLACE on this earth, or a PLACE that is not on this earth even though a PLACE has no thoughts, not Satan or God, but a PLACE that will be doing the setting on fire (tormenting). When this passage is made literal as most that believe in Hell do, then a PLACE that is on this earth, Gehenna, is changed to a PLACE that is who where it is, but this PLACE is not on this earth; this PLACE goes far beyond its own border to literally set on fire a tongue that is still in a living person that is on earth, not set on fire (torment) a soul that had been in a living person on earth but has gone to the PLACE called Hell. Why would James use the name of a real PLACE that is on this earth if he was speaking of a PLACE that is not on this earth? To use Gehenna as a metaphor of

uncleanness makes sense, but to change the name to a PLACE where God torments souls and say this PLACE that most that believe in Hell believe it to be very far from this earth but it sets the tongues of living people on fire makes no sense.

**Gehenna was not used in the rest of the New Testament**, and neither is unquenchable fire. Most that believes in Hell make the maggots they say will be in Hell figurative maggots, not real maggots in Hell, but make the fire they say will be in Hell be literal fire. If this was true, how could they know which one was literal and which one was figurative? Are they saying literal worms cannot eat a soul that is "immaterial, invisible," and has no earthly substance that literal worms can eat, but literal fire can burn this immaterial soul that has no earthly substance that literal worms could eat? If Gehenna's "unquenchable fire" and "their worm dies not" are a description of the endless punishment of the wicked in "Hell," the silence of the New Testament writers would be unexplainable. (1) Acts, a history of the preaching and church for about thirty years does not mention Gehenna, unquenchable fire, or immortal maggots. (2) In none of Paul's fourteen letters, he never mentioned them. (3) Peter, John, and Jude are also as silent as Paul. (4) Neither can they be found in the Book of Revelation.

**TOURS OF HELL:** Today many travelers to Israel are offered "a tour of Hell," they are taken to the valley of Gehenna, but they find no fire there. After A. D. 70 the fire went out and all signs of the fire has now disappeared completely.

**THE MISTRANSLATION OF GEHENNA.**

	KJV	ASV NASV RSV NRSV*	Others**
Matthew 5:22, 29, 30	Hell	Hell Footnote-Greek Gehenna	Gehenna
Matthew 10:28	Hell	Hell Footnote-Greek Gehenna	Gehenna
Mt 18:9 Mk 9:43,44,45	Hell	Hell Footnote-Greek Gehenna	Gehenna
Matthew 23:15, 33	Hell	Hell Footnote-Greek Gehenna	Gehenna
Luke 12:5	Hell	Hell Footnote-Greek Gehenna	Gehenna
James 3:6	Hell	Hell Footnote-Greek Gehenna	Gehenna

The American Standard Version, Revised Standard Version, New Revised Standard Version, and others have a footnote "Gr. Gehenna."

\*\*New American Bible (Catholic), World English Bible, Young's Literal New Testament (author of "Young's Analytical Concordance"), Wesley's New Testament (founder of Methodist Church), Christian Bible 1991, and many more translations have "Gehenna" in the text as it should be as it is a Proper Noun (the name of a particular place). The Amplified Bible has it as an insert in the text: "*Hell (Gehenna) of fire.*"

**THE TRANSLATION OF GEHENNA IN SEVEN TRANSLATIONS**

(1) **Young's Literal Bible** (1891) Author of "Young's Analytical Concordance To The Bible"

First occasion, in the Sermon on the Mount

Matthew 5:22—*Gehenna Of The Fire*: Matthew 5:29—*Gehenna*:

Matthew 5:30—*Gehenna*

Second occasion, in a lesson to the twelve disciples

Matthew 10:28—*Destroy in Gehenna*

Luke 12:5—*Gehenna*

Third occasion, in another lesson to his disciples

Matthew 18:9—*Gehenna of the fire*  
 Mark 9:43—*Gehenna*; Mark 9:44 and Mark 9:45—*Gehenna*  
 Fourth occasion, to the Scribes and Pharisees  
 Matthew 23:15—*Son of Gehenna*  
 Matthew 23:33—*Gehenna*  
 And one time by James, to the Twelve Tribes—James 3:6—*Set of fire by the Gehenna*  
 (2) **Wesley's New Testament** (1755) the original edition by Wesley, the founder of Methodist Church, not the updated editions that have been changed by others.  
 First occasion, in the Sermon on the Mount  
 Matthew 5:22—*Gehenna*  
 Matthew 5:29—*Gehenna*  
 Matthew 5:30—*Gehenna*  
 Second occasion, in a lesson to the twelve disciples  
 Matthew 10:28—*Gehenna*  
 Luke 12:5—*Gehenna*  
 Third occasion, in another lesson to his disciples  
 Matthew 18:9—*Gehenna*  
 Mark 9:43—*Gehenna*  
 Mark 9:44 and Mark 9:45—*Gehenna*  
 Fourth occasion, to the Scribes and Pharisees  
 Matthew 23:15—*Gehenna*  
 Matthew 23:33—*Gehenna*  
 And one time by James, to the Twelve Tribes—James 3:6—*Gehenna*  
 (3) **Weymouth New Testament** (1903)  
 First occasion, in the Sermon on the Mount  
 Matthew 5:22—*Gehenna of Fire*  
 Matthew 5:29—*Gehenna*  
 Matthew 5:30—*Gehenna*  
 Second occasion, in a lesson to the twelve disciples  
 Matthew 10:28—*Gehenna*  
 Luke 12:5—*Gehenna*  
 Third occasion, in another lesson to his disciples  
 Matthew 18:9—*Gehenna of fire*  
 Mark 9:43—*Gehenna*  
 Mark 9:44 and Mark 9:45—*Gehenna*  
 Fourth occasion, to the Scribes and Pharisees  
 Matthew 23:15—*Son of Gehenna*  
 Matthew 23:33—*Gehenna*  
 And one time by James, to the Twelve Tribes—James 3:6—*Set of fire by Gehenna*  
 (4) **The New American Bible** (1991) (Catholic)  
 First occasion, in the Sermon on the Mount  
 Matthew 5:22—*Whoever says, 'You fool,' will be liable to fiery Gehenna*  
 Matthew 5:29—*Better to lose part of you body than have it all cast into Gehenna*  
 Matthew 5:30—*Better to lose part of you body than have it all cast into Gehenna*  
 Second occasion, in a lesson to the twelve disciples  
 Matthew 10:28 *Gehenna*  
 Luke 12:5—*Fear him who has power to cast into Gehenna after he has killed*  
 Third occasion, in another lesson to his disciples  
 Matthew 18:9—*Better to enter life with one eye than be thrown with both into fiery Gehenna*  
 Mark 9:43—*Better for you to enter life maimed than to keep both hands and enter Gehenna with its unquenchable fire*  
 Mark 9:44—*Better for you to enter life crippled than to be thrown into Gehenna with both feet*  
 Mark 9:45—*Better for you to enter the kingdom of God with one eye than to be thrown with both eyes into Gehenna*  
 Fourth occasion, to the Scribes and Pharisees  
 Matthew 23:15—*Gehenna*; Matthew 23:33—*Gehenna*

And one time by James, to the Twelve Tribes—James 3:6—*And its fire is kindled by hell*

**(5) The Christian Bible (1991)**

First occasion, in the Sermon on the Mount

Matthew 5:22—*The Gehenna of Fire*

Matthew 5:29—*Your whole body should be thrown into Gehenna*

Matthew 5:30—*Your whole body should pass away into Gehenna*

Second occasion, in a lesson to the twelve disciples

Matthew 10:28—*And the body in Gehenna*

Luke 12:5—*Gehenna*

Third occasion, in another lesson to his disciples

Matthew 18:9—*Then to have two eyes and to be thrown into the Gehenna of fire*

Mark 9:43—*Gehenna*

Mark 9:44 and Mark 9:45—*Thrown into Gehenna*

Fourth occasion, to the Scribes and Pharisees

Matthew 23:15—*A son of Gehenna*

Matthew 23:33—*Gehenna*

And one time by James, to the Twelve Tribes—James 3:6—*The tongue...is set of fire by Gehenna*

**(6) World English Bible**

First occasion, in the Sermon on the Mount

Matthew 5:22—*Shall be in danger of the fire of Gehenna*

Matthew 5:29—*Than for your whole body to be cast into Gehenna*

Matthew 5:30—*And not your whole body be cast into Gehenna*

Second occasion, in a lesson to the twelve disciples

Matthew 10:28—*Able to destroy both soul and body in Gehenna*

Luke 12:5—*Gehenna*

Third occasion, in another lesson to his disciples

Matthew 18:9—*Than having two eyes to be cast into the Gehenna of fire*

Mark 9:43—*Gehenna*

Mark 9:45—*Gehenna*

Mark 9:47—*Gehenna of fire*

Fourth occasion, to the Scribes and Pharisees

Matthew 23:15—*You make him twice as much of a son of Gehenna as yourselves*

Matthew 23:33—*How will you escape the judgment of Gehenna?*

And one time by James, to the Twelve Tribes James 3:6—*Set on fire by Gehenna*

**(7) Phillips New Testament (1952)**

First occasion, in the Sermon on the Mount

Matthew 5:22—*Fire of destruction*

Matthew 5:29—*Rubbish—heap*

Matthew 5:30—*Rubbish—heap*

Second occasion, in a lesson to the twelve disciples

Matthew 10:28—*Fire of destruction*

Luke 12:5—*Throw you into destruction*

Third occasion, in another lesson to his disciples

Matthew 18:9—*Fire of the rubbish—heap*

Mark 9:43—*Go to the rubbish—heap*

Mark 9:44—*Thrown on to the rubbish—heap*

Mark 9:45—*Thrown on to the rubbish—heap*

Fourth occasion, to the Scribes and Pharisees

Matthew 23:15—*Ripe for destruction*

Matthew 23:33—*Fire of destruction*

And one time by James, to the Twelve Tribes James 3:6—*It can set the whole of life ablaze, fed with the fires of hell*

(8) There are also many other translations that do not have "Hell" in them.

The New Testament in Modern English" by J. B. Phillips says:

- *"And go to the rubbish—heap where the fire never dies"* (Mark 9:43).
- *"Thrown on the rubbish—heap, where decay never stops and the fire never goes out"* (Mark 9:49, Also Matthew 5:29, 18:9, Mark 9:47).

- "Fire of destruction" (Matthew 5:22, 10:28, 32:33, Luke 12:5).

Phillips leaves out "Gehenna," a name of a particular place; and puts what Jerusalem's Gehenna was to the people of that time to make it where people today will understand the same thing the Jews that Christ was speaking to would have understand. Many today would not know that Gehenna was the Rubbish—heap of Jerusalem. This is not a translation of the Greek, but it is a good commentary. He translated "Gehenna" into Hell only one time (James 3:6). This is the only time Hell is in his translation, and shows he believed in Hell, but knows the Greek manuscripts did not have it.

**DID JESUS SAY MORE ABOUT HELL THAN HEAVEN?** It has been said often by many preachers that Jesus said more about Hell than He did about Heaven. Is this the truth or is it a lie that has been told so many times by preachers that many believe it without questioning it? The truth is that without mistranslating to make Jesus say something He or any New Testament writers did not say. **Jesus said nothing about Hell, not one word.** Although the New Testament writers said nothing about Hell, they did say much about Heaven. Although Hell is not in the Bible, Heaven is hundreds of times referring (1) to Heaven it's self, (2) the kingdom of Heaven—the church, (3) and to the universe – the heavens. The claim that Christ said more about Hell than He did about Heaven is not true; it is only a desperate attempt to prove Hell.

- A place in Heaven *"In My Father's house are many dwelling places; if it were not so, I would have told you; for I go to prepare a place for you. If I go and prepare a place for you, I will come again and receive you to Myself, that where I am, there you may be also"* (John 14:12).
- Our treasures are in Heaven Matthew 6:20; 10:21; 19:21; Luke 18:22
- Our citizenship is in Heaven Philippians 3:20-21
- Reserved in Heaven for us 1 Peter 1:4; Matthew 6:20; 19:21; Mark 12:25; Luke 6:23

**THE QUESTIONS IS, WHERE DID JESUS SAY ANYTHING ABOUT HELL EVEN ONE TIME? WHERE DID HE USE THE NAME "HELL"?** The statement that is made by many that Jesus said more about Hell than He did about Heaven has no truth in it; Jesus never said anything about Hell. When those that know Jesus used "Gehenna" and He never used "Hell" (and most preachers do know this), but they use a mistranslated English Bible that they know is mistranslated to teach those that do not know very much about what Jesus did say, to say that Jesus said much about Hell, what do you think they will say to Jesus at the Judgment?

**THE VANISHING HELL. TRANSLATIONS ARE GETTING AWAY FROM HELL.** The King James Version and the New King James Version **are the only two of the major translations that have Hell in the Old Testament; the newer and better translations do not use it because sheol are no other word in the Old Testament do not has the same meaning that Hell now has today; therefore, they have rejected it as a bad mistranslation.** Hell is rapidly vanishing from the

Bible. It has vanished from the Old Testament in most conservative translations. Moses or Abraham did not know about it. Hell has all but vanished from the New Testament in the conservative translations, and has vanished altogether in many. Even in the 31 times Hell is in the Old Testament in the King James Version, in 12 of these the New King James Version changed Hell in the King James Version to sheol (from 31 times to 19 times). Were the translators trying to ease away but were afraid to go to far?

**The vanishing Hell: Why is the number of times Hell is used decreasing?  
Translators cannot agree on how many times to mistranslate it.**

Number of times Hell is used in - - - The Bible	The O.T.	The N. T.
The Latin Vulgate (A. D. 405?)	111 times	87 times
The Wycliffe Bible (A. D. 1395)	83 times	57 times
Miles Coverdale Bible (1535)	70 times	50 times
The Bishop's Bible (1568)	59 times	35 times
The Geneva Bible (1587)	36 times	16 times
Westster Bible (1611)	49 times	26 times
The Original King James Version (1611)	52 times	30 times
King James Version (1769 update)	54 times	31 times
The King James Version has had several reversion and the one that is used today (1769) is not the original 1611 version; it is the last of several revisions.		
New King James Version (1982)	32 times	19 times
Young's Literal Bible (1891)	0 times	0 times
American Standard Version (1901)	13 times	0 times
New American Standard Version (1960)	13 times	0 times
Revised Standard Version (1946)	13 times	0 times
Revised Standard Version Catholic Edition (1966)	0 times	13 times
New Revised Standard Version (1989)	12 times	0 times
New International Version (1987)	14 times	0 times
New International Version (2010)	13 times	0 times
New International Version - UK (1984)	14 times	0 times
Today's New International Version(2005)	13 times	0 times
Amplified Bible (1987)	15 times	0 times
New Century Version (1987)	12 times	0 times
Revised English Bible (1989)	28 times	15 times
Contemporary English Version (1995)	20 times	0 times
New Living Translation (1996)	19 times	3 times
English Standard Version (2001)	14 times	0 times
Holman Christian Standard Bible (2003)	11 times	0 times
Update Bible Version 1 9 (2003)	12 times	0 times
Peshitta - Lamsa translation	12 times	1 time
Common English Bible (2011)	13 times	0 times
Derby Translation (Catholic) (1890)	12 times	0 times
New Revised Standard Version Bible: Anglicised (Catholic Edition) (1995)	14 times	0 times
New American Bible (Catholic) (1991)	0 times	0 times
New American Bible Revised Edition (Catholic Edition) (2011)	0 times	0 times
World English Bible	0 times	0 times
Rotherham Emphasized (1902)	0 times	0 times
Young's Literal Translation	0 times	0 times
Fenton's Bible in Modern English (1903)	0 times	0 times
Hebrew Names Version of WEB	0 times	0 times
New World Translation of the Holy Scriptures 1980	0 times	0 times
Daniel Mace New Testament (1729)	3 times	0 times
Wesley' N. T (The original, not some updated editions) (1755)	0 times	0 times
Scarlett's New Testament (1798)	0 times	0 times
New Covenant, New Testament (1884)	0 times	0 times
Scrivenre New Testament (1884)	0 times	0 times
Hanson's New Covenant (1884)	0 times	0 times
Twentieth Century New Testament (1900)	0 times	0 times
Rotherham's Emphasized Bible (reprinted) (1902)	0 times	0 times
Fenton's Holy Bible in Modern English (1903)	0 times	0 times
Weymouth's New Testament in Modern Speech (1903)	0 times	0 times
Panin's Numeric English New Testament (1914)	0 times	0 times

The People's New Covenant (Overbury)	(1925)	0 times
Western New Testament	(1926)	0 times
Western New Testament	(1959)	0 times
The New Testament, A Translation (Clementson)	(1938)	0 times
J. B. Phillips New Testament in Modern English	(1947)	1 times
New Testament of our Lord and Savior Anointed (Tomanek)	(1958)	0 times
Restoration of Original Sacred Name Bible	(1976)	0 times
The New Testament, A New Translation (Greber)	(1980)	0 times
Concordance Literal New Testament	(1983)	0 times
Christian Bible, New Testament	(1991)	0 times
Recovery Version, New Testament	(1991)	0 times
New Testament of Our Lord and Savior Jesus Anointed		0 times
The Original Bible Project (Dr. Tabor)		0 times
The New Testament in Greek and English (Kneeland)	(1823)	0 times
Interlinear Greek-English New Testament (Berry)	(Note A)(1897)	0 times
Emphatic Diaglott, Greek/English Interlinear	(Wilson)(1942)	0 times
Zondervan Parallel N. T. in Greek and English	(Note A)(1975)	0 times
NASB-NIV Parallel N. T. in Greek and English (Marshall)	(1986)	0 times
Interlinear NASB-NIV Parallel NT Greek-English	(Note A)(1993)	0 times
Jewish Publication Society Bible Old Testament	(Note B)(1917)	0 times
Orthodox Jewish Brit Chadasha New Testament only		0 times
Tanakh, The Holy Scriptures, Old Testament	(Note B)(1985)	0 times
The Complete Jewish Bible	(Note B)	0 times
The Septuagint-translation of Hebrew to Greek	3rd century BC	0 times

\*12 times the Amplified Bible has "Hell (Gehenna)" in the text, not in a footnote.

Note A, the word—for—word translations beneath the Greek, not the translations that are in the margin.

Note B, all Jewish translations I found of the Old Testament do not have "Hell" in them. It is not in the Septuagint, a translation of the Old Testament from Hebrew to Greek that was in used in the time of Christ.

I find it strange that the Catholic Church believes in Hell yet they removed Hell from two translations they made. There are many other translations in other languages, for Gehenna, like all other proper nouns are not changed to other proper nouns in the translations to other languages.

### One example of the vanishing Hell Psalm 116:3.

- *"The sorrows of death compassed me, and the pains of **HELL** gat hold upon me: I found trouble and sorrow."* King James Version.
- *"The pains of death encompassed me, and the pangs of **SHEOL** laid hold of me"* New King James Version.
- *"The cord of death compassed me, and the pains of **SHEOL** gat hold upon me"* American Standard Version.
- *"The snares of death encompassed me; the pangs of **SHEOL** laid hold on me"* Revised Standard Version.
- *"The cords of death entangled me, the anguish of the **GRAVE** came upon me"* New International Version.
- *"Death had its hands around my throat; the terrors of the **GRAVE** overtook me"* New Living Translation.
- *"The cords of death bound me, **SHEOL** held me in its grip"* Revised English Bible.
- *"The cords and sorrows of death were around me, and the terrors of **SHEOL** (the place of the dead) had laid hold of me"* Amplified Bible.
- *"The ropes of death bound me, and the fear of the **GRAVE** took hold of me"* New Century Bible.

Why did the King James translator's use the Old English word "Hell"? Was it not to force their pagan beliefs into the teaching of Jesus?

**When was the last time you heard a sermon of Hell?** There was a time when most every revival had one or more sermons on the horrors of Hell, and that most were going to be tormented by God. Most every sermon ended with a warning that all that did not repent was going to Hell. Jonathan Edwards was well known for his

“Hell—fire” sermons. These “Hellfire” preachers are not as popular as they once were, and their audience is much smaller. Today in most churches a sermon on Hell is never preached, and no one is told he or she will go to Hell if they do not repent. Although there are many who do not believe in Hell, and other that are no longer sure that there is a Hell is the reason many say nothing about it in their sermons and Bible lessons? Why do they say nothing? A preacher may think he would not be allowed to preach, and most would not. Many churches would brand him a heretic if he preached there is no Hell, and he would not be able to preach in most churches. Elders and Deacons would not be allowed to continue as Elders and Deacons. Bible teachers would not be permitted to teach if they taught that there is nothing in the Bible about a place called Hell. Members would not be permitted to lead singing, lead prayer, or do anything in the worship service. About all that anyone who does not believe in Hell is permitted to do in most churches is come and sit and give their money; you will be shut out and not be permitted to lead prayer, or take part in the worship in any way, but no matter what you believe you will be permitted and even expected to give your money. Along with many others, I can tell you for a fact that this is sure to happen in most congregations of the church.

**THE VANISHING HELL, THE CHANGING HELL:** Why are there many conflicting Hells? In “Four Views of Hell” edited by William Grocket four Protestant scholars give four different and conflicting views of Hell that are now being taught in the Protestant churches. In “Two Views Of Hell” Robert A. Peterson and William Fudge give two competing views. These two books and others like them show that there are very different competing views about Hell in the Protestant churches, but in truth there are many more than four conflicting views in Protestant and Catholic churches, all with a large number of believers, and there are many other views of Hell in other churches, both in Protestant churches and churches that are not Protestants. **None of the many different views of Hell that are in the Protestants churches have a majority of Protestants that believe it, all that believe any one of the views of Hell are in a small group when compared with all other Protestants that are in all other groups; those that believe one of the many views of Hell are saying all but that one view that they believe cannot be true. Not one of the many different views of Hell has even one-fifth of all those that claim to believe the Bible.** The many divisions on what Hell is and who will be in it is unbelievable, and most who say they believe in Hell has no idea of the vast number of the totally difference visions of Hell, or the unbelievable differences in what Hell is believed to be, how long it will last, who will be in it, and where it will be.

**TWENTY—SEVEN PLUS VERSIONS OF HELL.** Where is Hell? What is Hell? There are over 27 different versions of Hells that are commonly believed in Christianity and many more versions in non—christian religion of the world. While some have some features that are similar, they are all difference, and each version

has sharp disagreements with all the other versions. Those that believe any one of the versions of Hell are in conflict with all those that believe any of the many other versions. It would not be possible for more than one of the many versions of Hell to be true. In the thousands of denominations around the world professing to be Christian there are countless views on what Hell is, where Hell is, who is over Hell, how long will Hell last, many others, with many others views of what Hell is in the non-Christian religions of the world.

**THE ORIGIN OF HELL: Unconditional immortality is the pagan transmigration of souls. Augustine and other partly converted "church fathers" that knew more of the teaching of Plato than they did of Christ, and they rewrote reincarnation to fit Christianity;** their doctrine of an immortal soul that is not dead replaced the resurrection, and made it both useless and impossible.

**(1). Transmigration of souls:** Souls live somewhere after the death of the body. Where it is believed that a soul goes to after it leaves the person that it was in varies from country to country and age to age. A soul only lives in a person for a short time then moves on to live in another body; it never returns to the body of a person it had been in; it is not dead and does not die, therefore; it is never resurrected, but some believe a soul will eventually come to an end by being absorbed by a god.

**(2). Reincarnation:** A soul that had been living in the body of a person that is dead lives somewhere and then come back to an earthly body of another person, or in the body of an animal, or even in a plant. The bodies die but the soul lives on and comes back to live in other bodies without a resurrection.

**(3). Unconditional immortality:** Transmigration of souls and reincarnation rewrote by some of the church fathers and the Dark Age Church. The pagan doctrine that souls live somewhere after the death of the body is the foundation on which they build the doctrine of Hell, if there were a deathless soul that could not live in Heaven it had to live someplace. Without souls that can never die there could not be a Hell. The place where a soul goes after it leaves the body of the dead person varies from one group to another, Heaven, Hell, Purgatory, or Abraham's bosom; but wherever a soul goes, those that believe in unconditional immortality believe that a soul is now as alive as it ever was, and that it is now as alive as it will ever be without the resurrection of the dead person it had at one time been in.

**(4). Resurrection:** Dead persons, not souls, are raised from the dead at the second coming of Christ.

Ancient Egyptian belief was that a soul had a gloomy existence in the underworld (transmigration). The Greeks and Romans believed about the same with some changes. Oriental and Pythagorean philosophy, Buddhists, Hindus, and Grand Lama all believed in some form of reincarnation; they all believed a "soul" that had been in the evil had some punishment, but not all believed a soul had the same punishment. With most the punishment of a soul after it had left the person it had been in was only some kind of gloomy existence in the underworld that would end when that soul was reincarnated, not endless torment in Hell as it is taught today. With most, the more evil a person was the lower that soul would have the capability to reincarnate. Some souls would come back as a person; the more evil would come back as a

plant or insect. This punishment was believed to be under or down in the earth by most. Hell was and is still believed by some to be under the earth. This is the nearest thing to today's Hell in heathen philosophy, and in any writing unto after the New Testament. The "church fathers" borrowed from the heathens (mostly Greek and Romans), and invented unto by the time of the Dark Age they had invented Hell, Limbo, Purgatory, worship of Mary and saints, the Pope declared to be God in the flesh, and much more, and made their god into a cruel and sadistic being; those that worshiped him truly became like the god they invented. Millions who believed the world was round, or in any way did not believe all the Catholic Church taught were tormented and put to death as heretics; it put some to death for having the Bible in their own language, not in Latin. The Dark Age was one of the bloodiest times of history, and continued into the Protestant Reformation (The Crusades, bloody Mary, witch—hunts, and much more). Some of the cruelest ways of torment the world has ever known were invented and used in the Dark Age, and all in the name of their god.

After Calvin burned Servetus to death he wrote a book with a long title, "A Faithful Account Of The Errors Of Servetus, In Which It Is Proved That Heretics Ought To Be Restrained By The Sword." It would take many books to tell of all the bloody deeds of the Dark Age by the so—called "church." The reasons for the killing of millions are summed up in the words of bloody Mary. "As the souls of heretics are hereafter to be eternally burning in Hell, there can be nothing more proper than for me to imitate the divine vengeance by burning them on earth." In the Dark Age, the "church" was a mixture of Christianity, Judaism, Paganism, and their own inventions, but mostly the last two. Before the Protestant Reformation there was more heathen philosophy in the Dark Age Church than true Christian teaching. It had apostatized into a satanic cult with an evil god that took delight in tormenting souls in Hell.

#### **THREE CATHOLIC VERSIONS OF HELL**

1. The Dark Age Medieval Catholic version of Hell
2. The New Catholic version of Hell
3. The Nether World

#### **SOME OF THE MORE PROMINENT OF THE MANY DIVISIONS OF THE PROTESTANT VERSIONS OF HELL**

1. The Calvin Version of Hell
2. The Jonathan Edwards versions
3. The Graphic view of Hell
4. Two Hells, the literal fire Hell
5. Satan doing the tormenting
6. God doing the tormenting
7. The Metaphorical view of both Heaven and Hell
8. Mental anguish only Hell – Billy Graham
9. The eternal sinning version of Hell
10. C. S. Lewis—the almost pleasant Hell

11. Protestant Traditionalist
12. Many Protestant Premillennial versions of Hell
13. Dante's cold Hell with nine levels of torment
14. Realized Eschatology – A. D. 70 version
15. The "Sudden Realization" version of Hell
16. Protestant Rephaim versions

#### **EIGHT OTHER VERSIONS OF HELL**

1. Church of Christ, Christian Church, Abraham's bosom, the after Judgment Hell, A newer version
2. Edward Fudge version: The short Hell that will end
3. Christadelphians version
4. Church of God and others
5. Universalist version of Hell
6. Seventh—Day Advent version
7. Latter—day Saints version (Mormons)
8. The Grave is Hell version (Jehovah's Witnesses)

#### **NO BIBLE HELL: Which Hell do you believe in? From where did Hell come?**

How Hell was put into and is being kept in the Bible.

**THREE CATHOLIC VERSIONS OF HELL. (1) The Medieval Dark Age Catholic version of Hell, the beginning of Hell:** A soul being immortal came from Greek philosophy, and was brought into the church by some of the church fathers, by Augustine more than most others. The doctrine of Hell came soon after the immortal soul doctrine along with Purgatory, and was fully developed by the Dark Age Catholic Church before the Protestant Reformation. It seems to be that in the past they believed that only a very few, the very bad will go to Hell, which they believe is a real place, at their death with no judgment, but most Catholics will go to Purgatory at death. A few of the very good will go to Heaven at their death with no judgment (an instant rapture). At death most Catholic will go immediately to Purgatory, which seems to be a limited version of Hell, unto they have suffered enough to pay for their own sins, or unto their love ones have paid all they can, then they go to Heaven. How long a person will be in Purgatory is sometimes taught to be a short time, and sometimes a very long time to those who have no one to win indulgences for them, no one to pay. It has brought enormous wealth to the rich Catholic Church from the poor who paid what little they had, and even done without food to help a loved one out of Purgatory. The Catholic Purgatory gives no hope for heathens, heretics, or those not baptized. The Catholic Doctrine of Purgatory (1) makes some go to Heaven or Hell at death, (2) makes all other Catholics get to Heaven as soon as they (not Christ) have suffered enough to pay for their own sins, (3) leaves no dead Christians that will not already be in Heaven to be resurrected at the second coming of Christ. They, not Christ, will have suffered unto they have paid in full for their own sins, or others have paid enough money to free them from Purgatory. An example of the Catholic teaching on the selling of indulgences that was common before the time of Martin Luther as given by John Tetzel, a Dominican monk who said as soon as

the money is given, “The soul escapes from purgatory, and flies liberated to heaven,” and “The Lord no longer reigns...He has given all power to the pope.” As quoted by F. LaGard Smith of Lipscomb University in “After Life” pages 223—224. If a soul paid for the sins of the person in purgatory, the sins are not forgiven by the death of Christ; the suffering of a soul in purgatory pays for the sins of the person that soul had been in.

S. M. BROWN: “Medieval Europe,” pages 348—259, 1932. “Hell is wide without measure, and deep and bottomless; full of incomparable fire, for no earthly fire may be compared therewith; full of stench intolerable for no living thing on earth might endure it; full of unutterable sorrow for no mouth may, on account of the wretchedness or the woe thereof, give an account not tell of it. Yea, the darkness therein is so thick that one may grasp it, for the fire there gives no light, but blinds the eyes of them that are there with a smothering smoke, the worst of smokes. And nevertheless in that same black darkness they see black things as devils, that ever maul them and afflict and harass them with all kinds of tortures; and tailed drakes, horrible as devils, that devour them whole and spew them out afterwards before and behind. At other times they rent them in pieces and chew each gobbet of them, and they afterwards become whole again, such as they previously were, to under go again such bale with recovery, and full well they see themselves very horrible and dreadful; and to increase their pains the loathsome hell—worms, toads, and frogs that eat out their eyes and nostrils, and adders and water—frogs, not like those here, but hundred times more horrible, sneak in and out of the mouth, ears, eyes, navel ever yet thickest. There is shrieking in the flame and chattering of teeth in the snowy waters. Suddenly they flit upon the heat into the cold, nor ever do they know of there two which is worst for them, for each is intolerable...And this same wan hope is their greatest torment, that none have any hope of any recovery, but are sure of ever ill, to continue in woe, world without end, even in eternity. Each chokes the other, and each in another’s torment, and each hates another and him self as the black devil; and as they loved them the more in this world, so the more shall they hate them there. And each curses another, and gnaws off the other’s arms, ears, and nose also.” As quoted by Robert L. Whitelaw in “The Last Resurrection,” pages 61—62.

This is the “Hell” that was taught by the Catholic Church in the Dark Age, but there is nothing like it in the Bible. It came from pagan teaching.

## **(2) The new Catholic version of Hell:**

POPE JOHN PAUL II, “Hell is not a punishment imposed externally by God, but the condition resulting from attitudes and actions which people adopt in this life...So eternal damnation is not God’s work but is actually our own doing...More than a physical place, Hell is the state of those who freely and definitively separate themselves from God, the source of all life and joy.” In a statement made to his general audience, July 28, 1999. — “The soul in the OT means not a part of man, but the whole man as a living being. Similarly in the NT, it signifies human life: the life of an individual conscious object (Matt 2:20; 6:25; Luke 12:22-23; 14:26; John 10:11,15, 17; John 13:37; Acts 27:10, 22; Phil 2:30; 1 Thess 2:8). Recent exegetes...have maintained that the NT does not teach the immortality of the soul in the Hellenistic sense of survival of an immortal principle after death” The New Catholic Encyclopedia, article “Soul, Human, Immortality of, In The Bible.”

There are other high up Catholics who have made statements like this, but I see no use in adding more when you have this from the Pope who is the top person in the Catholic Church who’s word is law. Maybe this is why two of their English Bible

translations do not have the word "Hell" in them, and who knows how many other Catholics translations in other languages do not; however, because it has been the official doctrine for centuries, and the decrees of councils and Popes, the Roman Catholic Church cannot officially not teach Hell is a place of eternal torment without giving up completely their claim of infallibility. Protestantism has not made this claim of infallibility and many are giving Hell up.

**(3) The Nether World: is this a new (third) Catholic version of Hell?** More and more in today's writing, the Neither World is being used as if it is a Bible place that is clearly taught in the Bible; but I have yet to read where anyone told where it is in the Bible. Do both the Nether World and Abraham's bosom now exists at the same time? If so, how are they different? The American Heritage Dictionary says, "NETHER, Located beneath or below; lower or under: the nether regions of the earth." **Where did this world that is located beneath or under this world come from?** It is not in the Bible; therefore, how could anyone know about it? It came from the Catholic Church. Like Hell, they mistranslated it from hades to get it into the Bible. **Both Hell and Nether World were mistranslated from the same word (hades) and both from the same passage. See Acts 2:27**

- "For you will not abandon my soul to the **Nether World** (hades)." New American Bible.
- "Because thou wilt not leave my soul in **hell** (hades)," Douay—Rheims, also Psalm 16:10.
  - Both are Catholic translations.

**The Nether World is a new name being put into the Bible by the same people (the Catholic Church) who put Hell into it, and it is being put into the Bible in the same way, by mistranslating the same word they mistranslated to put in Hell.**

1. First: hades was mistranslated Hell in Catholic translations.
2. Second: the same word in the same passage is now mistranslated Nether World in some Catholic translations.

**It worked for them the first time, so they tried it a second time.** When they need to prove Hell, they use one mistranslation; and when they need to prove the Nether World, they use another mistranslation of the same word in the same passage. The Nether World and Universalist version of Hell, the "age lasting" Hell are very singular in many ways. Both have those who are not worthy of being in Heaven going through some kind of punishment, but will end up in Heaven. The main different is that Catholics believe a few are too evil to ever be saved, and will always be tormented by God, but in the "age lasting" Hell taught by Universalists all will end up in Heaven.

**SOME OF THE MANY DIVISIONS OF THE EVER CHANGING PROTESTANT VERSIONS OF HELL:** As in any teaching of man, there is division, twenty-seven difference Hells that I know of and no doubt there are many that I do not know of.

After much conflict among the reformers, most Protestants accepted much of the early Catholic version of a soul going to Heaven or Hell one by one at death, before

and without the judgment, and without the Resurrection at the coming of Christ. The Catholic Purgatory (a temporary place of punishment to which Catholics believe most will go to the moment of death, a place that is not Heaven or Hell) was rejected but the Dark Age Pagan Hell was kept, but is now under fire by many. Unconditional immortality, which is the foundation on which Hell stands, was accepted mostly due to Calvin and those that followed him winning out over Martin Luther and his followers. If they had accepted Luther's views on immortality, there would be no foundation for Hell. Many Protestants believe souls that are in all who do not accept Christ will instantly be transported to Hell at the death of the person a soul was in, transported to Hell before the resurrection and before the Judgment Day; that God has deliberately chooses to make these souls suffer and feel the pain without any letup forever. The souls that were in the saved will go to their eternal home in Heaven at death (an instant rapture). The Westminster Confession says, "The souls of the righteous...are received unto the highest heavens...the soul of the wicked are cast into Hell." Does God judge them at death, them maybe thousands of years later, takes souls out of Heaven and Hell to judge them a second time at the resurrection to see whether He made a mistake? Many believe an unbaptized baby will not be saved. This version is still believed by many today. An opposition to belief in Hell is rapidly growing in the Protestant churches. From the Protestant Reformation unto now there have been many changes and new Protestant versions of Hell.

**(1) THE CALVIN VERSION OF HELL:** The given no chance Hell. An early Protestant Version with a god that made most of mankind knowing he is going to torment souls that is in them in Hell forever, and there is nothing a person can do to keep a soul that we are told it in them from going to Hell, a god that made the condition of salvation that he know most would not meet, but he is going to torment a soul for eternity because the person did not meet it. This god made most of mankind just so he could torment souls that were in them forever as their creed says, "To His good pleasure;" if it were "to His good pleasure" to torment for eternity there would be no way to escape the conclusion that tormenting is just what such a god wants to do and takes pleasure (enjoyment) in doing it; predestinated eternal torment could serve only one purpose, an infinite desire for vengeance; a punishment that never ends would guarantee that justice will never prevail; if justice did demands an endless punishment them justice will remain eternally unsatisfied.

No amount of preaching or teaching can change the number that shall be in this Hell not even by one person. The Westminster Confession says, "By the decree of God, for the Manifestation of his glory, some men and angels are predestinated unto Everlasting Life, and others foreordained unto everlasting death;" this view believes God loves a few and saved them, but that He hates most, that He could save all but does not want to; Calvinist believe God's anger will be visited upon rebels whose rebellion was preordained by God; how could anyone say God is love when they

believe He dose not want most of mankind saved, that He made them just so He could torment them? Some Protestants still believe this version of Hell that their god made most of mankind just so he could torment souls for eternity. This version of Hell is not near as poplar as it was a few years ago and is losing believers even in the churches that teach it. Those who say they are orthodox Protestants but do not believe the Calvin Version of Hell far out number those who do.

JOHN CALVIN said of those in Hell that they are, "Forever harassed with a dreadful tempest; that shall feel themselves torn asunder by an angry God, and transfixed and penetrated by mortal stings, terrified by the thunderbolts of God, and broken by the weight of his hand, so that to sink into any gulf would be more tolerable than to stand for a moment in these terrors." There is nothing like this in the Bible, he made it up, it is pure slander of God.

In the Dark Age the Catholics invented Limbo to soften the doctrine on Hell by keeping infants out of Hell. The Protestant Reformation repudiated Limbo, but Calvin invented "the age of accountable" to do the same thing. Both are the inventions of man and nothing like them is in the Bible.

**(2) THE JONATHAN EDWARDS VERSIONS OF HELL:** Also an early Protestant Version and there was a time when most Protestants believed this view of Hell, but now only a few believe it. **There are countless variations of the Jonathan Edwards version of Hell, both major and minor variations, about as many as there are preachers who preach it with each preacher trying to out do the others in telling of the horrors of Hell; each one trying to make the god of Hell more evil then the others have.** Most taught God had given Hell over to Satan, and Satan will roast most souls forever, and torment them however he wishes to. Some have demons peeling off the burning flash of those in Hell with God making sure they keep it up forever. Some have God doing the tormenting of Satan, the demons, and souls that were in the lost, with God forever pouring in fire and brimstone, and thousands of other ways of tormenting In the past it was taught in books and painting, (see below (6) "Satan will be doing the tormenting version of Hell,") now it has mostly been changed to it is God that is doing the tormenting. Jonathan Edwards said God "will crush their blood out and make it fly, so that it will sprinkle his garment and stain all his raiment." They never tell how they know such details. Put all their horrors together and it would take many books to tell then all, horrors that are pure fiction with nothing that is even remotely kin in the Bible to the countless horrors they tell of, yet they falsely preach these made up falsehoods as if they were the word of God; many of these preachers get very specific with the details of the torment. Edwards' god is like a person that puts cats in a microwave oven for pleasure, and those in Heaven take delight in seeing the cats (souls) squirming in agony. Jonathan Edwards in "Sinners in the Hands of an Angry God" said, "The smoke of their burning flesh shall be a sweet smelling savor in the nostrils of the Almighty." These "Hellfire" preachers are not as poplar as they once were, and their audience is much smaller. It is unimportant to them if they have no Bible for their Hell

or its horrors; the badly mistranslated King James Version is all they need to make their Hell believable to many with whatever kind of torments their imagination wanted to put in it. Some believers of the Calvin version also believe this version and mix the two together. There is not much unity of belief among the Protestants of today. In almost any church if the preacher started preached sermons about Hell that was like the one's Edwards preached he would be out of work very soon. The god Edward believed in would have no problem with tormenting the lost; his god would take great pleasure in tormenting, and, according to Edward, the saints in Heaven will watch with pleasure and satisfaction. The worst torment any man can or ever has given to another man is nothing to what Jonathan Edwards described God doing in his sermon, "Sinner in the Hands of an Angry God."

The Protestant doctrine of Hell as taught by Calvin and Edwards is much more hideous and evil than anything that was taught in the Dark Age by the Catholic Church.

IN THE NOT TOO DISTANCE PAST BOTH THE CALVIN AND THE EDWARDS HELL WAS TAUGHT AND BELIEVED BY MOST PROTESTANTS, BUT WHAT IS BELIEVED ABOUT HELL IS EVER CHANGING AND NOW VERY FEW PROTESTANTS BELIEVED IN EITHER ONE, NOW BOTH HAVE BEEN GIVEN UP BY MOST CHURCHES.

**(3) THE "REVISIONIST" VERSION OF HELL:** Is a reaction to the traditional versions of Hell, an attempt to take the monster out of God that the Catholic, Calvin, Edwards, and other versions make Him to be by taking the Hell out of Hell. This view takes the suffering out of Hell and makes it into a place for those to live that have chosen to live separate from God. Though there will be no joy in this "Hell" as there will be in Heaven with God, there will be no pain or torment, just bare existence.

**(4) THE GRAPHIC VERSION OF HELL:** The sinners will be tormented in the parts of their bodies that sinned.

WILLIAM CROCKETT, "In short, whatever member of the body sinned, that member would be punished more than any other in hell...In Christian literature we find blasphemers hanging by their tongues. Adulterous women who plaited their hair to entice men dangle over boiling mire by their...hair." "Four Views on Hell" page 46. There is no way that this version of Hell could be harmonized with Vine's, "The immaterial, invisible part of man."

**(5) TWO HELLS, THE LITERAL FIRE HELL:** Augustine said, "That hell, which also is called a lake of fire and brimstone, will be material fire and will torment the bodies of the damned." This literal version of Hell is where the earthly bodies of the lost, not souls, are literally burning for all eternity but can never burn up; while the body is tormented in Hell, the soul will also be being tormented, body and soul are both tormented, but both are tormented separately; the body or person in one Hell, and a soul that had been in the person in another Hell.

SPURGEON, one of the best known of Baptist preachers, said, "When thou driest, thy soul will be tormented alone; that will be a hell for it; but at the day of judgment thy body will join thy soul

and then thou wilt have twin hells, thy soul sweating drops of blood, and thy body suffused with agony. In fire exactly like that which we have on earth, thy body will lie, asbestos like, forever unconsumed, all thy veins roads for the feet of pain to travel on, every nerve a string on which the devil shall forever play his diabolical tune of hell's unutterable lament." From his sermon "The Resurrection of the Dead." Like most who believe God will forever torment many billions, he must have some revelation that is not in the Bible to tell him about their suffering. In his day most orthodox Protestants believed the Devil would be doing the tormenting, but today most orthodox Protestants think he was wrong, that God is the one who will be doing the tormenting. The man made "Hell" is forever changing. What was orthodox in his day is no longer orthodox. For many Baptists his truth is no longer truth.

**(6) SATAN WILL BE DOING THE TORMENTING VERSION OF HELL:** Satan and his angels will be doing the tormenting, but they could only be executing the will of God that the lost be tormented for they could not torment souls that had been in the lost without God letting them. This view was believed by most in the Dark Age, and by most Jonathan Edwards preachers who often speak of "the devil Hell" as though Hell was a place that belonged to Satan. Most Protestants have now abandon the view of Satan and his demons doing the tormenting, but I remember that this was believed by most when I was a child, and was what most Protestants believed at that time. Many painting in museums and churches show Satan and his demons roasting those in Hell, and tormenting them in every way the painters could think up.

HENRY WARD BEECHES Henry Ward Beeches speaking of Michael Angelo's painting, The Last Judgment said, "Let anyone see the enormous gigantic coils of fiends and man; let anyone look at the defiant Christ that stands like a superb athlete at the front, hurling his enemies from him and calling his friends toward him as Hercules might have done; let anyone look upon that hideous wriggling mass that goes plunging down through the air—serpents and man and beasts of every nauseous kind, mixed together; let him look at the lower parts of the picture, where with the pitchforks men are by devils being cast into cauldrons and into burning fires, where hateful fiends are gnawing the skulls of suffering sinners, and where there is hellish cannibalism going on—let a man look at that picture and scenes which it depicts, and he sees what were the ideas which man once had of Hell and of divine justice. It was a night—mare as hideous as was ever begotten by the hellish brood it—self; and it was an atrocious slander on God...I do not wonder that men have reacted from these horrors."

There are hundreds or thousands of this kind of paintings in museums and churches around the world especially in Italy that were made in the Dark Ages, and they that show what was believed about who would torment the lost. These painting show a god that is bringing millions into existence ever year and then casting them to demons for the demons to torment.

**Satan and his demons are never punished** in this version of Hell Satan and evil spirits are forever over "Hell," and will forever be able to torment most souls that had been in mankind. Instead of being punished, they will have forever triumphed over God, and will forever have a kingdom of their own where they will work their evil on souls as they please to, and as it gives them pleasure. This version of Hell makes

there be something like two kingdoms or two universes after the judgment with Satan over one with most souls that had been in the lost before the death of the persons, but these souls are now in Satan's kingdom, and God over a much smaller number in His kingdom. Both God and Satan would have eternal power in their kingdom, and the division between Heaven; this Hell would mean God would not ever have a victory over evil.

**(7) GOD WILL BE DOING THE TORMENTING VERSION OF HELL:** Satan and his angels will be tormented by God just as all souls that had the lost of mankind. There has been a major change by many Protestants from Satan doing the tormenting to God forever being in Hell and doing the tormenting.

**(8) THE METAPHORICAL VIEW OF BOTH HEAVEN AND HELL:** We are not told what Heaven and Hell will literally be like. This view of Hell is that we are told in pictures that tell us Heaven will be a place of beauty more than anything on this earth, and that Hell will be worse than anything on this earth. Because we cannot understand what Heaven will really be like, we are given the picture of a city with gold streets and pearl gates to picture for us its great beauty and value, but it will not literally be made of gold, pearls, or of anything that we have on this earth. The metaphorical view of is Hell is pictured as a place of fire; being burned in fire is one of the worst pains we know of, **but those that believes this version do not believe it will be literally fire, as we know it**, or literal darkness as we know it. In this view none of the literal torments of the Jonathan Edwards Version are possible, for they are all things of this earth that will not be in Hell. This version of "Hell" taught by William Crockett in "Four Views On Hell" seems to be growing rapidly, for it is looked on as a way to make God less evil, but in fact it does not for whatever would be symbolized by being tormented by eternal fire would be just as bad as being eternally tormented by literal fire, and God would still be the one doing the eternal torment.

**(9) BILLY GRAHAM'S MENTAL ANGUISH VERSION OF HELL:** This version of Hell **changes Hell from a place to a state of mind**. Billy Graham said, "Could it be that the fire Jesus talked about is an eternal search for God that is never quenched? That, indeed, would be hell. To be away from God forever, separated from His Presence," *The Challenge: Sermons from Madison Square Garden, 1969*, page. 75. He makes Hell be only a state of mind. In "The World To Come," page 300, Isaac Watts makes the worm be the conscience of a person eating on himself for all eternally. A survey by US News, January 2000, page 47, says 53 percent of Americans believe Hell to be only mental anguish. This is an attempt by some to lessen the negative effect of Hell making God cruel and sadistic, but the attempt is a complete failure. Replacing physical torment with mental anguish does nothing to change Hell by making the torment be less. Mental anguish can be worse than physical pain, and it would still be unbearable torment without end. Billy Graham,

who is an orthodox Protestant, would in no way been called orthodox by Calvin or Jonathan Edwards, nor would many others that believe Hell is only mental anguish as he does. The old orthodox is some times the very opposite of the new orthodox. **In the mental anguish version of Hell for sins after death, Hell is not a place but a state of mind, of anguish caused by separation from God, the sinner punishes himself after death; it is not God that punishes him,** but where are all the sinners that are punishing themselves? If they are not in Heaven or Hell, where are they? Alexander Campbell: "The sinner's suffering by mental agony, produced by sin, greater than could be caused by material fire," "Five discourses on Hell" 1848. This version of Hell that is believed by Billy Graham, Alexander Campbell, and over 53 percent of Americans is a totally difference Hell than the orthodox Hell of Calvin; the real material fire preached by Edwards and Calvin has been replaced with, for lack of a better name, a spiritual fire that mentally torments, but this fire never burns up anything.

**(10) THE ETERNAL SINNING VERSION OF HELL: sin is self—perpetuating and the sinner cannot stop sinning even when tormented in Hell for it; therefore God must keep tormenting them without end.** This version of Hell is just another attempt to justifier God for tormenting for all eternity for the sins committed in this lifetime. Some protestant believe that the sins in this lifetime are not enough to be tormented for all eternity, but souls that were in the lost person that sins in this lifetime, these souls will keep on sinning after they are in Hell and will never stop sinning; therefore, the tormenting of these souls by God will never stop. If all in Hell grows worse and worse as time goes on, after millions of ages have passed the evil of these in Hell will be to terrible, to revolting to even think upon; who can believe the revolting evil that will exist, countless times more evil than when a person is first put in Hell if evil will be growing without end if the eternal sinning version of Hell were true?

*"Sin is the transgression of the law,"* therefore, if there were sin after the Judgment Day there would have to be given a law to transgress. There is not one word about there beings a new law given to the lost after the judgment; That there will be a law and sin after the judgment, and that the lost will continue to sin is a one—hundred present made up adding to God's word to try to justify eternal torment by God.

If it were true that the sinner could never stop sinning after death then would it not be true that the sinner can never stop sinning in this lifetime; therefore, no one could ever be saved?

ALEXANDER CAMPBELL: "We do not maintain that men are punished eternally for sins committed in this life only. The analysis of the sufferings of a future retribution, which we have just given, is itself sufficient evidence of this fact; for the indulgence of voluntary depravity is itself both sin and punishment. As a consequence of past sins, the sinner has formed the habit of sinning. It is a law of man's nature, that habit creates both a tendency to certain acts, and a facility in their

performance. As the result of the habit of sinning, formed in this life, a tendency to repeat acts of sin is carried on by the sinner into a future world; and every such act repeated in that world not only perpetuates, but increases the tendency to further acts of the same kind: and thus, as by every repeated act the tendency to sin is increased, and as every act also brings with it its own punishment, so, by the laws of man's mental and moral nature, the sinner's progress in both sin and suffering in a future world, is like that of a falling body, which increases its velocity as the square of the distance increase through which it falls. There is, therefore, just as little probability that a sinner, left to himself in a future world, should repent and turn to God, as that a falling body should arrest itself in its downward course, and ascend to the elevation from which it fell...surely the assumption that our doctrine supposes that God punishes sinners eternally for sins committed in this brief and frail life is wholly gratuitous." "Five discourses on Hell," page 65, April 9, 1848, Daniel Davies Publisher.

Is he saying the millions that live and die without ever hearing about God are harden sinners and that not a one would ever repent? Human nature is such that it can change; even the very bad can and do change in this lifetime. Is he saying God will change human nature in such a way that no one will be able to change, not one of the many millions will be able to repent? Will God deliberately change all so that they cannot stop sinning; therefore, He can torment them for all eternally? This version of Hell makes even the worse sinners able to repent and change in this lifetime, but after death all sinners will go on sinning with not one of them will ever be able to stop. It makes there be no end to sin.

Not many members of the Christian Church or the church of Christ any longer believe as Alexander Campbell, but it is now being taught by many Protestants.

**(11) C. S. LEWIS'S THE ALMOST PLEASANT HELL:** In Great Divorce C. S. Lewis pictures Hell as not black, but only a little gray almost pleasant place where souls that are that are in it can take bus trips into Heaven for the day and return to Hell. See "The Destruction Of the Finally Impenitent" by Clark H. Pinnock at: [http://www.abccoggc.org/jrad/volume2/issue1/jrad\\_v02.1\\_art2.htm](http://www.abccoggc.org/jrad/volume2/issue1/jrad_v02.1_art2.htm)—There is an almost constant rationalizing of the doctrine of Hell to make the God of Hell a less evil God, even making immaterial souls take bus trips.

**(12) PROTESTANT TRADITIONALIST VERSIONS OF HELL:** Most who say they are orthodox and traditionalist believes souls that had been in the lost persons will be kept alive with some kind of punishment, but beyond this there is little agreement among them. Some believe much as did Jonathan Edwards and Calvin, that there will be torment for all souls that are in Hell beyond anything that we can now know of. There are others Protestants who utterly repudiate both Calvin's and Edward's Hell; they believe that there will be some kind of eternal punishment, but it may be nothing more then a little mental anguish, or just being deprived of all good. Others are at all points between the two, even when they are in the same denomination. In those who call themselves "traditionalists," there are wide ranges of views; yet, they all say they are orthodox and traditionalist! Orthodox is a big blanket, and growing bigger all the time. Even so, few if any who are orthodox and

traditionalist believe the same, and there is a world of difference in what is orthodox in the Protestants churches. Many who say they are orthodox do not believe in once saved always saved, infant baptism, Augustine's view on predestination, the millennium, and countless other differences in what is traditional and orthodox. Although they cannot agree among themselves over what is traditional, they attack all who do not believe in one of their many versions of "Hell" for not being orthodox or traditional, nonetheless accept many as being orthodox who believes in an entirely different "Hell," and even accept Premillennial, which has many who do not believe in any version of Hell, or believe that Hell will be on this earth, and will last for only a short time.

**(13) PROTESTANT PREMILLENNIAL VERSIONS OF HELL:** From all the information I can find there are many more Protestants who believe in some form of Premillennial teaching than not. Premillennial variations found in the Protestants churches are pre—tribulation, mid—tribulation, post—tribulation, partial—rapture, many mini—raptures, already past rapture, the tribulation period, historic Premillennial, Post Millennialists, Dispensationalist, and many more. Many of the Premillennial versions of Hell are somewhat similar to either the Seventh—Day Advent Version of Hell, or the Church of God Version of Hell. Many of the Premillennial versions of Hell are far from being what is thought of as being orthodox, but most all Premillennialists are thought of as being Protestant, orthodox and traditional.

**UNORTHODOX IN ORTHODOX CHURCHES:** It may come as a surprise to many that **there may be more who say they are orthodox Protestants who do not believe Hell to be eternal torment than there are orthodox Protestants who do believe Hell to be an actual real place of eternal torment.** When US New says 53 percent of Americans believes Hell to be only mental anguish, many of that 53 percent are orthodox Protestant, and this 53 percent is in addition to the many Protestant Premillennialists who do not believe Hell to be a place of eternal torment. When some say that is only Jehovah's Witnesses teaching, they seem to be blind to the fact that this is the teaching of many of the orthodox Protestants, and the number of orthodox Protestants that do not believe in the Jonathan Edwards or Calvin versions of Hell is now greater then the number that do. Much of what is accepted as orthodox today would have been called heresy 200 years ago by most all Protestant Churches. It came as a surprise to me, as I am sure it will be to many, that many orthodox Protestants believe none of the saved will go to Heaven, but will live on this earth for eternity. Many Protestant Premillennialists believe this. It may also come as a surprise to many that those who say they are orthodox Protestant, but do not believe Christ to be God, but is a created being that did not exist before His birth. Many believe Him to be a chosen one by God, and that He is now in Heaven, but will come back to earth, set up the kingdom of God in Jerusalem, and will rule the

kingdom, which will always be on this earth. It seems to be OK to not believe in Christ as being equal with God, but not OK not to believe God to be crueler than any other being, and that He will torment all souls that were in the lost forever.

**(14) THE HELL WITH NINE LEVELS:** It took nine levels of torment with each one worse than the one above it to satisfy the imaginative mind of Dante. The first level was for those who had committed no sins. The lowest level of the insufferable depths was dominated not by flames but by freezing winds and eternal ice. Even the first of the levels, which he called circles, is a prison for those who committed no sins on earth, but were unbaptized and without knowledge of Christ. Each level or circle becomes increasingly worse, consistent with the degree of the guilt of the sinner.

**(15) REALIZED ESCHATOLOGY, THE A. D. 70 VERSION OF HELL:** It is difficult to pen down just what they believe. This Protestant version of Hell seem to be that death is the end of those who are not faithful, and for unbelievers there will never be a resurrection. The second coming of Jesus was in A. D. 70, the resurrection day was also in A. D. 70 when the Old Testament Saints where resurrected, there is no Judgment Day to come, no day that the earth will end. All the Old Testament faithful was resurrected in A. D. 70, which they believe to have been the second coming of Christ, and after A. D. 70 the Judgment Day of each person is the day of their death, (1) the death of the lost is their end, they will never to be resurrected, (2) at the moment of their death all believers are resurrected to eternal life. This seems to be their general teaching, but I am sure that are many variations within Realized Eschatology.

**(16) THE "SUDDEN REALIZATION" VERSION OF HELL:** A Protestant version that is somewhat like the Roman Catholic Purgatory. When the lost stand before God at the judgment they will suddenly realize how good God is and will repent. Some say it will take only a short time, other say it will take a longer time unto they will be admitted into Heaven, but they may not have all the privileges of Heaven that those that obeyed Christ will have. This is just another attempt to make God less evil than most orthodox Protestant versions of Hell makes Him; no passage says a person can repent after death.

**(17) REPHAIM VERSION OF HELL—ONE OF THE PROTESTANT VERSIONS OF HELL:** This version of Hell is Protestant; as far as I have been able to find no one teaches it but those who are called orthodox Protestants, but it cannot be called traditional or orthodox. God, angels, and man (after death) are disembodied energy being capable of thought and speech without the need of a body. Rephaim is in the Hebrew Old Testament eight times, and is translated "dead" seven times, and "deceased" one time in the King James Version; it is defined in some Lexicons as "departed spirits," "shades," "shadows," "ghosts," "name of the dead in sheol."

**THREE OF THE EIGHT PASSAGES ARE IN ISAIAH. This is a book of many symbols, much like Revelation.**

(1) Isaiah 14:9-11 *"Sheol from beneath is moved for you to meet you at your coming: it rises up the **dead** (Rephaim) for you, even all the chief ones of the earth; it has raised up from their thrones all the kings of the nations. All they shall answer and say unto you, Have you also become weak as we: have you become like unto us? Your pomp is brought down to Sheol, and the noise of your viols: the worm is spread under you, and worms cover you."* This is a description of the fall of Babylon, and it has nothing to do with an immortal something that was in a person. In this metaphor the past dead nations, nations that no longer existed were surprised to see a nation as strong as Babylon joining them. If all souls that had been in the dead were alive, why would the souls that were already in sheol be surprised to see another soul join them after that soul had left the person it was in when souls that were in all that die would join them? It would make no sense if they were surprised to see more souls joining them. Even the trees join in with the dead nations and talk (14:8). Only in a metaphor can past nations that are dead, that no longer exist, and trees talk (Isaiah 14:8).

In this passage Rephaim (one word) is translated:

- *"The dead"* (two words) in both the King James and the New King James.
- *"The spirits of the dead"* (five words from one word) in the New American Standard even though "ruach" (spirit) is not in the Hebrew they added it. There is no way to get "spirit" from "rephaim," but the translators needed to put immortal spirits in the Bible and added it.
- *"The spirits of the departed"* (five words from one word) in the New International Version. It also added spirits even though spirits is not in the Hebrew.
- *"The ancient dead"* (three words from one word) in the Revised English Bible even though there is not a word in the Hebrew in this passage that is even remotely kin to "ancient."

(2) Isaiah 26:14 *"They (the nations) are **dead** (Rephaim), they shall not live; they are deceased, they shall not rise; therefore have you visited and destroyed them, and made all remembrance of them to perish."* This is about nations that did not remember God. It has nothing to do with an *"immaterial, invisible part of man"* after death. It is hard to believe this passage is used to prove that a person has an immortal immaterial, invisible soul, for if it were speaking of this something in a person, then that something is dead, deceased, shall not rise (no resurrection), and all remembrance of that something in a person has been made to perish. If this were an immortal soul, it would be nothing like the immoral soul of today's theology, it would teach there is no life or resurrection after death for an immortal soul, but this passage is used anyway to somehow prove that a soul is alive after death, alive in either Heaven or Hell.

(3) Isaiah 26:19 *"Your dead shall live; my dead bodies shall arise. Awake and sing, you that dwell in the dust; for your dew is as the dew of herbs, and the earth shall cast forth the **dead** (Rephaim)."* Isaiah is speaking of the nation of Israel that was dead, they were slaves in bondage to another nation because they had left God,

now they had repented and were being restored as a nation. He is not speaking of the resurrection of any individuals Jews.

- In Isaiah 26:14, which is speaking of nations, the nations are dead and **shall not rise** (shall not be restored).
- In Isaiah 26:19, which is speaking of Isaiah, it shall live, **shall arise** (shall be restored).
  - If these were speaking of souls that had been in individuals, as Robert Morey in "Death and The Afterlife," on page 79 says he would have these souls both (1) "shall not rise" and (2) "shall rise."

Note: the King James Version in both Isaiah 14:9; 26:14 and 26:19 changed the Hebrew proper name, Rephaim, to "the dead," the New American standard changed it to "the spirits of the dead" in 14:9, and "departed spirits" in 26:14 and 26:19. Why did they change what God said; the Hebrew does not say "the dead," "spirits of the dead" or "departed spirits"; neither one is a proper noun, Rephaim is a proper noun, and there is no authority for changing it. Isaiah 26:19 is speaking of the nation of Isaiah, not of departed spirits. The New International Version in 14:9 says "spirits of the departed" when neither "spirit" nor "departed" is in the Hebrew. Is not this just another attempt of the translators to change God's word to put their view into the Bible, even if they had to change the proper noun God used into something other than a proper noun?

#### **THE OTHER FIVE PASSAGES ARE IN THE POETICAL BOOKS.**

1. Job 26:5-6 "They that are **deceased** (Rephaim) tremble beneath the waters and the inhabitants thereof. Sheol is naked before God, and Abaddon ("Destruction" New International Version) has no covering."
2. Psalm 88:10-12 "Will you show wonders to the **dead** (Rephaim)? Shall they that are deceased arise and praise you? Shall your loving kindness be declared in the grave? Or your faithfulness in destruction?"
3. Proverbs 2:18-19 "For her ("adulteress" New American Standard Version) house sinks down to death, and her tracks lead to the **dead**; (Rephaim) none who go to her return again, neither do they reach the paths of life."
4. Proverbs 9:18-19 "But he knows not that the **dead** (Rephaim) are there; that her (the foolish woman or adulteress) guests are in the depths of Sheol."
5. Proverbs 21:16 "The man that wandered out of the way of understanding shall rest in the assembly of the **dead** (Rephaim)."

All five refer to the lost, and speak of their death, deceased, destruction, dead, not ever attaining unto the paths of life again, resting with the dead. The dead are simply spoken of as being dead; nothing is said about a soul being alive after the death of the person. **There is nothing in any of the five passages above that say anything about a soul being alive in Heaven, Hell, or Abraham's bosom at any time, not before or after the judgment; they are an undeniable contradiction to the orthodox doctrine of being alive and going to Heaven or Hell at death.**

**What do many believe?** These passages are used to prove all the dead; both the good and the evil souls are **now** "Rephaim." Many who believe all souls that

were in the dead go immediately to Heaven or Hell at death use it although it would make a soul not be in Heaven or Hell where they believe the immaterial, invisible something that is now in a person will be after the person is dead.

**(1). The Protestant version** is that the dead are now alive in Heaven or Hell.

**(2). The after judgment version** is that the dead are now alive in hades with some on the good side of hades and some on the bad side, but both use these passages, and have the dead being in four places simultaneously, 1) Abraham's bosom, 2) Heaven, 3) Hell, 4) Rephaim.

**(3). The Rephaim version** is that souls of both the good and the bad are together and exist only as shades, or shadows, they are not in Heaven or Hell. Yet, those who believe the Protestant version, or the newer after judgment version of Hell sometimes use "*Rephaim*" to prove "Hell" even though it would put all souls that were dead together, and not where they believe these souls to be, **and definitely nothing like the immortal soul of today's theology**. The attack on Hell that is coming from many in most all churches is forcing them to take views not many Christians believe. The Rephaim version seems to be used only by those who are trying to prove a person has an immortal soul, but are hard pushed to find any passage to prove it.

Which way do they go? "*Rephaim*" is used by Protestants in a way that does not agree with what they believe and teach; Protestants believe that the saved will be in their eternal home with Christ in Heaven at death, but step away from this belief and say at death both the saved and unsaved are together, and have only a weak shadowy existence, and will have this shadowy existence unto the resurrection. Even if we did grant that Rephaim is the "*immaterial, invisible part of man*" after death, it would contradict their beliefs about the "soul" being in Heaven or Hell. It makes all the dead be "shades" "shadows." Anyway you look at it, the eight times Rephaim is used they do more to refute the belief of going to Heaven at death than they do to support it. Are they so desperately in need of proof that a person has an immaterial, invisible something in them that can never die that they reach for anything, even if it is far from what they believe and want to find?

Robert Morey, an orthodox Protestant, has written one of the most accepted and used books in defense of the doctrine of Hell that has come out in recent years. In his book he makes an argument for Hell which I think shows just how desperate he is for any kind of proof. In "Death And The Afterlife," On page 79 he said from the meaning of Rephaim, when the body dies, man enters a new kind of existence. He then will exist as a spirit creature, and experiences what angels and other spirits experience. Just as angels are disincarnate energy beings and are composed only of mind or mental energy, and are capable of thought and speech without the need of a body, when man dies, he becomes a disembodied energy being, and is capable of thought and speech without the need of a body. This is nothing more than a

desperate attempt to prove that the *"immaterial, invisible part of man"* has some kind of life somewhere before and without the resurrection. **Not a one of the eight passages where Rephaim is used says anything about a Rephaim being like God and angels. Not one of the eight, or any passage in the Bible says God and angels are nothing but thoughts.** He must have made that up out of thin air and hoped you would not see it is not in any of the eight passages. I wonder if he sees how low he is making God if God were like the Rephaim in the eight passages? That he is making God be only "shades," "shadows," "ghosts," "name of the dead in sheol."

**(1). He has made God, angels, and souls that are in mankind be nothing more than "energy beings" after the judgment to be nothing more than mental thoughts with no substance.** Although he did not mention God, he has reduced God to being nothing more than thoughts, an "energy being." Morey's God has no body, no substance of any kind; therefore, Morey's Heaven can exist only in the mind of God; it cannot be a real place; he must somehow make God, angels, and souls all have the same thoughts, or the Heaven that was only in the thoughts of each being would be an entirely different Heaven if their thoughts were not exactly the same thoughts. Any being, angels, demons, saved souls, and lost souls would each make their own Heaven or Hell in their thoughts, if any one being had different thoughts they would have a different Heaven or Hell.

**(2). He has made God weak.** Morey has made souls and angels be disembodied energy being capable of thought and speech without the need of body and they are described as *"Are you also become weak as we: have you become like unto us?" "God is a Spirit"* (John 4:24); Morey has spirits without bodies described as weak, as being nothing more than mental thoughts, which according to him would include God being described as weak, and being nothing more than mental thoughts. Is his God just weak mental thoughts, is that what your God is like?

**(3). He has made the only difference in a soul after the death of the person and God to be only a difference in intelligence.** He says both are nothing but mind without any substance.

**(4). He has made God limited.** According to Morey, God does not have any substance; God is only thoughts without a body. This has not entered the mind of most who believe a person now has an immortal spirit in him, and if it did most would reject it, but their belief that an immortal spirit is now in a person means a soul, according to Morey, God and all heavenly being are nothing more than thoughts without a body. Robert Morey and others who try to prove persons now has an immortal spirit in them has been pushed into this belief. The belief that a person has a dual nature dictates what they can believe about the nature of God. They believe the immortal spirit that is now in a person cannot now be seen for it has no

substance; therefore, because God is spirit, then He can have no substance; He can be only a mind with no body.

THOMAS JEFFERSON in a letter to John Adams in 1820 said, "To say that God, angels, and the human soul, are immaterial, is to say they are nothing. At what age of the church the heresy of immaterialism crept in, I do not know; but a heresy is certainly is—Jesus taught nothing of it."

(5). Morey has developed Plato's doctrine that the body is a prison to a soul, which is set free by the death of the body, far beyond what Plato ever did. To put a soul (an "energy being" that is only "mind") back in a body at the resurrection would be to put it back in a prison.

(6). Also, Morey's Hell could only be mental anguish. There would be no body to torment. He has made it impossible for Hell to be anything more than mental pain. Only something in the mind of souls that are nothing but mind. None of the other "orthodox Protestant" version of Hell could be possible; therefore, what most Protestants have believed for centuries was wrong.

(7). Morey has made Paul not know what he was talking about when he said, "*It is sown a natural **body**; it is raised a spiritual **body**...there is also a spiritual **body***" (1 Corinthians 15:44). He cannot believe in the resurrection. How could he when he has made a soul be composed only of "mind," just as he says the angels and God now are composed only of mind? There could not be a mortal that "*must put on immortality*" (1 Corinthians 15:54), for his "energy being" is now just as immortal as it will always be, and even before the death of the person it is now like God and angels now are. There cannot be a resurrection of any kind of body, not one in the image of Adam, or in the image of Christ. Not the earthly body, or the new spiritual body for there will be no body, nothing but "mind." There cannot be a resurrection of the "mind or mental energy," for at death this "mind or mental energy" will be just as it will always be; therefore, **there could not be any kind of resurrection.**

**What is their no substance soul and no substance Heaven?** What could it be if it has no substance? God made all things out of nothing. If a soul has no substance while it is in a person, it will still be nothing after it leaves the person. Are they saying when God made angels and souls that God made nothing out of nothing; and this God who made nothing out of nothing is Himself nothing?

**HEAVEN IS A REAL PLACE:** "*For Christ did not enter a **holy place** made with hands, a mere copy of the true one, but into **heaven itself**, now to appear in the presence of God for us*" (Hebrews 9:24; 8:5). The holy place made with hands was a real place that was a copy of the true holy place; a real place could not be a copy of something that did not exist, which was only a thought in a mind that has no substance. Christ entered "INTO HEAVEN ITSELF." If Christ and God were only thoughts with no substance, and Heaven was only something in their minds, it would mean a thought entered into the thoughts that were only in the mind of the thought; Morey makes this and many other passages to be pure nonsense. "*In My Father's*

house are many dwelling places; if it were not so, I would have told **you**; for I go to prepare a place for **you**" (John 14:2-3). Thoughts do not have a house with dwelling places; Christ went to prepare a place for "**you**" not for thoughts only. **Heaven is a real place with real dwelling places for a real "you."** You cannot prepare a place in a place that is not a place. There is not a hint of uncertainty in Christ's statement about where He was going to prepare a place.

- "In my Father's house." Where is the father's house? In Heaven, not on Earth.
- "I go to prepare a place for you." Christ was on Earth when He said, "I go." Where does He say He is going? To His Father's house which is in Heaven.

NOTE: I have tried to give the views of the majority in each in the above Protestants versions of Hell. In each of them, there are many individuals and/or small groups who believe in many different variations of that believed by the majority.

Summary: Protestants that believe in Hell are contradictory as to what and where Hell will be.

- Some believe Hell to be a lake of fire and brimstone.
- Some believe Hell will be banishment from the presence of God.
- Some believe Hell to be only mental anguish.
- Some believe God will give most of mankind to Satan to torment, as he wants to.
- Some believe God will not only be doing the tormenting, but He will have great pleasure in the tormenting of souls.
- Many believe a version of Hell that makes God be infinite cruel by creating million foreknowing that He was creating them with no chance to not be in Hell.
- Some believe many other contradictory versions of Hell.

#### **EIGHT OTHER VERSIONS OF HELL:**

**(1) The Abraham's bosom, or the after judgment Hell. A newer version of Hell, Church of Christ, Christian Church.** This version is based almost entirely on an interpretation of Luke 16:19-31 (see chapter eight, part one). Most members of the Church of Christ, the Christian Church and some Protestants believe it although it is not generally accepted as being orthodox or traditional Protestant. In this version all who do not obey Christ will go to Hell, but not unto after the coming of Christ and the judgment; and no one goes to Heaven before the judgment (no instant rapture). According to this version, at death all are taken to an intermediate holding place where the lost are tormented, and the saved are rewarded in a place sometimes called "Abraham's bosom." Instead of all being in Heaven or in Hell unto the second coming of Christ, all are either on the good side or on the bad side of hades, and Christ will take them out of hades at His coming, and judge them a second time to see whether He made a mistake the first time and had put them on the wrong side of hades. A baby who has not come to the age of accountability is not lost and will go to the good side of hades. After the judgment God will personally do the tormenting for eternity of all souls that had been in the lost persons, and Satan and his angels and all souls will be tormented together.

This view has two places where God is going to torture the lost; (1) in one side of hades that is a temporary place of torture, and will last only unto the second coming

of Christ, (2) and "Hell" which after the resurrection will be a permanent place where God will torture most souls without end. No deathless soul is now in Heaven or Hell, and it will not be unto after the resurrection and judgment. This is the view I was taught from the time I became a Christian, and I believed it a long time. I have many books and tracts in which well-known preachers and teachers, such as H. Leo Boles, E. M. Zerr, B. W. Johnson, and many others who teach this view; but lately it seems to be dying out in the church, and is being replaced by going immediately to Heaven or Hell at death without the Resurrection or Judgment, particularly at funerals where preachers often say the soul that was in the dead person is now in Heaven. Most all think of and speak of their loved ones, not souls, as now being in Heaven with Jesus, not in Abraham's bosom unto the judgment.

"When a 'faithful' member dies, he or she does not 'go' to heaven or hell. The person is not 'sentenced' by Christ to heaven or hell until 'Judgment Day'...There will be a resurrection of both the righteous and the unrighteous (Acts 24:15)."

[http://bible-the-real-world.awardspace.com/html/church\\_of\\_christ.html](http://bible-the-real-world.awardspace.com/html/church_of_christ.html)

**(2) Edward Fudge version: The short Hell, God will torment the lost in Hell for a short time, then Hell will end:** He uses the name Hell as if it was a Bible name, but thinks it will last for only a limited time, and will end with the total destruction of all souls in it. He may have Hell and the wrath and fury of God at the judgment confused ("The Fire That Consumes," 1982 edition). Roger Dickson believes the duration of Hell will fit the crime, and then will end. It will be short for some souls, and longer for other souls. He says, "After the stripes have been given, then the destruction occurs, for which there is no reverse" page 162ff, "Life, Death, And Beyond." Is he renaming the Judgment Day, and calling it "Hell?" If I understand him right, he thinks the souls that had been in the lost will go to Hell, but the not so bad souls will not be tormented as long as the very bad. After the "punishment matches the crime" he says they will then be destroyed (page 163). (1) "*Shall be beaten with many stripes*" (Luke 12:47). This is used to prove there will be an end after the stripes. He seems to think, "*Beaten with few stripes*" could not be as long as "*beaten with many stripes*;" therefore, could not take forever; some souls would be tormented longer than others, but the torment will end with death for all. (2) This short Hell is different from the Church of God short Hell in that it will not be on this earth, and there will be no second chance, it will end with death from which there will be no resurrection.

If any country in the world had a period of time when they unmercifully tormented those that were sentenced to death, for one year, two years, five years, or for any length of time like Fudge's short Hell, the world would rise up against that country.

**Fate of the unsaved:** Brother Fudge believes there is a Hell and all the lost will be in it, but believes it will be a short Hell that will end with the death of those that has been in Hell for a while, and they will be tormented by God for as long as they

are in Hell. He says, *“They will be sentenced to hell where they will die,”* but did not give one passage that tells us the lost will *“be sentenced to hell.”*

The short Hell implies that there is a soul that is in a person and that God will torment all souls that were in the lost, some much longer than others.

The fate of those not in Christ according to:

- According to the Bible
  - Death – Resurrection – Judgment – Second death
- According to Fudge
  - Death – Resurrection – Judgment – Torment in Hell – Second death

During the Judgment there most likely will be fear and regret when the lost see what they have lost by not being a Christian. Fudge then adds a place between the Judgment and the second death that is not in the Bible, names it “Hell” and says God will torment the lost, some with more torment, some with less torment before the second death.

We are sometimes told there will be life and torment after the judgment in the lake of fire a short time for some, but a longer time for others. There is nothing in the Bible about some souls being tormented by God in the lake of fire longer than He will torment other souls, or about any place where God will torment persons or souls that had been in persons after the judgment; that there will be such a place is a 100% made-up addition to the Bible to teach God will torment most in a short Hell before He lets them die. It is persons that commits *“murderers, and fornicators, and sorcerers, and idolaters, and all liars”* (Revelation 21:8) not souls; it is the persons that committed these sins that will die, not souls that cannot die that will die because of the sins of the persons they were in.

**Death, pain, and torment:** Natural death can be painless, or with much pain. A person can die in their sleep with no pain, or suffer for years and die slowly.

Violent death is the same. It can be quick and painless, or death can come slowly with much pain. Two persons killed in an explosion; one is blown to bits instantly with no time for pain, the other one is hurt badly and takes hours or even days to die with much pain.

After the judgment, death, not being tormented by God, is the punishment, the black darkness of endless nothing. There is nothing said about some dying with little pain, and other dying with much suffering. Not anything about God tormenting any after their resurrection and before their second death, not for a short time or a longer time, nothing about tormenting them in a place called Hell or any other place.

F. LAGARD SMITH, a teacher of Bible at Lipscomb University in his book, *“After Life, A Glimpse of Eternity Beyond Death’s Door,”* also teaches there is a Hell, but a Hell that will end, no one will be tormented without end. He says on page 191 that sooner or later there is a point that the torment in Hell will end.

*“Beaten with few stripes”* is in a parable addressed to those of that day, it is not an actual event after the resurrection and Judgment Day with God beating with a

whip (Luke 12:41; 12:49-53). In the Law of Moses God limited "*many stripes*" to 40 lashes, never more than 40 (Deuteronomy 25:3; Luke 12:47; Acts 16:23; 2 Corinthians 11:24). According to him the stripes will end, but with many the "*many stripes*," which was no more than 40 is used by those that believe Hell is endless torment to prove that God will forever give not only the 40, but stripes without end, an uncountable number of stripes to those in Hell. In the parable in Luke 12:47-48 both the "*beaten with few strips*" and the "*beaten with many stripes*" are changed to "beaten with an endless uncountable number of blows given by God to be a countless number at the same time He is burning them in the lake of fire; this change that puts both the "*few stripes*" and the "*many stripes*" in Hell must be made to make the stripes go on being given by God for eternity and never stop, for if the "*few stripes*" were not an endless number and God ever stopped His beating, Hell would have ended. If there were a Hell that had no end, after the "*few stripes*" reached a number that no man could count, the stripes would have just begin. All the details that make up any of the parables cannot be taken literally. The point to parables is that they all teach a lesson. The lesson to this parable is that to whoever much is given much will be required, we are to use whatever ability we have whether much of little. More is required in this lifetime of the person that has much ability than of the person that has little ability, but even the person that has little ability must use what he or she has. Nothing is taught in this parable about any punishment after the judgment. To in any way say the cruel never ending Hell as it is taught today where God will be burning living souls for all eternally to be spoken of as "*few stripes*" is nothing more than mockery.

Death and only death is the wages of sin; there is no passage in the Bible that says wages of sin for a soul that will be in "Hell" for a short time any more than there is one that says souls will be in a "Hell" that has no end. The lake of fire is not a real literal lake of fire, it is a picture of death, any living being cast into a lake of fire would be dead almost instantly. John clearly said the lake of fire "*is the second death*" (Revelation 20:8), not life for a short time for some, but a longer life of torment for others. Their punishment is not being tormented by God until they have paid for their sins and then the torment will end; their punishment is an eternal death, an eternal punishment, (Matthew 25:46). A place called "Hell" does not exist in the Bible, not a short Hell, or an eternal Hell. Hell is altogether a pagan teaching of man.

For those that believe in an endless Hell, "*few stripes*" presents a problem. As Robert A. Taylor said in "Rescue From Death," if a person that receives the "*few stripes*" received but one stripe a year, after a trillion years that person would have received a trillion stripes with countless trillions of stripes without end yet to come. There is no way that a countless number of trillions could be called a "*few stripes*." He said, "The traditional view of Hell is fundamentally a nightmare beyond comprehension," "Rescue From Death," page 99.

This short Hell were God will torment for a while and then the lost will pay the wages of sin, death, is taught by Timothy J. Barnett in "Endless Hell Ended," 1987, and by many others as a way to make God be less evil than many of the orthodox Protestant versions of Hell have made Him.

**(3) Christadelphians version of Hell:** This version says those who never heard the Gospel will never be raised. Death is the end of them. Only those who heard the Gospel will be raised at the second coming of Christ, and judged to see whether they were faithful. The faithful will have eternal life on Earth, which will be restored to be like Eden before Adam sinned. The unfaithful of those who heard the Gospel, and were raised will be annihilated by the second death.

**(4) Church of God version of Hell (and others):** According to this version both Heaven and Hell will be on this earth. After the resurrection of earthly bodies on this restored earth, all will be given a second chance to accept Christ. Most will, but the few who will not accept Christ will suffer the second death. Their torment will end in death from which there will never be a resurrection. The saved will be raised and live on the earth restored to be the way it was before Adam sinned, with a body like Adam before he was put out of the garden. No one will ever be in Heaven. I have not been able to find how they think Adam's body was different before he was put out of the garden than it was after. Many Premillennialists who are in most Protestant churches believe this version of Hell, or one that is very similar to it.

**(5) Universalist version of Hell, The "age lasting" Hell:** This Hell will last for only an age; then all will be saved. Universalist calls it a time of "attitude adjustments," or "age—during correction." They do not see it as God torturing souls in a literal lake or anything like that, they see it as simply a time when God will be correcting or teaching them further unto they are fit for His kingdom. All, even the most evil, will eventually end up in Heaven. See chapter nine, "Universalist – The 'Age Lasting' Hell."

**(6) Seventh Day Advent version of Hell:** They believe that at the second coming of Christ the unrighteous will be kill, the righteous will be taken back to Heaven for a 1,000 years. During the 1,000 years only Satan and his angels will inhabit the earth. At the end of the 1,000 years Christ will return to earth with the saved, and the unrighteous will be raised for judgment. Satan gathers his angels, and will the help of the resurrected unrighteous attempt to interfere with the judgment, they will be destroyed in a military battle that will take place outside of Jerusalem, destroyed in the same way Sodom was turned into ashes; they will never be in Hell. The judgment and destruction of the lost will take place on this earth. Their Hell will be on this earth and will last only unto those in it are burned too ashes, the second death. The saved will live forever with earthly bodies on a restored earth on which there will be no evil. They believe they will live forever on all this earth, not just in Jerusalem, much as we now do, they will build houses, plant crops, and meet

together each Sabbath Day. No one will be in Heaven after the 1,000 years.

Just as with the Church of God version of Hell, many Premillennialists who are in most Protestant churches also believe this version of Hell, or one that is very near the same. The number of those who are called Protestant but do not believe any of the orthodox Protestant versions of Hell is large and growing.

**(7) Latter—day Saints version of Hell (Mormons):** They believe there will be three Kingdoms, Celestial, Terrestrial, and Telestial Kingdoms. According to Mormons all spirit were once in Heaven, some spirits were judged worthily to come to earth where they will end up in three states of “glory.” The highest, the Celestial Kingdoms will always live on this earth with cities, houses, animals, can have children and all things much as we now have. The two lower Kingdoms, the Terrestrial and Telestial Kingdoms will not be on this earth, but they do not seem to know or do not tell outsiders just where they will be, but no soul in these two kingdoms will not be in Heaven where they were before they came to earth, and they will not be on earth; those in these two Kingdoms will not be allowed to have children. All will be raised from the dead except for the sons of perdition, the once faithful Mormons that become apostates and left the Mormon Church; I have not been able to find if they yet have any revelation about what will be their fate other than they will have little or no glory. Those who are not Mormons can go no higher than the lower Telestial Kingdom, which seems to be a very low state; their souls will not be able to be on this earth, not able to have children, and these souls will not be in Heaven where they were at one time before they came to earth.

The Latter—day Saints Millennium is unlike any other version of the Millennium; in their Millennium they have both mortals and resurrected immortal living together on earth having children, building houses, and doing most all things that normal people do now.

**(8) The grave is Hell version (Jehovah’s Witnesses)** Jehovah’s Witness do not believe in the resurrection of the lost; when the lost die, they are dead forever.

Jehovah’s Witness believe the grave is Hell, and all go to it at death. There is no knowledge or torment in this Hell, just sleep or death. Some from many different groups believe this version of Hell. They get support mostly from the older translations like the King James Version, and most who believe it think the newer translations that translate only Gehenna into Hell are wrong. They believe Gehenna is a trash dump, not Hell. The Hell they believe in is going on now with all the dead in it, both the good and the bad are asleep in the grave, and the souls that are asleep in this Hell but only the saved will wake up at the Resurrection. All the dead are now unconscious, and there is no torment of the wicked or reward of the righteous in “Hell” where all the dead, both the good and the bad now are. In this version Hell will end at the resurrection, and there will be no Hell after the resurrection. Hell is the “common grave of mankind” where all people go when they die and they are not

conscious there. This version is nothing more than a renaming of sheol and hades. In today's English Hell has come to mean a place of eternal torment after death, and to translate hades into Hell is an untrue translation. The grave is Hell was not the intentions of the translators who first put the word "Hell" into the Bible, the grave is Hell is not the way it would have been understood by English speaking people when it was first used by the translators, or the way it is understood today by most that are not Jehovah's Witnesses. Jehovah's Witness believe that only 144,000 chosen people will ever enter Heaven, and they will be changed to a spiritual body to live in Heaven where they will forever live and help Jesus govern the church that will forever be on this earth. At the end of the Millennium all that has not been made perfect during the Millennium, or did not just cease to exist at death will be destroyed in Gehenna. All but the 144,000 that have been made perfect will live forever on this restored earth.

A. B. ROBINSON, September 1996 (A Jehovah's Witnesses): "We do not have the word 'hell' in the NWT. We translate gehenna as gehenna, hades as hades and sheol as sheol. By doing this we can get the true import of these words. Gehenna is a garbage dump and sheol and hades often refer to the grave. We believe everyone who dies goes to 'hell' or sheol (hades). The dead are unconscious, asleep if you will (Ecc 9:5,19 and 1 Thes 4:13-16) and will remain such until they are resurrected. We also believe that 'hell' will be emptied, as is clearly stated in Rev 20:13. The persons who were in hell, both the righteous and the unrighteous (Acts 24:15) will be resurrected and judged. Those who are deserving of it will then be thrown into the lake of fire, the second death (Rev 20:14,15)."

BRIAN HOLT in an e-mail to me said, "JW's do not have the word 'hell' in the NWT," then he said in the e-mail that everyone who dies goes to Hell. If Hell is not in their Bible, how do they know all the dead are now in Hell?

**"That is what Jehovah's Witnesses teach."** I have been told that what I believe "is what Jehovah's Witnesses have been teaching for years." One person said to me, "You believe the same thing Jehovah's Witnesses believe. Why don't you join them and leave us alone?"

CLARK PINNOCK said, "It seems that a new criterion of truth has been discovered which says that if Adventists or liberals hold any view, that view must be wrong. Apparently a truth claim can be decided by its association and does not need to be tested by public criteria in open debate. Such an argument, though useless in intelligent discussion, can be effective with the ignorant who are fooled by such rhetoric." Four Views on Hell, page 161.

**The problem with this is (1) I do not believe as they do, that the grave is Hell; That I believe what Jehovah's Witnesses believe is an absolute false charge; it is made for only one reason, to seek to scare anyone way by associating it with atheists, evolutionists, Jehovah's Witnesses, Seventh Day Adventists, and others; I think those that do such are not being honest. (2)** That most all denominations, whether they are occults, liberals, or whatever, teach many things that the Bible teaches, and many things that the Bible does not teach. Nothing is right or wrong because a denomination teaches it, not even right or wrong

if the Jehovah's Witnesses denomination teaches it. It is right if the Bible teaches it, or wrong if the Bible does not teach it. Catholic, Baptist, Jehovah's Witnesses, Church of God, and all others each teach many things that the Bible teaches, and each one teaches many things that the Bible does not teach. Anything is right if the Bible teaches it even if the Jehovah's Witnesses teach it, and wrong if the Bible does not teach it. **Jehovah's Witnesses teach adultery is a sin; is it wrong to teach that adultery is a sin because Jehovah's Witnesses teach it to be?** To say, "That is what the Jehovah's Witnesses teach," is said for the same reason the Baptist says, "That is water salvation," or "That is Campbellism." **Their real problem is not that one of the occults teach it, but that they have no other answer, and know that they can turn many off just by saying, "That is what Jehovah's Witnesses teach," just as the Baptist did with, "That is water salvation."** They could not show that a person can be saved without baptism; therefore, they would say, "You believe in water salvation" for they knew this would make others prejudice and not believe the Bible. Now the same thing is being done to anyone who does not believe in Hell by saying, "You are nothing but a Jehovah's Witnesses," **even though what I believe is far from what the Jehovah's Witnesses teach,** they believe there is a Hell, but it is going on now, and I do not believe the Bible says anything about any kind of Hell; not one that is going on now, or one that will be at any time after death.

The Moslem religion believes in eternal torment; can we say it is wrong because those who believe in eternal torment believe something the Moslems teach? No, eternal torment is wrong because the Bible does not teach it.

Why? What is the real reason they say that it is Jehovah's Witnesses teaching? I think one reason is that they just do not want to deal with it. Do not want to take the time. Another reason is the same reason the Baptist call us "Campbellism" and say, "You believe in water salvation." The truth is that if Jehovah's Witnesses did believe as I do (they do not, but even if they did) as long as the Bible teaches it, I would not care if it were what they believed, but would say that it is great that they believe the Bible on that point, and would wish that they believed the Bible on all points. If you made two lists, one a list of things any denomination believes that is not in the Bible, and a list of things it believes that is in the Bible, both lists would be long. The persons who say "That is Jehovah's Witnesses teaching" believes many of the same things that would be on the list of things the Jehovah's Witnesses believes. Some of the many things Jehovah's Witnesses teach that I do not believe.

1. Jesus was not the Son of God.
2. The Millennium.
3. Only 144,000 will go to Heaven.
4. All the rest of the saved will live forever on this earth for all eternity.
5. They don't believe in blood transfusions.
6. Hell is the grave and all the dead are now in Hell. Unfortunately, it is not true that they do not believe in Hell, but Jehovah's Witnesses believe in a Hell that is now going on. The Hell they

believe in is not the God Slandering Hell that many Protestants believe in, but they do believe in Hell, just not one of the many orthodox Protestant versions of Hell although many Premillennialists who are called orthodox Protestants believe much as they do, that Hell is the grave.

Unto the resurrection death is death, not any kind of life, or any kind of Hell anyplace.

**If, "That is what Jehovah's Witnesses believes" makes anything wrong, it is such a broad argument that there is nothing in the Bible that is not destroyed by it, for there is no Bible teaching that is not believed by many false religions.**

**Probable origin of this version of Hell:** Sheol is translated Hell in the King James Version thirty-one times, and grave thirty-one times. It puts all in Hell or the grave together, both the good and the bad, and the grave is a place that those in it know nothing, a Hell that will end at the resurrection. If one believes the mistranslation of the King James Version, then he or she must believe the grave is Hell version of Hell for the Jehovah's Witnesses belief about Hell is clearly taught in the Old Testament of the King James Version. The Jehovah's Witnesses and others who believe this version have all the proof they need in the mistranslations in the King James Version; I cannot see anyway that a person that believes the King James Version just as it is would not be forced believe in the same Hell that the Jehovah's Witnesses believes in, their Hell is clearly taught in it.

**The Bible version of Hell:** There is no Bible version of Hell. Both the name Hell and the concept, a place where God will forever torment the souls that had been in most of mankind was not known about in Old or New Testament times. Christ or Paul used neither the place nor the name. An eternal place of torment for souls was not known about by anyone unto long after the last page of the Bible.

**WHICH HELL DO YOU BELIEVE IN?** Most versions of Hell are based on the belief that:

- A person has a soul in them that is immortal from birth and is not subject to death.
  - That death is not death, the dead are more alive then the living, "*You shall not surely die.*"
- (1). **Some believe Satan is the tormenter.** According to Jonathan Edwards and most Hell fire preachers, Satan will be doing the tormenting of all that are in Hell forever.
  - (2). **Some believe God is the tormenter.** Today many believe God will be doing the tormenting.
  - (3). Some denominations believe **Hell will be on this earth.**
  - (4). Others believe **Hell will only last for a while;** but will end with all that are in Hell being saved and going to Heaven.
  - (5). Some believe **Hell will only last unto the ones in it have paid for their sins,** and then they will be destroyed.
  - (6). Some believe **Hell is hot.**
  - (7). Some believe **Hell is cold.**
  - (8). Some believe **Hell is dark.**
  - (9). Some believe **Hell is Metaphorical,** it is not literally hot, cold or dark; we cannot understand what it is really like, and are given pictures to tell us how bad it is.
  - (10). Some believe **Hell is only mental anguish.**
  - (11). Some **believe Hell is under the earth.**

(12). Some believe **Hell is who knows where**. Most, but not all, now realize there is not a place of torment under the earth, and have moved it. Now who knows where they think Hell is, maybe somewhere out in space.

(13). Some believe **Hell exists now**, and the lost dead are now being tormented in it.

(14). Some believe **Hell will not exist unto after the judgment**.

(15). Some believe **Hell now exists with the angels that sinned in it**, but no person will be in Hell unto after the judgment.

(16). Some believe **Hell is a place of separation from God** without any torment from God, a place where God is not at.

(17). Some believe that although God is omnipresent (present in all places at the same time), nevertheless **God is not present in Hell**. They believe those in Hell are separated from God, they believe death is separation from God, and the second death is an eternal Hell, and at the same time they believe God is there tormenting them and gives them life. All life comes from God. He would have to be present and not present at the same time. The lost would be separated from God, and not separated from God simultaneously, for God would be wherever they were separated from Him if He were doing the tormenting.

(18). If you go back in time 50 or 100 years, most all preachers were teaching "Hell" to be a place of "fire and brimstone." Today "fire and brimstone" is almost never used by preachers or in today's theology. Do you believe in the "Hell" of today or the "Hell" of 100 years ago?

**There is no majority view of Hell today** as there was in the Dark Age; no matter what view of Hell a person has that view is only a small part of those that believe in Hell; if a person believes one of the many versions of Hell, they must disbelieve all the other versions; therefore, every one that believes in Hell disagrees with the vast majority that believe in Hell. **Everyone that believes in Hell is in conflict with most others that also believe in Hell**. Believes in Hell are becoming more divided as time goes by; even if there were a Hell it would not possible for more than one version of Hell to be the truth; therefore, all the other versions, the majority that believe in Hell are vain worship (Matthew 15:9).

**DIVISIONS OVER WHAT WILL BE IN HELL?** What part of a person will be in Hell? It has been believed by most that it is a bodiless soul that will be in Heaven or Hell, but now many are saying no it is not a soul, but it will be a bodiless spirit that is the immortal being that is in a person, that a soul is not immortal; therefore, (1) some say it is a soul that is now in a person that will be in Heaven or Hell, (2) but others now say, not so, it is a spirit that will be in Heaven or Hell. Not only are there many divisions on what Hell is, there are also divisions on which immaterial, bodiless being will be in Hell. One of the many examples of those that have switched from believing a soul is immortal to a spirit being the immortal something that is in a person is Robert L. Kramer in "Present Truth," volume 10, page 12.

**DIVISIONS OVER WHEN A SOUL, OR A SPIRIT WILL BE IN HELL?** When will a soul or a spirit be in Hell? At death, or not unto after the resurrection and judgment? Many say Hell begins at death; many say no soul or no spirit will be in Hell unto after the judgment; the strange thing is that there are many that say a soul at one time, then the same person will say a spirit at another time.

**HELL HAS BEEN MOVED:** Pagan philosophers mostly believed a soul was somewhere underground until it was reincarnated. The first time Hell is used in the King James Version, it is a place on this earth, and is the punishment and scattering of the nation of Israel (Deuteronomy 32:22-26). "Though they dig into Hell" (Amos 9:27 King James Version). Most of the "church fathers," and the Church in the Dark Age both believed Hell was underground. In the Middle Age Hell was inside of the earth as it is in, "The Divine Comedy" by Dante Alighieri. Both the Catholic Church and the "Apostle's creed," which is used by many Protestants says Christ descended into Hell at His death; and preached to souls in prison. Many encyclopedias and lexicons still say this.

THE NEW OXFORD AMERICAN DICTIONARY says, "hell 'hel' a place regarded in various religions as a spiritual realm of evil and suffering, often **traditionally depicted as a place of perpetual fire beneath the earth** where the wicked are punished after death."

When I was a child, I heard repeatedly that the Devil (a name used by many to be a name of Satan) lived under the ground, and he would get you if you were bad. Now almost no one believes Hell is under ground; it has been moved to some dark place on the backside of some far away no one knows where place. Most who believed Hell to be under the earth also believed the earth will end at the coming of Christ; I have never heard them explain how the earth will be destroyed, but the Hell that is under ground (inside of the earth) will last forever. O-well, one place is as good as any other for there is no Bible teaching for any of them, they are all man made and believing any of them is to believe a lie. *"But in vain do they worship me, teaching as their doctrines the precepts of men"* (Matthew 15:9). The only sure thing is that what men believe about Hell is that Hell is always changing to suit the times and the denominations.

**BELIEVERS IN HELL must do away with death.** If death is real, if when God said death, God meant what He said, then Hell cannot be.

**BELIEVERS IN HELL must prove that men now have an immortal soul that is dwelling in them.** Must prove that there is an immaterial, invisible something in a person that has no substance, and this something that no one knows what it is, is now just as immortal as it will be after the judgment; and this who know what this "soul" is that Christ will save; and whatever "it" is, not the person, will be in Heaven.

**BELIEVERS IN HELL must make words like destroy, perish, die, death, lost be used only with a theological sense.** If they are used, "In the fair, stipulated, and well—established meaning of the terms," then Hell cannot be.

**BELIEVERS IN HELL must prove that Hell is in the Bible, both the name and the particular place they call Hell.** If they do not prove there is a Hell, but teach it, they have added to the Bible.

**BELIEVERS IN HELL must prove that the "nehphesh" animals have in Genesis 1:20; 1:21; 1:24; 1:30; 2:19 is mortal, but the same "nehphesh" men**

**have in Genesis 2:7 is immortal.**

**FROM WHERE DID HELL COME? It came from pagan philosophers**, and was brought into the church along with Purgatory, the sale of indulgences, Limbo, worship of Mary and saints, Nether World, Holy Water, the rosary, forbidding Priests to marry, the crucifix, forbidding eating of meat on Friday, candle—burning, and many other teachings; and was opposed by such men as Luther, Tyndale, Moses Lord, E. D. Slough, Ashley Sidney Johnson, Elias Smith, and many others. It came into the church in the Dark Age from Pagan Greek philosophers and writers like Dante Aligheri (1265—1321), "The Divine Comedy," and Milton's "Paradise Lost." They added things like Satan has a red suit, horns, and pitchfork and is forever tormenting the damned. Aligheri was a pagan who believed the teaching of Plato on a soul being immortal, and his book "The Divine Comedy" is basically Plato's view of a soul. This view of Hell was adopted in the Middle Age Church to create fear of leaving the church. The church in the Dark Age, and the translators of the King James Bible were more influenced by this Pagan philosophy and writers of that time than they were from the teaching of God.

(1). **Hell and other pagan teaching were brought into the Bible by reinterpreting four words fifty-seven times** in the King James Version, but much fewer times in later translations, and none at all in many translations. The American Standard Version, which many say is the most accurate translation ("This honored version of 1901, long held to be the most accurate translation in the English language" Star Bible catalog, page 3, 1996), uses it 13 times; and even then has a footnote that says, "Gr. Gehenna" or "Gr. Tartarus."

GROWLER 1995 ENCYCLOPEDIA ASPS: "In Greek Mythology, Hades is the underworld ruled by the god of that name, who is also known as Pluto; in Norse Mythology, Hel is a cold and shadowy subterranean realm." Both Hel and Hell are from the same root word— "Kel."

THE AMERICAN HERITAGE DICTIONARY, page 2108 says, "KEL—1. O-grade from kal 1. A Hell, from Old English Hell, Hell; B HEL, from Old Norse Hel, the underworld, goddess of death."

COMPTON'S 1995 ENCYCLOPEDIA, "Hell and Hades." "There is no fully developed teaching about Hell in the New Testament...Only in the course of later church history was it elaborated into official church doctrine."

ENCYCLOPEDIA BRITANNICA, Volume 2, page 402, "Old English. Hel, a Teutonic word from a root meaning 'to cover.'"

ENCYCLOPEDIA AMERICANA, Volume 14, page 81, "Much confusion and misunderstanding has been caused through the early translators of the Bible persistently rendering the Hebrew Sheol and the Greek Hades and Gehenna by the word hell. The simple transliteration of these words by the translators of the revised editions of the Bible has not sufficed to appreciably clear up this confusion and misconception."

WIKIPEDIA, the free Encyclopedia: "The modern English word Hell is derived from Old English hel, helle (about 725 AD to refer to a nether world of the dead) reaching into the Anglo—Saxon pagan period, and ultimately from Proto—Germanic \*halja, meaning "one who covers up or hides something". (3) The word has cognates in related Germanic languages such as Old Frisian helle, hille, Old Saxon hellja, Middle Dutch helle (modern Dutch hel), Old High German helle (Modern

German Hölle), and Gothic halja. (3) **Subsequently, the word was used to transfer a pagan concept to Christian theology and its vocabulary.**" From the article "Hell."

DYREL COLLINS, "We assume that the word 'Hell' is a Bible word chosen by God to reveal his will. It is neither an O. T. nor N. T. word, but rather the word chosen by Bible translators to translate, Sheol (Grave), Hades...Gehenna (Valley of Hinnom) and Tartarus (The abode of angels that sinned). Thus one word is chosen to translate four different places and ideas. **The word 'Hell' therefore came to have a meaning beyond the concept involved in each word, but borrowing certain aspects from each and adding the idea of everlasting conscious torment for a soul which cannot die.**" "Immortality: Only In Christ," Star Bible Publications, 2002, church of Christ.

CSONKA said, "Every good Bible student know Hades is not Hell" Truth Magazine, 1995, page 17. Then why do so many in the Lord's church teach it is?

THE DICTIONARY OF NEW TESTAMENT THEOLOGY: "The word Gehenna does not occur in the LXX or Greek literature...In contrast with later Christian writings and ideas, the torments of hell are not described in the NT...Neither does the NT contain the idea that Satan is the prince of Gehenna, to whom sinners are handed over for punishment." Volume 2, page 208—209.

Clinton D. Hamilton, who believed in Hell, said, "The New Testament is loaded with metaphors that describe Hell," and then he says Gehenna is one of the metaphors. On the page before he said that Gehenna is not used in secular Greek literature, not used in the Septuagint, and not by Josephus in the last part of the first century in any of his writings. When he said they did not use Gehenna, he is using it to mean Hell; therefore, he is saying Hell was not used by any of the above, neither is it in any of the Apocryphal books.

(2). **Not in vocabulary:** Heaven and Earth are named together about 30 times, and each is named separately hundreds of times, but not one time is Hell named in the Bible, or even spoken of. Why? No doubt, it would have been if Hell was real and there is such a place. We are told not to swear by Heaven or Earth (Matthew 5:34), but today men swear by Hell more than both Heaven and Earth together. Why were they not told not to swear by Hell? It was because Hell is a word that was not in their vocabulary? No word with the meaning of today's English Hell was used in the ancient writing as a swear word, or any other way; no such word was in their vocabulary, and they knew of no such place. **The concept of the place called Hell, or the name Hell is not in the Bible, and does not occur in any writing of either the Hebrews or the Greeks unto long after the Bible. The Old Testament Hebrew, or the New Testament Greek has no word that is even close to today's English word "Hell."** It did not exist unto long after the last book of the Bible was written.

**How do we know about this place called Hell? Where did Hell come from?** Not by faith that comes by hearing God's word; it is not a translation of Gehenna; it is not a translation of any word in the Old Testament or the New Testament; it is a deliberate addition. It is from the doctrines and precepts of men (Matthew 15:9). It was not used in the first century because it was a place they knew nothing about.

The word "Hell" is of Saxon origin about the 3rd to 5th century A. D. and originally was any covered over place such a roof or a grave. The nearest thing I can find to the English word Hell is in Greek Mythology and Norse Mythology (According to Socrates, Plato and other Greek philosopher), was a shadowy subterranean realm somewhere under the earth where souls went unto they could be reincarnated; but this shadowy place was far from being as terrible or as dreadful a place as today's Hell is, and "souls" would only be in it unto they were reincarnated into a new earthly bring. This underground place did not have the name Hell, and is nothing like the Hell that grew out of it in the Dark Age.

RUSSELL BOATMAN, Dean at Saint Louis Christian College, Christian Church, "Three hundred years or so ago the word 'Hell' was commonly used to refer to any dark or foreboding place. A grave could be referred to by that term without readers or hearers automatically envisioning 'the lake of fire, which is the second death' (Rev. 20:15). The hole dug in the ground to receive the body of a deceased loved one is certainly a foreboding place. A prison, dungeon, lunatic asylum, or a valley such as the valley of Hinnom outside of Jerusalem with equal propriety could be spoken of as 'Hell' three or four hundred years ago. That is no longer so...in our time 'Hell' has a fairly settled meaning...its use conjures up visions of the awesome lake of fire judgment reserved for sinners" "What The Bible Says, The End Time," 1991, College Press, page 305.

CANON FARRAR, "Hell has entirely changed its old harmless sense of dim under—world: and that meaning, as it now does, to myriads of readers...it conveys meanings which are not to be found in any of the New or Old Testament words for which it is presented as an equivalent" Excursus II, "Eternal Hope."

T. L. ANDREWS said our English word Hell has come to mean the eternal abode of the sinner where this tormenting punishment takes place? Florida College Lectures, 1997, page 168.

A doctrine as terrible as Hell must not be assumed, but demonstrated by unquestionable proof. Such proof is not in the Bible. Heaven is in the Bible over 600 times, but Hell not one time. Why? The Bible is full of warnings. Paul warned that many "*shall not inherit the kingdom of God*" (1 Corinthians 5:9), but he never said anyone would "go to Hell." **Paul said he declared the whole counsel of God (Acts 20:27); yet not one time (even in the King James Version) did he use the word Hell. Why?**

When? The English word Hell did not exist in Paul's time; it therefore come to mean the eternal abode of sinners long after the New Testament; it came from man, not God. Therefore, Paul or the Bible could not, and did not use it.

**If Hell had been a real place, which was known about in the time of Christ, others of that time would have known about it and used its name, but none did.** Gehenna was the name of a real place near Jerusalem (the city dump), which the people near Jerusalem would know about, and they have would understand what Christ was saying when He used its name as a place of destruction. The rest of the world would not know about Jerusalem's trash dump, or know what its name was, and would not have understood. If Paul had used the name Gehenna in Rome or in writing to Gentiles, it is unlikely that any would have known what or where Gehenna

was. When the Greek philosophy about the underworld was brought into the church by the "church fathers," what Christ had said about Gehenna was made to order for them to misuse, which they did by changing "Gehenna" into "Hell." Gehenna was soon mistranslated into Hell. Whatever is not taught in the Bible cannot be a Bible doctrine. If it is the doctrine of man, is it not sinful to teach it as God's word?

Hell is not a Bible word. It is a word chosen by Bible Translators to translate four Bible words, sheol, hades, Gehenna, and Tartarus. Not one of the four has the meaning of Hell as it is used today. Not only is there no Hebrew or Greek word for Hell, but also at first even the English word Hell did not mean a place of torment after death as it does today; like many English words it has had a radical change of meaning. In Old English it was a covered place. A farmer would say, "I helled my potatoes" meaning he put them in a hole and covered them to keep them from the cold. Helling a house meant to cover it with a roof, and those that did the roofing were called "helliers." Helmet, a covering for the head is derived from the same word; the word "Hell" as the name is used today has no resemblance to the Old English word, in Old English the meaning of Hell had nothing to do with a soul being tormented by God. Hell was never the best translations of hades (to cover in a grave), but formerly it would have been acceptable in Old English. It is not an acceptable translation of hades in modern English, and has been abandoned by most of the newer translations. When the King James Version was made, the doctrine of Hell was completely developed, and the translation of sheol and hades into Hell were a mistranslation. Most likely a deliberate mistranslation for in 1611 the name "Hell" had taken on the modern meaning of a place of torment after death although it was believed by most at that time that Hell was someplace deep inside the earth.

Those who believe in Hell use the word as if both the place and the name are used repeatedly in the Bible. Their proof texts are metaphors, parables, and symbolical language as is found in the book of Revelation. If there were a place as terrible as Hell, why is it never spoken of in clear words that the common person could not misunderstand? If Hell were real, it would be strange if a doctrine as important as Hell would have been would have to depend on an interpretation of a parable or symbolical language.

(3). **Not in early creeds**, the two earliest creeds, The Apostles Creed, traditionally miss ascribed to the 12 Apostles, and the Nicean Creed, 325 A. D., were both doctrinal statements saying what those that used them believed, but neither one contained the concept of Hell.

(4). **Today's preaching—versus—first century preaching.** Heaven is taught throughout the Bible (used about 635 times in the New American Standard Bible), but there is nothing about today's Hell. Adam was warned that he would die if he ate, but not that he would go to Hell. Moses warned about death to those who did not

keep the law, but he said nothing about Hell. The Bible is as silent as a tomb on it. **It is beyond belief that there would not be many clear and unmistakable warning about Hell if there were such a place. There are many clear and unmistakable warning that the wages of sin is death, but not a one about Hell or an eternal life of torment.**

#### **HOW HELL WAS PUT INTO THE BIBLE AND IS BEING KEPT IN THE BIBLE:**

WHITLOCK, Seibles Road Church of Christ bulletin, August 9, 1998. "Jesus said it (Hell) was a place where 'the fire...never shall be quenched...Hell is further described as a place where"

Christ did not say anything about Hell, but was using Gehenna as a metaphor of destruction; but Whitlock changed the name Gehenna that Christ used to another name—Hell, and in the same sentence he quotes only a part of a sentence used by Christ, adds to it, and makes it all one sentence. In doing so he has put the word Hell into the mouth of Christ, but when he make Hell be a real place he must deny that Gehenna is a metaphor.

(1). He changes one proper noun into another proper noun, but does not tell us from where he got the proper noun "Hell."

(2). He makes Christ say something He did not say.

(3). He says, "Hell is further described as a place where," but he did not say where it is described as a place. Hell is not described as a place, or is not described in any other way in the Bible.

This is the very way the words of Christ were first misused by some of the so called church fathers in about the third century and after, long before it was mistranslated into any Bible translation. Unto after the end of the second century only a few of the "church fathers" taught that men have an immaterial, invisible being in them that is immortal, and it was not unto later that Hell came into being. The so called "church fathers" learned just as we do, from the Bible or from the teaching of men, neither they nor their writing were not inspired; the half converted "church fathers" looking for a way to put their philosophy learned from men into Christianity used the words of Christ in the same way Whitlock did. The church fathers had to have a place to put their immortal soul, which had come from the Greek philosophy. Very often statements like the same word aionios, (eternal) is used to describe both Heaven and Hell when nothing is said about Hell or Gehenna in Matthew 25:46. Dr. Bert Thompson said both Heaven and Hell are described with the exact same terminology in the Bible. "Reason and Revelation," July 2000. The sad thing is that many will believe such a statements without question. How could anyone make a statement like this, "Both Heaven and Hell are described with the exact same terminology in the Bible." There is no way he could not know "Heaven" is used hundreds of times, but "Hell" is not used even one time in the Greek. The truth is that aionios, (eternal) is not used in any passage with sheol, hades or Gehenna, not in any passage that any of the three words that are translated Hell in the King James Version. Dr. Thompson did not give one passage where Hell is described with the same terminology as Heaven. There is not one.

Summary: In Pagan and Greek philosophy (Plato, Socrates and others), souls went to a place underground to "a cold and shadowy subterranean realm" unto they could be reincarnated. They believed in a soul being immortal and would be reincarnated, but they did not believe in Hell, a place of everlasting torment before or after the judgment was unknown to them; and they had no word for it. The doctrine of Hell, as is believed today, became fully developed in the medieval Dark Age. Tyndale and many others in the Protestant reformation fought the Catholic Church teaching that most go to Purgatory to be purified on their way to Heaven, but "Hell" was accepted without Purgatory by most Protestant churches. It was preached in all its terror by the Jonathan Edwards type of Hell fire preacher and many Gospel preachers a few years back, with Satan tormenting the souls that had been in the lost from the time of the death of the persons the souls had been in. Today it is almost never preached or written about by Gospel preachers; but when it is, it is almost always toned down from the Jonathan Edwards type of Hell fire preaching; it is now God, not Satan, who will be doing the tormenting of souls.

**Another change:** In the same way the King James Version changed Gehenna into Hell, it also changed the proper noun "Passover (Pasha in Greek)" into "Easter." "Pasha" is in the New Testament twenty-nine times. Twenty-eight times the King James Version translates it Passover. Only one time (Acts 12:4) is it translated Easter, which according to Webster's New World Dictionary came from "Eastre" which is the Anglos Saxon goddess of the dawn. There is no way the King James translators could not have known Pasha is not Easter; this is another deliberate change where a Proper Noun was changed into another Proper Noun, which they know had a completely different meaning; one more time the translators were willing to change God word to put something they believed into the Bible when it was not there. Most other translations have corrected this change. **Both changing Gehenna into Hell, and changing Passover into Easter are deliberate changes, both to put heathen teaching into the Bible.**

**If Gehenna is a metaphor, what is it a metaphor of?** Present day preachers make it be a metaphor of a place unknown unto long after the last page of the Bible was written. **But** (after they change it's name) **they continuously use it as if it is a real place, not as a metaphor.** They change from Gehenna being a metaphor to Gehenna being a real place according to what they are trying to prove at that time.

**Can one metaphor have several other metaphors that are metaphors of it?** After saying Gehenna was a valley that was used as a place of refuse where fires were always needed to consume, Hamilton said Jesus took the term and applied it to the place of eternal torment, C. Hamilton in Truth Commentaries, 1 Peter, page 385. This is a typical example of how even well-educated men who know how Christ used Gehenna, but they are compelled to use the mistranslation of the King James Version to prove their belief. Then he said Hell is represented by several metaphors. (1) He said Gehenna is a metaphor, (2) and then he said this metaphor (Gehenna) is represented by several metaphors. He has one metaphor that has several other metaphors that are metaphors of it. Then on the same page he said, Gehenna, Hell, means the place of punishment in the next life. First, he says Gehenna, a valley

used for the destruction of the unwanted city garbage, is a metaphor of Hell, and then on the same page said Gehenna is Hell! Which one does he think Gehenna is, (1) a metaphor, (2) or a real place that is not on this earth? It comes down to what is the real thing, and what is the metaphor. He said all three, that (1) Gehenna, (2) the lake of fire, (3) and the second death, are all three metaphors of Hell. Then how could any of them be Hell if all three are metaphors of Hell? How could he say Hell—Gehenna is a real place when he has just said it is a metaphor? His problem is that he knew Gehenna was the city dump (a real place), but needed to change it into another real place, namely Hell. After saying all three are metaphors of Hell, he then says both the lake of fire, and the second death are metaphor of Gehenna—Jerusalem's trash dump. He said Hell is called the second death, and the lake of fire on page 385; but he did not give one verse where either one is called Hell for there is not one. When was Gehenna changed into Hell? When was one place changed into another place? When did a place of destruction of unwanted trash on this earth become a place of eternal torment and damnation not on this earth where there is no destruction? The second death is not a metaphor of anything. If the second death is only a metaphor, then the first death would also have to be only a metaphor; or there would not be the first and the second, but two different and unlike things. The Bible speaks of two deaths, the first death, and the second death, if the first death is death, but the second death is eternal life being tormented by God then the second death is not death; the second death is a real death, just as real as is the first death; both the first and second death are both an end of life, neither the first or the second death are life in another form or place; as the first death deprives a person of all psychical life, and it is the final end of the earthly existence, so the second death is the final end of existence after the resurrection to judgment; when was the second death changed to a deathless place of endless life? He changed Gehenna into Hell, and used it over and over as if it were a Bible name for a real place (but not the name of the city dump). He has done what many do, he has taken the name of a particular place (the city dump), and made it into another particular place, which does not exist in the Bible; and then changed the second death into a metaphor of the place he has made so that he could keep the second death from being death and make the second death into life to keep it from being death. **He has taken a thing (death—the second death), and then changed this thing (death) into a place (changed death into Hell), and then he named this place he had made out of a thing "Hell."** This seems to be a long round about way to change death into a place, a place where there is no death.

**If Gehenna is a metaphor, it is not a real place, if Gehenna is a metaphor it is not Hell.** How could he know Gehenna is a metaphor of Hell? If it is, then he would have to know about Hell from some other place, for he could never know Gehenna was a metaphor of a place called Hell if the Bible said nothing about that

place. We would never be able to understand a metaphor if it were about somewhere far out in space which we know nothing about if we are not told by revelation that there is such a place. This is just what he is doing if he cannot know there is a Hell from another part of the Bible. From where did he learn of Hell? From where did he learn its name? Maybe from the very badly mistranslated King James Version, and the theology he has heard all his life, but not from any revelation from God, for there is not a word in the Bible that has the meaning of today's English word Hell. He says in one breath that Gehenna is a metaphor of Hell, and in the next breath Gehenna is not a metaphor, but that it is Hell. He and most others that believe in Hell say Gehenna is a metaphor of Hell. **But if Gehenna, the city dump, is not Hell, but it is only a metaphor of Hell, why is this metaphor of Hell translated into Hell? If it is a metaphor of Hell, in what passage is "Hell" to be found? Without changing and mistranslating Gehenna into Hell, there is nowhere that Hell can be found in the Bible.** They seem to be between a rock and a hard place. They believe Gehenna is a metaphor, but if it is a metaphor then they have no place to get the name of Hell; yet, they tell us Gehenna is a metaphor, and then tell us it is not a metaphor, but that they know it is an actual real place of eternal torment even if they cannot tell us what passage they know this from.

Here is a strange statement for one who believes Hell is found in revelation from God. Hamilton quotes Henry Thayer who said, "**Gehenna, the name of a valley on the S. and E. of Jerusalem...**which was so called from the cries of little children who were thrown into the fiery arms of Moloch...an idol having the form of a bull. The Jews so abhorred the place after these horrible sacrifices had been abolished by King Josiah...that they cast into it not only all manner of refuse, but even the dead bodies of animals and of unburied criminals who had been executed. And since fires were always needed to consume the dead bodies, that the air might not become tainted by the putrefaction, it came to pass that the place was called Gehenna tou puros" A Greek—English lexicon of the New Testament, page 111. **Thayer said Gehenna is a valley that is near Jerusalem; if it is a valley on this earth, it could not be Hell that is not on this earth.** Hamilton said the concept of hell is derived from a valley south and east of Jerusalem. Truth Commentaries, 1 Peter, page 385. Who does he think had this "concept," man or God? Is he saying God or man had this concept from the misuses of a valley on this earth? When was this "concept"? A big part of the Old Testament was past history before the Jews so abhorred the place, page 385. Was Hell just a late afterthought with God, which God derived from man's misuse of a valley, but not unto after millions have died? **He overlooked the fact that "Hell" is in the King James Version before the "Jews so abhorred the place after these horrible sacrifices."** He said (1) Hell was unknown in much of the Old Testament and (2) "the concept of Hell is derived" by man. Do you see what he has done? **Hamilton has taken what Thayer said about the origin of the name of a real valley that is "S. and E. of Jerusalem," then he changed the name of this real valley from Gehenna to Hell, and then applied what Thayer said in his lexicon**

**about the valley of Gehenna that is on this earth to the origin to his Hell, which Hamilton says is a place not on this earth. He completely changed what Thayer said about the name of a valley on this earth to make it be proof of what he needed, but did not have. Thayer says where the name of a valley near Jerusalem (Gehenna) is derived from, but where is Hell (as we use the word today) derived from, either the name or the place? The answer is clear that it came from pagan philosophy, and was brought into the church by the so-called church fathers, and became fully developed in the Dark Ages (the Hellenistic period) as a place where God forever torments. Neither the place of eternal torment that is taught today, nor its name (Hell) is not in the Bible.**

If Gehenna were a metaphor of Hell, a place of eternal torment, it would be a very poor one, for **Gehenna the city dump was a place of destruction with no torment; but Hell, as it is taught today, is a place of torment with no destruction. In the time of Christ Gehenna was a real place of destruction on this earth. No one hearing Christ would have understood Gehenna to be a place of torment that is not on this earth.**

Summary: Step after step after step.

(1). First step: Many teach and believe that Gehenna was the valley outside of Jerusalem (the city dump).

(2). Second step: The name is changed by mistranslating to the name of another place, but not a place near Jerusalem. Changed from "Gehenna" near Jerusalem to "Hell" who knows where it is, but not near Jerusalem, not on this earth.

(3). Third step: Then the place of destruction, which is near Jerusalem named Gehenna is changed into a place of torment that is not on this earth and renamed Hell, and the very words (mistranslated words) of Christ are used to make Him be speaking of their Hell. Christ is made to be speaking of a place not of this earth, and not the Gehenna near Jerusalem. With this kind of reasoning anything can be proved. **The valley that was called "Gehenna" by Christ is not the place that is called "Hell" today.**

- The real valley called Gehenna that is near Jerusalem, a place where nothing living was thrown into it and no one was tormented in it, is nothing like the Hell of today.
- Even if the teaching of Christ were changed to make what He said be a metaphor, no one could know what it was a metaphor of without God making known that there is a place called Hell. No place in the Bible is a place named Hell was made known; there is absolutely no revelation from God about Hell, not one word.
- If the valley of Gehenna were made into a metaphor, it would be a metaphor of a place where there is no life and no torment.

Major changes must be made to the Bible to teach a person now has an *"immortal immaterial, invisible part of a person"* that God will torment in Hell.

**(1). Destroy what? Psukee—a living creature that is repeatedly applied to both animals and persons that can and does die must be changed to a**

**formless, no substance being that cannot die that animals do not have. A mortal living being (psukee) must be changed to an immortal being.** How did the translators know when it was one and when it was the other? The same word is used four times in Matthew 10:28-39, and this word is translated **soul** two times, and **life** two times, and in Matthew 16:25-39 it is used four times, and in the King James Version it is also translated **soul** two times and **life** two times, but it was translated **life** all four times in the American Standard Version. In verse 39 Christ says, "*He that finds his **life** (psukee-life) shall lose it; and he that loses his **life** (psukee-life) for my sake shall find it.*" Although the translators have tried to make psukee sometimes refer to a person, and sometimes to a soul that is in a person, it always refers to the whole person, never to something that is only temporary in a person.

- In the same sentence Christ used the same word four times.
- In the same sentence the translators changed Christ's one word to (1) one word used two times and (2) another word that has a completely different meaning is used two times. Why?

When psukee refers to God, it is referring to all of God, not just an immortal something in Him. When both *nehphesh* in the Old Testament and psukee in the New Testament are used with reference to God, angels, man, or animals, it is always a living being, not to another living being that is in them, not to another living being that is in God.

**(2). Destroy where?** Gehenna, a place where there was destruction with no torment, must be changed to a place where there is torment but no destruction. **Christ said destroy in Gehenna, but this must be changed to torment the destroyable soul in Hell.**

**(3). The name Gehenna** must be changed to another name, Hell. The name of the city dump of Jerusalem, a real place, must be changed to the name of another place which those who have made the change say is a place that is not on this earth. Many who say they speak where the Bible speaks and are silent where the Bible is silent make all these changes. **Gehenna is the only word translated Hell in many translations. If the name Gehenna were not changed to the name Hell, if the Bible was not changed there would be nothing about "Hell" in the Bible.**

**(4). The fire of Gehenna** that destroyed trash must be changed to the fire of "Hell" that never destroys. Our earthly bodies cannot be burned forever in a literal fire without destroying them. Both our bodies and the fire would have to be changed in such a way that it would be something other than the bodies we now have, and it could not be literal fire as we know it. Would it not mean God would make new bodies, and then forever burn these new bodies in place of the bodies we now have?

**(5). Death must be changed to life for the lost to have eternal life in Hell.** "*The wages of sin is death*" (Romans 6:23). "*But for the fearful...their part shall be in the lake that burns with fire and brimstone; which is the second death*" (Revelation

21:8). Nowhere does the Bible say there is such a place as Hell, and it is up to those who teach it to prove there is such a place in the Bible. This they have not, and cannot prove it. (1). Not one passage that says most of mankind will be given to Satan to forever torment for his pleasure. (2). There is not one passage that says most of mankind was made by a sadistic and fiendish God who knew before He made them that He would forever torment them.

**USE OF FIRE IN THE NEW TESTAMENT, Consumed Or Not Consumed.** Fire is always used for destruction, never for preservation. Fire always destroys, and it never preserves anything.

- Burning up unfruitful trees and useless chaff of wheat by John the Baptist (Matthew 3:4-12).
- Burning up trash in the city dump—Gehenna.
- Burning up tares at the end of that age (Matthew 13:24-50).
- Burning up unfruitful branches (John 15:6). Unfruitful trees (Luke 3:9). At the end of the Jewish age.
- Land that bears thorns and thistles is to be burned. To get rid of the thorns. Those that fell away are likened or compared too thorns and thistles that are destroyed by fire, not tormented by fire (Hebrews 6:1-7).
- God is a consuming fire. (Hebrews 12:29) See Luke 9:54.
- Sodom—punishment of eternal fire was being eternally destroyed by fire, not eternally burning, not eternally being destroyed but never destroyed (Jude 7; 2 Peter 2:6).
  - “Age (aionies) lasting fire”—translated “eternal fire” in the King James Version is used three times in the New Testament.
    1. Matthew 18:8 Cast into the aionies fire. This is speaking of a person that has two hands being cast into the fire of Gehenna, not a soul that according to most Protestants and Catholic a soul is immaterial; therefore could have no hands.
    2. Jude 7 Sodom suffered the punishment of aionies fire. That aionies fire did it work and went out long age, it was not endless, the results of the fire was eternal, Sodom was completely destroyed.
    3. Matthew 25:41 Aionies fire prepared for the devil and his angels. Like the aionies fire God prepared for Sodom, it will do it work.
      - Not one of the three is God endlessly burning people or angels.
- The heavens shall pass away, be dissolved, and the earth and the works that are therein shall be burned up (2 Peter 3:7-14). The lost are of the world, which will pass away (1 John 2:16-17).
- 2 Thessalonians 1:7
- Lake of fire, which is the second death (not preserved alive) (Revelation 21:8; 2:11).

J. M. DENNISTON “*Every tree that brings not forth good fruit is hewn down, and cast into the fire.*” (Matthew 7:19). These trees are cast into the fire for the purpose of being consumed, the application in verse 20 and 21 is that those who do not bring forth good fruit are hewn down and cast into the fire, like the trees they are to be consumed, not forever tormented. Fire dose not torment trees, it destroys them. Fruitless trees are never spoken of as cut down and burned for any other reason than to completely consume then, to destroy them. The lesson this teaches is that the lost will be consumed, not tormented, just as the fruitless trees and chaff are completely burned up. The righteous are to be treated as wheat, the wicked as chaff—the one as precious, the other as

worthless—the one as preserved by the owner for his own use, the other cast into the fire as useless.”

Fire is never used by God to torment, but for destruction. *"Gather his wheat (the saved) into the garner, but He will burn up the chaff (the lost) with unquenchable fire"* Matthew 3:12. Tares and bad fish are burned to get rid of them, **not to torment forever, or as some say "to burn in Hell forever"** Matthew 13. Theology teaches the exact opposite of the Bible that the chaff will be tormented forever, but not burned up, not consumed and destroyed as the farmer does the chaff.

- Farmer: Burns up chaff to destroy it.
- God: Burns up sinful to destroy them.
- Fisher: Burns bad fish to get rid of them. (There is no parallel if you say, "Torment them." It would make God be using very poor metaphors, for the ones God used do not teach torment, and would not make sense).
- Tares are burned up; the wheat is saved (Matthew 13:30).
- Lost are burned up, the faithful are saved. Does the farmer burn up the tares to torment them, or to destroy them?

When tares are cast into a furnace of fire they are burnt up. Like the chaff that is totally consumed in the furnace, there is no suggestion of life beyond the burning in the lake of fire.

**Furnace of fire** in the Old Testament, destruction, not eternal torment or preservation, Psalm 21:9; Malachi 4:1-3; Daniel 3:13-27; Psalm 12:6.

**Consumed or not consumed:** Those who believe a person has a soul that is immortal also believe a soul can never be consumed. How is consumed used in the Bible. Is a consuming fire one that burns up (consumes), or one that is forever burning, but cannot consume what it is burning? Why would God use "consumed" if it were a soul that cannot be consumed? That which consumes cannot be made to typify the unconsuming; a *"consuming fire"* cannot be a fire that never consumes anything.

1. Leviticus 10:2: *"And fire came out from the presence of the Lord and consumed them, and they died before the Lord."*

2. Exodus 3:2-5: The burning bush was *"not consumed."* This was so unnatural of fire that Moses said, *"I must turn aside now, and see this marvelous sight, why the bush is not burnt up."*

3. Exodus 15:7 *"You do send forth your burning anger, and it consumes them as chaff."* When chaff is consumed by fire the chaff no longer exists.

4. Exodus 32:10: *"Now therefore let me alone, that my wrath may wax hot against them, and that I may consume them; and I will make of you a great nation."* "Destroy" in New American Standard Version. They would no longer exist.

5. Exodus 32:12: *"Wherefore should the Egyptians speak, saying, For evil did he bring them forth, to slay them in the mountains, and to consume them from the face of the earth? Turn from your fierce wrath, and repent of this evil against your people."* They would have been completely removed from the face of the earth.

6. Leviticus 9:23-24: The fat was on the altar. Fire comes forth and consumed it. The consumed fat no longer existed.

7. Psalm 37:20: *"They shall consume; in smoke shall they consume away."*

8. Hebrews 12:29: *"For our God is a consuming fire."*

- *"Consumed," "died," "destroy," and "burnt up"* are the same — all are death.

**USE OF TORMENT IN THE NEW TESTAMENT:** Those who teach the sinner will be tormented forever in Hell use:

- The symbolic language in the parable of the rich man, which must be made literal for it to support their teaching. (Luke 16:23; 24; 25; 28).
- The symbolic languages of Revelation, which also must be made literal, but even then it does not support this teaching.

1. Revelation 9:5: Locusts out of the pit torment those who have not the seal of God tormented for five months. Believers in Hell do not believe the torment in Hell will be for only five months.

2. Revelation 11:10: *"Tormented them that dwell on the earth."* A symbolical picture of something on this earth, not in Hell. *"Tormented them that dwell on the earth"* is changed to *"Tormented them that dwell in Hell"* as Hell is not believed to be *"on the earth."*

3. Revelation 14:10, 11: Worshipers of Babylon tormented. Babylon: "Roman Empire and its pagan religions that were the persecutor of the church" (See Hailey, Wallace, and Ogden in chapter eight).

4. Revelation 18:7 10, 15: Babylon tormented. *"In one hour God is she made desolate...for has judged your judgment on her."* This is an evil nation on this earth, not the lost in "Hell," although it is often misused to prove "Hell."

5. Revelation 20:10: The devil tormented by being cast into the lake of fire, which is the second death. *"Day and night,"* as long as there is day and night, unto the ages of ages.

6. Torment is used in non—symbolical language in the New Testament, but it is never applied to the lost after Judgment Day. Matthew 4:24; 8:6; Mark 8:6, 18:34; Hebrews 11:37; 1 John 4:18. Those that teach unconditional immortality uses only the symbolic language passages to prove torment in Hell. Yet in their preaching they frequently use it literally, saying God will forever torment the lost, and then say they are "speaking where the scriptures speak, and keeping silent where the scriptures are silent."

**DEMONS TORMENTED** (Matthew 8:29; Mark 5:7; Luke 8:28): Knowles on page 203 in "What the Bible says about Angels and Demons" said, "Demons Believe in Hell," and he uses, *"To torment us before the appointed time"* in Matthew 8:29, as his proof. The question is **when and what** torment is being spoken of. What is *"the appointed time?"* **The only torment in this is what the demon's thought Christ was going to do to them was at that time, at the time they were talking with Christ ("before the appointed time"), not in Hell after the appointed time—after the judgment.** (Torment " "To agitate or upset greatly, to annoy, pester, or harass" American Heritage Dictionary). They asked Christ if He came to torment (harass)

them at that time. Nothing is said about Hell or **torment at the appointed time** (at the judgment), or **torment after the appointed time** (after the judgment), but many read it in; **the demons did not ask Christ if He were going to torment them at the judgment** (at the appointed time), **but they asked Christ if He was going to torment them at the time He was talking to them** (*"before the appointed time"*). How does he find Hell, or the Demons believing in Hell in this passage?

Thomas P. Connelly in "A Debate On The State Of The Dead" makes the argument that demons are the departed souls of dead men. For this to be true, (1) it must first be shown that men do have an immortal something in them, and whatever this something is, it will live after the death of the person, (2) and second, contrary to the Protestant theology that the lost goes to Hell at death, and contrary to the Abraham's bosom view, that the lost are now on the bad side of hades, but they are not now in Heaven, Hell, or Abraham's bosom, but it must be shown that the lost dead are not in Heaven, Hell, Abraham's bosom, but they are now alive, and they are now roaming around on this earth. If the lost were in Hell, it would make them able to leave Hell and return to earth.

As was said at the first of this chapter, those who believe in the Pagan doctrine of an immortal soul from birth, and that there is a Hell have no plain statement, **that they must make figurative language, metaphors, and symbolic passages into literal statements shows the weakness of their belief**, that it is from man and not from God. They must make parables and figurative language to be superior over plain statements. What is clear language must be made to agree with what they think is said in the symbolic language.

Both the Old Testament and the New Testament are completely silent on today's concept of a place where God will torment most of mankind without end. The doctrine of God eternally tormenting most of mankind with a torment worse than any torment than we can even know has turned more away from God, and driven more into infidelity than all other errors combined. How can anyone believe it is not a sin to add such a place to God's word? What do they think God will say at the judgment to those who attribute such an evil teaching to Him? Does not attributing this evil to God make them a sinner? **So whom are you going to believe? With an endless number of Hells being taught, which Hell are you going to believe in?**

## CHAPTER FIVE

### Sheol, Hades, Gehenna, Tartarus

In the King James Bible, there are four words translated Hell (sheol, hades, Tartarus, and Gehenna), even though they are not synonymous, and these four places are not the same place; very few, when they read the King James Version,

are not aware of the extent that they have been misled by the translators in their attempt to put Plato's pagan immortal soul into the Bible.

Most Bible students now admit that translating sheol, hades, and Tartarus into Hell was a mistranslation that should never have been made, but many still hold onto the badly mistranslated King James Version, and Gospel preachers and Bible teachers do little or nothing to teach the truth. Many, who do all they can too correct any lesser error just do not seem to care about this one.

**(1) SHEOL IN THE OLD TESTAMENT:** Sheol, this one place is given two different and contradictory translations in the King James Version. **It is translated into two places that are entirely different places; two places from the same word, two place that have absolutely nothing in common.** From the same word (1) a place where those in it are dead, know nothing, and have no pain, (2) or another place where the dead in it are anything but dead, and the undead know pain beyond anything that we can know.

1. Grave, (translated from sheol—a common noun) burial places for the dead that are on this earth where there is no work, nor device, nor knowledge, now wisdom (Ecclesiastes 9:10), a place of rest in the dust (Job 17:13-16).

2. Hell, (also translated from sheol—but changed from a common noun, graves, to a proper noun, Hell) a place of eternal torment for souls, which at the time of the translation of the King James Version most readers of that time would have understand Hell to be a large subterranean place deep in the earth; in the early nineteenth century miners were in fear of going too deep for they thought Hell was under ground in the earth, and the odor of sulfur that is common in many mines was a fearful thing to them for they thought the odor to be coming from Hell, but now Hell is thought by most that believe in the orthodox version(s) of Hell to be some place not on this earth; then it was under the earth, now it is who knows where. Whether it is deep under the earth, or some place out in space, we are told Hell is a place of endless torment in fire to deathless souls that have no rest, that God will never stop tormenting these souls.

**"Hell," a proper noun, as it is used today is not a thirty-first cousin to grave, a common noun,** yet grave (a common noun) and Hell (a proper noun) are both translated from the same word, both from the same common noun in the Hebrew Old Testament; **both (1) a place for the dead, and (2) a place for those that can never be dead from the same word!** There is no way to say the grave and Hell have anything in common; no way the King James translators could have thought this one word means both grave and Hell; there would have been no way they could know when the same word in one place was a grave (a common noun) for a dead person that is on this earth, and when the same word (sometimes in the same passage) was an entirely different place (a proper noun), a place of torment that is not on this earth for those who can never be dead?

Sheol in the King James Version is translated grave 31 times, Hell 31 times, and pit 3 times. The American Standard Version used the untranslated Hebrew word "sheol." The New International Version translated sheol into "grave" 63 times, "death" 1 time, and "depths" 1 time. The New Century Version and others also translated sheol into grave. The American Standard Version and other newer translations knew Hell as used today (a place of eternal punishment after the resurrection) was not right, but did not translate it "grave." They left the Hebrew word not translated; maybe they thought it would make their translation unacceptable if they translated it, and it most likely would have. Neither sheol nor hades have any meaning in English if they are not translated, and it leaves every one free to use any theological definition they want. It is inescapable that if the King James Translators had translated all sixty four times that sheol is used into Hell that would have put all, both the saved and the lost in Hell. Of the sixty-five times sheol was used in the Old Testament the King James translators were able to translated it Hell less then half to the sixty five times. I know of no one that believes Hell and the grave to be the same place, yet both are translated from the same word, both from sheol.

HAMILTON said, "Contrary to popular opinion it does not mean Hell as we use this term" Truth Commentaries, 1 Peter, page 384.

BAKER ENCYCLOPEDIA OF THE BIBLE: "There does not seem to be a very clear distinction in the O. T. between the final destiny of the good and the evil. They all alike go to the grave," "SHEOL," Volume 1, page 953. The reason for there being no distinction in the Old Testament is that both the good and the evil persons do go to the grave, and neither the good or the bad will not come out of the grave unto the resurrection.

The Hebrew word "sheol" is left not translated all sixty-five times it is used in the American Standard Version, New American Standard Version, and many others. A Hebrew word that is not translated in an English translation does not help the English reader understand what was said, but it is better than mistranslating it as the King James Version did and teaching a lie. Why do many translations translate all other words and leave only this one word not translated? Was the reason that if sheol were translated, it would be contrary to what the translators believed, or is it an attempt to side step the question and not have to deal with it. Were the translators afraid that if they told us the truth their translation would not be accepted?

### **ALL SIXTY-FIVE TIMES SHEOL IS USED IN THE OLD TESTAMENT IN SIX TRANSLATIONS.**

SHEOL in the Old Testament	KJV	NKJV	ASV	NIV
			NASV	2010 Update
	NRSV			
1. Genesis 37:35	grave	grave	Sheol	grave
2. Genesis 42:38	grave	grave	Sheol	grave
3. Genesis 44:29	grave	grave	Sheol	grave
4. Genesis 44:31	grave	grave	Sheol	grave
5. Numbers 16:30	pit	pit	Sheol	grave
6. Numbers 16:33	pit	pit	Sheol	grave
7. Deuteronomy 32:22	Hell	Hell	Sheol	death

8.	1 Samuel 2:6	grave	grave	Sheol	grave
9.	2 Samuel 22:6 (1)	HELL	SHEOL	Sheol	grave
10.	1 Kings 2:6	grave	grave	Sheol	grave
11.	1 Kings 2:9	grave	grave	Sheol	grave
12.	Job 7:9	grave	grave	Sheol	grave
13.	Job 11:8 (2)	HELL	SHEOL	Sheol	grave
14.	Job 14:13	grave	grave	Sheol	grave
15.	Job 17:13	grave	grave	Sheol	grave
16.	Job 17:16 (3)	PIT	SHEOL	Sheol	death
17.	Job 21:13	grave	grave	Sheol	grave
18.	Job 24:19	grave	grave	Sheol	grave
19.	Job 26:6 (4)	HELL	SHEOL	Sheol	death
20.	Psalms 6:5	grave	grave	Sheol	grave
21.	Psalms 9:17	Hell	Hell	Sheol	grave
22.	Psalms 16:10 (5)	HELL	SHEOL	Sheol	grave
23.	Psalms 18:5 (6)	HELL	SHEOL	Sheol	grave
24.	Psalms 30:3	grave	grave	Sheol	grave
25.	Psalms 31:17	grave	grave	Sheol	grave
26.	Psalms 49:14	grave	grave	Sheol	grave
27.	Psalms 49:14	grave	grave	Sheol	grave
28.	Psalms 49:15	grave	grave	Sheol	grave
29.	Psalms 55:15	Hell	Hell	Sheol	grave
30.	Psalms 86:13 (7)	HELL	SHEOL	Sheol	grave
31.	Psalms 88:3	grave	grave	Sheol	grave
32.	Psalms 89:48	grave	grave	Sheol	grave
33.	Psalms 116:3 (8)	HELL	SHEOL	Sheol	grave
34.	Psalms 139:8	Hell	Hell	Sheol	depths
35.	Psalms 141:7	Grave's	Grave	Sheol	grave
36.	Proverbs 1:12 (9)	GRAVE	SHEOL	Sheol	grave
37.	Proverbs 5:5	Hell	Hell	Sheol	grave
38.	Proverbs 7:27	Hell	Hell	Sheol	grave
39.	Proverbs 9:18	Hell	Hell	Sheol	grave
40.	Proverbs 15:11	Hell	Hell	Sheol	death
41.	Proverbs 15:24	Hell	Hell	Sheol	grave
42.	Proverbs 23:14	Hell	Hell	Sheol	death
43.	Proverbs 27:20	Hell	Hell	Sheol	death
44.	Proverbs 30:16	grave	grave	Sheol	grave
45.	Ecclesiastes 9:10	grave	grave	Sheol	grave
46.	Song of Solomon 8:6	grave	grave	grave#	grave
47.	Isaiah 5:14 (10)	HELL	SHEOL	Sheol	grave
48.	Isaiah 14:9	Hell*	Hell	Sheol	grave
49.	Isaiah 14:11 (11)	GRAVE	SHEOL	Sheol	grave
50.	Isaiah 14:15 (12)	HELL	SHEOL	Sheol	grave
51.	Isaiah 28:15 (13)	HELL	SHEOL	Sheol	grave
52.	Isaiah 28:18 (14)	HELL	SHEOL	Sheol	grave
53.	Isaiah 38:10 (15)	GRAVE	SHEOL	Sheol	grave
54.	Isaiah 38:18 (16)	GRAVE	SHEOL	Sheol	death
55.	Isaiah 57:9 (17)	HELL	SHEOL	Sheol	grave
56.	Ezekiel 31:15(18)	GRAVE	HELL	Sheol	grave
57.	Ezekiel 31:16	Hell	Hell	Sheol	grave
58.	Ezekiel 31:17	Hell	Hell	Sheol	grave
59.	Ezekiel 32:21	Hell	Hell	Sheol	grave
60.	Ezekiel 32:27	Hell	Hell	Sheol	grave
61.	Hosea 13:14	grave	grave	Sheol	grave
62.	Hosea 13:14	grave	grave	Sheol	grave
63.	Amos 9:2	Hell*	Hell	Sheol	grave
64.	Jonah 2:2 (19)	HELL*	SHEOL	Sheol	grave
65.	Habakkuk 2:5	Hell	Hell	Sheol	grave

KJV, King James Version; == NKJV, New King James Version, == ASV; American Standard Version, == NASV; New American Standard Version, == NRSV; New Revised Standard Version, == NIV; New International Version

#Song of Solomon 8:6 is the only time grave is used in place of sheol in the New Revised Standard Version.

\*Margin reads "or the grave" in Isaiah 14:9, Amos 9:2, and Jonah 2:2 in the King James Version.

Note: even though sheol, hades, and grave are capitalized in some translations, they are common nouns and should not be capitalized.

The Jewish Publication Society called "Torah" transliterates sheol all 65 times.

**There are nineteen changes** in the King James and the New King James (See (1) to (19) in the above chart). If there were a way to know when to translate sheol into Hell, and when not to, the translators of the only two of the major translations that have Hell in the Old Testament should have known, and should be in agreement. Are they? The New King James Version takes Hell out of many passages where it is in the King James Version. When they changed a common noun (sheol—grave) into a proper noun (Hell), they did not agree often. Men never agree on what they want when they change the word of God.

If the translators of the New American Standard Version had been honest with their reader they would have translated sheol; it looks as if they were afraid to tell us the truth, but did not want to lie by translating sheol into Hell so they used the Hebrew word knowing that many of these readers would understand sheol and Hell to the same place.

PREFACE TO THE AMERICAN STANDARD BIBLE. "The uniform substitution of 'sheol' for 'the grave,' 'the pit,' and 'hell,' in places where these terms have been retained by the English Revision, has little need of justification. The English Revisers use 'Sheol' twenty-nine times out of the sixty-four in which it occurs in the original. No good reason has been given for such discrimination. If the new term can be fitly used at all, it is clear that it ought to be used uniformly."

**Obviously, if "sheol" means "Hell" it should never have been translated "grave" as it is in the King James, or in any other translations, for they are completely different places. It is also obvious that the same word cannot mean both.**

W. E. VINE: "First, the word means the state of death. ' For in death, there is no remembrance of thee: in the grave who shall give thee thanks' (Ps 6:5; cf. 18:5). It is the final resting place of all men: 'they spend their days in wealth, and in a moment go down to the grave' Job 21:13...second, 'sheol' is used of a place of conscious existence after death" "Vine's Complete Expository Dictionary Of Old And New Testament Words," page 227. If, as he said, sheol is both: (1). Sheol is a place with no conscious existence where there is no remembrance after death—E. W. Vine. (2). Sheol is a place of conscious existence after death—Vine.

He could not (or anyone) ever know when sheol was a place with no conscious existence, or a place with conscious existence in any verse. How could they? Does everyone just use the one they want to? **Although he is Protestant, this is not anything like the orthodox Protestant version of all souls going to directly to Heaven or Hell at death.** He seems to have abandoned the orthodox Protestant view of all being in Heaven or Hell, and made many of the dead be in the grave.

How does he think the same place could be both **a place of death with no remembrance**, and at the same time **a place of life with conscious existence**, but

not life in Heaven or Hell? He is speaking of conscious existence in sheol—the grave after death; therefore, he is saying the orthodox Protestant view of all souls being transported instantaneous to Heaven or Hell at death is not true. He tries to prove the second with Genesis 3:7-35 *"I will go down to sheol in mourning for my son"* New American Standard Version. The New Century Version says, *"unto the day I die."* *"You will not abandon my soul to Sheol; neither will thou allow your holy one to undergo decay"* (Psalm 16:10 New American Standard Version). *"And lie silent in the grave"* (Psalm 31:17 New International Version). *"As heat and drought snatch away the melted snow, so the grave snatches away those who have sinned"* (Job 24:19 New International Version). *"So **MAN** lies down and does not roused from their sleep. If only you would hide **ME** in the grave"* (Job 14:12-13 New International Version). It is a person that lies down in sleep, not an immaterial something that is in a person unto the death of the person, dose any one believes a soul lies down in sleep? Job wanted God to hide him ("me") in the grave, not just his body while the real Job was in Heaven; just as the snow is consumed by heat, the grave (sheol) consumes the bodies in it. In the very verses W. E. Vine uses to prove his second use of the word, God could not be saying the first any clearer. **In these passages and others, it is so certain and undeniable that sheol is the grave that many (like W. E. Vine) had to create a new sheol. A different gospel is preached with two sheols (or hades). One for the body to "sleep" in from death unto the resurrection, and one for the bodiless soul (or the living dead) to "live" in from death unto the resurrection; and then a third place must be added for the lost souls to be tormented in forever after the Judgment Day.**

The King James translators tried to put the preconceived belief of Hell in the Bible by mistranslating sheol, but could not consistently conceal the truth in all 65 times sheol is used. If they had:

**1. They would have put all mankind in Hell:** They found it impossible to translate sheol into Hell every time it is used. If they had been consistent in their mistranslation, they would have put the righteous in Hell. All go to sheol at death. Even with all their mistranslating, they sometimes ended up with the righteous in Hell.

a) Jacob goes to Hell (sheol). Genesis 37:35 *"For I will go down to Hell (sheol) to my son mourning."*

b) Job prayed to go to Hell (sheol) (Job 14:13). He was praying to go to the grave where his suffering would end, not to a place where his suffering would be increased many times over and would last forever. **The translators of the King James Version know it would have been absurd to have Job praying to go to Hell.**

c) *"My soul is full of troubles: and my life draws nigh unto the Hell"* (sheol—grave in King James Version). Psalm 88:3. Sheol (the grave—a quiet place of unconsciousness sleep where both the righteous and the wicked go) is the nearest thing to today's Hell that the translators could find, and

then in over half of the times sheol was used they could not translate it Hell. For the thousands of years of the Old Testament, God told no one about a place called Hell.

**2. They would have made a resurrection from Hell:** They would have caused themselves a problem by making some souls be resurrected from Hell. (1 Samuel 2:6; Job 21:23:32; 30:23; Psalm 30:3; 49:15; 86:13; Hosea 13:14; Nahum 1:14). **All go to sheol. If sheol were Hell, any resurrection, even at the second coming of Christ, would have to be a resurrection from Hell.** *"But God will redeem my soul from the power of the Hell"* (sheol—translated grave in King James Version) Psalm 49:14-15.

**3. They would have made those in Hell completely unconscious** with *"no work, nor device, nor knowledge, nor wisdom, in Hell (sheol—grave) where you go"* (Ecclesiastes 9:10). Did they know that a person with no knowledge would not know he was being tormented?

**WHERE ARE THE DEAD? (1) According to the King James Version:**

- (a) It sometimes puts all the dead in sheol (the grave) with none in Heaven or Hell.
- (b) It sometimes puts past nations in both sheol and Hell.
- (c) It puts none of those in sheol (grave) in Heaven, not even David, Abraham, or Job.
- (d) It sometimes puts all the dead in Hell. If sheol is Hell as it is translated in the King James Version, all instantly go to Hell at death and none to Heaven. Even Abraham, Isaac, and Jacob went to the Hell of the King James Version, and their spirit could not have *"returned to God."* In trying to put the evil persons in Hell, they had trouble keeping the good out of it. The King James translators did put the name Hell in the Bible by changing sheol to Hell, but could not put in today's concept of Hell.

**WHERE ARE THE DEAD? (2) According to the Old Testament** (most translations): All the dead are in the grave. The way sheol is used in the Old Testament it cannot be made to fit the Catholic, or Protestant versions of Hell for if all souls go to sheol at death, no soul could go to Heaven or Hell at death. The Hebrews believed that all, both good and evil persons are in a grave (sheol) when they died. Examples: *"You shall bring down my gray hairs with sorrow to the grave"* (Genesis 37:35; 42:38; 44:29). *"O that you would hide **me** in the grave"* (Job 14:13). Not one of the sixty-five times "sheol" is used does it teach the Protestant version of Hell.

THE INTERPRETER'S DICTIONARY OF THE BIBLE, "Nowhere in the Old Testament is the abode of the dead regarded as a place of punishment or torment," page 788.

**WHERE ARE THE DEAD? (3) According to some Protestants and Catholics:** Everyone will be in Heaven or Hell before and without the resurrection. Not all together in sheol, many Protestants put all the souls that are in everyone, even in everyone that lived under the Old Testament in Heaven or Hell instantly at death. **If a bodiless "soul" was in all living person, and that bodiless "soul" goes to Heaven or Hell at the death of the person it was in, no "soul" had ever been in sheol, or in Abraham's bosom, or ever will be;** there would be no time when they could be. All the passages in the King James Version where the translators

translated sheol sometimes grave and sometimes Hell would be worse than meaningless; they would be untruthful for the King James Version puts **all souls**, both those that had been in the good and the evil are all sometimes in a grave (1 Samuel 2:6; Job 7:9; 11:8; 26:6; Psalm 6:5; 89:48; 141:7; Proverbs 1:12; 30:16; 39:16; Ecclesiastes 9:19; Song Of Solomon 8:6; Isaiah 38:18), or sometimes it takes the dead out of the grave, and puts all, both the good and the evil, together in Hell alive (2 Samuel 22:6; Job 11:8; 26:6; Psalm 16:10; 86:13; 116:3; 139:8; Jonah 2:2).

- Sometimes **all** souls of both the good and the evil, are together in a grave.
- Sometimes **all** souls of both the good and the evil, are together in Hell.

Sheol is translated "*down to the grave*" one time and "*down to hell*" two times in the same passage (Ezekiel 31:15-17). Why such inconsistency? The Septuagint, a Greek version of the Old Testament made in the third century B. C. translated the Hebrew "sheol" into Greek "hades." These Hebrew scholars put all (both the righteous and the unrighteous) in hades (in the grave) in their translation, just as both are in sheol (in the grave) in the Hebrew Old Testament. Did the King James translators know more about the Hebrew language than the Hebrews? Why did they tell God He was wrong when He put both in one place—sheol? The reason is obvious; they had to put some in Hell. They did a poor job of it for by their mistranslating they put some of those in sheol in Hell, but could not put some in Heaven. They had to leave them in sheol, the grave where God put them, for they could not put any in Heaven in any passages where they had changed sheol into Hell: they have the bad in Hell, but the good are in their graves!!!

**WHERE ARE THE DEAD? (4) According to many Protestants:** If either a bodiless spirit, or a bodiless soul is the only thing that lives after the death of the person, and "*The spirit returns to God who gives it,*" then according to Protestants neither a soul or a spirit never goes to sheol or hades; therefore, if there were a place under the earth called "sheol" no person, no spirit, or no soul ever goes to it. Sheol could not be the receptacle, or the place of abode of disembodied spirits (if there were disembodied spirits) if the disembodied spirits returns to God in Heaven at the moment they become disembodied. **No bodiless soul could be in Hell if at death if they all return to God in Heaven.** Today's theology repeatedly makes the Bible speak of a place that does not exist. Nevertheless, we are repeatedly told the souls that are in the saved go to Heaven at death, and the souls that are in the lost go to Hell at death. The same preachers put the souls in three places simultaneously.

1. The spirit of all returns to God.
2. Or does all souls go to sheol, which is believed by many to be somewhere under the earth.
3. Or does all souls that are in the saved go directly to Heaven at the death of the person they were in, and souls that are in the lost go directly to Hell at the death of the persons they had been in.

**WHERE ARE THE DEAD? (5) According to the Abraham's bosom version:** Nor can sheol being Hell be made to fit the after judgment view for it says no soul will be

in Heaven or Hell unto after the resurrection and judgment. In this view Hell is a place where only the evil will go only after the judgment, but no soul will be in Hell unto after the judgment, and no soul in the Old Testament times was in Hell before or after the death of the person it was in. Therefore, if sheol were Hell, no soul would go directly to it at death; therefore, no soul in the Old Testament could have gone to sheol at death. But, even when it is completely contradictory to their view, most that believe the after judgment version of Hell use the mistranslation of sheol into Hell in the Old Testament of the King James Version to prove there is a Hell, and that (1) some souls, or that some spirits that had been in the dead were alive in sheol, (2) and some souls or spirits, after leaving the dead persons that they had been in are alive in Hell in the Old Testament times. Can they not see how inconsistent they are being with their own view?

Not many today believes what the Old Testament says about sheol. Not even the translators of the King James Version; they believed as most Protestants of their time did believe that all the souls that were in the lost persons are in Hell, and all the souls that were in the saved persons are in Heaven; therefore, no soul was in a place called sheol, or in Hell despite the fact that many puts souls in the grave, in Heaven, and in Hell.

**WHERE ARE THE DEAD? (6) According to the Bible:** In both Testaments all the dead persons all are asleep, and will be asleep unto the Resurrection.

**(2) HADES** in the New Testament: Hades is the same word in Greek as sheol is in Hebrew (Psalm 16:10-Acts 2:27). Hades is used eleven times and changed to "Hell" ten times in the King James Version.

**Hades in eight translations:**

	KJV	NKJV	RSV ASV	NIV	Phillips	Revised English B	American Bible
Matt 11:23	Hell	hades	hades	depths	dead	hades	death
Matt 16:18	Hell	hades	hades	hades	death	death	death
Luke 10:15	Hell	hades	hades	depths	dead	hades	death
Luke 16:23	Hell	hades	hades	Hell	dead	hades	dead
Acts 2:27	Hell	hades	hades	grave	hades	death	Nether World
Acts 2:31	Hell	hades	hades	grave	hades	death	Nether World
1 Cor15:55	grave	hades	death	death	death	death	death
Rev 1:18	Hell	hades	hades	grave	grave	hades	Nether World
Rev 6:8	Hell	hades	hades	hades	grave	hades	Nether World
Rev 20:13	Hell	hades	hades	hades	grave	hades	Nether World
Rev 20:14	Hell	hades	hades	hades	grave	hades	Nether World

**ONLY THE KING JAMES VERSION CHANGES THE COMMON NOUN HADES INTO HELL THAT IS A PROPER NOUN; not even the New King James would go along with the King James with this bad translation of changing "hades" into "Hell." Even in 1 Corinthians 15:55 where the King James translated it grave, the New King James left hades untranslated.**

	Hell	Grave	Death	Hades left untranslated
King James Version	10	1	0	0
New King James Version	0	0	0	11
American Standard Version	0	0	1	10
Revised Standard Version	0	0	2	9
New International Version	1	2	1	5   depths 2

The translators believed in Hell, but could not get away from grave every time. The one time the King James translators did not try to put their Hell into the Bible; they translated it grave. If they had translated hades into Hell in 1 Corinthians 15:55, as they did in the other ten passages, it would have said, "O Hell, where is your victory?" They had to change "Hell" to "grave" because it is obvious that Paul is speaking of victory over death, not victory over Hell.

The New American Bible (Catholic) removed Hell, but added a new place, the Nether World that is not a translation, but a change of one place into another place despite the fact that in their earlier translation they changed the same place, hades, into Hell.

- In the same passage (Acts 2:12) in some translations Catholics put souls in "*Hell*."
- Then in the same passage in other translations put the same souls in "*The Nether World*."

In the New Testament there are only two words the translators did not want to or would not translate into English words; therefore, they transliterated one (translated the letters of the Greek alphabet into English letters) and changed the other one. They are baptizo (immersion) and hades (grave). Baptizo, if translated into English it would be "immersion," which would not have fit into the theology of the King James translators. Many uphold and even use the change of hades into "Hell" in the King James Version, and the non—translation in the American Standard Version of both hades and sheol. Both are common nouns, which were changed to proper nouns (names of particular place) to have a biblical name for their non—biblical place. If any other word had been put into the Bible, as was the word Hell, there would have been sermon after sermon and articles after articles showing it was a mistranslation, just as there has been on baptism. Although the translators of the New International Version believed in Hell, they were honest enough to translate sheol correctly, but would not translate hades in four of the eleven times it is used. In many translations the Greek word hades was put into many English versions without translating it, for if it had been translated, it would not fit with the belief of the translators, or the belief of those they wanted to sell copies of it to; but there is a correct translation, and even the King James Version had to translate it correctly one time. The problem was the translators did not want their readers to understand hades the way it is understood by Greek speaking people. **Do you think God give us a revelation we could not understand, or that he used a word we cannot translate or understand in our own language? If He did, He would be saying nothing to us.** Untranslated sheol and hades mean nothing in English, they have no meaning in English; the right translation of sheol and hades is grave, and we can understand it. Proper names like Jerusalem, New York, and Gehenna are the same in most languages, and should not be translated, but common nouns must be translated to be understood, not left untranslated or transliterated. Both sheol and hades are common nouns, and need

to be translated just as all other common nouns were. There was no reason or justification for changing sheol, hades, or Gehenna to Hell.

1. Baptizo transliterated into baptism because the translators believed in sprinkling, and would not translate it.
2. Hades changed to "Hell" because the translators believed the wages of sin is an eternal life of torment, and sinners instantly went to "Hell" at death, not to the grave.
3. Hades left untranslated in many English translations because the translators did not want it understood and would not translate it.

**(3) GEHENNA:** See Chapter four for notes on the four occasions that Christ used Gehenna. Nearly all orthodox preachers, commentary, and translations of the Bible made by them no longer believe sheol or hades are a place where God will endless torment souls or spirits; Changing one place, Gehenna to another place, Hell is their last ditch stand to prove there is an eternal Hell.

**(4) TARTARUS: Are these angels now in Tartarus or Hell? Why are these angles used to prove Hell?** 2 Peter 2:4 is the only time this word is used. Tartarus in the Greek was changed to Hell in the King James Version. *"For if God spared not angels when they sinned, but cast them down to Tartarus ("Hell" in the King James Version), and committed them to pits of darkness, **to be reserved UNTO judgment**"* (2 Peter 2:4). *"And angels that kept not their own principality, but left their proper habitation, he has kept in everlasting bonds under darkness **UNTO the judgment of the great day**"* (Jude 6). Whatever and wherever Tartarus is, it is the place where the angels that sinned **are now being kept UNTO the Judgment Day; the angels will not be there endless, therefore, Tartarus cannot be an endless Hell.** Neither Peter nor Jude says anything about these angels being in fire, or pain, or being tormented by God, but those who believe in Hell most always add them after the place where these angels **now are** has been changed from Tartarus to Hell, and then change it from angels to souls that God is tormenting. As far as we know, no man will ever be in Tartarus, and it will last only *"unto the judgment,"* it has no relevance to the doctrine that God will forever torment the lost after the judgment; all mankind now go to the grave—hades, not to Tartarus. If, as many teach, these angels are now being tormented in Hell, why bring them out of torment for judgment only to put them back into the same torment in the same place that they were?

Jude 6, 2 Peter 2:4 **"UNTO the judgment,"** not "after the judgment," for these angels are being kept in Tartarus **now** and will be kept there **unto** the Judgment Day. The place where these fallen angels are now at is changed into the place where some think these angels will be after the judgment. Many do not believe anyone will be in Hell unto after the judgment, but the King James Version is mistranslated to say these angels are **now** in Hell before and without the judgment. Does not using this passage to prove "Hell" show the willingness of those that use it to make any change needed to prove it?

The orthodox Protestant view is inconsistent:

- It put souls in Hell now without the judgment.
- But the angles that sinned are being kept in Tartarus unto the judgment; therefore, these angels are not now in Hell with the lost souls that would now be in Hell.

Those who believe in Abraham's bosom think that the lost will not be in Hell unto after the Judgment, but use this passage to teach these angles are now in Hell despite the fact that Jude 6 says nothing about Hell.

- This passage says where these angels are **now** but it says nothing about where they will be after the Judgment Day, or about where lost men will be, and **it says nothing about a place called Hell.**
- **"Pits of darkness, reserved for judgment"** changed to already judged and in Hell before the Judgment Day, and darkness changed to fire.
- **Changed, and then moved:** "Tartarus" is changed to "Hell," and then is moved from where these angels are now unto where many think they will be after the judgment.

Note: This is a difficult passage to understand, and just as difficult to use, as many do, as the base of any theology in the light of the other passages on the angels that sinned. It is not my purpose to go into Demonology, but I think it is safe to say the angels that sinned are the demons of the New Testament. Just what the *"everlasting bonds"* are ("chains" King James Version) is difficult to say, but they are not chains of iron as we think of chains being. *"Your adversary the devil as a roaring lion, walks about seeking whom he may devour"* (1 Peter 5:8). *"His (Satan) ministers also fashion themselves as ministers of righteousness"* (2 Corinthians 11:14). Since both Satan and his angels are still deceiving people, it is obviously that they are only in bonds (limited) in what they can do. These angels were *"delivered into chains of darkness, to be reserved unto judgment."* God also bounds Satan. In tempting Job, he was allowed to go so far and no farther. He has the power to tempt us, but not the power to make us do anything we do not want to. *"Be sober, be watchful: you adversary the devil, as a roaring lion, walks about seeking whom he may devour"* (1 Peter 5:8). *"And no marvel for even Satan fashions himself into an angel of light"* (2 Corinthians 11:14). Space will not allow a long discourse on demons, but most likely they are the angels that sinned, and they are bound (limited) in what they can do just as Satan is, but it is nowhere said that God is **now** tormented Satan, demons or fallen angels in a place called Hell. If the King James Version were right, and they were now in Hell, not walking *"about seeking whom he many devour"* on earth, it would be great for us for then they could not tempt us, but they still do.

**Satan has never been, or will never be in Hell, never in sheol, hades, or Gehenna.** When he is first seen in Genesis 3 he is on this earth. When God asked Satan when he had been, Satan said, *"From roaming about on the earth and walking around on it"* (Job 1:7). He is seen standing at the right hand of evil men (Psalms 109:6; Zechariah 3:1). Not one place in the Old Testament is he said to be in sheol (the grave), or any place of fire or torment. In the New Testament he is, *"As a roaring lion, walks about seeking whom he may devour"* (1 Peter 5:8). In the temptation of Jesus Satan is seen to be the ruler of this world (Matthew 4:1-11). Not unto the death of Christ was it said, *"Now the ruler of this world shall be cast out"* (John 12:31). He stills, *"Disguises himself as an angel of light"* (2 Corinthians 11:14), and still has the power to tempt us, but does not seem to have the power over nations that he had before the resurrection of Christ. Satan will be cast into the lake of fire (Revelation 20:10) alone with death and hades (Revelation 20:14) *"which is the*

*second death*" (Revelation 21:8). **Not one time, before the earth was made, while the earth exist, nor after the earth will be destroyed is Satan ever said to be in a place called "Hell." His kingdom is this world.**

**Forever in Jude:** In speaking of the angels that sinned (verse 6), Jude used "aidion," which is used only one other time in the New Testament in Romans 1:20 where it is applied to God. If, as some assume that aidion always means eternal as eternal is used today (never an end), why is it never used with reference to the "eternal soul"? *"He has kept in everlasting (aidion) bonds under darkness unto the judgment of the great day."* This "everlasting" (aidion) will last only "unto the judgment of the great day"; therefore, it is clearly not endless for it will end at the judgment.

- In the very next verse Jude changes from aidion when speaking of angels to aionios (age) in verse 7 when speaking of Sodom suffering the punishment of eternal (aionios—age) fire. In verse 7 he used "aionios" the adjective form of the noun "aion." In verses 12 and 25 he used the noun "aion" (age).
- Why, if the writers of the New Testament had a word that always had the same meaning as eternal does today, why did they never use it with reference to man?
- If, as some say without any authority, aidion means endless and aionios means age, then endless would be applied only to one time to God (Romans 1:20), and one time to angels (Jude 6), never to man. If aidion did mean endless, then throughout the New Testament "endless" is strictly avoided as descriptive of mankind, or any *"invisible immaterial part of a person."*

**Just as they did with Gehenna, the King James translators changed one proper noun (Tartarus), the name of one particular place that now exists, into another proper noun (Hell), the name of another particular place that many believe will not exist unto after the judgment.**

(1). **Gehenna**, a proper noun is the name of a particular place, **has been changed into Hell**, another proper noun, the name of another particular place where some think both angels and evil men will go to after the judgment.

(2). **Tartarus**, a proper noun is the name of a particular place, **the place where the angels that sinned are now at, has been changed into Hell**, another proper noun, the name of another particular place, but not a place or name that is in the Bible, Tartarus is changed into a completed difference place.

(3). **Are there two "Hells?" One Hell that now is where these angels are now at, and one Hell that some believe will not be unto after the judgment?** According to the King James Version, these angels are in one Hell now before they are judged; but they will come out of it at the Judgment Day, be judged and go into another Hell. They did what they had to do to put the name Hell into the Bible. That a group of men who were as learned in languages as the translators of the King James Version were would do this shows how far they were willing to go to put Hell in the Bible. When we know that they were wrong, as many do, but use and teach their

change of the Bible to others, do we not sin? Do elders sin when they let such teaching go on and do nothing?

(4). **One word changed to five words, "Cast them down to Hell" is translated from one Greek word, "Tartarus."** It looks as if the translators did not know what to do with this word, but they knew where they wanted the angels to be and put them there; but they used five English words to translate one Greek word to move these angels from Tartarus to "Hell" where they wanted them to be—not one of the five words, "(1) cast (2) them (3) down (4) to (5) Hell," is not even close to the meaning of "Tartarus;" the five are a complete change of God's word.

**SATAN AND DEMONS TO BE DESTROYED.** *"That through death he might bring to naught (nothing) him that had the power of death, that is, the devil"* (Hebrews 2:14) American Standard Version. *"That through death he might destroy him...that is the devil"* King James Version. Brought to nothing, destroyed by being cast into the lake of fire (Revelation 20:10), which is the second death (Revelation 21:8). Also Matthew 25:41. The bruising of the head of Satan can only mean his utter destruction (Genesis 3:14-15).

#### **Demons know they have a time coming to be destroyed**

- *"Have you come to destroy (apollumi) us?"* (Mark 1:24)
- *"Have you come to destroy (apollumi) us?"* (Luke 4:34)
- *"Have you come to torment (barutimos) us before the time?"* (Matthew 8:29). Strong's word 928, "trouble." "From word 926, be...made alarmed or agitated; by impl. To hasten anxiously." In Matthew's account of this they were asking Christ if He had come to trouble or agitate them before the Judgment Day, not if He had come to physically torment them. They were asking if Christ had come to trouble them before the appointed time of their destruction, before the Judgment Day for which they were being reserved for judgment (2 Peter 2:4).
- *"For if God spared not angels when they sinned, but cast them down to Tartarus and committed them to pits of darkness, to be reserved unto judgment"* (2 Peter 2:4).
  - *"There will also be false teachers among you...bringing swift destruction upon themselves* (2 Peter 2:1).
  - *"There (the false teachers) destruction is not asleep"* (2 Peter 2:3).
  - *"When He brought a flood upon the world of the ungodly"* (2 Peter 2:5).
  - *"He condemned the cities of Sodom and Gomorrah to destruction"* (2 Peter 2:6).
  - *"But these...will in the destruction of these creatures also be destroyed"* (Peter 2:12).

Many say it is a sin to change God's word, but despite this have made many changes in it.

1. Changed a common noun (sheol—grave) into a proper noun (**sheol** changed into **Hell**).
2. Changed another common noun (hades—grave) into a proper noun (**hades** changed into **Hell**).
3. Changed a proper noun (Gehenna) into another proper noun (**Gehenna** changed into **Hell**).
4. Changed another proper noun (Tartarus) into another proper noun (**Tartarus** changed into **Hell**).
5. Changed **Gehenna** that existed then into the **Hell** that they think will not exist unto after the Judgment Day.
6. Changed "**Tartarus**" a **prison** that existed then into the **Hell**, a **place of torment** that they think will not exist unto after the Judgment Day, then changed who is in Hell, the angels that sinned are

changed unto both the angels and men that sinned, then both are put into the Hell that they say will not exist unto after the judgment.

**The three proper nouns that are changed into another proper noun in the King James Version.**

1. **Gehenna** changed into **Hell**.
2. **Tartarus** changed into **Hell**.
3. **Pasha** (Passover) changed into **Easter** (Acts 12:4).

**The two common nouns that are changed into the same proper noun in the King James Version.**

1. A common noun (sheol—grave) changed into a proper noun (**sheol** changed into **Hell**).
  2. A common noun (hades—grave) changed into a proper noun (**hades** changed into **Hell**).
  3. A common noun (hades—grave) changed into a proper noun (**hades** changed into **Nether World**).
- o "Hades" is changed into "Nether World" in some of the newer translations of the Catholic Church. In the same passage (Acts 2:27) they used to change hades into Hell in older translations.

**NO NAME FOR HELL IN BIBLE.** Neither sheol nor hades are a proper name, Hell is a proper name; therefore, sheol or hades is not Hell. There are many graves, but we are told there is only one Hell.

Summary: **Gehenna, sheol, hades, and Tartarus are often used to prove an eternal life of being tormented in Hell by God, but they did not have the meaning that Hell has today, and should have never been translated Hell. Those who use this mistranslation of sheol into Hell are changing the Bible.**

## CHAPTER SIX

**The Sixty-Five Sheol Passages. The Eleven Hades Passages.**

**Outline of chapter six**

**The sixty-five times sheol is used as translated in the King James Version.**

- (1) **DOWN INTO A PIT IN THE EARTH** (In 3 passages)
- (2) **THE NATIONS IN SHEOL** (In 18 passages)
  - o **Nations in the grave** in 4 passages
  - o **Nations in Hell** in 14 passages
- (3) **INDIVIDUALS IN SHEOL** (In 18 passages)
  - o **The good in the grave** in 11 passages
  - o **The bad in the grave** in 7 passages
- (4) **BOTH THE GOOD AND BAD IN THE GRAVE** in 9 passages
- (5) **BOTH THE GOOD AND BAD IN HELL** (In 17 passages)
  - o **The good in Hell** in 9 passages
  - o **The bad in Hell in only 8 of the 65 passages that have sheol.**

**HADES IS USED ELEVEN TIMES IN THE NEW TESTAMENT.**

- o Hades in the three passages that have reference to the death of Christ.
- o Hades in the one passage that have reference to death.
- o Hades in the two passages that have reference to the destruction of cities or countries.

- Hades in the five symbolic passages.

---

### **THE WAY SHEOL IS TRANSLATED IN THE KING JAMES VERSION**

The only word that is translated Hell in the Old Testament is translated Hell in the King James Version only 31 of the 65 times it is used, and only 19 of the 65 times it is used in the New King James Version. In most cases the King James translators put the wicked in Hell, and the just in the grave even though most Protestants do not agree with the King James Version, and believe the just go directly to Heaven at death, not to sheol. The Hebrew Old Testament has them all in the grave (sheol). Almost all other translations have removed Hell from the Old Testament (American Standard Version, New American Standard Version, Revised Standard Version, New Revised Standard Version, New International Version and most others), but as long as the King James and New King James Versions are used, those who are new in Christ, and those who still need milk and not solid food will be misled by them.

Moses, the first Bible writer used “sheol” seven times. There is no question that the first six means “grave” and is so translated in the King James Version (Genesis 37: 35; 42:38; 44:29; 44:31; Numbers 16:30; 16:88), but the seventh time (Deuteronomy 32:23) they changed the “grave” to “Hell,” but there is no way that most when reading the King James Version could know that the two words are both the same word in the Hebrew; they do not mean even close to the same thing in English; “Grave” is not “Hell.” “Hell” is not “Grave.

**Sheol is not used with eternal in any of the sixty-five times it is used in the Old Testament, and there is no eternal torment in any of them.**

#### **WHEN SHEOL IS TRANSLATED GRAVE THERE ARE:**

- **18 passages with dead nations that no longer existed are spoken of as being in the grave (sheol)** Deuteronomy 32:22; Psalm 9:17; Isaiah 5:14; 14:9; 14:11; 14:15; 28:15; 28:18; 57:9; Ezekiel 31:15; 31:16; 31:17; 32:21; 32:27; Hosea 13:14; 13:14; Amos 9:2; Habakkuk 2:5.
- **18 passages with the good in the grave (sheol)** Genesis 37:35; 42:38; 44:29; 44:31; 2 Samuel 22:6; Job 14:13; 17:13; Psalm 16:10; 18:5; 30:3; 49:15; 86:13; 88:3; 116:3; 139:8; Isaiah 38:10; 88:10; Jonah 2:2.
- **13 passages with the good and bad both in the grave (sheol)** 1 Samuel 2:6; Job 7:9; 11:8; 26:6; Psalm 6:5; 89:48; 141:7; Proverbs 1:12; 30:16; 39:16; Ecclesiastes 9:19; Song Of Solomon 8:6; Isaiah 38:18.
- **16 passages with the bad in the grave (sheol)** Numbers 16:30; 16:33; Psalm 55:15; Proverbs 5:5; 7:27; 9:18; 15:14; 15:24; 23:14; 27:20; Psalm 31:17; 49:14; Job 17:16; 21:13; 24:19; 1 Kings 2:6; 2:9. Of these 16 passages 8 have the bad in the grave, not Hell and only 8 have the bad in Hell in K J V, only 8 of the 65 times sheol is used.
  - Sheol is not represented as a place where God torments in fire in any of the sixty-five passages, but today Hell always means eternal torment in fire; all that believe the King James Version believe a lie in thirty-one passages.
  - Everlasting or eternal is not in any of the sixty-five passages.

In the King James Version one Hebrew word (sheol) is translated into three words that have completely different meaning. The thirty-four times it is translated grave and pit are a hole in the ground for the dead, but according to today's theology the thirty-one times it is translated Hell that is not a place on this earth; the dead are in a place where no one is dead, or will ever be dead, this thirty-one are a place or eternal life, but the other thirty-four are not.

- The dead are in a pit on this earth three times.
- The dead are in the grave on this earth thirty-one times.
- The dead are not on this earth, and they are not dead thirty-one times.

That the translators of the King James Version translated sheol into Hell less than half the time shows they found it not to fit with their theology. They made one place "sheol" be three different places, grave, pit, and Hell. **They did not, and most today who believes in Hell do not believe the grave and Hell to be the same place. How did the translators know when the same word was one place that is on this earth (grave), or when it was another place that is not on this earth (Hell)? Where did they get the authority to say God used the same Hebrew word with two entirely different meaning even when it is in the same passage, sheol was made to be two completely different places?** To translate the same word, sometimes in the same passage, both grave—a common noun, and then changed this common noun into a proper noun, Hell, is like translating the same word into white thirty-one times and black thirty-one times. Is it that they could not find a way to put their view, the Protestant view, into the Bible and had to settle for the best they could, even if it was not what they believed, even if it did not always put all the saved in Heaven immediately after death, or did not put all the lost immediately in Hell? There is nothing in the Hebrew that would make it mean one place (grave) in one passage, and another completely different place (Hell) in another; they picked the passages where they thought they could put their Theology in the Bible and get away with it.

- Sheol is translated pit three times.
- Sheol is translated grave thirty-one times.
- Sheol is translated Hell thirty-one times.

**THE THIRTY-ONE "GRAVE" TRANSLATIONS.** It is hid from those who use the King James Version that "grave" in these thirty-one passages is the same word that is translated "Hell" in thirty-one passages and "pit" in three passages. Did the translators do this deliberately? **The definition of death by today's theology is that death is only separation of an immortal soul from God. If that were right, then the separated soul could not be in sheol (the grave), for if they were then they could not be in Hell.** If those in sheol were alive, sheol would be two places.

1. Thirty-one times where all the dead are in sheol (the grave).
2. Thirty-one times where the unrighteous dead in sheol would be in Hell.

It was translated “grave” in the places where it is obvious that “Hell” could not be the meaning; it was translated “gave” where it could not be made to mean “Hell.”

**WHERE ARE THE DEAD? According to the Old Testament. Where the dead are depends on which translation you use.**

1. The King James Version used the same word **to put all souls that had been in the dead in both the grave and Hell at the same time without and before the judgment**, and by putting some souls that were in the dead in the grave, it destroyed the Protestant view that **all** souls that had been in the dead are now in Heaven or Hell and no souls are now in sheol.

- If all or any souls are in the grave, all could be in Heaven or Hell.
- If all souls are in Heaven or Hell, none could be in the grave.
  - Any one can see that both cannot be true.

2. The American Standard Version and many others leaves sheol not translated, and put the souls of **ALL the dead in sheol** with none in Heaven or Hell before the resurrection.

3. The New International Version translated sheol into grave, and puts **ALL the dead in the grave**, both the good and the bad; this translation also puts none of the dead in Heaven or Hell before the resurrection and Judgment Day.

I read the Bible for many years without seeing this so I can understand how many read it and cannot see through their theology, and cannot see what God has so clearly said, that not now, or at the judgment we can have no excuse for not understanding and believing His word. No excuse for teaching something in His name, which is in opposition to what God did say.

**THE THIRTY-ONE "HELL" TRANSLATIONS.** In the Hebrew, sheol is a common noun as is grave in English (**sheol** a common noun in Hebrew = **grave** a common noun in English). How can a common noun be translated into a proper noun (**sheol** a common noun in Hebrew = **Hell** a proper noun in English)? It is against all rules of translation to change a common noun into a proper noun.

The King James Version left it a common noun thirty-four times, but thirty-one times they changed it into a proper noun. The same word, which is a common noun, is translated into two common nouns, grave and pit, and one proper noun, Hell. Which one did they think it is, common or proper? How did they know when they should change this common noun to a proper noun? They put Hezekiah, a godly king in the grave (Isaiah 38:10) but put the wicked in Hell (Psalm 9:17) despite the fact that God used the same word (sheol—grave) for where both would be after their death.

The New American Standard Version did not translate it, but used the Hebrew word in the English translation; however, they capitalized the common noun as if it were a proper noun.

The New International Version translates the common noun "sheol" into the common noun "grave" sixty times and into the common noun "death" five times and did not capitalize it.

In none of the sixty-five passages where sheol is used is it said to be a place of fire or torment. It is said to be a place of silence and darkness, but never fire. Sheol is never used with the word eternal or everlasting, and sheol will be destroyed (Hosea 13:14); all graves will come to an end at the resurrection.

### **HOW SHEOL IS TRANSLATED ALL SIXTY-FIVE TIMES IN THE KING JAMES VERSION.**

#### **(1). DOWN INTO A PIT, A HOLE IN THE EARTH (In 3 passages)**

(1) Numbers 16:30 *"But if the Lord make a new thing, and the earth open her mouth, and swallow them up, with all that appertain unto them. And they go down quick into the **PIT** (sheol—Hell)." They and all that belong to them fell into the pit in the ground. It is undeniable that the "pit" is a hole in the ground that they fell into. Does anyone think this hole in the ground is Hell? The translators of the King James Version did not seem to. They went down into sheol alive, their earthly bodies alive with all their belongings fell into the hole in the ground, which was their grave.*

- Can the earthly body go alive to a place for an immaterial soul?
- Can anyone take all their earthly belongings with them to Hell or Heaven? Not to the "Hell" as it is taught by most that believe there is a Hell where God torments souls.

This simply says they were buried alive, and that all their belongings were buried with them, not that they took their belongings with them to Hell. Physical things, such as all their belongings and weapons of war (Ezekiel 32:26-27) are put in graves, but not in "Hell." Neither could they have taken their things to the bad side of hades that many believe in, or a subterranean chamber under the earth where some, even some orthodox protestant think all souls go to unto the resurrection.

(2) Numbers 16:32-33 *"And the earth opened her mouth, and swallowed them up, and their houses, and all the men that appertained unto Korah, and all their goods. They and all that appertained to them, went down alive into the **PIT** (sheol-Hell), and the earth closed upon them: and they perished from among the congregation." It was their earthly bodies that went into their grave (sheol) while they were alive; they had not died unto the earth closed upon their bodies, "they perished from the midst of the assembly." Do any that believe in Hell think they went to Hell while their bodies were alive? It was not immortal souls that went to Hell, or to either side of a subterranean chamber under the earth; God called this hole in the ground in which they were buried alive, sheol, not Hell.*

(3) Job 17:13-16 *"If I wait, the **GRAVE** (sheol—Hell) is mine house: I have made my bed in the darkness...They shall go down to the bars of the **PIT** (sheol—Hell), when our rest together is in the dust." The dead rest in the dust in bed in darkness, a description of persons being asleep in the grave, but definitely not a description of*

souls being awake in Hell or Heaven; both Korah and Job went to sheol, not to Heaven or Hell. The same word in the same context is translated both grave and pit.

**(2). THE NATIONS IN SHEOL** (In 18 passages). **Passages that are speaking of the destruction of nations and says nothing about the destruction of any individuals, nothing about where any individual will be after death; these nations simply stopped existing.**

In the King James Version:

- Four of the sixty-five passages with sheol that puts the nations in the grave.
- Fourteen of the thirty-one passages in which sheol was translated into Hell that puts the nations in Hell.

Some translation make some evil nations die and go to the grave, but other evil nations are tormented in an eternal Hell. Do any nations of this earth go to a place of torment that most now believe to be not on this earth?

**These eighteen passages have nothing to do with individuals; although what is said in these passages do not in anyway fit with today's theology of "Hell," they are often changed from speaking of nations to speaking of individuals to prove a place of eternal torment for souls,** mostly by the Jonathan Edwards type of Hell fire preacher who take them out of their context of speaking about the end of nations, and make them be speaking of souls that will have no end, but will live forever being tormented by God.

- Changed from **the end of** nations.
- To the **endlessness** of souls.

**NATIONS IN THE GRAVE** (In 4 passages).

(1) Isaiah 14:11 *"Your pomp is brought down to the **GRAVE** (sheol), and the noise of your viols: the worm is spread under you, and the worms cover you."* In the same context in the King James Version sheol is translated:

1. **Hell** in Isaiah 14:9, is the nation of Babylon being tormented in Hell?
2. **Grave** in Isaiah 14:11, or is Babylon a dead nation that no longer existed?
3. **Hell** in Isaiah 14:15, or did the translators change their mind again and bring Babylon back from the grave only for a nation to be tormented in Hell?

According to the theology of today "Hell" and "grave" are two completely difference places, two places that have nothing in common, they are not synonyms, yet they are translated from the same word in the same passage. When translators are this irresponsible there is no way that their reader can know when they are reading what God said, or what the translators wanted them to read.

In all three it is Israel's *"taunt against the king of Babylon"* (Isaiah 14:4), and is speaking of the destruction of Babylon, and Babylon joining the other dead nations in the grave (Isaiah 14:9-10). They do not seem to know whether they wanted to put Babylon in "Hell," or in the "grave." How inconsistent could they be? They were just as inconsistent throughout the Old Testament. *"Maggots are spread out as your bed beneath you, and worms are your covering"* New American Standard Bible. The

worms that eat the body are in the grave, not maggots in Heaven or Hell; Babylon was dead and in its grave.

(2) Ezekiel 31:15 *"Thus says the Lord God; 'In the day when he went down to the **GRAVE** (sheol) I caused a mourning."* See notes on Ezekiel 31:16 where sheol is translated "Hell."

(3) And (4) Hosea 13:14 *"I will ransom them from the power to the **GRAVE** (sheol); I will redeem them from death: O death, I will be your plagues; **O GRAVE** (sheol), I will be your destruction."* This is God redeeming the nation of Israel from captivity, not individual Jews being resurrected from the grave. The whole chapter is about the nation of Israel; God brought them out of captivity in Egypt (Hosea 13:4). *"It is your destruction, O Israel, that you are against me, against your help. Where now is your king that he may save you in all your cities, and your judges of whom you requested, 'Give me a king and a prince'? I gave you a king in My anger, and took him away in My wrath"* (Hosea 13:9-11). *"O Israel, return unto Jehovah your God; for you have fallen by your iniquity"* (Hosea 14:1). The translators did not believe any one would be redeemed, individuals or nations, from Hell; therefore, they have the redeeming being from the grave; if they had translated sheol into Hell they would have had Hell being destroyed by God (*"O sheol I will be your destruction"*), but the Hell they believed in could not be destroyed, and no one could ever be redeemed from it.

Because 1 Corinthians 15:54 says, *"Then shall come to pass the saying that is written,"* many think Paul quoted Hosea 13:14 in 1 Corinthians 15:55, but it is difficult to see how *"Death is swallowed up in victory. O death, where is your victory? O death where is your sting?"* is a quotation from *"O death, I will be your plagues; O grave I will be your destruction"* (Hosea 13:14). Hosea was speaking of Israel rebellion being their plagues and destruction. Paul was speaking of death being swallowed up in victory by the resurrection at the second coming of Christ.

- Hosea was speaking of **the destruction** of Israel.
- Paul was speaking of **the victory** of the faithful.
- **Neither Hosea nor Paul was speaking of eternal torment after death.**

Hebrew parallelism:

*"I will ransom them (the nation of Israel) from the power to the **GRAVE** (sheol)"*

*"I will redeem them (the nation of Israel) from death"*

Paul in speaking of the victory of the faithful said, *"O death, where is your sting?"* (1 Corinthians 15:55). The triumph is over the grave, not over Gehenna; it is not over the Catholic Dark Age Hell, not over a place where deathless souls that will never be in a grave are being tormented by God; the victory is the victory of believers over death, over the grave. For those in Christ, at the coming of Christ the graves will give up the dead and the faithful will have ageless life in Heaven.

**NATIONS IN HELL** (in 14 passages).

(1) Deuteronomy 32:21-26 **God's anger toward Israel.** *"I will provoke them (Israel) to anger with a foolish nation. For a fire is kindled in mine anger, and shall burn unto the lowest **HELL** (sheol) ("To the depths of Sheol" New Revised Standard Version), and shall consume the earth with her increase, and set on fire the foundations of the mountains. I will heap mischiefs upon them (Israel); I will send mine arrows upon them (Israel). They (Israel) shall be burnt with hunger, and devoured with burning heat, and with bitter destruction: I will also send the teeth of beasts upon them (Israel), with the poison of serpents of the dust. The sword without, and terror within, shall destroy both the young man and the virgin, the suckling also with the man of gray hairs. I said, I would scatter them (Israel) into corners, I would make the remembrance of them (Israel) to cease from among men"* Hundreds of years from Genesis to Deuteronomy had passed, and it was not unto the seventh time Moses used sheol before the King James translators thought they could put the Hell they believed in into the Bible.

Moses, in the first five books of the Old Testament used sheol seven times.

- (1). *"I will go down into the **grave (sheol)**"* Genesis 37:35.
- (2). *"Then shall ye bring my grey hairs with sorrow to the **grave (sheol)**"* Genesis 42:38.
- (3). *"My grey hairs with sorrow to the **grave (sheol)**"* Genesis 44:29.
- (4). *"His grey hairs to the **grave (sheol)**"* Genesis 44:31.
- (5). *"The earth open her mouth and swallow them and they go down alive unto the **pit (sheol)**"* Numbers 16:30.
- (6). *"They went down alive into the **pit (sheol)**"* Numbers 16:33.
- (7). *"For a fire is kindled in my anger, and shall burn unto the lowest **hell (sheol)**"* Deuteronomy 32:15.

Deuteronomy 32:22 was the only chance for the translators to get the word "Hell" in the five books of the Law, but then it is nothing like the "Hell that is taught today; it is God's judgment on the nation of Israel, not God tormenting a soul that had been in a person.

What did God say?

- Jeshurun forsook God (32:15).
- They (Israel) provoked God to jealousy with strange gods (32:16).
- They (Israel) sacrificed unto devils (32:17).
- They (Israel) moved God to jealousy with that which is not a god, and provoked Him to anger (32:21).
- In God's anger, a fire is kindled which would burn to the lowest sheol (grave), and shall consume the earth (32:22).

This fire is on earth, and shall (figuratively) consume the earth, not torment individuals in Hell. The "how" of this burning *"unto the lowest hell (grave-sheol),"* is described in Deuteronomy 32:21-26 in a way that it could not be the "Hell" that is believed in by many today; it is God's anger with the nation of Israel. This is almost a repeat of Leviticus 26:14ff of what would happen to Israel if they did not obey God.

- Verse 21 *"I will provoke them (Israel) to anger with a foolish nation."*
- Verse 22 *"And consumes the earth with it yield."*

- Verse 23 *"I will heap disasters upon them (Israel)."*
- Verse 24 *"They (Israel) shall be wasted with hunger, devoured with pestilence." See 2 Samuel 24:13-15; Exodus 9:15; 2 Chronicles 21:14*
- Verse 24 *"And the teeth of beasts I will send upon them (Israel), with the venom of crawling things of the dust."*
- Verse 25 *"The sword will destroy outside."*
- Verse 26 *"I would scatter them (Israel) afar, I would make the remembrance of them (Israel) to cease from among men."*
  - *"For they (Israel) are a nation lacking in counsel, and there is no understanding in them" (Deuteronomy 32:28).*

**All this, including the fire unto the lowest grave, is God's punishment to the nation of Israel at that time. All these punishments are those that can only be inflicted on the living, not on an immaterial, invisible soul that has no substance.** There is not one word about any individual, or about souls burning in Hell after death, or nothing is said about anything after the judgment at the second coming of Christ. If it were a Hell, there would be beast, poison serpents, swords, etc., in Hell. Will suckling babies be destroyed in the Hell that is taught today?

If *"lowest Hell"* spoken of in this passage were the "Hell" that is taught today, was Israel forever tormented by God in this *"lowest Hell;"* no, Israel was in captivity for a period of time, then came out of captivity, and was restored as a nation. See Psalm 86:13 below where in the King James Version David says he was delivered out of the *"lowest Hell."*

(1) Had David literally been in Hell before his death and delivered out of it, (2) or had David been delivered from death and the grave (sheol)?

(2) Had the nation of Israel literally been in Hell, (2) or had Israel had been in exile (the lowest grave) and delivered out of it and had returned to their homeland? How many Hells did the translators believe in?

**MORE THAN ONE HELL!** *"Unto the lowest hell"* King James Version. If there were a lowest Hell there would have to be other Hells above it. Some that believe in Hell has changed this to the lowest level of Hell in an attempt to keep from having more than one Hell, but according to the King James Version there is a lowest Hell; therefore, must be one or more Hell's above the lowest Hell

**From Genesis to Deuteronomy, centuries had passed before the King James translators first put Hell in the Bible although sheol had been used often. Hundreds more years passed before the New King James translators translated sheol into Hell the second time.**

1. The first 6 times sheol was used it was not translated Hell.
2. **The 7th time sheol is used is the first time it is translated "Hell" and then it is the nation of Israel that is in "Hell," not individuals or souls, Deuteronomy 32:22.**
  - The next 12 times sheol was used it was not translated Hell.
3. **The 20th time sheol is used is the second time it is translated "Hell" where the wicked nations that forget God "return to sheol" Psalm 9:17 Psalm 9:17-20 is speaking of nations**

that forget God and are judged by Him; nations that forget God die, go out of existence, go to a grave, but not to some underground chamber, or to a place where they will be eternally tormented by God; those that believe in Hell believe souls will be in Hell, but not that any nation will be there. Centuries had passed from the time when Adam sinned and was put out of the garden before the King James translators thought they had found a second place where it was safe to put "Hell" in the Bible. Did it not mean Hell in eighteen of the first twenty times sheol is used? Did it mean "grave" for centuries, a place on this earth where there is no life and no torment, and then the same word was changed to "Hell," changed to a place where there is both life and torment, a place that most that believe in Hell do not believe it is on this earth?

How did a word that is:

- A place where there is no life or torment
    - Be changed to a place of eternal life in torment?
  - A place that is on this earth
    - Be changed to a place not on this earth?
  - Grave and Hell (as the words are used today) have nothing in common; how did the translators get the two completely different words out of the same Hebrew word?
4. **The 28th time sheol is used is only the third time it is translated "Hell"**  
Psalm 55:15. **This is the first passage where it is an individual that is put in Hell (sheol, grave) in the King James Version.** The first two times that it was translated Hell it was nations that the translators put in Hell, not people.
  5. **The 33rd time sheol is used is only the fourth time it is translated "Hell"**  
Psalm 139:8. Then it is David who said, *"If I make my bed in hell, behold, You are there."* Did David believe he would be in Hell, and that God would also be there? Is there a bed in the Hell that is taught today where there will be no rest day or night? The just will make their bed in sheol, will sleep in the grave unto the resurrection, but those that believe in Hell do not believe the just will make their bed in the Hell that is taught today.
  6. **The 36th time sheol is used is only the fifth time it is translated "Hell"**  
Proverbs 5:5. In thirty-one times sheol is used before this is either translated grave or pit. **Even in "Hell's Bible," the King James Version, the translators did not think sheol means "Hell" in thirty-one of the first thirty-six times it is used, and did not translate it "Hell."**

(2) Psalm 9:15-17 *"The nations have sunk down in the pit which they have made...The Lord is known by the judgment which he executes: the wicked is snared in the work of his own hands ... The wicked shall be turned into **HELL** (grave—sheol), and all the nations that forget God"* ("return to Sheol" New American Standard Bible, Psalm 9:15-17). The same thing will happen to both the wicked persons and the nations that forget God. They both will go to sheol—the grave. Does anyone think evil nations live in torment in Hell after the nations no longer exist on this earth, or that the most evil nations do not have some good people in them that would not be in Hell? Both will be in the grave, both will be dead, not both in eternal

tormented in Hell. According to the American Standard Version the wicked are the wicked nations. *"The wicked shall be turned back unto sheol, even all the nations that forget God."* Psalm 9:15-20 is speaking of the nations that forget God. There is no threat of after—death punishment of nations or souls in this passage.

(3) Isaiah 5:14 *"Therefore my people (Israel) are gone into captivity, because they have no knowledge: and their honorable men are famished, and their multitude dried up with thirst. Therefore, **HELL** (grave—sheol) has enlarged herself and opened her mouth without measure."* Because Israel had left the Lord, the nation went into captivity. See Proverbs 27:20 above. Their captivity was a grave (sheol) to them as a nation; grave is used as a metaphor of their captivity, their death as a nation, a literal grave cannot enlarge herself. Can anyone tell me why the translators put the nation of Israel in Hell; does a nation in captivity make Hell be on the earth, and make Hell end when the captivity of that nation ends?

(4) Isaiah 14:9 *"**HELL** (sheol "grave" in margin of King James Version) from beneath is moved for thee to meet you at your coming: it stirs up the dead (rephaim) for you, even all the chief ones of the earth; it has raised up from the earth; it has raised up from their thrones all the kings of the nations. All they shall speak and say unto you, Are you also become weak as we? Are you become like unto us?"* This is a symbolical deception of the fall of Babylon, and says nothing about where any soul will be after the death of the person. In this metaphor, the past dead nations were surprised to see a nation as strong as Babylon joining them. If souls that had been in the persons that are dead were alive in sheol, why would they be surprised to see other souls that had been in other persons joining them when all would? Isaiah 26:14 *"They (the Nations) are dead, (rephaim) they shall not live; they are deceased, they shall not rise; therefore you have visited and destroyed them, and made all remembrance of them to perish."* This is about nations that did not remember God. It has nothing to do with an immortal immaterial something that was in a person being tormented by God after the death of the person. Because dead nations (not dead souls) are speaking in verse 9, the King James Version translated it Hell, but verse 11 has worms, and worms feed only on dead bodies, they do not eat immaterial, immortal souls; therefore, they translated it "grave." This parable where dead nations speak is not to be taken literally any more then the parable before it where the trees speak (Isaiah 14:8). If it were taken literally, it would be a completely different Hell than any Hell that is taught today, a Hell where God *"visited and destroyed them, and made all remembrance of them to perish."* God destroyed nations, but in the Hell that is taught today a soul that had been in anyone can never be destroyed. If this were speaking of souls in Hell, these souls were destroyed and all remembrance of them perished; surely the translators did not think that by changing sheol to Hell they could get anything even close to the Hell they believed in out of this passage.

(5) Isaiah 14:15 *"Yet you shall be brought down to **HELL** (grave—sheol)."* See Isaiah 14:9 above. The picture of maggots and worms covering the king of Babylon (Isaiah 14:15), and warriors lying with their swords under their heads (Ezekiel 32:27) is a picture of graves, and is far from the Hell that is taught today.

(6) (7) Isaiah 28:15 and Isaiah 28:18 *"Wherefore hear the word of the Lord, you scornful men, that rule this people which is in Jerusalem. Because you have said, we have made a covenant with death, and with **HELL** (grave—sheol) (Hell changed to sheol in New King James Version) are we at agreement; when the overflowing scourge shall pass through, it shall not come unto us."* Isaiah 28:18 *"And your covenant with death shall be disannulled, and your agreement with **HELL** (grave—sheol) (Hell changed to sheol in New King James Version) shall not stand; when the overflowing scourge shall pass through, then you shall be trodden down by it."* When the "overflowing scourge" (army) passed through, many would die, but they thought they could escape death and graves. This is the nation of Israel that had made a covenant with some and thought they were safe from them, but were not; it is not about any soul that had been in any person being tormented by God in Hell.

(8) Isaiah 57:9 *"And you went to the king with ointment, and did increase your perfumes, and did send your messengers far off, and did debase yourself even unto **HELL** (grave—sheol) (Hell changed to sheol in New King James Version)."* See Isaiah 57:8-13 and notes on Proverbs 15:24 above. Israel is spoken of as a woman who is unfaithful to her husband (God). Ultimately this leads to the death of any nation. Does anyone believe nations will be forever tormented in Hell; does anyone believe the nation of Israel is or has ever been in eternal torment in an eternal Hell? Nothing is said about a soul that had been in any person being in Hell.

(9) Ezekiel 31:16 In this chapter God is saying to Egypt about Assyria, *"I made the nations to shake at the sound of his fall, when I cast him down to **HELL** (grave—sheol) with them that descend into the pit: and all the trees of Eden, the choice and best of Lebanon."* This chapter of Ezekiel is about a nation, Assyria, which God had cast down and it was no more, it did not exist, not souls being tormented in Hell, see notes on Isaiah 14:9-20 above.

(10) Ezekiel 31:17 *"They also went down into **HELL** (grave—sheol) with him unto them that be slain with the sword; and they that were his arm, that dwelled under his shadow in the midst of the heathen."* The nations around Assyria also perished.

In the same context, the King James Version translated the same Hebrew word both Hell and grave.

- **Sheol translated grave** in Ezekiel 31:15. Assyria is a dead nation in the grave.
- **Sheol translated Hell** in Ezekiel 31:16. The nation of Assyria is alive and being tormented in Hell.
- **Sheol translated Hell** in Ezekiel 31:17. The nation of Lebanon is alive and being tormented in Hell.

In the same passage the King James Version used the same word, sheol, to put the same nation (Assyria) in both the grave and in Hell at the same time. Ezekiel 31:15-17 *"Thus says the Lord God; in the day when he went down to the **GRAVE** (sheol—Hell) I caused a mourning: I covered the deep for him, and I restrained the floods thereof, and the great waters were stayed: and I caused Lebanon to mourn for him, and all the trees of the field fainted for him. I made the nations to shake at the sound of his fall, when I cast him down to **HELL** (grave—sheol) with them that **descend into the pit**: and all the trees of Eden, the choice and best of Lebanon, all that drink water, shall be comforted in the earth beneath. They also went down into **HELL** (grave—sheol) with him unto them that be slain with sword; and they that were his arm, that dwelt under his shadow in the midst of the heathen (Hebrew—nations, and is translated nations in many translations)"*.

(11) Ezekiel 32:21 *"The strong among the mighty shall speak to him out of the midst of **HELL** (grave—sheol)." Egypt will join the other mighty nations in sheol (the grave). Ezekiel is talking about nations that have gone out of existence, not bodiless souls. In this metaphor dead nations have the power to speak. "They have come down and they lie with the uncircumcised, with those killed by the sword. Assyria is there with her whole army; she is surrounded by the graves of all her slain, all who have fallen by the sword. Their graves are in the depths of the pit and her army lies around her grave. All who had spread terror in the land of the living are slain, fallen by the sword" (Ezekiel 32:21-23 New International Version).*

(12) Ezekiel 32:26-27 *"There is Meshech, Tubal, and all her multitude: her graves are round about him: all to the uncircumcised slain by the sword, through they caused their terror in the land of the living. And do they not lie with the mighty that are fallen of the uncircumcised, which are gone down to **HELL** (grave-sheol) with their weapons of war: and they have laid their swords under their heads, but their iniquities shall be upon their bones."* Swords under their heads refer to the ancient practice of burying the weapons of warriors with them. Their weapons of war could be under their heads in the grave, but not taken by souls to Hell after the persons had been killed, or to a subterranean chamber for souls someplace under ground. Those who believe in Hell do not believe any belongings from this life can be taken to Hell; those who believe souls of the dead are stored in a chamber that is inside of the earth do not believe they have their weapons. It was those that were killed by the sword that were in the grave with their weapons under their head; they have gone down to the grave with their swords under their heads, not down under the earth to Hell. Not many now believe Hell is under the earth as those did when the King James Version was made.

(13) Amos 9:1-4 King James Version: *"I saw the Lord standing upon the altar; and he said,*

1. *Smite the lintel of the door, that the posts may shake:*

2. *And cut them in the head, all of them;*
3. *And I will slay the last of them with the sword:*
4. *He that flees of them shall not flee away,*
5. *And he that escapes of them shall not be delivered.*
6. *Though they dig into **HELL** (grave—sheol), thence shall mine hand take them;*
7. *Though they climb up to heaven, thence will I bring them down; And though they hid themselves in the top of Carmel, I will search and take them out thence; (One of the highest mountains in that part of the world; the top of it, as with most high mountains, is often over the clouds up in the heavens, higher than most birds of the heaven can fly. At the coming of Christ no one will hide in a pit or climb to the heavens to escape from God.)*
8. *And though they be hid from my sight in the bottom of the sea, thence will I command the serpent, and he shall bite them:*
9. *And though they (Israel) go into captivity before their enemies, thence will I command the sword, and it will slay them; and I will set mine eyes upon them for evil, and not for good.”*

Amos 8 and 9 is speaking of God punishing the nation of Israel for their sins, not tormenting souls in Hell after their death. *"Have I not brought up Israel from the land of Egypt...And I will destroy it from the face of the earth"* (Amos 9:7-10). There was no place where Israel could flee from God. Even if they dug into the grave (sheol) God would find them. Many of the graves were caves, or a room dug out of rock and sealed up. Does anyone think that a living person, or a nation can dig into the place where they say the "immaterial invisible" souls that were in the lost are being tormented after the death of the persons they had been in? **Does anyone seriously believe any living person can literally dig into Hell?** The King James Version has Israel digging into Hell to try to avoid the wrath of God. Can "souls" in Hell run away, and can souls in Hell be slain with the sword? Will there be a sword in Hell? This is Israel that because of their unfaithfulness cannot find a place to hide from His wrath, not even by hiding in a grave or pit. The very idea of the nation of Israel or individuals digging down into the earth into the Hell that is taught today is absurd, just as ridiculous, and unreasonable as Israel digging into a chamber under the earth where God has souls stored.

E. M. ZERR: "As a general comment on this and several verses following. It should be stated that *them* and kindred pronouns stand for the people Israel who have been so unfaithful to God...Hell and heaven are used figuratively because they are opposite terms, and denote the complete presence of God no matter where a man might flee" Amos 9:1-2, Bible Commentary, volume 4, page 314, Gogdill Foundation Publications, 1955.

E. B. PUSEY: "Mount Carmel, which rises abruptly out of the sea, with depths of that ocean which it overhangs. Carmel was in two ways a hiding place. 1) Through its caves (some say 1,000, some 2,000) with which it is perforated, whose entrance sometimes scarcely admits a single man; so close to each other, that a pursuer would not discern into which the fugitive had vanished...a whole army of enemies as of nature's terrors, could hide themselves in those rock—clefts...2) Its summit, about 1800 feet above the sea, is covered with pines and oaks, and lower down with olive and laurel trees. These forests furnished hiding places to robber—hordes." From Albert Barnes Notes on the Old Testament, Amos 9:3, 1953. Not even Mount Carmel could hide Israel from God.

There was no place Israel could hide from God. It is beyond understanding as to how the translated thought they could change sheol into Hell and make this passage teach the Hell they believed in, a place where God will forever torment bodiless souls, not the nation of Israel. All ten of these places are places where Israel could not run to hide from God, even diggings into Hell (grave) is to hide from God. Who would think that anyone would literally dig into Hell even if they could?

(14) Habakkuk 2:5 *"Yea also, because he transgress by wine, he is a proud man, neither keeps at home, who enlarges his desire as **HELL** (grave—sheol), and is as death, and cannot be satisfied."* Habakkuk is a book of prophecy about Chaldea. Chapter 2:4-17 Chaldea conquered many nations. *"He enlarges his appetite like Sheol...He also gathers to himself all nations"* Habakkuk 2:5 New American Standard Bible. They were like a man intoxicated with power, and their desire to conquer and rule over all other nations was as the grave (sheol) that can never be satisfied. See Proverbs 27:20. Again there is absolutely nothing about eternal torment after death, or about anything after death in this passage even despite the fact that sheol-grave was changed to Hell by the King James Version.

If, as some teach, sheol is a place somewhere underground where souls are kept, then when sheol is used 18 times in reference to nations, would not dead nations still exist and are being kept in sheol (someplace underground) with these souls? How could the same common noun be both (1) a grave for dead nations and (2) some kind of underground warehouse for living souls?

**(3). INDIVIDUALS IN SHEOL** (In 18 passages).

**THE GOOD IN THE GRAVE** (In 11 passages)

(1) Genesis 37:35, 42:38, 44:29, and 44:31 WHO OR WHAT WAS GOING WHERE? *"You shall bring down my gray hairs with sorrow to the **GRAVE** (sheol)."* The only word translated Hell in the Old Testament is sheol; the first three times sheol is used, if it means Hell is Jacob saying the immaterial, no substance soul that was in his son is being tormented in Hell, and when Jacob dies the immaterial soul that is in him will leave him and go down to "Hell to be with a soul that was in his son?" No, he is saying he himself will go down to the grave mourning the death of his son, that he will mourn his son until he dies; he was not saying he expected himself or a soul to go to eternal torment in Hell. The King James translators know that Hell would not teach what they wanted to teach. They did not want either Jacob or a soul that they thought was in him to be in **Hell**. This and many other times they know they could not translate sheol into Hell.

If Jacob's soul was going to Heaven at death, why did he say it was going **down** to his son **in sorrow**? If he was going to Heaven, he should have said it was going **up** to his son **rejoicing**. Those today who speak of going to Heaven always speak of going **up**, never **down**, and never speak of there being **sorrow** in Heaven. According to today's theology it is a soul that is in a person that will go to Heaven or

Hell when the person dies; if it was a soul that was in Jacob that went “down” to sheol (the only word in the Old Testament that is translated Hell), did a soul that was in Jacob go “down” to the grave, “down” to Hell, or “down” to Heaven? Is it any wonder that most translations have taken “Hell” out of the Old Testament?

(2) Genesis 42:38 *"Then will you bring down my gray hairs with sorrow to the **GRAVE** (sheol)."*

(3) Genesis 44:29 *"You will bring down my gray hairs with sorrow to the **GRAVE** (sheol)."*

(4) Genesis 44:31 *"Shall bring down the gray hairs of your servant our father with sorrow to the **GRAVE** (sheol)."*

- **The only four times sheol is used in Genesis it is translated “grave” all four times in both the King James Version and the New King James Version.**

A grave is a place for a dead person, not for a living soul, not for a living spirit. **There is not one passage in the Bible that speaks of "departed spirits" and certainly not one that speaks of living “departed spirits” being in a grave.** This term come out of thin air; they manufacture it and use it as if it were Biblical, and expect all others to accept their manufactured term without a question.

(5) Job 14:13 *"O that you would hide **me** in the **GRAVE** (sheol), that you would keep **me** secret, until your wrath be past, that you would appoint **me** a set time, and remember **me!**"* Hell as it is taught today's is incomparably worse than the suffering Job wanted relief from. The translators did not dare to make this Hell for them they would have Job asking to go to Hell for relief from his sufferings; it would have made this passage be absolute nonsense, and completely impossible to harmonize with the Hell of today. *"There is none like him in the earth, a perfect and an upright man"* (Job 1:8) asking to go to "Hell" to escape his sufferings. Those who believe in Hell teach the sufferings in Hell will be much worse than anything in this life. Job certainly would not have wanted to escape from the painful time he was having by going to a place much more painful, a place where there would be no end to suffering. *"Why died I not from the womb? Why did I not give up the ghost when my mother bare me? Why did the knees receive me, or why the breasts, that I should suck? For now should I have lain down and been quiet; I would have slept; then had I been at rest ... There the wicked cease from troubling: and there the weary are at rest"* (Job 3:11-17). Beyond any doubt, Job did not know about or believe in Hell as it is taught today. Job did not want to go to today's Hell and be tormented. **Why is it that no preacher who believes in "Hell" never speaks of "Hell" in the way Job spoke of sheol? The answer is simple, sheol did not mean a place of torment, but a place of rest, and those who preach "Hell fire" today just do not believe Job or the Bible.**

(6) Job 17:13 *"If I wait, the **GRAVE** (sheol) is my house: I have made my bed in darkness. I have said to corruption, you are my father: to the worm, you are my*

mother, and my sister. And where is my hope? As for my hope, who shall see it? They shall go down to the bars of the **PIT** (sheol), when our rest together is in the dust." It was clear even to the King James translators did not think that Job was saying Hell was going to be his bed. He gives a description of the corruption and maggots of the grave. An undeniable statement that the grave was to be his house, not Heaven, not Hell, or not Abraham's bosom; he had no thought of a soul that was in him being eternally alive and being tortured in the Dark Age Hell, but all of both the good and the bad are resting together in the dust. Death is never said to be a gateway to Heaven. It is described as a place of darkness and forgetfulness. In the same passage they translated the same word, sheol, into both grave and pit.

- Verse 13: "If I wait, the **grave (sheol) is my house**" A house is an abode, not a place of torment.
- Verse 13: "I have made my **bed in darkness**." The darkness of the grave. Is a place of fire a place of darkness?
- Verse 14: "I have said to **corruption**, you are my father." Corruption is in the grave.
- Verse 14: "To the **worm**, you are my mother, and my sister." The worms that eat dead bodies are in the grave.
- Verse 16: "They shall go down to the bars of the **pit** (sheol—Hell), when our **rest together is in the dust**." There is no rest in the "Hell" that is taught today, and I know of none that think that "Hell" is in the dust of the earth (Job 17:13-16).

(7) Psalm 30:3 "O lord, you have brought up my soul from the **GRAVE** (sheol): you have kept me alive, that I should not go down to the pit." David was not saying he had been dead and resurrected from the grave, or that a soul that had been in him went to Hell and was bought back out of Hell. God had saved him from his foes and death; therefore, saved him from going to the grave. A soul did not come back from Hell; he was expressing his gratitude for his recovery and being saved from death, not being brought back from Heaven or Hell.

Hebrew dualism where the same thing is said in two ways.

1. "You have kept me alive, that I should not go down to the pit."
2. "You have brought up my soul from the grave."

In verse nine David said, "What profit is there in my blood, if I go down to the pit? Will the dust praise you? Will it declare Your fullness?" The dust of the dead is in the grave; according to the theology that is taught by many a soul cannot be in the grave. This is Hebrew dualism where the same thing is said in two ways. David was not dead, but was giving thanks to God for saving him and keeping him alive. In this dualism grave (sheol) and pit (bohr) are parallel. What is the meaning of pit (bohr) in the Old Testament; it is used 69 times and in the King James Version is translated pit 42 times, dungeon 13 times, well 9 times, cistern 4 times and fountain 1 time. All except maybe fountain, which would have been better translated well or cistern, means a hole in the ground (a grave, pit, or well which was dug by man, or a natural pit—hole), not a place where an immaterial, invisible something that is in a person would go down to, and not a chamber someplace under ground where all deathless

souls are kept together unto the resurrection, or a chamber that has two sides, one side for the saved souls and one side for the lost souls.

**PIT** (bohr), which is used in Hebrew parallelism or dualism as being parallel in meaning to **GRAVE** (sheol) is a hole in the ground, and was a pit or well that was sometimes dug by man.

*“Cast him (Joseph) into some **pit** (bohr)”* Genesis 37:20. *“Cast him into this **pit** (bohr)”* Genesis 37:22. *“Cast him into a **pit** (bohr): and the **pit** (bohr) was...”* Genesis 37:24. *“Reuben returned unto the **pit** (bohr); and behold, Joseph was not in the **pit** (bohr)”* Genesis 37:29. *“Should put me into the **dungeon** (bohr)”* Genesis 40:15. *“Brought him hastily out of the **dungeon** (bohr)”* Genesis 41:14. *“The captive that was in the **dungeon** (bohr)”* Exodus 12:29. *“Open a **pit** (bohr), or if a man shall dig a **pit** (bohr)”* Exodus 12:33. *“The owner of the **pit** (bohr) shall make”* Exodus 21:34. *“Nevertheless a fountain or **pit** (bohr)”* Leviticus 11:36. *“And **wells** (bohr) dug”* Deuteronomy 6:1. *“In high places, and in **pits** (bohr)”* 1 Samuel 13:6. *“Came to a great **well** (bohr)”* 1 Samuel 19:22. *“Brought him again from the **well** (bohr)”* 2 Samuel 3:26. *“The water of the **well** (bohr) of Bethlehem”* 2 Samuel 23:15. *“Drew water out of the **well** (bohr)”* 2 Samuel 23:16. *“In the midst of a **pit** (bohr) in time”* 2 Samuel 23:20. *“Slew them at the **pit** (bohr) of the shearing house”* 2 Kings 10:14. *“The water of his **cistern** (bohr)”* 2 Kings 18:31. *“The water of the **well** (bohr) of Bethlehem”* 1 Chronicles 11:17. *“Drew water out of the **well** (bohr) of Bethlehem”* 1 Chronicles 11:18. *“Slew a lion in a **pit** (bohr)”* 1 Chronicles 11:22. *“Dug many **wells** (bohr)”* 2 Chronicles 26:10. *“**Wells** (bohr) dug”* Nehemiah 9:25. *“He made a **pit** (bohr), and dug it”* Psalm 7:15-16. *“Them that go down into the **pit** (bohr)”* Psalm 28:1. *“That I should not go down into the **pit** (bohr)”* Psalm 30:3. *“Out of an horrible **pit** (bohr)”* Psalm 40:2. *“Them that go down into the **pit** (bohr)...like the slain who lie in the grave”* Psalm 88:4-5. *“You have laid me in the lowest **pit** (bohr)”* Psalm 88:6. *“Them that do down into the **pit** (bohr)”* Psalm 143:7. *“As those that go down into the **pit** (bohr)”* Proverbs 1:12. *“Drink waters out of your own **cistern** (bohr)”* Proverbs 5:15. *“Person shall flee to the **pit** (bohr)”* Proverbs 28:17. *“To the sides of the **pit** (bohr)”* Isaiah 14:15. *“That go down to the stones of the **pit** (bohr)”* Isaiah 14:19. *“Prisoners are gathered in the **pit** (bohr)”* Isaiah 24:22. *“The waters of his own **cistern** (bohr)”* Isaiah 36:16. *“They that go down into the **pit** (bohr)”* Isaiah 38:18. *“To the hole of the **pit** (bohr)”* Isaiah 51:1. *“As a **fountain** (bohr) cast out”* Jeremiah 6:7. *“Into the **dungeon** (bohr)”* Jeremiah 37:16. *“Cast him into the **dungeon** (bohr)”* Jeremiah 38:6. *“And in the **dungeon** (bohr) there was no”* Jeremiah 38:6. *“Had put Jeremiah in the **dungeon** (bohr)”* Jeremiah 38:7. *“They have cast into the **dungeon** (bohr)”* Jeremiah 38:9. *“The prophet out of the **dungeon** (bohr)”* Jeremiah 38:10. *“Down by cords into the **dungeon** (bohr)”* Jeremiah 38:11. *“Took him up out of the **dungeon** (bohr)”* Jeremiah 38:13. *“Into the midst of the **pit** (bohr)”* Jeremiah 41:7. *“Now the **pit** (bohr) wherein Ishmael”* Jeremiah 41:9. *“Cut off my life in the **dungeon** (bohr)”* Lamentations 3:53. *“Out of the low **dungeon** (bohr)”* Lamentations 3:55. *“With them that descend into the **pit** (bohr)”* Ezekiel 26:20; 31:16. *“With them that go down to the **pit** (bohr)”* Ezekiel 26:20; 30:16; 31:14; 32:24; 32:25; 32:29; 32:30. *“With them that go down into the **pit** (bohr)”* Ezekiel 32:18. *“Set in the sides of the **pit** (bohr)”* Ezekiel 32:23. *“Sent forth your prisoners out of the **pit** (bohr)”* Zechariah 9:11.

In Psalm 30:9 David spoke of going down to the pit, but used ghash, which is translated much the same way as bohr, pit 13 times, ditch 2 times, grave 1 time, corruption 4 times and destruction 2 times in the King James Version.

*“That I should not go down to **the pit** (bohr)”* verse 2. *“You have brought up my soul (Nshahmah—life) from **the grave** (sheol)”* verse 3. *“When I go down to **the pit** (ghath)”* verse 9.

Sheol, bohr and ghash are also used by in Isaiah 38:17-18. *“Behold, for peace I had great bitterness: but you have in love to my soul (nshahmah—life) delivered it from **the pit** (ghath) of nothingness (foot note—destruction—New American Standard Bible) for you have cast all my sins behind your back. For **the grave** (sheol) cannot praise you, death cannot celebrate you: they that go down into **the pit** (bohr) cannot hope for your truth”*

His life was delivered from the pit of corruption, the grave for the grave cannot praise God; the pit of corruption and the grave are the same, corruption is in the grave, but there could be no corruption in a chamber someplace under ground where an immaterial, incorruptible something that had been in a person was stored.

"Yet shall you plunge me **in the ditch** (ghath)" Job 9:21. "I have said to **corruption** (ghath), you are my father" Job 17:14. "Deliver him from going down **in the pit** (ghath)" Job 33:28. "Is fallen **into the ditch** (ghath)" Psalm 7:15. "Down **into the pit** of destruction (ghath)" Psalm 55:23.

"Soul" as it is used today (an immaterial immortal something that is in a person) would have no need to be delivered from the grave, a pit of corruption, where a soul would never be if it were not subject to death or corruption.

Summery: Bohr is used in Hebrew parallelism or dualism as being parallel in meaning to grave (sheol); it is a hole in the ground and was sometimes dug by man. Both bohr and ghath are a pit, dungeon or well, a real place on this earth that the living can go down into and come up out of as Joseph when he was cast into a pit; David was asking God not to let him die or be killed, and go down to the pit; they are not a place where bodiless souls are put; they are not in a subterranean chamber someplace under ground where all immaterial, bodiless, living, but totally unconscious and unaware of anything souls are kept together, not God's warehouse where He keeps both the unconscious souls of the saved and the unconscious souls of the lost together unto the resurrection; or not a chamber that has two sides, one side for the conscious souls of the saved, and one side for the conscious souls of the lost that are in torment. It is used in Hebrew dualism in verse 2 as parallel in meaning to sheol-grave.

(8) Psalm 88:3 *"And my life draws nigh unto **the GRAVE** (sheol)."* He thought he would soon die and be in the grave, not a soul would soon be in Hell. This is one of the good guys, but he clearly indicates that he was expecting to be in sheol soon; therefore, sheol was not translated Hell. He asked, *"Will you show wonders to the dead? Shall they that are deceased arise and praise you? Shall your loving kindness be declared in the grave? Or your faithfulness in destruction? Shall your wonders be known in the dark? And your righteousness in the land of forgetfulness?"* (Psalm 88:10-12). It is certain that this righteous man did not think a soul would be alive in Heaven, or conscious any place after death, and this Psalm is a prayer for deliverance from death; he was asking to be saved from the darkness of death, not from the light of Heaven. *"I am counted among those who go down to the pit"* (Psalm 88:4), the word pit in Psalm 88:4 is the same word used in Genesis 37:20 where Joseph's brothers were going to put Joseph after they had killed him.

(9) Isaiah 38:9-12 *"A writing of Hezekiah king of Judah, after his illness and recovery: I said in the cutting off of my days, I shall go to the gates of **the GRAVE** (sheol): I am deprived of the residue of my years...You do make an end of me."* King Hezekiah, a godly king of Israel when he was ill had thought he would die and go to the grave before he was old, but the Lord heard his prayer and said, *"Behold, I will add fifteen years to your life"* (Isaiah 38:5). He was given fifteen years before he went to the grave (sheol), not fifteen years before he when to Hell. If sheol had been translated Hell in this passage, he would have said he expected to go into eternal torment in Hell. Everyone can see why the translators did not choose to translate this "sheol" into "Hell."

(10) Isaiah 38:16-18 King Hezekiah continues by asking God, *"Restore me to health, and let me live...for **the GRAVE** (sheol) cannot praise you, death cannot*

*celebrate you: they that go down into the pit cannot hope for your truth."* No distinction is made of the dead. Neither the good or bad dead can praise God, both are asleep. If souls that were in the good dead are living in Heaven, why could these immaterial souls not praise God? Those who go down to the pit (the grave) are asleep, and they know nothing; they cannot hope for God's truth while they are asleep. (1) Death, (2) pit, (3) and grave (sheol) are used interchangeably in this passage. If the faithful goes to Heaven at death, why was Hazekiah earnestly praying not to go to Heaven?

(11) Psalm 49:15 *"But God will redeem my soul from the power of **the GRAVE** (sheol) for he shall receive me."* Like the above this Psalm seems to be speaking of life being prolonged or saved from the grave, not a return to life after death. The translators did not believe God would redeem any soul from Hell. If the writer of this Psalm was speaking of being redeemed from sheol after his death, and sheol had been translated Hell, then this passage would be saying the writer of this Psalm would have expected to be in Hell and then to be redeemed from it. It was his life (nshahmah) that was saved from the grave; those that believe there is an immaterial soul in us does not believe a deathless soul will ever be in a grave, or that a soul in Hell can ever be redeemed from Hell, or that the grave has any power over a deathless soul that will never be in a grave.

soul will ever be in a grave, or that a soul in Hell can ever be redeemed from Hell.

#### **THE BAD IN THE GRAVE** (in 7 passages).

(1) 1 Kings 2:6 *"And let not his hoar head go down to **the GRAVE** (sheol) in peace."* No soul could have peace while it was being burned by Satan, or burned by God with a fire many times hotter than any fire on earth, and tormented far worse than any torment known to anyone. The Hell preached today is not a place of peace. In 1 Kings 2:6-9 David is telling Solomon not to let Joab die peacefully because of the evil he had done; David is instructing Solomon to see that justice was done to Joab. There is nothing in this about an immaterial something leaving Joab when he died, and it being forever tormented by God in Hell. David knew Solomon had the power to bring Joab down the grave, but no one has the power to send a soul to the "Hell" that is preached today, but to make this teach their theology they seem to be more than willing to give Solomon the power to send a soul that was in Joab to Hell.

(2) 1 Kings 2:9 *"But his hoar head bring you down to **the GRAVE** (sheol) with blood,"* see notes on 1 Kings 2:6 above. A man can shed the blood of another man and bring him down to the grave, but only God could say a soul was going to Hell if there were (1) a soul (2), and if there were a Hell that only souls, not person go to.

(3) Job 21:13 *"They spend their day in wealth, and in a moment go down to **the GRAVE** (sheol)." "Together they lie sown in the dust, and worms cover them" 21:26.* They **"go down to the grave,"** not something that was in them goes to somewhere out in space, or who knows where. Any torment in the grave (sheol) has to be read

into this passage. The New International Version says, "*And they go down to the grave in peace.*" In Job 3:17-19 Job gives a picture of sheol—the grave with the wicked at rest that is nothing like today's teaching of a soul, or all being in Heaven, or tormented in Hell; there is nothing said about the wicked after the grave, nothing about Heaven or Hell. "*There the wicked cease from raging, and there the weary are at rest. The prisoners are at ease together; they do not hear the voice of the taskmaster. The small and the great are there, and the slave is free from his master.*" They all sleep; Job would be out of his torment.

(4) Job 24:19-20 "*Drought and heat consume the snow waters: so does **the GRAVE** (sheol) those which have sinned...the worm feasts on them.*" All are consumed by the grave just as heat consumes the snow is a far cry from torment in a Hell where we are told that souls of those that have sinned are never consumed; as in 21:13 above Job said nothing about any kind of life for anyone or anything beyond the grave; therefore, how is it that this passage has often been used to prove torment in Hell? Did Job need Jonathan Edwards to tell him that souls of those that sinned are not consumed in the grave but are alive in Hell, a place of endless torment where they will never be consumed, that the heat of Hell will never consume them "*as heat consumes the snow*"?

(5) Psalm 31:17 "*Let me not be ashamed, O Lord; for I have called upon you: let the wicked be ashamed, and let them be silent in **the GRAVE** (sheol).*" This is David asking God to let his enemies that were trying to kill him die. The translators knew David was not asking God not to let souls in Hell cry out in pain as they were being tormented. He was asking for the end of the wicked, not asking for them to be silent when they are being tormented in Hell. "*Let the wicked be...silent in the grave,*" there are no cries of anguish by the wicked; most who believe in Hell believe that it will be anything but silent, but that there will be eternal yells from the pain; those who believe in Hell believe that souls that have left the wicked will be weeping, wailing and gnashing their teeth, there is nothing silent about weeping and wailing. According to the view of the Hell that many believe in makes David be asking God to torment many, but most of those who believe in eternal torment in Hell would condemn anyone who prayed in church and ask God to forever burn most in the hot fires of the Hell they believe in.

(6) (7) Psalm 49:14 "*Like sheep they are lain **in the GRAVE** (sheol); death shall feed on them*" Also Hebrew dualism. Although this is speaking of the wicked, no one believes sheep will be tormented in Hell; therefore, the translators could not put them in Hell as they usually did with the wicked; sheep do go to sheol—the grave just as the dead of mankind and all animals, but not to a chamber under the earth where many believe all the dead go (called by some "the place of the dead" or "the holding place of souls"); they believed an immortal soul is something that is in a person that will always be the same, not consume or decay away with the swelling of the dead

body, they had to put both decaying bodies and sheep in the grave; if sheol was a chamber where souls that were in all, both the good and the evil were together then this passage would put sheep and all living being in it. *"And the upright shall have dominion over them in the morning; and their beauty shall consume **in the GRAVE** (sheol)."* No matter how much beauty a person may have when living, that beauty will consume in the grave; they will swell up and decay in the grave. *"And their form shall be for Sheol to consume, so that they have no habitation"* (New American Standard Bible). If this were souls in Hell, they would have an eternal habitation, and sheol could not consume a soul if it were immortal; *"their form"* is their bodies, which are consumed in sheol—the grave.

**(4). BOTH THE GOOD AND BAD ARE TOGETHER IN THE GRAVE** (In 9 passages).

(1) 1 Samuel 2:6 *"The lord kills and makes alive: he brings **down to the GRAVE** (sheol), and brings up."* If they had translated this Hell, they would have the Lord brings up from Hell, but they believed no one could come out of Hell and have a second chance after they were in Hell; therefore, they did not use Hell. Coming out of Hell would completely upset their theology.

A typical Hebrew parallelism:

- *"The Lord brings death and makes alive."*
- *"He brings down to the grave (sheol) and raises up"* (New International Version).

(2) Job 7:9 *"As the cloud is consumed and vanishes away: so he that **goes down to the GRAVE** (sheol) shall come up no more."* **All** go down to the grave. They could not have translated this into Hell for then they would have put **all** in Hell together, both the good and the bad. Neither do they believe any immortal soul in "Hell" will vanish away as bodies in the grave do; there is no torment of the bodies that are vanishing away in the grave.

(3) Psalm 6:5 *"For in death there is no remembrance of you: **in the GRAVE** (sheol) who shall give you thanks?"* David is not saying that only these in Hell have no remembrance of God, but that none of the dead have any remembrance, or none can give Him thanks. If souls that were in the bad were in Hell, and souls that had been in the good were in Heaven or in Abraham's bosom, then souls of both the bad and the good would have a remembrance of God. Could anyone's soul be in Heaven and have no remembrance of God, or souls that are being tormented in Hell have no remembrance of the God who is tormenting them? If this sheol had been translated Hell, it would have put souls that had been in **all**, both the good and the bad in Hell with no remembrance of why they were there, or of the God that was tormenting them. **This statement is a flat contradiction of today's theology of an immortal soul.** That the dead are unconscious is so strongly stated in this passage that those who believe the dead are conscious have a hard time with it.

THOMAS P. CONNELLY: This is shown in the Connelly—Field "Debate On The State Of The Dead" when Thomas P. Connelly said, "The desire expressed here is for salvation, in view of the

fact that there is no chance of salvation in the grave; those who go to the grave unprepared give God no thanks, they do not remember the Lord, the term remembrance being used in the sense of obedience." "Remembrance" means "obedience"!!! What dictionary is he using?

It was David who did believe in God that would have no remembrance of God when he was in the grave, not someone who went to the grave not believing in God. David was not, as Connelly said, someone who went "to the grave unprepared." David was asking God to save him from death "*for in death there is no remembrance of You.*"

THOMAS P. CONNELLY: Connelly's statement on Psalm 146:3-4 again shows the dilemma of those who do not want to believe God. "*Put not your trust in princes, nor in the son of man, in whom there is no help. His breath goes forth, he returns to his earth; **in that very day his thoughts perish.***" Connelly said, "The term thoughts in this text, as is evident not only from the word used in the Septuagint, but from the context, means designs or purposes. We are exhorted not to trust in man, for though he may design to bless us, he is destined to die, when his purpose must fail—they must perish."

The Christian Church, in which Connelly is an Evangelist, believes no one can change God's word, but he changes "thoughts" into "purpose" when they are completely different words in the Hebrew and the word "thoughts" never means "purpose," and is never translated "purpose," but he had to find a way to make the dead have thoughts even if he had to change the Bible. Connelly—Field "Debate On The State Of The Dead."

(4) Psalm 89:48 "*What man is he that lives and shall not see death? Shall he deliver his soul (life—nehphesh) from the hand of **the GRAVE** (sheol)?" He makes no distinction between the righteous and the unrighteous, at death all go to the grave. This is another Hebrew dualism that is used throughout Psalm; in this dualism the grave and sheol are synonymous terms. A person cannot keep himself from death and the grave; he was speaking of his life (nehphesh) that he could not be kept from the grave, not an "immaterial invisible" something that cannot die and will never go to the grave. If this grave (sheol) were Hell, then no person could keep himself from Hell, not even the righteous. All die and go to the grave (sheol), but no one believes all go to Hell. Although this Psalm is speaking of all, both the good and the bad, all can see why the translators did not translate sheol into Hell in this passage, for they believed the righteous will keep their souls from Hell, but why did the translators make the writer of this Psalm say no one can keep their "soul" from the grave when they believed a soul could not die. A soul that cannot die, but cannot be kept from the grave makes this passage as it is translated in the King James Version be nonsense. It was his earthly life, the person that he could not keep from the grave, not an immortal soul that would never be dead and never be in the grave.*

(5) Psalm 141:7 "*Our bones are scattered at **the GRAVE'S** (sheol) mouth, as when one cuts and cleaves wood upon the earth.*" Will the bones of the immaterial souls that are in Hell be scattered at the mouth of Hell and not be in it? Whatever

David means by grave's mouth, he is not saying that the inside of the grave (sheol/hades) has two sides, one side for the good and one for the bad. Even the King James translators did not think so and translated it grave, not Hell. Bones can be scattered only at the mouth of a grave (many grave were caves), but not at the mouth of Hell, and not at the mouth of any kind of holding place that is inside the earth for immaterial souls that have no bones. There is nothing about torment, or about an immortal soul in this Psalm.

(6) Proverbs 1:12 *"Let us swallow them up alive as **the GRAVE** (sheol): and whole, as those that go down into the pit."*

(7) Proverbs 30:16 *"**The GRAVE** (sheol) says not 'It is enough.'" No matter how many die, the point will never be reached when no more can die.*

(8) Ecclesiastes 9:10 *"Whatsoever **your** hand finds to do, do it with **your** might; for there is no work, nor device, nor knowledge, nor wisdom, **in the GRAVE** (sheol), whether **YOU** go." In the same chapter Solomon says, "The dead know not anything" (Ecclesiastes 9:5). "His breath departs, **he** returns to the earth; in that very day **his** thoughts perish" (Psalm 146:4); If the thoughts of persons perish when they die, what thoughts do a soul have? "The dead do not praise the Lord, nor do any that go down into silence, but **we** (those who are alive) will bless the Lord" (Psalm 115:17). Those in the grave know nothing, and will know nothing unto the resurrection; A Hell or a Heaven where souls that are in them **know nothing** and **does nothing** would not be the Hell, or the Heaven the Catholics, or Protestants believe in. If souls after leaving the dead persons, are now living in a Hell where those in it have no knowledge, it would be a place of torment where those souls being tormented would not have any knowledge that they were in torment. Solomon is not speaking in figurative language. A more positive statement that the dead are now unconscious could not be made; "*whether **you** go,*" not "whether an immaterial something in **you** goes." It could not be said any plainer that death is death, and nothing that had been in anyone is alive before the resurrection; that after death no person has thoughts or knows anything; if there were an immortal soul living in a person, and it had any thoughts after it had left the person it was in, it's thoughts would not be the thoughts of the person; it is always speaking of the person being in sheol and not having any thoughts, never a soul after it has left the person it was in.*

(9) Song of Solomon 8:6 *"Love is as strong as death; jealousy is cruel as **the GRAVE** (sheol)." No distinction is made of the good or the bad. The bad and the good are the same to the grave, it takes everything from all, and without the resurrection that was made known by Christ there never would be any life for anyone.*

**(5). BOTH THE GOOD AND BAD ARE BOTH IN HELL** (In 15 passages).  
**THE GOOD IN HELL** (In 9 passages).

(1) 2 Samuel 22:6 *"When the waves of death compassed me, the floods of ungodly men made me afraid; The sorrows of **HELL** (grave—sheol) (Hell changed to sheol in New King James Version) compassed me about; the snares of death prevented me."* Up to the time of David, Hell is used in the King James Version only one time. **From Genesis one unto the time of David in 2 Samuel, over three thousand years had passed before the second time the word Hell was put into the King James Version, but even then the New King James takes it out.** 2 Samuel 22:5—6 is David speaking about troubles and fears he had, including fear of death, for he was running from Saul who was trying to kill him. It is difficult to see why the King James Version put Hell in this passage, for when they did it is far from being what those who believe in Hell believes to be what Hell is like. Was David running from Saul because he thought Saul would send him to the grave, or would send him to Hell? Even those who believe in Hell do not believe Saul could have sent David to it. **There is nothing in it about anything after death, or after the Judgment Day.** *"The sorrows of **Hell** (grave—sheol) compassed me about" and "the snares of death prevented me" are Hebrew dualism.*

MATTHEW HENRY: "This is expressed figuratively. He was surrounded with death on every side, threatened to be overwhelmed, and saw no way of escape" Matthew Henry's Commentary, page 357. David thought his death and the grave were near, not that he was soon going to Hell.

(2) Job 11:8 *"It is as high as heaven; what can you do? Deeper than **HELL** (grave—sheol) (Hell changed to sheol in New King James Version); what can you know?" "They are higher than the heavens—what can you do? They are deeper than the depths of the grave—what can you know" New International Version.* This is one of Job's comforters, Zophar. God said, *"My wrath is kindled against you and against your two friends, because you have not spoken of Me what is right as My servant Job has" (Job 42:7).* Can the words of Job's friends, which God says are not "right," be used to prove any truth? **What is both higher than the heavens, and deeper than the depths of the grave? The mysteries of God, and the limits of the almighty (Job 11:7).** All though Job's friend might not have been speaking what was right, there still is nothing in what they said about anything after death, nothing about an immortal soul, or nothing about anything after the judgment. In this, as in all the sixty-five uses of sheol, there is no torment after death.

(3) Job 26:6 *"**HELL** (grave—sheol) is naked before him, and destruction has no covering."* The passages where sheol was mistranslated to put Hell in the Bible describe a place very unlike the Hell that is now believed in by many, and the wrong people are sometimes in it, sometimes while they are still living.

(4) Psalm 16:10 *"For you will not leave my soul in **HELL** (grave—sheol) (Hell changed to sheol in New King James Version): neither will you suffer your Holy One to see corruption."* This is used in Acts 2 and is about Christ. The translators put

most of the saved in the grave, not in Hell, but this says his soul was not left in sheol. The translators were in a dilemma in this passage.

1. They could not put a "soul" (as the word is used today—an invisible, immaterial, something that has no substance) in the grave, which would be to admit that a soul could be dead.
2. Or they had to put Christ in Hell. If Christ were alive in Hell, He was alive and never was dead; therefore, there was no resurrection of Christ. Did God raise Christ from the dead, or did God just take the living Christ who was not dead out of Hell? Christ paid our debt, which was death, not eternal torment.

This is Hebrew dualism where the same thought is given in two ways.

1. *"For you will not leave my soul in **Hell** (grave—sheol)."*
2. *"Neither wilt you suffer your Holy One to see corruption."* Corruption is in the grave, not in "Hell." God raised Christ from the dead. He did not take a living Christ out of Hell. (1) Jesus died. (2) Jesus was buried. (3) God raised Jesus back to life after three days. (4) If Jesus was not dead, how did God raise Him to life? **Christ really died for our sins.**

(5) Psalm 18:5 *"I will call upon the Lord, who is worthy to be praised: so shall I be saved from mine enemies. The sorrows of death compassed me, and the floods of ungodly men made me afraid. The sorrows of **HELL** (grave—sheol "grave" in margin of King James Version) (Hell changed to sheol in New King James Version) compassed me about: the snares of death prevented me. In my distress I called upon the Lord, and cried unto my God; he heard my voice out of his temple, and my cry came before him even into his ears."* This is David saying about the same thing that he said in 2 Samuel 22:5-6. See notes there. This is Hebrew dualism where the same thing is said in two ways. *"The sorrows of sheol compassed me about"* and *"the snares of death prevented me"* are two ways of saying the same thing. If Hell were a place of eternal torment after death, and David had been compassed about by it, he would not have been alive on earth to write this. This is one of the good guys who came near unto death and was saved *"from mine enemies,"* from sheol—was saved from death and the grave, David did not come near unto Hell.

(6) Psalm 86:13 *"For great is your mercy toward me: and you have delivered my soul from the lowest **HELL** (grave—sheol)."* (Hell changed to sheol in New King James Version). (Footnote in King James Version: "Or, grave"). Neither the Catholic, Protestant, nor the after judgment versions of Hell believe that a person can go to the Hell they believe in and come back to live on Earth. The writer of this Psalm is thanking God for saving his life from the grave, not for bring a soul back from eternal torment in Hell, but for bring him back from a place (near death) where he had been and was delivered from it while he was alive in the body; the next verse plainly indicate that his deliverance was from *"arrogant men have risen up against me, and a band of violent men have sought my life,"* but God had delivered him from death and the grave (sheol) by their hands. The New Revised Standard Version says, *"You have delivered my soul (life—nehphesh) from the depths of Sheol"* (grave). **At the time David was writing this he had not been to the Hell that is taught today, and could not have been delivered from it, for today's Hell is a place of eternal**

torment from which none will ever be delivered. It is no wonder that the New King James took "Hell" out of this passage.

**If this passage were believed as it is translated in the King James Version, using the words "soul" and "Hell," as they are used and understood today it would teach:**

1. **A soul would be in Hell and be tormented when the person it had been in is still living on earth, before the death of the person.**
2. **A soul can come back from Hell.** A soul in Hell can be delivered from Hell! Also 1 Samuel 2:6; Psalm 16:10: 30:3 49:15; 88:3.
3. **There is more than one Hell.** If there were a "lowest hell," there would have to be one or more Hells above it. Does anyone believe that are many Hells?
4. **A soul of the righteous can be in Hell.** A soul that was in David would have had to be in Hell while David was alive if that soul were delivered from Hell.
5. **Souls are in Hell before the Judgment Day.**

In trying to put Hell in the Bible, they made a mess of things, a mess that no one believes, not even the translators that made the mess.

In this Psalm the beliefs of the translators give them only two choices. They had to:

- Put a soul that could not be dead in the grave,
- Or put a soul that was in a living person in Hell at the time it was in a living person.

There choice was to put a soul in Hell, even if it was a soul that was in David that was put in Hell before David's death.

(7) Psalm 116:3 *"The sorrows of death compassed me, and the pains of **HELL** (grave—sheol) (Hell changed to sheol in New King James Version) gat hold upon me: I found trouble and sorrow. Then called I upon the name of the Lord; O Lord, I beseech thee, deliver my soul."* The writer could see that death and the grave may be close. When they translated sheol into Hell, they put a soul that was in the righteous in Hell before the righteous person died? While he was still living the King James Version has him praying that a soul that was in him be taken out of Hell, when according to today's teaching a soul would not have been in Hell while the person was still living? The New King James Version did not think so and changed Hell to sheol. His trouble and sorrow were in this life, and he called upon the name of the Lord to deliver him from death and the grave, he thought his death was near at the hands of those that sought his life, he not ask for him or a soul to be deliver from Hell when he or a soul was not in Hell, when he had not died.

(8) Psalm 139:8 *"If I ascend up into heaven, you are there: if I make my bed in **HELL** (grave—sheol), behold, you are there."* He is saying God is everywhere; God is omnipresent. There is nowhere one can go away from God for He can reach into the grave and raise the dead. The King James Version makes God be in Hell, but if He were, then those in Hell would not be away from the presence of God, and death would not be a separation from God as some teach it is. Sleep is used as a metaphor of death throughout the Bible. *"If I make my bed in Sheol" (Hell in the King*

James Version), those who believe in Hell do not believe those in Hell will have a bed and sleep. If David had made his bed in Hell, this would be saying one of the good guys was asleep in Hell? See GATHERED TO HIS PEOPLE—WAKENING UP AT THE RESURRECTION in chapter three on the use of sleep in the Bible.

- Also 2 Samuel 22:5-6; Psalm 18:3-6 David was in fear of death (not in fear of Hell as is translated in the King James Version), and was running from Saul who was trying to kill him. Also Psalm 86:13; 116:3-4; Jonah 2:2.
- Most of the times when sheol is referring to the good it is translated grave. See Genesis 37:35; 42:38; 44:29-44:31; Job 14:13; 17:13-16; Psalm 49:15, etc.

(9) Jonah 2:2 *"And said, I cried by reason of mine affliction unto the Lord, and he heard me; out of the belly of **HELL** (grave—sheol) ("grave" in margin of King James Version) (Hell changed to sheol in New King James Version) cried I, and you heard my voice."* In the belly of the great fish was a dark covered place as the grave is, but it was nothing like a place of torture in fire brimstone. Jonah was not dead, and neither the Catholics, Protestants, nor the after judgment versions of Hell believe that a soul can be in Hell before the persons death, or that a soul can come back to this world from Hell. For 374 years (from 1611 to 1985) the readers of the King James Version were told Jonah was in Hell, then the New Kings James Version came along and said not so, he was in sheol. This passage is as in many others; it is difficult to see how the King James translators thought they could get their view of "Hell" out of Jonah being in the belly of a fish even when they mistranslated it.

1. **No one believes Hell is in the belly of a great fish.**
2. **No one believes a living person in the flesh can ever be in Hell?**
3. **No one believes that if a soul did go to Hell that it will never come out of it to live on this earth?**

**But the King James Version makes all three of these to be true. Did the translators believe what they made that translation say? Does any one that believes in Hell believe what they made the King James Version say?**

#### **THE BAD IN HELL in only 8 of the 65 passages that have sheol.**

(1) Psalm 55:15 is the third time sheol is translated Hell and the first time that it is people not souls that are in Hell, the first two was the nation of Israel in captivity, not in Hell. *"Let death seize upon **them**, (people) and let **them** (people) go down quick into **HELL** (sheol—grave in the margin of the King James Version): for wickedness is in their dwellings, and among them."* David is asking that they die and go to **sheol** (the grave) quickly. He is not asking that their souls be tormented in Hell forever. Those who believe in the after judgment Hell do not believe souls of the wicked go quickly to Hell after the death of the person it was in, but some are desperate enough for proof of Hell that they use this and other verses like it. Though this is the twenty-ninth time sheol is used, it is only the eighth time it is translated Hell in the New King James Version. Numbers 16:29-33 is similar, *"If these men die the death of all men, or if they suffer the fate of all men, then the Lord has not sent me. But, if*

*the Lord brings about an entirely new thing and the ground opens its mouth and swallows them up with all that is theirs, and they descend alive into **sheol** (grave-sheol, **pit** in King James Version), then you will understand that these men have spurned the Lord. Then it came about as he finished speaking all these words, that the ground that was under them split opened; and the earth opened its mouth and swallowed them up, and their households, and all the men who belonged to Korah, with their possession, So they (people, not soul) and all that belonged to them went down alive to **sheol** (sheol—grave—pit in King James Version); and they perished from the midst of the assembly" New American Standard Bible. If they had translated this sheol into Hell, it would have put Hell in a hole in the ground and on this earth; if Hell is eternal torment then this hole is still some place on this earth, and this earth will have to last for eternity if Hell were on the earth and Hell last for eternity.*

- Psalm 55:15 *"Let death seize upon them, and let them go down quick into **Hell** (sheol) for wickedness is in their dwellings."*
- Psalm 32:17 *"Let the wicked be ashamed, and let them be silent in the **grave** (sheol)."*

The King James translators did not know whether they wanted the wicked (1) in a grave (2) or in Hell; the two most certainly are not the same place. Did they divide up the dead, and (1) put some in Hell, (2) some in the grave, (3) and some in a hole in the ground? Sheol is translated grave, Hell, and pit at random.

Hebrew dualism where the same thing is said in two ways is used throughout Psalm and Proverbs. Sheol is used in dualism repeatedly. Typical Hebrew parallelism or dualism is used in ten of the sixty-five times sheol is used.

- (1) Psalm 30:3—**saved from the grave = a person was kept alive**
  1. *"O lord, you have brought up my soul from the GRAVE (sheol):*
  2. *You have kept me alive."*
- (2) Psalm 55:15—**death = grave**
  1. *"Let DEATH seize upon them,*
  2. *And let them go down quick into HELL (sheol—grave)."*
- (3) Psalm 89:48—**shall not see death = delivered from the grave**
  1. *"What man is he that lives and shall not see DEATH?*
  2. *Shall he deliver his soul from the hand of the GRAVE (sheol)?"*
- (4) Psalm 116:3-4—**sorrows of death = pains of the grave**
  1. *"The sorrows of DEATH compassed me,*
  2. *And the pains of HELL (sheol—grave) gat hold upon me."*
- (5) Proverbs 5:5—**down to death = grave**
  1. *"Her feet go down to DEATH:*
  2. *Her steps take hold on HELL (sheol—grave)."*
- (6) Proverbs 7:27—**the grave = death**
  1. *"Her house is the way to HELL (sheol—grave),*
  2. *Going down to the CHAMBERS OF DEATH."*
- (7) Proverbs 9:18—**the dead are there = in the depths of the grave**
  1. *"But he knows not that the DEAD are there;*
  2. *And that her guests are in the depths of HELL (sheol—grave)."*
- (8) Proverbs 15:10-11—**shall die = grave and destruction**
  1. *"He that hates reproof shall DIE."*

2. *HELL (sheol—grave) and destruction are before the Lord.*"

(9) Isaiah 38:18—**grave = death**

- *"For the GRAVE (sheol) cannot praise you,*
- *DEATH cannot celebrate you."*

(10) 1 Samuel 2:6—**kill and make alive = down to the grave and bring up**

- *"The lord KILLS and makes alive:*
- *He brings down to the GRAVE (sheol), and brings up."*

(2) Proverbs 5:5 *"Her feet go down to DEATH: her steps take hold on **HELL** (grave—sheol)."*

Through out the poetry books, a statement is made, and then for emphasis will be repeated in a different way.

1. *"Her feet going down to DEATH" is repeated for emphasis*

2. *"Her steps taking hold on SHEOL (grave)."*

Adultery had the death penalty under the Law (Leviticus 20:10-16); they were stoned to death (John 8:3-11); even today many die from Aids and other incurable sexual diseases. In Proverbs 1:11-12, it was the victims of the evil women; therefore, the King James Version puts the victims in the grave; but in Proverbs 5:5, it is the evil women; therefore, the King James Version puts her in Hell even though they had to translated the same word into two completely difference places, even though they had to make the same word be both a common noun (grave) and a proper noun (Hell), even though the same word (sheol) cannot be both grave and Hell. Proverbs 5 is about prostitutes, and it says of those that go to them, *"And you groan at your latter end, when your flesh and your body are consumed"* (Proverbs 5:11). Note: some commentaries say this is a metaphor about Israel being unfaithful to God by worshipping other gods and going into captivity.

(3) Proverbs 7:27 Another Hebrew dualism where the same thing is said in two ways. Going down to the chambers of death is the same as the way to the grave (sheol). Proverbs 7 is a comparison of keeping God's commandments, or not keeping them pictured as being enticed by an adulteress woman.

(4) Proverbs 9:18 *"But he knows not that the DEAD are there; and that her guests are in the depths of **HELL** (grave—sheol)."* Proverbs 9 is a comparison of wisdom and folly with folly pictured as a wicked woman, and those who come to her dying a premature death.

1. *"The DEAD are there"*

2. *"Her guests are in the depths of SHEOL (the grave)" is a repeat of the same thing.*

(5) Proverbs 15:11 *"Correction is grievous unto him that forsakes the way: and he that hates reproof shall die. **HELL** (grave—sheol) and destruction are before the Lord."* The grave and destruction is not a picture of Hell as it is painted by today's theology where none that are in Hell shall ever die or be destroyed. *"Sheol and Abaddon"* are used together two times, in Proverbs 15:11 and 27:20, *"grave and destruction"* translated *"Death and Destruction"* both times in the New International Version.

(6) Proverbs 15:24 *"The way of life is above to the wise, that he may depart from the **HELL** (grave—sheol) beneath."* May keep from an early death, keeping the Law would keep one from going to the grave early. The way to live a long life was to keep the law and keep from all the cursing for not keeping it. *"All these blessings"* and *"All these curses"* in Deuteronomy 28 were in their lifetime and often brought a premature death. Even under the New Covenant the wrath of God is on the sinner now in this life (Romans 1:18; 2 Peter 2:9). Protestants do not believe that any soul will depart from Hell once they are there. See Psalm 18:3-6 and Psalm 55:15, yet in an attempt to put Hell into the Bible the King James translators repeatedly had souls of some in Hell before the death of the person a soul was in, and some souls departing from Hell. The writers of Psalm, Proverbs, and all the Old Testament believed God would in their lifetime reward the righteous, and He would punish the evil even with premature death.

(7) Proverbs 23:14 *"You shall beat him with the rod, and shall deliver his soul (life—nehphesh) from **HELL** (grave—sheol)."* A child that is not punished when it does wrong will not keep the law, and may be punished even with death (see note on Proverbs 15:24 above). *"You shall beat him with the rod, and deliver (save) his life from the grave."* Moses in Deuteronomy 28 set before them life or death, a long good life if they obeyed God, or a short bad life and death if they did not. See chapter seven, "All these Blessing, All these Cursing."

(8) Proverbs 27:20 *"**HELL** (grave—sheol) and destruction are never full."* *"And he that hates reproof shall die (Proverbs 15:24). Hell (grave—sheol) and destruction are before the Lord"* (Proverbs 15:10-11). The grave and destruction are associated together. No matter how many die, as long as time goes on, there will be room for more. In Proverbs 30:16 the translators translated the same thought as grave. *"The grave (sheol)...says not 'It is enough.'"* This is not saying Hell is so large a place that it can never be filled. This passage is like the other 64 passages that have sheol in them, nothing is said about God tormenting souls in Hell.

**There is no exception to the inconsistency in the translators of the King James Version in their translation of the word sheol; when it is clear that it cannot mean Hell (as the word is used today) they translated it grave, but when they thought they could get away with adding there Pagan Hell they changed (not translated) "sheol" to "Hell," changed a common noun to a proper noun.**

MR. STUART, who believes in "Hell" said, "The inconsistency with which they have sometimes rendered the word Sheol, in the same connection and with the same sense, is a striking circumstance which cannot but be regarded with some wonder by an attentive inquirer."

Conclusion: (1) If sheol is rightly translated "grave" (2) or if, as some believe, sheol means "a state of the dead" where all the dead are all kept together in some kind of shadowy existence, either way:

1. Sheol is not a place where God torments after death.
2. Sheol is not Hell.

Note: There are four others words in the Hebrew Old Testament that are translated "grave" in the King James Version (kvooraf, kehver, shahaghath, bgee), but to my knowledge none of them are used by anyone to prove there is any kind of life in the grave.

**Passages from which the New King James Version removed "Hell" that was in the King James Version.** The New King James Version took Hell out of thirteen of the thirty-one times it is in the King James Version. It changed the way sheol was translated in the King James Version 19 of the 65 times sheol is used. It also changed the three words used in the King James Version Old Testament to four words, pit, grave, Hell, and sheol.

CHANGES	KJV	NKJV	MORE CHANGES	KJV	NKJV
(1) 2 Samuel 22:6	Hell	Sheol	(1) Job 17:16	Pit	Sheol
(2) Job 11:8	Hell	Sheol	(2) Ezekiel 31:15	Grave	Hell
(3) Job 26:6	Hell	Sheol	(3) Isaiah 14:11	Grave	Sheol
(4) Psalm 16:10	Hell	Sheol	(4) Isaiah 38:10	Grave	Sheol
(5) Psalm 18:5	Hell	Sheol	(5) Isaiah 38:18	Grave	Sheol
(6) Psalm 86:13	Hell	Sheol	(6) Proverbs 1:12	Grave	Sheol
(7) Psalm 116:3	Hell	Sheol	In 18 times the King James Version translated		
(8) Isaiah 5:14	Hell	Sheol	sheol into Hell the New King James Version		
(9) Isaiah 14:15	Hell	Sheol	chose to leave sheol untranslated.		
(10) Isaiah 28:15	Hell	Sheol			
(11) Isaiah 28:18	Hell	Sheol			
(12) Isaiah 57:9	Hell	Sheol			
(13) Jonah 2:2	Hell	Sheol			

The New King James Version removes much of the foundation on which the belief in Hell was built, and the American Standard Version and most others removed the foundation completely from the Old Testament, but the belief now still stands without it.

**After looking at the sixty-five passages where sheol is used in the Old Testament, there is only one conclusion that we can come to, death really is death for both the good and the evil, and there is no life for anyone, or any immortal something in anyone before the resurrection.**

- There is no hint of an eternal life of torment after death, or after the judgment in any of the sixty-five passages.
- The Old Testament does not contain today's concept of Hell.
- There is no word in the Old Testament Hebrew that even comes close to the meaning that Hell has today.

Two definitions:

1. Webster's New World Dictionary, "A place in the ground where a dead body is buried. Any place where a dead body is laid or comes to rest."
2. Today's theology, "A place where the living that can never be dead, and souls are tormented forever by Satan or by God."

**How did the translators get two words, grave, and Hell, with such a vast difference in meaning from the same Hebrew word?** It is as if the same word (sheol) means "white" in thirty-four passage and "black" in thirty-one passages. **To mistranslate the way the King James translators did is not only a bad translation, it is sinful to so misuse God's word, both sinful for the translators**

**and sinful for those who know it is wrong and use it anyway, and they do not speak out about what they know to be wrong.** What will they say to God at the judgment?

L. RAY SMITH: "I do not even contend that this is bad scholarship. This is NO scholarship at all. This is nothing less than FRAUD—a Christian HOAX! Show me where else in historic academia we find such reckless abandonment of the facts? I am not contending for my personal preference in translating the scriptures, but to merely translate accurately and consistently what we find in all the Hebrew and Greek manuscripts."

Often, the person who teaches sheol is somewhere beneath the surface of the earth, and souls of all the dead all to sheol, will at other times teach all souls go to Heaven or Hell when the person dies. The Old Testament teaching of all the dead persons being asleep in sheol, the grave is in direct contradiction to today's teaching of all souls going directly to Heaven at death, yet many teach both depending, I guess on what their needs are at any given time, but most seem to be unaware of what they are doing, unaware that they are changing back and forth between the two contradictory teachings.

The English "Hell" of today ----- versus—sheol of the Old Testament  
A place of remorse and suffering -- versus -"forgetfulness" Ps 88:11-12  
A place of endless fire ----- versus -"darkness" Job 10:21  
Of torment with shrieks and groans -versus -"silence" Psalm 115:17

AN EXAMPLE OF THE CONFUSION THAT EXIST ON WHERE THE DEAD ARE. Roger E. Dickson, on page 69 of "Life, death and Beyond" said, "The word sheol refers to the unseen state of existence where souls and spirits of the dead are hidden from the living," and on page 71 he says, "Both righteous and unrighteous are there until the final resurrection." But on page 64 he said our spirits returns to God and are now present with the Lord in Heaven and when Jesus returns He will bring our spirits from Heaven. (1) Are spirits now in sheol unto the resurrection, (2) or now in Heaven before the resurrection? Many that believe there is now an immortal soul/spirit that is in us have the same confusion on where souls now are.

**HADES IN THE NEW TESTAMENT** (Used 11 times). The Greek word hades in the New Testament corresponds to sheol in the Old Testament. Hades is used in the Septuagint Version, a translation of the Old Testament into Greek, sixty of the sixty-five times where sheol is used. It is used in the New Testament in most translations when the Old Testament is quoted (Psalm 16:10; Acts 2:27). **Hades does not have any reference to a soul being in anyone in any of the eleven passages where it is used. Nor does hades have any reference to torment in Hell.** An examination of every passage where hades is used in the New Testament shows that not one of them says anything about everlasting conscious torment, or of eternal punishment. Not a one of them says anything about what will be after the Judgment Day. Hades is to be emptied at the resurrection at the second coming of Christ; therefore, it is only temporary, and it could not be an eternal place where God will torment all souls that were in the lost without end as it is in the King James Version.

- Hades used with reference to the death of Christ (3 passages)
- Hades used with reference to death (1 passage)
- Hades used with reference to the destruction of cities or nations (2 passages)
- Hades in the symbolic passages (5 passages)

### **HADES IN THE THREE PASSAGES THAT HAS REFERENCE TO THE DEATH OF CHRIST:**

(1) Matthew 16:18 *"And I say also unto you, that you are Peter, and upon this rock I will build my church: and the gates of **Hell** (grave—hades) shall not prevail against it."* *"And the gates of **hades** shall not prevail against it"* New King James Version. The grave is pictured as a fortified city with gates as many cities at that time had; the believers were told pray that their flight be not on a Sabbath for then the gates of the city would be closed and would hold them in (Matthew 24:20). The fortified gates of death were unable to hold Christ in the grave, unable to keep Christ from building His church, His death and the grave will *"not prevail against it"*—the church, which is all that are in Christ. Just as death was not able to hold Christ, it will be unable to hold the dead in Christ, they will be resurrected and have the victory over death. Only the church, those who are in Christ will not suffer the second death; the second death will not prevail against Christians.

J. W. McGARVEY, "Death shall neither destroy the organic church which is in the world, nor the members thereof which go down into the grave." *The Fourfold Gospel*, Standard Publishing Company, page 412.

- *"And the gates of **Hell** shall not prevail against it"* King James.
- *"And the gates of **hades** shall not prevail against it"* New King James.

Which translation do you believe? There is no way that both could be right. **According to today's theology Hell and hades are two entirely different places**, but these two translations are in conflict with each other on the place all through the New Testament.

(2) Acts 2:27 *"Because you will not leave my soul in **Hell** (grave—hades), neither will you suffer your Holy One to see corruption."* Hades is the Greek translation of the Hebrew sheol. In Acts 2:27, hades is a translation of sheol from Psalm 16:10. Only the King James Version translates hades into Hell. Most translations, even the New King James Version, have not translated hades into Hell. Many would not translate it; therefore, left the Greek word untranslated in the English translation. This does not help the English reader who does not know Greek; but it was left not translated in many versions of the Bible because those who believe a soul is immortal and believe in Hell do not want neither sheol in the Old Testament, or hades in the New Testament to be translated.

- In Acts 2:29 *"tomb"* is used as a synonym to *"hades"* in verse 27. *"Sepulcher"* in King James Version.

(3) Acts 2:31 *"He seeing this before spoke of the resurrection of Christ, that his soul (psukee) was not left in **Hell** (the grave—hades); neither did his flesh see*

corruption." "That His soul was not left in **hades**" New King James Version. This is a quotation of Psalm 16:10. If His soul (Hebrew—nehphesh—Greek—psukee) "was not left in **hades** (the grave)," then His soul, the part of Him that cannot die according to those who say a soul is immortal, was in the grave (hades), if not, it could not have been left in the grave or taken out of the grave, if Christ was never in the grave He was never dead; therefore, this passages would makes no sense; if, as the King James Version and many teach, Christ was alive in "Hell" He was never dead and there was no resurrection.

Christ was resurrected and did not see corruption, but David did; David *"both died and were buried, and his tomb is with us unto this day"* (Acts 2:29). If David were living at this time, and he was not in the tomb then Peter had no point or argument, and what he said had no meaning. *"From the day that the fathers fell asleep"* 2 Peter 3:4. This shows that David is still asleep, along with all other's that *"are fallen asleep"* 1 Corinthians 15:6. To say that David is not dead, or he has been raised is to say the resurrection is passed, and Christ was not the *"first fruits"* 1 Corinthians 15:20, or the *"first born"* Colossians 1:18, Revelation 1:5. To say that David was never dead is to make his resurrection impossible. Jesus was in His grave until God resurrected Him, and David will be in his grave until the resurrection. David and all who have died except Christ are still in the grave (in sheol—hades), and will be unto the Resurrection.

#### **HADES IN THE PASSAGE THAT HAS REFERENCE TO DEATH:**

(4) 1 Corinthians 15:55 *"O death (thanatos), where is your sting; **O grave** (hades), where is your victory?"* It is so obvious that a place of torment after death is not what Paul was speaking of that even the King James translators could not translate this into Hell, see Revelation 20:13-14 below. This is the only time in the King James Version that **hades** is translated grave. The New American Standard and many others translate both "thanatos" and "hades" into "death" only in this passage. *"**Death (thanatos)** is swallowed up in victory. **O death (thanatos)**, where is your victory? **O death (hades)**, where is your sting? The sting of **death (thanatos)** is sin"* (1 Corinthians 15:54-56). "Thanatos" was translated into death in many places, but this is the only time "hades" was translated "death." Why the inconsistency? Was it not because if death is only separation of a living immortal soul from God, the separated living soul could not be in the grave; if this living soul were in the grave, then it could not be in Hell where many believe it to be.

This is believed by many to be a quote from Hosea 13:14 where the King James Version translated "sheol" into "grave," not "death." *"I will ransom them from the power of the **grave** (sheol); I will redeem them from death; O death, I will be your plagues; **grave** (sheol), I will be thy destruction."*

- The whole chapter of Hosea 12 is about the nation of Israel; God redeeming the nation of Israel from captivity, restoring or resurrecting the nation, not individual Jews being resurrected from the grave then or at the second coming of Christ.
- 1 Corinthians 15:55 is speaking of the victory over death by individuals that are in Christ at the resurrection.

Neither Hosea 13:14 or 1 Corinthians 15:55 does not say anything about endless torment, or what will happen to those who are not saved. The two are not speaking of the same thing.

1. One is restoring or resurrection of a nation (living Jews) from captivity (Hosea 13:14) **and has already happened** under the Old Testament.
2. The other is resurrecting to eternal life all saved individuals that are asleep in Christ (1 Corinthians 15:55) **and will not happen unto the second coming of Christ.**

### **HADES IN THE TWO PASSAGES THAT HAS REFERENCE TO THE DESTRUCTION OF CITIES OR NATIONS:**

(5) Matthew 11:20-23 *“Then He began to denounce the cities in which most of His miracles were done, because they did not repent. ‘Woe to you, Chorazin! Woe to you, Bethsaida! For if the miracles had occurred in Tyre and Sidon, which occurred in you, they would have repented long ago in sackcloth and ashes. Nevertheless I say to you, it will be more tolerable for Tyre and Sidon in the day of judgment than for you. And you, Capernaum, which are exalted unto heaven, shall be brought down to **Hell** (grave—hades): for if the mighty works, which have been done in you, had been done in Sodom, it would have remained until this day.”* Capernaum was a city to be brought down to the grave and remain no more just as Sodom did not remain. Sodom is not now a city in Hell, it does not remain, it does not exist anyplace, it was completely destroyed. If Sodom had repented the city would have *“remained until this day”* clearly shows that the city does not now remain anyplace, not on earth or in “Hell,” Sodom completely ceased to exist.

(6) Luke 10:15 *“And you, Capernaum, which are exalted to heaven, shall be thrust down to **Hell** (grave—hades).”* They were favored more than most cities by seeing and hearing Christ *“exalted unto heaven,”* but because of their unbelief they were brought down to the grave. Capernaum ceased to exist and was covered by sand of Galilee's seashore, its grave). *“Shall go down unto Hades (grave),”* only the dead go to the grave, these cities died, they do not now exist, they are dead, not alive in Hell, just as many other cities and nations were destroyed, ceased to exist in the Old Testament. Not even those who believe in Hell believe cities or nations have gone to Heaven or Hell, yet they use this passage to prove that souls that are now in lost individuals will go to Hell at the death of the individual just as the King James translators sends Capernaum to Hell. Cities do cease to exalt (brought down to hades—the grave), as both Capernaum and Sodom have actual ceased to exist, were physically destroyed from the earth. **Just as Capernaum was never literally in Heaven, neither is it now, nor ever will be literally in torment in "Hell."** There is

nothing said about eternal torment of cities or nations, or that they will exist in Hell after they ceased to exist on earth.

*"And you, Capernaum, which are (present tense) exalted to heaven, shall be (future tense) be brought down to the grave."* I know of no one who believes Capernaum, was at the time Christ was speaking (present tense), was in Heaven with God, but this city would be (future tense) brought down to Hell to be with Satan, yet this is what this passage says as it is in the King James Version and would have to be saying if it proved "Hell." Capernaum was not literally brought down from Heaven to Hell, or to a subterranean some place under the earth, it was brought down from the high prosperously it had to the grave, it is a dead city that does not now exist anyplace. God destroyed many cities and nations in the Old Testament, brought them to an end, brought them down to the grave, past cities, or past nations are not now being tormented by God. No nation or city is to have an endless existence; therefore, no nation or city can have endless torment; it is endless destruction, not endless being destroyed but never destroyed

ALBERT BARNES, who believes in Hell, admits that in this passage Hell does not mean Hell. He said, "This does not mean that all the people should go to hell; but that the city which had flourished so prosperously, should lose its prosperity, and occupy the lowest place among cities. The word hell is used here, not to denote a place of punishment in the future world, but a state of desolation and destruction as a city" Barnes Notes on Matthew 11:23.

#### **HADES IN THE FIVE SYMBOLIC PASSAGES:**

(7) Luke 16:23 *"And in **Hell** (grave—hades) he lift up his eyes, being in torments, and seeing Abraham afar off, and Lazarus in his bosom."* This is one of the first passages many use to prove there is torment after death. See "The Intermediate Bosom" in chapter eight for notes on this parable.

(8) Revelation 1:18 *"I am he that lives and was dead; and behold, I am alive for evermore, Amen: and have the keys of **Hell** (grave—hades) and of death."* Many do not believe Hell will exist unto after the judgment, but they make Him be saying He then had the keys to a place that they do not believed existed at that time.

What this passage does not and does say:

- It dose not say that Hell exists now, or will exist after the judgment, most all who believe in Hell do not believe Christ will use the keys to open Hell and take out any who are in it. They believe that once a person is in Hell, he or she is there forever; most do not believe what is said in the King James Version.
- It does say that Christ will use the keys to take all out of the grave (hades) at the resurrection and Judgment Day.

(9) Revelation 6:8 *"And I looked, and behold a pale horse: and his name that set on him was Death, and **Hell** (grave—hades) followed with him. And power was given unto them over the fourth part of the earth, to kill with sword, and with hunger, and with death, and with the beasts of the earth."* This is a symbolic passage of a judgment on this earth where one-fourth of these on this earth was killed.

1. Some on this earth are killed with the sword.

2. Some on this earth are killed with hunger.
3. Some on this earth are killed with death.
4. Some on this earth are killed with beasts of the earth.

But to prove Hell this symbolic passage is taken out of context and made literal, but if it were literal then this killing is moved from earth to Hell, which is believed to be a place of torment after death, then it:

1. Is killing the souls in Hell by starving to death soul that are in Hell that cannot die?
2. Is killing souls in Hell with beasts of the earth, which is definitely not what anyone I know of believes. If those in Hell will be killed with the sword and with hunger, how can they be tormented forever?
3. If this were made literal, then death and Hell would have power over only one-fourth of mankind. Will the other three-fourths live forever without dying and never go to Hell? If so, then they had no need of the death of Christ to save them from death or Hell.

**Even for those who believe in Hell, it must be difficult to imagine death literally riding on a horse, and Hell, which is a place literally following the horse;** but without badly mistranslating there is nothing about Hell in Revelation 6:8. The New King James Version has hades, not Hell, following death; which do you believe, Hell or hades (grave) was following death?

- A place (Hell) following a horse—would be the same as:
- A place (New York) following a horse—only in symbolic language can a place follow a horse.
- If Hell has all the dead in it, it would be many times larger than New York, which would make it difficult for such a large place to literally be following a horse.

(10) Revelation 20:13 *"And the sea gave up the dead which were in it; and **death and Hell** (hades—footnote in King James Version says "the grave") **delivered up the dead which were in them: and they were judged every man according to their works.**"* Will the "Hell" that is taught today give up the souls that are in it? If made literal, this also would be nothing like today's theology; those in this "Hell" are dead, not alive in torment. This passage makes a distinction between: (1) The dead in the sea (2) And the dead in the grave (hades)

If hades were a place where all the dead go, the good to one side of hades (Abraham's bosom) and the lost to the other side of hades, all the dead would be in hades and none of the dead would be in the sea. Neither the Catholics or Protestant versions of Hell believe any souls will be delivered out of Hell, but the way the King James Version is translated it is undeniable that **all** souls that are in Hell do come out of Hell when this passage is mistranslated and made literal, and many do make it literal when they are trying to prove Hell is real.

(11) Revelation 20:14 *"And death and **Hell** (grave—hades) were cast into the lake of fire. This is the second death."* **Neither do most Protestants believed Hell will be cast into the lake of fire; they believe Hell is the lake of fire. If the Lake of Fire were Hell, then the King James Version would have Hell being cast into Hell,** but John says it is death and the grave that are being cast into the lake of fire,

not Hell cast into Hell. **The grave will deliver up the dead at the coming of Christ, not Hell will deliver up the undead, deathless souls that are in it.** The victory of death over mankind will have ended (See I Corinthians 15:55 above). **Most all that use this mistranslation in the King James Version do not believe what the King James Version says, that Hell will deliver up the souls that are in it, for if it did their Hell would not be eternal.** This mistranslation in the King James Version makes Hell end at the resurrection. The King James Version has: (1) Hell being cast into Hell. (2) All the dead coming out of Hell at the resurrection.

DR. GEORGE CAMPBELL: "It is very (interesting) that neither in the Septuagint version of the Old Testament, nor in the New, does the word hades convey the meaning which the present English word hell, in the Christian usage, always conveys to our minds" Diss. vi, page 181.

**A MAJOR DISAGREEMENT:** Conscious in sheol—hades, or conscious in Heaven or Hell; some believes and teach two contradictory beliefs at the same time.

**(1). Conscious in sheol—hades.** A disembodied soul in sheol that will be transmigrated back to the person it was in at the judgment. It is believed by many that sheol is a place where all souls they were in the dead go to after the death of the persons they were in, that this place is under the Earth or who knows where, but if all souls were in this place under the earth they are not in Heaven or Hell.

**(2). Or conscious in Heaven or Hell.** A living soul in Heaven or Hell, which will leave there and come back to Earth for judgment, then go back to Heaven or Hell after the judgment. If souls that were in the dead are now conscious in Heaven or Hell, they cannot now be conscious in sheol.

Both cannot be right, but I have heard preachers say one at one time, then the other at another time. Did they just forget what they had said the first time? If they prove one, they disprove the other. They spend much time and use many passages of scripture to prove both. Which one do they believe? **Many that believe the Protestant version work hard to prove there is consciousness in sheol but why? If all souls that were in the lost go directly to Hell, and those souls that were in the saved go to their eternal home in Heaven at death, then immortal souls cannot now be alive in sheol. A soul could not be in two places at the same time. If they did prove the souls of the dead are alive in sheol, they would prove that these souls are not in Hell or Heaven. Are they trying to disprove their own belief? How can they not see how inconsistent they are?**

Summary of chapter six: **To translate sheol, Gehenna, hades, or Tartarus into Hell is a total perversion of the truth, and is an intentional mistranslation. If we use it or teach it, can there be any hope for us? The God slandering doctrine of Hell is a very different gospel (Galatians 1:9). It is certainly more different than anything that was preached in Paul's time.**

## CHAPTER SEVEN

**A STRANGE AND UNEXPLAINABLE SILENCE THE SILENCE OF THE OLD TESTAMENT ON PUNISHMENT AND LIFE AFTER DEATH:** In the Old Testament the penalty for disobedience is always in this lifetime; there is no allusion made to any punishment or rewards after this lifetime. The punishments were temporal, not endless, but limited punishments, not punishments in the hereafter, but were always in this lifetime, **THE ULTIMATE PENALTY FOR SIN WAS DEATH.**

**FROM ADAM TO MOSES: (1). Adam:** God told Adam in the day **he** ate **he** would die. *"You shall not eat, for in the day that **you** eat from it **you** shall surely die"* (Genesis 2:17). The day he ate was the beginning of the dying process. The death that came into the world by Adam's sin is the same death that he died for eating, a physical death. His punishment was that he had to work to live with the earth bringing forth thorns, and dying, all the things he suffered was earthly sorrows and punishments with not a word about punishment of any kind after his death. It was not the death of a soul that was in Adam, not an inward immortal never dying something that could not die, not a deathless "soul" that would not die if Adam did eat. He was not told that after his death a "soul" that would live after he was dead would be subjected to endless torment in Hell, but endless torment is almost always read into this. There is no suggestion that a soul that was in him would never die when Adam would die. The complete silence of any punishment after death would be unthinkable if the doctrine of Hell were true.

**(2). Cain:** His sin was the first murder, which is believed by most to be the greatest of all sins. What was his punishment? Today he would be told that there is a "soul" in him that would go to Hell if Cain did not repent, but his punishment was that he, not a soul, was to be a fugitive and a vagabond in his lifetime on the earth. Not one word about any punishment after his death, neither for Cain nor for a soul that was in Cain. The punishment for anyone who killed Cain would be **seven times greater** than the punishment of Cain. If his punishment for murder was Hell, **how could anything be seven times greater than being endlessly tormented by God in the fire of the Hell that many believe in?**

**(3). The flood:** Those in the Ark were saved from the same death that those not in the Ark died, saved from drowning, saved to live the rest of their life on this earth; nothing is said about them going to Heaven. The people had become so evil that God destroyed them. Only eight persons were saved from drowning. What was the punishment of the persons that were not saved? Read the Bible, it was death. There is no mention of any punishment of souls after the death of the persons the souls were in. They were not told they had lost their souls, or that souls that were in them would go to Hell after they were dead. Their punishment was not something that would be to souls after the flood; it was the flood and the death of the persons by drowning. *"And the Lord was sorry that He had made man on the earth, and He*

was grieved in His heart. And the Lord said, 'I will **blot out man** whom I have created from the face of the land'" (Genesis 6:6-7 New American Standard). "And **all flesh died** that moved upon the earth, both birds, and cattle, and beasts, and every creeping thing that creeping that creeps upon the earth, and every man: all in whose nostrils was the breath of the spirit of life, of all that was on the dry land **died**. And every living thing was **destroyed** that was upon the face of the ground, both man, and cattle, and creeping things, and birds of the heavens; and they were **destroyed from the earth**" (Genesis 7:21-23). The same thing happened to "every man" also happened to every beast; they died, souls that were in them were not eternal tormented after they had died. If the punishment of Hell awaited all souls that were in all those who drown in the flood, the punishment of drowning that was given to them utterly pales into insignificance when it compared to an eternal life of torment for all souls in Hell, yet absolutely nothing is said to them about eternal punishment for the souls that were in the persons that drown.

"I establish my covenant with you, and with your seed after you; and with every living creature (soul—nehphesh) that is with you, the birds, the cattle, and every beast of the earth with you; of all that go out of the ark, even every beast of the earth. And I will establish my covenant with you; neither shall all flesh be cut off any more by the waters of the flood" (Genesis 9:9-11). "Every living creature," both of beast and man were destroyed, not forever tormented; the flood killed them all.

"For this they willfully forget, that there were heavens from of old, and an earth compacted out of water and amid water, by the word of God; by which means the world that then was, being overflowed with water, **perished** (apollumi)" (2 Peter 3:5-6 American Standard Version). "**Was destroyed**" New American Standard Bible. Nothing was said to them about endless torment for souls, or any kind of life or torment after death.

**(4). The destruction of Sodom and Gomorrah:** Genesis 13 and 14: These cities were literally burnt up with actual fire that was on this earth (Psalm 11:6; Isaiah 34:9), it is not still burning with the people walking around in torment. Their end was complete total destruction, and is an example of the total destruction that is coming to the ungodly at the judgment. Sodom did not just suffer a lost of "will being," but was completely and totally destroyed "by burning them to ashes and made them an example of what is going to happen to the ungodly" (2 Peter 2:6). Peter adds in the next chapter that the earth will be "burned up." The earth has been stored up for fire "being reserved against the day of judgment and destruction of ungodly men" (2 Peter 3:7-13).

**(5). Abraham:** God's promise to Abraham was, "And as for you, you shall go to your fathers in peace; you shall be buried at a good old age" (Genesis 15:15). "And Abraham breathed his last and died in a ripe old age, an old man satisfied with life; and he was gathered to his people. Then his sons Isaac and Ishmael buried him"

(Genesis 25:8-9). In no place was a soul that was in Abraham promised eternal life in Heaven, or any kind of life after Abraham's death.

**(6). From Adam to Moses:** For about twenty-five centuries, from Adam to Moses, Lot's wife, Pharaoh, building of Babel, etc., punishment was always in this life, not for souls after the death of the persons the souls had been in.

**THE LAW OF MOSES: ALL THESE BLESSING, ALL THESE CURSING:** *"Now it shall be, if you will diligently obey the Lord our God, being careful to do all His commandments which I command you today, the Lord your God will set you high above all the nations of the earth. **And all these blessing shall come upon you and overtake you, if you will obey the Lord your God"** (Deuteronomy 28:1-2). *"Moses was instructed in all the wisdom of the Egyptians"* (Acts 7:22); therefore, he knew of their teaching of some kind of life after death, but he did not put a word of it in the Law.*

**All these blessings** of the Law were for them in this lifetime, not for souls after death (Deuteronomy 28:11). **The Mosaic dispensation is altogether a dispensation of earthly rewards and punishments with not one word about blessing or cursing after their death.**

- God would set Israel high above all nations (Deuteronomy 28:1).
- Blessing in the city and in the country (Deuteronomy 28:4).
- Blessing in children, cattle, and the ground (Deuteronomy 28:5).
- Blessing in full barns (Deuteronomy 28:8).
- Blessing in all they set their hand to do (Deuteronomy 28:8).
- The Lord would establish them as a holy people to Himself (Deuteronomy 28:9).
- All nations would see and be afraid of them (Deuteronomy 28:10).
- They would abound in prosperity, in children, and the fruit of the land (Deuteronomy 28:11-12).
- They would lend to many nations and not borrow, be the head and not the tail (Deuteronomy 28:12-13).

**All these curses** of the Law if they did not keep it were on living persons before their death (Deuteronomy 28:18-19). **Not one word about a curse on souls after this lifetime.** *"But it shall come about, if you will not obey the Lord your God, to observe to do all His commandments and His statutes with which I charge you today, **that all these curses shall come upon you and overtake you"** (Deuteronomy 28:15).*

- Cursed in the city and the country (Deuteronomy 28:16).
- Cursed in your basket and kneading bowl (Deuteronomy 28:17).
- Cursed in their children, the produce of their ground, the increase of their herd (Deuteronomy 28:18).
- Cursed when they come in and when they went out (Deuteronomy 28:19).
- Confusion, rebuke, in all they did unto they were destroyed (Deuteronomy 28:20).
- Cursed with pestilence until they were consumed from the land (Deuteronomy 28:21).
- Smite with consumption, with fever, with inflammation, with fiery heat, with the sword, with blight, with mildew, and pursued unto they perished (Deuteronomy 28:22).
- The heaven over their head as bronze and the earth under them as iron (Deuteronomy 28:23).
- The rain on their land made as power and dust unto they were destroyed (Deuteronomy 28:24).

- Defeated before their enemies and their carcasses shall be food for birds (Deuteronomy 28:25-26).
- Smite with boils of Egypt, with tumors, with scab, with an itch, which cannot be healed, with blindness, madness, and bewilderment of heart (Deuteronomy 28:27-28).
- They would not prosper and would be oppressed and robbed continually (Deuteronomy 28:29).
- Their wives would be violated, and they would build a house and not live in it, plant a vineyard but not use it (Deuteronomy 28:30).
- Many more curses if they did not obey the Lord (Deuteronomy 28:31-68). Those who came out of Egypt and provoked the Lord died in the wilderness. Death was their punishment, not eternal torment for souls after their death (Numbers 14; Hebrews 3:16-19).

***"I declare unto YOU this day, that YOU shall surely perish; YOU shall not prolong YOUR days in the land...I have set before YOU***

- ***life and death,***
- ***the blessing and the curse.***

***So choose life in order that YOU may live, YOU and YOUR DESCENDANTS, by loving the Lord YOUR God, by obeying His voice, and by holding fast to Him; for this is YOUR life and the length of YOUR days, that YOU may live in the land which the Lord swore to YOUR fathers"*** (Deuteronomy 30:18-20). This is a promise to them of a long life in the land the Lord had given to them, or a short life and death if they did not keep His word, not a promise of any thing after death. *"So they, and all that appertained to them, went down alive into Sheol: and the earth closed upon them, and they perished from among the assembly"* (Numbers 16:33). *"As for ANY PERSON who does any work on this same day, THAT PERSON I will destroy from among his people"* (New American Standard Version, Leviticus 23:30). Throughout the Old Testament perish and destroy means dying, and has nothing to do with any kind of torment for souls after death. It would be past comprehension that God would give them such detail of what would happen to them in their lifetime and say nothing of the unending pain He was going to forever heap on all souls that were in them if after they were dead Hell awaited these souls. *"Let your heart keep my commandments; for length of days and years of life, and peace they will add to you"* (Proverbs 3:1-2). Israel did sin many times by leaving God and worshiping other gods, and were punished. Person did die because of sin, but nothing is ever said in the Old Testament about a deathless soul dying or being punished in any way. IT WAS ALWAYS THE PUNISHMENT OF PERSONS IN THEIR LIFE TIME, OR PUNISHMENT THE NATION.

EDWARD WHITE: "One of the first phenomena which draws attention in the Pentateuch is the omission, both in the historical and perceptive portions of it, of any mention of the immortality of the soul. If this view of man's nature were true in our time, it was true from the beginning, and true in the time of Moses. And if it were as important as it is supposed to be now, it was equally important then. Yet no single indication of it is discoverable in the writings of Moses...There is but one tolerable explanation of this silence. Moses was withheld by divine control from teaching what was not true; a doctrine which was radically opposed to the fundamental facts of man's sin and mortality, on which redemption proceeds" *Life In Christ*, Third Edition, page 148, 1878, at: <http://www.robertwr.com/LifeInChrist.htm>

The fifth commandment is the "*first commandment with promise*" (Ephesians 6:2). What was the promise? Was it that a soul would be rewarded in Heaven? No, it had nothing to do with life after death, but life on earth before death, "*That your days may be prolonged, and that it may go well with you on the land which the Lord your God gives you*" (Deuteronomy 5:16).

**UNDER THE JUDGES AND KINGS:** Both under the Judges and later under the Kings, the history of the Jews is one of rebellion against God followed by defeat and captivity. When they repented and turned back to God, they came out of exile and prospered.

THOMAS THAYER: "The entire history of the Jewish people as a nation, and as individuals, from generation to generation, shows with what exactness the threatening of the law was fulfilled in judgment. When they were obedient, the Lord prospered them, and rewarded them with fruitful seasons, with increasing wealth and power, and made them superior to their enemies. But, when they were rebellious and wicked, then followed adversity, defeat, captivity, and all the physical calamities threatened in the Law. But, all this while we have not one syllable of an endless woe, which is to be added to all the other woes. In no instance of rebellion against God, not when their corruption and idolatry were at the highest reaches of crime and blasphemy, do we find them threatened with the torments of a hell beyond the present life." "Origin And History Of The Doctrine Of Endless Punishment"

All the blessings and all the punishments of the Law were physical in their lifetime. Punishment or reward after death is not promised. For thousands of years throughout the Old Testament, God warned of punishments in this lifetime if anyone did not keep the Law, but not one warning that anyone has a "soul" in them that would "go to Hell" after they were dead. Death (mooth) is used hundreds of times, and except the few times it is used in a symbolic passage, it always means an actual physical death. The concept of Heaven is in the Old Testament, but only as the dwelling place of God (Psalm 11:4; 33:13-14), and of angels (Genesis 21:17; 22:11; 28:12). Heaven in the Old Testament was not a place where any person would ever expect to be, not a place where a soul that was in any person would live forever; there is no description or promise of a resurrection for a person to life in Heaven after death as there is in the New Testament, no promise of immortality to any individual. The God of Israel was a God who would protect them, give them blessings in this lifetime, and give them a long lifetime if they were faithful to Him, and punish them only in this lifetime if they were not. "*The dead do not praise the Lord, nor do any who go down into silence; but as for us (the living), we will bless the Lord from this time forth and forever*" (Psalm 115:17-18); today's belief of many that a soul that has gone out of a dead person goes to Heaven after the death of the person it was in cannot be read back into their beliefs; death was the end of both blessing from the Lord and praising the Lord.

The savior they looked for was **a human person like David** (not the Son of God); **a human person who would restore Israel as a nation as David did**, and he

would make Israel again be superior to other nations. When the multitudes saw Jesus make bread as Moses did (John 5:14-66) they said, *"This is of truth the Prophet who is to come into the world,"* and *"were intending to come and take Him by force, to make Him king."* When Jesus made known unto them that He had not come to set up a political kingdom of Israel, but His kingdom was an entirely different kind of kingdom, *"As a result of this many of His disciples withdrew, and were not walking with Him anymore"* (John 6:66). He was not the earthly king they were looking for that they thought would restore the earthly kingdom of Israel. Even after His death and resurrection, His apostles still thought the Christ they and all Israel looked for would restore the nation of Israel to their land and rule national Israel in his lifetime, that He would be a human king only of Israel only in his lifetime as David had been (Acts 1:6). **A resurrection to immortality and life in Heaven was a new teaching by Christ (2 Timothy 1:10), and was unknown in the Old Testament.** The word resurrection is used forty-one times in the New Testament, but not once in the Old Testament.

One of the great difficulties with the eternal torment view is the profound silence of the Old Testament about it. How could God have warned Israel in detail about punishments in this life, droughts, plagues, and other punishments, and not say one word about an eternal Hell which would be the worst of all punishments? The **total silence** of the Old Testament for thousands of years about endless torment for souls is proof that it does not exist. ***"I will sing...while I have my being"* Psalm 145:2.** Hebrew dualism, saying the same thing in two ways.

- *"I will praise the Lord while I live"*
- *"I will sing praises to my God while I have my being"*

To live was to have being, not to live, to be dead was to not have being.

***"In my flesh shall I see God"* Job 19:25-27.** The question in the King James Version, *"shall I see God"* is changed to a statement in the New International Version, *"I will see God."* In "Reason and Revelation" May 2000, Dr. Bert Thompson used this question that Job asked to prove a person has a soul in him or her that will live after the death of the person that soul was in. If I understand Dr. Thompson right, he is saying Job said without his body he would see God. Job said, *"Even after my skin is destroyed, yet in my flesh I shall see God; whom I myself shall behold, and whom my eyes shall see and not another."* He is reading into this passage that Job is saying he has a immaterial something living in him that cannot die, and reading in that it is not Job, but only this immaterial no substance something that was in Job that will see God.

*"Yet in my flesh shall I see God"* King James Version

*"Yet in my flesh I will see God"* New International Version

*"Then in my flesh I shall see God"* New Revised Standard Version

After the resurrection when the saved shall see God they will not be in the flesh, *"It is sown a natural body (in the flesh); it is raised a spiritual body"* (1 Corinthians

15:44; 1 Thessalonians 4:15-16). After the resurrection the saved will see God in a spiritual body, not see God in their flesh, neither will Job.

**What was Job really saying?** Job and his three friends were unaware of the decisions made between God and Satan to let Satan tempt Job, as we know now when we read this book. Job had much but lost everything, and his friends and wife was telling him it was because he had sinned, and he was then in his life time being punished for, as it is taught in the Law, God punished those that sinned and rewarded those that keep His word. Much of Job's book is made up of speeches by his three friends accusing Job of sin because of what had happened to him, and that he was at that time being punished for something he had done, and Job's response to those accusing him of sin. They had no revelation of punishment after death, and his three friends said nothing to him about any punishment after his death; the only punishment they said anything about was the punishment they thought Job was already receiving at that time for something they thought he had did. Earlier in Job's third response he had said, *"For there is hope for a tree, when it is cut down, that it will sprout again, and its shoots will not fail. Though its roots grow old in the ground, and its stump dies in the dry soil, at the scent of water it will flourish and put forth sprigs like a plant."* For a tree that has been cut down Job sees hope that it will live again. *"But man dies and lies prostrate. Man expires, and where is he? As water evaporates from the sea, and a river becomes parched and dried up, so man lies down and does not rise. Until the heavens be no more, he will not awake nor be aroused out of his sleep."* He sees hope of life for a tree cut down, but for a person he sees no hope of life (Job 14:7-12). In Job's time, what would be understood by *"until the heavens be no more"*? In the Old Testament the heavens were thought to be forever, their end was not known about; there was no revelation that God would ever destroy the heavens or the earth. See Psalm 89:29, 148:6. In his hopelessness he could see hope for a tree cut down, but for person after death he could see no hope *"until the heavens be no more,"* which he may have thought would never be, he could not see an end to the heavens; therefore, never any hope of life after death. This is one of the many expressions of hopelessness that are throughout his speeches. He sees a person as dead, not as being alive.

In his fifth speech in chapter 19, Job seems to be at his lowest level of hope, but in his hopelessness he may see a ray of hope. *"And as for me, I know that my Redeemer lives, and at the last He will take His stand on the earth."* His Redeemer shall manifest Himself as Job's vindicator; there is nothing said about any resurrection. Many see Christ as being the redeemer Job was speaking of, but there is no revelation that had been given at this time from which Job could know about Christ being the redeemer, no one at that would never have thought that God his redeemer would ever leave Heaven and come down to this earth as Christ did. God was seen as the redeemer and deliverer of those that kept His law, Christ and the

Holy Spirit being God had not been revealed to them. See Psalm 19:14; 78:35; Proverbs 23:11; Jeremiah 50:34. Over and over Israel sinned, and went into bondage and God their Redeemer delivered them when they repented. Even in the time of Christ, the Jews thought their Christ would be a man like David, a redeemer of their nation from Rome, not a redeemer of individuals from eternal death.

R. L. HARRIS, as quoted by Homer Hailey said, "The primary meaning of the root [ga'al, to redeem; go'el, redeemer] is to do the part of a kinsman and thus to redeem his kin from difficulty or danger...There is the very common usage prominent in the Psalms and the prophets that God is Israel's Redeemer who will stand up for His people and vindicate them." "A Commentary On Job," Religious Supply, Inc. page 176.

*"Even after my skin is destroyed, yet **in my flesh** I shall see God,"* King James Version. JAMES BURTON COFFMAN, "The proper rendition here is, '**in my flesh**, I shall see God,' as properly rendered in the AV, the new RSV, and in the Douay," "Job" page 175, Abilene Christian University Press.

If it is an immortal soul that was in Job that goes to Heaven it would not be Job "*in my flesh*" that sees God. Job will not see God in his flesh at the resurrection, the dead will be raised immortal, and the living will put on immortality and be caught up to meet the Lord in the air (1 Thessalonians 4:17); the changed Job that has put on immortality will see God after the resurrection, but not Job or any person while they are in the flesh will literally see God.

The Revised English Bible translates this passage, "*But I know that vindicator lives and that he will rise last to speak in court: I shall discern my witness standing at my side and see my defending counsel, even God himself, whom I shall see with my own eyes, I myself and no other.*" Is the fulfillment of this after God his redeemer had delivered and vindicated Job? (Job 42:5), "*I know of you only by report, but now I see you with my own eyes, therefore I yield, repenting in dust and ashes*" The Revised English Bible. His three friends and his wife accused Job of sin, but he knows he had not sinned, and God, his redeemer, lived and Job know that in the end he would be vindicated. In the end of the book of Job God his redeemer vindicated him, and Job saw God standing at his side while he was "*in my flesh.*" "Day" in the King James Version is not in the Hebrew, it was added by the translators. "*And the Lord blessed the latter days of Job more than beginning, he had 14,000 sheep, and 6,000 camels, and 1,000 female yoke of oxen, and 1,000 female donkeys. And he had seven sons and three daughters. And he named the first Jemimah, and the second Keziah, and the third Keren—happuch. And in all the land no women were found so fair as Job's daughters; and their father gave them inheritance among their brothers. And after this Job lived 140 years, and saw his sons, and his grandsons, four generations. And Job died, and old man and full of days*" (Job 42:12-17). God his defending counsel and redeemer had vindicated him while he was in his flesh.

"O Lord, You did plead my soul's (nehphesh) case; You have redeemed my life" (Lamentations 3:58). This was said while the writer was living. Just as with Job, God

was his defending counsel and delivered him; Israel sinned over and over but when they repented God their redeemer stood by their side and vindicated them.

It is difficult to read Job and the Old Testament and not read into it things that were not made known unto the New Testament, or things that we have been taught by the theologies of today that are not in the Bible. The concept of Heaven is in the Old Testament, but only as a place where God and angels are, not as a place where the just would ever be, not a place where any person would live forever. Job would never have said he or any person would be in Heaven; the resurrection and immortal life in Heaven was not made known before Christ made it known. All the rewards and punishments in the Old Testament were in this lifetime, not after death. The teaching of Christ cannot be read into the words of Job, Daniel, or anyone in the Old Testament.

Job or no one will literally see God while they are in the flesh; the nearest anyone has come to seeing God was Moses when he saw God's backside, but not His face (Exodus 33:20-23; see Exodus 3:6). The dead are sown with a natural body and raised with a spiritual body (1 Corinthians 15:44) in a moment (1 Corinthians 15:52). Immortality was brought to light through the gospel (2 Timothy 1:10), Job did not have the gospel; Job could not have known anything about life in Heaven without end after death.

*“Even after my skin is destroyed, yet in my flesh I shall see God”* (Job 19:26). In the light that no person has ever seen God, this seems to be saying after his afflicted skin that was covered with boils will have been destroyed by being replaced with a un-afflicted skin without boils as it later was, yet in his flesh he would see God as his redeemer and vindicator standing by his side. If this were speaking of seeing God at the Judgment Day he would be saying his earthly body would be resurrected.

ALBERT BARNES: His notes on this are many pages; I have taken excerpts from what he says, read all he says if you have his book. “For I know that my Redeemer liveth’—There are few passages in the Bible which have excited more attention than this, or in respect to which the opinions of expositors have been more divided. ...The Hebrew word, גֹּאֵל ga'al, is from גָּאֵל ga'al, 'to redeem, to ransom.' It is applied to the redemption of a farm sold, by paying back the price, Lev 25:25; Rut 4:4; Rut 4:6 to anything consecrated to God that is redeemed by paying its value, Lev 27:13 and to a slave that is ransomed, Lev 25:48-49. The word גּוֹאֵל go'el, is applied to one who redeems a field, Lev 25:26; **and is often applied to God, who had redeemed his people from bondage**, Exo 6:6; Isa 43:1...**The meaning of this word would be met, should it be understood as referring to God, coming forth in a public manner to vindicate the cause of Job against all the charges and accusations of his professed friends**; or to God...‘I know that my Redeemer live's,' he will have peace. And that he shall stand—He will stand up, as one does that undertakes the cause of another...**There is clearly no necessary reference in this word to the resurrection. The simple meaning is, ‘he shall appear, or manifest himself, as the vindicator of my cause’**...At the latter day—The word ‘day’ here is supplied by the translators... The meaning is, that however long he was to suffer, however protracted his calamities were, and were likely to be, he had the utmost confidence that God would at length, or at some future time, come forth to

vindicate him. The phrase, 'the latter day,' has now acquired a kind of technical meaning, by which we naturally refer it to the day of judgment. But there is no evidence that it has any such reference here...The words does not necessarily imply any visible manifestation, though such a manifestation would not be forbidden by the fair construction of the passage. I say they do not necessarily imply it" Job, pages 324—328, Baker Book House, 1955.

**WHAT ABOUT ENOCH AND ELIJAH? Did they ascend into Heaven without and before the resurrection?** ELIJAH: 2 Kings 2:9-18. There are three heavens spoken of the Bible.

- (1). First heaven, the air around us, "The birds of heaven," and "The dew of heaven."
- (2). Second heaven(s), the heavens that God created in Genesis 1:1, where the stars are. Often in the plural, "*The heavens declare the glory of God; and the firmament shows his handy work*" (Psalms 19:1).
- (3). Third Heaven, where the throne of God is.

A whirlwind is in the first heaven, it picks up things from the earth and always puts them back down on the earth; it never takes anything into the second or third heaven. Elijah was moved from a place of danger on this earth to another place on this earth. The sons of the prophets thought that God had used the whirlwind to move Elijah to the mountains, or some valley and wanted to go look for him (2 Kings 2:16). Elisha know before hand that God was going to move Elijah (2 Kings 2:9), and knew that God had moved Elijah to a safe place, and he did not want prophets who were at Jericho to go look for him. They thought he had been cast by the whirlwind "*on some mountain or into some valley*" (2 Kings 2:16), they may have thought he would be in need of help. Neither Elisha nor the prophets thought Elijah was in Heaven; the prophets looked for him on this earth where they thought the whirlwind would have taken him, "*Fifty men searched three days but did not find him*" (2 Kings 2:17). Elisha did not tell the prophets that Elisha was in Heaven, and they surely would not have sent fifty men looking for him if they thought he was up in Heaven; it is beyond doubt that Elisha and the prophets thought the whirlwind had put Elijah down someplace on earth, not that it took him up to Heaven; a whirlwind does not take anyone to the third Heaven.

Thirteen years after the whirlwind had taken him up a letter came from Elijah the prophet to King Jehoram who was not a king when the whirlwind took Elisha away (2 Chronicles 21:10-12; 2 kings 8:16-17); there was no mail deliver from Heaven.

**It was Elisha the person that was taken away by the whirlwind, not an immaterial soul or a spirit that was in him that was taken to Heaven by a whirlwind.** Those that believe there is an immaterial soul in a person that leaves that person at their dead do not believe an immaterial soul can be taken anyplace by a whirlwind; it was his mantle (2 Kings 2:14) that fell from his body (not fell from his soul) when he (his body) was up in the air. **Nothing is said about Elijah while he was alive in the flesh, or about a soul being translated to Heaven without the person it was in dying.** As has already been said about many other passages, this

passage say nothing about a soul, but it is repeatedly used to prove a soul that had been in Elisha went to Heaven at that time, not that that a flesh and blood person was literally taken to Heaven by a whirlwind.

F. LAGARD SMITH, "The ancients of Elijah's day would not have known of 'heaven' as we know it from later Scripture." "After Life, A Glimpse of Eternity Beyond Death's Door," page 108, David Lipscomb University. A person going to the third Heaven was unknown in the Old Testament; they would never have thought anyone could literally go up to Heaven.

If this were saying God took Elijah to Heaven it makes the Bible contradict the Bible. According to the teaching of many,

- God took Elijah to Heaven.
- But no man has ascended into Heaven but Christ (John 3:13).
- Therefore: if Elijah went to Heaven the Bible contradicts the Bible.

To put it in syllogistic form:

1. Elijah was a man.
2. No man has ascended into Heaven but Christ (John 3:13).
3. Therefore: Elijah has not ascended into Heaven.

In the New Testament, the Spirit of the Lord caught away Philip (Acts 8:39-40), but after Philip was *caught away* from the Eunuch he, "*Found himself at Azotus; and as he passed through he kept preaching the gospel to all*" (Acts 8:40).

**ENOCH:** Genesis 5:21-24: "*Enoch lived sixty-five years, and became the father of Methuselah. Then Enoch walked with God three hundred years after he became the father of Methuselah, and he had other sons and daughters. So all the days of Enoch were three hundred and sixty-five years. Enoch walked with God; and he was not, for God took him.*" Took him where and how? This is used by some to teach that (1) God took Enoch, the person, to Heaven; (2) by others that God took a soul that had been in Enoch to Heaven.

- "*And he was not.*" What does that mean? If taken purely literal then it is saying Enoch did not exist after that, but no one I know of believes that.
- "*For God took him.*" Took him where? To Heaven is added. It says God took Enoch, somehow, someplace, not that God took a soul that was in Enoch to Heaven; does anyone believe God took the flesh and blood body of Enoch to Heaven? Most that believe there is a soul in a person believe that only that soul, not the person goes to Heaven; therefore, Enoch the person could not have went to Heaven.

Genesis 5:

1. Adam died, verse 5.
2. Seth died, verse 8.
3. Enosh died, verse 9.
4. Kenan died, verse 14.
5. Mahalalel died, verse 17.
6. Jared died, verse 20.
7. Enoch was not... God took him, verse 24.
8. Methuselah died, verse 27.
9. Lamech died, verse 31.

When these died their bodies existed where they died. Is this saying Enoch's body did not exist on earth for God took a body of flesh to Heaven?

The word that is translated “was translated” in Hebrews 11:5 is “metatitheemi.” It is used only six times in the New Testament.

1. “And **were carried** (metatitheemi) over into Sychem” Acts 7:16.
2. “That you are so soon **removed** (metatitheemi) from him” Galatians 1:6.
3. “The priesthood **being changed** (metatitheemi)” Hebrews 7:12.
4. “By faith Enoch **was translated** (metatitheemi)” Hebrews 11:5.
5. “Because God **had translated** (metatitheemi) him” Hebrews 11:5.
6. “**Turning** (metatitheemi) the grace of our God into” Jude 4.

Has Enoch or anyone already been taken to Heaven?

1. “No one has ascended into heaven, but He who descended from heaven, even the Son of Man” (John 3:13).
2. “No man has seen God at any time” (John 1:18). Has Enoch been in Heaven all this time and has not seen God? According to the immortal soul teaching thousands have gone to Heaven at death; have none of them seen God?
3. Peter says of David, “That he both died and was buried...for David ascended not into the heavens” (Acts 2:29-34).
4. “But now has Christ been raised from the dead, **the first—fruits of them that ARE ASLEEP...in Christ shall all be made alive. But each in his own order: Christ the first fruits, then they that are Christ’s at His coming**” (1 Corinthians 15:20-23).
5. Jesus “abolished death, and brought life and immortality to light through the gospel” (2 Timothy 1:10). Neither eternal life, nor any person going to Heaven was known about in the Old Testament.
6. “For in Adam all die” (1 Corinthians 15:22). Enoch is a part of the “all” that die in Adam.
7. Hebrews 11:4-13 list five people and in verse 13 says, “These **ALL DIED** in faith.”
  - o Abel “**died in faith**” Hebrews 11:4.
  - o Enoch “**died in faith**” Hebrews 11:5.
  - o Noah “**died in faith**” Hebrews 11:7.
  - o Abraham “**died in faith**” Hebrews 11:8.
  - o Sarah “**died in faith**” Hebrews 11:11.
  - o “These **ALL DIED** in faith” verse 13. All five that were named in verses 5-11 all five “**died in faith.**” Not only four of the five, but all five “**died in faith.**”

**To say that the Bible say Enoch has ascended into Heaven is to make the Bible contradict the Bible.** No person has yet gone to Heaven and will not before the resurrection and judgment. See “BUT AS TOUCHING THE RESURRECTION OF THE DEAD” Matthew 22:31-33 in chapter one.

**A common destiny for all:** “For I have taken all this to my heart and explain it that righteous men, wise men, and their deeds are in the hand of God. Man does not know whether it will be love or hatred; anything awaits him. It is the same for all. **There is one fate (1)** for the righteous and for the wicked; **(2)** for the good, for the clean and for the unclean; **(3)** for the man who offers a sacrifice and for the one who does not sacrifice. **(4)** As the good man is, so is the sinner; **(5)** as the swearer is, so is the one who is afraid to swear. This is an evil in all that is done under the sun, that there is **one fate for all men.** Furthermore, the hearts of the sons of men are full of evil and insanity is in their hearts throughout their lives. Afterwards they go to the

*dead. For whoever is joined with all the living, there is hope; surely a live dog is better than a dead lion. (1) For the living know they will die; (2) but the dead do not know anything, (3) nor have they any longer a reward, for their memory is forgotten. (4) Indeed their love, their hate, and their zeal have already perished, (5) and they will no longer have a share in all that is done under the sun. Go then, eat your bread in happiness, and drink your wine with a cheerful heart, for God has already approved your works. Let your clothes be white all the time, and let not oil be lacking on your head. Enjoy life with the woman whom you love all the days of your fleeting life which He has given to you under the sun; for this is your reward in life and in your toil in which you have labored under the sun. Whatever your hand finds to do, do it with all your might; for there is no activity or planning or knowledge or wisdom **in sheol where you are going**" (Ecclesiastes 9:1-10).*

The revelation given in the Old Testament was that those who kept God's word would have a long life without any of the curses given by Moses for those who did not keep His word. As there was no revelation given of a resurrection of the dead to immortality in Heaven, the writer of Ecclesiastes is telling it as it was revealed to them, after death it was the same for all, all go to the grave, not one went to Heaven (John 3:13), not even David (Acts 2:34).

HASTINGS' DICTIONARY OF THE BIBLE: "The idea of a life to come is in many portions of the OT (is) conspicuous by its absence. **There is nothing anywhere that will compare with the NT conception of 'eternal life'**" page 546.

JEWISH ENCYCLOPEDIA: "The belief that the soul continues its existence after the dissolution of the body is a matter of philosophical or theological speculation rather than of simple faith, and **is accordingly nowhere expressly taught in Holy Scripture**" "Immortality of the Soul," Kaufmann Kohler, Volume 6, page 566.

INTERNATIONAL STANDARD BIBLE ENCYCLOPEDIA: "We are influenced always more or less by the Greek, Platonic idea that the body dies, yet the soul is immortal. **Such an idea is...nowhere found in the Old Testament**" Volume 2, page 812, 1960.

WICKEPEDIA ENCYCLOPEDIA: "The concept of an immaterial soul separate from and surviving the body is common today but **was not found in ancient Hebrew beliefs.**"

W. T. BERGER: "For man to endure unending pain (characterized by fire) is a doctrine so awful to contemplate, that it is reasonable to conclude it would be revealed to man from the beginning, and so revealed that he could by no possibility misapprehend the consequences of sinning against his Maker; and we might expect to find the terrible sentence reiterated from time to time throughout the Scriptures, especially upon occasions of aggravated sin and wickedness" *The Wages Of Sin And Everlasting Punishment*, 1886.

WALTER BALFOUR: "First. If their belief was the same as in our day, why did they never express themselves as people now do in books, sermons, and common conversation? No one can deny the wide difference in the language used, or that the difference is proof that the new language had its origin in new views concerning the future. An unscriptural doctrine always give rise to unscriptural language; for the words of Scripture are the very best which could be chosen to express the will of God to man. If the doctrine were of God, the words of Scripture would be sufficient to express it. As we do not find this new phraseology in the Bible, we infer that the doctrine it was introduced to teach is not there. Second. **How is it to be accounted for that the**

**fears and feeling and exertions of good people, under the old dispensation, were so different from the fears and feelings and exertions of Christians in our day, about saving men from hell? I do not find that they express any fear of hell, and it is fair to conclude that they had none.** I find no examples of their fears about their children, their relations, their neighbors, or the world at large, going to eternal misery. As to their feelings, I do not find a sigh heaved, a tear shed, a groan uttered, a prayer offered, or any exertions made, as if they believed men were exposed to endless misery. We see parents, and others, deeply affected at the loss of their children and friends by death; we see pious people grieved on account of their disobedience to God's laws; but we find no expression of feeling arising from the belief that such persons would lift up their eyes in endless misery. Now, is it not strange that all this should be the state of the fears and feelings of good people, if they believed such misery was to be the portion of the wicked? The whole race of mankind was swept from the earth by a flood, Noah and his family excepted; but does this good man deplore, in any shape, that as many precious souls should be sent to hell? God also destroyed the cities of the plain. Abraham interceded that they might be spared, but used no argument with God that the people might not go to hell to suffer eternal misery. If Abraham believed this doctrine, it is possible he should have failed to urge it as an argument that all those wicked persons must go to hell, if God destroyed them? No notice is taken of the very argument, which, in our day, would be most urged in prayer to God, if anything similar was to take place. All who have read the Old Testament know what vast numbers were cut off in a day, by war and pestilence, and other means; yet do you ever hear it deplored by a single individual, as is often done in our day, that so many were sent out of the world to eternal misery? If, in short, this doctrine was then believed, a dead silence and the most stoical apathy were maintained even by good men about it...Under the Old Testament dispensation the sinful condition of the heathen nations is often spoken of. But do we ever find the inspired writers representing those nations as all going to eternal misery, or did they use similar exertions to save them from it as are used in the present day? If the doctrine of eternal misery was known and believed in those days, is it not unaccountable that so many ages should pass away before God commanded the gospel to be preached to every creature, and before those who knew their danger should use exertions to save them from it? If the doctrine be false, we may cease to wonder at this; but if it be true, it is not easy to reconcile these things with the well known character of God, and the feelings of every good man. What an immense multitude of human beings, during four thousand years, must have lived and died ignorant that such a place of misery awaited them!" "An Inquiry Into The Scriptural Import Of The Words, Sheol, Hades, Tartarus And Gehenna" 1854.

The Law of Moses offered no atonement of reconciliation, if it had, the death of Jesus would not have been needed. Then Jesus, our High Priest, would not have presented his sacrifice to the Father, and would not have brought both **(1) "life"** and **(2) "immortality"** to light through the Gospel (2 Timothy 1:10); a resurrection of a person to life after death and immortality was not revealed in the Old Testament. Life beyond death that Christ gives to those that obey Him was not known about before He came; if it had been known before Christ, He would not have been the one that brought it to light. Eternal life and immortality are not inherent by birth, or did not come by the Law, but they came: **(1) "Through Jesus Christ"** (Romans 6:23; 5:21) **(2) "Through the gospel"** (2 Timothy 1:10)

A MYSTERY: In Paul's writing a mystery was something that was not known, but is now known. The church in which both Jews and Gentiles are both reconciled to

God in one body was a mystery that was *“hidden from the past ages and generations, but has now been manifested to His saints”* (Colossians 1:25-28); nothing about the church was known about in the Old Testament, but is now known; it was not known that the Gentiles that the Jews looked down on would be *“fellow—heirs, and fellow—members of the body, and fellow—partakers of the promise in Christ Jesus through the gospel”* (Ephesians 3:3-7). They looked for a person like David to restore the kingdom of Israel, as David did in his lifetime, but thought He would be a mortal person that would also die just as David did. Paul speaks often of this mystery that was not known before Christ, but is now known (Romans 11:25; 16:25; 1 Corinthians 2:7; 15:51; Ephesians 1:9; 3:3; 3:4; 3:9; 5:32; 6:19; Colossians 1:26; 1:27; 2:2; 4:3; 2 Thessalonians 2:7; 1 Timothy 3:16). A part of the mystery, the gospel, that was not known, but is now known that there will be a resurrection of the dead to immortality, a resurrection to endless life in Heaven, that some will sleep, and at the coming of Christ will be resurrected, be changed to a new immortal body, and some will not sleep but will be alive at His coming, and they too will be changed to an immortal body (1 Corinthians 15:50-53) was a mystery that was *“hidden from past ages and generations,”* but made known in the Christian age. *“But we speak God’s wisdom in a mystery, the hidden wisdom which God predestined before the ages to our glory; the wisdom which none of the rulers of this age has understood; for if this age had understood it, they would not have crucified the Lord of glory; but just as it is written, ‘Things which eye has not seen and ear has not heard, and which have not entered the heart of man, all that God has prepared for those who love Him,’ For to us God revealed them through the spirit”* (1 Corinthians 2:7-10). The resurrection to eternal life in Heaven is a part of the mystery not revealed in the Old Testament, but God has now revealed it to us.

Kenny Boles, a teacher at Ozark Christian College in “The Life to Come” page 271, College Press, quotes a number of passages, and says these references portray sheol as simple the place of the dead. He changes “grave” (“graves” when speaking of the graves of all the dead) from many graves in many places, to just one place where all the dead are at, which he called the place of the dead. It seems that he is putting all the dead in one place (one grave); does he think they are not completely dead (wherever he thinks that place of the dead to be)? Is he saying a person is in two sheols, one grave where the body is after death, and another grave inside of the earth where something other than the body is at after death; or does he think souls are alive in this place of the dead, which would be a second sheol? “The place of the dead” is not a translation of “sheol,” and is not in the Bible, where did he get it from, what is he trying to prove by it? On page 275 he says the destruction throughout the Old Testament came in the form of physical death, and that this destruction by physical death is a preview of an eternal life of torment in Hell!!! Death is a preview of life!!! How could death in any way be a preview of an eternal life of

torment? Both adding some kind of existence or life after death, and making the death that all die, both the saved and the lost be a preview of an eternal life of torment in the Old Testament is nothing but a week attempt to prove both (1) an immortal soul that lives after the death of the person it was in, (2) and an attempt to prove Hell to be taught in the Old Testament.

Summary: **Old Testament reward or punishment.**

1. ***"If you consent and obey, you will eat of the best of the land:***
2. ***But if you refuse and rebel, you will be devoured by the sword"*** (Isaiah 1:19-20).

**From the first page to the last page of the Old Testament, God warns no one of an eternal life of torment after death if they were not faithful to Him; in the entire Old Testament it is not one time said that when a person an animal dies that a soul (nehphesh) that was in either one will go to Heaven, or have any kind of life after death.** If God inflicted a punishment on those under the Old Testament, which those under it were never told would be the wages of their sins, a punishment of eternal suffering for all souls that was in them after they were dead, when in *"the law given through Moses"* (John 1:17) God warned only of punishment in this life time, but said nothing about eternal punishment, and nothing about a Hell where He was going to eternally torment all souls that had been in the lost, then would He not be inflicting a punishment unjustly?

**Between the Testaments:** There was about 400 years between the Old and New Testaments in which the Jews came into contact with many pagan teaching, and some writers use many pages on the influence of these writing on the New Testament. Whatever some of the Jews may or may not have believed about the pagan immortal soul, it had no influence on the revelation that came from God in neither the Old nor New Testaments. The Pharisees believed in some form of a pagan resurrection, but it was not the resurrection of the whole person to life in Heaven in the ages to come that was brought to light by Christ; Matthew 22:28 point to them believing in a resurrection back to life on this earth as it now is where there would be husbands, wives, and children, a resurrection to life as it now is. Some forms of immortality of something that is in a person that would live in the under world after the death of the person it is in is taught in pagan writing and some of the writing between the Testaments, but none of the writing by uninspired persons between the Testaments or any other time dose not have any influence on what is taught in the Old Testament or the New Testament. It was not unto years after the New Testament that some of the so—called "church fathers" brought this and other uninspired pagan teaching into the church. It is a very long way from the teaching of the Old Testament of all going to the grave (sheol) where there is no knowledge, no life, or worship of God, *"No activity or planning or wisdom"* (Ecclesiastes 9:10), and the New Testament teaching of Christ on immortality—life without end in Heaven.

### **The silence of the New Testament on eternal tormented by God after death.**

Just as there is nothing in the Old Testament about God eternally tormenting after death, there is nothing in the New Testament. A resurrection and immortality for those in Christ is taught that were not known about before being made known by Christ. A resurrection and judgment followed by the second death is also new to the New Testament, and they were not known about under the Old Testament.

Today, those who believe in Hell are always warning unbelievers about a soul going to Hell if they do not believe. Acts covers about thirty years of preaching, but not one time is anything said about Hell. Paul said he did not keep back anything that was profitable (Acts 20:20), and that he declared the whole counsel of God (Acts 20:27), yet he did not say anything about Hell in any of his letters. In about thirty years of preaching to many in many countries, he never told anyone that they had an immortal something in them, and whatever this something is believed to be would be, it will forever be tormented by God in Hell if they did not believe. Why? He certainly would not have omitted such a doctrine as Hell. Today it is preached as a most profitable teaching, and is believed that the fear of Hell will keep many going to church. Paul did not declare anything about Hell for the same reason he did not declare anything about Purgatory; there are no such places; he did use and apply to the lost words like destruction, death, destroy, consume, burned, devour, end, and perish many times.

PAUL: The whole counsel of God declared by Paul.

- *“Those who practice such things are **worthy of death**”* (Romans 1:32).
- *“All who have sinned without the Law **will also perish** without the Law”* Romans 2:12).
- *“You are slaves of the one whom you obey, either of **sin resulting in death**, or of obedience resulting in righteousness”* (Romans 6:16).
- *“For **the outcome of these things is death**”* (Romans 6:21).
- *“For the **wages of sin is death**”* (Romans 6:23).
- *“For if you are living according to the flesh, **you must die**”* (Romans 8:13).
- *“For the word of the cross is to **those who are perishing** foolishness”* (1 Corinthians 1:18).
- *“For we are a fragrance of Christ to God among those who are being saved and **among those who are perishing**: to the one an aroma **from death to death**, to the other an aroma from life to life”* (2 Corinthians 2:15-16).
- *“And even if our gospel is veiled, it is veiled to **those who are perishing**”* (2 Corinthians 4:3).
- *“The one who sows to please his sinful nature, from that nature **will reap destruction**”* (Galatians 6:8 New International Version).
- *“Which is a sign **of destruction** for them, but of salvation for you”* (Philippians 1:28).
- *“Whose **end is destruction**”* (Philippians 3:19).
- *“And these will pay the penalty of **eternal destruction**”* (2 Thessalonians 1:9).
- *“For **those who perish**, because they did not receive the love of the truth so as to be saved”* (2 Thessalonians 2:10).
- *“And it ends up **being burned**”* (Hebrews 6:8).

- *“But a certain terrifying expectation of judgment, and THE FURY OF A FIRE WHICH WILL CONSUME THE ADVERSARIES”* (Hebrews 10:27).
- *“But we are not of those who shrink **back to destruction**”* (Hebrews 10:39).

JAMES:

- *“Then the lust, when it has conceived, bears sin: and the **sin, when it is full grown, brings forth death**”* (James 1:15).
- *“Who is able to save and to **destroy**”* (James 4:12).
- *“Will **save him from death**”* (James 5:19 New International Version).

PETER:

- *“Bringing upon themselves swift **destruction**”* (2 Peter 2:1)
- *“And their **destruction** slumbers not”* (2 Peter 2:3).
- *“But these, as creatures without reason, born mere animals **to be taken and destroyed, railing in matters whereof they are ignorant, shall in their destroying surely be destroyed**”* (2 Peter 2:12).
- *“By the same word have been stored up for fire, being reserved against the day of judgment and **destruction of ungodly men**”* (2 Peter 3:7).
- *“Which the ignorant and unstable distort, as they do also the other scriptures, **unto their own destruction**”* (2 Peter 3:16).

JUDE: *“Like creatures without reason, by these things **they are destroyed**”* (Jude 10).

JOHN:

- *“He that overcomes shall not be hurt of the **second death**”* (Revelation 2:11).
- *“But for the cowardly and unbelieving and abominable and murderers and immoral persons and sorcerers and idolaters and all liars, **their part will be in the lake that burns with fire and brimstone, which is the second death**”* (Revelation 21:8).

Summary: Under the Old Testament the punishments were always in their lifetime with no punishment or threat of punishment after death. Under the New Testament the punishment *“is the second death”* after the resurrection and judgment.

If the lost have a soul in them and this soul shall be forever tormented in Hell, it is only reasonable to believe there would be many warning anyone about it, but there are none. The Hell that is preached today was not a part of the teaching of the apostles and early church. The same strange silence on eternal torment after death that is found through out the Old Testament is also through out the New Testament. Did God just forget to warn of the awful place some are always preaching about?

Those that believe in Hell, try to prove it by their interpretation of metaphors and symbols, for they have not one plain statement in the whole Bible. (1) The name they give it (Hell) is not in the Bible. (2) The place they preach about is not in the Bible under any name. Its origin is Pagan to the core.

With no revelation from God about Hell, how could we:

- (1) Know about it.
- (2) Know what it is.
- (3) Know its name.
- (4) Know souls will be tormented in it.
- (5) Know it will last forever.
- (6) Know who or if anyone will be in it.

(7) Who told us these things? God has given us not one word of revelation on it.

**GOD WAS NOT SILENT ON THE FATE OF THE LOST:** The apostles did tell what would be the fate of the unbelieving, but the words they used are very different than what is preached today. Most churches would throw a preacher out if he preached the lost would be destroyed, perish, die, death, or end. Death is very different than everlasting life in Hell (see chapter two, "Life and Death"). The words used to describe the fate of the lost are miles apart from much of today's preaching.

**Some of the none symbolic Greek words used in the New Testament to describe the fate of the lost are:**

**(1) DEATH:** *"For the wages of sin is **death**"* (Romans 6:23). See chapter two "Life or Death." **Death is death, not everlasting life with torment; life and death are opposites, not two kinds of life.** Unconditional immortality makes life and death both into life in a different place.

**DEATH HAS BEEN CHANGED TO BE LIFE:** (1). Theology makes death be eternal life in Hell, but only for the invisible, immaterial soul, not for the person the soul was in. (2). Theology makes the only difference in life and death is the place where the invisible, immaterial soul will have eternal life; in neither one death dose not mean to be dead. Theology say souls that were in both the saved and the lost unto their death is alive, and all souls now have eternal life; the souls just will not live at the same place.

- It makes life be life in Heaven for Plato's immortal soul that will be freed from the body at the death of the body.
- It makes death be life in Hell for a soul that is now in you if you do not save "it."

Death deprives us of all life. It does not give more life than we now have. Death is not just a continuation of life in a different form. The resurrection restores the life of the person that death took away. The resurrection will be persons returning to life from death, not a return of the undead souls to still being undead, as we are told "souls" now are undead before the resurrection. The resurrection is our only hope of life after death. A change from one state of being to another state of being, moving from one place to another place, is not a resurrection.

- Moving from earth to Abraham's bosom, and then moving from Abraham's bosom to Heaven is not a death or a resurrection.
- After the death of the person, a soul moving from the person it is now in to Heaven or Hell is not a death or a resurrection.
  - Today's theology says a soul that is now in a person does not die; it just changes it's address; changes from being in a person to being a soul in Heaven or Hell without the person.

Those who hold the position that souls are now alive, and souls goes to Heaven or Hell after the death of the person it is now in often say they believe in the resurrection of the dead even when both are not possible. If a soul is alive any place after the death of the person, that soul is not dead, and if it is not dead it cannot be

resurrected from the dead. If the pagan deathless immortal soul doctrine were true it would make the Bible doctrine of the resurrection of the dead be pure folly. If to believe Plato's deathless soul gospel over Christ's resurrection of the dead is not a different gospel, it would not be possible to have a different gospel.

**Death is the big problem for unconditional immoralists.** Innate immortality says whether it is a sinner or saint, the immortal soul that is in a person cannot die, and it cannot be subject to death. **They must prove that death is eternal life, that death is not death**, that death is only a change from one kind of life to another kind of life, but if they did, then they would have proven that Christ could not have died, and that He has not been raised from the dead. Unconditional immoralists have taken all resurrections, both of Christ and ours out of the Gospel by making there be no death to be raised from. Without the resurrection death is the end of life for all persons, and means our dead would be our utter destruction even if there were a soul in us that lives after we are dead.

The immortal soul doctrine says death is not the enemy Paul thought it to be (1 Corinthians 15:26), but the friend Plato and Greek philosophy thought it to be. **In Greek philosophy the preaching of the resurrection was foolishness for to them death is not to be dead; death is a gateway to a better life for a soul that is now in you. In today teaching death has replaced the resurrection by making death be the gateway to a better life in Heaven for "the invisible, immaterial part of a person" (W. E. Vine) without the resurrection.** Death must be changed to be life, for whatever "it" is that is in a person "it" cannot be dead.

1. "The END of these things is death" Romans 6:21
2. "Whose END is destruction" Philippians 3:19
3. "Whose END is to be burned" Hebrews 6:18
4. "Sin, when it is full—grown, brings forth DEATH" James 1:15
5. "Sin unto DEATH" Romans 6:16
6. "Wages of sin is DEATH" Romans 6:23
7. "For if you live according to the flesh, you must DIE" (Romans 8:13)

**By the way they translated these words the world's greatest scholarship is collectively seen in the translations as to the meaning of (1) death (2) apollumi (3) apolia (4) olethros (5) phthiro (6) phthora (7) kataphileo (8) exolothreuo (9) katargeo, (10) phtherio, (11) destroy and (12) apothneesko The translators chose words that to the average mind convey the end of life, not life in another location.** The Bible is not a physics textbook, and does not give a scientific definition of annihilation, but God could not have been any clearer on what will happen to the lost, and the translators of most versions give us a true translation of the above words. God could have used words that means separation from God, but alive and in torment, eternal life in torment, deathless, but instead He used death, die, destruction, destroy and perish.

ROBERT DOZIER "The scripture in Mt. 10:28 is translated 'destroy.' But I don't want to believe that, as it contradicts my preconceived ideas. So I go to the lexicon and find out if the translators

and translation is correct. I know little of the language compared to the translators, but I do find out that the Greek word translated 'destroy' is defined by the lexicons. The first definition is, 'to destroy' but that won't work for me. If I accept that, the translators are correct. Also included in the definition is 'to put out of the way entirely.' That is just not precise enough. Next is 'abolish' but that is not much better than destroy. Then, 'put an end to.' Nope, that may be the worst yet! Then 'ruin.' Finally! Something I can work with! I am not saying that James or others are consciously or deliberately trying to avoid the meaning of words or discredit the scholarship of the translations, but if we start out with a false premise and then try to defend it, we can find ourselves making some unreasonable arguments and claims along the way. That all the translators made huge blunders over and over regarding the end of the lost is such a claim. The men who wrote the lexicons rendered it 'destroy' in our Bible, and defined it the same way, but if that won't fit our idea, we must point out their error and be thankful that they left us one word in a lexicon to grasp at. **While the word 'annihilation' is not in our scripture, the words translated are much closer to it than they are to 'never ending conscious torment.'** that's for sure...Even the rendering of 'ruined' doesn't help that much. It may neutralize that text from being one that favors annihilation, but it sure doesn't teach 'never ending conscious torment.'" Robert Dozier—James Johnson Debate on eternal punishment at: <http://www.religiousdebates.org/debates/0044/index.html>

**But, what do lexicons mean by "ruined"?** A book that is burned up is "ruined." As a book it does not exist anymore. It has been destroyed; the ashes are not the book. A school teacher has a good reputation, and then everyone finds that she is working at a house of prostitution at night. Her good reputation is "ruined," it is destroyed; her good reputation does not exist anymore.

AL MAXEY: "As one examines the many biblical examples of God's dealings with the wicked, it will be quickly perceived that *not one single time* in all of recorded biblical teaching is the punishment for sin against God ever declared to be *torture*. The ultimate punishment, instead, is always declared to be *death*. Thus, if indeed God's final punishment for the wicked *is* endless torture, as some maintain, it is a fate *completely without biblical precedents*. Nowhere in Scripture does God ever use torture as divine punishment for man. Not even once!" Reflections, Issue 46, June 6, 2003.

CURTIS DICKINSON: "It will be noted that in each case the thing that threatened was DEATH, not incessant torture. The types and shadows in no instance teach the idea of an immortal soul or eternal spirit being tortured as the punishment for sin. In ALL cases they show the penalty for sin to be death of the person...If God intended for us to understand something other than total death for the wicked, certainly He could have found the means in the marvelous Greek language to express such. Instead He used the plainest terms indicating destruction of the whole man." "What The Bible Teaches About Immortality And Future Punishment," pages 20-21, 1984.

**(2) APOLLUMI:** Used 92 times in the New Testament. In King James Version, it is translated (1) *Destroy* 19 times, (2) *Destroyed* 7 times, (3) *Perish* 25 times, (4) *Perished* 8 times, (5) *Lost* 13 times, (6) *Lose* 18 times, (7) *Die* 1 time, (8) *Be marred* 1 time (perished in American Standard Version).

**All from the same Greek word:** "Bottles **perish**" (apollumi) (Matthew 9:17). "**Lose** (apollumi) his reward" (1 Peter 1:7). The Heavens and Earth "**shall perish**"; (apollumi see 2 Peter 3:10). Even those who believe in eternal torment do not believe these things will be tormented forever, but they will come to an end: yet,

when the same word is used for people (Romans 2:12, 1 Corinthians 1:18, 2 Corinthians 2:15, 4:3), some teach souls will not and cannot come to an end; but after the persons are dead, souls that were in them must live forever in torment. **It would be hard to say any plainer that "apollumi" means to perish, to come to an end, to be destroyed than the King James Version says it.** "Slain" and "perished" (apollumi) are used interchangeability in Acts 5:36-37.

LIDDELL AND SCOTT: Apollumi—"To destroy utterly, to murder, to kill, to lay waste; from ollumi, to destroy, to consume, to make an end of, to perish, to come to an end, to die."

1) **To destroy (apollumi) is to kill.** Matthew 2:13; 12:14; 21:41; 22:7; 27:20; Mark 3:6; 9:22; 11:18; 12:9; Luke 11:51; 17:27; 17:29; 19:47; 20:16; Jude 5; 2 Peter 3:6

2) **To perish (apollumi) is to die,** Matthew 8:25; Mark 4:38; Luke 8:24; 13:33; 15:17; John 18:14; Acts 5:37; 1 Corinthians 10:9; 15:18; Hebrews 11:31. **Perish must be changed to live.** When it is the body that perishes, as in Mark 4:38 *"Teacher, do you not care that we are perishing (apollumi),"* even those who say to perish does not mean to die when it is speaking of a soul must admit that when the same word is applied to the body of a person or to a tree, it means the person and the tree unquestionably dies. **They want the body that perishes to be dead, but a soul that perishes to be alive. Most admit it is actual death when it refers to the earthly body being destroyed or perishing, but say it means to preserve alive forever when it refers to a "soul" being destroyed or perishing.** *"Theudas was slain"* Acts 5:34-36. A Pharisee, named Gamaliel said Theudas died (was slain). *"Judas...also perished."* Both apollumi (perished) and slain are same thing, both means to die, to be dead; neither Theudas who was slain, nor Judas who perished, was alive and being tormented. It must first be assumed mankind has a "soul" in them that will not die when the person it is in stops living, then the meaning of any word must be change if it would be in conflict with what have been assumed. However, they see that it cannot be changed to preserve alive in the many times the same words are used when it refers to the earthly body being dead. The same questions must be asked again, how do they know it must be changed, and how do they know what it must be changed to, or when to change it? What new revelation do they have? How would those who Paul was writing to know when Paul used apollumi one-way, or when he used it the other way?

3) **"In like manner perish (apollumi)."** *"Now there were some present at that very season who told him of the Galileans, whose blood Pilate had mingled with their sacrifices. And he answered and said unto them, Think you that these Galileans were sinners above all the Galileans, because they have suffered these things? I tell you, No: but, except you repent, you shall all in like manner perish (apollumi). Or those eighteen, upon whom the tower in Siloam fell, and killed them, think you that they were offenders above all the men that dwell in Jerusalem? I tell you, No: but,*

*except you repent, you shall all likewise perish* (Luke 13:1-5). Both groups were persons that literally died, not living souls; the Galileans, whose blood was mingled with the sacrifices were dead, not alive and in torment, and all who do not repent will literally likewise perish (apollumi), will literally die, not literally live forever in torment. It is the person that does not repent that will die, not a deathless soul that cannot die; to change this from a person to a soul that cannot die makes this passage be complete nonsense. "Killed" and "perish" have the same meaning in this passage. **They were being told that all who do not repent would likewise be killed just as those whom blood was mingled with the sacrifices were killed; they will literally lose their life after the judgment.** The question is what death was Christ speaking of. (1) Was He saying to those "*present...who told him of the Galileans*" that if they did not repent they would be killed just as those Galileans were killed that the tower fell on? Soon after this most of the Jews that did not repent and believe Christ were killed in A. D. 70, "*How shall you escape the judgment of Gehenna...Truly I say to you, all these things shall come upon this generation*" (Matthew 23:33-36) (see chapter eight, part 2, Israel's destruction), but believers were saved; just before the destruction of Jerusalem those that did believe Christ and repented had fled from Jerusalem and were saved. (2) Or was Christ speaking of perishing by the second death? Either way death is the fate of the persons that do not repent; it is persons that will perish, this is changed to be about deathless souls that cannot perish. It is not as it is often changed and preached "except you repent, a soul that had been in you shall likewise perish" it is "*except you repent, you shall all likewise perish* (apollumi)" (Luke 13:5). A person may suffer for years in a dungeon before he perishes. He has not perished (apollumi) as long as he has any life even if he was in terrible torment. If there was a soul and it had life, it would not have perished if it were being tormented by God. To perish is to die, to be dead, to have no life.

If Christ (1) was speaking of living persons being killed by the Roman army, or in any other way, (2) or if He was speaking of the second death, both are a real death of persons, not an endless life of torment for deathless souls.

John 3:16: "*Whosoever believes on Him should not perish, but have eternal life.* It is perish or life for the person, not one kind of life, or another kind of life for a soul. This passage is often read as if it said, "Whosoever believes on Him, a soul that is in him will have eternal life in Heaven, but whosoever does not believe, a soul that is in him will have eternal life in Hell;" any kind of death is taken out of it and replaced with life for a soul, rather replaced with where that soul that already has life will live the life it has. There is nothing in John 3:16 about a soul, or about Hell; it is about a person that will live or die.

#### **Apollumi in 1 Corinthians:**

- "*The word of the cross is to them that **perish** (apollumi) foolishness*" (1 Corinthians 1:18).

- *"I will **destroy** (apollumi) the wisdom of the wise"* (1 Corinthians 1:19). Wisdom can and will come to an end, but wisdom will not be tormented without end.
- *"For through your knowledge he that is weak **perishes** (apollumi)"* (1 Corinthians 8:11).
- *"As some of them made trial, and **perished** (apollumi) by the serpents. Neither murmur you as some of them murmured, and **perished** (apollumi) by the destroyer"* (1 Corinthians 10:9-10). Those that were bit by the snakes died just as those that were destroyed by the destroyer, just as those persons that do not repent will perish.

*"Then they that are fallen asleep in Christ have **perished** (apollumi)"* (1 Corinthians 15:18). If Christ was not raised those that died believing in Him have come to an end, they are not being tormented, they are not now living, and they will never live, it is not possible to not see that this passage teaches that the resurrection is indispensable to any kind of future existence after death; to those in Christ still living Paul said, *"If the dead are not raised, let us eat and drink, for to-morrow **we die,**"* (1 Corinthians 15:32) which is the same as saying to-morrow **when we die we perish** just as those that have already died (fallen asleep), have already perished if there were no resurrection. There is no question but that Paul was speaking of the resurrection of dead persons; if there were a deathless soul it could never perish, if it did perish it would not have been deathless. **It is a dead person that will be restored to life by the resurrection, not a deathless soul that will be restored to life by the resurrection; there is nothing said about a soul in this passage.**

**2 Peter 3:6 apollumi—perished.** The world before the flood *"perished"* (2 Peter 3:6). When the Lord comes, the heavens *"shall pass away...shall be dissolved...burned up"* (2 Peter 3:10). *"To be dissolved...shall be dissolved"* (2 Peter 3:12). *"The elements shall melt with fervent heat"* (2 Peter 3:12). Just as those who *"perished"* (2 Peter 3:6) when the flood came, the lost *"perished"* with the world that then was, the lost *"Shall...surely be destroyed"* (2 Peter 2:12). Peter could not have said any clearer that both the heavens and the lost will both come to the same end at the same time at the Judgment Day. Theology says, "Not so Peter, God can destroy the heavens and the earth, but He cannot destroy the immaterial, invisible, whatever the deathless soul is that is in a person for our theology says "it" is immortal; therefore, God must torment this immaterial "it" that is in a person. *"Burned up"* in 2 Peter 3:10 is from the Greek word "katakaio." The same thing that happened to the chaff and tares will happen to the earth and those who perish. *"He will burn up (katakaio) the chaff"* (Matthew 3:12; Luke 3:17). He will neither eternally torment, nor remake the chaff. *"The tares are gathered and burned (katakaio)"* (Matthew 13:40).

*"Pass away"* in 2 Peter 3:10 is from the Greek word "parerchomai." There is nothing about being made new or restored in the word parerchomai.

- Both the flower of the grass and the rich shall **"pass away"** (parerchomai) (James 1:10).
- The fast was now already **"passed"** (parerchomai) (Acts 27:9).
- *"Heaven and earth shall **pass away** (parerchomai) but my words shall **not pass away** (parerchomai)"* (Luke 21:33). " How can anyone read this and say the earth will last as

long as His word, that the world will not pass away, but the world will be made new and be the permanent home of the saved and Christ after the Judgment Day?

- *"But the day of the Lord...in which the heavens shall **pass away**" (parerchomai). (2 Peter 3:10).*

*"In the beginning, Lord, you founded the earth, and the heavens are the work of your hands; they will **perish** (Apollumi), but you will remain" (Hebrews 1:11). In this passage "perish" and "remain" are opposites that which perishes will not remain, that which remains will not perish; the heavens and the earth will perish, God will remain.*

- One will perish
- One will remain

**The question is, what would the Greek people in the time of the New Testament understand by the one word all ninety-two times that apollumi is used, and is there a word in English that would be understood in the same way?** Would it not be unreasonable to continually say that any will perish or be destroyed if the wicked are forever preserved alive in suffering, and are preserved from ever perishing or from being destroyed?

**APOLLUMI WHEN TRANSLATED "LOSE:" To lose something OR to destroy something.** Were the translators trying to make psukee—life into something that is only lost but not destroyed? Something that is lost is the same as it was before it was lost, but something that is destroyed no longer exists. If you lose something you no longer have what you lost, but the lost thing may still exist. If a person loses a soul that was in them, would not that person still be a person without a soul, and the lost soul still be a soul without being in a person? Destroyed had to be changed to "lose" to put Plato's immortal soul into the Bible.

If you lose your life (psukee) your life would be destroyed (apollumi), your life would no longer exist, it would be you that would be destroyed (apollumi), you that would no longer exist, not some immaterial something that is in you that you lost, but that something still existed just as it existed before you lost it, and it would still be the same unchanged immaterial something that was in you before you lost it.

*"For what shall **a man** profit, if **he** shall gain the whole world, and lose (apollumi—destroy) **his life** (psukee), or what shall **a man** give in exchange for **his life** (psukee)" (Matthew 16:26)? This passage is speaking of life (psukee) being destroyed (apollumi), a person destroyed, a person being lifeless, not an immaterial something being that is in a person lost by the person for taking the world's riches in exchange for this deathless soul. **It is life (psukee) of a person that is being destroyed (apollumi) by putting the world ahead of Christ.***

- *"**He** that finds his life shall lose (apollumi) it: and **he** that loses (apollumi) his life for my sake shall find it" (Matthew 10:39; Luke 9:24). It is the life of the person that shall be lost or found (at the judgment), nothing is said about the "well-being" of a soul that cannot "lose" (apollumi) its life.*
- *"Of those whom You have given Me I lost (apollumi) not one" (John 18:9).*

- *"He who loves his life loses (apollumi) it; and he who hates his life in this world shall keep it to life eternal"* (John 12:25). Lose life is the opposite keeping life. It is the life of the person in this lifetime that is lost, and life of the person after the judgment that is spoken of, not the well-being of a soul that many say it cannot "lose" (apollumi) life either in this lifetime or after the judgment. It is clear that "lose" life is to cease to have life.
  - *"He shall not lose (apollumi) his reward"* (Matthew 10:42). "He" the person shall not fail to have his reward.
  - *"All that he has given Me I lose (apollumi) nothing, but raise it up on the last day"* (John 6:39). He dose not cease to have all that God give Him.

### **Apollumi when translated "*perish*" and "*destroy*."**

- *"Fear him who is able to destroy (apollumi) both soul (psukee—life) and body in Gehenna"* (Matthew 10:28). Is both a soul and a body destroyed in Hell?
- *"The young child to destroy (apollumi) him"* (Matthew 2:13). Herod wanted to kill the child, bring the child's life to an end, not to make Christ live in misery.
- *"And the bottles perish (apollumi)"* (Matthew 9:17). Bottles can be destroyed but cannot be tormented.
- *"How they might destroy (apollumi) him"* (Matthew 12:14). Take His life, not torment Him.
- *"Will miserably destroy (apollumi) those wicked ones"* (Matthew 21:41). *"He will put these wretches to a miserable death"* (apollumi) Revised Standard Version.
- *"But the king was enraged and sent his armies, and destroyed (apollumi) these murderers"* (Matthew 22:7).
- *"Shall perish (apollumi) with the sword"* (Matthew 26:52).
- *"Except you repent, you shall all in like manner perish (apollumi)"* In like manner as those that were killed when the tower fell and killed then, or the Galileans that were killed. It is beyond doubt the "*perish*" and "*killed*" are the same. To perish is to be killed.
- *"The flood came and destroyed (apollumi) them all"* (Luke 17:27). It brought death to all, not life in misery.
- *"The day Lot went out from Sodom it rained fire and brimstone from heaven and destroyed (apollumi) them all"* (Luke 17:29).
- The saved will never perish (apollumi) (John 10:28).
- The lost will perish (apollumi) (1 Corinthians 1:18).
- Anyone can perish (apollumi) by drowning (Mark 4:38; Matthew 8:25). When apollumi is applied to persons, whether in this life, or at the judgment, it is life that is destroyed, not a soul after it leaves the person and lives forever in misery because it is being tormented by God and cannot perish.
  - In the Greek it is not "soul," but "psukee" (life) that God can and will destroy.

### ***"Fear him who is able to destroy (apollumi) both soul and body in Gehenna."***

- What ever happens to a soul (psukee—life) also happens to the body.
- What ever happens to the body also happens to a soul (psukee—life).
  - If one is "*destroyed*" in Gehenna, both are destroyed in Gehenna.
  - If one is never destroyed, but it is tormented in Hell then both are never destroyed and both are tormented in Hell.

The advocate's of an immortal soul say, "*destroy*," (apollumi) means "torment." If this is true, "torment" should be used in place of "destroy" in all places. Try it. The same is true when apollumi is made to mean "a loss of well being."

- "The young child to torment (apollumi) him" Matthew 2:13. "The young child to a loss of well being (apollumi) him"
- "One of your members should torment (apollumi)" "One of your members should a loss of well being (apollumi)" Matthew 5:29

- "Lord, save us, we torment (apollumi)" Matthew 8:25
- "And the bottles tormented (apollumi)" Matthew 9:17
- "That finds his life shall torment (apollumi) it" Matthew 10:39
- "One of these little one should torment (apollumi)" Matthew 18:14
- "If she torment (apollumi) one piece" Luke 15:14
- "Flood came and tormented (apollumi) them all" Luke 17:27
- "Torment (apollumi) not him with your meat" Romans 14:15
- "I will torment (apollumi) the wisdom of the wise" 1 Corinthians 1:19
- "Is it lawful on the Sabbath to do good, or to do harm? To save a life, or to torment (apollumi) it" (Luke 6:9). In the parallel passage Mark used apokteino—"kill," not apollumi—"destroy."
  - "To save a life, or to kill (apokteino)" (Mark 3:4).
  - "To save a life, or to destroy (apollumi) it" (Luke 6:9).

Those who say to destroy means a lost of well being, not death, will have a little trouble saying Mark's parallel passage that "*kill*" does not mean death. Mark and Luke used destroy and kill interchangeable making destroy (apollumi) and kill (apokteino) both means the same thing, both means death, not eternal life with a lost of well-being.

- "*Your silver perish (apollumi) with you*" (Acts 8:20). Peter told Simon that both (1) he and (2) his silver would perish. If perish means eternal torment then Simon's silver would be in eternal torment with him; the same thing will happen to both.
- "*Work not for the meat that perishes (apollumi)*" John 6:27. When meat perishes it goes back to the earth, it is no longer meat, it has perished, the meat has ceased to exist.
- Many more. See Wigram Englishman's Greek Concordance page 74 for a long list of passages where destroy could not mean a lost of well being. Just as they only want death to be "separation," or "a lost of well being" part of the time (See chapter two, "Life or Death"), apollumi is only wanted to be "a lost of well being," or an eternal life of torment part of the time. Only when they need apollumi to be translated separation, or translated torment, only when it would destroy the immortal soul doctrine if it were not changed. As translated in the King James Version, both words (apollumi and death) destroy the doctrine of an immortal soul from birth. They must use their theology reinterpretation to save it. Destroy does not mean to torment forever in any dictionary. Note: By "lost of well being" they really mean, "God will forever be tormenting them." A "lost of well being" is just a watered down way of saying, "God will forever be tormenting them."

In the King James Version in the 95 times apollumi is used, whatever it is used with is destroyed, not tormented, it is the end of the things that are destroyed such as bottles, meat, gold, they are not tormented, they cease to be, Matthew 9:27; John 6:27; 1 Peter 1:7; etc. Apollumi is translated destroy, destroyed, perish, lose, lost, and die. When a thing is destroyed or burned it ceases to be the thing that it was before it was destroyed, the elements that was a book was not a book before the book was made, and they are not a book after the book is burned up. According to the immortal soul teaching a person is made up of a body and a soul; this passage (as it is translated in the King James Version) says God can and will destroy both the body and a soul of a sinner; the whole person will be destroyed, abolished in the lake of fire and the sinner will not exist.

J. M. DENNISTON on the use of Apollumi in the Septuagint, the Greek translation of the Old Testament that was used in the time of Christ. "If the Jewish mind was familiar with any one thing from the teaching of the Hebrew Scriptures, it was with the idea and fact of 'destruction.' To express this there has been employed especially in the Greek version, a great variety of terms—one of these being the vitally important word apollumi—the word employed by our Lord for expressing the awful truth of the perdition of the ungodly. It is surely of consequence, then, to know what that word had for so long signified to the Jews. And this, happily, is as easy as it is important. For they certainly understood the word precisely as the Greeks had done before them. With both alike 'destroy' meant to 'bring to an end,' and 'perish' to 'come to an end.' There is no question here about a future existence of the wicked. The destruction spoken of the Old Testament refers generally, or rather always, to some external act as manifestly putting an end to their present life...Thus, for example, the word is used to express the destruction of Sodom and its people—the destruction of the Canaanites, whether by the divine Governor, or the human instrument; —the rebellious Israelites being threatened, in their turn, with a similar destruction. So we were of the edict of Ahasuerus to *destroy* the Jews, and of the Jews *destroying* their enemies instead...So we are told that the thoughts, desires, hope, remembrance of the wicked shall *perish*. And, once more—'The wicked shall perish, and the enemies of the Lord shall be as the fat of lambs; they shall consume; into smoke shall they consume away.' (Ps. 37:20)." "The Perishing Soul According To Scripture," pages 79-80, Longmans, Green, And Co., 1874.

**(3) APOLIA:** A noun derived from apollumi and is used 20 times. In the King James Version it is translated (1) *Destruction* 5 times, (2) *Waste* 2 times, (3) *Perdition* 8 times, (4) *Perish* 1 time, (5) *Damnation* 1 time, (6) *Damnably* 1 time, (7) *Pernicious ways* 1 time, (8) *To die* 1 times.

- "**Waste** (apolia) of the ointment" (Mark 14:4)
- "Vessels of wrath fitted to **destruction** (apolia)" (Romans 9:22)
- "**Money perish** (apolia)" (Acts 8:20 King James Version) "**Your silver perish** (apolia) with you" (American Standard Version). If perish (apolia) means that Simon is going to have an eternal life of torment, then his silver that will perish (apolia) with him is going to have an eternal life of torment. Whatever happens to his money is what will happen to him.
  - These things will come to an end, not being tormented for eternity.

Apolia is used of the destruction, (1) of things in this present time, and (2) thing after the second coming of Christ. Most that believes in innate immortal admit that when it is speaking of things, or of a persons in this present time that destruction is destruction; the same word has to be given completely different meaning to make innate immortal possible when after the judgment is being spoken of destruction is not destruction; if you destroy something, that something does not then exist in another higher state of being; but this is just what those who believe in unconditional immortality believe will happen.

**Philippians 3:19—apolia destruction**, it could not possibility be said any stronger that the end of the lost "*is destruction.*"

- "**Whose END is DESTRUCTION** (apolia)" King James Version, New King James Version, and New American Standard Version.
- "**Whose END is PERDITION** (apolia)" American Standard Version. (This Latin word means destruction, but WHY was a Latin word put in an English translation if not to hide the meaning of apolia from the English readers?).

- "Their **END** is **DESTRUCTION** (apolia)" Revised Standard Version and New Revised Standard Version.
- "Their **DESTINY** is **DESTRUCTION** (apolia)" New International Version.
- "Their **DOOM** is **DESTRUCTION** (apolia)" William's New Testament.
- "They are **HEADING FOR DESTRUCTION** (apolia)" Revised English Bible.
- "Men...for **UTTER DESTRUCTION** (apolia)" Phillips New Testament.
- "Their **COMPLETION** is **DESTRUCTION** (apolia)" The Christian Bible.
- "In the **END** they will be **DESTROYED** (apolia)" Beck.
- "Whose **END** is **DESTRUCTION** (apolia)" Living Oracles by Alexander Campbell, MacKnight and Doddridge. Gospel Advocate Co.
- "Their **END** is **DESTRUCTION** (apolia)" McCord's New Testament Translation, Freed Hardeman Press.

Put the translators of the major translations together, and you have hundreds of the most learned men on the New Testament Greek. Most if not all the translators of these translations did not believe a soul could be destroyed, and most if not all of them believed in Hell, but they did not translate apolia into "torment." If all of them translate a word in a way that disproves something those who did the translating believed in, there could be no stronger proof of the way that word should be translated. This is just what happened with the word "destruction." **Some of the world's best scholarship says apolia is their utter destruction, their end, their doom, their destiny, and completion even when they did not believe a soul that is in a person can be destroyed, and that a soul will not come to an end. There is no way God could have said it any clearer or stronger.** Some are openly saying God is wrong when they teach a soul that is in the lost will have no end, or completion, or doom; but a soul will have an endless life in extreme pain and anguish being tormented by God. Men are driven to absurd reasoning when they try to avoid plain Bible teaching. **How could a soul's END be destruction if that soul will never come to an END? How could it's end be DESTRUCTION if it will never be DESTROYED? How could there be LIFE after the SECOND DEATH without a resurrection from the second death?**

#### **Philippians 1:28 apolia—destruction**

- "Which is a sign of **DESTRUCTION** (apolia) for them, but of **SALVATION** for **you**" New American Standard Version.
- "A sure sign to them that **DESTRUCTION** (apolia) is in store for them and **SALVATION** for **you**" Revised English Bible.
- "Evidence of their **DESTRUCTION** (apolia), but of **your** **SALVATION**" New Revised Standard Version.
- "A clear omen to them of their **DESTRUCTION** (apolia), but of **your** **SALVATION**" Revised Standard Version.
- "A sign to them that they will be **DESTROYED** (apolia), but that **you** will be **SAVED**" New International Version.
  - It is "you" that will be saved, not a deathless soul that dwells in you unto your death.

This clearly says the wicked will be destroyed and the righteous saved, and the only way anyone can get around it is to use the word destroy with a theological

meaning that it does not have in English or Greek. Both the destruction or the salvation of a person is at the Judgment Day. Paul is not telling the Philippians that their enemies are going to be destroyed, or go away in this life, or that their salvation will be in this life.

- If souls that were in the lost are now in Hell, what more "destruction is in store for them" at the resurrection and judgment? (Revised English Bible).
- If souls that were in the saved are now in Heaven, what more salvation will there be for these souls at the resurrection and judgment? If a soul is what will go to Heaven, and that soul goes to Heaven at the death of the person, then the time of the death of the person would be much more important to it than the resurrection; why would the resurrection be of any use to a soul that was not dead, to a soul that was alive in Heaven?

#### **Matthew 7:13—apolia—destruction**

- "For the gate is wide, and the way is broad that leads to **DESTRUCTION** (apolia)." Christ literally said those on the broad way will be destroyed; He could not have said any stronger that they will cease to exist, yet destruction is twisted to mean eternal life for deathless souls that are in the persons in the broad way, destruction is twisted to be life for souls that can never be destroyed, souls that can never not have life.

#### **2 Peter 2:1—apolia—swift destruction**

- "And bring on themselves **SWIFT DESTRUCTION** (apolia)" New King James Version.
- "Bringing **SWIFT DESTRUCTION** (apolia) upon themselves" New American Standard Version.

#### **Hebrews 10:39—apolia—destruction**

- "But we are not of those who shrink back and are **DESTROYED** (apolia), but of those who believe and are **saved**" New International Version.
- "But we are not among those who shrink back and so are **LOST** (apolia), but among those who have faith and so are saved" New Revised Standard Version.
- "But we are not those who turn back and are **LOST** (apolia). We are people who have faith and are saved" New Century Version.
- We are not among those who draw back and **PERISH** (apolia), but among those who have faith and **live**" New American Bible (Catholic).
- "But we are not among those who shrink back and are **LOST** (apolia); we have the faith to preserve our **life**" Revised English Bible.
  - Once more, it is the person's life that is saved, not a thing is said about the life of a soul being saved or lost

**2 Peter 3:7—apolia—destruction** The destruction **by fire** of (1) "the ungodly" and (2) "the heavens that now are, and the earth" will **both** be at:

- "DAY of JUDGMENT and **DESTRUCTION** (apolia) of ungodly man" American Standard Version, New American Standard Version, Revised Standard Version, New International Version, and Living Oracles by Alexander Campbell.
- "DAY of JUDGMENT and **DESTRUCTION** (apolia) of the Godless" New Revised Standard Version.
- "DAY of JUDGMENT and **PERDITION** (apolia) of ungodly men," King James Version, and New King James Version. Perdition is a Latin word, which means, "utter destruction."
- "DAY of JUDGMENT when the godless **WILL BE DESTROYED** (apolia)" Revised English Bible.
- "DAY of JUDGMENT and **DESTRUCTION** (apolia) of ungodly people" Amplified Bible.
- "DAY of JUDGMENT and **DESTRUCTION** (apolia) of godless men" McCord's New Testament Translation, Hardeman College.

- "The DAY of JUDGMENT, the DAY when godless men WILL BE **DESTROYED** (apolia)" New American Bible.
- "Are being kept for the JUDGMENT DAY AND THE **DESTRUCTION** (apolia) of all who are against God" New Century Bible.
  - Note: it is ungodly "people," ungodly "men" that will be destroyed, not ungodly souls.

**In 2 Peter chapter 3 both (1) the destruction of the earth, (2) and the destruction of ungodly men is the same destruction at the same time. What happens to one will happen to the other. Both the earth and the ungodly persons, not souls, are to be destroyed by fire at the same time, on the Day of Judgment.** If the same word in the same sentence was used with two different meanings there would be no way anyone could know the writer was saying God will destroy (apolia) the earth but will torment (apolia) men. God could not have said any clearer that He will destroy both? Do you believe God or man?

**"Passes away...abides forever"** 1 John 2:17. This is a contrast showing that the world with those who are of the world shall pass away.

- "He that does the will of God **abides forever.**"
- But those who are of the world shall pass away with the world, and **shall not "abide forever."** It would be difference to find to find the orthodox teaching of those of the world abiding permanently in torment in this passage.

The world "*shall pass away...be dissolved...be burned up...dissolved...shall melt with fervent heat*" (2 Peter 3:10-11). The unsaved are "*not of the Father, but is of the world, and the world passes away*" (1 John 2:17). The lost persons shall pass away (come to an end) just as the world will come to an end. **"But the heavens that now are, (the stars in the sky) and the earth, by the same word have been stored up for fire, being reserved against the day of judgment and destruction of ungodly MEN"** (2 Peter 3:7). Both (1) the heaven and the earth and (2) ungodly man are destroyed "*in the day of,*" not one (the earth) destroyed "*in the day of,*" and one (lost men) being destroyed for all eternity but never destroyed; not that either one, the earth and ungodly men will be just as undestroyed after a million years of being destroyed as they were at it's beginning, and God will be forever destroying them for all eternity, but He will never be able to get the job done. Not the destruction of one and the everlasting torment of the other one, but it is the same destruction of both at the same time. **The destruction of both the earth and the ungodly persons is on the Judgment Day.**

**John 3:16 apolia—perish "should not perish, (apolia) but have eternal life."** This verse certainly teaches that God sent His Son that a person may have eternal life, not just a reward to souls that are born with eternal life. John 3:16 teaches those who believe on Christ will have life, and those who do not believe will have death, not life without end in Hell. It is life or perish, not live in Heaven or Hell; not a word is said about Hell in John 3:16.

**Acts 8:20 apolia—perish "may your silver perish (apolia) with you"** Is the silver being tormented **with the person**, or did both the silver and the person perish? The King James and New King James translators try to cover this up by using "perdition." Apolia is translated "perdition" Eight times in the King James Version, and comes from the Latin Bible used by the Catholic Church, not from the Greek. Does this show the unwillingness of the translator's to translate it honestly? Were they trying to hide its true meaning; if not, **why did they translate this Greek word into a Latin word in an English translation?** Was it because they did not want it understood by their English readers that could not read Latin? Perdition in Latin is not a synonym for endless torture; perdition in Latin means "utter destruction," but not many English readers would know this. It hides the true meaning from all who do not understand Latin, but nonetheless lets the translators say they did not mistranslate it. Apolia is translated "perdition" in both the King James Version and the American Standard Version in John 17:12; Philippians 1:28; 2 Thessalonians 2:3; 1 Timothy 6:9; Hebrews 10:39; Revelation 17:8; 17:11. In 2 Peter 3:7 the King James Version says, "perdition," and the American Standard Version says, "destruction." The New Revised Standard Version, New International Version, and most other translations have been more truthful to the English readers and taken the Latin word "perdition" out and replaced it with "destruction."

**(4) OLETHROS** is used 4 times and translated **destruction** all 4 times.

2 Thessalonians 1:9 *"Who shall be punished with **everlasting destruction** (olethros) from the presence of the Lord."* **We are told clearly and exactly:**

- **(a) What the punishment is: "everlasting destruction."** Not souls punished with everlasting torment, but persons **punished with "everlasting destruction" not an endless destroying but never destroyed.** *"Punishment, even eternal destruction."* American Standard Version, 2 Thessalonians 1:9. *"And these will pay the penalty of eternal destruction"* New American Standard Version.
- **(b) Also when it shall be:** (2 Thessalonians 1:10) *"when He shall come"* (not "forever in Hell"). *"At the revelation of the Lord Jesus from heaven with the angels of his power"* (2 Thessalonians 1:7).

Olethros is used only four times in the New Testament:

- (1) *"For the destruction (olethros) of the flesh"* (1 Corinthians 5:5).
- (2) *"While they are saying, 'Peace and safety!' then destruction (olethros) will come upon them suddenly like birth pains upon a woman"* (1 Thessalonians 5:3).
- (3) *"And these will pay the penalty of eternal destruction (olethros), from the presence of the Lord and from the glory of His power"* (2 Thessalonians 1:9).
- (4) *"Many foolish and harmful desires which plunge men into ruin and destruction (olethros)"* (1 Timothy 6:9).

Two views of 2 Thessalonians 1:9.

One view: **The everlasting destruction comes from the presence of the Lord.** The "everlasting destruction" comes *"from (apo) the presence of the Lord and from*

*the glory of His power*" New King James Version. This destruction is the penalty for sin (death) to those who are not in Christ and are not saved by His death.

HENRY THAYER said, "Destruction proceeding from the (incensed, wrathful) countenance of the Lord, 2 Th. 1:9" A Greek—English Lexicon of the New Testament, page 59.

In Jeremiah 4:26, the origin of the destruction is from God. In Isaiah 2:10: 2:19; and 2:21 the Septuagint, a Greek version of the Old Testament made in third century BC, has the same Greek words (*"from the presence of the Lord"*) used by Peter in Acts 3:19 where it is used as proceeding from the Lord.

- "So there may come seasons of refreshing FROM (apo) THE PRESENCE OF THE LORD" (Acts 3:19). The preposition "from" denotes the source or origin, the place where the seasons of refreshing would come from.
- "Everlasting destruction FROM (apo) THE PRESENCE OF THE LORD and from the glory of His power" (2 Thessalonians 1:9 New King James Version)." Also denotes the source or origin of the destruction; the destruction came from God, came from His glory and power.
- "And fire came out FROM THE PRESENCE OF THE LORD and consumed them, than they died before the Lord" (Leviticus 10:2).
- "Fire also came forth FROM THE LORD and consumed the two hundred and fifty men" (Numbers 16:35).
- "We would see a sign FROM (apo) you" Matthew 12:38. A sign that came FROM (apo) Christ, not a sign that was "forever away FROM the presence of Christ."
- "So there may come seasons of refreshing FROM (apo) THE PRESENCE OF THE LORD" (Acts 3:19).
- "And suffer many things FROM (apo) the elders" (Matthew 16:21 New American Standard). Christ suffered many things FROM (apo) the elders, not many things that were "forever away FROM the elders."
- "So all the generations FROM (apo) Abraham unto David are fourteen generations (Matthew 1:17)
- "He is risen FROM (apo) the dead" (Matthew 14:2).

A second view: **The destruction is to be sent away from the presence of the Lord.** Unconditional immoralists add "away" from the presence of the Lord. They want this destruction to be only souls that had been in the lost being sent away from the presence of God, but without souls being destroyed, as if there were such a place, to be banished to some place where God is not there. To be away from the presence of God is to be nowhere at all; not to be; to have no existence at all anywhere. If souls were alive anywhere, they would be where God is (Psalm 139:7-9) with God sustaining the life they have, for there can be no life that is not sustained by God. There cannot be a place where there is life away from the presence of God. Today's theology denies the omnipresence of God by saying there is a place where God is not present, then says souls that were in mankind can forever live there without God being there to sustain the life of these souls. Both the fire and the destruction **comes from God**; it is "*destruction from the presence of the Lord,*" not souls "being sent away from the presence of the Lord," it is not persons or souls that live forever both without God, and without ever being destroyed.

Both Acts 3:19 and 2 Thessalonians 1:9 have the identical words, **“from (apo) the presence of the Lord.”** A sign, many things, destruction, and seasons of refreshing are all things that came from God, not things that were **sent away from** God to exist forever away from His presence. **Apo is used many times in the Greek New Testament and never means away.**

Two passages that are used to prove torment of a soul in Hell after the death of the person it was in, 2 Thessalonians 1:8-9 and Revelation 14:10-11. Where is Hell? 2 Thessalonians 1:9 is used to prove Hell is away from the presence of God, and that death, the wages of sin for souls that are not dead are separation from God. Yet, when Revelation 14:10-11 is made literal to prove Hell, when this torment is made be literal torment, it makes this torment to be in Heaven in the presence of the Lord, not in Hell, not separation from the presence of the Lord.

- **“In the presence of the Lord”** Revelation 14:10-11
- **Or away (which is added) “from the presence of the Lord”** 2 Thessalonians 1:9

Those who believe in Hell use both to prove Hell; both “from” and “in” the presence of the Lord are where the torment of Hell will be, they clearly contradict themselves. Is Hell in Christ’s presence, or away from His presence? They have it both ways with souls both (1) separated from God, but being tormented by Him even though they are separated from Him, (2) and at the same time in the presence of God being tormented by God. The King James Version says God is presence in Hell (Psalms 139:7-10). In their attempt to put Hell in the Bible they say the lost in Hell are not separated from God; which way do they want it; the lost are separated and the lost are not separated from God!!! It would not be possible for a person, a soul, an angel, or any living being to be separated from God and still exist.

Robert Peterson commenting on 2 Thessalonians 1:9 in “Hell on Trial” said:

- Peterson: A person **exists** but remains excluded from God’s good presence.
- Paul *“Who shall be punished with everlasting **destruction** from the presence of the Lord.”*

Peterson changed *“everlasting destruction”* to everlasting “exists.” The English “destruction” or the Greek word “olethros,” from which it is translated, does not mean to exist. Nothing can exist and be destroyed at the same time; from what dictionary does Peterson find destruction to mean exists.

- Anything that exists has not been destroyed.
  - A book that exists has not been destroyed.
- Anything that has been destroyed does not exist.
  - But if a book has been destroyed by fire then the book that did exist has ceased to exist.

**Destruction has been changed to exist** in some faraway place where those that make this change tell us that it is a place where God does not exist. Who made this place? Did God make it and then abandoned it to exist on it own just as souls that were sent there must exist on their own, and they must sustain their own life without the help of God who is not there? **Where is the revelation from which anyone**

**could know destruction means to exist away from God and without God?**

Those that teach eternal torment know that if destruction is destruction, then those who are destroyed do not exist any longer and cannot be tormented; therefore, they must change destruction to exist. They must say to God, "Not so God, even despite the fact that You said they will be destroyed, souls cannot be destroyed." This is an example of how far Peterson and all who believe this heathen teaching are willing to go to save their theology. **Being permanently apart from God makes life impossible; it makes to exist in any way impossible.** How can anyone who says he or she "speaks where the Bible speaks, and is silent where the Bible is silent" change "everlasting destruction" into "everlasting torment" still say they do not change God's word, when even a child can see they have changed it? God is made to be like a man that sets out to destroy a house by tearing it down, but works on it all his lifetime, and not one part of the house is destroyed. They have God spending eternity destroying a soul after a soul that once was in a person but left the person it was in, but God will never destroy any part of that soul. "Destroy" and "torment" are different things and cannot be made to be the same thing. *"For yourselves know perfectly that **the day of the Lord** so comes as a thief in the night. When they (those of the world) are saying, Peace and safety, then sudden destruction (olethros) comes upon them, as travail upon a woman with child; and they shall in no wise escape. But you, brethren, are not in darkness, **that day** should overtake you as a thief" (1 Thessalonians 5:2-4).* The sudden destruction, which *"they shall in no wise escape"* is on **"the day of the Lord," "that day"** not eternal existing in torment after **"the day of the Lord."** Also 1 Timothy 6:9; 2 Corinthians 5:1-5.

For the lost to live forever separated from God both (1) changes death to life, the second death is changed to a second endless life without God; (2) this doctrine changes the nature of God, if the lost are forever alive but separated from God then the nature of God is changed from (a) omnipresent to (b) absent. Some are willing to make God be not omnipresent if it would in anyway prove their beloved doctrine of Hell.

ROGER E. DICKSON: "2 Thessalonians 1:9 should thus be translated that 'these shall be punished with destruction that has unending result.' The word 'destruction' means something is terminated, that the action of destruction would not continuously go on forever and ever...The result of the destruction would continue forever. In other words, those destroyed would not come back into existence. Taken literally, they are destroyed" "Life, Death and Beyond" Biblical Research Library, Volume 11, 1998, page 160, Star Bible Publications, Inc.

**(5) PHTHIRO** is used 8 times and is translated (1) *Destroy* 2 times, (2) *Corrupt* 4 times, (3) *Corruption* 2 times. **"You are a temple of God...If any *man* destroys (phtherio) the temple of God, God will destroy (phtherio) *him*"** (1 Corinthians 3:16-17 New American Standard Bible). Both times the same word is used, destroy means destroy (1) if it is a person destroying his or her body that is a temple of God, (2) or God destroying the person who destroyed his or her temple. Nothing is said about

eternal torment and nothing about tormenting a soul that cannot be destroyed. The unconditional immortality doctrine must change “*God will **destroy him,***” to “God will never destroy but will torment a soul that was in him forever;” to keep this passage from completely destroying their teaching they cannot let destroy mean destroy.

- “If any man **destroys** (phtherio) the temple”
- “God will **destroy** (phtherio) him” (1 Corinthians 3:16-17)
  - Destroy means destroy if it is man destroying the temple, or God destroying the man; man does not torment the temple, he destroys it, God destroys man for destroying the temple.

**(6) PHTHORA** is used 9 times and is translated (1) *Corruption* 7 times, (2) *Perish* 1 time, (3) *Destroyed* 1 time.

- “All which things are to **PERISH** (phthiro) with the using” (Colossians 2:22 American Standard Version). Things are not going to be tormented, but will come to an end. Yet, when the same word is used in reference to a person, some say, “Not so, a soul that is in a person cannot perish; and not even God can destroy it, for a soul is eternal and therefore cannot be destroyed.”
- “Beast, made to be taken and **DESTROYED** (phthiro)” (2 Peter 2:12) King James Version.
- “Shall **UTTERLY PERISH** (kataphileo) in their own **CORRUPTION** (phthiro)” (2 Peter 2:12) King James Version. “**DESTROYED**” New American Standard Version.
- “But these, like unreasoning animals, born as creatures of instinct to be captured and **KILLED**, (phthiro) reviling where they have no knowledge, will in the **DESTRUCTION** (kataphileo) of these creatures also be **DESTROYED** (phthiro)” New American Standard Version. This is changed to say animals will be killed (phthiro), but souls will be tormented (phthiro). When this passage is changed, the same word must be given two completely different interpretations in the same sentence to keep animals from having souls.

**(7) KATAPHILEO** is used 2 times and is translated *Utterly perish* 1 time in 2 Peter 2:12, *Corrupt* 1 time in 2 Timothy 3:8.

- “But these (men, not souls) as natural brute beast made to be taken and destroyed...**SHALL UTTERLY PERISH** (kataphileo) in their own **CORRUPTION** (phthiro)” King James Version. **Both evil men and beast shall utterly perish** (2 Peter 2:12).
- “But these (men), as creatures without reason, born mere animals to be taken and **DESTROYED** (kataphileo)...shall in their (men) destroying surely be **DESTROYED** (phthiro).” (At end of world). American Standard Version.
- “But these (men), like unreasoning animals, born as creatures...to be captured and killed...will in the **DESTRUCTION** (kataphileo) of these creatures also be **DESTROYED** (phthiro)” New American Standard Version. **Both men and animals destroyed.**
- “These people, however, are like irrational animals...born to be caught and **KILLED** (phthiro) and when these creatures are **DESTROYED** (kataphileo), they (men) also will be **DESTROYED** (phthiro)” New Revised Standard Version.
- “They, creatures of instinct, born only to be caught and are like brute beast, creatures of instinct, born only to be caught and **DESTROYED** (kataphileo) and like beasts they (men) too will **PERISH** (phthiro).” New International Version.
- “These (men) (like unreasoning wild animals born to be captured and **DESTROYED** (phthiro), ranting in their ignorance) will also be **DESTROYED** in their destroying.” Hugo McCord, New Testament Translation, printed by Freed—Hardeman College.
- “Animals...destruction...(men) shall be **UTTERLY DESTROYED** (kataphileo)” Living Oracles, Alexander Campbell, Gospel Advocate Co.

"Truth Commentaries" on 2 Peter 2:12 changes what Peter said about the same thing shall happen to these men that happened to the beast, and tried to side step by saying they only act as if they are of the same nature. **Nothing is said about a person and beast having the same nature, he added that, but Peter said that they both will have the same end, both will "be destroyed"** American Standard Version. The writer could not get around this so he changed what Peter said from both beast and corrupt men having the same end, to both having the same nature; and then he said they do not even have the same nature, but only act as if they do? The same end is not the same thing as "same nature." From where did he get same nature? Is he not a county mile from what Peter did say? Does he think only the "nature" of a person or beast is to be destroyed (phthora), but of the two, man and beast, only one will be alive after their nature is destroyed (Psalm 49:20)?

**(8) EXOLOTHREUO** is used only one time. *"And it shall be, that every soul (psukee—life—living being) that shall not hearken to that prophet, shall be **utterly destroyed** (exolothreuo) from among the people"* (Acts 3:23). It is the "psukee" (living being, person) that shall be *"utterly destroyed,"* not a deathless soul that shall be "utterly tormented from among the people." If this were speaking of an immaterial no substance "it" that is in a person unto the death of the person, the very thing many say is immortal from birth and cannot be destroyed would be *"utterly destroyed."* In Acts 3:22-23 Peter is speaking of anyone who will not hear Christ shall be *"utterly destroyed,"* not some immaterial deathless something that is in them forever preserved alive. Not only shall they that do not hearken to Christ be destroyed, they are to be *"utterly destroyed."*

- "To destroy utterly; extirpate—complete extermination" Thayer's Greek—English Lexicon.
- "To slay wholly" Vine's Expository Dictionary of New Testament Words
- "Exterminate: utterly destroy" The Analytical Greek Lexicon.

G. A. ADAMS: **"Exolothreuo is found in this one passage. This is the strongest word in Greek for the action of God towards man in his evil. There is not a shade of modification from the idea or absolute eradication. The word means clearly 'the wiping out of existence.' Even the translators used an adjective, 'utterly' to convey the idea of eradication. It clearly refers to all those who reject Christ as being eradicated."** "The Judgment," page 25.

When the strongest words in the Greek language that signify destroy or destruction are made to mean an everlasting existence in torment; there cannot be a grosser misinterpretation of language.

**(9) KATARGEO** is used 27 times. Translated (1) *Abolished*, (2) *Vanish away*, (3) *Bring to naught* (nothing), (4) *Do away with*, (5) *Destroy* (6) *Destroyed*, (7) *Be done away*, (8) *Ceased*, (9) etc.

- Death **"SHALL BE ABOLISHED** (katargeo)" (1 Corinthians 15:26). No one thinks death will exist forever in torment. If only something that is in a person, not the person that is going to be immortal, and this something is already immortal and deathless, then there would be no death to be abolished.

- Knowledge "**SHALL VANISH AWAY** (katargeo)" (1 Corinthians 13:8). Knowledge will not be tormented; the gift of speaking in tongues, prophesy, and knowledge that was given to some in the time of Paul was done away when the full revelation of the New Testament was complete.
- "God **SHALL BRING TO NAUGHT** (katargeo) *both it and THEM*" (1 Corinthians 6:13). GOD WILL BRING TO NAUGHT (bring to nothing) BOTH (1) THEIR BELLY (2) AND THEM. "Do away with both" New American Standard Version. "Destroy both" New Revised Standard Version. Their belly will go back to the dust from which it came and cease to be just as they will. God will bring to nothing "*both it (their belly) and them.*"
- "*That through death he might **BRING TO NAUGHT** (katargeo) him that had the power of death, that is, the devil*" (Hebrews 2:14), Satan is to be brought to nothing, not forever tormented. How? By being cast into the lake of fire (Revelation 20:10) "*which is the second death*" (Revelation 21:8). God made Satan, man, and all that was made out of nothing, Satan, and all lost men will return to nothing. Satan, death, the Law, and the belly shall all be brought to nothing, not eternally tormented.
- "**HAVING ABOLISHED** (katargeo) *in his flesh the enmity, even the law of commandments*" (Ephesians 2:15). No one thinks the law of commandments is being tormented forever. It was brought to naught (nothing), vanished away, was abolished just as Satan and all the lost will be. **The same word is used for the end of death, knowledge, the belly, Satan, the Law of Moses, and the lost. Whatever happens to one happens to the others.**

**Destroy** like death, is used in today's theology in a way it is not used in any English Dictionary, or is not used in everyday language by us or the world, but only by some in their special theological way. The English word "destroy" never means "torment." If the Greek word did, then "destroy" would be a very bad mistranslation. None of the Bible translations translate it "torment."

If, as many teach, destroy means banishment to Hell, then it means the same for all the creatures named in Genesis 7:21-23 where all mankind was destroyed along with all living beings not in the ark. "*Destroyed*" in King James Version, "*blotted out*" in the New American Standard. I know many that say destroy means only a lost of well-being, not death, but I know of no one who believes all living creatures never die, only have a lost of well-being; was Sodom destroyed, or did it only lose it's well-being?

**(10) APOTHNEESKO** is used 110 times and is translated die, dying, died, dead, death, perished: Apothneesko always means die or dead.

- "Christ **died** (apothennsko) *for us*" (Romans 5:8).
- "*For as in Adam all **die** (apothennsko)*" (1 Corinthians 15:22).
- "*So then, brethren, we are debtors, not to the flesh, to live after the flesh: for if **you** live after the flesh, **you shall die** (apothennsko): but if by the Spirit **you** put to death the deeds of the body, **you shall live**" (Romans 8:12-13)*
- "*For not one of us **lives** for himself, and not one **dies** (apothennsko) for himself; for if we **live**, we **live** for the Lord, or if we **die** (apothennsko), we **die** (apothennsko) for the Lord; therefore whether we **live** or **die** (apothennsko), we are the Lord's. For to this end Christ **died** (apothennsko) and **lived** again" (Romans 14:7-9). Paul is speaking of life now on*

earth, being alive or being dead, if we live to preach Christ, or if we die, are put to death because we believe in Christ, to say die means being alive makes nonsense of this passage just as it does in all the passages where die (apothennsko) is used.

It is **“you”** that will live or die, not an immortal soul that cannot die. Paul is speaking of a death (the second death) that only those who live after the flesh shall die, but those who put to death the deeds of the body shall not die, but you shall live (Revelation 2:11). To die (apothennsko) never means to live, it never means to live forever in torment, *“for if **YOU** live after the flesh, **YOU shall die** (apothennsko).”* Only believers are promised eternal life; not one passage ever says nonbelievers will ever have eternal life in Hell, or any other place, many passages say they will die.

**(11) THE DEVOURING, CONSUMING, DESTROYING FIRE** Hebrews 10:27: *“But a certain terrifying expectation of judgment and the fury of a fire that will consume the adversaries”* (New American Standard Version). Some have made the wicked into a burning bush that is not consumed (Exodus 3:2), and have put out the consuming fire of God (Hebrews 12:29). Therefore, God is no more a consuming fire. They use consume by fire to mean to burn up (see 1 Kings 18:38; Leviticus 9:24; Deuteronomy 28:38), except when it is God consuming the evil, for then it would not fit with their teaching. Therefore, consume must be used with two different meanings; (1) consume means consume when it is a thing that has been burn up, (2) but consume is changed to eternal torment if it is a person. Consume has never meant torment, not if it is a thing that has been consumed by fire, not if it is a person that has been consumed.

- *“Judgment and fiery indignation, which SHALL DEVOUR the adversaries”* King James Version.
- *“Judgment, and fiery indignation which WILL DEVOUR the adversaries”* New King James Version.
- *“Judgment, and a fierceness of fire which SHALL DEVOUR the adversaries”* American Standard Version.
- *“Judgment and the fury of a fire which WILL CONSUME the adversaries”* New American Standard Version.
- *“Judgment, and a fury of fire which WILL CONSUME the adversaries”* Revised Standard Version.
- *“Judgment, and a fury of fire that WILL CONSUME the adversaries”* New Revised Standard Version.
- *“Judgment and of raging fire that WILL CONSUME the enemies of God”* New International Version.
- *“Judgment and a fierce fire which WILL CONSUME God's enemies”* New English Bible.
- *“Judgment, of a fierce fire which WILL CONSUME God's enemies”* Revised English Bible.
- *“Judgment and the fierce fire which WILL DESTROY those who oppose God”* Today's English Version.
- *“Judgment and the fire of God's indignation, which WILL CONSUME all that sets itself against him”* Phillips Modern English.
- *“Judgment and a flaming fire TO CONSUME the adversaries of God”* New American Bible.
- *“Judgment, and of a fiery indignation, which SHALL DEVOUR the adversaries”* Living Oracles, Alexander Campbell.
- *“Judgment and fierceness of fire which is READY TO CONSUME the enemies”* McCord's New Testament Translation, Freed—Hardeman College.

The fury of fire is at the judgment; it is a consuming, devouring, destroying fire, not an everlasting tormenting fire that cannot consume. There is a big difference.

The adversaries of God will be judged, and will be devoured, consumed, destroyed by the lake of fire, which is the second death, and they will never be raised again. It is a death from which there will never be a resurrection.

**HOW FIRE IS USED IN THE OLD TESTAMENT, TO CONSUME—NEVER TO TORTURE.** Consumed by fire in the Old Testament: Literally it was a complete destruction of the person or whatever was consumed, not an eternal burning but with no destruction, not an eternal burning fire that tormented and never consumed. “*God is a consuming fire*” would be understood in the time of the New Testament just as it was used in the Old Testament, complete destruction of whatever was consumed, literally consumed—burnt up, completely destroyed by fire.

- “For the Lord your **God is a consuming fire**” Deuteronomy 4:24.
- “Then fire came out from before the Lord and **consumed** the burnt offering and the positions of fat on the altar...And fire came out from the presence of the Lord and **consumed** them, and they died before the Lord” (Leviticus 9:24-10:2).
- “Fire also came forth from the Lord and **consumed** the two hundred and fifty men who were offering the incense” (Numbers 16:35).
- “So I will send fire upon the wall of Gaza, and it will **consume** her citadels” (Amos 1:7). “And it will **consume** her citadels” (Amos 1:14).
- “But I will send a fire on its cities that it may **consume** its palatial dwellings” (Hoses 9:14).
- “Then the fire of the Lord fell, **and consumed the burnt offering** and the wood and the stones and the dust, and licked up the water that was in the trench” 1 Kings 18:38.
- “And Elijah answered and said to the captain of fifty. ‘If I am a man of God, let fire come down from heaven and **consume** you and your fifty.’ Then fire came down from heaven and **consumed** him and his fifty” (2 Kings 1:10).
- “Now when Solomon had finished praying, fire came down from heaven **and consumed the burnt offering and the sacrifices**” 2 Chronicles 7:1.
- “Fire goes before Him, and **burns up** His adversaries” Psalm 97:1-3.
- “Let sinners **be consumed** from the earth” Psalm 104:35.
- “And they will be **completely burned** with fire in their place” 2 Samuel 23:7.
- Also Ezekiel 28:18; Malachi 4:1.

**HOW FIRE IS USED IN THE NEW TESTAMENT,** completely destroyed at the judgment, a complete and total end, just as the fire consumed the burnt offering (1 Kings 18:38), and the fifty people were consumed (2 Kings 1:10).

- “For our **God is a consuming fire**” (Hebrews 12:29).
- “For if we sin willfully after that we have received the knowledge of the truth, there remains no more a sacrifice for sins, but a certain fearful expectation of judgment, and a **fierceness of fire which shall devour the adversaries**” (Hebrews 10:26-27). “**Consume**” New American Standard.
- “**Turning** the cities of Sodom and Gomorrah **into ashes** condemned them with an overthrow, having made them an example unto those that should live ungodly” (2 Peter 2:6).
- “Whose end is **to be burned**” (Hebrews 6:4-8).

- “Lord, do You want us to command fire to come down from heaven **and consume them?**” (Luke 9:54), as Elijah called fire down from Heaven and consumed the captain and his fifty men (2 Kings 1:1-15).
- “But the day of the Lord will come like a thief, in which the heavens will pass away with a roar and the elements will **be destroyed with intense heat**, and the earth and its works will be **burned up**. Since all these things are to be destroyed in this way, what sort of people ought you to be in holy conduct and godliness, looking for and hastening the coming of the day of God, because of which the heavens **will be destroyed by burning**, and the elements will melt with intense heat!” (2 Peter 3:10-13).

### **THE DEVOURING, CONSUMING DESTROYING FIRE OF GOD:**

**The chaff** (Matthew 3:11-12): Those who responded to Christ are the wheat. The chaff is the useless parts of the wheat; those who do not respond to Christ are “burned up.” Peter used the same words when he said the world and its works will be “burned up” (2 Peter 3:10). Neither the world nor the chaff will be tormented forever.

**Weeds, tares, and bad fish** (Matthew 13:30-50): Both the wheat and the tares exist together in the world, but at the end of the age God will burn the tares and save the wheat. In the parables both the tares and bad fish represent people, not souls.

**Dry branches** (John 15:1-10): Jesus is the vine. Any branches that do not bear fruit are cut off. The dry dead branches are cast into the fire and burnt up. When dead lifeless branches are burnt up, the branches do not exist, there is nothing left but ashes. “If a man abide not in me, he is cast forth as a branch, and is withered; and they gather them and cast them into the fire, and they are burned” (John 15:6). A man that does not abide in Christ is burned, and ashes are not an immortal soul in eternal torment. Unless someone can find a way to torment ashes, this teaching of Christ makes eternal torment impossible.

- There is no allusion to endless duration in any of these parables, no continuous torment; chaff that is “burned up” does not burn forever.

**Hebrews 10:29:** On the Judgment Day, when all the saved and the lost will most likely be able to see what Heaven will be like, and the lost to know that they are going to die; and know there will not be another resurrection, that they have forever missed being in Heaven, forever cut off from all the pleasure that will be derived from a life without an end, a life in Heaven with Christ, it will be a death very much sorer than physical death. It is not said that the “sorer punishment” is to be tormented forever, but some read this into it, and teach it as if it is a Bible truth; and that everlasting torment in Hell is the only “sorer punishment” that is possible. **To die forever after the judgment is a much sorer punishment than to die only unto the resurrection and judgment when all will be raised from the dead.** When we die, that death is not endless for there will be a resurrection, but the second death will be without end, for there will never be a resurrection from it.

**Hebrew 11:31:** Rahab “**perished not with them that were disobedient.**” If we know what happened to those who were disobedient then we will know what did not

happen to her. *"And they **utterly destroyed** everything in the city, both man and woman, young and old, and ox and sheep and donkey, with the edge of the sword"* (Joshua 6:21). To perish is to be utterly destroyed; to be *"utterly destroyed"* is not to have eternal life, not to be alive and tormented forever. **The same thing happened to both an ox and a man. Both perished. Both were utterly destroyed with the edge of the sword. Both were dead, only Rahab was alive.** Hebrews 11:31 is often used to teach that ox, sheep, and donkeys, *"Were utterly destroyed with the edge of the sword,"* but souls that was in the persons who was disobedient will live forever in torment for souls are immortal from birth and cannot be *"utterly destroyed."*

**Romans 9:22:** *"Vessels of wrath fitted unto destruction."* Many of today's preachers do not like the way God said this and change it to, "Vessels of wrath fitted unto an eternal life of torment;" after all they have been taught that an immortal soul cannot be destroyed.

The response I get more than all others combined is, "If there is no Hell, then it does not make any difference what we do." Most will do anything they can to live. Those who are sick do all they can to live a little longer. Only a few, who must not be right in the head, would not care if they did not live. Those who teach Hell are like a drowning man reaching for a straw; they reach for anything to save their theology. This theology belittles the death of Christ. God thought it important enough to give His only Son. Christ gave His life that we could live, but some say His gift of life to us is not important if there is no Hell to be tormented in, to die is O.K. with them. This is the same as saying, "If a soul that is in me will not go to Hell, then I do not care if I die and it does not go to Heaven, for I only want that soul to go to Heaven to keep from it going to Hell." Fear of Hell has made many hypocrites who go to church and think that they are Christians, but it has never made one true Christian. Never saved one person, but the fear of Hell have made many hypocrites, and will go on making them as long as it is taught. Anyone who goes to church because they fear Hell, and would not go without this fear is a hypocrite, not a Christian. Would they cheat on their wife, lie, and steal if it were not for fear they would be found out? If it is not from love of God, going to church for any other reason will do no good. If one is not a Christian because of the love of God and the hope of eternal life, he cannot be a Christian because of the fear of there being something in him that will go to Hell. The Lord does not add anyone to the church because of fear of the nonexistence pagan Hell. Some would say, "Has not the fear of Hell made many Christian?" No, the believing of Satan's lie over God has made many be lost even while they think they are saved. No one can be frightened into Heaven, or get to Heaven by believing Satan's lie; if a hypocrite professes to be a Christian others will see his or her lack of love and faith and be turned from Christ. Hellfire preaching is the gospel of fear used by men like Jonathan Edwards; it cannot save, it deceives.

The Judgment Day will be a fearful day for the lost (Hebrews 10:26-31). Maybe more fearful than anything a person has ever known. We will all stand before the judgment seat of God, both those who have not obeyed the Gospel, and those that have not remained faithful will face God's wrath at the judgment.

Summary: It would not be possible to say any clearer that evil men will be killed, utterly perish, be utterly destroyed just like and with the animals and things at the end of the world. All the right words, both in the Greek and in the English translation are used to show evil men will die, come to an end. It could not be said any stronger or clearer. On the other hand, none of the words used so often today are used, an undying soul, an immortal soul to save, everlasting torment, eternal Hell, your soul is going to Hell when you die, etc. these words, which are used repeatedly from today's pulpits would be an absolute must to prove today's teaching of Hell, but they are totally absent in the Bible. The parables and metaphors Christ used clearly show destruction, not torment. Did the Holy Spirit do a poor job of choosing words when He was guiding into all truth? Luckily He has some with their theology to help Him out lest a new convert understand the English words the way they are translated. Is it not unreasonable to make words in the Bible have a meaning attached to them that is unlike their use in any other book in the world?

**THE WRATH OF GOD:** *"Vengeance belongs unto me, I will recompense, and again, the Lord shall judge His people. It is a fearful thing to fall into the hands of the living God"* Hebrews 10:30-31. See Romans 2:1-16; 1 Thessalonians 1:10. The Day of Judgment will be a fearful day to the lost, a day when they must give an account to God. The Bible does not one time say His wrath will mean God will inflict everlasting pain and anguish on a soul because God had put that soul in a person that sinned.

**1) Wrath of God in this life: Many of the scriptures on the wrath of God is His wrath on the sinner now in this life** (Romans 1:18; 2 Peter 2:9). Sodom was destroyed. It was totally annihilated with all that were in it. In the flood all life not in the ark was totally destroyed, annihilated, abolished, not tormented. Throughout the Old Testament God's wrath has been in the life time of the people, cities, and nations that disobey Him; they were destroyed by fire, sword, wars, floods, famines, pestilences, but never forever tormented. Capernaum was thrust down to the grave. It does not exist today. (Note: 2 Peter 2:9 says two different things in the translations. The King James and others say the unjust **are reserved** unto the Day of Judgment to be punished, the American Standard and other say the unrighteous **are now kept under punishment** unto the Day of Judgment).

## **2) Wrath of God "in the day of judgment."**

- *"Wrath in the day of wrath and revelation of the righteous judgment of God...but unto them that are factious, and obey not the truth, but obey unrighteousness, shall be wrath and indignation, tribulation and anguish, upon every soul (psukee—person) of man that worked evil...in the day when God shall judge the secrets of man"* (Romans 2:5-16 American Standard Version).
- *"For if we sin willfully after that we have received the knowledge of the truth, there remains no more a sacrifice for sins, but a certain fearful expectation of judgment, and a fierceness of fire which shall devour the adversaries. A man that has set at naught Moses law died*

- without compassion on the word of two or three witnesses: of how much sorer punishment, think you, shall he be judged worthy, who has trodden under foot the Son of God, and has counted the blood of the covenant wherewith he was sanctified and unholy thing, and has done despite unto the Spirit of grace? For we know him that said, vengeance belongs unto me, I will recompense, and again, the Lord shall judge his people. It is a fearful thing to fall into the hands of the living God" (Hebrews 10:26-31).*
- *"And inasmuch as it is appointed unto men once to die, and after this comes judgment" (Hebrews 9:27).*
  - *"Much more then, being now justified by his blood, shall we be saved from the wrath of God through him" (Romans 5:9).*
  - *"Inasmuch as he has appointed a day in which he will judge the world in righteousness by the man whom he has ordained" (Acts 17:31).*
  - Also 1 Thessalonians 1:10; 5:9

**3) Wrath of God after the judgment:** There is not one word about the wrath of God after the Judgment Day is over. **Many mix the first two together, and misapply most of them to their Hell after Judgment Day**, which they must prove at all cost. Is it that the saved want the lost to be burning in Hell while the saved are in Heaven? **Nothing is said about God tormenting anyone after the Judgment Day is over, or about His wrath after that day, but it is taught as if it were a gospel fact.** God's wrath will be on the Judgment Day (Matthew 16:27; Luke 14:4; John 5:27-29; Acts 17:31; 1 Corinthians 4:5; 2 Timothy 4:1; 4:8; 2 Peter 3:7; Malachi 4:1-3). **What does the Bible say about God's wrath after the judgment is over? Not one word.**

**THE TYPES OF THE JUDGMENT:** The types and shadows all teach death, not an eternal life of torment. **The punishment for sin is always death.**

**1. The flood** 2 Peter 2:5: Eight lived; but for the rest of mankind there was the supreme punishment of death, not an eternal life of torment. Genesis 6:17-7: 23 *"And God said unto Noah, The **end** of all flesh is come before me... **and behold, I will destroy them with the earth...**And I, behold, I do bring the flood of waters upon the earth, to **destroy** all flesh, wherein is the breath of life, from under heaven; everything that is in the earth **shall perish...**And all flesh that moved on the earth **perished**, (died, King James Version) birds, and cattle and beasts and every swarming thing that swarms upon the earth, and all mankind; of all that was on the dry land, all in whose nostrils was the breath of the spirit of life **died**. Thus, He **blotted out** (was destroyed, American Standard Version) every living thing that was upon the face of the land, from man to animals to creeping things and to birds of the sky, and they were **blotted out** from the earth; and only Noah was left (alive) and they that were with him in the ark" (New American Standard Version). **Died, perished, was destroyed, blotted out, and not left alive was literally the end of them, all in whose nostrils was the breath of the spirit of life died.** Does anyone think *"birds and cattle and beasts and every swarming thing..."* etc., did not die when they died, and they are now living in some third world somewhere with the souls of*

these evil men that did not die when the evil men died? The flood is a type of the judgment. **The wicked will literally perish, die, be blotted out, and not be left alive; and only the saved will "remained" alive.** *"For this they willfully forget, that there were heavens from of old, and an earth compacted out of water and amidst water, by the word of God; by which means the world that then was, being overflowed with water, **perished**: but the heavens that now are, and the earth, by the same word have been stored up for fire, being reserved against the **day of judgment and destruction of ungodly man**"* (2 Peter 3: 5-7). Just as those outside of the ark were all destroyed by the flood and none, animals or man, were left alive and tormented, all those outside of Christ will be destroyed. There is no question or doubt that destroy, perish, die, and end was the end of all life at the time of the flood. **This is an example (type) of the judgment to come. Only those in the ark (Christ) will be left alive.**

**2. Sodom and Gomorrah Jude 7: "Are set forth as an example, suffering the punishment of eternal fire"** (American Standard Version). **God "Condemned them to extinction and made them an example of what is coming to the ungodly"** (2 Peter 2:6 New Revised Standard Version). These cities were literally burnt up, not still burning with the people walking around in torment. **Their end (extinction) was complete total destruction and endless; and is an example of the total destruction that is coming to the ungodly at the judgment. Sodom has ceased to exist. So thorough was its destruction that its location is not known.** It is believed to be under what is now the Dead Sea where there is no life, not plant life, or animal life. **The annihilation, end, destruction, extinction of the ungodly will be total and endless, just as it was of Sodom and Gomorrah. They will cease to exist.** *"By turning the cities of Sodom and Gomorrah to ashes he condemned them to extinction and made them an example of what is coming to the ungodly"* (2 Peter 2:6 New Revised Standard Version). God "condemned them to extinction," they were reduced to ashes and the fire went out is also a part of the example of what will happen to the ungodly. The fire did not preserve them in eternal torment, but eternally destroyed them, "condemned them to extinction." Where is the revelation that changes this example of total destruction by a fire that went out when the destruction was complete into an example of destruction that will never be complete, and the fire will never go out?

- **"Turning the cities of Sodom and Gomorrah into ashes condemned them with an over throw"** (2: Peter 2:6).
- **"Sodom and Gomorrah...are set forth as an example, suffering the punishment of eternal fire"** (Jude 7).
- Peter and Jude were speaking of the same destruction. The (1) punishment of eternal fire and (2) being turned into ashes both are speaking of these cities being totally destroyed by the fire that turned them into ashes. Ashes have no life and cannot be tormented in Hell; these cities do not now exist alive in torment in Hell. Peter not Jude

were telling their readers that God was not at that time, or that He ever would be burning the city of Sodom in a place called Hell.

2 Peter 2:6:

- *"And if by turning the cities of Sodom and Gomorrah to ashes **HE CONDEMNED THEM TO EXTINCTION and made them an example of what is coming to the ungodly**"* New Revised Standard Version.
- *"And turning the cities of Sodom and Gomorrah into ashes condemned them with an overthrow, **having made them an example unto those that should live ungodly**"* American Standard Version.
- *"He condemned the cities of Sodom and Gomorrah to destruction by reducing them to ashes, **having made them an example to those who would live ungodly thereafter**"* New American Standard Version.
- *"He condemned the cities of Sodom and Gomorrah by burning them to ashes, **and made them an example of what is going to happen to the ungodly**"* New International Version.
- *"And turning the cities of Sodom and Gomorrah into ashes, condemned them to destruction, **making them an example to those who afterward would live ungodly**"* New King James Version.
- *"And God also destroyed the evil cities of Sodom and Gomorrah by burning them until they were ashes. **He made these cities an example of what will happen to those who are against god**"* New Century Bible.
- *"And He condemned to ruin and extinction the cities of Sodom and Gomorrah, reducing them to ashes **(and thus) set them forth as an example to those who would be ungodly**"* The Amplified Bible.
- *"God reduced the cities of Sodom and Gomorrah to ashes, condemning them to total ruin **as an object lesson for the ungodly in future days**"* Revised English Bible.

If Sodom and Gomorrah are an example of what is going to happen to the ungodly, how could the ungodly have an eternal life of torment? These cities were both reduced to ashes, and when there was nothing more to burn, the fire went out. They are an example of extinction of total destruction, not of eternal torment.

What is Sodom an example of?

*"Condemned them too extinction"* — Sodom — not too an eternal life of torment?

*"Condemned them too extinction"* — ungodly—not too an eternal life of torment?

Does anyone think Sodom, a city, is now being tormented in Hell today? If it is not, then how is it an example of being tormented in Hell?

**Will there be degrees of punishment in Hell?** See (9) MORE TOLERABLE, the judgment of cities in chapter eight, part four.

**THE NOTHING CAN BE DESTROYED ARGUMENT.** In his reply to my article "From Where Came Hell" Csonka said, "They (bottles, gold, and sheep...spirits) would be in a state of detriment and not annihilation" (Truth Magazine, 1995, page 17). He makes broken bottles, and our spirits after death have the same "state." Will the bottles be "annihilation" after the earth is destroyed and return to the nothing God make all thing from, or will they still be in the same "state" as our spirit? Does he think earthly bottles will be in Heaven? All the elements (atoms) in a tree came from the soil, and were created from nothing when God made the earth; and when a tree is burnt, the elements go back to the earth.

- (1) The elements in a tree did not exist before God made the earth.
- (2) After God made the earth out of nothing, the elements existed before the tree did.
- (3) Then the elements became a tree and the tree existed.
- (4) The tree is burnt up and the tree does not exist, but the elements that had been a tree still exist just as they did before they became a tree, and these elements will exist unto the end of the earth (Peter 3:12).
- (5) When God destroys the Heavens and the earth all the elements will go back to the nothing they were before God created them from nothing.

Does he think that a tree was a tree before the seed came up? Does he think that a body that has decayed in the ground and gone back to the elements that had been in the ground for thousands of years before the person was born is still a person? Is the ashes of those that were burned at the stake still the persons; if the ashes are still the persons, how is it that many believe only a bodiless soul (that according to Robert Morey a soul is "thoughts only," is immaterial and has no substance) that is in a person will be in Heaven? But worst of all, does he think the all wise and all knowing God could not have used symbols that taught what He wanted to teach, that when God compared the lost to a tree that is burnt up that God could not burnt up a person? He is saying matter cannot be destroyed, not even when it is burnt up, it just changes back to the base elements from which it came; therefore, a soul can never be destroyed. **What base elements does he think a soul (an "immaterial, invisible part of man") is made of that it will go back to at the death of the person it had been in? When a person is burned up, are the ashes that remain conscious and in torment; are the ashes a person or a soul; do the ashes have any kind of life?** When a bottle changes back to the base elements, it is no longer a bottle, the bottle does not exist; what does he think a soul is if it has changed from a soul back to its base elements, and what does he think are the base elements of a soul that he believes has no substance? Is he saying only the materials of which souls are made are in existence? A bottle has substance, but according to today's theology a soul has no substance; he is making a comparison of something he says has no substance with the substance of a bottle that was destroyed, but that substance is no longer a bottle. Is he saying only the base element of a soul that he says has no base element, and has no substance, is in Abraham's bosom? He has made death be nothing but "a loss of well being," or "a loss of all the quality of life." Therefore, life can be nothing but "well being." The elements of a tree and the elements that a person are made of existed before the tree or the person, and the elements will exist after they return to the earth from which they came, but the elements were not a person before his or her birth, and are not a person after his or her death. If a dead body is burned, the smoke and ashes remain, but are the ashes still the person? The base elements of all things were made out of nothing and will go back to nothing at the end of the world; therefore, his argument, that nothing can be destroyed is not true for all things will be destroyed. When anyone tries to prove an error, they have

to fall back on human wisdom and misusing or changing God's word. With all love and respect, this is one of the most far out arguments I have ever heard. He must have needed something very badly with which to prove his teaching. **The impact of the teachings of Christ in these parables is so strong that some would make the words of Christ be saying nothing just to get away from it.** If a tree cannot be destroyed, then Christ the master teacher is saying nothing. Christ is made to be just a "vain babbling," speaking things that cannot be; for if they do not, then their Hell could not be.

The same science that tells us nothing can be destroyed also tells us that nothing can be created out of nothing. This science does not realize that the God that made all things out of nothing can send that which He made out of nothing back to nothing; God created everything out of nothing, He did not just remake the world out of what already existed. **Those who use the nothing can be destroyed argument to prove a person has a soul that leaves the person when the person dies, and that soul cannot be destroyed because nothing can be destroyed may give God the power to create out of nothing, but they deny God the power to destroy what He has created out of nothing;** do they not also deny God the power to destroy a soul (nehphesh) they say all living beings have if they deny Him the power to destroy a soul (nehphesh) they say all mankind has? If all the elements that were in a person's body existing after his or her death proves that person is still alive somewhere, it would also prove that person was alive somewhere before his or her birth for all the elements in the body also existed before the birth. The elements are not a person after death any more than they were a person before birth. **But, why are they using elements of this earth to prove something about souls that they say are not made of elements of this earth?** This is like a drowning man reaching for a straw. Adam was not created unto the sixth day, but the dust from which Adam was created existed before the sixth day when Adam was made from the dust, but the dust was not Adam (Genesis 2:7). After he sinned he was told, *"For **you** are dust and to dust **you** shall return"* (Genesis 3:19). The same dust that existed before Adam was not Adam, and after Adam the same dust existed but it was not Adam. If, as some teach, there is a soul that lives after the person it was in is dead and it is made up of some kind of substance that we know nothing of and that substance existed before a soul, that substance was not a soul and will not be a soul after a soul is destroyed. If that soul has no substance, if a soul is only mental thoughts with no kind of body, God created the whatever it is that has thoughts, and God can destroy anything that He created, forever put an end to the thoughts only thing if there were one.

CSONKA said, "Five of these passages are parables that do not describe what will literally happen; but, explain in the closest terms the things that will take place in the spiritual parallel." Csonka, "Truth Magazine," 1995, page 16.

Unless a tree is tormented, there is no close parallel to the teaching of eternal torment.

- If trees that are burnt up by the farmer are **destroyed**;
- And the lost that are burnt up by the Lake of Fire are **destroyed**; there is a parallel. It is the end of both.

But\_\_\_\_\_

- If trees that are burnt up by the farmer are **destroyed**;
- And if the lost that are burnt up by the Lake of Fire are **not destroyed, but are tormented**; if one (a tree) is destroyed, and the other one (a lost man) is not destroyed, there is no parallel. It is the end of one but not the other.

Summary: When we burn up something, are the ashes in conscious torment? Skins, bottles that perish (Matthew 9:17), moths destroyed cloth (Luke 12:33), foods that perished (John 6:27) are not in conscious torment after they are destroyed or perished, yet traditionalists use these to prove conscious torment after death because the materials that these things were made of are not annihilated at the time these things are destroyed. By using the same logic, the bodies of beasts are not annihilated after their death for all the elements that existed before their bodies existed will still exist after their bodies are destroyed; therefore, they are now just as conscious as people are, for none of the elements of their bodies has not been destroyed, they still exist. When a person's house burns to ashes, that person does not have a house, the house he or she did have does not exist anymore even though all the elements that were in it still exist. The "nothing can be annihilated" argument is nothing more than quibbling, it is nothing more than a deceptive play on words to prove that for which there is no proof.

We are told, "That which thinks and remembers cannot be matter; therefore, a person must have a soul, which is composed of some other substance." Animals can think and remember, some of them can think and remember very well; therefore, animals "must have a soul, which is composed of some other substance."

**THE JUSTICE OF GOD:** The argument of some is that God would not be a just God if He did not punish the sinner. They then jump from justice demands punishment to Hell being the only place God can punish the sinner; most of the time without any kind of an attempt to prove there is such a place as Hell. They are so indoctrinated that they assume the only kind of punishment there could be is their Hell, and are blind to what God does say. The question is how do they know the punishment will be in Hell when there is not one word about Hell in the Bible? There is much on the punishment being death, but nothing on it being souls being tormented by God in Hell. Death is the worst kind of punishment, but some cannot see it as a punishment because they are so blinded by their Hell theology.

**SUMMARY:** It is almost beyond belief that many, if not all of the major translations of the Bible made by men who believed in eternal torment, that none of these words are never translated torment. Not one time is it said that God or Satan will endlessly torment anyone; but it is said repeatedly, using many different words (death, die, perish, destroyed, end, and destruction) that God will destroy those who are not His children.

Neither the name, nor a place called "Hell" is not in the Bible in the Greek New Testament, or the Hebrew Old Testament. It was put into the Bible in the

Dark Ages by mistranslating. It changes the God of love into an evil god of infinite horrors. It is a gospel and a god that is very different that the Gospel and the God of the Bible (Galatians 1:8-9).

Christ said, *“But in vain do they worship me, teaching as their doctrines the precepts of men”* (Matthew 15:9). Could a doctrine that changes what God said, *“The wages of sin is death”* (Romans 6:23) to, *“The wages of sin is an endless life being endlessly tormented by God”* be anything but vain worship?

## CHAPTER EIGHT

The interpretation of figurative language, metaphors, and symbolic passages, first resurrection and second death, an immortal soul or resurrection of the dead

**Part 1: The rich man and Lazarus.** The intermediate bosom

**Part 2: Israel's destruction,** her weeping, gnashing of teeth, outer darkness, Matthew 24—Preterits Eschatology—Realized Eschatology—A. D. 70 Doctrine—The day of the Lord—2 Peter 3

**Part 3: The symbolical pictures of Revelation versus a literal interpretation—**Souls under the altar—The smoke of their torment goes up forever and ever—The lake of fire

**Part 4: Forever and ever** of the King James Version—**Eternal**

Those who believe in the Pagan doctrine of an immortal soul from birth and Hell have no plain statements. **That they must reinterpret figurative language, metaphors, and symbolic passages into literal statements shows the weakness of their belief** that it is from man and not from God. Parables and figurative language are made to be superior over plain statements. The clear language must be changed to agree with what is thought to have been said in the symbolic language; therefore, **many literal passages must be made figurative to keep them from being in conflict with the interpretation given to the figurative passages.** Many of the metaphors about the destruction of Israel have been discussed in the first seven chapters. This chapter is a look at some of the symbolic passages that are often changed into literal statements.

---

### Chapter Eight—PART ONE

#### The Interpretation Of Figurative Language

#### Metaphors And Symbolic Passages

#### THE INTERMEDIATE BOSOM

#### THE RICH MAN AND LAZARUS Luke 16:19-31

This parable makes no reference to eternity, it is while the rich man had brethren living on the earth, therefore; before the resurrection and before the Judgment Day. This parable is one of the most used scriptures to prove both (1) that persons have something in them that has no substance, and only this something goes to Heaven or Hell, (2) or when the person it is in dies, this something that is in the person leaves the person and goes into a holding place unto the resurrection. If this were a

literal story and not a parable, as many believe it is, it would be both in conflict with and a contradiction of the belief that a soul leaves the person it was in and that soul at once goes to Heaven or Hell at the death of the person; if there were a soul and it went to Abraham's bosom as soon as the person died, went to Abraham's bosom before the resurrection it would be positive proof that a soul does not instantly go to Heaven or Hell at the death of the person it had been in, and positive proof that the dead are alive before and without the resurrection, that the resurrection is not needed.

Does hades have a good side and a bad side? Will those that are alive on the good side of hades, or those that are alive on the bad side of hades be raised from the dead even though we are told that the dead in hades are not dead? **This is used to prove that there is conscious life for the dead when they are dead, life before the dead are resurrected and judged at the coming of Christ; that the dead do not need the resurrection to be alive. It makes life precede the resurrection and punishment precedes the judgment.**

Many realizing that the Orthodox teaching that there is something in a person that goes to Heaven or Hell at death is not from the Bible, and "it" will not be in Heaven before and without a resurrection and judgment, knew they had to have an intermediate or third place that is not Heaven or Hell to put immortal souls from death unto the resurrection, if there were immortal souls. Is the best they can do is to try to make a parable into a true story, making Abraham's bosom into a holding place unto the resurrection? In doing this, they must set aside the plain teaching on death and the resurrection as if they did not exist. Making this into a real story, and not a parable is a life or death struggle with them; it is absolute necessary for this to be a true story for the Bible gives them nowhere for a living soul to be living in before the resurrection; there is no other place, and they need to make this into a real place. If they do not, they have a living soul with nowhere for it to be living in before the resurrection and judgment. This version says there cannot be a soul in Heaven, or a soul in their Hell unto the resurrection, but they must have somewhere to keep a soul. They cannot even agree among themselves, for some say it is a parable, and some say, "No it is a true story." Many that think it is a parable will use it as if it were a true story; they say it teaches the same thing either way. "Notes On The Parables Of Our Lord" by R. C. Trench is ranked as one of the best on the parables. He says this is a parable, and on page 17 says parables are not to be made the first sources to teach a doctrine. To go from the clear to the obscure has been recognized as the law of Scriptural interpretation, but this has been forgotten by those looking for an argument to sustain a weak position, and often invent for themselves support in parables. On page 162 Trench says it is most important to keep in mind that this parable has as it's central thought the rebuke of unbelief. Nevertheless, this parable is used as the first and only source to teach a doctrine that is not found in any other

part of the Bible.

Some that believe in Hell often point to Luke 16 to prove there is torment after death, but when pushed, most of them will admit hades is not Hell, but they need to prove there is torment in Hell; therefore, use the torment of the rich man in hades in this parable and hope in some way to transfer the torment in this parable to torment in Hell. **Even if this were a true story and not a parable, it may prove that there is torment before the resurrection, (1) but it would prove nothing about what will be after the resurrection, (2) or that there will even be a Hell after the resurrection, (3) or even if it were a true story it says nothing about the existence of separated souls; in this parable it was the rich man himself that was in torment, not a soul that had been in the rich man, it was Lazarus himself that was comforted, not a soul after it had left the dead Lazarus.** It says nothing about a soul, nothing about a spirit, nothing about Hell yet, Luke 16 is one of the most used passages to try to prove there is a Hell, and that there is torment in Hell even though there is nothing about Hell in the parable. They are desperately looking for proof of Hell, which they cannot find. This parable says nothing of Heaven, Hell, nothing of a soul, nothing of the resurrection, or the judgment. The complete silence of the scriptures about the dead being anywhere before the resurrection other than the grave is a deathblow to the doctrine of an immortal soul; Those who make this parable into a literal story are (1) trying to prove the Abraham's bosom view, (2) or to prove Hell, both use it to put aside hundreds of plain passages of scripture.

**PARABLES IN LUKE 15 AND 16:** A discourse to the Pharisees and Scribes.

- (1). The lost sheep (Luke 15:3-7).
- (2). The lost coin (Luke 15:8-10) not called a parable.
- (3). The lost son (Luke 15:11-32) "*a certain man*" not called a parable.
- (4). The unjust steward (Luke 16:1-13) "*a certain rich man*" not called a parable.
- (5). The rich man and Lazarus (Luke 16:19-31) "*a certain rich man*" not called a parable.
  - o Four of the five are not called a parable.
  - o Three of the five begin with "*a certain...man.*"
  - o Two of the five have "*a certain rich man.*"
  - o No one makes the other four be a true story, but they desperately need the rich man and Lazarus to be a true story to have proof of their doctrine.

Five "*a certain*" in a row.

- (1). "*A certain man*" (Luke 14:16).
- (2). "*A certain man*" (Luke 15:11). No one questions these two being a parable.
- (3). "**A certain rich man**" (Luke 16:1). And no one questions this being a parable.
- (4). "**A certain rich man**" (Luke 16:19). Why do many question this being a parable?
- (5). "*And a certain beggar named Lazarus*" (Luke 16:20).

**Christ used "a certain" 18 times, and all 18 are in parables** (Matthew 18:23; 21:28; 31:23; 22:2; Mark 12:1; Luke 7:41; 10:30; 10:31; 10:33; 12:16; 13:6; 14:16; 15:11; 16:1; 16:19; 16:20; 19:12; 20:9). No one questions that the other 16 times "a

*certain*" is used as being in parables, only the two in this parable to make them fit with the literal view, but it is **desperately needed** for this not to be a parable for it to be proof of the doctrine of Hell, **even if it makes the passage contradict what is believed about Hell even by those that use it.**

Not a certain **soul**

- The **man** died
- The **man** was in Abraham's bosom
- It was the "*certain man*" that the rich **man** wanted to bring water
  - Nothing was said about a soul

The objection of some is that it is not called a parable. More than half, 15 of the 26 parables in Luke are not called a parable. The three parables before this one that are a part of the series of five parables, all five were spoken to the Pharisee and Scribes in the same speech are not called parables, but no one questions them being parables. The objection of others is that parables do not use proper names. "*And he took up his parable, and said, 'From **Aram** has **Balak** brought me, the king of **Moab** from the mountains of the East: come, curse me **Jacob**, and come, defy **Israel**'"* (Numbers 23:7). Not one but **five proper names** are used in one parable. "**Satan**" (Mark 4:14) and "**the son of man**" (Matthew 13:37) are used in parables, also Ezekiel 23:1-4. Even if this were the only parable in the Bible that used a name, which it is not, who made the rule that Jesus could not use a name in one, ten, or ten thousand parables?

This is the last in a series of five parables, all five were spoken to the Pharisee and Scribes, and all five were in the same speech. All five have people, but no one takes the people in the first four to be actual people, but fictitious people used to teach the Pharisees to whom these five parables were spoken.

(1). A man with a hundred sheep (Luke 15:3-7). "*Both the Pharisees and scribes began to grumble...and he told them this parable*" (Luke 15:2-3).

(2). The woman with two coins (Luke 15:8-10).

(3). Two sons and a father (Luke 15:11-32).

(4). The cunning servant (Luke 16:1-17).

(5). Rich man, Lazarus, Abraham's bosom (Luke 16:14-31). "*Now the Pharisees...were listening to all these things...and He said to them*" (Luke 16:14-15).

**Those who make this parable into a literal story do not accept the main part of it as being literal.** They do not accept Abraham's bosom as being a literal place, but as a symbolic place; his literal bosom had turned to dust many years before, and there would not be room for even one person in Abraham's literal bosom; therefore, if part of it cannot be literal none of it can be literal, if it is a true story then all of it must be literal. It is either a symbolic picture, or it is a true story. It cannot be a mixture of the two; it cannot be part literal and part a true story. Does anyone believe Lazarus was literally carried to Abraham's literal bosom by angels?

Many want to make this a true story and not a parable to use it to prove Hell, but the only part they want to be a true story is the one word "torment" even though it is clear that the "torment" in this parable is not torment in Hell; the rich man was not being tormented in Hell and Lazarus was not in Heaven.

**IF THIS WERE A TRUE STORY AND NOT A PARABLE:** If one attempts to explain all the elements as though they are literal, the difficulties of making this be a true story will be seen.

**If this were a true story** is has both punishment and reward coming before the resurrection and Judgment Day.

**If this were a true story** for those that believe the newer version of Hell, that no one will be in Hell before the Judgment Day, the rich man being in a conscious state before the resurrection, judgment, and second death would not prove there was an immortal soul that had been in the rich man when he was alive would not prove eternal torment, or anything that is to be after the Judgment Day (nothing is said about a soul after that soul had left the dead rich man that it had been in when the rich man was alive), it speaks about two men, the rich man and Lazarus, not about two souls that had been in the two man before their death, not about two souls that are now in Abraham's bosom.

**If this is a true story, it is in direct conflict with Christ and Paul.** Christ said, *"For you shall be recompensed in the resurrection of the just"* (Luke 14:14); but if this is a true story, their recompense is in "Abraham's bosom" immediately after death before the resurrection. What will happen after death? Christ said, *"For the hour comes, in which **all that are in the tombs** (not in Abraham's bosom) shall hear his voice, and come forth: they that have done good, unto the resurrection of life; and they that have done evil, unto the resurrection of judgment"* (John 5:28-29). If hades is not the grave, **no one will be in the tombs when Christ comes.** Paul said, *"There is laid up for me a crown of righteousness, which the Lord...shall give me at that day"* (2 Timothy 4:8).

**If this is a true story** it would make Christ be against Christ in this teaching, and in His teaching in Matthew 12:15; Mark 3:24-25; Luke 14:17-18. The resurrection keeps getting in the way of the immortal soul doctrine, for it seems to be more than just a little difficult to have a resurrection of something that is alive and not dead.

- If all go to Heaven or Hell instantly after death, no one will be in the tombs when Christ comes.
- If all go to Abraham's bosom, or the bad side across the gulf, no one will be in the tombs when Christ comes.

**If this is a true story** it makes the judgment a mockery and an empty show. All would be judged instantly after death. Souls that were in the wicked would now be being punished, and souls that were in the saved would now be being rewarded

before the Judgment Day; therefore, both punishment and reward would begin immediately after death without the judgment, not after the resurrection.

**If this is a true story**, it makes the resurrection useless and not needed by making souls that were in believers be rewarded before the resurrection, rewarded only because the person that a soul was put in was a person that became a believer. No soul would be dead; it makes void the teaching of Christ about the resurrection of the dead at His coming. Not only would the resurrection be useless, but also a lie for souls that were alive any place could not be resurrected; they would be as alive as they will ever be, and at the second coming of Christ no soul will be in the grave to "*come forth*" (John 5:28-29). They would have to "come back" from somewhere, but it would not be a resurrection of the dead. (1) coming back from "Abraham's bosom," if made to be a real place in a true story, (2) and the teaching of a soul going directly to Heaven or Hell after death, both makes a resurrection impossible and not needed. **A living soul coming back from Abraham's bosom, or coming back from Heaven to be judged for what a person did that it had been in would not be a resurrection of the dead, not a resurrection of a soul, not a resurrection of the person that soul had been in.** Any doctrine which makes the dead not be dead, and those who are asleep are not asleep, makes a resurrection an impossibility and useless.

**If this is a true story and not a parable, it is an undeniable contradiction of the Protestant view that all souls goes directly to Heaven or to Hell after the death of the persons they were in.** A soul that was in Lazarus could not be in hades in Abraham's bosom if it went to Heaven at Lazarus's death.

**If this is a true story** it makes the wages of sin being death not possible. There would be no real death; to be dead would be to be alive in another form. It is used to show the nature of punishment after death in Hell, but **even if it were a true story, it says nothing about anything after the judgment or about Hell. It does not mention a soul, Heaven, or Hell, but is used to prove all three. It does not mention Jesus, God, the judgment, or the resurrection.**

**If this is a true story** it makes being rich the only reason for going to "Hell," and being poor the only reason for going to Heaven; "*but Abraham said son, remember that you in your lifetime received the good things, and Lazarus in like manner evil things: but now here he is comforted, and you are in anguish.*" **There is no other reason given for the rich man going where he went and Lazarus going where he went.** Which one of the two do you compare yourself with, the rich man or Lazarus? It would make most of us be going to Hell and be with the rich man. Not many of us have been "*laid at his gate, full of sores, and desiring to be fed with the crumbs that fell from the rich man's table.*"

**If this is a true story** how did Abraham say the five brothers could be saved, not believing in Jesus, but by believing Moses and the prophets were there only hope.

**If this is a true story** it would be an actual description of the intermediate state, which must be true in every detail, such as praying to Abraham, able to see and hear those in torment. A soul that had been in a saved person would receive its reward or punishment immediately after the death of the person it was in, and a soul of the lost would receive its reward or punishment immediately after the death of the person it was in before and without the resurrection and Judgment Day.

**If this is a true story** it is when the rich man had brothers living on earth, not after the judgment; therefore, those who believe the Abraham bosom version could not use it to prove that is a Hell after the judgment for they teach no soul will be in Hell unto after Judgment Day; according to then no one in Hell will have brothers living on the earth. The message that the rich man wanted taken to his brothers was not the gospel of Christ, but message of the Law; it was before the Christian age, it was given when the rich man and his brothers were under the Law.

**If this is a true story** those who believe there is an immortal soul that is in a person, and only it (whatever they believe a soul to be) will live after the death of the person, and believe the rich man and Lazarus to be two bodiless immortal souls after the death of the persons that these souls were in. **This is the point they want to make, that a person has an immaterial something in them that lives after the death of the person.** Do they think one immaterial immortal soul would want another immaterial soul to bring it a drop of water?

(1). They tell us the "soul" of both the saved and the lost are in hades.

(2). They tell us at the death of the person "*the spirit returns to God*" (Ecclesiastes 12:7).

- They have the "soul" in hades, and the "spirit" in Heaven at the same time.

**If this were a true story** souls in Abraham's bosom would be able to hear and see souls on the other side of the gulf. The gulf must be narrow enough to be in speaking distance. Could parents be in joy while they watched their children in agony? Could anyone be happy and have peace while they could hear the cries of anguish of those on the other side? Would you be happy if you were confined in a place for centuries where you had to see the agony, and hear the screaming of some of your loved ones; would that be a reward for anyone; but if this is a true story then you will see and hear their agony and screaming? Even most who believes this to be a parable do not believe the good and the bad dead can talk to each other, or that the dead can now come back and talk to the living, as the rich man wanted Lazarus to do. According to the way Revelation 6:9-10 is used by those that use this passage to prove Hell, Hell is a lake of fire with the lost souls in the lake, and the saved souls sitting on the shore watching their torment, and according to the beliefs of many, the souls on the shore would be asking God to torment those in the lake more.

**If it were a true story** it is the one place in the Bible where the veil is drawn aside and we can see what it is like after death. We can even hear the conversation of

souls on the other side of death, and it was given to unbelievers, the Pharisees and Scribes. Luke 15 and 16 is a discourse to them, not to the Apostles.

**If this were a true story** we have a biblical example of praying to a Saint and to a person as if he were God, which we are forbidden to do. If after death anyone can pray to Saint Abraham, why do most who are orthodox teach we cannot now pray to Saint Abraham or any other saint?

**THIS PARABLE HAS ELEMENTS THAT COULD NOT BE TRUE IN A TRUE STORY.** (1). **If this is not a parable**, and if the rich man and Lazarus are real people, **Then Abraham is also a real person, but he is now in the place of a God.** Is he a God? No, for this is a parable, not a true story. **If it were a true story it would make Abraham, not God, the source of reward after death. God or Christ are not mentioned in the parable.** If taken literally, Abraham is put into a position of being a God, which he never was, is not, and never will be. Coffman said the element of Abraham presiding over paradise forces one to seek an analogy, "Commentary On Luke," Abilene Christian University Press, page 385. Lazarus in the bosom of the God Abraham can have no parallel in reality; it is a parable, not a true story. It cannot be both. It cannot have both an allegorical and a literal meaning. If it did, how would one be different from the other?

- Abraham is **not** a God. This is figurative language, not a true story.
- Abraham's bosom is **not** a place. This is figurative language, not a true story.
- Abraham's bosom is **not** literally the home of the saved after death. This is figurative language, not a true story. Many died before Abraham was born. They could not have gone to Abraham's bosom, a place where Abraham presided over before Abraham was born, before Abraham's bosom could have existed; but those who believe in Abraham's bosom view believe all the saved in the Old Testament went to it; therefore, Abraham's bosom could only be symbolic language.

(2). **Many regard this as a parable, but they reason and draw conclusions from it as though it were a literal true story.** They go both ways as it suits them. "No reason why Luke 16:19-31 should be viewed only as a parable," Samuel Csonka, Guardian Of Truth, January 5, 1995, page 16.

This article by Csonka in the Guardian of Truth says it is a parable, but it's author thinks it is also a true story both at the same time! It could not be both, and the article says it is a parable. It cannot, as Csonka says it does, "mean the same thing" if it is a parable that it would if it is a true story. **It must be 100% a true story, or 100% a parable.** It cannot be a mixture of the two. **If it is a literal true story, every detail must be true and have a literal true meaning.** Those who say it is a true story find parts of it that will not fit into what they believe, and always try to make these parts be a metaphor or parable. Abraham's bosom had literally turned to dust long before Jesus gives this parable. If his bosom is used symbolical, and is not Abraham's literal bosom, the rest of the account must also be symbolic, and this is not the literal experience of the two men after they died. In a metaphor, one part of it is never

figurative with another part literal. If Abraham's bosom is figurative, then Lazarus in his bosom must also be figurative and not a real person, otherwise, a real person would be in a figurative bosom. We cannot make any part of a metaphor be a literal statement just because we want it to be, or we need it to be to prove something we want to prove. If "*Abraham's bosom*" is a real place, where is Abraham? In his own bosom! If Abraham's bosom is a real place where souls go after the death of the persons they were in, where is it, and why do we not read of it in any other passage any place in the whole Bible; if it is not the grave, Heaven, or Hell, where is it? If this were a true story, both the rich man and Lazarus died, but they did not die, neither one would be dead, it this was Lazarus himself that was alive, or a soul was alive that had been in Lazarus before Lazarus died, either one would be alive before and without the resurrection, just as alive as it would be possible for them to be after they were resurrected. If this were a true story it would make the resurrection 100% useless.

E. D. SLOUGH, evangelist, church of Christ: "We want to know if this was a real experience, and if it teaches the condition of the dead. Let it be remembered, then, according to the philosophy that they are 'spirits.' Will you tell me how you reason that a 'spirit's tongue' can be cooled with water? 'Oh' you say, 'that represents'—**hold on, no representations go in a real circumstance.** If you say it is real, stay with it. This policy of making it half literal and half figurative, just because there is an end to gain, is a nature 'fakir' in theology. It, therefore, represents nothing if it is a real circumstance, as you affirm. How could Lazarus carry a drop of water on his '**spiritual**' finger? You say, 'Oh, that doesn't mean literal water.' Well sir, it does or you do not mean what you say, I care not who you are. But reason with me. How could a *spiritual tongue* be cooled with a drop of water? 'Oh,' you say, 'that must not be pressed too literal,' **no, not too literal, but just as literal as in any real circumstance. If it was a literal fact, then the details, which make it up are literal facts also. And to deny that it to deny your position.** Here is a stubborn fact. The narrative say the rich man did call on Abraham to send Lazarus. That he wanted Lazarus to dip his finger in water. And he wanted Lazarus to put that water on his tongue. And the reason was that he was tormented in the flame. That very portrait, if it was a real circumstance, will compel every one of you to admit that the torment of the intermediate state is produced by fire. How do you like it? Then stop saying it is a sort of compunction of conscience. For understand, conscience was never known to call for water to cool it. Get that? It will no doubt be granted willingly, that for a real circumstance, the peculiar incidents connected with it here make this the most remarkable and phenomenal case on record. For we would be forced to concede that a spirit craved water, that it gets thirsty or feverish, and that it asked a favor of Abraham instead of God, that it was God who rendered the verdict and cast him in prison, that Abraham has no right or jurisdiction in the matter, and a hundred other things that make this narrative an absolute mystery, if it be a real circumstance." "The Indictment Of Eternal Torment—The Self—negation Of A Monstrous Doctrine," page 262, F. L. Rowe, Publisher, 1914. This book is free on line at: [www.robertwr.com/EternalTorment.htm](http://www.robertwr.com/EternalTorment.htm)

(3). This is the only parable in which some try to make an allegory literal, but only the parts of it they want to be literal for they do not want the whole story to be literal. It would teach things they do not believe. It would teach that souls that are in the many (the poor) would be saved, and that souls that are in the few (the rich) will be

lost. What about Abraham? He was very rich. It is not said the rich man was evil or sinful, just rich; but those who teach innate immortal have a real person in torment before the judgment, before he is judged and found guilty. It is not said Lazarus was good and faithful, or even that he knows of God, just that he was poor, as are millions; but being rich is not sinful, and being poor will not save. **Not one good thing is said about Lazarus, not one bad thing about the rich man.** There is nothing negative said about the rich man, and nothing positive about Lazarus in their lifetime, but they have Lazarus who they say is a real person being rewarded before being judged; but if this was a true story, was it Lazarus himself, or was it a soul that was in Abraham's bosom? After all, according to the immortal soul doctrine, people are not in Heaven, Hell, or Abraham's bosom, only souls are, only a soul that had been in a Lazarus would be alive after the death of Lazarus.

(4). It would teach that a soul that had been in the rich man, would be in a supernatural state (not of this earth); therefore, that soul would have a much greater knowledge of supernatural things than we now have, that soul would believe or know that souls could come back to earth and teach the living, the rich mans brothers. This is not what most believes, but it would greatly support the spiritualist who says they can call the dead back.

(5). What bodies would the rich man or Lazarus have when their earthly body was still in the grave? They will not have a "*spiritual body*" unto the resurrection (1 Corinthians 15:44). Do disembodied spirits that have no body and are immaterial, and invisible have human body parts? The rich man has "*eyes*" and "*tongue*." Lazarus has a "*finger*." Abraham has a "*bosom*." Is there a third kind of body, which has these earthly parts? What would a "spirit" or "soul," which does not have an earthly body want with water? Only in speaking in a metaphor can it be said that God or any spiritual being has a human part, or to want water. How could an immaterial, invisible soul have body parts or want water? It would make this immaterial soul be very material.

(6). If the rich man were a real person in torment, God would be unjust to be tormenting him without his knowing why. If he knew why he was being tormented, he would have known that Lazarus could not come to take his torment away by bring him water.

(7). The rich man wanted Lazarus to go to his brothers "*from the dead*." How could Lazarus "*go to them from the dead*" (Luke 16:30) or "*rise from the dead*," (Luke 16:31) if he were not dead, but he was alive in Heaven or Abraham's bosom?

(8). If this were not a parable it would only teach what would be in the intermediate state from death unto the judgment; there is nothing in it that would teach eternal torment after the Judgment Day. Nothing is said about Heaven, or anyone or any soul being in Heaven or Hell.

(9). If this were not a parable what *“died, and was buried?”* Who was the *“he”* that *“lifted up his eyes”* in hades after *“he”* died? Orthodoxy says death is not possible for an immortal soul. The *“beggar died”* (Luke 16:22), The rich man *“also died, and was buried”* (Luke 16:22). What *“died?”* In the parable whatever *“died”* of Lazarus was what was *“carried away by the angels into Abraham’s bosom”*; whatever *“died and was buried”* of the rich man was what *“in Hades he lifted up his eyes, being in torment.”* According to the parable what *“died and was buried,”* the body or a soul that we are told repeatedly that it could not have *“died.”* If a soul was what was carried to Abraham’s bosom, then it was a soul that *“died and was buried.”*

AL MAXEY: "To fabricate a theology of disembodied spirits and Hadean holding cells and everlasting torture of the wicked from this passage is an unconscionable abuse of biblical interpretation and should be rejected by all disciples intent upon discerning and declaring Truth rather than perpetuating the tedious tenets of paganistic Tradition" Reflections, Issue #28, April 4, 2003.

ADAM CLARKE: "Let it be remembered that by the consent of all (except the basely interested), no metaphor is ever to be produced in proof of a doctrine. In the things that concern our eternal salvation, we need the most pointed and express evidence on which to establish the faith." Clarkes Notes on Matthew 5:26.

R. C, TRENCH: "The parables are not to be made first sources of doctrine. Doctrines other wise grounded may be illustrated, or even further confirmed by them; but it is not allowable to constitute doctrines first by their aid. For from the literal to the figurative, from the clearer to the more obscure, has ever been recognized as the law of Scripture interpretation. This rule, however, has been often forgotten, and controversialists, looking around for arguments with which to sustain some weak position, often invent for themselves supports in these" Notes On The Parables Of Our Lord, page 17, 1948.

Luke 16:19-32 – Very similar – Isaiah 14:9-20.

1. Both the rich man and king of Babylon go there after death.
2. Both represent nations.
3. Both are represented as being alive.
4. Both found person(s) to speak with.
5. Both are not to be taken literally.

### **Three conflicting views, three different gospels Galatians 1:6-9.**

(1). Luke 16 is used to prove at death the body dies, then a soul or a spirit (?) goes to hades or Abraham’s bosom unto the resurrection.

(2). At the death of the person a soul or a spirit that had been in the person goes to Heaven or Hell.

(3). Ecclesiastes 12:7 is used to prove that a spirit (breath of life) in **all** persons came from God at their birth, both the saved and the unsaved, and at death a spirit that has been in **all** persons goes back to God.

Which one do you believe? All three cannot be true. Many who believes a soul that was in the dead goes to hades to be with the rich man in torment, or to be in *“Abraham’s bosom”* also believe and teach when a soul leaves the person it was in that soul goes directly to Heaven to *“be with the Lord.”* They seem not to be able to see that they are making the immortal soul that was in the dead go immediately to

Heaven or Hell after the death of the person; therefore, they have made this that they teach as a true story impossible. No soul could be in "Abraham's bosom" and in Heaven simultaneously. How many of the three conflicting gospels do you believe? Does the orthodox view not know what the orthodox view is? If a soul of the dead goes to Heaven or Hell at death, why did Luke say the rich man was in hades; hades and Hell are not the same place, yet this is one of not the most used passages to prove souls that were in the lost go to eternal torment in Hell at death. **Do those who believe the Abraham's bosom view forget that they teach no one will be in Heaven before the judgment? Yes, they almost always do forget at funerals and have the dead person, not a soul, looking down at their own funeral.** Those who teach dead loved ones are in Heaven looking down at us almost always make Lazarus in Abraham's bosom be in Heaven, and the rich man to be in Hell; do they think Abraham is literally in Heaven, and Lazarus is literally in Abraham bosom in Heaven with those in Hell literally asking Abraham to send those in his bosom down to Hell with water?

D. SLOUGH, evangelist, church of Christ: "Useless, perhaps, to point to Johnson...and hundreds of other learned men who select this parable to prove an immediate entrance at death into joy or sorrow. Never seemingly able to discover the impossibility of making it accommodate itself to such requirement. No wonder they become utterly nonplussed when the discrepancies involved in such a course are brought squarely to their attention through other scriptures. This fact has been tested time and time again with the same result—that of quibble and evasion pure and simple" "The Indictment Of Eternal Torment—The Self—negation Of A Monstrous Doctrine," page 254, F. L. Rowe, Publisher, 1914. On line at: [www.robertwr.com/EternalTorment.htm](http://www.robertwr.com/EternalTorment.htm)

**THE RICH MAN:** This is an allegory to the Jews who were rich in God's blessing. Israel was spiritually rich (see Romans 9:3-5). All Luke 16 is on the subject of stewardship. The Jews failed to share with the Gentiles giving them only the crumb, and most of the Jews failed to believe in Christ. The Gentiles were spiritually poor. This parable is a satire condemning the Jewish nation, the Scribes, and Pharisees. Christ used one of their own uninspired fables that those He was speaking to would know about (see Josephus and others), which He changed only slightly as the base of this parable to show the end of the Jewish nation as God's chosen people. See Matthew 21:43-45; 24:2; Luke 13:28; Matthew 23:1-39. Throughout much of the Old Testament Israel did not obey God, and they rejected Christ; therefore, were rejected by God. Israel is no longer His chosen people. Their torment was being without God and rejected by Him, and as a nation Israel is dead and in hades, the grave. When they reject Christ there was no comfort for them, no water to cool their tongue (Luke 16:24).

A picture of the rich Jews and the poor Gentiles is given in Matthew 15:22-27. *"And behold, a Canaanitish women came out from those borders, and saying, have mercy on me, O Lord...But he answered and said, I was not sent but unto the house of Israel. But, she came and worshipped him saying, Lord help me. And he*

answered and said, 'It is not good to take the children's (Israel's) bread and cast it to the dogs (Gentiles).' But she said, 'Yea, Lord: for even the dogs eat of the crumbs which fall from their masters' table.'" He gives her the crumbs and healed her daughter.

"And I say unto you, that many shall come from the east and the west, and shall sit down with Abraham, and Isaac, and Jacob, in the kingdom of heaven: but the sons of the kingdom shall be cast forth into outer darkness: there shall be the weeping and the gnashing of teeth" (Matthew 8:11-12). "Therefore say I unto you, the kingdom of God shall be taken away from you, and shall be given to a nation bringing forth the fruits thereof" (Matthew 21:43). "O Jerusalem...your house is left unto you desolate" (Matthew 23:37-38).

"Odunaomai" is used only four times in the New Testament, and is translated "tormented" in the King James Version in Luke 16:24 and 25, but is translated "in anguish" both times in the American Standard Version. It is used only two other times and was translated "sorrowing" in the King James Version. Odunaomai as it is translated in the American Standard Version in the only four times it is in the Greek.

1. "Behold, your father and I sought you sorrowing (odunaomai)" (Luke 2:48).
2. "For I am in anguish (odunaomai)" in this flame" (Luke 16:24).
3. "But now here he is comforted, and you are in anguish (odunaomai)" (Luke 16:25).
  - o "Tormented" King James Version
  - o "Anguish" American Standard Version, Revised Standard Version, The Living Bible
4. "They all wept sore, and fell on Paul's neck and kissed him, sorrowing (odunaomai) most of all for the word which he has spoken, that they should behold his face no more" (Acts 20:37-38).
  - a. Does anyone believe either Mary or the elders at Miletus were tormented? By the way it was translated the King James translators they did not, but they saw in it's use in Luke a way to add eternal torment by making odunaomai have two completely difference meaning.
  - b. Strong's Concordance says odunaomai (word 3601) is "to grieve—sorrow" is from word 3602 "grief (as dejecting)—sorrow."

**The anguish** (or sorrowing, not torment) **of the rich man was Israel's sorrowing because of being rejected by God as a nation.** Sorrowing, anguish, and distressed are emotions or strong feeling that a person has within himself, not something that comes from without.

Young's Literal translation: "And having cried, he said, Father Abraham, deal kindly with me, and send Lazarus, that he may dip the tip of his finger in water, and may cool my tongue, because I am **distressed** (odunaomai)" in this flame. And Abraham said, Child, remember that thou did receive good things in thy life, and Lazarus in like manner the evil things, and now he is comforted, and thou art **distressed** (odunaomai)" (Luke 16:24-15).

This parable is about those who were rich in God's blessing, and those who were poor in God's blessing, not a literal story about a person who was a beggar. "Ptokos" is used thirty-four times in the New Testament, and is always translated "poor"

except in this parable and Galatians 4:9 where it is mistranslated “*beggar*” in the King James Version, and translated “*poor*” in the New American Standard.

- “*And given to the poor (ptokos)*” Matthew 26:11.
- “*A certain poor (ptokos) widow*” Mark 12:42.
- “*Preach the gospel to the poor (ptokos)*” Luke 4:18.
- “*Contribution to the poor (ptokos) saints*” Romans 15:26.
- “*As poor (ptokos), yet making many rich*” 2 Corinthians 6:10.
- “*And a certain poor (ptokos) man named Lazarus*” Luke 16:20 New American Standard.

This parable is about the Jews who were rich in God’s word and the rest of the world that was poor (ptokos), in spiritual poverty, “*Having no hope and without God in the world*” (Ephesians 2:12).

DR. GILL, an orthodox Protestant who believed in the intermediate state of the dead, in his commentary of Luke said, “*The rich man died: It may also be understood of the political and ecclesiastical death of the Jewish people, which lay in the destruction of the city of Jerusalem, and of the temple, and in the abolition of the temple worship, and the whole ceremonial law: a Loammî was written upon their church state, and the covenant between God and them was broken; the gospel was removed from them, which was as death...their civil power and authority, were taken away from them by the Romans.*” Many orthodox writers say the same.

**LAZARUS:** Lazarus is the Gentiles, the people in spiritual poverty who had only the crumbs of God's blessing (see Matthew 15:21-26), but become the seed of Abraham—the church. Lazarus (the Gentiles) becomes rich in God's blessing by the Gospel. Christ says, “*The kingdom of God shall be taken away from you, and shall be given to a nation bringing forth the fruits thereof*” (Matthew 21:43). “*That the blessing of Abraham might come on the Gentiles through Jesus Christ*” (Galatians 3:14). See Matthew 8:11-12; Luke 8:28; Acts 8:46; 26:23; Romans 2:28-29; 9:3-5; 9:8; 3:26-29; 4:28; Philippians 3:3; Romans 11:7; Ephesians 2:12-13). **In the parable Lazarus (the church) is now in Abraham's bosom where the Jews (the nation of Israel) once were.** “*Now we, brethren, as Isaac was, are children of promise*” (Galatians 4:28). “*For he is not a Jew who is one outwardly; neither is that circumcision which is outward in the flesh: but he is a Jew who is one inwardly; and circumcision is that of the heart*” (Romans 2:29). “*For we are the circumcision, who worship by the spirit of God*” (Philippians 3:3). “*And if you belong to Christ, then you are Abraham's offspring, heirs according to promise*” (Galatians 3:29). Paul calls the church “*a new creation*” “*the Israel of God*” (Galatians 6:15-16). **Every person who is now a Christian is the seed of Abraham, and an heir of the promise made to Abraham.**

**ABRAHAM:** Abraham was the father of the Jewish Nation, which was the chosen nation, the nation that was in covenant relationship with God (Galatians 3:6-22; Romans 9:8). The blessing of Abraham came to the Gentiles through the Church. Israel does not now by birth have the blessing of Abraham, and are not now God’s chosen people; therefore, are “*in anguish, and sees Abraham afar off, and Lazarus in his bosom.*” Israel is not now in covenant relationship with God; the Church is now

the "sons of Abraham" (Galatians 3:7), are now the chosen people. "So then they that are of faith are blessed with the faithful Abraham" (Galatians 3:9). Israel has been "broken off," or "cast off" (Romans 11). **The church is now "the Israel of God,"** is now figuratively in Abraham's bosom, is now God's chosen people (Galatians 6:16; also 1 Peter 2:9-10; Hebrews 12:22).

**THE GULF:** The rejection of Christ cut Israel off from Abraham and the blessing of God. One cannot reject Christ and worship God. Without believing in Christ and His resurrection, there is a gulf between God and Israel. One cannot go back to the Law as some Jews in Paul's time tried to do. As long as they reject Christ, there is not "a drop" of spiritual comfort for them in Christianity. Those that believe in Christ can give no comfort, no hope of salvation to them that do not believe whether they are Jews or Gentiles. The Law of Moses, which Israel gloried in, died at the death of Christ. "Having blotted out the bond written in ordinances that was against us, which was contrary to us: and he has taken it out of the way, nailing it to the cross" (Colossians 2:14). "Be not entangled again in a yoke of bondage" (Ephesians 2:11-22). Also Acts 15:24. We cannot cross the gulf and go back to the Law (Galatians 5:1). "That which Israel seeks for, that he obtained not; but the election obtained it" (Romans 11:7). The only way any person can become a child of God today is by being born again. The Law is dead and will never be restored. The nation of Israel can never be restored. The only way any Jew could ever again be a child of God is to believe the Gospel and be baptized into Christ. "By **their** unbelief **they** (branches—plural, Jews, not nations—plural) were broken off," and Gentiles (plural Gentiles, not plural Gentiles nations) were grafted in. "And **they** (individual Jews) also, if **they** continue not in **their** unbelief, shall be grafted in: for God is able to graft **them** (Jews) in again" (Romans 11:17-24).

The rich man (Israel) went to the grave (hades). Israel is no longer God's chosen people. Lazarus, the Gentiles believers are now in Abraham's bosom, are now in a covenant relationship with God, not in the grave. Abraham's bosom is not a division of hades, not one side of hades. Many draw a circle and make one side of it be where the rich man is and the other side where Lazarus is with a gulf between the two sides. This circle is in the back of most Bibles printed by Star Bible, and in many tract and books printed by members of the church of Christ.

**THE FIVE BROTHERS:** Christ was telling the Pharisees and scribes they would not believe even when He rose from the dead (See Trench "Notes On The Parables" page 162). In the parable Abraham tells the rich man that if their own scriptures cannot convince them of their error, neither would they be persuaded if one rose from the dead. Christ did rise from the dead, but few Jews believed on Him. After the judgment there will be none alive on earth to be persuaded by one sent back from the dead, none of the rich mans brothers will then be on earth.

Judea and his five brothers became six of the twelve tribes. Some believe five brothers are used to identify the rich man as Judea to the Pharisees to whom He was speaking this parable.

WADEFIELD: "To them who regard the narrative a reality it must stand as an unanswerable argument for the purgatory of the papists."

### Chapter Eight—PART TWO

**SCRIPTURES ABOUT THE DESTRUCTION OF ISRAEL THAT ARE MISAPPLIED TO HELL, Israel's destruction, her weeping, gnashing of teeth, outer darkness.** Many of the passages spoken by John the Baptist and by Jesus about Israel's rejection of Christ and its destruction are misapplied to Hell. Matthew 24 is often misused to prove Israel will be restored, and Christ will return to earth and rule the world forever from Jerusalem, and that the saved will forever live on this earth, not in Heaven.

#### INDEX OF PART TWO

- The Jews that came to John the Baptist, Matthew 3:7-12.
- The Samaritan woman, John 4:20-23.
- Six parables condemning Israel.
  1. Israel, the fruitless fig tree, Luke 13:6-9
  2. The rich man and Lazarus, Luke 16:19-31.
  3. The two sons, Matthew 21:28-32.
  4. Israel the husbandman, Matthew 21:33-45.
  5. The marriage feast, Matthew 22:1-14.
  6. The narrow door, Luke 13:24-30.
- Weeping and gnashing of teeth and outer darkness.

#### **Judgment of Israel** Matthew 21-25:

- Cleaning of the Temple, Matthew 21:12-16.
- The fig tree Matthew, 21:18-22.
- Israel's rulers question Christ's authority. Parable of the two sons, Matthew 21:23-32.
- Parable of the wicked husbandman who Christ will destroy and give the vineyard to another, Matthew 21:33-41.
- The stone Israel rejected made head of the corner; the stone will scatter as dust. The kingdom taken from Israel and gave to another, Matthew 21:42-46.
- Parable of the marriage feast. His armies destroyed those that were invited and invited others, Matthew 22:1-14.
- Seven woes on Israel leaders, how can they escape the judgment of Gehenna; all these things shall come upon this generation, Matthew 23:13-36.
- Israel's house left desolate, Matthew 23:37-39.
- The questions and Christ's answer, Matthew 24:1-51.
- Parable of the fig tree. This generation shall not pass away, till all these things be accomplished, Matthew 24:32-34.
- Israel the unfaithful servant, Matthew 24:45-51.
- Unprofitable servant cast into outer darkness Matthew 25:30.

**THE JEWS THAT CAME TO JOHN THE BAPTIST:** *"But when he saw the Pharisees and Sadducees coming to his baptism, he said unto them, you*

offspring of vipers, **who warned you to flee from the wrath to come? Bring forth; therefore, fruit worthy of repentance: and think not to say within yourselves, we have Abraham to our father: for I say unto you, that God is able of these stones to rise up children unto Abraham. And even now the axe lies at the root of the trees: every tree; therefore, that brings not forth good fruit is hewn down, and cast into the fire. I indeed baptize you in water unto repentance; but he that comes after me is mightier than I, whose shoes I am not worthy to bear: he shall baptize you in the Holy Spirit and in fire: whose fan is in his hand, and he will thoroughly cleanse his threshing floor; and he will gather his wheat into the garner, but the chaff he will burn up with unquenchable fire"** (Matthew 3:7-12). John was the Elijah that was to come (Matthew 17:11; 11:10). Cutting down a tree or forest is a common symbol of judgment and destruction of cities and nations in the Old Testament (Isaiah 10:34; Jeremiah 46:22-23; 22:7-8; Ezekiel 31:3-14). The warning of John the Baptist was that Israel was on trial; the axe that would destroy them was already at the tree. Matthew 24 states how and when the ax fell.

ADAM CLARKE said this is, "The desolation which was about to fall on the Jewish nation."

LIGHTFOOT: "By the axe being now laid to the root of the tree, may fitly be understood, first, the certainty of their desolation; and second, the nearness, in that the instrument of their destruction as already prepared, and brought close to them; the Romans that should ruin their city and nation, being already master and rulers over them."

B. W. JOHNSON: "*Think not to say...we have Abraham to our father.* They believed that Abraham's race was to be saved, if all else was destroyed...'*The axe is laid at the root of the tree*' a sign that the tree is to be cut down. The tree meant is the Jewish nation. *Every tree.* A fruitless fig tree was afterward made by our Lord to representative of the whole Jewish nation (Luke 13:6)." Also, Matthew 3:10-12 "*And with fire.* The term fire is used in verse 10, and there means a destroying agency; it is used again in verse 12 in the same sense; it is used in verse 11, also, the intervening verse, and must be used in exactly the same sense as in the other two verses. It cannot mean a curse in verses 10 and 12, and a blessing in verse 11, without a word of explanation. It is strange, therefore, that all commentators should not agree that the baptism of fire is a baptism of trial and suffering. **There were two classes before John. Some would repent and be baptized finally in the Holy Spirit; there were others who would remain impenitent, and be baptized in the awful trials that would come upon Israel**" B. W. Johnson, "The People New Testament With Notes," 1889, Gospel Light Publishing Company.

MICAH REDDING: "In context, Jesus was talking about how the centurion showed more faith than anyone in Israel. And he says this to make a statement: the kingdom was being accepted by gentiles (and prostitutes and tax collectors!) before it was being accepted by the Jews. The Jews placed great value in their heritage from the patriarchs. Being a descendent of Abraham meant you were in the kingdom. But a time would come when the Jews would suddenly realize the kingdom had passed them by, and (being outside the kingdom) they would find themselves separated from the patriarchs they had valued so much. Instead, gentiles would be 'feasting with Abraham' in God's kingdom. Jesus is simply prophesying that with his fellow Jews rejecting him, gentiles were going to be the ones who would accept his message. **The Jews would find themselves in 'outer darkness' (away from the feast and light of God). And they would respond with tears and anger: 'weeping' and 'gnashing of teeth' ...Jesus is ALWAYS referring to Jews when he talks**

about 'weeping and gnashing of teeth' and 'outer darkness.' He NEVER said this would happen to anyone but the Jews." Church of Christ, "There Is No Hell (part 4)" at: <http://micahredding.com/blog/2008/09/15/there-no-hell-part-4-scriptures-outer-darkness>

**THE SAMARITAN WOMAN:** *"Sir, I perceive that you are a prophet. Our fathers worshipped in this mountain; and you say, that in Jerusalem is the place where men ought to worship. Jesus said unto her, Woman, believe me, the hour comes, when neither in this mountain, nor in Jerusalem, shall you worship the Father. You worship that which you know not: we worship that which we know, for salvation is from the Jews. But the hour comes, and now is, when the true worshippers shall worship the father in spirit and truth: for such does the Father seek to be his worshippers"* (John 4:20-23). Worship under the Law required both (1) the temple in Jerusalem (2) and the Levitical Priesthood. Both were destroyed in A. D. 70; now there would be no way to know who was a Levite even if there were any living. **God cannot be worshiped by the Old Testament Law without both (1) the temple in Jerusalem, (2) and the Levitical Priesthood. He is now worshiped any place where there are true believers.**

#### **SIX PARABLES CONDEMNING ISRAEL:**

**(1) Israel, the fruitless fig tree** (Luke 13:6-9): *"And he spoke this parable; A certain man had a fig tree planted in his vineyard; and he came seeking fruit thereon, and found none. And he said unto the vinedresser, behold, these three years I came seeking fruit on this fig tree, and found none: cut it down; why does it also cumber the ground? And he answering said unto him, Lord, let it alone this year also, till I shall dig about it, and dung it: and if it bear fruit thenceforth, well; **but if not, you shall cut it down.**" Barren national Israel would be cut down. "And seeing a fig tree by the way side, he came to it, and found nothing thereon, but leaves only; and he said unto it, Let there be no fruit from you hence forward forever" (Matthew 21:18-19; see John 1:11). The point of this parable is clear, if Israel did not bear fruit it would be cut down—destroyed; John the Baptist had declared that the axe was already at the root of the tree.*

**(2) The rich man and Lazarus** (Luke 16:19-31): See "Part one" of this chapter.

**(3) The two sons** (Matthew 21:28-32): Christ speaking to *"the chief priests and the elders"* of Israel said, *"But what do you think? A man had two sons, and he came to the first and said, Son, go work today in the vineyard. And he answered and said, I will, sir; and he did not go. And he came to the second and said the same thing. But, he answered and said, I will not; yet he afterward regretted it and went. Which of the two did the will of his father? They said, the latter. Jesus said to them, Truly I say to **YOU** the tax—gatherers and harlots will get into the kingdom of God before **YOU**. For John came to **YOU** in the way of righteousness and **YOU** did not believe him; but the tax—gatherers and harlots did believe him; and **YOU**, seeing this, did not ever feel remorse afterward so as to believe him."*

**(4) Israel, the husbandman** (Matthew 21:33-45): Still speaking to, “*The chief priests and the elders*” Jesus said, “*Hear another parable: there was a man that was a householder, who planted a vineyard, and set a hedge about it, and dug a winepress in it, and built a tower, and let it out to husbandman, and went into another country. And when the season of the fruits drew near, he sent his servants to the husbandman, to receive his fruits. And the husbandman took his servants, and beat one, and killed another, and stoned another. Again, he sent other servants more than the first: and they did unto them in like manner. But, afterward he sent unto them his son, saying, they will reverence my son. But the husbandman, when they saw the son, said among themselves, this is the heir; come, let us kill him, and take his inheritance. And they took him, and cast him forth out to the vineyard, and killed him. When; therefore, the lord of the vineyard shall come, what will he do unto these vine—growers? They say unto him, **he will miserably DESTROY those miserable men, and will let out the vineyard unto other vine—growers, who shall render him the fruits in their seasons,** Jesus said unto them, *did you never read in the scriptures, the stone which the builders rejected, the same was made the head of the corner: this was from the Lord, and it is marvelous in our eyes? Therefore say I unto you, the kingdom of God shall be taken away from you, and shall be given to a nation bringing forth the fruits thereof. And he that falls on this stone shall be broken to pieces: but, on whomsoever it shall fall, it will scatter him as dust. And when the chief priests and the Pharisees heard his parables, they perceived that he spoke of them*” The vineyard is the nation of Israel with it’s rulers, the messengers are the prophets and apostles, the Son was Jesus. The kingdom was taken from Israel and given to the church made up of all nations. Israel beat and killed many of the prophets, and killed the Son of God, and they were scattered as dust in A. D. 70 when no Jews were left in Jerusalem or the country around it. Most Millennialists admit that this refers to the Jewish rejection of Christ; **the kingdom was taken from the Jews and given to the Gentiles at the death and resurrection of Jesus**, but Millennialists think it will be taken from the Gentiles and given back to the Jews.*

**(5) The marriage feast** Matthew 22:1-14: Also still speaking to, “*The chief priests and the elders*” Jesus said, “*And Jesus answered and spoke to them again in parables, saying, The kingdom of heaven may be compared to a king, who gave a wedding feast for his son. And he sent out his slaves to call those who had been invited to the wedding feast, and they were unwilling to come. Again, he sent out other slaves saying, Tell those who have been invited, Behold, I have prepared my dinner; my oxen and fattened livestock are all butchered and everything is ready; come to the wedding feast. But, they paid no attention and went their way, one to his own farm, another to his business, and the rest seized his slaves and mistreated them and killed them. But, the king was enraged and sent his armies, and*

**destroyed those murders, and set their city on fire.** Then he said to his slaves, the wedding is ready, but those who were invited were not worthy. Go therefore to the main highways, and as many as you find there, invite to the wedding feast. And those slaves went out into the streets, and gathered together all they found, both evil and good; and the wedding hall was filled with dinner guests. But, when the king came in to look over the dinner guests, he saw there a man not dressed in wedding clothes, and he said to him, Friend, how did you come in here without wedding clothes? And he was speechless. Then the king said to the servants, Bind him hand and foot, and cast him into the outer darkness; in that place there shall be weeping and gnashing of teeth. For many are called, but few are chosen." The Jews killed the prophets God send to them, and they and their city were destroyed, the Gentiles were brought into the kingdom. Those that would not come to the wedding were Israel.

**(6) The narrow door** Luke 13:24-30: "*Strive to enter in by the narrow door: for many, I say unto you, shall seek to enter in, and shall not be able. When once the master of the house is risen up, and has shut the door, and begin to stand without, and to knock at the door, saying, Lord, open to us; and he shall answer and say to you, I know you not where you are; then shall you begin to say, we did eat and drink in your presence, and you did teach in our streets; and he shall say, I tell you, I know not where you are; depart from me, all you workers of iniquity. **There shall be weeping and the gnashing of teeth, when you shall see Abraham, Isaac, Jacob and all the prophets in the kingdom of God AND YOURSELVES CAST FORTH WITHOUT. And there shall come from the east and the west, and from the north and the south, and shall sit down in the kingdom of God. And behold, there are last who shall be the first, and there are first who shall be last**"* This is about the coming rejection of Israel, and the Gentiles being accepted into the kingdom of Heaven, which is the church. Not about some being cast out of Heaven, which is what it would be if the weeping and gnashing of teeth were in Hell. **Israel was the "sons of the kingdom" ("children of the kingdom" King James Version) that was cast into outer darkness, it was not those who never believed that were cast out of the kingdom. The Jews, who were then the children of the kingdom, were cast out of the light into the darkness of the world without the light of God's revelation, and they are no longer God's chosen people. "O Jerusalem...behold your house is left unto you desolate"** (Luke 13:34-35). Those who believe in Hell leave out the rest of what Christ said in the next two versus when He says the Gentiles will come into the kingdom, and verse 30 the Gentiles who were last become first. If this (1) weeping and gnashing of teeth, (2) casting out, (3) and the Gentiles coming in were after the judgment, then:  
(1) If this were after the judgment then the Gentiles would be coming into the kingdom in Heaven after the judgment.

(2) And if *"and yourselves cast forth without"* is after the judgment then it would be Jews being cast out of Heaven after the judgment.

***"The children of the kingdom,"*** the Jews that rejected Christ are the ones doing the ***"gnashing of teeth,"*** living persons on this earth, before their death, not souls in Hell as is taught by orthodox churches. *"Therefore say I unto you, the kingdom of God shall be taken away from you (the Jews), and shall be given to a nation bringing forth the fruits thereof"* (Matthew 21:43).

**WEEPING AND GNASHING OF TEETH, See chapter four**

The three times ***"outer darkness"*** is used by Christ (Matthew 8:12; 22:13; 25:30) are all dealing with Christ being rejected by Israel. It was common for a banquet to be in the evening, lights would be inside, but there were no lights outside: back then there were not street lights as we now have, anyone cast outside would be in the darkness outside of the banquet or wedding room. These three times outer darkness is used it refers to God's dealing with the Jews being cast out as God's chosen people into the world without the light of God's word, and their destruction as a nation, never to the Gentiles, never to souls, but has been misused and changed to be souls that are in Hell are in outer darkness. When the Jews rejected Christ they were cast out as God's chosen people into *"outer darkness."* Being in darkness is also used for being in the world without Christ and without the light of the Gospel, Colossians 1:12-13; Acts 26:18; 1 Peter 2:9; John 10:27.

The other times ***"weeping and gnashing of teeth"*** is used by Christ (Matthew 13:42; 13:50; 22:13; 24:51; 25:30; Luke 13:27-28) are also all about the Jews being cast out as God's chosen people, and have also been changed to be an immaterial, bodiless souls in Hell that have no teeth that are weeping and gnashing their teeth because that are being tormented by God; none of the passages mention Gehenna although they are often used to prove there is a place called "Hell." In Matthew 13:39 and 13:50 the Greek is the end of the "age," not the end of the world, the end of the age that then was, the Jewish age when Israel was cast out as God's chosen people. To Israel that thought they were and would always be God's chosen people, being told that they would be cast out was no small thing.

Matthew 13:41 and 13:50: In parables about the kingdom of Heaven Christ used *"weeping and the gnashing of teeth"* is when, *"So shall it be in the end of the age: the angels shall come forth, and sever the wicked from among the righteous and shall cast them into the furnace of fire: there shall be weeping and the gnashing of teeth."* The *"end of the age"* is the Jewish age that ended at the death of Christ.

(1). Matthew 22 is also a parable of the marriage feast that was given to the chief priests and elders of the Jewish people where those that were bidden did not come to the wedding and were destroyed, which seems to be speaking of the Jews rejecting Christ.

Who and when was those in the highways invited to the wedding? The innovation is now open to all who will come to Christ, but after the kingdom is delivered up to God in Heaven (1 Corinthians 15:24), (1) no one will be invited to the wedding, (2) and no one in the kingdom will be found to be not worthy and cast out of Heaven (Matthew 22:8). Who was the wedding guest that did not have on a wedding—garment? In the kingdom, the church, there are many hypocrites, but they are not “arrayed in white garments” (Revelation 3:4-5). After the judgment, no one in the kingdom that has been delivered up to God will be found not to have on a wedding-garment, and no one will be cast out of Heaven; no one not in Heaven after the judgment will be invited to come up to Heaven, therefore; whether it is about (1) Israel rejecting Christ (2) or about the church, this parable of the kingdom is about something before the second coming of Christ; those that were bidden but did not come were destroyed, not tormented without end by God.

(2). Matthew 24 is about the destruction of Jerusalem, and it ends with the parable of the evil servant that after he has been cut asunder “*there shall be the weeping and the gnashing of teeth*” (Matthew 24:51).

(3). In Matthew 25:30 the unprofitable servant is also Israel.

Both “*outer darkness*” and “*weeping and gnashing of teeth*” are used only by Christ, and are a reference to those that are rejected in this lifetime, not about torment in Hell, not about being cast out of Heaven.

**Wages of sin is weeping and gnashing of teeth, or wages of sin is death.** God says the “*wages of sin is death*,” not an eternal life of weeping and gnashing of teeth for a soul in Hell, not weeping and gnashing that will go on forever for if it did there would be no death if the lost weep and gnash their teeth were endless because they were being tormented by God. We would never be able to know that this weeping will be in Hell but: **First:** Many say that there is a Hell, but there is not one word about it in the Bible. **Second:** Then they tell us that this weeping shall be in Hell. How could they know this when in every passage it is used in the weeping is on this earth before the Judgment Day, there is not one passage that says there will be weeping in “Hell”?

Some of the words used by Christ to describe the Jews: blind guides, hypocrites, murderers, adulterous, transgressors, faithless, perverse, fools, generation of snakes. “**O Jerusalem, Jerusalem...behold, your house** (the temple Christ had just left) **is left unto you desolate**” (Matthew 23:38).

“*That which Israel seeks for, that he obtained not; but the election obtained it, and the rest were hardened*” (Romans 11:7). Whatever Israel did not obtain, **the elect had obtained it, past tense at the time Paul wrote this.** It was not something that would be obtained by Israel, or anyone at A. D. 70, or at the second coming of Christ. How are Jews, Gentiles, or anyone saved today, only by the Gospel? I was saved when I heard the Gospel and obeyed it; all that are saved are saved in the

same way. *"For I am not ashamed of the gospel, for it is the power of God for salvation to everyone who believes, to the Jew first and also to the Greek"* (Romans 1:16). Neither a Jew, nor a Greek can be saved without believing in Christ and obeying the gospel. Today a nation cannot be saved as a nation, not Israel, or any other nation. Individuals must believe and obey the Gospel; there is no other way. *"But if some of the branches were broken off, ("some of the branches," plural, are individuals Jews, not "some of the nations" plural were broken off) and you, being a wild olive, was grafted in among them (among some of the branches, the Jews that believed and were not broken off, Paul was one of the Jews that believed; the individuals Gentiles that believed were grafted in)...Well; by their unbelief they were broken off, and you stand by your faith...for if God spared not the natural branches (individuals Jews), neither will he spare you (individuals Gentiles, not nations). Behold then the goodness and severity of God: toward them that fell ("them" is plural, individuals, not plural nations), severity; but toward you, God's goodness; otherwise, you also shall be cut off. And they (individuals Jews, not plural nations) also, if they continue not in their unbelief, shall be grafted in"* (Romans 11:17-24). Many of the believers in the early church were Jews. Paul was a Jew, and he said, *"Even so than at this present time also there is a remnant according to the election of grace"* ("at this present time," at the time Paul was writing this some Jews believed) (Romans 11:4). Salvation is always available to anyone of any nation if they will accept Christ. The law was only a shadow of that which was to come. Israel cannot be restored as a nation without restoring the shadow, including restoring animal sacrifice, etc.

DR. T. W. BRENTS: "There is individuality about the Christian religion that cannot be dispensed with. Those who accept Christ must do it as individuals, not as a nation. Each one must come to Christ on his own individual faith. He can come in no other way. In this way he can come now; and this is the only way a Gentile, or anyone else can come. The Jews were broken off for unbelief, and they must come in faith. This opportunity they have now, and have always had—they need not expect, or wait for any thing more." Gospel Sermons, page 329, 1918, Gospel Advocate.

*"Woe unto you! For you build the tombs of the prophets, and your fathers killed them. So you are witnesses and consent unto the works of your fathers: for they kill them, and you build their tombs. Therefore, also said the wisdom of God, I will send unto them prophets and apostles; and some of them they shall kill and persecute; that the blood of all the prophets, which was shed from the foundation of the world, may be required of this generation; from the blood of Abel unto the blood of Zechariah, who perished between the altar and the sanctuary: yea, I say unto you, it shall be required of this generation"* (Luke 11:47-51).

**(1) THE LORD'S LAMENT OVER JERUSALEM WHEN HE WAS ON THE ROAD TO JERUSALEM** Luke 19:41-44: When Jesus drew nigh Jerusalem He wept over the city, and tells His disciples of the destruction of it in language that is similar to what He said in Luke 21:5-33. *"And when he drew nigh, he saw the city and wept*

over it, saying, 'If you had known in this day, even you, the things which belong unto peace! But, now they are hid from your eyes. **For the days shall come upon you, when your enemies will throw up a bank about you, and surround you, and hem you in on every side, and will level you to the ground and your children within you; and they shall not leave in you one stone upon another; because you did not recognize the time of your visitation**'" (Luke 19:41-44 New American Standard Version). The Romans did surround Jerusalem, put up a bank against the wall to go over it, and did not leave one stone upon another.

DR. LANGE in his commentary on Matthew page 416: "The Lord mourns and laments over His own ruined Jerusalem...His whole pilgrimage on earth was troubled by distress for Jerusalem, like the hen which sees the eagle threatening in the sky, and anxiously seeks to gather her chickens under her wings. With such distress Jesus saw the Roman eagles approach for judgment upon the children of Jerusalem, and sought with the strongest solicitations of love to save them. But in vain! They were like dead children to the voice of maternal love."

**(2) IN AN ADDRESS TO THE SCRIBES AND PHARISEE AT JERUSALEM:** In Matthew 23 Jesus gives seven woes to the scribes and Pharisees (Matthew 23:13, 15, 16, 23, 25, 27-29), then He ends the address with, "*Verily I say unto you, **all these things shall come upon this generation. O Jerusalem, Jerusalem that kills the prophets, and stones them that are sent unto her! How often would I have gathered your children together, even as a hen gathers her chickens under her wings, and you would not! Behold, your house is left unto you desolate***" (Matthew 23:36-38). None of the many commentators that I have read say "*this generation*" is anything but the generation that Christ was speaking to. On the same day in Matthew 24:34 He again said, "***This generation shall not pass away, till all these things be accomplished.***" But many of the same commentators say the second use of "*this generation*" means "this race" and Christ was not speaking of that generation, not in the life time of those He was speaking to, but of the human race that will not pass away until He comes in judgment at the end of the world. **All the woes in Matthew 23, and all the signs of Matthew 24 were to come upon that generation, before that generation passed away.**

**"All these things shall come upon this generation."** Christ used "**generation**" twenty-five times in reference to the Jews of his day; nine of the twenty-five are in Matthew (Matthew 11:16; 12:39; 12:41; 12:42; 12:45; 16:4; 17:17; 23:36; 24:24). "*But first he (Christ) must suffer many things and be rejected of this generation*" (Luke 17:25; also Mark 8:12; 8:12; 8:38; 9:19; 13:30; Luke 7:31; 9:41; 11:29; 11:30; 11:31; 11:32; 11:50; 11:51; 16:8; 17:25; 21:32). "Genea," the Greek word from which "*generation*" is translated never means "race" as the Millennialists contend that it does in Matthew 24:34.

- "***This generation shall not pass, till all these things be fulfilled***" King James.
- "*I tell you this: **the present generation** will live to see it all.*" New English Bible.
- "*Remember this! All these things will happen before **the people now living** have all died*" Today's English Version.

- **"The present generation will not pass away, till all this happens"** Moffatt's Translation.
- **"I tell you in solemn truth that the present generation will certainly not pass away until all this has taken place"** Weymouth's Translation.
- **"This generation will not disappear till all this has taken place"** Phillips Translation.
- **"All these things will take place before this present generation passes on"** Modern Language Bible.
- **"The present generation will not pass away until all this takes place"** New American Bible.
- **"The present generation will not pass away, till all this happens"** James Moffat.

**"THIS GENERATION,"** was the generation of Jews in the time of Christ, not a generation of today.

- John the Baptist: **"O generation of vipers, who warned YOU to flee from the wrath to come?"** (Luke 3:7).
- Christ: **"O generation of vipers, how can YOU, being evil, speak what is good?"** (Matthew 12:34).
- **"But to what shall I liken this generation? It is like children sitting in the market places, who call out to the other children, and say, We played the flute for YOU, and YOU did not dance; we sang a dirge, and YOU did not mourn"** (Matthew 11:16-19; Luke 7:31-33).
- **"The men of Nineveh shall stand up with this generation at the judgment, and shall condemn it because they repented at the preaching of Jonah; and behold, something greater than Jonah is here"** (Matthew 12:41).
- **"The Queen of the South shall rise up with this generation at the judgment and shall condemn it, because she came from the ends of the earth to hear the wisdom of Solomon; and behold, something greater than Solomon is here"** (Luke 12:42).
- Likened to a man from which an unclean spirit went out but returned with seven other spirits that were more wicked. **"This is the way it will also be with this evil generation"** (Luke 12:43-45).
- **"Why does this generation seek for a sign? Truly I say to YOU, no sign shall be to this generation"** (Mark 8:12).
- **"An evil and adulterous generation seeks after a sign; and no sign will not be given it, except the sign of Jonah"** (Matthew 12:39; 16:4).
- **"O unbelieving and perverted generation, how long shall I be with YOU? How long shall I put up with YOU?"** (Matthew 17:17; Mark 9:19; Luke 9:41).
- **"Therefore also said the wisdom of God, I will send unto them prophets and apostles; and some of them they shall kill and persecute; the blood of all the prophets, which were shed from the foundation of the world, may be required of this generation; from the blood of Abel unto the blood of Zechariah, who perished between the altar and the sanctuary: yea, I say unto YOU, it shall be required of this generation"** (Luke 11:49-51).
- **"YOU serpents, YOU generation of vipers, how can YOU escape the judgment of Gehenna?"** (Matthew 23:33).
- **"All these things shall come upon this generation"** (Matthew 23:36).
- **"Truly I say unto YOU, this generation shall not pass away till all these things be accomplished"** (Matthew 24:34).
- **"Truly I say to YOU, this generation shall not pass away until all these things take place"** (Mark 13:30). That generation passed away long ago.
- **"But first He must suffer many things and be rejected by this generation"** (Luke 17:25).
- **"Be saved from this perverse generation"** (Acts 3:40). This was said before A. D. 70
- **"That YOU may prove yourselves to be blameless and innocent, children of God above reproach in the midst of a crooked and perverse generation"** (Philippians 2:15).

If **"this generation"** means **"this race"** or **"this nation"** as some Millennialists teach, are there forty-two **"races"** spoken of in Matthew 1:1-17? **"So all the generations from Abraham unto David are fourteen generations (not fourteen races or nations); and**

from David unto the carrying away to Babylon fourteen generations; and from the carrying away to Babylon unto the Christ fourteen generations.”

The use of **"you"** clearly identified the *"generation"* Jesus was speaking to in Matthew 24. When speaking to His disciples Jesus said:

- *"Do **YOU** not see all these things? Truly I say to **YOU**, not one stone here shall be left upon another"* Verse 2.
- *"See to it that no one misleads **YOU**"* Verse 4.
- *"**YOU** will be hearing of wars and rumors of wars"* Verse 6. Not someone today will hear of wars.
- *"See that **YOU** are not frightened"* Verse 6.
- *"They will deliver **YOU** to tribulation and will kill **YOU**, and **YOU** will be hated by all nations"* Ver. 9.
- *"When **YOU** see the abomination of desolation which was spoken of through Daniel the prophet, standing in the holy place"* Verse 15. *"When **YOU** see Jerusalem compassed with armies"* Luke 21:20. Not when someone today sees this. Jerusalem compassed with armies, which were spoken of by Daniel (Daniel 9:27) was to be in their time and seen by them.
- *"Even so **YOU** too, when **YOU** see all these things, know **YOU** that He is nigh, even at the door"* Verse 33. Not when someone today sees all these things.
- *"I say unto **YOU**, this generation will not pass away until all these things take place"* Verse 34.
- *"For this reason **YOU** be ready too; for the Son of Man is coming at an hour when **YOU** do not think He will"* Verse 44.

Millennialists must change generations to a nation with many successive generations, thereby making God to have used the wrong word.

**(3) THEN AN ADDRESS TO HIS DISCIPLES ON THE MOUNT OF OLIVES OVERLOOKING JERUSALEM:** Matthew 24:1-51. There have been thousands of speculations made on Matthew 24 over the centuries, and it has been abused more than most other passage.

**THE CONTEXT OF MATTHEW 24:** It is in the midst of passages about Israel.

- **The Two Sons** (Matthew 21:27-32) Israel believed not Christ.
- **The Wicked Husbandman** (Matthew 21:33-46). (a) *"He will miserably destroy those miserable men"* (b) The stone, Christ, rejected by Israel and Israel will be *"scattered as dust."*
- **The Marriage Feast** (Matthew 22:1-14) *"They that were bidden (Israel) was not worthy."*
- **The Seven Woes** (Matthew 23:1-36) *"All these things shall come upon this generation."* Pronounced upon the scribes and Pharisees of His day.
- **Their House (the Temple) left desolate** (Matthew 23:27-39).
- **Not One Stone Upon Another** (Matthew 24:1-2) The Temple to be destroyed.
  - Their question about what He had just said (Matthew 24:3).
  - His answer (Matthew 24:4-31).
- **The Fig Tree** (Matthew 24:32-36) *"This generation shall not pass away, till all these things be accomplished."*
- **Israel The Unfaithful Servant** (Matthew 24:45-25:30).

**MATTHEW 24:** Matthew 24:1-2: *"And Jesus went out from the temple, and his disciples came to him to show him the buildings of the temple, but he answered and said unto them, see you not all these things? Verily I say unto you, there shall not be left here one stone upon another, that shall not be thrown down."* The stones were the *"buildings of the temple."* These words are the reason for the questions by his disciples, and the reason for the discourse that followed. The

purpose of this discourse was not to give His disciples signs of His coming at the end of the world, but to give them signs of the destruction of Jerusalem, to warn believers in that generation of the coming destruction of Jerusalem, and to give them a sign for them to flee from the destruction coming in their lifetime. *"But when you see Jerusalem surrounded by armies, then recognize that her desolation is nigh"* (Luke 21:20; Matthew 24:15). At the second coming there will be no signs, no one will flee to the mountains.

Matthew 24:3: *"And as he sat on the Mount of Olives, the disciples came unto him privately, saying, tell us:"*

Question one:

- Matthew 24:3 *"Tell us, when shall **these things** be?"*
- Mark 13:4 *"Tell us, when shall **these things** be?"*
- Luke 21:6-7 *"When therefore shall **these things** be?"*

Question two:

- Matthew 24:3 *"And what shall be the sign of your coming, and of the end of the age?"*
- Mark 13:4 *"And what shall be the sign when **these things** are all about to be accomplished?"*
- Luke 21:6-7 *"And what shall be the sign when **these things** are about to come to pass?"*

These two questions as given in the three parallel accounts all are the same two questions. Except for the bad translation of the King James Version, *"End of the world"*, no one would see the end of the world in these two questions. The Greek says, *"End of the age"* (aion), not *"End of the world"* (kosmos). Not even the New King James Version would go along with the King James Version on this bad translation.

- *"And of the end of the age,"* New King James Version, New International Version, New Revised Standard Version.
- *"And of the completion of the age,"* Alfred Marshall, "Parallel New Testament In Greek And English."
- *"And of the full end of the age,"* Young's Literal Translation.
- *"And the conclusion of this state,"* Alexander Campbell, "The Living Oracles."
- *"Of the age, viz. the Jewish economy,"* Adam Clarke.

The disciples, thinking of what the Lord had said, asked two questions, which they supposed both would be at the same time. (1) **"When shall THESE THINGS You speak of be?"** (2) **"And what shall be the sign that THESE THINGS are about to come to pass?"** **"These things"** were the things Christ had just said, *"And Jesus said unto him, 'Do you see these great buildings? There shall not be left here one stone upon another, which shall not be thrown down.'* *And as he sat on the Mount of Olives over against the temple, Peter and James and John and Andrew asked him privately, 'Tell us, when shall **these things** be?'"* (Mark 13:2-3).

**Neither in what Christ said, nor in the question the disciples asked there is no reference to the second coming, or to a great tribulation thousands of years after "these thing."** At the time they asked these questions they did not believe or know that Jesus would be put to death, or that he would be going back to

**Heaven and coming a second time. The disciples still thought the Christ would restore the earthy kingdom of Israel, just as all the Jews did.**

(1). *"And they understood none of these things, and this saying was hidden from them, and they did not comprehend the things that were said"* (Luke 18:34; 19:11; 24:21-27; John 16:16-18; 20:9).

(2). When they asked these two questions they did not know or believe Christ would die and be resurrected from the dead, or know or believe anything about the second coming of Christ or the Judgment Day.

(3). On the day of His resurrection they did not know it was the resurrected Christ they were talking to and said to Him, *"But we hoped (past tense) that it was he who should **redeem Israel**"* (Luke 24:21). Hoped that Christ was the one the Jews looked for to redeem Israel from Rome, and restore it as a nation as it was under David.

(4). Forty days after He was raised from the dead they still did not understand therefore, they still did not expect Christ to go away and return to earth a second time at the end of the world; they expected the messiah to restore the kingdom to Israel *"They therefore, when they were come together, asked him, saying, Lord, do you at this time restore the kingdom to Israel?"* (Acts 1:6). **At the time they asked this, they still believe just as the Jews did that their messiah would set up an earthly kingdom of Israel. How could they be asking about His second coming when they did not know there would be a second coming? Millennialists must make the disciples be asking a question about the second coming of Christ that the disciples did not understand about or believe at that time, but they must have the disciples be asking questions about the millennial, and questions about the rapture to make this chapter teach their view.** I have never seen where any Premillennialists explain how the disciples could know anything about the rapture, or the thousand years when the same disciples did not know that Christ was to die, and be raised from the dead and forty days later ascend to Heaven. From where do they think these disciples had this knowledge? **To make "these things" be things that has not yet come to pass would make the disciples be asking about things they knew nothing about.**

**(1) SIGNS OF THE THINGS THAT WERE TO COME TO PAST THAT CHRISTIANS WERE WARNED NOT TO BE FOOLED BY.**

Matthew 24:4-15: *"And Jesus answered (His answer was to the questions the disciples had asked about the destruction of the temple, not about His second coming) and said unto them, Take heed that no man lead you astray. For many shall come in my name, saying, I am the Christ; and shall lead many astray. And you shall hear of wars and rumors of wars; see that you are not troubled: for these things must needs come to pass; but the end is not yet. For nation shall rise against nation, and kingdom against kingdom; and there shall be famines and earthquakes in divers places. But, all these things are the beginning of travail. Then shall they deliver you*

*up unto tribulation, and shall kill you: and you shall be hated of all the nations for my name's sake. And then shall many stumble, and shall deliver up one another, and shall hate one another. And many false prophets shall arise, and shall lead many astray. And because iniquity shall be multiplied, the love of many shall wax cold. But, he that endures to the end, the same shall be saved. And this gospel of the kingdom shall be preached in the whole world for a testimony unto all the nations; and then shall the end come. When; therefore, you see the abomination of desolation, which was spoken of through Daniel the prophet, standing in the holy place (let him that reads understand)."* At the second coming of Christ the saved will not be deliver up or kill, or hated, etc. Matthew 24:4-25 above is about the conditions just before A. D. 70, not the conditions that will be at the coming of Christ.

## **(2) NATURAL DISASTERS TO ISRAEL AND ROME:**

**(a) Wars and rumors of wars** (Matthew 24:6; Mark 13:7-8; Luke 21:9-10) with nations and kingdoms rising against each other (Matthew 24:7). There were many conflicts and battles before A. D. 70 in which thousands of Jews were killed. In one battle with the Syrians about 5,000 Jews were killed. From A. D. 66 to 70 there were many wars and rumors of wars. Many thousands were killed in the many wars in the 5 years before the destruction of the temple and Israel in A. D. 70.

B. W. JOHNSON: "The Jewish war began in A. D. 66, and ended five years after. During this period all the Roman Empire was filled with commotion. Nero, the emperor, was overthrown by Galba; six months after, Galba was overthrown by Otho; a few months after, Otho was overthrown by Vitellius; a little later, he was overthrown by Vespasian. All of these but the last, who ascended the throne shortly before Jerusalem was destroyed, died violent deaths...Tacitus, the Roman historian, says of this period: 'It was full of calamities, horrible with battles, rent with seditions, savage in peace itself.'" "The People's New Testament With Notes," Gospel Light Publishing Company, 1889.

From the writing of Josephus we learn that the Jews were divided into parties fighting among themselves, and Jews killed others Jews in numbers far greater than those killed by the Roman soldiers; villages of Syria and elsewhere were burnt to the ground in the five years of war before the Romans laid siege to Jerusalem. During the siege many more Jews were killed by warring bands of Jews in Jerusalem, and Josephus says the Jews suffered far more from one another inside the walls of the city than from the Romans outside. In the five years before the destruction of Jerusalem thousand more were killed by bands of robbers throughout all Israel.

MATTHEW HENRY: "When Christ was born, there was a universal peace in the empire...From the time that the Jews rejected Christ, and he left their house desolate, the sword did never depart from their house, the sword of the Lord was never quiet, because he had given it a charge against a hypocritical nation and the people of his wrath, and by it brought ruin upon them." Matthew 24:6, Zondervan Publishing House, 1721.

**(b) Famines in various places** (Matthew 24:7; Mark 13:8; Luke 21:11): In the years between the death of Christ and the destruction of Jerusalem there were severe famines, especially in the area of Jerusalem. Paul took up a contribution for

the poor among the saints at Jerusalem (Romans 15:25; 1 Corinthians 16:1-4) which many churches took part in. Agabus signified by the Spirit that there would be a great famine over the entire world, which came to pass in the days of Claudius, and the disciples sent relief unto the disciples in Judea (Acts 11:28-29).

**(c) Pestilences** (Matthew 24:7 King James Version): Pestilences tend to come with famine. There was a great one in AD 40 in Babylon when many Jews died, and many more fled because of it, another one in AD 65 in Rome when many died. I have seen no history that tells how many died by robbers, wars among them selves, wars with Rome, famines, pestilences, and earthquakes in the years before the destruction of Jerusalem (before A. D. 70), but no doubt it was hundreds of thousands. During the siege of Jerusalem, but before the fall, the dead from famines and pestilences filled all the room for burial within the walls of the city. Josephus claims 600,000 more bodies were thrown out of the gates of Jerusalem and left without being buried.

**(d) Earthquakes in divers places** (Matthew 24:7): The earthquakes are spoken of as a dreadful judgment against the nation of Israel, *"But all these things are the beginning of travail"* (Matthew 24:8).

GEORGE P. HOLFORD: "Of these significant emblems of political commotions, there occurred several within the scene of this prophecy, and, as our Savior predicted, in divers places in the reign of Claudius there was one at Rome, and another at Apamea in Syria, where many Jews resided. The earthquake at the latter place was so destructive, that the emperor, in order to relieve the distresses of the inhabitants, remitted its tribute for five years. Both these earthquakes are recorded by Tacitus. There was one also, in the same reign in Crete that is mentioned by Philostratus, in his Life of Apollonius, who says that 'there were others at Smyrna, Miletus, Chios, and Samos; **in all which places Jews had settled.**' In the reign of Nero there was an earthquake at Laodicea. Tacitus records this also. It is likewise mentioned by Eusebius and Orosius, who add that Hieropolis and Colose, as well as Laodicea, were overthrown by an earthquake. There was also one in Campania in this reign (of this both Tacitus and Seneca speak) and another at Rome in the reign of Galba, recorded by Suetonius." "The Destruction Of Jerusalem," 1805.

Some cities of Israel were totally destroyed by both earthquakes and robbers before the destruction of Jerusalem. I have not found an estimate of how many Jews died by earthquakes, but like both the famines and the pestilences, without doubt many more thousands died in the earthquakes before A. D. 70.

DR. PHILIP SCHAFF says there is scarcely another period in history so full of corruption, vice, and disaster as the six years between Neronian persecution in A. D. 64 and the destruction of Jerusalem in A. D. 70, History Of the Christian Church, New Schaff—Herzog Encyclopedia of Religious Knowledge.

For many years the earthquakes, famines, wars, and pestilences of Matthew 24 have repeatedly been misused by many writers of fiction, and any earthquake, and wars have been made into a sure sign that Christ is coming soon and the end is at hand. **There will be no earthquakes, famines, wars, or pestilences at the second coming of Christ.**

### **(3) PERSECUTION FIRST FROM JEWS, THEN PERSECUTION FROM ROME AND THE SPREAD OF THE GOSPEL.**

**(a) "But all these things are the beginning of travail" (Matthew 24:9).**

**(b) Christians would be deliver up, killed and hated by all the nations** (Matthew 24:9). The persecution of believers came first from the Jews. Acts 4:3; 4:18; 4:21; 5:18; 5:28; 6:12-14; 7:58-60; 8:1; 8:3; 9:1-2; 12:1-5; 13:44-51; 14:2; 14:19; 17:5-8; 17:13; 26:9-10; Paul was one of the persecutors, and then he was one of the persecuted. *"Five times I received from the Jews thirty-nine lashes. Three times I was beaten with rods, once I was stoned...I have been in...dangers from my countrymen"* (2 Corinthians 11:24-26). *"For you also suffer the same things of your own countrymen, even as they did of the Jews; who both killed the Lord Jesus and the prophet, and drove out us"* (1 Thessalonians 2:14-15). It was soon followed by the persecution of Nero of believers, which began about A. D. 64. After the fire in Rome Nero attempted to clear himself by blaming it on the Christians. He then persecuted the Christians with such cruelty that even many of his fellow Romans was taken back by his cruelty. *"But before all these things, they shall lay their hands on you, and shall persecute you, delivering you up to the synagogues (synagogues were Jews, not Rome) and prison, bringing you before kings and governors for my name's sake"* (Luke 21:12). See Hebrews 10:32-34. Both the persecution of Christians from the Jews, and the persecution from Rome before A. D. 70 were severe. I have just touched the hem of the garment.

**(c) Many shall stumble, deliver up one another, and hate one another** (Matthew 24:10). As a result of the persecutions the weak stumbled. *"And brother will deliver up brother to death, and a father his child; and children will rise up against parents, and cause them to be put to death. And you will be hated by all on account of My name...and a man's enemies will be the members of his household"* (Matthew 10:22-36). **No one will deliver up anyone or cause anyone to be put to death at the second coming of Christ.**

**(d) Many false prophets** (Matthew 24:11). See 2 Peter 2:1; 1 John 4:1; 2:18; Galatians 1:7. Many false teachers saying they are the Christ (Matthew 24:5). Josephus says that they did come about the time of the end of Jerusalem.

*"But whenever they persecute you in one city, flee to the next; for truly I say to you, you will not finish going through the cities of Israel until the Son of Man comes"* (Matthew 10:23). **No one will persecute anyone and no one will flee to another city at the second coming of Christ.**

J. W. McGARVEY: "It is a coming, which was to take place before all the cities of Israel should be evangelized, and hence the reference must be, we think, to the providential coming to destroy the Jewish nationality" New Testament Commentary, Matthew and Mark, page 92.

H. LEO BOLES: "It would take place before all the cities of Israel should be evangelized, hence it would mean the coming of Christ to destroy the Jewish nationality" The Gospel According To Matthew, page 230, Gospel Advocate, 1954.

**Lightning** "For just as the lightning comes from the east, and flashes even to the west, so shall the coming of the Son of Man be" (Matthew 24:27). For the way "lightning" was used in the Old Testament for God's angry and judgment see Exodus 19:16; 2 Samuel 22:7-15; Isaiah 30:27. It is also used symbolically in Revelation of judgments in Revelation 4:5; 11:19; 16:18. The false prophets saying they are the Christ were only seen by many. The coming of Christ in judgment on Israel with the total destruction of Israel as a country was seen in the entire known world just as lightning in the east is seen in the west.

**(e) Many disciples will fall away, but those who remain faithful shall be saved** (Matthew 24:13-14).

**(f) The gospel shall be preached to the whole world** (Matthew 24:14). The persecution against the church in Jerusalem scattered the saints abroad, and they went about preaching the word everywhere. (Acts 8:1-4). The gospel was preached throughout the world, as it was known before A. D. 70. "The word of the truth of the gospel, which is come unto you; even as it is also in **all the world**" (Colossians 1:6); and "The hope of the gospel which you heard, which was preached in **all creation under heaven**" (Colossians 1:23). Paul says to the Romans, "Your faith is proclaimed throughout **the whole world**" (Romans 1:8). In Romans 10:18 he said, "Their voice has gone out **into all the earth**, and their words to the ends of the world." "World" as it is used in the New Testament is all the civilized world of that day, the entire known world. See Luke 2:1 where a decree went out from Augustus "that **all the world** should be registered." All the world was the Roman Empire, not the entire world, as we now know it. "A great famine over **all the world**" (Acts 11:28). "Now there were dwelling at Jerusalem Jews, devout men, **from every nation under heaven**" (Acts 2:5). The devout Jews came from all over the world to Jerusalem for Pentecost, and when Pentecost was over, they returned to all nations under heaven and took the Gospel with them. "The mystery...has been made known to **all the nations**" (Romans 16:25-26).

The warning was that amines, wars, pestilences, false Christs, false prophets, earth quakes, persecutions, or falling away were not to be taken as a sign of the end, they were things that were to happen before the end of Israel did come, but today this passage is used by many to prove any national or international calamities are a sign that the end of the world is coming promptly.

**(4) THE TRUE SIGNS OF THE END THAT THE DISCIPLES WERE TO WATCH FOR. Then comes the end of the nation of Israel.**

**(a) Then comes the end when they see the Romans in Jerusalem.** "When; therefore, you see the abomination of desolation, which was spoken of through Daniel the prophet (Daniel 9:27), standing in the holy place" (Matthew 24:14-15). The parallel passage in Luke 21:20 says, "**But when you see Jerusalem compassed with armies, then know that her desolation is at hand.**" **THERE WILL BE NO**

**ARMIES COMPASSING AROUND JERUSALEM TO SEE AT THE SECOND COMING OF JESUS.** In the Old Testament the worship of other gods is an "abomination" (Deuteronomy 7:25; 12:31; 17:3). The Romans worshiped many gods. The idolatrous army of Rome in Jerusalem was an "abomination of desolation" to them. Daniel speaks of an "abomination of desolation" at a time when the regular sacrifices were abolished because of Israel going into captivity (Daniel 12:11; 9:27).

**(b) "Then let them that are in Judaea flee unto the mountains"** (Matthew 24:16). The sign the disciples were to look for was the Roman army around Jerusalem. After going through the country around about Jerusalem and destroying many cities, and after killing many thousand of the Jews, Cestius Gallus came to within one mile of Jerusalem, then after about four days entered the city, but fled with many Jews pursuing him. **The disciples were to flee unto the mountains when they saw all the above signs because of the great tribulation coming upon Jerusalem at that time.** If this passage were speaking of the second coming of Christ, as many Premillennialists say it is, why were Christians told to flee from Jerusalem to the mountains when Premillennialists tell us that Christ will be coming to Jerusalem, and that He will rule from Jerusalem? In Luke Christ is speaking of the coming destruction of Jerusalem and tells the disciples, "*But watch at every season, making supplication, that you may prevail to escape all these things that shall come to pass, and to stand before the Son of man*" (Luke 21:36). They did watch and escaped the tribulation by fleeing to the mountains beyond the cities of Israel.

GEORGE P. HOLFORD: "After this disaster had befallen Cestius, the more opulent of the Jews (says Josephus) forsook Jerusalem as men do a sinking ship. And it is with reason supposed that on this occasion many Christians, or converted Jews, who dwelt there, recollecting the warnings of their divine Master, retired to Pella, a place beyond Jordan, situated in a mountainous country, whither (according to Eusebius, who resided near the spot) they came from Jerusalem, and settled, before the war (under Vespasian) began. Other providential opportunities for escaping afterwards occurred, of which, it is probable, those who were now left behind availed themselves; for it is a striking act, and such as cannot be contemplated by the pious mind without sentiments of devout admiration, **that history does not record that even one Christian perished in the siege of Jerusalem.** Enduring to the end faithful to their blessed master, they, gave credit to his predictions, and escaped the calamity. Thus were fulfilled the words of our Lord, Matt. 24. 13. 'He that shall endure unto the end (i. e. of the scene of this prophecy) shall be saved,' i. e. from the calamities which will involve all those who shall continue obstinate in unbelief." "The Destruction of Jerusalem."

ADAM CLARKE: "It is very remarkable that not a single Christian perished in the destruction of Jerusalem, though there were many there when Cestis Gallus invaded the city; and, had he persevered in the siege, he would soon have rendered himself master of it; but, when he unexpectedly and unaccountably raised the siege, the Christians took that opportunity to escape." Commentary on Matthew.

At the second coming of Jesus no one will see the Roman army, and no one will flee to the mountains. Premillennialists believe and teach that the rapture will be at the time of this great tribulation; therefore, the saints could not flee to the mountains

for they would be "up in the sky with Christ" in the rapture, but Jesus clearly told them to flee to the mountains when the tribulation begins. Christians were to (and did) flee from Jerusalem; from the very place Premillennialists say Christ will come to and set up His kingdom.

That this is not the second coming of Christ is shown by the fact that both living and dead believers did not meet the Lord in the air in A. D. 70 (1 Thessalonians 4:15-17), but that only the living believers that were in Jerusalem were to flee to the mountains, not to meet Christ, but were to flee to escape the Roman army.

**INSTRUCTIONS AND WARNING TO THE DISCIPLES:** Matthew 24:17-20: *"Let him that is on the housetop not go down to take out the things that are in his house: and let him that is in the field not return back to take his cloak. But woe unto them that give suck in those days! And pray you that your flight be not in the winter, neither on a Sabbath; for then shall be great tribulation, such as has not been from the beginning of the world (aion—age) until now, no, not ever shall be. And except those days had been shortened, no flesh would have been saved: but for the elect's sake those days shall be shortened. Then if any man shall say unto you, Lo, here is the Christ, or, Here, believe it not. For there shall arise false Christs, and false prophets, and shall show great signs and wonders; so as to lead astray, if possible, even the elect. Behold, I have told you beforehand. If; therefore, they shall say unto you, Behold, he is in the wilderness; go not forth: Behold, he is in the inner chambers; believe it not. For as the lightning comes forth from the east, and is seen even unto the west; so shall be the coming of the Son of man. Where so ever the carcass is, there will the eagles be gathered together."*

*"For then shall be great tribulation, such as has not been from the beginning of the world (aion—age) until now, no, not ever shall be."* This is speaking of the Jewish age, not all time, not of the destruction of the flood before the Jewish age, and not speaking of any war after the end of the Jewish age. Daniel 12:1 says, *"And there will be a time of distress such as never occurred since there was a nation until that time."* Daniel vision about Israel and Michael was speaking only of Israel, and should be understood as "since there was a nation of Israel." It is speaking only of the wars and captivities of Israel, not of other nations, not anything before Israel was a nation, or after the destruction of Israel. **"Not ever shall be"** would have no meaning if it were after a tribulation, which would be after the end of the world.

**(a) Those in Jerusalem were to flee without taking time to take things from their house**, and those in fields were not to take the time to return to their house for things (Matthew 24:18-19). *"But when you see Jerusalem surrounded by armies, then recognize that her desolation is at hand. Then let those who are in Judea flee to the mountains, and let those who are in the midst of the city depart, and let not those who are in the country enter the city"* (Luke 20:20-21).

No one, saved or lost, will be able to flee to the mountains to escape at the second coming of Jesus. The saved will not want to, and the lost will not be able to escape the judgment. Neither will there be armies surround Jerusalem at the second coming of Christ. Nevertheless, Millennialists attempt to make this be an army of Satan surrounding Christ and His saints in the Millennial Kingdom. Would those who were with Christ in Jerusalem be told to flee to the mountains to escape the army of Satan? If they were, it would give Satan more power than Christ has, for He would not be able to protect them from Satan. The saints that were to flee to the mountains would be in the mountains at the time of rapture, not raptured to Heaven where the Millennialists say they will be. Although this is a key passage to the Millennia theory it is an undeniable contradiction to the rapture theory.

**(b) Woe unto them that have a small child** (Matthew 24:29). Those with a child would have hardships in fleeing to the mountains, but at the end of the world this will be no problem. Joy, not woe to those who will be caught up to meet Jesus in the air, joy to those that are asleep and wake up at the coming of Christ, and joy to those that are alive when He comes and will be caught up to meet the Lord (1 Thessalonians 4:16-17).

**(c) They were to pray that it not be in the winter, or not be on a Sabbath for the gates of Jerusalem were closed, and no one could depart from the city** (Matthew 24:20). Because the streams were then impassable from the heavy rains, the cold wet weather would be hard on those who were fleeing. The gates of Jerusalem have never been closed after A. D. 70, and it will be no problem if the gates of Jerusalem, or any city was closed at the second coming, nor will impassable streams or cold weather be a problem at the second coming.

**(d) There would be a greater tribulation than had been from the beginning of the age** (aion—age) (Matthew 24:20-22). Not the beginning of the world as the King James Version says, from the beginning of the Jewish age.

**(e) There would be many false Christs and prophets that would show great signs** (Matthew 24:23-27). But, when Christ came in judgment on Israel He was seen by the entire world through His judgment on Israel. False Christs and prophets will not be a sign of His second coming at the end of the world.

**(f) Where so ever the dead body of Israel was (the carcass) the eagles would gather** (Matthew 24:28). The Jewish nation was a dead and rotting carcass with its birds of prey.

- First: many false Christs.
- Second: Christ coming seen by all. Christ coming in judgment on Israel, which was the destruction and tribulation of Jerusalem.
- Third: Then the dead carcass of Israel.

That Christ being seen by all is the coming of Christ in judgment on Israel, and not at His second coming is shown by it being between the false Christs and the dead carcass of Jerusalem.

*"For these are days of vengeance, that all things which are written may be fulfilled" (Luke 21:22). Jeremiah ends his prophecy made in Gehenna (valley of Topheth) outside of Jerusalem with, "Thus says the Lord of hosts, the God of Israel, 'Behold, I am about to bring on this city and all its towns the entire calamity that I have declared against it because they have stiffened their necks so as not to heed My words'" (Jeremiah 19:15).*

**HINDERANCES TO FLEEING THE TRIBULATION, FIRST CENTURY OR TODAY?** Hindrances to flight from Jerusalem in A. D. 70 that will not be hindrances at the second coming (Or at a Rapture if there were one).

(a) ***"Let him that is on the housetop not go down."*** Most first century houses in Jerusalem had flat roofs, and were used as sleeping places. Today there are almost none with flat roofs. Anyone on the housetop was not to take time to go in the house to take anything.

(b) ***Not on the Sabbath.*** The gates would be closed, and no one would be able to leave the city. Today there are no gates. The Law forbided going more than a Sabbath Day journey, which is less than a mile, and others Jews might have stopped them for breaking the Sabbath Law.

(c) ***Not in the winter.*** Travel would be hard then, but not today with today's ways of travel.

(d) ***Having a small child*** (Matthew 24:19). This would make the fleeing from Jerusalem hard.

***"For the days shall come upon you when your enemies shall cast up a bank about you, and compass you round, and keep you on in on every side"*** (Luke 19:43-44). Then the common way that was used by the Romans to take a walled city was to build an embankment next to the wall for the army to walk up to the top of the wall. Today's cities, not even Jerusalem, do not have walls, as they would be useless with modern planes and explosives.

***"And except those days had been shortened, no flesh would have been saved: but for the elect's sake those days shall be shortened."*** After Jerusalem was completely destroyed, the cities of Israel that had not been destroyed before Jerusalem was also destroyed. If the Roman army had kept going, the fateful Jews beyond the mountains where Christians had fled to would have also been destroyed. No flesh saved would not make sense if it were applied to the second coming of Christ as it is by many Millennialists.

Luke 21:24 ***"And they shall fall by the edge of the sword, and shall be led captive into all the nations: and Jerusalem shall be trodden down of the Gentiles until the times of the Gentiles be fulfilled."*** In A. D. 70 all the Jews that were in Israel that

had not been killed were led captive into all the nations. The siege of Jerusalem was at the time of the Passover when many of the most faithful from all over were within the walls of the city. **If this were speaking of the millennium, who is going to fall by the sword, and who is going to be led captive at the second coming of Christ?**

GEORGE P. HOLFORD: "Of the Jews destroyed during the siege, Josephus reckons not less than **one million and one hundred thousand**, to which must be added, above **two-hundred and thirty-seven thousand who perished in other places, and innumerable multitudes who were swept away by famine, and pestilence, and of which no calculation could be made**. Not less than two thousand laid violent hands upon themselves. Of the captives the whole was about **ninety-seven thousand**." "The Destruction of Jerusalem." He also says that at this time "bands of robbers and murderers plundered the other towns and slew the resistance of many of the towns. The Roman leaders endeavored to strike terror to the Jews and thus, cause them to surrender. Those prisoners, who resisted when taken, were scourged, tortured, and crucified before the wall of the city. Hundreds were daily put to death in this manner, and the dreadful work continued until, along the Valley Jehoshaphat and at Calvary, crosses were erected in so great numbers that there was scarcely room to move among them. So terrible was the visited that awful imprecation uttered before the judgment seat of Pilate: 'His blood be on us, and on our children,' Matthew 27:25" "The Great Controversy," 1911. The nation of Israel sowed a cross and reaped thousands of crosses.

ADAM CLARKE: "No history can furnish us with a parallel to the calamities and miseries of the Jews:—rape, murder, famine, and pestilence within: fire and sword, and all the horrors of war, without. Our Lord wept at the foresight of these calamities; and it is almost impossible for any humane person to read the relation of them in Josephus without weeping also" Commentary on Matthew.

JOSEPHUS: "Now the seditious at first give orders that the dead should be buried out of the public treasure, as not enduring the stench of their dead bodies. But afterwards, when they could not do that, they had them cast down from the walls into the valleys beneath." (The Wars Of The Jews Or The History Of The Destruction Of Jerusalem, Book 5.12.3). "And indeed the multitude of carcasses that lay in heaps one upon another was a horrible sight, and produced a pestilential stench, which was a hindrance to those that would make sallies out of the city, and fight the enemy: but as those were to go in battle-array, who had been already use to ten thousand murders, and must tread upon those dead bodies as they marched along, so they were not terrified, nor did they pity men as they marched over them." (The Wars Of The Jews Or The History Of The Destruction Of Jerusalem, book 6, page 1). This is only a small sample of the pages in Josephus's history of the destruction of the Jews as a nation, of the wars of the Jews with the Romans (1) before, (2) during, (3) and after the destruction of Jerusalem, of the famines, pestilence, and earthquakes through out all Israel unto the entire nation was destroyed. It is not for those with a weak stomach.

*"Verily I say unto you, there shall not be left here one stone upon another"* (Matthew 24:2). Titus wanted to save the temple and give command that it be not destroyed, but Christ had said it would be. It was set on fire against the command of Titus, and the gold melted and the soldiers pried the stones apart down to the foundation stones looking for the gold; not one stone was left on another. In Luke's account of this (Luke 19:41-44) Christ says the temple would be even with the ground with not one stone upon another. After the destruction of Jerusalem one

could not know by looking at the spot that the temple had been on it. A Moslem Mosque, called the Dome of the Rock, is now on the spot where the temple was.

B. W. JOHNSON: "Other great temples are in ruins, but their ruins indicate their former splendor. The Parthenon, the Acropolis, the temples of Karnak, Luxor, and Baalbec are examples; but to find even the foundations of the Jewish temple it is necessary to dig beneath the modern city. It has entirely disappeared from the face of the earth, and a Mahometan mosque stands on the spot where it stood." *The People's New Testament With Notes*, Matthew 24:2, 1891.

JOSEPHUS: "Daniel also wrote concerning the Roman government, and that our country should be made desolate by them" *"Antiquities of the Jews"* 10.11.7.

**In their books of fiction the coming millennium tribulation is often based on Matthew 24, which has already been fulfilled in A. D. 70 before that generation passed away (Matthew 24:34). "For then shall be great tribulation, such as has not been from the beginning of the world (aion—age)."**

**THE CARCASS OF ISRAEL:** *"Where so ever the carcass is, there will the eagles be gathered together"* Matthew 24:28.

JOHN LIGHTFOOT: "I wonder and can any understand these words of pious men flying to Christ, (in the rapture) when the discourse here is of quite a different thing: they are thus connected to the forgoing: Christ shall be revealed with a sudden vengeance; for when God shall cast of the city and people, grown ripe for destruction, like a carcass thrown out, the Roman soldiers, like eagles, shall straight fly to it with their eagles (ensigns) to tear and devour it." Matthew 24:28 *"A Commentary on Matthew."*

**Not Jerusalem only, but all the nation of Israel was destroyed, and all the land that was the nation of Israel was taken over by other people. The nation of Israel came to an end.** The Jewish religion was centered round and totally dependence on the sacrifices, which could only be performed at the Temple, and only by the Leviticus priesthood. Both came to an end and have not been restored to this day.

**IMMEDIATELY AFTER THE TRIBULATION AND DESTRUCTION OF JERUSALEM AND ISRAEL** Matthew 24:29-31: *"But immediately after the tribulation of those days the sun shall not give her light, and the stars shall fall from heaven, and the powers of the heavens shall be shaken: and then shall appear the sign of the Son of man in heaven: and then shall all the tribes of the earth mourn, and they shall see the Son of man coming on the clouds of heaven with power and great glory. And he shall send forth his angels with a great sound of a trumpet, and they shall gather together his elect from the four winds, from one end of heaven to the other."*

Matthew 24:1-28 is speaking of the destruction of Jerusalem. Then in the next verse Christ says, *"But immediately after the tribulation of those days,"* and He gives a list in verses 29-31 of things that are to happen then, immediately after the tribulation and destruction of Jerusalem, not at His second coming, not after a tribulation that some believe is to be at the end of the world. Then in verses 32-44 He gives us the parable of Israel the fig tree in which His coming was *"nigh, even at*

*the doors.*" These verses are highly symbolic of something that took place immediately after the destruction of Jerusalem. In symbolic language the sun is a great ruler on this earth, and the stars are lesser rulers. There were no rulers or teachers in Israel immediately after the destruction of Jerusalem and all the cities of Israel. All was darkness for Israel. *"And then shall all the tribes of the earth mourn"* (see Matthew 10:23 where the coming of Christ is in judgment on Israel before the Apostles had gone over the cities of Israel). In the next parable, Christ is, *"Nigh, even at the doors,"* and *"this generation shall not pass away till all these things be accomplished."* Though not literally, Christ did come in judgment in the destruction of Jerusalem. If this were at the judgment when all will be raised from the dead for judgment by Christ, I find it difficult to see how any could think that Christ will not give forth His light at the Judgment, and what would be the stars that shall fall from Heaven? If this were literal, stars could not fall on the earth, even one star would be many times bigger than the earth. If verses 30 and 31 were speaking of the second coming, they would be out of place for the second coming was not *"immediately after the tribulation of those days"* (verse 29), and not in the *"generation that shall not pass away till all these things be accomplished"* (verse 34). Many teach that the things in Matthew 24 are events that are happening today, but if so, there would be some very old people living today.

**The "great tribulation" of Matthew 24:21 is now past history, not something still to come. "But immediately after the tribulation of these days the sun shall not give her light, and the stars shall fall from heaven, and the powers of the heavens shall be shaken" (Matthew 24:29). Jesus used the same symbolic language to describe the fall of Israel that Isaiah used to describe the fall of Babylon (Ezekiel 32:7-9), and is commonly used in the Old Testament. "For the stars of heaven and their constellations will not flash forth their light; the sun will be dark when it rises, and the moon will not shed its light" (Isaiah 13:10). Luke added, "And upon the earth distress of nations" (Luke 21:21). The sun being darkened was immediately after the tribulation Christ was speaking of, which was in A. D. 70, not a tribulation yet to come after the second coming of Christ. Most Millennialists move the sun being darkened from "immediately after the tribulation," and make the darkening be in the tribulation, not something that comes "after the tribulation"; they change "after the tribulation" to "during the tribulation."**

- Darkened *"immediately after the tribulation,"* the tribulation of verses 1-28 in A. D. 70.
- Not darkened **during** the tribulation as Premillennialists teach. They must change the time of the sun being darkened.

(1). The same figurative language of the sun, moon and stars being darkened, or falling from heaven is also used:

- Of the fall of Judea (a national judgment) in Jeremiah 4:1-28
- Of the fall of Israel (Amos 8:6-9; 8:18-20)
- Of the fall of Israel (Zephaniah 1:14-18).

- Of the fall of the Nations (Joel 3:15-16; 2:31)
- Of the fall of Egypt (Ezekiel 30:3-4; 32:7-8; Isaiah 19:1)
- Of the fall of Babylon (Isaiah 13:10-20)
- Of the fall of Edom (Isaiah 34:4-6)
- Of the fall of the city of Arier in Israel (Isaiah 29:5-6)
- Of the fall of "My people" (Isaiah 51:5-6)
- Also see Joel 2:1-31; 30:31; Haggai 2:6-7; Amos 8:9; Jeremiah 15:9 46:7; 49:23-24; Isaiah 17:12-13; 19:1; 47:20; 64:3; Daniel 7:2-17; Exodus 19:16; 13:21-22; 14:19-31; Psalm 18:13; 104:3; Ezekiel 34:4; Nahum 1:3.

RUSSELL BOATMEN: "At a public forum in which chapter 24 of Matthew and chapter 20 of Revelation were under discussion my respondent stoutly contended that Mt. 24:29 could not possibly refer to the fall of Jerusalem. He read the verse slowly and with deliberate emphasis and added, 'They (the sun, moon and stars) are still up there.' That scored points with the Premillennialists. But by the same rule we would have to rewrite Old Testament history. Isaiah's and Ezekiel's prophecies, noted above, could not then refer to the downfall of the nations to whom they were directed. The sun, moon, and stars 'are still up there.' And the land of Edom is trodden by caravans of tourists year after year, who see no streams of pitch, no brimstone, no smoke going up for ever and ever. If the Bible is allowed to be its own interpreter, when read in the light of the prophecies couched in the same language style, and even using the same metaphors, Mt. 24:29 will be readily recognizable as fulfilled in the destruction of Jerusalem, 70 A. D." "What The Bible Says, The End Time," page 145, College Press Publishing Company, 1980.

**(2). THE SUN BEING DARKENED IN THE JUDGMENT OF GOD ON THESE NATIONS WAS NOT A LITERAL DARKING, NEITHER WAS IT THE END OF THE WORLD. This was familiar language to those Jesus was speaking to, and they would have understood him to be speaking of the fall of a nation, not of the end of the world.** It is similar to that in Deuteronomy 23:22-28 and both are a judgment on Israel.

(3). Compare Matthew 24:29-30 to the fall of Egypt. *"And when I extinguish you, I will cover the heavens, and darken their stars; I will cover the sun with a cloud, and the moon shall not give its light. All the shining lights in the heavens I will darken over you and will set darkness on your land, declares the Lord God. I will also trouble the hearts of many peoples, when I bring your destruction among the nations"* (Ezekiel 32:7-9). As far as these nations were concerned the lights went out.

Matthew 24:30: *"Then shall appear the sign of the Son of Man in Heaven."* The sign that did appear was the destruction of Israel. The sign proves that the man Israel rejected is the Lord, and that He is the ruler over all nations, and He has the power to destroy the nations that reject Him. The whole system of worship of the Law, worship that required both Jerusalem and the Temple had ended, and is no longer acceptable to God.

In speaking of God's coming in judgment on Egypt Isaiah said, *"The oracle concerning Egypt. Behold, the Lord is riding on a swift cloud, and is about to come to Egypt"* (Isaiah 19:1; also Jeremiah 4:13; Ezekiel 30:3-4). This is not God literally riding a cloud into Egypt, but is figurative language of His coming in judgment on

Egypt. When they saw Jerusalem destroyed, they were seeing Jesus coming in judgment on Israel. Jesus told the high priest, **"You shall see the son of man sitting at the right hand of power, and coming on the clouds of Heaven"** (Mark 14:62). The high priest did not literally see Jesus in Heaven, but he and all Israel did see the coming of Jesus in judgment on Israel.

FOY E. WALLACE JR.: "The signs in the heavens, the darkening sun and falling stars, refer to the falling of Jewish dignitaries, casting down of authorities and powers, long established, and signified the darkness that settled upon the Jewish State, the sun of the Hebrew temple was darkened, the moon of the Jewish commonwealth was as blood, the stars of Sanhendrin fell from their high seats of authority...The sign of the Son of man in the heaven was a signal, the evidence of divine visitation and intervention in the downfall of the Jewish authorities and in all the transpiring events. The mourning of all the tribes of the earth refers to the lamentation of the Jewish families all over the world because of the destruction of their city and their temple and their state. The coming of the Son of man in the clouds of heaven is not a reference to the second coming of Christ but to the coming foretold by Jesus to Caiaphas in Matthew 26:64: 'Hereafter shall you see the Son of man sitting on the right hand of power and coming in the clouds of Heaven.' Jesus told Caiaphas that he would see it, he would be living witness to these event." "The Book of Revelation," page 354, Wallace Publications, 1966.

*"And then shall all the tribes of the earth mourn."* When their country was destroyed, the Jews that were in other parts of the earth would mourn. The word translated "earth" is "gee," and in the King James Version is translated "land" forty-one times, "ground" eighteen times and "country" two times.

- "Gee" is translated "land" in Matthew 2:6; 2:20; 2:21; 4:15; 9:26; 11:24; 14:34; 27:45; Mark 4:1; 6:47; 6:53; 15:33; Luke 4:25; 5:3; 5:11; 5:24; 8:27; 14:35; 21:23; John 3:22; 6:21; 21:8; 21:9; 21:11; Acts 7:3; 7:4; 7:4; 7:6; 7:11; 7:29; 7:33; 7:36; 7:40; 13:17; 13:19; 13:19; Hebrews 8:9; 11:9; Jude 5.
- "Gee" is translated "ground" in Matthew 9:29; 13:8; 13:23; 15:35; Mark 4:8; 4:20; 4:26; 8:6; 9:20; 24:35; Luke 8:8; 8:15; 22:44; John 8:6; 8:8; 12:24; Acts 7:33.
- "Gee" is translated "country" in Matthew 9:31 and Acts 7:3.

Had it been translated "land" in Matthew 24:30, *"And then shall all the tribes of the land (gee) mourn"* most of the confusion would not have existed. See Zechariah 12:11-12. It is easy to see why all Israel would have mourned when their country and worship was destroyed.

*"And he will send forth His angels with a great trumpet, and they will gather together His elect from the four winds, from one end of the sky to the other"* (Matthew 24:31). Still speaking in figurative language Jesus is saying He will send His messengers into the entire world with His Gospel, and gather them to Him in His kingdom, the church. Angels is from the Greek "angelos," which is translated "messengers" in James 2:25; Matthew 11:10; Mark 1:2; Luke 7:24; 7:27; 9:52. The messengers Rahab received and sent out another way were men, not heavenly being; Jesus did not jump from the destruction of Jerusalem to His second coming. Just as there was not literally a "great trumpet" that was heard in Egypt and Assyria (Isaiah 27:13), there was not literally a "great trumpet" after the fall of Jerusalem.

*"And they will gather together His elect from the four winds, from one end of the sky to the other," is figurative language meaning from all over the earth, just as is "from east and west, and from north and south" (Luke 13:29 also see Matthew 24:14). All the saved, "His elect" are now gathered together in His kingdom, the church.*

Those in the first century would understand *"blood, fire, vapor and smoke"* to be used as it was in the Old Testament (Acts 2:19; Joel 2:28-32), but would never have understood it to be referring to a nuclear war as many Millennialists apply it. Christ used the symbolic language of the Old Testament as it was used in the Old Testament, as those hearing Him would have understood, not something in today's newspapers. Literally, that day was an ordinary day; the moon was not literally turned into blood, but spiritually it was an earth-shaking event. Even the Millennialists, who say all scripture must be interpreted literally, do not believe the stars will literally fall on the earth, or the moon will ever literally be turned to blood.

**The Son of Man seen coming in His kingdom.** *"Truly I say to you, there are some of those who are standing here who shall not taste death until they **see the Son of Man coming in His kingdom**" (Matthew 16:28). The parallel passage in Mark says, "Truly I say to you, there are some of those who are standing here who shall not taste death until they see the kingdom of God after it has come with power" (Mark 9:1). His kingdom came in Acts 2; therefore, Christ was seen coming in His kingdom in power and glory in A. D. 30. Christ came both in the coming of His kingdom and in judgment on Israel, but neither one was a visible coming as the second coming that will be seen by all, when both all the living and all the dead will see Him. The problem many have when they read Matthew 24 is that they see only His second coming, and therefore must interpret much of Matthew 24 to be speaking of the end of time. Neither His coming in His kingdom in A. D. 30, nor His coming in judgment on Israel in A. D. 70 was the second coming when the saved will put on immortality and forever be with Him.*

**Coming of Christ before His disciples had gone through the cities of Israel.** Matthew 10:16-23 *"Behold, I send you forth as sheep in the midst of wolves: be you therefore wise as serpents, and harmless as doves. But beware of men: for they will deliver you up to councils, and in theirs synagogues they will scourge you; and before governors and kings shall you be brought for my sake, for a testimony to them and to the Gentiles. But when they deliver you up, be not anxious how or what you shall speak: for it shall be given you in that hour what you shall speak. For it is not you that speak, but the Spirit of your Father that speaks in you. And brother shall deliver up brother to death, and the father his child: and children shall rise up against parents, and cause them to be put to death. And you shall be hated of all men for my name's sake: but he that endures to the end, the same shall be saved. But when they persecute you in this city, flee into the next: **for verily I say unto you, You shall not have gone through the cities of Israel, till the Son of man be come.**"*

## **AFTER TITUS CAME ADRIAN, All of Israel was destroyed.**

G. HOLFORD: "'In the reign of Adrian,' say Bishop Newton, 'nine hundred and eighty-five of their best towns were sacked and demolished, five hundred and eighty thousand men fell by the sword, in battle, besides, an infinite multitude who perished by, famine, and sickness, and fire; so that **Judea was depopulated**, and an almost incredible number of every age and of each sex, were sold like horses and dispersed over the face of the earth'— Newton, vol. I, page xviii.) The war which gave rise to these calamities happened about forty-four years after the destruction of Jerusalem." The Destruction of Jerusalem.

G. HOLFORD: "After the destruction of Jerusalem seventeen hundred Jews who surrendered at Macherus were slain, and of fugitives not less than three thousand in the woods of Jardes. Titus having marched his army to Caesarea, he (Titus) there, with great splendor, celebrated the birthday of his brother Domitian; and according to the barbarous manner of those times, punished many Jews in honor of it. The number who was burnt, and who fell by fighting with wild beasts, and in mutual combats, exceeded two thousand five hundred." The Destruction of Jerusalem.

ADAM CLARKE lists some that were killed at other places. "The inhabitants of Caesarea, above 20,000. At Scythopolis, above 13,000. At Ascalon, 2,500. At Ptolemais, 2,000. At Alexandria, 50,000. At Joppa, when taken by Cestius Gallus, 8,400. In a mountain called Asamon, near Sepporis, above 2,000. At Damascus, 10,000. In a battle with the Romans at Ascalon, 10,000. In an ambuscade near the same place, 8,000. At Japha, 15,000. Of the Samaritans, on Mount Gerizim, 11,600. At Jotapa, 40,000. At Joppa, when taken by Vespasian, 4,200. At Tarichea, 6,500. And after the city was taken, 1,200. At Gamala, 4,000, besides 5,000 who threw themselves down a precipice. Of those who fled with John, of Gischala, 6,000. Of the Gadarenes, 15,000 slain, besides countless multitudes drowned. In the village of Idumea, above 10,000 slain. At Gerasa, 1,000. At Machaerus, 1,700. In the wood of Jardes, 3,000. In the castle of Masada, 960. In Cyrene, by Catullus the governor, 3,000. Besides these, many of every age, sex, and condition, were slain in the war, who are not reckoned; but, of those who are reckoned, the number amounts to upwards of 1,357,660, which would have appeared incredible, if their own historian had not so particularly enumerated them." Clarke's Commentary on Matthew. The unknown number that was destroyed throughout the country by pestilence, famine, earthquakes, and robbers throughout the reign both before the destruction of Jerusalem, during the destruction, and the years after it must be added to this. Also, Adam Clarke says most of those taken captive "above seventeen years old were distributed through the Roman provinces, to be destroyed in their theaters by the sword, and by the wild beasts."

JOHN CALVIN: "For within fifty years the city was destroyed and the temple ruined, **THE WHOLE COUNTRY WAS REDUCED TO A HIDEOUS DESERT.**" "Commentary on a Harmony of the Evangelist, Matthew, Mark, and Luke." All Israel, the whole nation, not just the temple was destroyed, "reduced to a hideous desert."

DAVID CHILTON: "'Let Him be Crucified! Let Him be Crucified! His blood be on us, and on our children!' the apostates had cried forty years earlier (Matthew 27:22-25); and when it was all over, more than a million Jews had been killed in the siege of Jerusalem; close to a million more were sold into slavery throughout the empire, **and whole of Judea lay smoldering in ruins, virtually depopulate.**" "The Great Tribulation" 1987, Dominion Press.

JOSEPHUS: "The countryside, like the city, was a pitiful sight, for where once there had been a multitude of trees and parks, there was now an utter wilderness stripped bare of timber; and no stranger who has seen the old Judea and the glorious suburbs of her capital, and now beheld utter desolation, could refrain from tears or suppress a groan at so terrible a change. The war had

blotted out every trace of beauty, and no one who had known it in the past and came upon it suddenly would have recognized the place, for though he was already there, he would still have been looking for the city" The Jewish War.— JOSEPHUS: "The Dead Sea too was filled with corpses which the river (the Jordan River) carried down to it by the thousands."

*"Therefore, behold, the days come, says Jehovah, that it shall no more be called Topheth, not the Valley of the son of Hinnom, but the valley of slaughter: for they shall bury in Topheth, till there be no place to bury. And the dead bodies of this people shall be food for the birds of the heavens, and for the beasts of the earth; and none shall frighten them away. **Then will I cause to cease from the cities of Judah, and from the streets of Jerusalem, the voice of mirth and the voice of gladness, the voice of the bridegroom and the voice of the bride; for the land shall become a waste**" (Jeremiah 7:32-34).*

*"And except these days had been shortened, no flesh would have been saved: but for the elect's sake those days shall be shortened" (Matthew 24:22). If the war had gone on it would have reached beyond Israel unto Pella and other cities in the mountains where many Christians were that had left Israel; but it was stopped before it reached them. "No flesh" will be saved at the second coming. "Flesh and blood cannot inherit the kingdom of God" (1 Corinthians 15:50). That the days were shortened, and some flesh was saved proves this is not speaking of the second coming of Christ.*

**(5) HE (CHRIST) IS NIGH, EVEN AT THE DOORS** Matthew 24:32-44: *"Now from the fig tree learn her parable: when her branch is now become tender, and puts forth its leaves, you know that the summer is nigh; even so you also, **when you see all these things, know you that He is nigh, even at the doors. Verily I say unto you, this generation shall not pass away, till all these things be accomplished.** Heaven and earth shall pass away, but my words shall not pass away. But of that day and hour knows no one, not even the angels of heaven, neither the Son, but the Father only. And as were the days of Noah, so shall be the coming of the Son of man. For in those days which were before the flood they were eating and drinking, marrying and giving in marriage, until the day that Noah entered into the ark, and they knew not until the flood came, and took them all away; so shall be the coming of the Son of man. Then shall two men be in the field; one is taken, and one is left; two women shall be grinding at the mill; one is taken, and one is left. Watch; therefore: for you know not on what day your Lord comes. But know this that if the master of the house had known in what watch the thief was coming, he would have watched, and would not have suffered his house to be broken through. Therefore be you also ready; for in an hour that you think not the Son of man comes."* This makes it clear that all Jesus had said before this applies to the destruction of Jerusalem, not to His second coming for *"this generation"* has long ago passed away. **"All these things"** are the things Christ has just told them, **things that those He was speaking to would see in their life time** (wars, famines, pestilences, earthquakes, the abomination of desolation, the great tribulation, false prophets, sun and moon darkened, Son of Man coming in the clouds, stars falling from Heaven); all these things did come on that generation; when they saw the signs coming to pass, they know that the end of the temple and Israel was at hand. Although we are to watch and always be ready, we are not given any signs as they were that we can see and know that His coming is soon, not even that it will be in our lifetime, or in the next thousand or ten thousand years. Commentaries on verses 35-44 are divided on whether this is

speaking of the coming of Christ in judgment on Israel or His second coming. It is unlikely that Christ would have changed from speaking of judgment on Israel in verse 34, then His second coming in verse 35, and back to judgment on Israel in verse 40 with nothing to show He changed. He was speaking to His disciples at this time (Matthew 24:1), and telling them they were to watch for the signs He gave them of His coming in judgment on Israel; He tells them it will be in their generation, but does not specify the exact date, the hour, or the day when His coming on judgment on Israel would come. Just as Sodom did not know the day of their coming destruction (Luke 17:26-37).

- Just as those in the days of Noah did not know when the flood was coming (Matthew 24:37-39).
- No one knew when the end of Israel was coming. It came at the time when the devout Jews from all over were in Jerusalem; they were assembled from the whole country for the feast of unleavened bread.

**"All these things"** are the things He told them to watch for before the destruction of Jerusalem in 70 A. D., not at the second coming of Jesus. Luke says, *"But when these things begin to come to pass, look up, and lift up your heads; because your redemption draws nigh"* (Luke 21:38). This redemption draws nigh to those of that generation. It was redemption from the persecution of the Jews. *"This generation shall not pass away, till all things be accomplished"* Luke 21:32. Not the redemption of the U. S. from Russia, or any other redemption today.

- *"But before all these things,*
  - *They shall lay hands on YOU* (those Christ was speaking to),
  - *And shall persecute YOU,*
  - *Delivering YOU up to the synagogues and prisons"* Luke 21:12. No one will be delivered to synagogues and prisons at the second coming of Christ.
- *"This generation shall not pass away, till all things be accomplished"* Luke 21:32, Matthew 24:34.
- *"As for these things which you behold (The temple and how it was adorned) the days will come, in which there shall not be left here one stone upon another, that shall not be thrown down"* Luke 21:5; Matthew 24:1-2.
- *"When therefore shall these things be? And what shall be the sign when these things are about to come to pass?"* (Not one stone upon another) Luke 21:7; Matthew 24:3.
- *"And when YOU shall hear of wars and tumults, be not terrified: for these things must needs come to pass first; but the end is not immediately"* Luke 21:9; Matthew 24:6.
- *"But when these things begin to come to pass"* Luke 21:28.
- *"Even so YOU also, when YOU see these things coming to pass"* Luke 21:31.
- *"But watch YOU at every season, making supplication, that YOU may prevail to escape all these things that shall come to pass"* Luke 21:36.
- *"When YOU see all these things, know YOU that he is nigh, even at the doors. Verily I say unto YOU, this generation shall not pass away TILL ALL THESE THINGS BE ACCOMPLISHED"* Matthew 24:33-34.

Matthew 24:34-36 is a key to understanding all that came to pass before it, all that has been said up to this point must come to pass before **"this generation"** would pass away. Not at the second coming of Jesus at the end of the world. A generation is about 40 years. It is the same *"generation"* spoken of in Matthew 23:36.

*"Heaven and earth shall pass away, but my words shall not pass away"* (Matthew 24:35). Is *"heaven and earth"* literal or figuratively? He had assured them that the end of Jerusalem was coming, now He assured them that His word would come to pass, that heaven and earth would pass away, but not His word; the end of Jerusalem was sure. He seems to be speaking of the end of the Jewish heaven and earth, the end of their nation, not the end of the world; Heaven itself will never pass away; to make this be a literal passing away of *"Heaven and earth"* would make Heaven itself come to an end. Israel's sun, moon, and stars would be darkened, the holy city and temple alone with the priesthood would all be gone, which would make keeping the Law and worship according to the Law both impossible, their heaven and earth did pass away, but Heaven will never pass away.

ADAM CLARKE: **"But of that day and hour,** here, is translated season by many eminent critics, and is used in this sense by both sacred and profane authors. As the day was not known, in which Jerusalem should be invested by the Romans, therefore our Lord advised his disciples to pray that it might not be on a Sabbath; and as the season was not known, therefore they were to pray that it might not be in the winter; Matthew 24:20," Commentary on Matthew 24:36.

At the time Christ was speaking in Matthew 24 the disciples did not understand that Christ was to die and be resurrected, they thought He would be a king of Israel on the throne of David on this earth; they would not have been able to understand this if it were about His second coming from Heaven. Just as Noah warned them of the flood to come, Israel was warned of the destruction to come, but just as they did not believe Noah, Israel did not believe Christ, *"And as were the days of Noah, so shall be the coming of the Son of man. For as in those days which were before the flood they were eating and drinking, marrying and giving in marriage, until the day that Noah entered into the ark, and they know not unto the flood came, and took them away; so shall be the coming of the Son of man. Then shall two men be in the field; one is taken, and one is left; two women shall be grinding at the mill; one is taken and one is left. Watch therefore: for you know not on what day your Lord comes"* (Matthew 24:37-44). All that did not watch and flee when the sign was given was destroyed just as those who did not enter into the Ark. At the second coming of Christ no one will be left in the field, all the dead will be resurrected, and all the living will be changed (1 Corinthians 15:51-52).

*"That day and hour knows no one...but the father only"* (Matthew 24:38). At that times the Father in Heaven, who knows all things, would have known the time of the coming of Christ in judgment on Jerusalem. *"Christ Jesus, who, although He existed in the form of God, did not regard equality with God a thing to be grasped, but emptied Himself, taking the form of a bond—servant, and being made in the likeness of men. Being found in appearance as a man, He humbled Himself by becoming obedient to the point of death, even death on a cross"* (Philippians 2:6-7). He was *"made a little lower than the angels"* (Hebrews 2:7).

The Christians of that day did not know the season when the end would come, but was told to pray that it be not in the winter season, nor did they know the day, but were told to pray that it not be on a Sabbath Day. *"But watch you at every season, making supplication, that you may prevail to escape all these things that shall come to pass, and to stand before the Son of man"* (Luke 21:36; Matthew 24:42-44; Mark 13:35-37). The Christians did watch and did escape all these things, all the things He has just warned them about that was coming to Israel; but no one will escape the judgment to come. Just as Noah warned of the destruction of the world, but did not give the exact time, and all went on with their lives and did not pay attention to the warning, the warning of Christ were not heeded by the Jews, and the end came when they were not looking for it. As in the flood only the evil was destroyed and the righteous saved, the unbelieving Jews were destroyed, and the believers were saved; *"two men in the field; one will be taken, and one will be left."*

JOSEPHYS the Jewish first century historian, recorded concerning the year 70, "Thus were the miserable people persuaded by these deceivers, and such as belied God himself; while they did not attend, nor give credit to the signs that were so evident and did so plainly foretell their future desolation; but, like men infatuated, without either eyes to see, or minds to consider, did not regard the denunciations that God made to them."

JOHN LIGHTFOOT (1859): "This generation shall not pass. Hence, it appears plain enough that the foregoing verses are not to be understood of the last judgment but, as we said, of the destruction of Jerusalem." A Commentary of The New Testament, Volume 2, page 320.

JOHN WESLEY (1754): "This generation of men now living shall not pass till all these things be done—The expression implies that great part of that generation would be passed away, but not the whole. Just so it was; for the city and temple were destroyed thirty-nine or forty years after."

MATTHEW HENERY: "As to these things, the wars, seductions, and persecutions, here foretold, and especially of the ruin of the Jewish nation; 'This generation shall not pass away, till all these things be fulfilled (Mt 24:34); there are those now alive that shall see Jerusalem destroyed, **and the Jewish church brought to an end.**'" One Volume Commentary on the Whole Bible.

JAMES D. BALES: "And the destruction of the whole Jewish economy was the fulfillment of the rest of it (Joel's prophecy of the last days Acts 2:16-21). If there was one thing the Jew felt sure of it was that Jerusalem was the favored city of God, and that its future supremacy among the nations was as certain to come as the sunrise. Its sacrifices would always be acceptable offered on the altars by the sons of Levi. Now we see the national life of Israel forever ended; the temple forever closed; the sacrifices become useless; the priesthood forgotten; and Israel no more to God than any other nation...If you could think of a pious Jew having gone to sleep three years before Christ was crucified and then wakened in a few years after the destruction of Jerusalem, what an utter bewilderment he would have! All that he supposed to be permanent was gone, and in place of it a company of men preaching God's love to all men, worshiping in all places, and claiming earthly dominion in none. He would well say this in indeed what Joel said to us" The Hub Of The Bible Or Acts Two Analyzed, page 70, Lambert Book House, 1960.

**(6) ISRAEL THE UNFAITHFUL SERVANT** Matthew 24:45-51: *"Who then is the faithful and wise servant, whom his lord has set over his household, to give them their food in due season? Blessed is that servant, whom his lord when he comes shall find so doing. Verily I say unto you, that he will set him over all that he has. But*

*if that evil servant shall say in his heart, My lord terries; and shall begin to beat his fellow-servants, and shall eat and drink with the drunken; the lord of that servant shall come in a day when he expects not, and in an hour when he knows not, and shall cut him asunder, and appoint his portion with the hypocrites: there shall be weeping and gnashing of teeth."* Like all parables, all that are in them are not to be taken literally. They teach a lesson which is the main point of the parable. The point of this one is that Israel had been unfaithful and a judgment was coming.

**(7) UNPROFITABLE SERVANT–OUTER DARKNESS** Matthew 25:30; 8:12; 22:13: Chapter 25 is a part of the same discourse in chapter 24; it was divided by man and makes it easy for English reader to see a change of subject which dose not exist. **It was the "unprofitable servant" and "sons of the kingdom" that were cast into outer darkness, not the ones who never believed, not the lost for they were never in the kingdom.** The Jews who rejected Christ were cast out of the light, no longer to be God's chosen people, into the darkness of the world without the light of God's revelation. Christ said many (the Gentiles) shall *"came from the east and the west, and shall sit down with Abraham, and Isaac, and Jacob, in the kingdom of heaven; but the sons of the kingdom shall be cast forth into outer darkness: there shall be the weeping and the gnashing of teeth."* This says nothing about there being outer darkness in Hell. Fire and darkness do not go together. *"O Jerusalem, Jerusalem, that kills the prophets, and stones them that are sent unto her! How often would I have gathered your children together, even as a hen gathers her own brood under her wings, and you would not! Behold, your house is left unto you desolate"* (Luke 13:33-34). Their house without God in it is darkness. God and His light are now in the Church.

**(8) THE WRATH IS COME UPON THEM TO THE UTTERMOST:** *"And all the people answered and said, His blood be on us and on our children!"* (Matthew 27:25). *"For you also suffered the same things of your own countrymen, even as they did of the Jews; who both killed the Lord Jesus and the prophets, and drove out us, and please not God, and are contrary to all men; forbidding us to speak to the Gentiles that they may be saved; to fill up their sins always: but the wrath is come upon them to the uttermost"* (1 Thessalonians 2:14-16). This was written about A. D. 53, just a few years before the destruction of the nation of Israel in A. D. 70.

**(9) MORE TOLERABLE:** Christ spoke of the day of judgment for lands or cities. More tolerable for Sodom and Gomorrah than for the cities that did not receive those He sent out (Matthew 10:14-15, Mark 6:11, Luke 10:10-12). More tolerable for Sodom and Gomorrah than for Chorazin, Bethsaida, and Capernaum (Matthew 11:21-24, Luke 10:10-12). **When are cities and nations judged? When is their day of judgment to be?** *"And you, Capernaum, will not be exalted to heaven, will you? You shall descend to Hades"* (Matthew 11:23). It was a great city, but it would go down to hades—the grave. Today, there are only a few ruins of Capernaum. It

went from greatness (exalted to heaven) to non-existence (hades—the grave). Individuals, not nations, or cities will be judged at the judgment at the second coming of Christ. Matthew 24 is of the judgment of Jerusalem (Matthew 23:36-38). **All these cities and nations have had a day of judgment, and were brought down to the grave; the day of judgment for them is past; they will not be restored to be judged a second time; the judgment of all individuals will be at the coming of Christ for what each individual did, or for what they did not do has not yet come.** The destruction of Sodom was quick and soon over. The destruction of Jerusalem, which saw and rejected Christ was long and drawn out with much more suffering; therefore, much less tolerable. The Day of Judgment for a city or a nation is the time when God will cause that city or that nation to be destroyed. The Old Testament is full of God's judgment and destruction of cities and nations. None of the nations and cities that were destroyed by God are not now burning in an eternal Hell. **The destruction of the cities that rejected Christ and his apostles were worse (Matthew 24:21) than the destruction of those in the Old Testament.**

HOMER HAILEY: "Punished by death and destruction, neither Sodom nor Gomorrah ever again became a living city. Rather, the two joined as one became a symbol of total destruction as used by Moses and the prophets (Deuteronomy 29:23; Isaiah 1:9; 3:9; Jeremiah. 49:18; Amos 4:11; Zephaniah 2:9), By Jesus (Luke 17:29), and by the apostles (II Peter 2:6; Jude 7; Romans 9:29)." "God's Judgments and Punishments of Nations and Individuals" page 30.

RON HALBROOK: "From that day until this day, Sodom and Gomorrah have symbolized God's fierce hatred of all immorality...The grave of Sodom and Gomorrah is not covered with fertile soil bearing grass, forests, and crops like other cities of antiquity, No, its grave is covered by the Salt Sea, the Dead Sea...God has utilized this symbol of his wrath over and over throughout the history of the world...Sodom represents brazen evil followed by the judgment of God from which none can escape...Thus, Sodom symbolizes utter ruin and desolation...When God rained 'brimstone and fire' upon Sodom, He literally turned the city 'into ashes.'" "Sodom and Gomorrah..." page 594, Guardian of Truth, October 3, 1991.

**"As an example"** Jude 7: If they are an example, what do they teach if it is not that those who suffer the punishment of eternal fire will no longer exist.

- *"They were overthrown in the wilderness"*—They died in the wilderness (1 Corinthians 10:5).
- *"Fell in one day three and twenty thousand"*—Twenty-three thousand died in one day (1 Corinthians 10:8). Not "Twenty-three thousand were eternally tormented in one day."
- *"Some of them made trial, and PERISHED by the serpents."* Those that were bitten by the serpents died, they were not eternally tormented by the serpents (1 Corinthians 10:9).
- *"Some of them murmured, and PERISHED by the destroyer"*—They were killed (1 Corinthians 10:10).
- *"Unto the day that Noah entered into the ark, and the flood came and DESTROYED them all"* (Luke 17:27). They died in the flood, not still being tormented by it.
  - *"Perished"* and *"destroyed"* means death, not torment.

**Will there be degrees of punishment in Hell?** Christ spoke of the Day of Judgment for lands or cities.

(1). More tolerable for Sodom and Gomorrah than for Chorazin, Bethsaida, and Capernaum (Matthew 11:21-24, Luke 10:10-12).

(2). More tolerable for Sodom and Gomorrah than for the cities that did not receive those He sent out (Matthew 10:14-15, Mark 6:11, Luke 10:10-12).

There is no mention of eternal punishment of any individual, and no mention of Hell in any of these passages. The punishment spoken of is a punishment of cities and took place **in the day when God judged and destroyed them, not in Hell. Hell or eternal punishment is not mentioned in any of these passages.** Those who believe in Hell read it in. *“Shall go down unto Hades (grave),”* only the dead go to the grave, these cities died, they are dead, they do not now exist, they are not alive with God tormenting them in Hell.

**Another passage that is sometimes used to teach there will be degrees of punishment in Hell.** When will the many or few stripes be? The master *“will come on a day when he does not expect him, and at an hour he does not know, and will cut him in pieces, and assign him a place with the unbelievers. And that slave who knew his master’s will and did not get ready or act in accord with his will, shall receive many stripes, but he that know not, and did things worthy of stripes, shall be beaten with few stripes”* (Luke 12:46-48). **This will be when the master comes,** (1) this is speaking of His coming in judgment on Israel, (2) but even if it was His coming in judgment at the end of the world at His second coming nothing is said about the stripes being in Hell, but Hell is read into it. If the stripes will be given forever, the few would last as long as the many; therefore, they would be the same. A few would not be a few if God will be forever giving them; both few and many would be a countless and forever growing number of stripes. Both would last forever and have no end. Both *“many”* and *“few”* are a limited number of stripes, not an infinite number of stripes; the *“many”* could not be more than forty (Deuteronomy 25:2-3); therefore, could not last forever. Neither one is God forever using a whip and putting endless stripes on most of mankind, nor is there anything about God tormenting most by endless burning them in an endless Hell in this passage, but both are read into it. If, as we are told, that any unforgiven sin incurs an infinite guilt, therefore, God must torment with an infinite punishment there could not be degrees of infinite; infinite for one cannot be longer than infinite then for another. *“The wages of sin is death”* (Romans 6:23); there is not degrees of death, dead is dead, not dead and deader. The argument made by most traditionalist that a sin against an infinite God demands infinite torment creates a bigger problem for them, that God’s justice can never be satisfied, therefore, God must go on tormenting without end, forever trying to satisfied the demand for justice, but never able too.

Anyone must reject many plain statements of the Bible to believe man has an immortal soul that will forever be tormented in Hell. **The Bible does not support today's Hell fire preaching. It flatly opposes it.**

**(10) DAUGHTERS OF JERUSALEM** Luke 23:27-31: When Jesus was being led to be crucified *"there followed him a great multitude of the people, and of whom men who bewailed and lamented him. But, Jesus turning unto them said, **Daughters of Jerusalem, weep not for me, but weep for yourselves, and for your children. For behold, the days are coming, in which they shall say, blessed are the barren, and the wombs that never bare, and the breasts that never give suck. Then shall they begin to say to the mountains, fall on us; and the hills 'Cover us.' Even at the time of His death and sufferings, the great tribulation that was coming to Israel was on His mind. See Hosea 19:7-8 where in the destruction of Samaria they cry to the mountains to cover them, which is an expression of wanting to escape destruction.***

**(11) "YOUR HOUSE IS LEFT UNTO YOU DESOLATE"** Matthew 23:38; Luke 13:35: God left the temple. **"And behold, the veil of the temple was torn in two from top to bottom"** (Matthew 27:51). As it is sometimes said today when an entertainer has finished, "God has left the building." After they put to death their savior, God gives them forty years to repent; the book of Acts is a history of the *"generation of vipers"* persecuting and putting to death those who God sent to save them. They brought upon themselves retribution of such severity that it was as if they had killed all the prophets God had sent to turn Israel from their sin (Matthew 23:34-35).

SUMMARY:

- Christ came when He set up His kingdom (Matthew 16:28; Mark 9:1) on the day of Pentecost (Acts 2).
- Christ came in judgment on Israel in A. D. 70.
- Neither of these is His coming in person at the end of this age (1 Thessalonians 3:13-18).
- The destruction of the temple put an end to the worship of Israel, the destruction of their genealogical records put an end to their identity, and an end to their existence as a nation.

The Gospel According to John was written after A. D. 70, after the destruction of Israel and Jerusalem. Therefore it has no reference to (1) weeping and gnashing of teeth, (2) coming from the east and west and sitting down with Abraham in the kingdom, (3) or outer darkness. To the Samaritan woman Christ did say that God would be worshiped not in Jerusalem, but in spirit and truth (John 4:9-26).

There are two coming of Christ in judgment spoken of, (1) the coming in judgment on Israel, (2) the coming in judgment at the second coming of Christ. There are some passages that were written a short time before the destruction of Israel in A. D. 70 that are difficult to know if they are speaking of A. D. 70 or the second coming of Christ. Hebrews 10:25; James 1:5; 5:7, 5:8; 5:9; 1 Peter 5:1; 4:12-13; Romans 16:20, and others. The destruction of Israel in A. D. 70 ended the persecution of the church by the Jews.

**THE A. D. 70 DOCTRINE** is that all the passages that speak of the second coming were fulfilled in A. D. 70, also called Preterit Eschatology, Realized Eschatology, Fulfilled Eschatology, Covenant Eschatology.

**Four points that must be proven for the A. D. 70 doctrines to be true**

- (1) That the Law and the Jewish age did not end unto 40 years after the death of Christ; that the Old Covenant and the New Covenant overlapped for 40 years.
- (2) That all that died before A. D. 70 was resurrected from the dead in A. D. 70.
- (3) That the resurrection is passed, and all the saved now go to Heaven at the moment of their death.
- (4) That there will be no Judgment Day for the lost after the judgment they say took place in A. D. 70. No Judgment Day for the lost that are dying now.

**Was A. D. 70 the second and final coming of Christ? Or is the second coming of Christ and the judgment of all yet to come?**

- (1). According to Realized Eschatology the second coming of Christ was an invisible coming in A. D. 70, and He will not come again; there will be no resurrection and Judgment Day to come for all at the coming of Christ.
- (2). According to Realized Eschatology the resurrection was when all the Old Testament saints were resurrected in A. D. 70. The "Judgment Day" was when the Jewish age ended in A. D. 70.
- (3). According to Realized Eschatology after A. D. 70 all that now dies in Christ go to their eternal reward at the moment of death.
- (4). According to Realized Eschatology the Great Commission given in Matthew 28:18-19 has been completely fulfilled therefore, it is not for us today.
- (5). According to Realized Eschatology the old heavens and earth have passed away, and the new heavens and earth are now here.
- (6). According to Realized Eschatology all the New Testament was written before A. D. 70, and there is no revelation about anything that will happen after A. D. 70; therefore, there is no revelation about when or even if the earth will ever end. They must deny the vast amount of evidence that much of the New Testament (including Peter's letters and Revelation) was written after A. D. 70 for if just one book was written after that date the Preterit Eschatology could not be true. Early writers, Eusebius, Irenaeus, Clement, Origen, and others say Revelation was written in the reign of Domitian, which was years after A. D. 70.
- (7). According to Realized Eschatology the Great Tribulation and Armageddon are both past.
- (8). According to Realized Eschatology death and hades were thrown into the lake of fire in A. D. 70.
- (9). According to Realized Eschatology Satan has been put in the lake of fire. Max King, "The Spirit of Prophecy," page 356, 1971.
  - o Their teaching is that in A. D. 70 Jesus moved all the righteous dead to Heaven, and cast the Devil and his angels, and the wicked dead into the lake of fire. If Satan were cast into the lake of fire, which is the second death, where does evil and temptations come from today?
- (10). According to Realized Eschatology all prophecy, including all of the Book of Revelation has already been fulfilled.
- (11). According to Realized Eschatology all New Testament writers believed that the coming of Christ was to be in their lifetime.
- (12). According to Max King the resurrection was not a resurrection of the dead, but was, "The expected eschatological resurrection of the children of God from the Old Covenant to the New

Covenant." The Spirit of Prophecy, second edition, page 309. He said the resurrection was only a change from the Old Testament to the New Testament; this change was in A. D. 70. According to him there is to be no resurrection of the dead, no coming of Christ when all the dead will be raised.

What the early non-inspired writers said years after A. D. 70 about "the last days" and the second coming of Christ—from Florida College Annual Lectures, Almon L. Williams, 1986, page 217.

- ISNATIUS: "These are the last times."
- BARNABAS: "Wherefore let us take heed in these last days."
- CLEMENT: "Herein He speaks of the day of this appearing, when He shall come and redeem us, each man according to his works. And the unbelievers shall see His glory and His might: and they shall be amazed."
- CLEMENT: "But you know that the day of judgment comes even now as a burning oven, and the powers of the heaven shall melt, and the earth as lead melting on the fire, and than shall appear the secret and open works of man."
- POLYCARP: "Now He that raised Him from the dead will raise up also...Whoever shall pervert the oracles of the Lord to his own lusts and say there is neither resurrection nor judgment, that man is first-born of Satan."

There was revelation given in the Old Testament on the establishment of the kingdom (Micah 4:1), and the resurrection of Christ was given in types and shadows as Moses lifting up the serpent in the wilderness (John 3:14), but few if any understood, and the doctrine of the resurrection, life, and immortality, which Christ taught, were new, were unknown about by anyone before Christ. The words, resurrection, immortal, and immortality are not in the Old Testament in the King James Version or the American Standard Version. The resurrection was new to the heathen world, which believed in a deathless soul that is now immortal and that had no need for a resurrection. The first coming of Christ, His suffering and rejection, His death and resurrection were told about in the Old Testament; but there is nothing about His second coming in it; the second coming of Christ, the resurrection, the judgment of all at His second coming and the promise of life after death in Heaven was new to the New Testament. Of all the religions, Christianity alone has a day coming in which all the dead will be resurrected from the dead.

**The New Testament clearly teaches that the second coming, the resurrection of all, and the judgment of all have not come.** All the lost will awake from the dead, and the saved will awake to eternal life at the same time. **It will be a resurrection of the dead, not as realized eschatology teaches, death after A. D. 70 is only a change from the old law to the new law, from the Old Testament to the New Testament, which would not be a resurrection, and it would make a resurrection of the dead impossible.**

*"For we will all stand before the judgment seat of God" (Romans 14:10).*

*"For we must all appear before the judgment seat of Christ, so that each one may be recompensed for his deeds in the body, according to what he has done, whether good or bad" (2 Corinthians 5:10).*

*"He has been manifested to put away sin by the sacrifice of Himself. And inasmuch as **it is appointed for men to die once and after this comes judgment**, so Christ also, having been offered once to bear the sins of many, will appear a second time, apart from sin, to them that wait for him, unto salvation" (Hebrews 9:26-28).*

*"For if we go on sinning willfully after receiving the knowledge of the truth, there no longer remains a sacrifice for sins, **but a terrifying expectation of judgment and the fury of a fire which will consume the adversaries**" (Hebrews 10:26-27).*

*"But the heavens that now are, and the earth, by the same word have been stored up for fire, being reserved **against the DAY OF JUDGMENT and destruction of ungodly men**" (2 Peter 3:7).*

John 5:28-29: *"For **an hour is coming**, in which **all** who are in the tombs will hear His voice, and will come forth; those who did the good deeds to a resurrection of life, those who committed the evil deeds to a resurrection of judgment." **All**, both the good and the evil will **be resurrected from the dead in the same hour, not some over two thousand years apart from A. D. 70 now and still counting; and not changed from one form of life to another form of life immediately after death without a resurrection.***

Philippians 3:20-21: *"For our citizenship is in heaven, from which also we eagerly wait for a Savior, the Lord Jesus Christ; who will transform the body of our humble state into conformity with the body of His glory, by the exertion of the power that He has even to subject all things to Himself." When our body will be transformed into conformity with His body is at His coming from Heaven, not at our death. Christ does not come from Heaven every time a person dies. That there will be a resurrection and judgment of all at the second coming of Christ is discussed throughout this book and in the review below.*

**A REVIEW OF "THE RESURRECTION OF THE DEAD" By Samuel Dawson: A web page in which Samuel attempts to prove from 1 Corinthians 15 that the Old Testament does teach that the dead in Christ has been resurrected, and that this resurrection was in A. D. 70.** Samuel said he thinks that I inadvertently give the Old Testament's teaching of the subject short shrift. Then said you can be a good guy and do that because he has done exactly the same thing. Below is an examination of how he thinks that I have give the Old Testament teaching of the resurrection short shrift.

Samuel points to restoring of the nation of Israel as a nation being a resurrection, but the restoring or resurrection of Israel as a nation is not the resurrection of the New Testament. If Christ had brought the nation of Israel out of captivity it would not have been the resurrecting of even one dead person to (1) life as a mortal on this earth, or (2) to eternal life or immortality in Heaven. It was not a resurrection of a nation, or a person to immortality, or to eternal life. Not one person was resurrected from the dead in A. D. 70, not even Abraham or David. **The restoring of Israel would not have been even close to being the resurrection taught in the New Testament.** *"Behold, I will cause breath to enter you that you may come to life."* Ezekiel 37:5 is speaking of a nation being restored as a nation, the people of Israel were already alive but in captivity, it was the nation that was being restored to their land and coming to life as a nation many years before A. D. 70, this is not of the

resurrection of a single person that was dead; there is nothing in it about anyone or any nation being given immortality. **The resurrection taught in the New Testament is not the resurrection of a nation (restoring that nation as a nation only for a short time), but is the resurrection of individuals to endless life, and there is nothing like it in the Old Testament.** There is nothing in 1 Corinthians 15, or any of the New Testament about the resurrection of fleshly bodies at the coming of Christ. No one put on immortality in A. D. 70, and no one's corruptible (fleshly) bodies were changed to incorruption, and **all that were living in A. D. 70 was still subject to death and all died, all Christians still die; death was not "swallowed up in victory"** (1 Corinthians 15:54), as it will be at the coming of Christ. **If Paul were not speaking of a resurrection of persons to life that will come after this lifetime, then when he said, "Then they also that are fallen asleep in Christ have perished," then they had perished,** depicting a process that had pass before Paul wrote this, **not an on going process;** they had perished—died before Paul wrote this, not were perishing – they were not dying at the time he wrote (1 Corinthians 15:18); they were dead after A. D. 70, not alive in Heaven.

(1). He was speaking of some Corinthians that had died past tense.

(2). These Corinthians that had died was dead present tense at the time Paul was writing this letter in about A. D. 57.

(3). But these dead Corinthians would be raised, future tense, with a spiritual body at the coming of Christ.

**Paul was not speaking of restoring a nation, or a resurrection that had passed, or a resurrection that was taking place at the time of death of each person, but of the resurrection to life and immortality of individuals, those in Christ that die before He comes, a resurrection that will not take place unto the coming of Christ.** At the coming of Christ, all the saved that have died (*"fallen asleep"*) *"the dead in Christ shall rise,"* and all the living saints will be changed, **both at the same time** shall be caught up to meet the Lord in the air and shall *"ever be with the Lord"* (1 Thessalonians 3:14-17); this did not happen in A. D. 70, and those who are fallen asleep are not yet with Christ. **Paul says the resurrection of those who are asleep in Christ, and putting on immortality by those who are living will both be at the same moment, both in the twinkling of an eye.** Realized eschatology says, "Not so Paul, the resurrection of the Old Testament saint was in A. D. 70, but there will be no resurrection for us as we will all be changed at the moment of our death, both are not in the same moment." If all were transformed, receives a *"spiritual body"* in which they will dwell in both (1) immediately (2) and for eternally at the moment of death, then nothing is resurrected; there would be no resurrection for anyone after A. D. 70. **According to them, the only resurrection in the Bible was at A. D. 70 and it is passed.** *"Faithful is the saying: For if we died with him, we shall also live with him...Hymenaeus and Philetus, men who concerning the truth have erred, saying the*

*resurrection is past already*" (2 Timothy 10-19). **Israel was not delivered or restored in A. D. 70, but was judged and destroyed. There is nothing in 1 Corinthians 15, Matthew 24, or any passage about Israel being resurrected or restored in A. D. 70.**

On page 6 Samuel said, *"Behold, I will cause breath to enter you that you may come to life."* Ezekiel 37 refers to the restoring of the nation of Israel, then he said, *West is absolutely right that the word resurrection isn't there, but what word should we call the process whereby Israel was dead, and God's purpose was to bring them to life.* Samuel needs to see that when the Old Testament speaks of restoring or resurrecting a nation to life as a nation and that nation would die again, it is not speaking of the resurrection to endless life, or even a resurrection of one dead person if the nation of Israel had been restored in A. D. 70. (1) Not one dead person was restored to life and given immortality. (2) There is no promise that anyone would ever be given immortality in the Old Testament. No nation, not even Israel, will ever be given immortality; but the saved individuals of all nations will at the resurrection. **How can he not see that the resurrection or restoring of Israel as a nation for only a short time in Ezekiel 37 is nothing like the resurrection of individuals to immortality Paul was speaking of in 1 Corinthians 15?** When Israel was restored as a nation after the seventy-year captivity in Daniel, it was not even the same individuals in "the resurrection" of the nation that was in Israel before the captivity from which the nation was resurrected. One group of Jews went into the captivity, and Israel died as a nation, another group of Jews came out of the captivity when Israel were restored or resurrected as a nation.

- Not one dead Jew was resurrected.
- Not resurrected to life on this earth, or resurrected to life in Heaven.

The many restorations of Israel as a nation from captivity in the Old Testament, which was one hundred percent physical earthly restoring of a nation, is not the resurrection to eternal life for those who are in Christ, **not the resurrection OF THE DEAD in 1 Corinthians 15. Israel went into captivity and was restored or resurrected as a nation, past tenses, many times in the Old Testament, but not one dead person was resurrected to endless life in any of the resurrections or restoring of Israel as a nation; there is nothing said in any of Israel's resurrection or restoring as a nation about any person ever being resurrected or given immortality; not even David or Abraham was resurrected in any of them; in many of the restoring of the nation of Israel the persons that went into captivity died, and persons that were born in captivity were the ones that came out of captivity. IF THE RESURRECTION WERE ONLY RESTORING A NATION AS A NATION, THEN IT IS NOT A RESURRECTION OF DEAD PERSONS, AND DOSE NOT GIVE THE DEAD PERSONS ANY HOPE OF LIFE AFTER DEATH.**

Page 89: Samuel said, "*We all shall not sleep, but we shall all be changed*" is a time statement; by, "*We shall not all sleep,*" he says Paul affirmed that not all of those in Corinth were going to die physically before the resurrection happened.

**(1) If Paul were saying not ALL would die physically before the resurrection happened in A. D. 70,**

**(2) Then he was also saying the same ALL those in Corinth would be changed from physical bodies to spiritual bodies when the resurrection did happen in A. D. 70. Living Christians was not changed at that time, and both Christians and non-Christians still had physical bodies after A. D. 70 just as they did before A. D. 70, and all still have physical bodies today. This teaching would have made the church on earth go out of existence on earth in A. D. 70 for all Christians would have been changed from earthly bodies to spiritual bodies. No one will have the spiritual body before the resurrection; All living Christians living in A. D. 70 lived on with an unchanged physical body, some lived for years after A. D. 70, without having been changed to a "spiritual body." Read this that he called a "time statement" in the context, "*Behold, I tell you a mystery: We all shall not sleep, but we shall all be changed, in a moment, in the twinkling of an eye, at the last trump: for the trumpet shall sound, and the dead shall be raised incorruptible, and we shall be changed. For this corruptible must put on incorruption, and this mortal must put on immortality. But, when this corruptible shall have put on incorruption, and this mortal shall have put on immortality, then shall come to pass the saying that is written, Death is swallowed up in victory*" (1 Corinthians 15:51-53). Samuel was right when he said this is a time statement, but the "time" is when "*the trumpet shall sound.*" At the sound of the trumpet two things happen in the same moment:**

- (1). "*The dead shall be raised incorruptible,*" all those in Christ that die before Christ comes,
- (2). AND those that are alive when Christ comes "*shall be changed.*"
  - Both (1) the living, (2) and the dead, even those that were already dead when Paul wrote this shall be changed in the same moment, both the living and the dead in the same twinkling of an eye, both the living and the dead at the sound of the same trumpet, and both in the same moment.
  - All living Christians will be changed from physical bodies to spiritual bodies in the same moment that the dead in Christ are resurrected with spiritual bodies.
  - Both will them have the same spiritual bodies, but neither one will have earthly bodies; those living with earthly bodies will in a moment be changed to spiritual bodies, there will be no earthly bodies after that moment.

If this had happened in A. D. 70, there would have been no Christians for the Romans to put to death; there would have been no church left on this earth. He changed, "*and we shall all be changed*" to "not all of those in Corinth were going to die physically before A. D. 70 when the resurrection would happened" with nothing happening to those who were alive in A. D. 70, they would not take part in the

resurrection, they would not " *all be changed in a moment*;" in other words according to him the living Christians were not resurrected at all; they lived without any change, just as they lived before A. D. 70. If I understand him, he says the living Christians in Corinth were not going to be " *all be changed in a moment*," but each one changed in a different moment, the moment of their death, which for many of them would not be in A. D. 70, and that he thinks each Christian is changed to a spiritual body at a different moment than all other Christians. On page 57 he again changed the "we" to "them" in the " *we shall all be changed in a moment*"; the "we" changed to "them" to only being the Old Covenant faithful being taken from the unseen Hadean state into the presence of Christ. Paul's " *we that are alive*" must be changed to "them that are dead." " *Behold, I tell you a mystery. We shall not all sleep, but we* (he changed "we" to "them") *shall all* (only all of "them," not "we") *be changed in a moment, in the twinkling of an eye, at the last trump*" (1 Corinthians 15:51). Does he think the first "we" is us but the second "we" them? If the first "we" is "them," some of the "them" did not all sleep, then some of the Old Covenant faithful was alive when Paul was writing this in A. D. 67 or 68, the Old Covenant faithful were alive before A. D. 70.

" *But, some one will ask, how are the dead raised? And with what manner of body do they come*" (1 Corinthians 15:35). Paul was reassuring the Corinthians that the Corinthians that had " *fallen asleep in Christ*" had not perished, that their hope of the resurrection did not depend on them being alive at the time of the resurrection (1 Corinthians 15:18-19). Samuel asked who were these "dead ones," then said they were the same Old Covenant dead ones Paul discussed throughout the chapter. **Then he said when we change who the "we" were, we totally miss the time element in Paul's teaching. Then he changed the "we" from "we" to "them"; he changes from the ones Paul was writing to at Corinth about those in Corinth about there loved one who had fallen asleep "in Christ" to those who had been dead for many years before Christ; he changed the "we" to "them," to Abraham and all the Old Testament saints. He totally miss the time element in Paul's teaching by changing the "we" from those who were alive at the time Paul was writing to them, to those who had been dead for many years. The "dead ones" (he added "ones," "dead ones" is not in the Greek) are the loved ones of the Corinthians that had fallen asleep in Christ, not Old Testament saints who are not even mentioned in 1 Corinthians 15. On pages 85—88 he attempts to make the " *natural body*" be Old Testament Israel and the " *spiritual body*" be the new Israel; when he makes Israel be the " *natural body*" and the church be the " *spiritual body*," **he takes the resurrection of the dead out of I Corinthians 15, any resurrection, even Old Testament saints, all individual persons being resurrected is taken out of 1 Corinthians 15 and replaced with Old Testament Israel and the Church;** he sometimes has dead Old Testament saints being resurrected in A. D. 70 and sometimes Old Testament Israel already resurrected when Paul was writing 1**

Corinthians 15 before A. D. 70. In about A. D. 57, 13 years before A. D. 70, Samuel has the old Israel being sown a natural body, it is being raised a spiritual body. Paul said, "And as **WE HAVE** borne the image of the earthly (Adam, 15:45 a natural or earthly corruptible body), **WE SHALL** also bear the image of the heavenly (Christ, a spiritual incorruptible body)" (1 Corinthians 15:49). Samuel changes the "we have borne" to "is being sown" and "we shall also bear the image" to "is being raised." Then changes "we" to "it" (Israel). Samuel changes from Israel (a nation) being raised to Old Testament saints, but he has no resurrection for the Corinthians that had fallen asleep, he seems to have taken them completely out of 1 Corinthians 15.

On page 77 Samuel said, Paul literally, asked, "How are the dead ones being raised?" 1 Corinthians 15 was written about 13 years before A. D. 70, – 13 years before he says Christ came, 13 years before he says the Old Covenant saints were raised he has Paul asking, "How are the dead ones being raised"? Did he forget that he had used, "**Then they that are Christ's at His coming,**" and he had applied this to the resurrection of the Old Covenant faithful? Did he forget that he had applied, "*Behold, I tell you a mystery? We shall not all sleep, but we* (them—Old Testament saints—Samuel) *shall all* (them—Old Testament saints—Samuel) *be changed in a moment, in the twinkling of an eye, at the last trump*" (1 Corinthians 15:51). Yet, Sam has them being raised 13 years before the moment, 13 years before when he says the last trump would be, 13 years before the twinkling of an eye. On page 85 he said, "Literally, it (Israel) 'is being sown a natural body, it is being raised a spiritual body.'" Is he is not saying both that (1) Old Covenant saints were being sown (were dying at the time Paul was writing) with a natural body, (2) and at the same time they were being sown with a natural body that Old Covenant saints were being raised with a spiritual body, both being sown a natural body and being raised a spiritual body at the time Paul was writing this, being sown and being raised about 13 years before he says Christ came a second time, about 13 years before he says the resurrection occurred. Does he really believe Old Covenant saints were being sown with a natural body in about A. D. 57 when Paul was writing this? "**Presently 'is being raised' is used on page 91 and throughout the 110 pages. Samuel puts is being raised in quotation marks, but who was being quoted? Not Paul,** he said, "*Shall be raised incorruptible*" (future tense) (1 Corinthians 15:52). **Presently "is being raised" (present tense) is in no translation but his** and then it puts the resurrection as taking place 13 years to soon for the Realized Eschatology view that says the resurrection did not take place unto A. D. 70.

**DEAD ONES:** "One" is translated from eight different words in the Greek, Wigram's Greek Concordance, page 915.

1. Alleelon—not used in 1 Corinthians 15
2. Hem—not used in 1 Corinthians 15
3. Heteros—used two times in 15:40

- a. *"The glory of the celestial is **one** (heteros)."*
  - b. *"There is **one** (heteros) glory of the sun."*
4. Mis—not used in 1 Corinthians 15
  5. Tikto—used 5 times in 1 Corinthians, translated "some" in most translations. Of the many times it is used throughout the New Testament, mostly it is translated "some," a few times it is translated "one" as in Luke 11:1 King James Version, *"After He had finished some (tikto-some, not one) of His disciples (plural, more than one) said to Him."* They, disciples plural, were alive, not "dead ones." Tikto is never translated "dead ones," not "the 'dead ones' of His disciples said unto him."
    - o *"But **some** (tikto) are fallen asleep"* 1 Corinthians 15:6. Some of the more than five hundred that had seen Christ after His resurrection had died, not some of the Old Testament "dead ones" had died.
    - o *"How say **some** (tikto) among you that there is no resurrection"* 1 Corinthians 15:12. These that were saying there is no resurrection were still alive and among the Corinthians. If this was the Old Testament saints then these "dead ones" were alive and were saying there will be no resurrection of the dead.
    - o *"For **some** (tikto) have no knowledge"* 1 Corinthians 15:34. This was not "dead ones" that was still alive, not dead Old Testament saints, it was some of the Corinthians that was alive at the time Paul was writing this.
    - o *"But **some one** (tikto) will say"* 1 Corinthians 15:35. Also this was not "dead ones" that were still alive and able to "say." Why did they translated tikto into two words, why did they add the "one" that is not in the Greek in only one of the five times tikto is used in 1 Corinthians 15? Even if the one is added, *"some one will say"* would be a living "one," when Paul was writing this as a "dead one" cannot say anything, it was a living *"some one"* that was living when Paul was writing.
    - o *"It may chance of wheat, or of **some** (tikto) other kind"* 1 Corinthians 15:37. Was wheat "dead ones," the Old Testament saints that were being resurrected?
  6. Toutous—not used in 1 Corinthians 15
  7. Ireenee—not used in 1 Corinthians 15
  8. Alleelon—not used in 1 Corinthians 15

**Of the many times death and dead are used in 1 Corinthians 15, not one of the eight words that are sometimes translated "one" is used with dead. "Dead ones" is not in 1 Corinthians 15 or the New Testament. To put "one" after dead is an addition.** "Dead" in 1 Corinthians 15:16 is from "nekros." It is used many times through out the New Testament, but it never has any of the eight Greek words that are translated "one" after it, never "nekros (dead) heteros (ones)," never "dead ones." Matthew 11:2, *"The dead (nekros) are raised up,"* not "The dead (nekros) ones (heteros) are raised up." "Ones" is never put after "dead" in the Greek.

**BUT WHAT IS THEIR POINT?** I Corinthians 15 is speaking of:

- (1). The dead Christ that was resurrected.
- (2). Some of the more than 500 that saw the resurrected Christ were dead at the time Paul wrote this (1 Corinthians 15:6).
- (3). The saints at Corinth that both had become saints after the resurrection of Christ, and had died, were dead, but they were not dead Old Testament saints (1 Corinthians 15:18).
- (4). The resurrection of all saved dead at the coming of Christ, (1 Corinthians 15:35-58).

If you add the "one" and say the "dead ones" of the more than 500 that had seen the resurrected Christ, or the "dead ones" of the saints at Corinth, 1 Corinthians 15 still says nothing about Old Testament saints that were going to be resurrected in A. D. 70.

Is it not strange that of the many times dead, death, or die is used in the New Testament they only change it to "dead ones" in a few. In the many translations of the Bible made by men who were some of the worlds best scholars in New Testament Greek, not one adds "ones" after dead, death, or die. Samuel adds it to make it prove what he wants to prove; any one could prove anything by adding what they want. 1 Corinthians 15 completely destroys the A. D. 70 doctrine.

On page 99 Samuel quotes Christ saying 6 times of those who believe Him, "*I will raise him up at the last day*" (John 6:39; 6:40; 6:44; 6:54; 11:24; 12:48). Who does he believe Christ is saying He will rise up? Those that heard and believed Christ, or the Old Testament faithful? It is so obvious that Christ is speaking about those that believed Him that I cannot understand why He used this to prove that the Old Testament faithful was being raised in A. D. 57 when Paul wrote 1 Corinthians, or "*at the last day,*" which Samuel says was one of the 365 days in the year of A. D. 70? If such a grand thing as the coming of Christ and the fulfillment of a prophecy had been on a day in A. D. 70, would it not be strange that there was not much more said about it? Also strange that after A. D. 70 no one knows or said anything about the day in A. D. 70 that Christ came, strange that after A. D. 70 there is no revelation that says Christ had come? Christ is saying this to **all that believed Him**, not just to the Jews that believe Him. Samuel says the Old Covenant had a last day, but the New Covenant will not have a last day. Christ was not speaking of the last day of the Old or the New Covenant. He was speaking of the last day of the earth, "*The day of the Lord*" spoken of in 2 Peter 3:10 (see "The Day Of The Lord" below). Both John and Revelation (and other New Testament books) were written after A. D. 70.

1 Corinthians 15:45-49: On page 87 Samuel changes the "*natural*" and "*spiritual*" to the Old Testament faithful being changed from natural Israel to spiritual Israel as the result of the gospel, and this is in about A. D. 57 when Paul said this, before A. D. 70, which Samuel says is when the second coming of Christ was, and before when Samuel says the resurrection of the Old Testament faithful dead ones did take place. How he could think that "*the first man Adam became a living soul*" is speaking of the Old Testament faithful is beyond my understanding. There is nothing in this passage about Adam being Israel. "*Then the Lord God formed man (Adam) of the dust from the ground, and breathed into his (Adam) nostrils the breath of life; and man (Adam) became a living soul*" (Genesis 2:7). Adam was the first man, not the nation of Israel. Adam was the natural man-made "*of the earth,*" not the nation of Israel, Adam lived and died long before there was a nation of Israel. Both Adam and Christ (when He was on earth) were "a man," Israel was a nation. Christ is (present

tense) *"the second man is of heaven"* (1 Corinthians 15:47). By pointing out that this is present tense, he is saying that *"the second man is of heaven"* cannot be Christ, that the *"second man"* of heaven is the Old Testament faithful ones. If this is not what Samuel is saying, then I cannot understand what he is saying; is he not saying that Christ is not of heaven, present tense in A. D. 57; is Samuel not saying the Old Testament faithful ones, not Christ, was *"the second man of heaven"* 13 years before their resurrection in A. D. 70? This seems to me to be nothing more than a desperate attempt to make the resurrection be passed even if he has to use something that was, present tense, 13 years to soon for it to be speaking of something that was to be, future tense, in A. D. 70.

On page 92 and others pages, it seems to me that **Samuel basis his whole argument on all that believes the resurrection is yet to come must also believe the resurrection is to be a physical resurrection out of the dust.** Samuel is taking what some men teach and making it into the teaching of the Bible for his argument depends on it. **There is nothing in 1 Corinthians 15 about a physical resurrection out of the dust. He is attempting to prove this is speaking of the resurrection of Old Testament saints just because it is not speaking of the resurrection of bodies out of the dust.** *Try as hard as I can, I cannot see how he sees the resurrection of Old Testament saints just because 1 Corinthians 15 is not speaking of earthly bodies when there is nothing in the chapter that says anything about Old Testament saints, nothing about the nation of Israel, or nothing about earthly bodies being raised.* It could not be said any clearer that the body is, *"Sown in corruption (sown a physical body of dust) it is raised in incorruption (not raised a physical body of dust)"* (1 Corinthians 15:42). **He makes a physical resurrection a must for his argument, but there is nothing in the New Testament that teaches a physical body of dust is to be raised at the second coming of Christ.** He repeatedly accused others of believing in *a physical resurrection out of the dirt*, although we cannot read that interpretation back into Isaiah, but then on the same page (page 92) quotes Isaiah, *"Your dead shall arise. Your dead will live; their corpses will rise, **you who lie in the dust**, awake and shout for joy, for your dew is as the dew of the dawn, and the earth will give birth to the departed spirits"* (Isaiah 26:19). Then says the resurrection of those lying in the dust sounds identical to Daniel 12:2, which says, *"And many of those who sleep in the **dust of the ground** will awake."* When Samuel said no serious student of the prophets believes a physical resurrection of a physical body is depicted in Isaiah 25 he was right. Just as Ezekiel's valley of bones coming to life in Ezekiel 37 is figuratively language of the nation being restored to life as a nation, Isaiah 26:19 is figuratively language of a physical resurrection of the dead nation of Israel that had turned to dust, Israel is the dead nation that is being restored to life from the dust and would live again as a nation; this resurrection of Israel was long past before A. D. 70, even long before

Christ; neither Ezekiel, Daniel, or Isaiah is teaching the resurrection to eternal life that is taught in the New Testament that was not known about unto Christ made it known; nevertheless, he attempts to somehow use Isaiah to prove Paul was not speaking of the resurrection of the dead at the coming of Christ, but that Paul was only speaking of the resurrection of the Old Testament faithful in A. D. 70. **Samuel makes the only resurrection in the New Testament be only the restoring of the nation of Israel, which was totality destroyed in A. D. 70, not restored to life in A. D. 70? In A. D. 70 Israel was not restored or resurrected as a nation; it was destroyed as a nation, there was no restoring or resurrection. Israel went into a grave as a nation, a multitude of individuals Jews went into graves in A. D. 70, but no nation or individuals came out of graves in A. D. 70. There was no resurrection of a nation or individuals.** For all mankind, life went on just as it was before A. D. 70. Persecutions of the Church by Israel stopped, but the persecutions by Rome went on just as it was. The persecution of the church did not stop in A. D. 70 as J. Russell and others that teach the A. D. 70 doctrine teaches that it did.

*“He was taken up; and a cloud received Him out of their sight...This same Jesus, who was received up from you into heaven, shall so come in like manner as you behold him going into heaven”* (Acts 1:11). Christ was seen coming in judgment on Israel in A. D. 70, but no one seen Him coming in person

**“DEATH IS SWALLOWED UP IN VICTORY”** 1 Corinthians 15:54: Throughout 1 Corinthians 15, Paul speaks of death and resurrection from the dead. What is the death and resurrection he is speaking of? The A. D. 70 doctrine says this is speaking of the death and restorations of Old Testament Israel and the Law of Moses, that 1 Corinthians 15 was not speaking of the death and resurrection of the Corinthians, or of our death and resurrection.

How did Paul use death and resurrection in 1 Corinthians 15?

- Christ **died** and was buried and raised on the third day and appeared too many (1 Corinthians 15:3-6). It was Christ that died for our sins and was resurrected, not Israel died and was resurrected on the third day.
- **Death** had taken some of the above five hundred persons that Christ appeared to after His resurrection (1 Corinthians 15:6). Nothing about Israel in this.
- Christ is preached that He has been raised from the **dead**, but if there is no resurrection Christ has not been raised; therefore, Christ is dead and their faith in Christ is useless (1 Corinthians 15:12-16). Not Israel died and resurrected.
- The Corinthians that had **died** (fallen asleep in Christ) had perished if there will not be a resurrection for THEM (1 Corinthians 15:18-19). Not Israel died and had perished.
- Christ has been raised from the **dead**, the first fruits of them that are **dead** (are asleep). Just as Christ was **dead** and resurrected, those who are asleep in Christ will be resurrected (1 Corinthians 15:20; 15:23). Nothing about Israel dying and being resurrected.
- All Adam’s descendant’s **die** (all mankind), the resurrection of all (all shall be made alive) will come by Christ (1 Corinthians 15:21-22). It is all mankind that dies, not just the nation of Israel.

- Christ was raised the first fruits, raised from the **dead**, them all that belong to Christ at His coming will also be raised from the **dead** (1 Corinthians 15:23). Still nothing about Israel dying and being resurrected.
- Then comes the end when Christ shall deliver up the kingdom, the church, to God and the last enemy, **death**, will be abolished (1 Corinthians 15:24-26). Death was not destroyed in A. D. 70.
- If the **dead** (those who are asleep in Christ) are not to be raised then living godly is of no use, do anything you want to for **death** will soon bring you to an end (1 Corinthians 15:29-34). If this were about Israel dying and being resurrected, their sins would not have brought Israel to an end.
- How are the **dead** raised, with what kind of body? (1 Corinthians 15:35-49).
  - The earthly body of corruption is put in the ground; an incorruption body is raised.
  - The earthly body is put in the ground in dishonor; it will be raised in glory.
  - The earthly body is put in the ground in weakness; a body is raised in power.
  - The earthly body is put in the ground a natural body; it is raised a spiritual body. The earthly body (natural body) is first, then the spiritual body at the resurrection of the dead.
  - As **we have** borne the image of the earthly (Adam) **we shall** bear the image of the heavenly (Christ). The image of Adam is not the natural nation of Israel.
- Not all Christians will **die**, but all, those who are living when Christ returns, and those who are **asleep (dead)** will both be changed in the same moment, in the twinkling of an eye to an incorruptible, immortality body (1 Corinthians 15:50-54). The living Christians in A. D. 70 were not changed from natural earthy bodies to spiritual bodies.

**From the above it is clear that Paul said nothing about Old Testament Israel in 1 Corinthians 15.** After the second coming of Christ and the resurrection and judgment, only then will there be no more death, it will be swallowed up in victory (1 Corinthians 15:54-58).

*"But thanks be to God, who gives **us** the victory through **our** Lord Jesus Christ. Wherefore, my beloved brethren, be **you** steadfast, unmovable, always abounding in the work of the Lord, forasmuch as **you** know that **your** labor is not vain in the Lord" (1 Corinthians 15:57-58, American Standard Version). **Throughout chapter 15 Paul is speaking to the Corinthians about THEIR resurrection, not the resurrection of Israel.** "But we do not want you to be uninformed, brethren, about those who are asleep, so that you will not grieve as do the rest who have no hope. For if we believe that Jesus died and rose again, even so God will bring with Him those who have fallen asleep in Jesus. For this we say to you by the word of the Lord, that we who are alive and remain until the coming of the Lord, will not precede those who have fallen asleep. For the Lord Himself will descend from heaven with a shout, with the voice of the archangel and with the trumpet of God, **and the dead in Christ will rise first. Then we who are alive and remain will be caught up together with them in the clouds to meet the Lord in the air, and so we shall always be with the Lord"** (1 Thessalonians 4:13-17). **The Christians who were alive in A. D. 70 were not at that time changed from physical to spiritual bodies, they were not caught up***

***“to meet the Lord in the air.”*** Although it is difficult to know if Samuel believes (1) it will be the nation of Israel restored as a nation in A. D. 70, (2) or if he believes it was the faithful persons of the Old Testament that was to be resurrected in A. D. 70. Although the two are not even close to being the same thing, Samuel seems to say one at one time and the other at another time, but he seems to believe it will be Israel being restored as a nation. I believe Samuel was not trying to prove anyone alive was changed to a spiritual body in A. D. 70, but was trying to prove the dead Old Testament saints were resurrected and changed in A. D. 70, and after that time all saints are changed at the time of their death; that both the dead saints and the living saints will not be *“caught up together with them in the clouds to meet the Lord in the air,”* but will be caught up at the moment of death; which would not be a resurrection, but would make death be a change from one form of life to life in another place without ever being without life, not ever being dead; therefore, no one after A. D. 70 cannot be resurrected from the dead for this doctrine makes all be changed instantly from one kind of life to another kind of life, and none would ever be dead. **Samuel is trying to prove there was one resurrection of all the Old Testament faithful in A. D. 70, then no one dies, they are just changed to another kind of life.** If this is not what he is trying to prove, then I cannot understand what he is saying. **The A. D. 70 doctrine has no place for living Christians being “changed” at the coming of Christ. None were in A. D. 70.**

Christ *“brought life and immortality to light through the gospel”* (2 Timothy 1:10). **Who can read the history of Israel in A. D. 70 and believe Israel was restored to life in any way, and was not destroyed.**

**WHEN DID THE OLD COVENANT END? At the death of Christ, or in A. D. 70?** *“Having been buried with him in baptism, wherein you were also raised with him through faith in the working of God, who raised him from the dead. And you, being dead through your trespasses and the un-circumcision of your flesh, you, I say, did he make alive together with him, having forgiven us all our trespasses; **having blotted out the bond written in ordinances that was against us, which was contrary to us: and He has taken it out of the way, nailing it to the cross;** having despoiled the principalities and the powers, he made a show of them openly, triumphing over them in it. Let no man therefore judge you in meat, or in drink, or in respect of a feast day or a new moon or a Sabbath day”* (Colossians 2:12-15). I know of no way anyone could say any clearer that the Law of Moses was blotted out and nailed to the cross **at the death of Christ**, not in A. D. 70. Paul wrote this when he was in prison at Rome, about A. D. 62, before Realized Eschatology says the Old Covenant Law ended, but at that time Paul said, *“He has taken it out of the way,”* past tense, the Law had already been taken out of the way. The message of Hebrews, which was written before A. D. 70, is that the New Covenant replaced the Old Covenant with a new and better sacrifice, a new priesthood, new sacraments, a

new tabernacle or temple (John 1:14; John 2:19; Corinthians 3:16; Ephesians 2:21). Preterists tell us that there was an overlapping of the two, that the Old Covenant was not nailed to the cross, and it did not end unto A. D. 70, that the Old Covenant had not been replaced by the New Covenant when Hebrews was written. Paul said, "*He (Christ) takes away the first in order to establish the second*" (Hebrews 10:9). Taking away the Law and establishing a new covenant is the subject of Hebrews 10.

Samuel used "*The abomination of desolation*" (Matthew 14:15; Daniel 9:27) to prove the resurrection took place in A. D. 70. Christ came in judgment on Israel at that time just as He did in judgment on nations in the Old Testament. I cannot understand how he gets a resurrection out of "*The abomination of desolation*," or as Luke puts it, "*When you see Jerusalem compassed with armies*" (Luke 21:20). Luke then adds, "*Then know that her desolation is at hand.*" The "*Abomination of desolation*" was the armies that **destroyed** Jerusalem, not restored it. **How can a restoring of Old Testament Israel be gotten out of "*the abomination of desolation*" that destroyed Jerusalem?**

Christ came in judgment on Israel at that time just as He did in judgment on nations in the Old Testament.

- On Israel (Zephaniah 1:14-18).
- On the Nations (Joel 3:16-16).
- On Egypt (Ezekiel 30:3-4; 32:7-8; Isaiah 19:1).
- On Babylon (Isaiah 13:10-20).
- On Edom (Isaiah 34:4-6).
- On Arier in Israel (Isaiah 29:5-6).

Israel was destroyed in the Jewish war with Rome, which lasted for about five years and ended in A. D. 70. **Judgment did come on Israel in that generation (Matthew 23:36), and Israel was destroyed in that judgment, but there is not one thing said about the resurrection of anyone or any nation; nothing is said about the resurrection of the Old Testament saints when the nation was destroyed.** For realized Eschatology to be true the only resurrection there will ever be had to have been in A. D. 70; it is based entirely on a resurrection that is not in the Bible and did not happen.

Speaking to Jews (Galatians 2:14-15) Paul said, "*Even we believed on Christ Jesus, that we might be justified by faith in Christ, and not by the works of the law*" (Galatians 2:16), and "*You are severed from Christ, you who would be justified by the law; you are fallen away from grace*" (Galatians 5:4). This was written in about A. D. 57 when the law would have been in effect if there had been an overlapping of the Old and New Covenants unto A. D. 70, and keeping the law would have been justified, would even have been required at the time Galatians was written.

Samuel and I have been in communication with each other a few times by e-mail, and I have thought of him as being a friend that I have not seen in person; I think the things he had written in the past are among the best books I have. He says on page

2 he is not disparaging me, as I am only saying what most believed, that the subject of the resurrection is predominantly or exclusively a New Testament subject, and that he believed the same thing until 2005. My prayer is that he will see that Realized Eschatology is not the truth before it is too late.

**Israel had not obtained, but the elect had** (Romans 11:7). Paul was put to death in Rome before A. D. 70, yet he said the elect had obtained what Israel had not. What had the elect obtained? Being grafted in the olive tree—being accepted by God as His chosen. **In A. D. 70 Israel was not grafted in, it was totally destroyed.** This was written before A. D. 70 and the elect had obtained before when the A. D. 70 doctrine says Christ was to come; this passage is not speaking of a coming of Christ at any time.

If, as Max King claims, the A. D. 70 view was believed and taught by the New Testament writers, when was it lost? For many centuries no one believed it or knew anything about it, then Max King found it, and the Bible was reinterpreted drastically to fit around his view.

In “Last Thing and Covenant Eschatology” in his answer to a question, “What is your understanding of, ‘no marrying and giving in marriage.’” Samuel says this is only speaking of the command given by Moses that a brother is to “*perform the duty of a husband’s brother*” that “*the name of his dead brother may not be blotted out from Israel*” (Deuteronomy 25:5-10). The brother of the dead husband did not marry his brother’s wife; **there was no marrying and giving in marriage** (Luke 20:32-35). Moses did not command the brother who may have had a wife to take a second wife; if the brother had had 10 or more brothers that died, according to Samuel he would have had many wives at the same time. “*In the resurrection*” he changed to “after A. D. 70,” and says that after A. D. 70 marriage is optional, not mandatory. **Christ did not say marriage would be optional after the resurrection; He said that there would be NO marriage after the resurrection.** “*But they that are accounted worthy to attain to they age, and the resurrection from the dead, neither marry, not are given in marriage: for neither can the die any more: for they are equal to the angels; and are sons of God, being sons of the resurrection*” (Luke 20:27-40). Now Christians both marry and die. After the coming of Christ and the resurrection the saved will not marry or die; marriage will not be “optional.” Where did Samuel find that marriage would be “optional” after the resurrection when Christ says there would be no marriage or death? A. D. 70 is long passed, but we still have both marriage and death.

Samuel used Mark 10:29-30 to prove that in “*the age to come*” we will have house, etc. Christ said, (1). “*There is no man that has left house, or brethren, or sisters, or mother, or father, or children, or lands, for my sake, and the gospel’s sake, but he shall receive a hundredfold, now in this time, houses, and brethren,*

and sisters, and mothers, and children, and lands, **with persecutions**; (2). **And in the age to come eternal life**" (Mark 10:29-30).

Samuel changes having "land" etc., "now in this time" to having them in the "age to come" in an attempt to prove the saved will have them after the resurrection, which Samuel says is now passed. Jesus divides what the believer will receive into two time periods, (1) the present life time (2) and the future after this lifetime. In the present time periods those who have left all for Christ, "*Shall receive a hundredfold, now in this time, houses, and brethren, and sisters, and mothers, and children, and lands, with persecutions.*" All who live godly will have persecutions in this life. (2) "*And in the age to come eternal life.*" Both marriages and persecutions will have ended in the age to come, but they did not end in A. D. 70.

**The grace that is to be brought unto you:** In 1 Peter 1:10 Peter speaks of the grace to come to them. In 1:13 he speaks of, "*The grace that is to be brought unto you at the revelation of Jesus Christ.*" In A. D. 70 nothing happened to the living, life went on with persecutions and death.

In summery: According to Realized Eschatology there is no resurrection to come at the coming of Christ, no Judgment Day at His coming, no second death. According to the Bible any life after death depends wholly on the resurrection of the dead at the coming of Christ (Luke 14:13-14; 1 Thessalonians 4:16; 1 Corinthians 15:51-55).

**2 PETER 3-4:** The mockers were saying, "*Where is the promise of his coming, for from the day that the fathers fell asleep, all things continue as they were from the beginning of the creation?*" The creation is the creation of the world, not Israel. Peter's reply to them was that they willfully forget that the earth that was that was created out of water was destroyed by water, destroyed by the flood before there was a Jewish nation, before Abraham was the father of all Jews.

The world, not Israel, is now being reserved against the day of judgment and destruction of ungodly men, it will be "*burned up,*" it is to "*be dissolved,*" and "*the elements shall melt with fervent heat.*" **Both the destroying by water and by fire are a destroying of the world, not just a part of it, not just the nation of Israel; There was no nation of Israel when the world was destroyed by water.**

**WORLD**—2 Peter 3:6 is from "kesmos," which is in the Greek about 185 times and in the King James Version it is translated "world" all but one time in 1 Peter 3:3 where it is translated "adorning." It is used to mean this planet earth, never the Jewish age that was from Moses to the death of Christ. **Kesmos, world, is always a place; it is never an age, never a period of time.**

- "*All the kingdoms of the world (kesmos)*" (Matthew 4:8).
- "*Go you into all the world (kesmos)*" (Matthew 14:9).
- "*For God so loved the world (kesmos)*" (John 3:16).
- "*The savior of the world (kesmos)*" (John 4:42).

- "God that made the **world (kesmos)** and all things" (Acts 17:24).
- "From the foundation of the **world (kesmos)**" (Hebrews 4:3).
- Kesmos is never translated "age." Peter is not speaking of "the end of the age" as Matthew is in Matthew 24:3.

**EARTH**—2 Peter 3:7; 3:10; 3:13 is from "gee." Gee is in the Greek New Testament about 242 times and in the King James is translated "earth" about 184 times, "land" 39 times, "ground" 18 times, "country" 2 times, and "world" 1 time. It is used to mean this planet earth, or some particular part of this earth.

#### **THE ENTIRE WORLD:**

- "I am come to send peace on **earth (gee)**" (Matthew 10:34). Not just in Old Testament Israel.
  - "Call no man your father upon the **earth (gee)**" (Matthew 23:9).
  - "Went and dug in the **earth (gee)**" (Matthew 25:18). He did not dig in Old Testament Israel.
  - "To lead them out of the **land (gee)** of Egypt" (Hebrews 8:9).
  - "That you may live long on the **earth (gee)**" (Ephesians 5:6). According to Realized Eschatology Old Testament Israel was about to end when Paul said this.
  - "For this they willfully forget, that there were **heavens from of old, and an earth (gee)** compacted out of water and amidst water, by the word of God; (the heavens and earth that was created by God, the "water" the literal earth was compacted out of was literal water, Old Testament Israel was not "compacted out of water and amidst water") by which means the **world (kesmos)** that then was, being overflowed with water, perished (the world in the time of Noah was overflowed with literal water, not one nation, not Israel that did not exist at that time); but **the heavens that now are, and the earth (gee), by the same word have been stored up for fire, being reserved against the day of judgment and destruction of ungodly men**" (2 Peter 3:5-7). A person has to be hard up for proof to take "**the heavens that now are, and the earth (gee),**" out of context to make it be only one nation, the nation of Israel that did not exist unto long after the flood, and it does not exist now. See "The Rapture and Israel" Chapter 23 "The Thirteenth Tribe" at: <http://www.robertwr.com/rapture.html> There is nothing said about Israel in this passage. In this passage earth (gee) is used two times and world (kesmos) one time. Realized Eschatology says that only one of the three it is used figuratively, and this one time world does not mean the whole world but only one small nation.
1. "Were heavens from of old, and an **earth (gee)** compacted out of water and amidst water."
  2. "By which means the **world (kesmos)** that then was."
  3. "But the heavens that now are, and the **earth (gee).**"
    - There is no way anyone could know this was not speaking of the whole world, but only speaking of a very small part of the earth.

#### **All of the world unless some particular part of the earth is named.**

- "The land (gee) of Sodom" (Matthew 11:24).
- "Land (gee) of Gennesaret" (Matthew 14:34).
- "Land (gee) of Judah" (Matthew 2:6).
- "All the land (gee) of Egypt" (Acts 7:11).

**ELEMENTS** – 2 Peter 3:12 shall melt: Elements (stoikion) is used seven times.

- "And the **elements (stoikion)** shall be dissolved with fervent heat" (2 Peter 3:10).
- "And the **elements (stoikion)** shall melt with fervent heat" (2 Peter 3:12).

- *"Were held in bondage under the **elements (stoikion)** of the **world (kesmos)**" (Galatians 4:3).*
- *"Howbeit at that time, not knowing God, you were in bondage to them that by nature are no gods: but now that you have come to know God, or rather to be know by God, how turn you back again to the weak and beggarly **elements (stoikion)** whereunto your desire to be in bondage over again?" (Galatians 4:8-9). It was Gentiles that did not know God ("not knowing God"), Gentiles that were in bondage to the gods that are not gods, that turned from the weak and beggarly elements of the **world (kesmos)** to God, but desired to be in bondage to the world again; not Jews that turned from Christ back again to the Law.*
- *"Take heed lest there shall be any one that makes spoil of you through his philosophy and vain deceit, after the tradition of men, after **the rudiments (stoikion)** of the **world (kesmos)**, and not after Christ...If you died with Christ from the **rudiments (stoikion)** of the **world (kesmos)** why as though living in the **world (kesmos)** ..." (Colossians 2:8-20). It was the **rudiments (elements)** of the **world (kesmos)** that they died to, elements of the **world (kesmos)** that they were living in, not Old Testament Israel that had died (past tense) before A. D. 70, before Realized Eschatology say the Law died in A. D. 70.*

**In 2 Peter 3, it is the heavens that shall pass away and the earth (gee) that shall be burned up in the day of the Lord, nothing is said about it being only a particular part of the earth, nothing is said about it being only Israel that will be burned up when the heavens pass away; they changed it from the earth to Israel that shall be burned up.**

- *"By which means the **world (kesmos)** that then was" (2 Peter 3:6). Israel did not exist at the time of the flood. It was the **world (kesmos)** that then was that perished by water, not Old Testament Israel that did not exist unto many years after the world perished by water; Israel never perished by water.*
- *"But the heavens that now are, and the **earth (gee)**" (2 Peter 3:7). The earth that now exists that will perish by fire. "Earth" cannot be changed to be only one of the many nations that are on the "earth (gee)." **If this were speaking of only Israel and not the whole earth, then it would be saying Israel would be destroyed, not restored; there is nothing said about the world or Israel being restored.***
- *"But the day of the Lord will come as a thief: in the which the heavens shall pass away with a great noise, and the elements shall be dissolved with fervent heat, and the **earth (gee)** and the works that are therein shall be burned up" (2 Peter 3:10). "In the beginning God created the heavens and the earth" (Genesis 1:1). "For by Him all things were created, both in the heavens and on earth" (Colossians 1:16). The heavens, which "shall pass away with a great noise, and the elements shall be dissolved with fervent heat" is the universe that was created. **Both the "heavens" (the stars) and the "earth" passing away cannot be reduced down to just one nation on the earth, and then changed from that nation being destroyed to just one nation, Israel changed from being destroyed to being restored.** Israel is not even mentioned in this passage, restoring a nation or restoring the earth is not mentioned, so how is it changed to be the restoration of, not the destruction of Israel?*
- *"But according to his promise, we look for new heavens and a new **earth (gee)**, wherein dwells righteousness" (2 Peter 3:13). 2 Peter was written after A. D. 70, but even if it had been written a few years before A. D. 70, it would have been written years after the beginning of the New Covenant; "But according to his promise, we look for new heavens*

and a new **earth (gee)**, wherein dwells righteousness" could not have been the New Covenant they say would replace the Old Covenant in A. D. 70. The New Covenant was a reality at the time 2 Peter was written, not something that they did not already have, but were looking for it to come.

### Fate of the ungodly in 2 Peter

- **Burned to ashes:** Sodom was turned into ashes as example to those who live ungodly (2 Peter 2:6). Sodom was "burned to ashes," completely destroyed.
- And the earth "**shall be burned up.**"
- And "have been stored up for fire" (2 Peter 3:7, 10).
- "The heavens shall pass away."
- "The elements shall be dissolved with fervent heat."
- "The heavens being on fire shall be dissolved."
- "And the elements shall melt with fervent heat" (2 Peter 3:10-12).

In the same passage Sodom was literally destroyed by fire and the earth and heavens will be literally destroyed by fire. One is not a literal destruction by fire, and the other a figuratively destruction. The "water" cannot be literal and the "fire" made figuratively in the same sentence (2 Peter 3:6), just as the wicked were literally destroyed by water the wicked will literally be destroyed by fire.

- **Destruction** of ungodly men (2 Peter 2:1; 3:7).
- **Destroyed:** "To be taken and destroyed...shall in their destroying also be destroyed" (2 Peter 2:12). "They are like brute beast (animals—Strong 2226), creatures of instinct, born only to be caught and destroyed, and like beast they too will perish" New International Version.
- **Blackness of darkness** has been reserved (2 Peter 2:17).
- **Perished** (2 Peter 3:6).
- **Destruction:** The Day of Judgment and destruction of ungodly men (2 Peter 3:7).
- **Perish** (2 Peter 3:9).
- **Destruction:** Some "wrest, as they do also the other scriptures, unto the own destruction" (2 Peter 3:16).

### 2 Peter 3:7 in eight translations

(1). "The heavens **shall pass away** with a great noise, and the elements shall melt with fervent heat, **the earth also and the works that are therein shall be burned up**. Seeing that all these things shall be dissolved" King James Version.

(2). "The heavens **shall pass away** with a great noise, and the elements shall be dissolved with fervent heat, and **the earth and the works that are therein shall be burned up**. Seeing that these things are thus, all **to be dissolved**" American Standard Version.

(3). "The heavens **will pass away** with a roar, and the elements **will be destroyed** with intense heat, and **the earth and its works will be burned up**. Since all these things are **to be destroyed** in this way" New American Standard Version.

(4). "And then the heavens **will pass away** with a loud noise, and the elements **will be dissolved** with fire, and **the earth and everything that is done on it will be dissolved**. Since all these things are **to be dissolved** in this way" New Revised Standard Version.

(5). "**The heavens will disappear** with a roar; **the elements will be destroyed** by fire, and **the earth and everything in it will be laid bare**" New International Version.

(6). *"The heavens will pass away with a terrible noise and the heavenly bodies will disappear in fire, and the earth and everything on it will be burned up. And so since everything around us is going to melt away"* The Living Bible.

(7). *"The skies will disappear with a loud noise, everything in them will be destroyed by fire, and the earth and everything in it will be burned up. In that way everything will be destroyed"* New Century Version.

(8). *"In that day the heavens will vanish in a tearing blast, the very elements will disintegrate in heat and the earth and all its works will disappear. In view of the fact that all these things are to be dissolved"* J. B. Phillips.

If this passage does not say the heavens (the sky) and the earth shall pass away, all be dissolved, be burned up, will disappear, disintegrate, there is no way God could have said the heavens (the sky) and the earth will not be after the day of the Lord? **There is no way to read the earth will be restored to be the way it was before Adam sinned in this passage; "disappear," "melt away," "vanish," "be destroyed," "be dissolved," "pass away," "burned up," does not mean "be restored;"** not one nation, Israel, being restored, not the earth and sky being restored. For the elements to be destroyed means the atomic particles of which the elements are made will be destroyed; the chemical elements, oxygen, hydrogen, etc., *"will be dissolved with fervent heat"* (2 Peter 3:10). All this creation that God made from nothing will return to nothing.

**Hebrews 1:10-12** says in the beginning Christ made the heavens and the earth, they are the works of His hands, **they shall perish, but Christ shall remain;** *"perish"* is the opposite of *"remain"*; the earth will not *"remain."* It is the same heavens and earth that Christ made that shall perish, that will not *"remain,"* this is not speaking of just one nation that has already come to an end.

**2 Peter 3:10-12** says on the day of the Lord, *"The heaven shall pass away with a great noise, and the elements shall be dissolved with fervent heat, and the earth and the works that are therein shall be burned up."* It comes down to, "Did God know how to say what He meant to say, or did He mean to say 'be restored' when He said, *"shall pass away"*?"

**Revelation 20:11-15** speaking in apocalyptic language of the final judgment that will be on the day of the Lord says, *"The heaven fled away; and there was found no place for them."* After the heavens have fled away (not after just one nation that has already been destroyed long before the Judgment Day) then, on the same day the resurrected dead are judged. On that day, after the heaven have fled away into the nothingness from which they came, the resurrected persons, both saved and unsaved will stand before the throne and be judged *"out of the things which were written in the books, according to their works"* (Revelation 20:12).

If the second coming of Christ is passed, and all end time prophecy has been fulfilled as Realized Eschatology teaches, then life will go on forever on the earth as it is now for, according to them, nothing is said in the Bible about the earth ending, or the victory over death when death will have been abolished, or the end of evil.

The fire is just as literal as the water; if one is figurative language the other must also be. *"By which means (water) the world that them was...perished; but the heavens that now are, and the earth, by the same word have been stored up for fire."*

If the "fire" is spiritualized to be something other than real fire then the "water" must also be spiritualized to be something other than real water; therefore, the story of the ark must also be figurative language; therefore, there were no real ark and no real flood.

Figurative language of the sun, moon and stars being darken, and the stars falling from heaven are used of the fall of Judea (a national judgment) in Jeremiah 4:1-28, and "*The sun shall not give her light, and the stars shall fall from heaven, and the powers of the heavens shall be shaken*" (Matthew 24:29). Compare Matthew 24:29-30 to the fall of Egypt. "*And when I extinguish you, I will cover the heavens, and darken their stars; I will cover the sun with a cloud, and the moon shall not give its light. All the shining lights in the heavens I will darken over you and will set darkness on your land, declares the Lord God. I will also trouble the hearts of many peoples, when I bring your destruction among the nations*" (Ezekiel 32:7-9). However, Peter speaks of the utter destruction, passing away, disappearing, disintegrating, being dissolved of "*the elements*" on the day of the Lord; not just being darken, or not giving their light. He is not using figurative language of the passing of a nation, but giving a literal description of the earth and the heavens, the same earth and heavens that God created out of nothing, passing away, going back to nothing in one day.

Whichever way you make this (1) a figurative description of the end of a nation, (2) or a literal description, as a literal description of the end of the heavens and earth in the day of the Lord, **it is a description of the end of something, not the restoring, or making something better.** The earth being restored is not in this passage; in it the earth is destroyed, not restored. **There is not a word about the earth or Israel being restored and made better in 2 Peter 3.**

*"You, Lord, in the beginning did lay the foundation **of the earth, and the heavens** are the works of your hands: **they shall perish; but you continues:** and they all shall wax old as does a garment; and as a mantle shall you roll them up, as a garment, and they shall be changed; but you are the same, and your years will not come to an end"* (Hebrews 1:10-12). There is no way the writer of Hebrews could have said any stronger that:

(1) The Earth, not Israel, was made by the Lord in the beginning, a long time before there was a nation of Israel.

(2) And the same earth made the in the beginning by Lord will end, **that the earth and the heavens the Lord made will perish.**

(3) But Jesus will have **no end.**

Realized Eschatology says all prophecy has been fulfilled; therefore, according to them, this has already been fulfilled, and the earth and the heavens have already perished.

The A. D. 70 doctrine takes out the contrast between (1) the earth and heavens ending and (2) Jesus never ending, and says, “No, (1) the earth and the Heavens will be changed and continue, and (2) Jesus will continue without changing.”

The “*shall perish.*”

BUT

Jesus “*will have no end.*”

“*They ( the earth and the heaven) shall perish; but you (Jesus) continues.*”

All ungodly man will be destroyed on the day of the Lord, not just the ungodly Jews in A. D. 70 when Israel was destroyed. Is there anyone that can look at the world today and cannot see (1) that the ungodly have not yet been destroyed, (2) that death has not been destroyed?

Summary:

- It was the **world (kesmos)** that was brought into being (“*and an earth compacted out of water and amidst water*”) by the word of God (2 Peter 3:5).
- It was the same **world (kesmos)** that was destroyed by water, all the world, not just one nation that had not come into exists at the time the world was destroyed (2 Peter 3:6).
- It is the **world (kesmos)** that now is that is stored up for fire at the Day of Judgment and destruction of ungodly men (2 Peter 3:7).
- The same **world (kesmos)** (this earth) that was created in 2 Peter 3:5 is the same **world (kesmos)** that will be destroyed by fire in 2 Peter 3:6.

The fire is just as literal as the water. Nothing is said about Israel, or about the end of an age (arion) in 2 Peter 3. It was real water that floated a real boat that destroyed the whole world (kesmos), not just one nation that did not exist at that time, **Israel was not destroyed by the flood.** It will be real fire that will destroy the world (kesmos), not just the end of an age (arion) for one nation.

#### **ACTS 17: PAUL AT ATHENS, His sermon on Mars Hill to Gentiles, not Israel.**

J. Russell in “The Paroussia,” page 153 does his best to makes “world” in Acts 17:31 be only Israel, not the world, and the judgment in that passage be only the judgment on Israel in A. D. 70, not the judgment on the world at the second coming of Christ. In Acts 17 oikoumene is translated world two times, kosmos is translated world one time, gee is translated earth two times. Both (1) from the context, (2) and that Paul was preaching to Gentiles, not Jews, it is unmistakable that he is speaking of the world, not a part of the world, not of Israel. Paul was not in Israel and was not preaching to Jews. “*And when they did not find them, they began dragging Jason and some brethren before the city authorities, shouting, ‘These man who have upset the **WORLD** (oikoumene) have come here also’*” (Acts 17:6).

“*Now while Paul was waiting for them at Athens, his spirit was being provoked within him as he was observing the city full of idols. So he was reasoning in the synagogue with the Jews and the God-fearing Gentiles, and in the market place every day with those who happened to be present. And also some of the Epicurean and Stoic philosophers were conversing with him. Some were saying, ‘What would this idle babbler wish to say?’ Others, ‘He seems to be a proclaimer of strange*

deities,'—because he was preaching Jesus and the resurrection. And they took him and brought him to the Areopagus, saying, 'May we know what this new teaching is which you are proclaiming? For you are bringing some strange things to our ears; so we want to know what these things mean.' (Now all the Athenians and the strangers visiting there used to spend their time in nothing other than telling or hearing something new.) So Paul stood in the midst of the Areopagus and said, 'Men of Athens, I observe that you are very religious in all respects. For while I was passing through and examining the objects of your worship, I also found an altar with this inscription, TO AN UNKNOWN GOD. Therefore what you worship in ignorance, this I proclaim to you. **The God who made the WORLD (kosmos) and all things in it, since He is Lord of heaven and EARTH (gee), does not dwell in temples made with hands; nor is He served by human hands, as though He needed anything, since He Himself gives to all people life and breath and all things; and He made from one man every nation of mankind to live on all the face of the EARTH (gee), having determined their appointed times and the boundaries of their habitation, that they would seek God, if perhaps they might grope for Him and find Him, though He is not far from each one of us; for in Him we live and move and exist, as even some of your own poets have said, 'For we also are His children.'** Being then the children of God, we ought not to think that the Divine Nature is like gold or silver or stone, an image formed by the art and thought of man. Therefore having overlooked the times of ignorance, God is now declaring to men that all people everywhere should repent, because **He has fixed a day in which He will judge the WORLD (oikoumenee) in righteousness through a Man whom He has appointed, having furnished proof to all men by raising Him from the dead.'** Now when they heard of the resurrection of the dead, some began to sneer, but others said, 'We shall hear you again concerning this.'" Acts 17:16-32. Oikoumenee is used in the Greek 15 times and has reference to the world all 15 times, not to one nation, not to just a part of the world. In these 15 passages "world" is not from "aion" (age) as it is many times in the King James.

1. "Have turned the **world** (oikoumenee) upside down" (Acts 17:6).
2. "In the which he will judge the **world** (oikoumenee)" (Acts 17:31).
3. "Whom all Asia and the **world** (oikoumenee) worships" (Acts 19:27).
4. "Among all the Jews throughout the **world** (oikoumenee)" (Acts 24:5).
5. "Shall be preached in all the **world** (oikoumenee)" (Matthew 24:14).
6. "That all the **world** (oikoumenee) should be taxed" (Luke 2:1)
7. "Unto him all the kingdoms of the **world** (oikoumenee)" (Luke 4:5).
8. "Which are coming on the **earth** (oikoumenee)" (Luke 21:26).
9. "Famine throughout all the **world** (oikoumenee)" (Acts 11:28).
10. "There words unto the ends of the **world** (oikoumenee)" (Romans 10:18).
11. "The first begotten into the **world** (oikoumenee)" (Hebrews 1:6).
12. "For not unto angels did he subject the **world** (oikoumenee) to come" (Hebrews 2:5).
13. "Which shall come upon all the **world** (oikoumenee)" (Revelation 2:10).
14. "Which deceiveth the whole **world** (oikoumenee)" (Revelation 12:9).
15. "Kings of the earth and of the whole **world** (oikoumenee)" (Revelation 16:14).

He was not speaking of the judgment of Israel in A. D. 70, the judgment of Israel was not in a day; there was no resurrection of the dead and no changing the bodies of the living to spiritual bodies; **the “world” was not judged in A. D. 70.**

*“Now when they heard of the resurrection of the dead, some began to sneer, but others said, ‘We shall hear you again concerning this.’* When Paul spoke to these Greek philosophers about the resurrection of the dead they thought he was teaching a strange new teaching that they had never heard before. The resurrection of the dead was new to the world, new to the Greek philosophers that believed in an immortal soul.

**NO PLACE FOR A RESURRECTION OF THE UNJUST IN THE A. D. 70 TEACHING.** Most who believe the A. D. 70 teaching believe the just dead of the Old Testament was resurrected in A. D. 70, and the saved who have died after that time go to Heaven at the moment of death, but I have not found where they believe any unjust were resurrected in A. D. 70, or will be resurrected from the dead for judgment; no place for the second death after the resurrection in there teaching; no place for a resurrection or judgment that comes to the lost after their death.

- ***There shall be a resurrection both of the just and unjust*** (Acts 24:15). ***“A resurrection”*** of both, not two resurrections, not one resurrection of the saved, and later another resurrection of the lost, which according to the A. D. 70 doctrine a resurrection and judgment of the lost will never come.
- ***“He has appointed a day in which he will judge the world”*** (Acts 17:31). ***“A day”*** not only the just, and not only Israel, but in the same day Christ is going to judge the entire world. That day has not yet come.
- ***“If so be that it is a righteous thing with God to recompense affliction to them that afflict you, and to you that are afflicted rest with us, at the revelation of the Lord Jesus from Heaven with the angels of his power in flaming fire, rendering vengeance to them that know not God, and to them that obey not the gospel of our Lord Jesus who shall suffer punishment, even eternal destruction from the face of the Lord and from the glory of his might, when He shall come to be glorified in His saints, and marveled at in all them that believe (because our testimony unto you was believed) in that day”*** (2 Thessalonians 1:6-10).
- ***“He that rejects me, and receives not my sayings, has one that judges him: the word that I speak, the same shall judge him in the last day”*** (John 12:48).
- ***“Do not marvel at this; for the hour is coming, in which all who are in the tombs shall hear His voice and shall come forth; they that have done good, unto the resurrection of life; and they that have done evil, unto the resurrection of judgment”*** (John 5:28-29). The judgment is clearly said to take place after the resurrection, not at death.
- ***“I solemnly charge you in the presence of God and Christ Jesus, who is to judge the living and the dead”*** (2 Timothy 4:1).
- ***“Who shall give account to him that is ready to judge the living and the dead”*** (1 Peter 4:5). The dead had not been judged, but were still to be judged (future tense); they were not already judged at the moment of death and translated from this world to Heaven or Hell.
- ***“For we shall all stand before the judgment-seat of God”*** (Romans 14:10).
- ***“For we must all be made manifest before the judgment-seat of Christ; that each one may receive the things done in the body, according to what he had done, whether it be good or bad”*** (2 Corinthians 5:10). The Corinthians that had fallen asleep in Christ (1 Corinthians 15:20), both the just, and the unjust must be resurrected to stand before the judgment seat. That there was such a

resurrection and judgment in A. D. 70 is pure fiction; there is nothing about it in the Bible, nothing in Josephus or any history we have of that time.

- "Every idle word that men shall speak, they shall give account thereof **in the day of Judgment**" (Matthew 12:36).
- "He that rejects me and receives not my words has one that judges him. The word that I have spoken, the same shall judge him **in the last day**" (John 12:48).
- "God now commands all men everywhere to repent because he has **appointed a day** in the which **He will judge the world** by righteousness by that man whom he has ordained, whereof he has given assurance unto all men in that he has raised him from the dead" (Acts 17:30-31).
- "For if we go on sinning willfully after receiving the knowledge of the truth, there no longer remains a sacrifice for sins, but a terrifying expectation of judgment and **the fury of a fire which will consume the adversaries**. Anyone who has set aside the Law of Moses dies without mercy on the testimony of two or three witnesses. How much severer punishment do you think he will deserve who has trampled under foot the Son of God, and has regarded as unclean the blood of the covenant by which he was sanctified, and has insulted the Spirit of grace? For we know Him who said, '**vengeance is mine, I will repay**' and again, '**the Lord will judge His people.**' It is a terrifying thing to fall into the hands of the living God" (Hebrews 10:26-31).

**THE RESURRECTION ON THE LAST DAY, THE DAY OF THE LORD.** All this in one day, the day Christ comes, the day of the Lord.

- (1). The second coming of Christ (2 Peter 3:10).
- (2). The resurrection and judgment of the righteous (Acts 24:15; John 5:28-29; 6:40-41).
- (3). The resurrection and judgment of the wicked (John 12:48).
- (4). The final judgment (Acts 17:31; 2 Thessalonians 1:6-10).
- (5). The total destruction of the lost (2 Peter 2:12; 3:7).
- (6). The second death (Revelation 2:11).
- (7). Death will be abolished (1 Corinthians 15:24-16).
- (8). The saved forever with the Lord (1 Thessalonians 4:14-17).
- (9). The kingdom will be delivered up to God (1 Corinthians 15:24-26).
- (10). Christ will bring the lawless one to an end by the appearance of His coming (2 Thess. 2:1-9).
- (11). "Wrath in the day of wrath and revelation of the righteous judgment of God" (2 Thess. 1:7-10).
- (12). The total destruction of the earth and the heavens that were made from nothing, and that will return to nothing (2 Peter 3:7-11), on earth, living or dead, will know it. Coming "*as a thief*" shows the unexpectedness of His coming; no one knows what day or year. No one will be resurrected before the day of the Lord comes, all will be resurrected when it comes.

(1) ON THE DAY OF THE LORD, **THE SECOND COMING OF CHRIST:** "*But the day of the Lord will come as a thief*" (2 Peter 3:10). No one knows when the "*day of the Lord*" will come, but when it comes, **everyone** then all the dead will rise (John 5:28-29).

"*And this is the will of him that sent me, that of all that which he has given me I should lose nothing, but should raise it up **at the last day**. For this is the will of my Father, that everyone that beholds the Son, and believes on him, should have eternal life; and I will raise him up **at the last day***" (John 6:40-41); not a thousand years before the last day; the last day will come only one time, not over and over at the death of each person.

*"We all shall not sleep, but we shall all be changed, in a moment, in the twinkling of an eye, at the last trump: for the trumpet shall sound, and the dead shall be raised incorruptible, and we shall be changed"* (1 Corinthians 15:51-52).

(1). All will be raised—on the same day in the same moment.

(2). All will be changed—on the same day in the same moment.

(3). All at the last trump—on the same day in the same moment.

(2) ON THE DAY OF THE LORD, **THE RESURRECTION AND JUDGMENT OF BOTH THE RIGHTEOUS AND THE WICKED IN THE LAST DAY.** *"There shall be a resurrection both of the just and unjust"* (Acts 24:15). Both the righteous and the wicked will be raised and judged at the same time on the same day, not a thousand years apart. **Most, if not all, who believes Christ came in A. D. 70 may not believe there will ever be a resurrection of the "unjust."**

*"Marvel not at this; for the hour comes in which all that are in the tombs shall hear his voice, and shall come forth; they that have done good unto the resurrection of life; and they that have done evil unto the resurrection of judgment"* (John 5:28-29). All will be raised in the same "hour." Not the saved raised, and then the lost resurrected in another resurrection a thousand years later, and not many resurrections at the moment of death or each person. The resurrection does not take place at death; there is a day appointed w

(3) ON THE DAY OF THE LORD: **THE JUDGMENT OF THE WICKED IN THE LAST DAY.** *"He that rejects me, and receives not my sayings, has one that judges him: the word that I speak, the same shall judge him in the last day"* (John 12:48). There will be a Judgment Day after this life for those that "receives not my saying."

Dr. Bert Thompson, Pd. D. on page 42 of "The Origin, Nature, and Destiny of the Soul" falsely implies that those that do not believe in Hell believe that the first death is the end of the lost. This may possible be true of a few, but I have read from many that believe in "annihilation" and do now know even one that believes the first death is the end of the lost, but many of those that believe the A. D. 70 doctrine and many Premillennialists do believe the first death is the end of the lost. *"The hour comes, in which **all** that are in the tombs shall hear his voice, and shall come forth; they that have done good, unto the resurrection of life; and they that have done evil, unto the resurrection of judgment"* (John 5:28-29). Does he not know there will be a second death of all the "unbelieving" after the judgment (Revelation 21:8)? Or did he not see that a death of unbelievers after the "resurrection of judgment" would make eternal life in Hell not possible? But what is he trying to prove, if the sinner is forever dead when his body died, or if he is resurrected, judged, and dies the second death, it would still be true that *"the wages of sin is death"* (Romans 6:23), and for there to be a Hell as he is teaching he must change *"the wages of sin is death"* to "the wages of sin is endless life." According to him there cannot be any kind of death for anyone before or after the resurrection and judgment, just endless life in Hell, or endless life

in Heaven. He takes death out of the Bible, and makes the second death not be a punishment or a death.

(4) ON THE DAY OF THE LORD, **THE FINAL JUDGMENT**: Millennialists must divide the judgment into two parts. If it is shown that the judgment of both those in Christ and those who are not in Christ is one judgment of both at the same time on the same day, not separated by a thousand years, it makes their view not be possible. In the passages above the judgment, it is not a broken judgment with the two parts a thousand years apart.

*"He has appointed a day in which he will judge the world" (Acts 17:31). All will stand before Him to be judged. "If so be that it is a righteous thing with God to recompense affliction to them that afflict you, and to you that are afflicted rest with us, at the revelation of the Lord Jesus from Heaven with the angels of his power in flaming fire, rendering vengeance to them that know not God, and to them that obey not the gospel of our Lord Jesus who shall suffer punishment, even eternal destruction from the face of the Lord and from the glory of his might, when He shall come to be glorified in His saints, and marveled at in all them that believe (because our testimony unto you was believed) in that day" (2 Thessalonians 1:5-10). This passage tells:*

**What** is to be done to both.

- Them that know not God *"Shall suffer punishment, even eternal destruction."*
- His saints: *"Counted worthy of the kingdom of God" Verse 5.*

**When** it is to be done to both.

- *"At the revelation of the Lord Jesus from Heaven...when He shall come to be glorified in His saints...in that day"*

There is no way this passage can be broken apart and made to be speaking of two things that will be a thousand years apart. It is speaking of what will happen to both believers and nonbelievers *"in that day,"* not a thousand years apart. If all the Bible is to be taken literally as the Millennialists say it should be, could any passage say any clearer than this one that the resurrection and judgment are simultaneously on the same day?

*"Do not marvel at this; for the hour is coming, in which all who are in the tombs shall hear His voice and shall come forth; they that have done good, unto the resurrection of life; and they that have done evil, unto the resurrection of judgment" (John 5:28-29).*

*"But after your hardness and unrepentant heart treasures up for yourself wrath in the day of wrath and revelation of the righteous judgment of God; who will render to every man according to his works: to them that by patience in well-doing seek for glory and honor and incorruption, eternal life: but unto them that are factious, and obey not the truth, but obey unrighteousness, shall be wrath and indignation, tribulation and anguish, upon every soul of man that works evil" (Romans 2:5-6).*

This will be *"in the day when God shall judge the secrets of men, according to my gospel, by Jesus Christ"* (Romans 2:16).

*"For we must all be made manifest before the judgment—seat of Christ; that each one may receive the things done in the body, according to what he had done, whether it be good or bad"* (2 Corinthians 5:10). Also Matthew 25:46; Hebrews 10:27; Romans 14:10; 2:5-16; 1 Thessalonians 5:2-3; 2 Peter 2:12; 3:7-11; 2:10; Revelation 2:11; 21:8. The timetable used by some of the Premillennialists has the judgment of the lost a thousand years after the day of the Lord.

If there were a judgment at death of each person it would make a second judgment on the day of the Lord of the person that had already been judged useless. If, as many teach, a sinner is judged at death, and he or she is found guilty and sent into an everlasting Hell from which he or she can never come out of, will the judgment be repeated a second time, and the same sinner found guilty of the same sins a second time, and then be sent a second time into an everlasting Hell even when, as we are told, he or she were already in Hell from which no one will ever come out of; would a second judgment of a person or soul already in Hell make Hell any hotter are more endless?

The WHEN:

- At the last trump (1 Corinthians 15:51-55).
- When what is mortal is swallowed up of life (2 Corinthians 5:1-5).
- When the Lord shall descend from Heaven (1 Thessalonians 4:16-17).
- At the coming of the Lord (1 Thessalonians 2:1).
- On that day (2 Timothy 4:7-8).

Universalists try to make "the day of the Lord" be symbol for the whole Christian dispensation. In many passages "the day of the Lord" is still future; the judgment is spoken of as not yet come in many passages that were written about 25 to about 60 years after the Christian dispensation begin.

1. *"He has fixed a day in which He will judge world in righteousness"* Acts 17:31
2. *"For we must all appear before the judgment seat of Christ, that each one may be recompensed for his deeds in the body, according to what he has done, whether good or bad"* 2 Corinthians 5:10
3. *"But the present heavens and earth by His word are being reserved for fire, kept for **the day of judgment** and destruction of ungodly men"* 2 Peter 3:7
4. *"**On the day** when according to my gospel, God will judge the secrets of men through Christ Jesus"* Romans 2:16
5. *"Having a hope in God, which these men cherish themselves, that there shall certainly be a resurrection of both the righteous and the wicked"* Acts 24:15
6. *"For we shall all stand before the judgment seat of God"* Romans 14:10
7. *"He who rejects Me, and does not receive My saying, has one who judges him; the word I spoke is what will judge him **at the last day**"* John 12:48
8. *"Do not marvel at this; for **an hour is coming**, in which all who are in the tombs shall hear His voice and shall come forth; those who did the good deeds to a resurrection of life, those who committed the evil deeds to a resurrection of judgment"* John 5:28-29

9. Also Hebrews 6:1-3; 9:27-28; 10:27; Acts 24:25; Romans 2:5-6; Jude 6
- o 7 and 8 were spoken by Christ before the Christian dispensation about the same day and same judgment at the second coming of Christ.

(5) **ON THE DAY OF THE LORD THE TOTAL DESTRUCTION OF THE LOST 2** Peter 2:12; 3:7: *"For yourselves know perfectly **that the day of the lord** so comes as a thief in the night. When they are saying, peace and safety, then sudden destruction comes upon them...But you, brethren, are not in darkness, that **that day** should overtake you as a thief; for you are all sons of light"* (1 Thessalonians 5:2-3, See 2 Peter 3:10). Both *"the day of the lord,"* and the *"sudden destruction"* are on the same day.

*"At the revelation of the Lord Jesus from heaven with the angels of his power in flaming fire, rendering vengeance to them that know not God and to them that obey not the gospel of our Lord Jesus; who shall suffer punishment, even **eternal destruction** from the face of the Lord and from the glory of his might, **when he shall come** to be glorified in the saints"* (2 Thessalonians 1:7-10). There is no thousand—year gap between the coming of Christ and the destruction of the wicked. Both are *"in the day of the Lord."*

*"**But when the son of man shall come in His glory, and all the angels with Him...He shall separate them one from another, as the shepherd separates the sheep from the goats...and these (the goats) shall go away into eternal punishment: but the righteous (the sheep) into eternal life"*** (Matthew 25:46). **No thousand years between the goats and the sheep. Both are at the same time. Both are, "When the son of man shall come in His glory."** Premillennialists cannot explain away this passage and many others that do not fit with their view.

(6) **ON THE DAY OF THE LORD, THE SECOND DEATH:** The second death is used four times only in Revelation, and is another way of saying the total destruction of the lost (See The Second Death in chapter two). Those who are buried and raised with Christ (Romans 6) in the first resurrection, *"Over these the second death has no power"* (Revelation 20:6).

**First resurrection—Second death:** *"He that over comes shall not be hurt of the second death"* (Revelation 2:11; 20:6; 20:14; 21:8). The first resurrection is when a person is *"born anew...born of the water and the Spirit"* (John 3:3-5). *"And you did he make **alive** when you were dead...made us **alive** together with Christ (by grace have you been saved), and **raised** us up with him"* (Ephesians 2:1-6; Galatians 2:18-19; 3:1). The first resurrection is when, *"We were buried therefore with him through baptism into death: that like as Christ was **raised** from the dead"* (Romans 6:3-4). ***"Having been buried with Him in baptism, in which you were also RAISED up with Him through faith in the working of God, who RAISED Him from the dead. When you were dead in your transgressions and the uncircumcision of your flesh, HE MADE YOU ALIVE together with Him, having forgiven us all our***

**transgression**" (Colossians 2:12-13). It being a resurrection means it is a bring to life from the dead, not a description of the life of a soul in the intermediate state, not a description of a living soul in Heaven, Hell, or anyplace; Revelation 20 is about a resurrection, not a translation of a living soul from Earth to Heaven, or to Hell.

**FIRST DEATH** is the end of life. All will die. "*For since by man came **death**, by man came also **the resurrection of the dead**. For as in Adam **all die**, so also in Christ shall **all be made alive***" (1 Corinthians 15:21-22). "*It is appointed unto man **once to die**, and after this comes judgment*" (Hebrews 9:27).

**THE RESURRECTION:** "*For the hour comes in which all that are in the tombs shall hear his voice, and shall come forth*" (John 5:28-29). All that are in the tombs have died the first death; they have no life unto they hear the voice of Christ and are resurrected from the dead, they are dead, not alive before the resurrection. After the appointed death that comes to all, all will be raised from the first death at the coming of Christ for the judgment.

**SECOND DEATH:** Those who are born again, made alive by being raised with Christ through Baptism, and live faithful shall not be hurt of the second death after the judgment. Christ paid the wages of sin for them. All others will pay their own wages of sin, which is death (Romans 6:23). "*But the fearful, and unbelieving, and abominable, and murderers, and fornicators, and sorcerers, and idolaters, and all liars, their part shall be in the lake that burns with fire and brimstone; **which is the second death***" (Revelation 21:8). From this death there will never be a resurrection. The results will be endless death.

**Lake of Fire, which is the second death: The all that "overcomes shall not be hurt of the second death," is all that are that have been saved, and remains faithful, not just some of the saved in a literal 1,000 years.** The second death will be for all that does not "*have part in the first resurrection*" (buried in baptism and raised up with Christ) (Revelation 2:11; 20:6; 20:15; 21:8). Death and hades, and any not found written in the book of life are cast into the lake of fire; which is the second death (Revelation 20:14-15).

The Dark Age doctrine of an endless life of torment is not a second death; it is endless life with torment; **it bears no resemblance to a death.** To feel pain, those in Hell would have to be just as alive as those in Heaven are. Eternal death is not any kind of life. The resurrection of all at the coming of Christ makes death be a sleep from which all will awake, but there will be no resurrection from the second death; it will be permanent and everlasting death.

There is no room in "*the day of the Lord*" for one resurrection of a few when He comes, and another resurrection of most of mankind after a thousand years as is taught by many. All the dead will be resurrected on "*the day of the Lord.*"

"To **him** that overcomes, to him will I give to eat of the tree of life...**He** that overcomes shall not be hurt of the second death...**He** that overcome shall be arrayed

in white garments; and I will in no wise blot **his** name out of the book of life" (Revelation 2:7-3:5). The first resurrection is when a person is born again; the persons that are born again are the only persons that will not be hurt of the second death. The overcoming is in this lifetime, not as the Premillennialists teach that the first resurrection will be at the coming of Christ. Those that overcome will have their names in the "book of life," and will "not be hurt of the second death" (Revelation 2:7). For them "death shall be no more" (Revelation 21:4).

- There will be death for all that are not in the "book of life," the second death from which there will be no resurrection, no life (Revelation 21:8).
- It is life for those in Christ, death for those not in Christ, not life in Heaven or life in Hell.

Blotting out their names seems to have been taken from ancient cities having a city register of all it's citizens. When a citizen died there names were blotted out. Some will have their names blotted out of the book of life and some will not.

- Not having their names blotted out of the book of life means they have life.
- Therefore if their names are blotted out of the book of life, they do not have life.

Wayne Jackson in the Christian Courier said if you substitute "annihilation" for "second death" (Revelation 2:11) you would see that "the second annihilation" is an absurdity (Why did not he change the first "death" to "annihilation?"). An absurdity is his changing "death" to "life," What is an absurdity is his doctrine that after the second death a "soul" will have life of any kind separated (without) God being the source of that life; that a "soul" will exist and have life someplace without God who is the only source of life. Death is the absence of life, death is not life anyplace separated from God. In death there is no life, those that are dead are not alive. For a "soul" to be separated from God would be to for that "soul" to be no place, not to exist.

(7) ON THE DAY OF THE LORD, **DEATH WILL BE ABOLISHED:** *"Then comes the end, when he shall deliver up the kingdom to God, even the father; when he shall have abolished all rule and all authority and power, for he **must reign**, till he has put all his enemies under his feet. **The last enemy that shall be abolished is death**" (1 Corinthians 15:24-16). For all that overcomes and "shall not be hurt of the second death" (Revelation 2:7), there will be no more death. Many Premillennialists believe Christ is not now reigning, and will not reign unto the thousand years when He will literally reign on the throne of David in Jerusalem, at which time many of them believe all the saved will be in Heaven, and they will not return to earth unto after the thousand years are over. Is there anyway that death being abolished on the day of the Lord is not a problem for them?*

(8) THE DAY OF THE LORD, **THE SAVED FOREVER WITH THE LORD:** *"For if we believe that Jesus died and rose again, even so them also that are fallen asleep in Jesus will God bring with him. For this we say unto you by the word of the Lord, that we that are alive, that are left unto the coming of the Lord, shall in no wise precede them that are fallen asleep. For the Lord himself shall descend from*

heaven, with a shout, the voice of the archangel, and with the trump of God: and the dead in Christ shall rise first; then we that are alive, that are left, shall together with them be caught up in the clouds, to meet the Lord in the air: **and so shall we ever be with the Lord**" (1 Thessalonians 4:14-17).

"When the Lord shall be revealed from heaven...when he shall come to be glorified in his saints, and to be marveled at in all them that believed...in that day" (2 Thessalonians 1:7-10). Both the "shall be punished" and "to be marveled at in all them that believed" are "when the Lord shall be revealed from heaven...in that day," not two difference days that are a thousand years apart. There is no mention of immortal souls in this passage, it is persons that will be punished, or persons that will marveled; do you find it strange that many passages that say nothing about souls are used to prove it is souls, not persons, that God will torment in Hell

"And this is the will of him that sent me, that of all that which he has given me I should lose nothing, **but should raise it up at the last day**. For this is the will of my Father, that every one that beholds the Son, and believes on him, should have eternal life; and **I will raise him up at the last day**...No man can come to me, except the Father that sent me draw him: and **I will raise him up in the last day**...He that eats my flesh and drinks my blood has eternal life; **and I will raise him up at the last day**" (John 6:39-55). Being raised on the last day cannot be anything but the resurrection at the coming of Christ on the day of the Lord; all the saved will be resurrected and have life with the Lord for all the coming ages. "I am the resurrection, and the life; he that believes on me, even if he dies, yet shall he live" (John 11:25).

(9) ON THE DAY OF THE LORD. **THE KINGDOM WILL BE DELIVERED UP TO GOD:** "Christ the first fruits, after that those who are Christ's **at His coming, then comes the end, when He delivers up the kingdom to the God and father, when he has abolished all rule and all authority and power. For He must reign until He has put all His enemies under His feet. The last enemy that will be abolished is death**" (1 Corinthians 15:24-26).

(1). The Kingdom has been already been established, and it will be delivered up to God in the day of the Lord.

- Not the Kingdom will be established on earth after the day of the Lord.

(2). We will have a "spiritual body" in Heaven with Christ.

- Not we will have an earthly body on earth, and Christ will not have an earthly body and rule the earth from Jerusalem for eternally.

(10) ON THE DAY OF THE LORD. **CHRIST WILL BRING THE LAWLESS ONE TO AN END BY THE APPEARANCE OF HIS COMING:** "Now we beseech you, brethren, touching the coming of our Lord Jesus Christ...as that the day of the Lord is just at hand...for it will not be, except the falling away come first, and the man of lawlessness be revealed, the son of destruction...And then shall be revealed the lawless one, whom the Lord Jesus shall slay with the breath of his mouth, and bring

to nothing by the manifestation of his coming; even he, whose coming is according to the working of Satan with all power" (2 Thessalonians 2:1-9). Who or whatever the lawless one is, he will end on the day of the Lord. Some Premillennialists believes the lawless one to be the "Antichrist." If they were right, then **Christ will bring the antichrist to an end on the day of the Lord, on the day of his second coming, not a thousand years after the day of the Lord. It or he will not exist for a thousand years after the coming of Christ. If there were a millennium after the day of the coming of Christ, the lawless one could not be in it.** Some believe him to be the pope. If so, Christ will bring him to and end **that day**.

(11) ON THE DAY OF JUDGMENT, **WRATH OF GOD:** A day of wrath, not seven-years or a thousand-years of wrath. *"And to you that are afflicted rest with us, at the revelation of the Lord Jesus from Heaven with the angels of his power in flaming fire, rendering vengeance to them that know not God, and to them that obey not the gospel of our Lord Jesus; who shall suffer punishment even eternal destruction from the face of the Lord and from the glory of His might, when He shall come to be glorified in His saints, and to be marveled at in all them that believe...in that day"* (2 Thessalonians 1:7-10). "Eternal destruction" for the lost is "in that day," and it is the same day that "when he shall come to be marveled at by them that believed."

*"Wrath in the day of wrath and revelation of the righteous judgment of God...but unto them that are factious, and obey not the truth, but obey unrighteousness, shall be wrath and indignation, tribulation and anguish, upon every soul of man that worked evil...in the day when God shall judge the secrets of man"* (Romans 2:5-16 American Standard Version).

*"For if we sin willfully after that we have received the knowledge of the truth, there remains no more a sacrifice for sins, but a certain fearful expectation of judgment, and a fierceness of fire which shall devour the adversaries. A man that has set at naught Moses law died without compassion on the word of two or three witnesses: of how much sorer punishment, think you, shall he be judged worthy, who has trodden underfoot the Son of God, and has counted the blood of the covenant wherewith he was sanctified and unholy thing, and has done despite unto the Spirit of grace? For we know him that said, vengeance belongs unto me, I will recompense, and again, The Lord shall judge his people. It is a fearful thing to fall into the hands of the living God"* (Hebrews 10:26-31).

*"And inasmuch as it is appointed unto men once to die, and after this comes judgment"* (Hebrews 9:27).

*"But I would not have you ignorant, brethren, concerning them that fall asleep; that you sorrow not, even as the rest, who have no hope. For if we believe that Jesus died and rose again, even so them also that are fallen asleep in Jesus will God bring with him. For this we say unto you by the word of the Lord, that we that are alive, that*

are left unto the coming of the Lord, shall in no way precede them that are fallen asleep, For the Lord himself shall descend from heaven, and with a shout, with the voice of the archangel, and with the trump of God; and the dead in Christ shall rise first; then we that are alive, that are left, shall together with them be caught up in the clouds, to meet the Lord in the air; and so shall we ever be with the Lord. Wherefore comfort one another with these words. But concerning the times and the seasons, brethren, you have no need that anything be written unto you. For yourselves know perfectly that **the day of the Lord** so comes as a thief in the night. When they are saying, Peace and safety, then sudden destruction comes upon them, as travail upon a woman with child: and they shall in no wise escape. But you brethren, are not in darkness, **that day** should overtake you as a thief" (1 Thessalonians 4:13-5:5).

**In this passage the day of the Lord is:**

1. The day of the Lord's coming.
2. The day the living saints will be caught up to meet the coming Lord in the air.
3. The day of the resurrection of those that has fallen asleep.
4. The day the judgment of all take place.
5. The day of the Lord.
6. The day when "*the Lord himself shall descend from Heaven.*"
7. That day.

All on the same day, there is no thousand years (365,000 days), or no seven years after any of the above. They are all on "*that day.*" "*Inasmuch as he has appointed a day in which he will judge the world in righteousness by the man whom he has ordained*" (Acts 17:31). Those who believe and teach Premillennial doctrines must deny the clear teaching on the Bible In the day of the Lord.

(12) **ON THE DAY OF THE LORD. The total destruction of the earth and the heavens, which were made from nothing and will return to nothing. "Heaven and earth shall pass away, but my words shall not pass away"** (Matthew 24:35; Psalm 102:25-27). "*By which means the world that then was, being overflowed with water, perished, but the day of the Lord will come as a thief: in which the heavens that now are, and the earth, by the same word have been stored up for fire, being reserved against the day of judgment and destruction of ungodly men...But the day of the Lord will come as a thief; in the which the heavens shall pass away with a great noise, and the elements shall be dissolved with fervent heat* (The elements are all the things of which the earth is made, the air, the water, etc. These shall be dissolved, burned up), **and the earth and works that are therein shall be burned up. Seeing that these things are thus all to be dissolved**" (2 Peter 3:7-11).

## Chapter Eight—PART THREE

### THE SYMBOLIC PICTURES OF REVELATION

**The Interpretation Of Figurative Language, Metaphors And Symbolical Passage. The symbolical pictures of Revelation versus a literal interpretation.**

Most of Revelation is symbolism. All the literal passages in the Bible, which use words like death, die, destruction, life, it is insisted that only one word in a passage be interpreted figuratively, not the whole passage, until they come to a book that is figurative, then it is insisted that the figurative be interpreted as being literal. It is a hopeless cause that requires such poor handling of God's word.

HENRY CONSTABLE: "Driven hopelessly from the plainer parts of Scripture, the advocates of eternal life and misery in hell think that they have in this mysterious and highly—wrought figurative book as least two passages which authorize them to change numberless passages in the rest of Scripture, and some even in the book of Revelation itself, form their pain and obvious meaning to one that is forced, unnatural, and often false to all the laws of interpretation of language...They take a text or two in the very end of the Bible, and by them interpret a thousand passage written long before. No matter what may be the apparent meaning of these earlier and far more numerous passages, they must all be made to square with the text from Revelation! The first written, the more numerous, and the plainer Scriptures, must be interpreted by one or two last—written and figurative passages!" "The Duration and Nature of Future Punishment," pages 172—173, 1871.

**THE FIFTH SEAL—SOULS UNDER AN ALTAR: A symbolical picture** (Revelation 6:9): Chapter 6 is a vision of seven seals being opened by the Lamb; the first four, just as the fifth seal are things that happen on earth before the judgment. To understand this chapter we must keep it in the context. John was seeing a vision of what was to shortly come to pass at the time he was writing (Revelation 4:1). When we read the symbolism of Revelation, we must remember that the figure symbolizes something that is a word picture, and they are not to be taken literally. We must look for what is symbolized, and not make the symbols into something real or literal. The red horse of Revelation 6:3 is not a literal or real red horse, and it is not in Heaven; it went out "*to take peace from the earth, and that men should slay one another.*" John did not see a vision of Heaven when he saw a view of horses, or souls under an altar. None of the symbols can be taken literally. **The fifth seal is figurative just as the other seals were. Souls are not literally now living under an altar in Heaven before the judgment. That the symbolic souls under an altar must be changed into literal unhappy souls that are now under a literal altar in Heaven, and they are literally crying out for revenge shows the weakness of this belief.** Even those who believe souls go to their endless abode in Heaven at death do not believe souls are now living in Heaven in a prison under an altar crying out for revenge, this is definitely not the Heaven that is preached at funerals with the dead loved one smiling down at us, but they are desperate for any passage to prove there is a soul in us that soul goes either to Heaven or Hell at our death that they make it literal, even if souls must be living under an altar, even if it puts a literal altar in Heaven.

Souls under the altar crying out in Revelation 6:9 is similar to Abel's blood that "*cries unto me from the ground*" (Genesis 4:10). Both are figurative and not literal. The fifth seal is only one of six seals in this vision, and cannot be made literal while

the others are figurative. Is the 5th seal literal, but the 6th one figurative? Read all six. The 5th seal is taken out of context. Souls under an altar are no more literal than white, red, black, and pale horses are. Like the horses, they are part of a symbolic picture of things on this earth before the judgment; the seven seals are all of things that are now on this earth, not things that are in Heaven. Souls under the altar is an allusion to the Jewish altar on which their sacrifices was offered and the blood was poured out under the altar, not to a real altar in that is in Heaven before or after the judgment. If this symbolism were made literal, not even those who believe there is a deathless something in us that lives after we are dead would not believe what this passage would say, that an immortal immaterial something that had been in a person now lives in Heaven under an altar, and "it" wants revenge on other souls.

HOMER HAILEY: "That the blood of the sacrifices was poured out at 'the base' of the altar (Lev 4:7, 18, 30 et al.). Therefore, when the blood was poured out, it was the life that was being offered. The 'souls' (psuchas), which John saw beneath the altar, was the lives of those who had been sacrificed for Christ." "Revelation, An Introduction and Commentary," Baker Book House, page 194, Hailey was dean of Bible at Florida Christian College.

The life is in the blood, which had been poured out under the altar (Leviticus 17:4), Christian martyrs had symbolically poured out their lives under the altar. Psukee is translated "life," and would be a better translation of psukee than "souls," it was lives that were poured out, not souls that cannot die. The blood of the sacrifice was poured at the base of an altar. The life was in the blood (Genesis 9:4, Deuteronomy 12:23). Just as the blood of Abel cried out from the ground for justice (Genesis 4:10), the blood of these who were sacrificed for Christ cries out for justice; it will come at the judgment. This symbol picture is taken from something on this earth before the judgment, earthly things that we know about, not a literal picture of something that is actuality in Heaven. Can anyone believe John saw immaterial souls literally living under the altar on which the persons that they had been in had been killed; has this altar been moved from earth and it is now in Heaven?

The Protestant version of Hell is that all souls that had been in the lost are now in Hell being tormented by God with more torment than anything we can know, but it has souls that had been in the saved that Protestants teach are now in Heaven, these souls are now under an altar that has been moved from this earth to Heaven, and are now wanting more torment on other souls they believe already being endlessly tormented in Hell by God. What would you think of some you now know that were seeing many being tormented by someone, if they were asking to see more torment? To make this passage literal to prove torment in Hell would makes souls in Heaven be more heartless than any living person, and would make these souls be completely without any love. They would be seeing the agony and hearing the endless crying of unceasing anguish of other souls and asking for more torment.

**SYMBOLIC PICTURES: Is there a literal altar in Heaven?** There cannot be literal souls on a symbolic altar. If these souls are literal, and the altar were in

Heaven as many believe it is, then the altar must also be as literal as the souls under it; when one part of the vision is made literal, there is nowhere to stop without making the whole vision literal. What sacrifice could be made on this literal altar if it were in Heaven? If the altar were literal, then there would be literal death in Heaven, for to have a literal sacrifice on the literal altar there must be a literal death of what is sacrificed. What would be the reason for the sacrifice? Not for sin, for there is none in Heaven. Who is making the sacrifice? Do angels have a reason to make a sacrifice? Dose anyone believe souls in Heaven would be confined to the area under an altar? See Genesis 4:10 and Hebrews 12:24. This altar in Heaven is no more literal than: (1) Jesus would have a literal sword coming out of His mouth. (2) A church would be a literal lamp stand. (3) False religion would be a literal harlot riding a beast.

- Do you believe the beast in Revelation 13 is an actual giant sea monster that has seven heads?
- Do you believe the lamb that was slain for our sins was really a sheep?
- Do you believe the dragon in Revelation 13 was a prehistoric flying creature?
  - Of course not, like the altar they are symbolic pictures of things on this earth, not real things in Heaven.

Revelation 6:9; 14:9-11 are symbolic pictures of events that happen in time just as the other symbolic pictures around them are of events that happen in time. To put an altar for sacrifice, or smoke from burning flesh in Heaven is absurd. Just as absurd as making Revelation 12:1, "*A woman arrayed with the sun, and the moon under her feet, and upon her head a crown of twelve stars*" into a literal woman would be. Her head would need to be much larger than the sun to hold a crown with twelve suns in it. They are symbolic pictures; they are not literal or real events, not at the judgment or after it. The end of time is not described unto near the end of the book (see Hailey and Wallace below). To prove Hell, the symbolic pictures of these in time judgments (judgments that take place on the earth before the Judgment Day) are taken out of context, and are moved unto after the end of the earth after the Judgment Day, and they are placed in Hell even when there is no revelation that Hell exists. Those who believe in Hell think these symbolic pictures of in time judgments in Revelations are one of their strongest proofs of Hell. Peterson said, "The book of Revelation paints some of the most graphic pictures of hell found in the Bible" page 93. He takes the visions out of context and makes them be literal by making all the judgment pictures in the book be torment in Hell after the Judgment Day is over. He ends up with such absurd things as Heaven being always full of smoke from the burning bodies of those in Hell. **Although it is agreed by most that the symbolic pictures of Revelation can prove no doctrine, yet "*the smoke of their torment*" (Revelation 14:9-11) is constantly quoted as proof of endless torment (material smoke from an immaterial soul that has no substance is literally burning and making smoke in Heaven!). The fact that believers in Hell can prove their Hell**

only by misusing symbolic passages, metaphors, and parables; and must use these to set aside plain passages that says the wages of sin is death, the lost die, perish, are destroyed shows how utterly groundless the belief in Hell is. The clear statements are the truth, not the misuse of symbolic pictures. The Bible does not say yes and no to the same thing. It does not prove both the affirmative and negative. A symbolic picture does not prove the opposite of a clear statement. A symbolic picture of smoke in Heaven does not change *"the wages of sin is death"* to be "the wages of sin is endless life for an immaterial soul burning in torment" with the smoke of their burning going into Heaven for all eternity. The passage says, "any man," but dose anyone believe "any man" will be burning for eternity? Those that believe in Hell must change "any man" to a soul that had been in "any man" and make it be a "soul" that is burning in Hell, not a man burning for eternity.

Like most, if not all the symbolic pictures in Revelation, this language is taken from the Old Testament, and it is speaking of judgments on this earth, not in Hell. On the judgment of Edom in Isaiah 34:5-17 it is said, *"It shall not be quenched **night or day; its smoke shall go up forever,**"* but Edom was not literally destroyed by fire; the destroyed land that had been Edom became a desert inhabited by jackals and other wild things. The destroying of Edom by fire is symbolic just as Revelation 6:9; 14:9-11 are symbolic pictures; the nation of Edom was completely destroyed, and the rich land that was not a desert became a desert; wild animal dwell in the land, and thorns, nettles and thistles grow in the abandon fortified cities (Isaiah 34:13-15), but Edom was not burned up by a literal unquenchable fire, the nation did not literally burn up, it was literally destroyed, but not destroyed by a literal fire, and there never was any literal smoke. God's judgment of Edom meant that the nation completely ceased to exist just as Sodom ceased to exist, neither one are being endless tormented in hell or ever will be. Yet most that believe in Hell do not believe nations or cities are tormented in Hell yet they use this to prove individuals are to be tormented by God in Hell even though nothing is said about individuals, or about souls that had been in the individual persons.

**A contradiction to their own belief.** In an attempt to find their belief in the Bible, many make the symbolic picture of souls under the altar literal, but when they do it does not say what they want it to say, not even close to what they want it to say.

**(1). Souls under the altar before the judgment does not fit with the Protestant version of Heaven, that all the saved go directly to Heaven at death.** Those who believe that as soon as a person dies a soul that was in them goes to Heaven to be at home with the Lord. If souls go to their endless home with Christ in Heaven at the death of the persons, why are these souls so unhappy that they cry unto God? Why are they crying to God for judgment and vengeance on souls that are in torment if souls that were in the lost go to Hell at death and are already being

tormented by God? Will souls in Heaven want more vengeance than the awful torment that is believed Hell will be for souls that may have been in their father, mother, brother, or sister?

**(2). Souls under the altar before the judgment does not fit with the after judgment version, that all the saved souls are in Abraham's bosom, and will not be in Heaven unto the Judgment Day.** Many who believe in Abraham's bosom also make this literal, but when they do they have an even greater contradiction of their belief. They have souls in Heaven before the Judgment Day. They have souls that are not in Abraham's bosom, but in prison under an altar in Heaven before the judgment. They do not believe any will be in Heaven before the Judgment, but they have some souls that are now in Heaven under an altar. They have some that are in Heaven, and some that are in Abraham's bosom simultaneously before the Judgment Day. This is inconsistent with their own teaching, particularly on Luke 16. They teach Abraham's bosom with the good and bad sides, then they use this passage and teach that souls are "*under the altar*"; therefore, souls are in two different places before the resurrection. They change from one to the other, and then back to the first, as they need to. If a symbolic passage can be made to prove something they want it to prove by making it literal; they make it literal and use it just as they do Revelation 12:7-9 and other passages in Revelation. In their attempt to prove Hell, they make two symbolic passages literal, (Luke 16:19-31; Revelation 6:9), but if they did prove what they are trying to prove with each of the two passages, the two would contradict each other.

A drowning man will desperately grab at anything to try to keep his head above water. They have no plain statement that teaches men have an immortal inter something in them that is not subject to death; therefore, they grab at any symbolic language or parable.

B. W. JOHNSON: "Some persons have turned to the Book of Revelation and hung over its sublime imagery, as if these were literal descriptions of our endless home; but we must remember that this is a book of symbols, and that this fact will not permit a strict adherence to the letter in seeking the meaning of its glowing visions. Revelation does not aim to teach us, as some have thought, that the ceaseless employment of heaven is endless singing or praising, but that it is an abode of rapturous joy of which song and praise are the natural expressions. Nor are we to conclude that the heavenly city is literally paved with gold and fenced in with jasper walls and pearly gates, but that it is a splendid and glorious home beyond anything that mortal eye has ever seen." "Christ and the Future Life," 1891.

Commonly accepted rules: (1) a symbolic passage cannot overturn the teaching of a passage that is not symbolic; (2) a symbolic passage cannot be used to build a doctrine on.

**THE SMOKE OF THEIR TORMENT:** John says, "*And the smoke of their torment goes up for ever and ever; and they have no rest day and night.*" Both are symbolic language speaking of an in time temporal punishment on this earth, not

of endless torment in Hell. If *“the smoke of their torment goes up forever and ever; and they have no rest day and night”* were literal, **the torment and smoke would not be in Hell where this passage is used to prove torment it to be, but both the torment and the smoke would be in Heaven, both would be “in the presence of the holy angels and in the presence of the Lamb”** (Revelation 14:10). *“Day and night”* has to do with time, not eternity; the American Standard Version says, *“Greek, ‘unto the ages of ages”* which would put the smoke in time, and the smoke would end when time as we know it will come to an end. The smoke would be symbolic picture of something going up *“unto the ages of ages,”* is saying the smoke will be going up in time whatever it is symbolic of will end when time ends; there is no hint that smoke will go up throughout the *“ages of ages.”* *“Unto”* a given time *“the ages of ages”* is not *“ever and ever”* as it is mistranslated in the King James Version.

If this were literal, there are many more that are lost than are saved, it would make Heaven be over run with the lost that were being tormented in the present of the holy angels and Christ, and Heaven would be filled with the smoke of their torment; if it is symbolic the lost are not literally tormented in Heaven, and there is no literal smoke from their burning in Heaven. Dose anyone really believe that there will be real smoke, as we know it in Heaven?

CHARLES WELCH: “In the clause ‘they have no rest day nor night who worship’...is the present participle denoting they have no rest day nor night while they are worshipping” “The Wages of Sin” at: [www.truthaccordingtoscripture.com/](http://www.truthaccordingtoscripture.com/)

Most, if not all that believe in Hell do not believe those in Hell will be worshipping *“the beast and his image”* or worshipping anything when they are being tormented by God with intense pain in Hell; whatever is symbolize by worshipping of the beast takes place on Earth before the Judgment Day.

*“The smoke of their torment”* is in the third of the seven bowls of the wrath of God poured out *“into the earth”* by seven angels having seven plagues. Revelation 15:1 says, *“For in them is finished (complete) the wrath of God.”* *“Because in them the wrath of God is finished”* New American Standard. According to those who believe in Hell the wrath of God will never be finished. The seven plagues are plagues that take place in time and will be finished in time, not plagues after the Judgment Day that will never be finished. All these passages speak of judgments when people are still alive on the earth, judgments before the coming of Christ and before the final judgment on the last day.

**REVELATION 14:9-11 WORSHIPERS OF THE BEAST:** *“And another, a second angel, followed, saying, fallen, fallen is Babylon the great, that has made all the nations to drink of the wine of the wrath of her fornication. And another angel, a third, followed them, saying with a great voice, If **any man** worshipped the beast and his image, and receives a mark on his forehead, or upon his hand, he also shall drink of the wine of the wrath of God which is prepared unmixed in the cup of his anger; and*

*he shall be tormented with fire and brimstone in the presence of the holy angels, and in the presence of the Lamb; and the smoke of their torment doth go up to ages of ages; and they have no rest day and night, who are bowing before the beast and his image, also if any doth receive the mark of his name."* Footnote in the American Standard Version, "*Gr. unto the ages of the ages.*" This smoke goes up only "*unto the ages of ages.*" It is symbolic of something that is before the judgment, not of something that will be after the judgment. The seven angels were told, "*Go and pour out the seven bowls of the wrath of God upon the earth*" (Revelation 16:1), not in Hell after there will be no earth.

"Any man" is changed to any soul that had been in "any man" for orthodox churches do not believe "any man" will be in Hell; do not believe "any man" is alive after his or her death, do not believe "any man" will worship after their death.

Revelation is a book of figurative language taken from the Old Testament. It was written to people who knew the Old Testament, and would be familiar with its symbolisms, but those persecuting them would not understand it. The symbolism in Revelation can be understood by the way it is used in the Old Testament; rising smoke that Abraham saw the next day after Sodom was completely destroyed is used through out the Bible as a symbol of complete destruction even when there was no literal fire as there was not in the destruction of Edom (Isaiah 34:8-10).

Changes that must be made

- (1). The persons that committed the sins listed in Revelation 21:8 must be changed to souls that are deathless and cannot die a first or second death.
- (2). "*Second death*" must be changed to second life for souls that cannot be dead and, therefore; they still has the first life; the first and second life at the same time!
- (3). Then a place added for those souls to have a second life in.
- (4). Then eternal torment of those souls that has a second life added in the place that was added.

Why can the Bible not believed? The persons that committed the sins listed in Revelation 21:8 will be raised, judged, and the resurrected persons will die the second death.

**WHAT OR WHO IS THE BEAST?** To understand whom the worships of the beast are we need to know what the beast symbolizes. In Daniel, "*beast*" is used to represent a great political empire.

A. M. OGDEN says worshiping Babylon is Emperor worship. "The Avenging of the Apostles and Prophets," page 295.

F. E. WALLACE: "The name Babylon had come to symbolize the ultimate in corruption, and the fallen Babylon of verse 8 is figurative of the spiritual degradation of Jerusalem—"the faithful city turned harlot." "The Book Of Revelation," page 310.

HOMER HAILEY: "Judgment should motivate and bring men to repentance (Acts 17:30f). But, what judgment is in the divine mind here—the final judgment, or an immediate one? In the light of this exhortation to fear God, give Him glory, and worship Him, it is impossible to make 'the hour of his judgment' refer to the final judgment...but rather, it refers to the hour in which God is to judge Babylon." "Revelation, An Introduction and Commentary," page 307, 1979, Baker Book House.

RALPH F. BRASHEARS said it is not describing the endless Judgment, but a temporal retribution, figuratively. "The Revelation of the Christian Age," page 276, 1989, Vantage Press.

Most commentaries say this passage is speaks of a judgment that takes place in time before the coming of Christ, and before the Judgment Day. Whether the beast is pagan Rome or the papal power, it is only a small part of those who are not in Christ. It says nothing about all of the lost in John's time or today, and nothing about any souls going to Hell. It is not the judgment at the coming of Christ for all the lost will be in that judgment. Those who believe in Hell do not believe anyone will worship the beast nor receive the mark of his name after they are in Hell, but these people do worship the beast while they are alive on earth. If the powers of this world are cast alive into Hell and tormented forever, then the evil powers of this world will exist forever, but even those who believe in Hell do not believe evil nations, world powers will exist forever and be tormented in Hell. Like the seven plagues that followed this was poured "*into the earth*" (Revelation 16:1), this judgment was a judgment on this earth before the Judgment Day, not in Hell after the Judgment Day when this earth will have been destroyed. There are four symbolisms in the passage, each one taken from the Old Testament.

(1). **Those that worship the beast shall drink of wine of the wrath of God, which is prepared unmixed in the cup of His anger.** This is an Old Testament expression of destruction. See Jeremiah 25:15-27; Obadiah 16 and 18; Psalm 75:8; Job 21:20; Habakkuk 2:16; Malachi 3:2.

(2). **Those that worship the beast shall be tormented with fire and brimstone in the presence of the holy angels, and in the presence of the Lamb.** See "The Types Of The Judgment" in chapter seven.

(3). **They have no rest day and night.** This is often applied to souls in Hell being tormented forever, but it says nothing about all the lost souls in Hell, but is about people who are worshiping the beast (Emperor worship or pagan Rome) while they are alive on earth. All four symbolisms in this passage are speaking only about those who are worshiping the Emperor and not God, not about endless torment in Hell. This is the third of seven angels with seven plagues upon the earth; after the seventh plague John says, "*For in them is finished the wrath of God.*" Nothing is said about the wrath of God beyond the seven plagues, nothing about wrath that is not on this earth that will never be finished, not a word about endless wrath in Hell.

(4). **The smoke of their torment goes up forever and ever.** Even if Revelation 14:9-11 were literal, it would not be depicting torment, but the aftermath of the destruction that was completed just as the smoke of Sodom that Abraham saw depicted that Sodom had already been total destroyed. The ascending smoke is a sign of the destruction that has already taken place on this earth, a destruction that had been completed; it would be evidence that the fire had done its work of destruction. Revelation 14:9-11 does not say the lost are being tormented forever

and ever, it says the SMOKE of their torment GOES UP unto the end of the age.” Those in Sodom were dead when Abraham saw their smoke ascending. When a city or a person has been turned to smoke, the destruction is past, not forever ongoing. The ascending smoke seen by Abraham after the complete destruction of Sodom became the basis of much of the language of destruction found in the Bible. The smoke is a sign of an utter, complete, and endless destruction that is passed, not of being eternally tormented by God, Genesis 19:24-28; Isaiah 34:9; 66:24; Jeremiah 17:27; Ezekiel 20:45-50; Revelation 14:9-11; 18:9; 18:18. Like the rainbow the smoke is a reminder of a destruction that is already complete.

**SMOKE IN HEAVEN** Revelation 14:9-11: A symbolic picture of a judgment in the time of Emperor worship or pagan Rome, It is a picture of the destruction of these powers on this earth, not of the torment of individuals in Hell after the coming of Christ, after this earth does not exist. **If this passage were literal, who would worship a beast with seven heads? How many have you ever seen with the mark of this seven headed beast on their forehead? That some would make everything about the beast be a symbolic picture unto it comes to the punishment of those with his mark on their forehead, but then change from symbolic to literal shows how desperate they are for anything that may support the doctrine of Hell.** According to this passage, the torment referred to is occurring on this earth for it is while they are worshipping (present tense) the beast, and while there is *"day and night."* **Where is Hell?** If this passage were literal and is made to be literal picture of Hell, then Hell would be on this earth, and those in it would not have died, but the smoke of the torment of those still living on the earth would go from the earth and would fill Heaven with smoke. This passage speaks of a limited number of persons when they are living on the earth, only these persons who worshiped the beast, not all the lost being tormented while they are alive on earth before the resurrection. Young's literal translation of the Bible translates this action in the present tense as "bowing" (i.e. worshipping). These people have no rest while they are still worshipping the beast, no rest while they are still alive and on earth.

- **What is not said is that they are tormented forever.**
- **What is said is that the smoke from the torment (the aftermath of destruction) goes up forever, evidence that God has already destroyed them.**

The same symbolic language that John used is used in Isaiah 34:10 when speaking of the destruction of Edom, *"It shall not be quenched night or day; its smoke shall go up forever."* Edom was totally and forever destroyed, not forever being tormented. Also in Ezekiel 28:1-19 when speaking of judgment on the King of Tyre, it is symbolic language of earthly judgments that is used in both the Old Testament and New Testament taken from the smoke that was seen going up after the judgment and complete desolation of Sodom and Gomorrah.

N. W. ALLPHIN said smoke symbolizes the effects or evidences of fire and the evidences of this destruction will never end. "Visions Unveiled, or The Revelation Explained," page 168, 1985, Star Bible Publications.

LEROY EDWIN FROOM: "Smoke has aptly been said to be the formless relic of an object that has been consumed or decomposed, by the action of fire. It is but a relic, a vestige, an emblem, a lingering trace of the passing, the drifting aftermath that remains from AN OBJECT THAT HAS BEEN DESTROYED. A perpetual smoke may, therefore, well stand for a perpetual reminder before the universe of an irreparable ruin that has taken place, a burning up that has accomplished its allotted purpose, The same inspired portrayed, it is to be ever remembered, declares that God will 'consume,' 'devour,' 'destroy,' cause to 'perish,' and 'blot out' all the wicked. That dread transaction, or operation, involves and constitutes the 'second death.' The perpetuity intended is not, therefore, of the torment, but of the death following thereafter and caused thereby." "The Conditionalist Faith of Our Father: The Conflict of the Ages Over the Nature and Destiny of Man," volume one, page 409.

**BABYLON DESTROYED Revelation 18:** John says there will be a time when Babylon "*shall be found no more at all*" Revelation 19:3 said the smoke of Babylon goes up forever end ever (Greek – "*unto the ages of ages*"). Whose smoke is this? Where is this smoke? Who is made desolate? The answer is Babylon. Where and when shall Babylon "*be utterly burned with fire*"? The fall and desolation of Babylon in Revelation 17 and 18 is the desolation of "*No more at all*" as it is used in the Book of Revelation.

- (1). Babylon "*shall be found no more at all*" Revelation 18:21.
- (2). "*Voice of harpers...heard no more at all*" Revelation 18:22.
- (3). "*Craftsman...found anymore at all*" Revelation 18:22.
- (4). "*The voice of a mill shall be heard no more at all*" Revelation 18:22.
- (5). "*A lamp shall shine no more at all*" Revelation 18:23.
- (6). "*Voice of bridegroom...shall be heard no more at all*" Revelation 18:23.
  - o Being "*found no more at all*" clearly means Babylon will not exist forever in endless torment.
  - o Babylon is fallen (Revelation 18:2).
  - o Burned up with fire. The "*smoke of her burning*" was seen (Revelation 18:8).

The smoke of their torment is a symbol, just as are the wine and the cup. The "*smoke of her burning*" cannot be made literal without making the other symbols in the passage literal, which those that use it to teach endless torment are not willing to do. **This smoke has been changed from Babylon before the judgment, and has been changed to be not the smoke of Babylon but the smoke that is coming from all the unsaved who are being burn in Hell by God after the judgment, even though this judgment scene takes place on this earth before the judgment.** Babylon being "*utterly burned with fire*" (Revelation 18:8) and the people on this earth ("*merchants*") that had did business with her were looking "*upon the smoke of her burning*" (Revelation 18:15-18) before the judgment must be changed to smoke coming from all souls that we are told are immaterial and has no substance, but souls are burning and smoke, which has substance, is coming from

the no substance souls in Hell after the judgment. The judgment and punishment on Babylon in Revelation 18 and 19 is not souls that had been in individual burning in Hell. It is the evidences of this destruction, which is symbolized by smoke that will last *"unto the ages of the ages,"* Babylon – an evil world powers, whether it is a nation or a religious power, will come to an end, not be tormented forever. In Isaiah 34:10 the smoke from Edom will go up forever; the smoke going up is an Old Testament symbol of the destruction of a nation or city that the Jews reading in the time of John would understand.

- The kings of the earth that committed fornication with Babylon will weep over her (Revelation 18:9). Will kings on the earth weep over a nation in Hell?
- Merchants will buy from her no more (Revelation 18:11-17).
- Shipmasters and mariners will cry and cast dust on their heads when they look upon the smoke of Babylon burning (Revelation 18:17-20). Would shipmasters be able to look on Babylon if Babylon were in Hell?

ADAM CLARKE: "Her smoke rose up. There was, and shall be, a continual evidence of God's judgments executed on this great whore or idolatrous city; nor shall it ever be restored."

HOMER HAILEY: "A constant reminder of the punishment for sin...Edom is not burning today, and Heaven is not literally full of smoke. It is the everlasting remembrance of God's victor over evil that is symbolized by the smoke." A Commentary On Isaiah," page 290, 1985, Baker Book House.

The *"everlasting smoke"* is that Babylon will be forever remembered with disgrace and contempt.

Some say, "O. K., if we must put the smoke of Hell in Heaven forever to have our Hell, then we will take this symbol out of context, make it literal, and fill Heaven with the odor from the burning souls that had been in most of most of mankind before they died."

Smoke in Heaven in chapter 14 is a vision of the fall of beast (Emperor worship or pagan Rome) and her worshipers. In chapter 18 the kings of the earth weep and lament over Babylon (probably symbolisms for Rome that would not be understood by those persecuting them, and would have caused more persecution if they had understood) when they see the smoke of her burning. *"Babylon, the strong city! For in one hour your judgment has come"* (Revelation 18:10). And in verse 21, ***"Thus will Babylon, the great city, be thrown down with violence, and will not be found any longer."*** Then in 19:3 *"And a second time they said, 'Hallelujah!' her smoke (not the smoke of burning souls in Hell) rises up forever and ever"* ("Unto the ages of the ages" eiv touv aiwnav twv aiwnwn). It is clear that this is a vision of a judgment that takes place in time, a judgment on Babylon; it is not the judgment at the coming of Christ.

The same apocalyptic language is used in Isaiah of the judgment of Edom. ***"It shall not be quenched night or day; its smoke shall go up forever"*** (Isaiah 34:10). After God's judgment on Edom it became a place for wild creatures (Isaiah 35:11-15). *"Day and night"* means there is no let up of God's judgment until the

judgment is complete. The outcome of the unquenchable fire that burned "day and night" was permanent destruction, not a literal burning forever. "From generation to generation it shall be desolate" (Isaiah 34:10) not "from generation to generation it shall be burning." A person suffering from cancer will suffer "day and night" until the end. "Day and night" does not mean "forever." Examples where "day and night" were temporary, and means continued day and night as long as they existed, but have ended (Isaiah 34:10; Acts 9:24; 1 Thessalonians 2:9; 3:10). **Both Babylon and Edom were nations on this earth that were being judged and have been destroyed** (a judgment and destruction where fire is used symbolical when neither Edom or Babylon were literally burn up but both were destroyed), **not persons that are being tormented, nations will not be tormented in Hell. Yet, when this passage is made literal it proves something that even those using it do not believe.** They must change it from nations that were judged and destroyed before the resurrection and judgment to souls being tormented after the resurrection and judgment, and then say they do not believe in changing the Bible.

Those who believe in Hell use 2 Thessalonians 1:9 to prove Hell is away "from the presents of God," and that death is being alive but separation from God. Yet they make Revelation 14:10-11 be literal to prove Hell. In doing so, they make Hell be in Heaven "in the presence of the holy angels and in the presence of the Lamb."

HOMER HAILEY: "Angels who through the ages had watched the unfolding and revealing of God's eternal purpose and the conflict between good and evil, now see the consummation of the purpose and final consequence of evil," Revelation: An Introduction and Commentary, page 310.

Even those who believe in Hell do not believe that any will be tormented in Heaven forever, but when they make this torment be literal torment, they make it literally be in Heaven in the presence of the angels and Christ, not in Hell. **Where do they think Hell is? Away "from the presence of God"—or—"in the presence of God."** The same people say both are speaking of Hell.

**THE LAKE OF FIRE: The "lake of fire" in which the Devil is cast is used five times, all five in the Book of Revelation.**

**(1) LAKE OF FIRE: First time it is used—Revelation 19:20: The beast and the false prophet, two world powers are cast into the lake of fire,** both are cast into the lake of fire before the Judgment Day. The beast, which is the great heathen world power of that day, the Roman Empire, and the false prophet, "These two were thrown alive into the lake of fire." Those that worshiped the beast were not thrown alive into the lake of fire, but they were killed with the sword, which came from the mouth of him who sat upon the horse, "And all the birds were filled with their flesh." How could birds eat the flesh of souls when Vine tells us that souls are, "immaterial, invisible" page 588? The fire was no more literal fire than the beast is a literal beast, and the birds are literal birds that eat the literal flesh of literal people. It is a symbolic picture of total destruction, the end of the beast and the false prophet (world

powers). Those who make this literal have a literal beast being burnt in a literal lake of fire. **Only the beast and false prophet were cast into the lake of fire; the rest, those people who worshiped the world powers, the ones that those that believe in Hell are trying to put in Hell, were killed and eaten by birds on this earth, they were not cast into the lake of fire, not tormented by God in Hell.** When this is made into a literal endless torment to prove there is a Hell, it is not even close to the Hell that is taught today, not even close to the Hell that it is being used to prove. When something is not taught in the Bible, no passage that is misused to prove it will prove it. They want to make only the lake be literal, but all other things in the same passage, the beast, the sword, the birds, etc., must be symbolism for if they were literal the sword that kills and the birds that eat those that have been killed would not fit with today's Hell. Why do they use this passage to try to prove Hell when it is nothing like they say Hell will be? It puts a beast alive in Hell and leaves the people that they say will live forever in Hell not in the lake of fire (not in Hell), but they are dead and are eaten by birds, not souls that are alive and tormented in Hell. **The "Hell" that is preached today does not have a beast that is alive in it, and it definitely does not have dead people that are not in Hell being eaten by birds.**

The lake of fire is used only in the Book of Revelation and is a symbolic picture taken from this earth. Literal fire will not exist after the end of this age (1 Peter 3). Anything cast into a literal lake of fire would be totally destroyed, totally incinerated, not alive and be tormented forever. It is a symbol of total destruction, not of endless torment, not something that will exist after the destruction of the earth. To have Hell in this passage, both symbols and literal must be mixed together in the same passage, and only those that do the mixing can tell us what part is literal, and even then anything that is close to the Hell that is preached today cannot be found in it.

HOMER HAILEY: "The beast is the great heathen world power of that day, the Roman Empire," page 387. Then on page 388 he says, "These 'two were cast alive into the lake of fire that burns with brimstone,' where the harlot had already met her fate, being 'utterly burns with fire'...Because of the expression, 'cast alive,' some writers have concluded that these two are literally individuals who will appear in person before the end of time. But this does not necessarily follow; for 'being cast alive into the lake' indicates that up to the actual time when they were cast into the lake of brimstone and **were brought to final destruction** by His mighty power and judgment, these two personified forces of political and spiritual power were actively fighting against the Lamb. The Roman Empire and emperor worship backed by the imperial power were now **brought to a final and complete end**, never to rise again" On the same page he says, "The Roman power and the paganism which it supported **are now destroyed forever. The vision of Daniel is fulfilled** (Daniel 7:11), **and in this defeat and destruction is revealed the destiny of all such powers that should ever arise to fight against God and his kingdom.** This is God's guarantee to victory to the saints who lived then and to all who would come after them, even until the end of time. 'And all the birds were filled with their flesh' completes the symbolism of verses 17—18. Not a vestige of the anti-Christian forces were left; **the destruction was complete.**" And on page 398, "The devil, man's great deceiver from the beginning, now reaches his final doom and eternal end. First, he

was cast down to the earth (12:9), then into the pit of the abyss (20:3), and now into the lake of fire and brimstone, his ultimate end." When Hailey gets to Revelation 20:11 he said, **"Thus far in the book several scenes of judgment have been described, but none depicted the final judgment."** "Revelation, An Introduction And Commentary," page 399, chapter 19, Baker Book House.

FOY E. WALLACE, JR. said the lake of fire is a figurative description of complete destruction and annihilation of all persecuting powers opposed to the church (page 434), and then of the complete destruction and annihilation of Satan, and all who are not in the book of life. "The ones who had part in it (the lake of fire) came to the same end as the persecuting beast—a figurative description of complete destruction and annihilation of all persecuting powers opposed to the church whose opposition was crushed." Wallace said, **"One of these passages cannot be considered more or less literal than the other—both were figurative expressions which signified the utter end of the persecuting authorities of heathenism against Christianity.** The phrase cast alive into a lake of fire was equivalent to burn alive, **and it symbolized complete destruction.** The signal triumph of the cause of truth represented by the burning alive of the beast and the false prophet did not symbolize the destruction to the Roman Empire, but of the persecutions waged by the emperors, which the beasts represented. **The lake of fire was not literal any more than the beast was literal. Neither was subject to literal application, both were figurative. The beast symbolized the persecuting power of the Roman Emperor: and casting him into a lake of fire signified the complete defeat of the heathen power he represented in the war against the church."** The Book Of Revelation, page 397.

HOMER HAILEY: Of the final judgment in Revelation 20:14-15, Hailey says, "'He that overcomes shall not be hurt of the second death' (2:11); those that overcome had part in the first resurrection (20:6). Thus far the harlot, the beast, the false prophet, Satan, and now death and Hades, **have been brought to their end in the lake of fire...**There remains only one group to be dealt with: those not found written in the book of life...Of this second death, Alford writes, 'As there is a second higher life, so there is also a second and deeper death. And as after that life there is no more death, so after that death there is no more life.'" The Book Of Revelation, page 403.

A. M. OGDEN said the lake of fire in Revelation 19:20 is symbolic of God's fire of destruction coming upon the Roman Empire and its pagan religions that were the persecutor of the church, page 354.

B. W. JOHNSON on Revelation 19:20: "Here the false prophet, both symbols of the same power, is cast in the lake of fire. **The symbol indicates utter destruction. What is cast into this lake is seen no more.**"

FRANK WALTON said it is not a literal lake of fire. It symbolizes the total defeat of heathen powers that war against the church. Florida College Lectures 1994, page 176.

JIM McGUIGGAN in his commentary on Revelation 19:20 said he believes the lake of fire stands for the utter defeat of the enemy.

ALBERT BARNES: "The whole scene is symbolical...meaning that the destruction of these powers would be as complete as if they were thrown into such a burning lake" page 1707, Albert Barnes' Notes On The New Testament.

These commentaries are some of the best, if not the best, and they all say the lake of fire is symbolic of total destruction, symbolic of death, not of endless life in torment. If Revelation 21 is a symbolic picture of the church on earth as the bride of Christ, or if it is a symbolic picture of the church in Heaven, in either case the lake of fire is symbolic, and not a real place. John clearly says in Revelation 21:8 that it is

symbolic of the second death. Many who believe that immaterial souls will literally burn in Hell are forced to admit that in Revelation 19:20 the lake of fire is symbolic, but insist the same lake of fire in chapters 20 and 21 is a real literal lake of fire.

**"False prophet" in Hell before the judgment:** In "Hell On Trial" on page 169, Robert Peterson said the *"false prophet"* (Revelation 19:20) are thrown alive into it, and are still there a thousand years later. Then he says Revelation 20:14 speaks of all human standing before God at the Last Judgment. By making symbols literal, he changed nations (false prophets) into people and puts humans, not souls, into Hell before they are judged at the Judgment Day.

**"Devoured" not "tormented"** Even if this symbolical language were made literal, it would teach God would destroy His enemies, not torment them. *"And fire came down out of heaven, and devoured them"* Revelation 20:9, those that were devoured were on the earth. As in many other passages that are used to prove torment in Hell, nothing is said about Hell or torment; the Bible language does not suit today's teaching of fire that eternally burns but never devours, fire that never consumes. At the most this passage cannot prove an eternal existence of any thing but Satan, the Beast, and the False Prophet, it says nothing about persons or souls being tormented neither before the Judgment nor after the Judgment.

Some commentaries say the false prophet is the Roman Church of the Dark Age; if they were right it would not be possible to find a false prophet that is more false.

**(2) LAKE OF FIRE: Second time it is used is in Revelation 20:10. The devil is cast in with the beast and the false prophet.** Nothing of the physical realm could live in a lake of fire. It is a symbolic picture of destruction, not of torment. Just as any living thing of the earthly realm we know, if it were cast into a lake of fire it would be totally destroyed, a symbolic picture of the devil being cast into it would be a picture to us of his total destruction, a picture that we could not understand to be anything but total destruction, for if the devil were a flesh and blood being, he would be totally destroyed by a literal lake of fire: any living thing that is cast into fire is destroyed. The devil, the beast, false prophet, death, the grave, and all that are not in the book of life will be totally destroyed. After the resurrection and judgment, no one will be of the physical realm and could not be tormented by a literal lake of fire that is of this physical realm. A literal lake of fire could not torment a spiritual being, and could have no effective on Satan, or an immaterial "soul" as the word is used today. The devil that is a being not of the earthly realm, a being of the spiritual realm, is cast into the lake of fire along with two earthly things, the beast, and the false prophet. It is a symbolic picture of their destruction, not a literal casting of beings of two realms, both earthly beings and spiritual beings, into a literal lake of fire, which is of this earthly realm. Things of the earthly and spiritual realms can be mixed in symbolic pictures, but not in reality. If the lake of fire were of the earthly realm Satan could not literally be cast into it, and if it were of the spiritual realm, the beast and the false

prophet could not be cast into it. In Revelation 20:15 and 21:8, John interpreted the figure or symbol he used, and said the symbolic picture of the lake of fire is in reality the second death. **The lake of fire will have the same effect on Satan that it will have on death. "And death shall be no more"** (Revelation 21:4). If it is the end of death, then it is the end of Satan. It is a symbolic picture of the end of both.

**Satan's ministers:** The ministers of Satan, like Satan, shall have an end. **"Whose end shall be according to their works"** (2 Corinthians 11:15).

Revelation 20:10 is a symbolic picture of the end of Satan, of his being abolished (destroyed), not tormented forever. Hebrews 2:14 is a literal statement of his end. **"That through death he might bring to naught (nothing) him that has the power of death, that is, the devil"** (American Standard Version). God made the world and all that is in it out of nothing. It will go back to nothing. Satan also will be brought to nothing. **"So that through death he might destroy the one who has the power of death, that is, the devil"** (New Revised Standard Version). In Hebrews 2:14 "naught" (nothing) is translated from "katargeo," which is translated **abolished, vanish away, bring to naught, do away with, destroy, be done way, and ceased.**

- **"That through death he might bring to naught (katargeo) him that had the power of death, that is, the devil"** (Hebrews 2:14). **"That through death he might destroy (katargeo) him"** King James Version.
  - Death **"shall be abolished (katargeo)"** (1 Corinthians 15:26).
  - Knowledge **"shall vanish away (katargeo)"** (1 Corinthians 13:8).
  - **"God shall bring to naught (katargeo) both it (their belly) and them"** (1 Corinthians 6:13).
- "The last enemy that shall be abolished (katargeo) is death." "Destroyed" (katargeo) King James Version (1 Corinthians 15:26).**
- **"The stumbling—block of the cross been done away (katargeo) "ceased" (katargeo) King James Version (Galatians 5:11).**
  - **"It (the veil) is done away (katargeo) in Christ"** (2 Corinthians 3:14).
  - **"Having abolished (katargeo) in his flesh the enmity, even the law of commandments"** (Ephesians 2:15).

The same word (katargeo) is used for:

- The end of death
- The end of knowledge
- The end of the belly, and the end of the person to whom the belly belonged
- The end of Satan
- The end of Law of Moses
- And the end of lost

Whatever happens to one happens to the others; they all have been or will be brought to nothing (katargeo).

**A death bruise to the head of Satan:** The serpent of Genesis 3 is not said to be Satan, but most all believe it to be Satan working through the serpent, which was **"more crafty than any beast of the field"** (Genesis 3:1). Did a serpent or any other animal have the power to speak, or was it Satan speaking through a serpent? God did speak through an animal (2 Peter 2:1). It looks as if Satan did. See 2 Corinthians

11:3. Christ said the devil, *"Is a liar, and the father of lies"* (John 8:44). With the first lie, the devil brought death into the world, and Satan became the murderer of Adam and Eve; therefore, the murderer of all their seed (John 8:44). He sinned *"from the beginning"* (1 John 3:8). *"He (Christ) shall bruise you (Satan) on the head, and you (Satan) shall bruise him (Christ) on the heel."* See Romans 16:20. A wound to the heel is not fatal. Satan wounded Christ by sin and death, which he is responsible for being in the world. It made the death of Christ necessary, but Christ rose from the dead and in doing so bruised the head of Satan (Hebrews 2:1).

JAMIESON, FAUSSET, AND BROWN: "Thus, fatal shall be the stroke which Satan shall receive from Christ," Commentary on Genesis 3:15.

J. B. COFFMAN: "The terminology of this verse is such that it cannot apply to anything in heaven or upon earth except the long spiritual conflict between Christ and Satan," Commentary on Genesis 3:15.

ALBERT BARNES on John 8:44: "He was a murderer from the beginning. That is from the beginning of the world, or the first records there are of him. This refers to the seduction of Adam and Eve. Death was denounced against sin Genesis ii.17. The devil deceived our first parents and they became subject of death, Genesis iii. As he was the cause why death came into the world, he may be said to have been a murderer in that act, or from the beginning."

Revelation 20:7, which most likely symbolic language, and is not intended to be taken literally says, *"And the great dragon was thrown down, the serpent of old who is called the devil and Satan, who deceives the whole world; he was thrown down to the earth, and his angels were thrown down with him."* Also see Revelation 12:9.

It is difficult to know what John meant by much of the symbolic language he used in Revelation, but even more difficult to understand if it is made to be a literal non—symbolic book, yet many use a symbolic passage as the base of their faith and make the symbolic override many clear passages.

**(3) LAKE OF FIRE: The third time it is used is in Revelation 20:14 where death and hades are cast into the lake of fire; "And there shall no longer be any death" (Revelation 21:4).** If death and hades come to an end in the lake of fire, all who are not found written in the book of life must also be come to an end. **If all who are not found written in the book of life are not annihilated, death is not abolished** (1 Corinthians 15:26). **The same thing happens to all three** (death, hades, and those that do not have their name in the book of life). **They come to an end.** *"And there shall no longer be any death"* (Revelation 21:4), death will come to an end in the lake of fire.

Death and hades are nonliving things. They have no life, thoughts, or feelings. They can be destroyed, and can be brought to a final and complete end, but it would not be possible to torment them. They can no more be tormented than a rock, but both will come to an end; both death and hades will be made not to exist. A literal lake of fire could not torment death; what would be the point of casting something abstract (death and hades), something that has no life into the lake of fire if it were a

place of torment where there is no death? Death cast into a lake of fire, which many tell us is Hell where there is no death! Death will be “destroyed” and “shall be no more” (1 Corinthians 15:26, Revelation 21:4), death will not exist after it is cast into the lake of fire: death will come to an end. There is no way the lake of fire in this passage could be anything even remotely like the Hell that is taught today.

**Hell cast into Hell** (Revelation 20:14 King James Version). I have often heard in sermons that souls that had left the lost persons they were in will forever be tormented in the lake of fire. Most who believe in Hell teach the lake of fire is Hell, but in the King James Version Hell is cast into the lake of fire, if, as in the King James Version, one place is cast into another place, both cannot be the same place, but both Catholics and Protestants believe both are the same place. Both believe the lake of fire is Hell, and both use the lake of fire to prove there is a Hell with endless fire. Hell being cast into Hell presents an absurd problem for both the Catholic and Protestant versions of Hell. Casting Hell into Hell is another blunder made by the King James Translators trying to put Hell into the Bible; most other translations have corrected this blunder, there is nothing about “Hell” in this passage, and Hell is not in the American Standard Version or most others.

DR. C. CAMPBELL on Revelation 20:14 said, "If we interpret Hades, 'hell,' in the Christian sense of the word, the whole passage is rendered nonsense. Hell is represented as being cast into hell...**the phrase 'cast into the lake of fire' is a figure of utter destruction. It is simply saying 'death and hell was destroyed.'**"

**Death is also cast into the lake of fire.** (Revelation 20:14) Will the lake of fire be the end of death, but not the end of Hell? Or will death be forever tormented in the lake of fire, which many say is Hell? Death cannot be tormented; this is a symbolic picture of the end of all three, death, hades, and the wicked; there is nothing about Hell in this with when it is not mistranslated. **The lake of fire will abolish death, not torment people.**

**"And Hell delivered up the dead"** Revelation 20:13, **the King James Version has Hell being emptied before the judgment**, but, most who believe in Hell do not believe that any in Hell will ever get out, *"And death and hell delivered up the dead which were in them"* Revelation 20:13 King James Version. Many believe that no one will be in Hell unto after the Judgment Day to be *"delivered up,"* but they use this passage to prove the lost will go to Hell after the Judgment, even though this passage says Hell will be emptied and cast into the lake of fire before the Judgment. **In the King James Version the judgment is after Hell has been emptied. Not only is Hell emptied before the judgment, but also (according to the King James Version) some that were in it before it was emptied will even be found written in the book of life, and some taken out of Hell are never put back into it, but are put in Heaven.**

1. According to the King James Version, the judgment will not take place unto after all that are in Hell have been taken out of Hell.

2. **Then most of those that were taken out of Hell will be put into the lake of fire “which is the second death,” but some that were in Hell will be in the book of life.**
  - *“And the sea gave up the dead which were in it; and death and **Hell deliver up the dead which were in them; and they were judged** every man according to their works” (Revelation 20:13).*

According to the King James Version:

1. *“Hell delivered up the dead” (Revelation 20:13).*
2. Then both *“Death and hell were cast into the lake of fire” (Revelation 20:14).*
  - But according to much of today’s preaching, Hell will never give up those in it, and the lake of fire is Hell!
    1. In the King James Version first Hell is emptied.
    2. Then Hell cast into the lake of fire and is burned up!
      - Is there anyone that believes the King James Version?

In trying to put a place of endless torment in the Bible by mistranslating, the translators made the Bible teach something that they did not believe, and most today that believe in Hell do not believe. Most other translations, including the New King James Version, have corrected this blunder, but unfortunately this has done little or nothing to correct any of the many Protestant versions of Hell.

**(4 and 5) LAKE OF FIRE: Forth and fifth times it is used. Any not in the book of life will be thrown into the lake of fire (Revelation 20:15). Lake of fire is the second death (Revelation 21:8).** *“Be faithful unto death, and I will give you the crown of life...He that overcomes shall not be hurt of the second death” (Revelation 2:10-11).* *“He that overcomes shall inherit these thing; and I will be his God, and he shall be my son. But for the fearful, and unbelieving, and abominable, and murderers, and fornicators, and sorcerers, and idolaters, and all liars, their part shall be in the lake that burns with fire and brimstone; **which is the second death**” (Revelation 21:7-8).* **Nothing can live in a lake of fire, any life would immediately and completely be destroyed making it a perfect symbol for death;** fire is one of the most destructive elements that is known to science, it is a perfect symbol for death, but would be a terribly false symbol for any kind of life; **there is no life that is not completely and quickly destroyed by fire;** the lake of fire is one of the few symbols that is interpreted for us so that we can have no excuse for not understanding it; the lake of fire *“is the second death,”* not endless life.

1. It is life or death, not life or life.
2. Death is the opposite of life. Eternal death is the opposite of eternal life.
3. Death is not two kinds of life, a better kind of life, or a worse kind of life. If death is really life with a lost of well-being, try substituting “life” for “death,” “He that over comes shall not be hurt of the second life” (Revelation 2:11).

When the second death is used, it is a contrast to life, death is the opposite of life, death is not another kind of life; death is not endless life being tormented by God.

1. *“Faithful unto death...crown of life” (Revelation 2:10—11).*
2. *“He that has part in the first resurrection; on such the second death has no power” (Revelation 20:6).*

3. "And if any was not found written in the book of life, he was cast into the lake of fire" (Revelation 20:15).
4. Water of life given free to all believers, second death is for all sinners (Revelation 21:6-8).
5. In Revelation 21:1-8 there is a contrast between life and death. In verses 1—7 it is life with no more death. In verse 8 it is the second death with no more life.
6. In Revelation 22:3 "Nothing accursed will be found there any more." The footnote in the American Standard Version says, "No more anything accursed." Those that are the cursed are not alive somewhere else, the accursed will ceased to be, they will not be found any more, they have no access to the tree of life.

### WHAT IS CAST INTO THE LAKE OF FIRE?

(1) **The beast and the false prophet**, which are symbols of two world powers, two nonliving things, no one believes a literal beast will be cast into the lake of fire (Revelation 19:20). "*Where the beast and the false prophet **are**,*" in the King James Version "*are*" is in italics which means it was supplied by the translators, it is not in the Greek. William Tyndale translated this "*where the beast and false prophet **were**.*"

- "These two **were** thrown" Revised Standard Version.
- "The two of them **were** thrown" The Revised English Bible.
- "The Evil Creature and his False Prophet—**were** thrown" The Living Bible.
- "These two **were** thrown" The Christian Bible.
- "The two of them **were** thrown" New International Version.
- "These two **were** thrown" The New Revised Standard Version.
- "The two **were** thrown" McCord's New Testament, Freed—Hardeman College.
- "Both of whom **were** cast" The Living Oracles, Alexander Campbell.
- "These two **were** thrown" The New Testament In Modern English, J. B. Phillips.

Anything that **was** alive when it was cast into a lake of fire would die immediately. "Are" is not in the Greek. The beast and the false prophet were nations that "**were**" destroyed, not nations that "**are**" now being tormented but will never be destroyed; they "**were**" destroyed by the lake of fire just as anything cast into fire is destroyed; is there anyone that believes nations will be kept alive and endlessly tormented by God in a literal lake of fire? Fire destroys things that are put into it, whatever torment there may be of a living thing is very short, not endless; to make this fire be the fire of Hell the nature of fire has to be changed to something that is nothing like fire; changed from a fire that destroys life must be changed into something that preserves the life of any living thing that is in it.

Those that teach endless torment of souls by God believe this passage is one of their few strongholds; for it to teach torment depends on what you add to it, on wherever you add an "are" to it; if you do then you have God keeping these two world powers alive and tormenting them even after the world has been destroyed. This passage says nothing about souls, but it is used to prove a soul is being kept alive and endlessly tormented in fire that that has been changed into something that is not fire. Nations being cast into a lake of fire is a symbol picture of them being destroyed, coming to an end. Nations or world powers are not literally cast into a literal lake of fire.

(2) **The devil** was cast into the lake of fire where the beast and the false prophet “were,” cast, not where they now “are” (Revelation 20:10).

(3) **Death and hades**, two nonliving things “were cast into the lake of fire” (Revelation 20:14) where the beast and the false prophet “were” cast.

(4) **And all who are not in the book of life** (Revelation 20:15).

- **Nonliving things** that can come to an end in the lake of fire were cast into it; nonliving things cannot be tormented. (1) The beast (symbol of a world power) (2) The false prophet (3) Death (4) Hades (the grave).
- **Two living** that will come to an end in the lake of fire (1) The devil (2) Any not in the book of life; for them the wages of sin is death, not the death of the body that comes to all, but the second death after the judgment.

**IT IS THE BOOK OF LIFE, NOT A BOOK OF REWARDS:** The book of life is not a book or rewards for an immaterial soul that had been in a person; a soul that already have life and cannot die, a soul that has life and can never not have life, a soul that cannot be dead. **The second death** is not just a loss of well being, not a loss of privilege or pleasure, not a loss of a reward; the second death is death, not life with torment; death is the reverse of life, death is not life. Without having your name in the book of life there will be no hope of life for you without end in Heaven or any place.

#### **The book of life in the New Testament:**

1. Philippians 4:3: *“And the rest of my fellow workers, whose names are in the book of life.”*
2. Revelation 3:5: He that overcomes will not have his name blotted out of the book of life.
3. Revelation 13:8: The beast given authority over all that dwell on the earth, all that worships the beast that do not have their name in the book of life.
4. Revelation 17:8: The beast will go into destruction, and all that dwell on the earth whose name has not been written in the book of life shall wonder.
5. Revelation 20:12 and 20:15: There is to be a judgment with all the dead standing before the throne of God, the great, and the small. At this judgment any not found written in the book of life is cast into the lake of fire, which is the second death. **It is either one or the other, (1) either your name is in the book of life, (2) or it is not, if not then it will be the second death. It is life or death for a person, not just a reward, or a punishment for a soul that cannot be dead.** *“I will give unto him that is athirst of the fountain of the water of life freely. He that overcomes shall inherit these things; and I will be his God, and he shall be My son. But for the fearful, and unbelieving, and abominable, and murderers, and fornicators, and sorcerers, and idolaters, and all liars, their part shall be in the lake that burns with fire and brimstone; which is the **second death**”* (Revelation 21:6-8). **Life or death, not life in Heaven or life in Hell, not a reward to a soul that has life, not endless life with punishment to a soul that already has endless life.**
6. Revelation 21:27: Nothing unclean, only those that are written in the Lamb’s book of life shall enter in the holy city.
7. Luke 10:20: Jesus told His disciples, *“Rejoice that your **names are recorded in heaven.**”*
8. Hebrews 12:23: *“You have come...to the general assembly and church of the first-born who are **enrolled in heaven.**”*

9. Revelation 22:19: Any that adds to or takes from the words of the book of this prophecy, God shall take away his part from the *“tree of life, and out of the holy city, which are written in this book.”*

**If your name is not in the book of life, there will be no life without end, only death without end.**

**THE THOUSAND YEARS AND THE LAKE OF FIRE:** In the New Testament many symbols are used, and many of them we are told just what they are symbols of. We are given the interpretation in clear plain language. When we are told exactly what the interpretation is in plain language, we must not change the interpretation of the symbol. The Premillennialists make a symbol (the thousand years) into a literal time. The Bible's interpretation of the thousand-year reign cannot be accepted by them for if it were it would end the Premillennial doctrine. In the same way those who teach the lake of fire is Hell cannot accept the Bible's interpretation of what the lake of fire is, the second death, for to them the lake of fire is an endless life of torment in fire; therefore, the second death cannot be death. **The Bible's own interpretation of what the lake of fire is not accepted, for if it were there could be no Hell.**

**THE SYMBOLS ---- THE BIBLE'S INTERPRETATION**

- (1) THE FIELD ----- *“IS THE WORLD”*  
Not a farm, Matthew 13:38
- (2) THE GOOD SEED ---- *“ARE THE SONS OF THE KINGDOM”*  
Not a garden, Matthew 13:38
- (3) THE TARES ----- *“ARE THE SONS OF THE EVIL ONE”*  
Not weeds, Matthew 13:38
- (4) BOWLS OF INCENSE - *“ARE PRAYERS OF THE SAINTS”*  
Not cereal, Revelation 5:8
- (5) THE SEVEN HEADS - *“ARE SEVEN MOUNTAINS”* Rev. 12:9
- (6) THE TEN HORNS ---- *“ARE TEN KINGS”*  
Not ten trumpets, Revelation 17:12
- (7) THE WATERS ----- *“ARE PEOPLES, AND MULTITUDES, AND NATIONS”*  
Not seas, Revelation 17:15
- (8) SEVEN CANDLESTICKS *“ARE SEVEN CHURCHES”* Rev. 1:20
- (9) THE WOMAN ----- *“IS THE GREAT CITY”*  
Not a female, Revelation 17:18
- (10) FINE LINEN ----- *“IS RIGHTEOUS ACTS OF THE SAINTS”*  
Not a tablecloth, Revelation 19:8
- (11) THE DRAGON ----- *“IS THE DEVIL AND SATAN”* Rev. 20:2
- (12) **THOUSAND YEAR REIGN - “IS THE FIRST RESURRECTION”**  
Thousand is plural in the Greek, thousands of Years. Not a kingdom on earth after the second coming of Christ, not a millennial kingdom after first resurrection, Revelation 20:6
- (13) **LAKE OF FIRE ---- “IS THE SECOND DEATH”**  
Not a deathless place of torment  
Revelation 20:14; 21:8

The lake of fire, used metaphorically, it is literally the second death, death is death, not a second life, to be dead is to have no life; death cannot be changed and made to mean life, death is not an endless life being tormented by God. There is nothing about any life after the second death; death is an endless punishment.

All die once, sinners will die twice; (1) they die, are resurrected, and judged, (2) then they die again, a second death, never to be resurrected a second time. **Not the**

**reverse—second death is not the lake of fire;** the second death is not eternal life in the lake of fire as is taught by many (Revelation 21:8).

The interpretation is **only** what it is stated to be. The thousand years is the first resurrection. The thousand years and the lake of fire are two of the most misused symbols in this book. It is as if God knew they would be misused, and He plainly said what they are symbols of so there could be no excuses to misuse them. ***“The lake that burns with fire and brimstone; which is (ho estin – “that is”) the second death.”*** The interpretation given by theology reverses the order and makes the second death be the lake of fire and says there is no death in the lake of fire. John interpretation of the *“lake of fire”* is that the *“lake of fire”* is *“the second death,”* but theology must reinterpret John’s interpretation to make death be something other than death; John’s interpretation of *“death”* must be interpreted to be endless life just with a lost of well-being.

- John said, *“The lake of fire is the second death.”*
- Traditionalists say, “No John you are wrong, the lake of fire is not a death, the second death is eternal life with a lost of well-being.”

The Bible speaks of two deaths, the first and the second, if the first death is death, but the second death is endless life being tormented by God, then it is not death; the second death is a real death, just as real as is the first death; both the first and second death is the end of life, neither death is endless life in another form or place; nothing is said about the lost after the second death, there will be nothing to say anything about.

- *“Lake of fire, **which is** (ho estin—that is) the second death”* (Revelation 21:8). The symbolical lake of fire interpreted “that is” (ho estin) to literally be the second death.
- *“And looking up to heaven, he sighed, and said unto him, Ephphatha, **that is** (ho estin) Be opened”* (Mark 7:34).
- *“It was the Preparation, **that is** (ho estin) the day before the Sabbath”* (Mark 15:42).
- *“For his body’s sake, **which is** (ho estin—that is) the church”* (Colossians 1:24).
- *“A place called Golgotha, **that is** (ho estin) to say, the place of a skull”* (Matthew 27:33).

The words after ho estin clarifies the words before it. Who would know what Ephphatha means if it had not been clarified by saying it means, *“Be opened”*?

Those in Christ are now *“kings and priests”* (Revelation 1:6). Are a *“kingdom and priests; and **they reign upon the earth**”* (Revelation 5:9-10). Those who are baptized into Christ have been raised with Him; they were dead and now have the life He gives and they live with Him. This is the first resurrection, and those who have a part in it will not be subject to the second death after the judgment. All others are dead in that they do not have the life Christ gives, and after the resurrection and judgment they will die the second death. The thousands of years (plural in the Greek, thousands plural—not thousand singular) is symbolic of an indefinite time in which the saints will reign with Christ; the saved reigning with Christ begins after the resurrection of Christ and it will last *“thousands”* of years unto His second coming.

The translators changing “thousands” to “thousand” has resulted in much false doctrines and divisions.

Strong lists ten Greek words that are translated **thousand(s)** in the New Testament. Only two of them are used in Revelations.

- Strong's word 5505, "chalias" is used 22 times in the New Testament in the singular. Luke 14:31 used two times; Acts 4:4; 1 Corinthians 10:8; Revelations 5:11; 7:4; 7:5 three times; 7:6 three times; 7:7 three times; 7:8 three times; 11:13; 14:1; 14:3; 21:16. In all of the 22 times it is used **the precisely number of thousands is stated**—ten thousand (Luke 14:31), five thousand (Acts 4:4), “*thousand*” is in the singular. See Wigram Englishman’s Greek Concordance of the New Testament, page 800.
- Strong's word 5507, "chiloi" which Strong says is "**plural**" and "**uncertain**" is used eleven times in the New Testament. Thousands (**an indefinite plural**) of years is a long indefinite period of time having no certain or fixed limit. "Chiloi" is used in; 2 Peter 3:8 two times, and in Revelations 11:3; 12:6; 14:20; 20:2; 20:3; 20:4; **20:5**; 20:6; 20:7. See Wigram Englishman’s Greek Concordance of the New Testament, page 801.
- Who knows why the translators changed an indefinite plural (thousands of years—a long indefinite period of time) into the singular (a thousand years—a definite period of time) as it is in most translations, the Greek is plural; (thousands of years, not singular—a thousand years) there is no way that they know the Greek well enough to translate the Bible and not know when a word is singular and when it is plural.
  - *“That with the Lord one day is as thousands (chiloi–plural) of years, and thousands (chiloi–plural) of years as one day”* (2 Peter 3:8).
  - *“They lived and reigned with Christ thousands (chiloi–plural) of years”* (Revelation 20:4).
  - *“The rest of the dead did not come to life unto the thousands (chiloi–plural) of years were completed”* (Revelation 20:5).
  - *“They will be priests of God and of Christ and will reign with Him for thousands (chiloi–plural) of years”* (Revelation 20:6). It has now been about two thousand years that the saved has reigned with Christ and who knows how many more thousands of years it may be unto Christ comes; Christ is now reigning and will reign for thousands (plural) of years.

More on the use of the singular and plural of thousand can be found under “Articles” by Ken Fortier at: <http://www.kenfortier.com/> “A Preliminary Study of the Greek Word Thousand and Thousands.”

In all four times the **second death** is used, death is from "thanatos," which is used 118 times in the New Testament. In all 118 deaths is really death, not endless life with torment, not alive but separated from God, not alive with only a loss of well being.

- *“You do proclaim the Lord's death (thanatos) till He comes”* (1 Corinthians 11:26).
- *“He was sick nigh unto death (thanatos)”* (Philippians 2:27).
- *“Brother shall deliver up the brother to death (thanatos)”* Matthew 10:21).
- *“Shall not taste of death (thanatos)”* (Mark 9:1).
- *“What death (thanatos) he should die”* (John 12:33; 18:32).
- *“By the death (thanatos) of his Son”* (Romans 5:10).
- *“Second death (thanatos)”* four times in Revelations 2:11; 20:6; 20:14; 21:4.

Thanatos always means death, never any kind of life, but today's theology tells us that John's interpretation of the lake of fire must be reinterpreted, and death changed to endless life with torment, for there could not be death to a soul that cannot die; therefore, John's interpretation of the lake of fire being the second death must be reinterpreted to be the lake of fire is endless life with torment for souls.

- Lake of fire– interpreted by John to be the second death.
- Lake of fire– reinterpreted today to be endless life with torment.

The lake of fire is only a symbol of the real thing (the second death), but many preach and teach it as if there is a real lake of literal fire somewhere, but it is not on this earth, and this fire will last forever. There is not now or ever will be a lake of literal fire. They must turn it around and make the second death be only a metaphor of the lake of fire, and it is not a real death, for the second death cannot be a real death if a "soul" can never die. They also make the second death be only a metaphor of Gehenna (but only after Gehenna has been mistranslated into "Hell"). They do not seem to be able to make up their minds on whether the second death is a metaphor of the lake of fire, or if the second death is a metaphor of Gehenna after Gehenna has been changed to "Hell."

Changes made by those who say they do not change the Bible.

The Bible says THE LAKE OF FIRE -----IS THE SECOND DEATH

Today many say THE SECOND DEATH---IS THE LAKE OF FIRE

Today many say THE LAKE OF FIRE ---- IS HELL

Today many say THE LAKE OF FIRE ---- IS GEHENNA

- But many say GEHENNA is a metaphor of HELL

**FIRE THAT CANNOT BURN UP! FIRE MUST BE REINTERPRETED TO BE SOMETHING THAT CANNOT BURN UP.** If the lost are never to be destroyed, why did God use throwing them in fire (something that to us always means the death of any living thing, something that no living thing can live in) as a symbol of deathlessness? To teach everlasting deathless torment, theology had to make a reinterpretation of "fire" to be something that never destroys or consumes, fire had to be reinterpreted into something that will not destroy any living thing, but would forever torment it, it had to be reinterpreted into something that is the opposite of what fire really is, and dose the opposite of what fire does. God is made to use a symbolic picture to teach us that we could never understand without help, made to be unable to teach us without help from men to interpret His word to us and tell us that fire does not burn up; something that burns up and kills any living thing must be reinterpreted to be something that never burns up, and a fire never kills, if not, it would make unconditional immortality not be possible.

**Death will end after the judgment when death is destroyed.** The end will not come unto Christ *"shall have abolished all rule and all authority and power for he must reign till he has put all his enemies under his feet, the last enemy that shall be abolished is death"* (1 Corinthians 15:26).

- Death will be "**destroyed**" King James Version, New King James Version, New Revised Standard Version, New Century Version, and New International Version.
- Death will be "**abolished**" American Standard Version.
  - The "*destroyed*" or "*abolished*" death is not endless life separated from God.

**BRIMSTONE AND FIRE IN NON-SYMBOLIC PASSAGES:** The **brimstone and fire of the second death**. How "*fire and brimstone*" are used in the Bible and in the Book of Revelation.

Fire and brimstone (burning sulfur rock) were literally rained on Sodom and Gomorrah in Genesis 19:24. **The "*fire and brimstone*" that destroyed Sodom was rained from Jehovah out of Heaven, not from Hell, and the destroying was persons on the earth, not souls tormented but not destroyed in Hell.** "*Then Jehovah rained upon Sodom and upon Gomorrah brimstone and fire from Jehovah out of Heaven*" (Genesis 19:24; Luke 17:29). Both cities were literally burned up, and were brought to a total end by the fire and brimstone that rained on them. Fire and brimstone are used six other times in the Old Testament (Deuteronomy 29:23; Job 18:15; Psalm 11:6; Isaiah 30:33; 34:9; Ezekiel 38:22), one time by Christ in Luke 17:29 speaking of the total destruction of Sodom. **If the destroying will be "*after the same manner*," then the fire would be rained from Heaven, not be in Hell, and this fire will destroy, not forever torment those on which it is rained. Most believers in Hell put both the brimstone and the fire in Hell, but in every passage in both the Old and New Testament, it is literal real fire and real brimstone, and the fire is always on this earth, it is never in Hell.** They must move the brimstone and fire from earth to Hell, for they have no scripture that puts the fire and brimstone in Hell where they want it.

**It is always a total destruction, never a forever ongoing torment.** Today's preaching of "Hell fire and brimstone" does not fit with the use of fire and brimstone in the Bible. In today's theology the destruction is changed from total destruction into a never ending torment without destruction.

**BRIMSTONE AND FIRE IN SYMBOLICAL PASSAGES:** Fire and brimstone are used six times in Revelation as a symbol of total destruction, which is taken from its literal use in the rest of the Bible.

(1) Revelation 9:17: "*Out of their mouths proceeds fire and smoke and brimstone.*" Out of the mouths of horses! This does not sound like the fire and brimstone we are told will be in "Hell?"

(2) Revelation 9:18: "*The third part of men killed, by the fire and the smoke and the brimstone, which proceeded out of their mouths.*" Even most who believes in Hell say this fire and brimstone coming out of the mouth of horses are a symbol of something on this earth before the end of time, something before the coming of Christ, and is not an endless torment. Believer's in Hell does not believe that a third part of those in Hell will be killed by the fire and brimstone that comes out of the

mouths of horses; they believe that a soul that is in Hell cannot be killed. **Fire and brimstone coming from horse's mouths** is a symbolic picture of destruction and/or death that is on this earth before the Judgment Day. Does anyone believe this "*fire and brimstone*" that kills is the Hell-fire that torments as preached by Jonathan Edwards? **They do not think Hell comes out of horse's mouths:** they want to make only a part of the symbolic language be literal, and they get to pick what part. Most who believe in Hell believe the first and second occurrences of "*fire and brimstone*" in Revelation are both used figuratively, not literally. They only make it be used literally when they think it will prove their Hell, and fire and brimstone coming out of the mouth of horses and killing a third of them that are in Hell is not what they are trying to find.

(3) Revelation 14:10: Brimstone used in a symbolic picture of Babylon. A part of the same symbolic picture is smoke in Heaven in Revelation 14:11. Isaiah 34:10 said the smoke of Edom "*shall go up for ever and ever.*" There is no literal smoke going up from Edom and never has been; it is symbolic for a punishment that has endless consequences, and not a literal punishment of Edom, a nation that does not now exist, it is not burning it with a fire that shall go on forever; the Bible is its own best interpreter.

(4)-(5)-(6) Revelation 19:20; 20:10; 21:8: Three of the times the lake of fire is used, the lake which burns with fire and brimstone is the second death. The symbolic use of brimstone and fire depends on its use in the non-symbolical passages for its meaning. In them, it is always a destruction that ends when the destruction is total. Many symbols in Revelations come from the Old Testament. In the Old Testament fire and brimstone always brought a literal death; in Revelations fire and brimstone are used as a symbolical picture of total destruction and death.

### **Chapter Eight—PART FOUR**

#### **EVERLASTING OR FOREVER of the King James Version**

Olam in the Old Testament: "Age, age-lasting, olam" Robert Young, Young's Analytical Concordance To The Bible, page 310. Olam (olamim—plural) in the Hebrew Old Testament is translated everlasting in the King James Version and others, but does not mean without end as eternal in today's English does; in the popular use of today eternal means endless, which is not the way olam or olamim are used in the Hebrew Old Testament.

Olam-singular and olamim-plural are used of:

(1). Periods of times that had both a beginning and an end. Forever (olam) is used about sixty-five times in the Old Testament for things that have already come to an end.

(2). Periods of times that had a beginning, but the time of their end is has not yet come.

(3). A Period of time that is followed by another period of time; "from olam (age) to olam (age)," and "from olam (age) to olamim (ages), which are often translated "*for ever and ever.*" If "*for ever and ever*" made senses, which it doesn't, then it would make there be more than one eternity, "eternity, and eternity?"

**AGES WITH BOTH A BEGINNING AND AN END: Some of the things that are "everlasting" or "forever" in the King James Version that was age lasting, not everlasting; many "forevers" (olam-ages) of the King James Version have passed away, have already come to an end.**

(1). **The Law of Moses**— "A statute forever (olam-age)" See Exodus 12:24; 27:21; 28:43; 29:28; 30:21; Leviticus 6:18; 6:22; 7:34; 7:36; 10:9; 10:15; 16:29; 16:31; 17:7; 23:14; 24:3; Numbers 10:8; 15:15; 18:8; 18:11; 18:23; 19:10; Deuteronomy 12:28; 13:16; 15:17; 23:3; 28:40; 29:29; Joshua 4:7; 8:28; 14:9. It lasted for an age (about 1500 years), and was replaced with a better covenant (Hebrews 8:7-14), it had a beginning and an ending; it was not "forever" with the meaning of forever in today's English. Forever in the King James Version is a bad translation of olam, for olam in the Old Testament did not have the same meaning that forever had in 1611, or not the same meaning that forever has today.

(2). **Jews were to possess the land "forever"** (olam-age) (Genesis 13:15).

(3). **Temple rituals to continue forever** (olam-age) (2 Chronicles 2:4). Today there is no temple in Jerusalem, and no rituals in the temple that does not exist.

(4). **Levites were to bear the ark forever** (olam-age) (1 Chronicles 15:2). There are no Levites to bear the Ark, and no Ark for them to bear.

(5). **Sacrifices were forever** (olam-age) (Leviticus 3:17; 6:18; 7:36; 10:9-15; 16:29; 17:17; 23:14; 24:3; Numbers 10:8; 15:15; 18:8; 19:10).

(6). **Circumcision was forever** (olam-age) (Genesis 17:13).

(7). **David's throne was forever** (olam-age) (2 Samuel 7:12-13; 1 Kings 9:5).

(8). **A slave was a slave forever** (olam-age) (Exodus 21:6; Deuteronomy 15:17) Olam (forever) lasted only to the end of his life.

(9). **Jonah's "everlasting"** (olam-age) lasted only three days (Jonah 2:6).

**AGES THAT HAD A BEGINNING BUT THE ENDING ARE IN THE OBSCURE FUTURE: The everlasting (olam) hills** (Genesis 49:26): The hills had a beginning when the earth was made, but their ending is some times in the obscure future.

**The everlasting (olam) covenant of the rainbow** (Genesis 9:11-17): Like the hills, the beginning of the rainbow covenant is known, but both the hills and the rainbow ends at the end of the earth. Neither is eternal, both had a beginning, both will have an ending; "olam hills" are not "eternal hills."

**FROM ONE OLAM (age) TO ANOTHER OLAM (age) From one age to another age, not from one eternally to another eternally:** Old Testament – "from olam to olam" (from age to age) is used twenty-one times. From one period of time to another period of time demands a separation of the two periods—ages; therefore, neither or the two olams could be without a beginning or ending. Two olams would demand that there be more than one olam, more than one age, not more than one eternity.

**From olam (age) to olam (age) applied to people or things**

(1). "Thou hast blotted out their (the wicked) name for ever (olam-age) and ever (olam-age) (Psalm 9:5).

(2). "He (the king) asked life of Thee, Thou didst give him length of days for ever (olam-age) and ever (olam-age)" (Psalm 21:4).

- (3). *"The people praise thee for ever (olam-age) and ever (olam-age)"* (Psalm 45:17).
- (4). *"Even from everlasting (olam-age) to everlasting (olam-age), you are God"* (Psalm 90:2).  
"From eternity to eternity"?
- (5). *"All His precepts are sure. They are upheld for ever (olam-age) and ever (olam-age)"* (Psalm 111:8). From one age to another age, not from one eternity to another eternity.
- (6). *"Thy law continually for ever (olam-age) and ever (olam-age)"* (Psalm 119:44).
- (7). *"From this time forth and for ever (olam-age) and ever (olam-age)"* (Psalm 125:2; 131:3).
- (8). *"I will bless thy name for ever (olam-age) and ever (olam-age)"* (Psalm 145:1).
- (9). *"I will praise thy name for ever (olam-age) and ever (olam-age)"* (Psalm 145:2).
- (10). *"He has also established them (the heavens) for ever (olam-age) and ever (olam-age)"* (Psalm 148:6).
- (11). *"Also established them for ever (olam-age) and ever (olam-age)"* (Isaiah 30:8). *"That it may serve in the time to come as a witness forever (olam-age)"* New American Standard Version.
- (12). *"Then I will let you dwell in this place, in the land that I gave to your fathers forever and ever" "from olam to olam"* (Jeremiah 7:7). From a long time past to a long time to come, but not forever as the word "forever" is used today, not from eternity to eternity.
- (13). *"And dwell in the land that the Lord has given unto you and to your fathers for ever and ever" "from olam to olam"* (Jeremiah 25:5). If "forever and ever" is for eternity, then the world cannot end for they must dwell in the land for one eternity, and then for another eternity. None of them could dwell in Heaven or in Hell, for they would be dwelling in the land of Israel on this earth for eternity, and after that eternity dwelling on this earth for a second eternity.
- (14). *"As the stars for ever (olam-age) and ever (olam-age)"* (Daniel 12:3).

#### **From olam (age) to olam (age) applied to God**

- (1). *"The Lord shall reign for ever (olam-age) and ever (olam-age)"* (Exodus 15:18).
- (2). *"Blessed the Lord God of Israel for ever (olam-age) and ever (olam-age)"* (1 Chronicles 16:36).
- (3). *"The Lord is King for ever (olam-age) and ever (olam-age)"* (Psalm 10:16).
- (4). *"God is our God for ever (olam-age) and ever (olam-age)"* (Psalm 48:14).
- (5). *"Blessed be the Lord God of Israel from everlasting (olam-age) and to everlasting (olam-age)"* (Psalm 41:13).
- (6). *"Even from everlasting (olam-age) to everlasting (olam-age) thou art God"* (Psalm 90:2) "from olam to olam"—from age to age. "From everlasting to everlasting" would mean one everlasting would have to end for there to be another. Two everlasting are not possible. There cannot be a "from one eternity to another eternity."
- (7). *"The Lord is from everlasting (olam-age) to everlasting (olam-age)"* (Psalm 103:17).
- (8). *"Blessed be the Lord God of Israel from everlasting (olam-age) to everlasting (olam-age)"* (Psalm 106:48).
- From "everlasting to everlasting," from "one eternity to another eternity"? How could there be from everlasting to everlasting, or from eternity to eternity? Today's concept of eternity seems not to have existed in the Old Testament; they had the concept of one age after another age after another age, but not of today's eternity.

**DAYS OF OLD:** If olam means everlasting or endless, why did the King James Version translate it old and ancient; could it be that they knew eternal, as it is used today, would have made no sense in these passages? **"Days of old" (olam-age) is duration (a period of time) that has already at some time in the past ended, not endless duration that will never end.**

(1) "Remember the **days of old** (olam-age), consider the years of many generations" (Deuteronomy 32:7). One word translated into three words.

(2) "For those nations were **of old** (olam-age) the inhabitants of the land" (1 Samuel 27:8). The same one word translated into two words.

(3) "The **old** (olam-age) way which wicked men have trodden" (Job 22:15). The same one word translated into only one word.

(4) "For they have been ever **of old** (olam-age)" (Psalm 25:6).

(5) "I remembered the judgments **of old** (olam-age)" (Psalm 119:52).

(6) "Is there anything whereof it may be said, see, this is new? It has been already **of old times** (olam-age) that was before us" (Ecclesiastes 1:10).

(7) "I held my peace even **of old** (olam-age), and you feared me not" (Isaiah 57:11).

(8) "And he bare them, and carried them all the **days of old** (olam-age)" (Isaiah 63:9).

(9) "Then he remembered the **days of old** (olam-age), Moses, and his people" (Isaiah 63:11).

(10) "The prophets that have been before me and before you **of old** (olam-age)" (Jeremiah 28:8).

(11) "He has set me in dark places, as they that be dead **of old** (olam-age)" (Lamentations 3:6).

(12-13) "When I shall bring you down with them that descend into the pit, with the people **of old times** (olam-age), and shall set you in the low parts of the earth, in places desolate **of old** (olam-age)" (Ezekiel 26:20).

(14) "Let them feed in Basham and Gilead, as in the **days of old** (olam-age)" (Micah 7:10).

(15) "Then shall the offering of Judea and Jerusalem be pleasant unto the Lord, as in the **days of old** (olam-age), and as in former years" (Malachi 3:4).

(16) "And they have caused them to stumble in their ways from **ancient** (olam-age) paths, to walk in paths, in a way not cast up" (Jeremiah 18:15).

(17) "Remove not the **ancient** (olam-age) landmarks, which your fathers have set" (Proverbs 22:28). The translators saw the folly of translating olam into eternal; the landmarks that the fathers of the nation had placed could be removed easily; therefore, they were temporary, not eternal landmarks.

Olam is used repeatedly where it means an age, but it cannot mean everlasting. To go into all of them would take many pages. Look up "ever" in any good concordance or Wigram, pages 907—910, Old Testament. A few of them—1 Samuel 13:13; 2 Samuel 7:13,16,25, 26, 29; 1 Kings 2:33; 2:45; 9:5; 1 Chronicles 17:12, 14, 23, 27; 22:19; 28:4, 7; 2 Chronicles 8:5; Psalm 89:4; Ezekiel 37:25. Olam is used many time for things where both the beginning and end are known; many times where the beginning is known, but the end is unknown; the beginning of God's covenant of the rainbow is known, but not it's end, probability at the end of the earth.

**AION, AIONS, AND AIONIOS in the New Testament:** **AION** (a noun—the plural is aions) and **AIONIOS** (the adjective form of aion) in the New Testament. Like olam in the Old Testament, aion in the New Testament is also used repeatedly where it means an age, but it cannot mean everlasting. One example is Colossians 1:26.

**PLURAL AGES—NOT PLURAL ETERNALIES, NOT MORE THAN ONE ETERNITY.**

- King James Version: "The mystery, which hath been hid from **ages** (aions) and from generations, but now is made manifest to his saints."

- New King James Version: *"The Mystery, which has been hidden from **ages** (aions) and from generations, but now has been revealed to His saints."*
- American Standard Version: *"Even the mystery which hath been hid for **ages** (aions) and generations: but now hath it been manifested to his saints."*
- New American Standard Bible: *"That is, the mystery which has been hidden from the past **ages** (aions) and generations, but has now been manifested to His saints."*
- New Revised Standard Version: *"The mystery that has been hidden throughout the **ages** (aions) and generations but has now been revealed to his saints."*
- New International Version: *"The mystery that has been kept hidden for **ages** (aions) and generations, but is now disclosed to the saints."*
- Young's Literal Translation: *"The secret that hath been hid from the **ages** (aions) and from the generations, but now was manifested to his saints."*

Why did none of the translation use "forever"? It was obvious to them that God had kept this mystery hidden for ages, but not for eternities.

**An aion (age) has a beginning** (1 Corinthians 2:7, 2 Timothy 1:9, Hebrews 1:2).

**An aion (age) has an end** (Matthew 24:3, 1 Corinthians 10:11, Hebrews 9:20).

Forever and eternally, as they are used today, have no beginning and no end.

**"WORLD" (Greek-aion) in the King James Version: A period of time (an age) is changed to a place (world).** It had to be obvious to the translators that there are more than one aion-age, but the translators hid this from their reader by translating it "this world" and "the world to come." "Age, indefinite time, dispensation" Robert Young, "Young's Analytical Concordance To The Bible," page 1073.

(1) Matthew 12:32 *"Neither in this **world** (aion-age) nor in that which is to come."* "Either in this **age**, or the **age** that is to come" New King James Version, New American Standard Version, not "neither in this eternity or that eternity which is to come;" there are not two forevers, one forever that now is, and one forever to come. It is undeniable that the King James Version has two worlds.

1. The world that we now live in.
2. A world to come after the world that we are now in.

Does anyone believe that there will be another world between this one and the time the saved will be in the place Christ has gone to prepare for the saved in His Father's house in Heaven? Not in this world or the next world makes this passage make no sense if there is not another world after this world that the saved will spend some time in before they go to the place prepared for then in the Father's house (John 14:2).

1. Not in the age that then was when Christ was speaking, the Jewish age.
2. Or the age that come after that age, the Christian age.

(2) Matthew 13:22 *"Care of this **world** (aion-age)."* Care of this age, not "care of this forever or eternity."

(3) Matthew 13:39 *"The harvest is the end of the **world** (aion-age)."* "The end of the forever, or the end of eternity"? *"The end of the age"* New King James Version, New American Standard Version. If aion had been translated "eternity" in this passage it would have put the harvest at "the end of eternity," not at "the end of the age."

(4) Matthew 13:40 *"So shall it be at the end of this **world** (aion-age)."* "At the end of this forever or this eternity"? *"The end of this age"* New King James Version, New American Standard Version.

(5) Matthew 24:3 *"At the end of the **world** (aion-age)."* "At the end of the forever or this

eternity"? *"The end of the age"* New King James Version, New American Standard Version.

(6) Matthew 28:20 *"Unto the end of the **world**"* (aion-age). "The end of eternity"?

(7) Mark 4:19 *"The cares of this **world**"* (aion-age). Cares of this age, not "cares of this forever or this eternity."

(8) Mark 10:30 *"In the **world**"* (aion-age) *to come.*" "In the forever or eternity to come"?

(9) Luke 1:70 *"Since the **world**"* (aion-age) *began.*" Since the age began, not since the forever began.

(10) Luke 16:8 *"Children of this **world**"* (aion-age). "This age, not "children of this forever."

(11) Luke 18:30 *"In the **world**"* (aion-age) *to come.*" "In the eternity to come"?

(12) Luke 20:34-35 *"Children of this **world**"* (aion-age) *marry, and are given in marriage: but they that are counted worthy to attain to that **world**"* (aion-age)" "Children of this eternity"? In this passage aion is used both of this age and the age to come, not of this eternity and the eternity to come, not of another world to come after this world end as the King James Version says there will be.

(13) Luke 20:35 *"Worthy to obtain that **world**"* (aion-age)." "That eternity"?

(14) John 9:32 *"Since the **world**"* (aion-age) *begin.*" "Since the age (aion-age) begin," probably the beginning of the Jewish age. *"In the beginning God created the heavens and the earth"* (Genesis 1:1). Beginning of what? The beginning of time. Although it seems there may be ages after the earth (Luke 18:30; Mark 10:30), and may have been ages before the earth, this is an age that had a beginning, and is not the beginning of the world; it is not the beginning of eternity.

(15) Acts 3:21 *"Since the **world**"* (aion-age) *begin.*" Also probably the beginning of the Jewish age, not "Since eternity begin."

(16) Acts 15:18 *"From the beginning of the **world**"* (aion age)." Probably the beginning of the Jewish age, not "from the beginning of the forever."

(17) Romans 12:2 *"From the beginning of the **world**"* (aion-age). Also probably the beginning of the Jewish age, it is not the beginning of the world, not "from the beginning of the eternity."

(18) 1 Corinthians 1:20 *"Where is the disputer of this **world**"* (aion-age)." Disputer of this age, not "disputer of this eternity."

(19) 1 Corinthians 2:6 *"Not of the wisdom of this **world**, (aion-age) nor of the princes of this **world**"* (aion-age)." "Wisdom of this forever-princes of this eternity"?

(20) 1 Corinthians 2:7 *"Which God ordained before the **worlds**"* (aions-ages, plural in the Greek, singular in the King James, plural in most translations). Ordained before the eternities? God's wisdom, which had been hidden in past ages, the Law age and others, but has now been made known, was foreordained before the ages, not before the worlds plural, or before eternities plural. *"In hope of eternal life, which God...promised (Genesis 3:15) before the ages* (aionios-ages)" (Titus 1:2). *"Promised before the world began"* (King James), or promised *"before times eternal"* American Standard makes no sense, promised to whom before the world began or before times eternal? Promised to whom before Adam? If eternally has no beginning or ending, when and what promise was made before eternally began?

○ *"Before the ages* (aions-ages)" New American Standard and Revised Standard Version.

(21) 1 Corinthians 2:8 *"None of the princes of this **world**"* (aion-age)." Princes of this age, not "princes of this eternity."

(22) 1 Corinthians 3:18 *"Seems to be wise in this **world**"* (aion-age)." "Wise in this eternity?"

(23) 1 Corinthians 8:13 *"While the **world**"* (aion-age) *stands.*" "While the forever stands?"

(24) 1 Corinthians 10:11 *"The ends of the **world**"* (aions-ages)." "The ends of the eternities?" *"Upon whom the ends of the ages are come"* American Standard Version; both "ends" and "ages"

are in the plural.

(25) 2 Corinthians 4:4 *"The God of this **world** (aion-age.)"* "The God of this eternity?"

(26) Galatians 1:4 *"From this present evil **world** (aion-age.)"* "Present evil forever?" Is this present evil world to last for an age, or to last for an eternity?

(27) Ephesians 1:21 *"Not only in this **world** (aion-age.)"* "Not only in this eternity, but also in another eternity?"

(28) Ephesians 2:2 *"According to the course of this **world** (aion-age.)"* The course of his age, not "course of this forever, not this eternity."

(29) Ephesians 3:9 *"The beginning of the **world** (aion-age.)"* This age, not "the beginning of the eternity." Young's Literal Translation says, *"And to cause all to see what is the fellowship of the secret that has been hid from the ages in God, who the all things did create by Jesus Christ, that there might be made known now to the principalities and authorities in the heavenly places, through the assembly, the manifold wisdom of God, according to a purpose of the ages, which He made in Christ Jesus our Lord."*

(30) Ephesians 3:21 *"**World** (aion) without end."* The footnote in the New American Standard says, *"To all generations of the age of the ages."*

(31) Ephesians 6:12 *"Of the darkness of this **world** (aion-age.)"* Of this age, not "of the darkness of this eternity."

(32) 1 Timothy 6:17 *"That are rich in this **world** (aion-age.)"* Rich in this age, not "rich in this eternity."

(33) 2 Timothy 4:10 *"Having loved this present **world** (aion-age.)"* Loved this present age, not "loved this present forever."

(34) Titus 2:12 *"Godly, in this present **world** (aion-age.)"* In this present age, not "in this present eternity."

(35) Hebrews 1:2 *"By whom also he made the **world** (aions-ages.)"* Made the ages—plural, not made plural worlds.

(36) Hebrews 6:5 *"Powers of the **world** (aion-age) to come."* "Powers of the age to come, not powers of the forever to come." Will there be another world (another place) to come? This is speaking of another age, another time, but was changed to another place.

(37) Hebrews 9:26 *"Now once in the end of the **world** (aion-age.)"* In the end of forever, which was about 2,000 years ago? It was in the end of the age of the Law or Jewish age, which lasted from the giving of the law by Moses to the death of Christ, not the end of the world. The sacrifice of Christ was in the end of the age of the Law given through Moses, not in the end of the world, not the end of eternity.

(38) Hebrews 11:3 *"The **worlds** (aions-ages) were framed."* God made the ages. Did the King James translators think there is more than one earth? *"By faith we understand that the ages (aions-ages) were prepared by the word of God"* New American Standard footnote. Plural ages were prepared by the word of God, periods of time, not plural places, or worlds.

### **Aionios, the adjective form of the noun aion is translated and changed to a noun—world three times:**

(39) Romans 16:25-26 *"Kept secret since the **world** (aionios-age) began, but now is made manifest...is made known."* Since the ages began, not kept secret since eternity began, as eternity is understood today.

- *"For long ages past"* New American Standard and New International Version.
- *"For long ages"* New Revised Standard Version.

(40) 2 Timothy 1:9 “Which was **given us in Christ Jesus before the world** (aionios-age) began.” (“Translated “age(s)” in the New Revised Standard Version.)

- “Before times eternal” American Standard Version, footnote “long ages ago.” What times does anyone think was before eternity began?
- “Before the ages (aionios-age) began” New Revised Standard Version.
  - The promise of salvation was first given in Genesis 3:15 at the beginning of the first age on earth, the Patriarchal age, which was from Adam to Moses, before the Christian age that Paul was in begin; no promise of salvation was given to mankind before there was a mankind, or before there was a world.

(41) Titus 1:2 “Which God, that cannot lie, **promised before the world** (aionios-age) began.” Given or promised to whom before the world began, there was no man before the world began, before everlasting or eternity began? If eternity had no beginning, and will have no ending, how could there be a “before eternity began?” “Before the age began” not before the world began, by “the age” Paul is probably speaking of before the beginning of the Christian age that we are now in; Christ lived in the age of the Law, and before the Christian age had began He give the promise of the resurrection to life.

In the above there are:

1. **Past age(s):** not many past worlds, or many past eternities.
2. **The present age:** not the present world we are now in, or the present eternities.
3. **And age(s) to come:** not a world, or more than one world to come, not a past eternity, or many past eternities.

There are not worlds past, present, and future. “World” in the Greek is “kosmos” not “aion.” Kosmos (world) is used about 184 times in the New Testament and is never in the plural as *aion* often is, never plural worlds. We speak of “the Stone Age,” “the Iron Age,” etc. **Age (aion), century, and year are all periods of time. The world is a place. How did the translators get a place—world from aion-age, which is a word that means a period of time, not a place?** The King James Version has both (1) “world without end” and (2) “in the end of the world” (Ephesians 3:21; Hebrews 9:26). Eternity, as the word is used today, has no beginning; therefore, they could not translate it forever so they change a word that means a period of time that has a beginning and an end to a place, changed to a place that had a beginning and will have an end, changed to a created place that is not eternal. Most translations used “age(s).” If *aion* means forever, what did the translators do when they came to Matthew 24:3? Did they translate it “the end of forever”? No, they could not have an end to eternity; therefore, they change *aion* to “world.” To most reading “world,” it means the earth that we live on, in the Greek “world” is from “kosmos,” not “aion” or “aionios,” it is a mistranslation that I cannot but believe the translators know it was a mistranslation, a mistranslation that most other translations of the Bible have changed. Were they not being less than truthful with their readers? Just as untruthful as they were in the Old Testament where “*olam*” is also translated “world” in Psalm 73:12. Despite the fact that they have translated “*olam*” into “everlasting” repeatedly, they could not have the ungodly prosper for “forever.” An

*aion* (age) in Matthew 24:3 is not a place, not a *world*. When *aion* is translated “*world*,” it is a mistranslation that makes those who do not understand Greek to understand something that is 100% different from what God did say.

#### KOSMOS MEANS WORLD, NOT AION:

ALEXANDER CAMPBELL: “The word *kosmos*, translated almost uniformly *world*, which is found one hundred and eighty-four times in the New Testament, is in some respects very different from *aion*. **Concerning the word *kosmos*, we would have it noticed, that it is never found in the plural form in the Christian Scriptures. There is but one *kosmos*, though different *aions*, found in this volume.** *Kosmos* denotes the material globe with all its elements—sometimes, the universe; and by a figure called metonymy, which substitutes the thing containing for the thing contained, the human family is often called *the world*...The phrase ‘foundation of the world’ occurs ten times, and always *kosmos*. **But wherever mere time or continuance is implied, it is always *aion*, and not *kosmos*.**” “The Living Oracles,” Appendix 14, 1826, Gospel Advocate Company.

G. CAMPBELL MORGAN: “Let me say to Bible students that we must be very careful how we use the word ‘eternity.’ We have fallen into great error in our constant use of that word. **There is no word in the whole Book of God corresponding with our ‘eternal,’** which, as commonly used among us, means absolutely without end. The strongest Scripture word used with reference to the existence of God, is ‘unto the ages of the ages,’ which does not literally mean eternally.” Page 185, *God’s Methods with Man*, 1898, Fleming H. Revel Company.

**PLURAL is changed to SINGULAR:** When the King James translators translated *aions* into “worlds” (Hebrews 1:2; see Ephesians 2:7; Colossians 1:26), they left it in the plural, but when they translated it “*forever and ever*” they changed it to the singular. They could have plural worlds, but they could not have a plurality of forever, or more than one eternity. Their Hell must last forever (singular), not forevers (plural), and not just **unto** the age of ages.

**How could anyone know “Hell” is everlasting when not one of the four words translated “Hell” in the King James Version is used with *aion* or *aionios*. Not one of four words (sheol, hades, Gehenna, Tartarus) is said to be everlasting.**

*Aion* is used of past ages, the present age, future ages, and in the plural about two-thirds of its occurrences in the Bible. Therefore, **there is more than one age.** It follows that eternity is not an acceptable meaning of this Greek word. **There cannot be past eternities, a present eternity, and future eternities, neither can there be plural eternities.** An *aion* (age) is a long period of time that has a beginning and an ending, but it is not an eternity that has no beginning or ending. There are more than one *aions*, but there can be only one eternity.

(1). **How can it be said “this eternity,” “that eternity,” or “eternities”?** There is only one eternity (Luke 16:8; 20:34-35; Romans 12:2; 1 Corinthians 1:20; 2:6-8; 3:18; 10:11; 2 Corinthians 4:4; Galatians 1:4; Ephesians 1:21; 2:2, 7; 3:9; Colossians 1:26; 2 Timothy 4:10; Hebrews 11:3)?

(2). **How can it be said “before eternity” or “eternity began”?** Eternity has no beginning (James. 9:32; Acts. 3:21; 1 Corinthians 2:7; Ephesians 3:9)?

(3). **How can it be said “present eternity,” “eternity to come,” and “end of eternity”?** (Matthew 24:3; 28:20; 1 Corinthians 10:11; 2 Titus 4:10; He. 6:5; 9:26)?

In the Bible there is the Patriarchal dispensation (age), and the Law of Moses dispensation (age) (Luke 1:70; Romans 12:2; Colossians 1:26), and the Christian dispensation (age). Age (aion) is applied to the Jewish dispensation (age) that has ended. See Hebrews 9:26; 1 Corinthians 10:11; Matthew 24:3; Luke 1:70. This age will end at the coming of Christ. Endless life, life that will last for all the ages to come will be given in the age that is to come after the resurrection (Mark 10:30; Luke 18:30; 20:35; Ephesians 1:21; 2:7; Hebrews 6:5).

**Aion and aionios:** When both the singular and plural are used together in one passage there has to be more than one aion (age). A plural eternity or forever is impossible; aionios refer to periods of time (ages). Unless an age means all of time, there has to be another part(s) of time (another age or ages); an age is not forever, not eternity as the English word "eternity" is used today.

The word "eternal" was first put into the Bible when the Latin Vulgate Version of Jerome was translated into English; **there is no word in the Hebrew or Greek Bible that corresponds to the English word "eternal"**; Jerome translation give aion two difference meaning by translating aion into two different Latin words. If the first English translation had come directly from the Hebrew and Greek, it is unlikely that "eternal" would have ever been in it. Jerome was inconsistent in the way he put eternal into his translation by translating aion into eternal twenty-seven times out of about one hundred twenty-five times that aion is used, nevertheless, his inconsistencies were translated into English, and most later translations copied them.

### **"TO or UNTO the ages of the ages."**

(1) *"The smoke of their torment doth go up **UNTO the ages of the ages**"* (Revelation 14:11). If, as some believe, the ages of the ages is eternity after the judgment, then the smoke of their torment, the torment of the devil last **ONLY UNTO the end of time**, but nothing is said about any smoke or torment after the judgment.

(2) *"Her smoke doth come up **UNTO the ages of the ages**"* (Revelation 19:3).

(3) *"They (the devil, the beast and the false prophet) shall be tormented day and night **UNTO the ages of the ages**"* (20:10). *"Day and night"* belongs to time, not eternity (Revelation 22:5); *"unto"* means up to *"the ages of the ages,"* but not after that time. We do not know what is going on in the mind of Satan, but it is only reasonable to believe that he knows his time will come to an end. Would this not be torment to him? *"The Lord knows how to...keep the unrighteous under punishment unto the Day of Judgment"* (1 Peter 2:9). *"Unto the ages of ages"* could only mean the time that is before the ages to come, **before any one will be in Heaven, not forever, not during or throughout eternity.** This torment, whether it is literal or figurative torment, **is only said to be "unto the ages of the ages," which is before many believe anyone will be in Hell. It ends at the time they say Hell will begin ("unto the ages of the ages").** It says nothing about torment, neither literal

**torment or figurative torment in the "ages of ages."** When the Greek says, "*unto the ages of the ages*," it is not "forever and ever." This is just another attempt of the translators to impose the Greek philosophy of innate immortality on God's word, and to put an eternal place of torment in the Bible where there is not one. If "*day and night*" are to be taken literally then the "beast" that is being tormented "*day and night*" must also be literal; therefore, there will be a literal beast literally tormented in Hell "*which (literally) has seven heads and the ten horns*," (Revelation 17:7-9); is there literally such a beast? How many that believe in Hell believe there is such a literal beast, or that there will be any kind of beast in Hell? Does a beast with ten horns or a cow with two horns have a soul?

The superlative degree:

- The song of songs—the best of all songs.
- The book of books—the best of all books.
- The party of parties—the best of all parties.
- The lie of lies—the biggest of all lies.
- The king of kings and lord of lords (1 Timothy 6:15)—the greatest of all kings and lords.
- The ages of ages— does this mean the best age of all ages?
  - "Ages (plural—more than one age) *of the ages*."

**The ages to come: "UNTO the ages of (the) ages"** (Revelation 1:6; 2 Timothy 4:18; etc.) **Does eternity have ages?** "*Who shall not receive manifold more in this time, and in the world to come* (aion—the **age** to come) **eternal** (aionios, the adjective form of aion) *life*" (Luke 18:30; Mark 10:30). Life that will have no end will be given at the judgment after the end of the Christian Age (Romans 6:22; Galatians 6:8; Titus 1:2). Christ was speaking of life after the judgment when He said, "*and in the age to come*." Paul speaking to those in the Christian Age, those that were saved by grace when he said, "**That in the ages (aions) to come** (ages to come after the Christian Age) *he might show the exceeding riches of his grace in kindness toward us in Christ Jesus*" (Ephesians 2:6-7).

There may be no way we can know, but it is possible that there was a time before God made anything, where there was just God, was one age. Then after He made Heaven and all was perfect was another age. After Satan and other angels sinned was another age, and things we know nothing about could be the beginning and ending of many ages before God made the earth. There is no way we can know something God has not revealed to us, and it is unreasonable to think that we with our limited knowledge could know even the hem of the garment when it comes to knowing what an infinite God has done before He made this world, and what He will do throughout all the coming ages. "*Unto the ages of the ages*" may mean that time after the judgment will be made up of "*ages*," one age after another age for an endless number of ages all in some way will be difference from each other. God does not change, but there is no reason to believe that after the judgment He will just sit and do nothing that could be the end of one age and the beginning of another. In

all of time we know anything about, God has used ages that had begins and ends, and there is no reason to believe He cannot or will not always use them. There is no man in Heaven now, but the saved will be in Heaven after the judgment; when all the saved of mankind are in Heaven, will that not be one change from what Heaven is now, it maybe the beginning of a new age in Heaven. And there could be others changes later that would be the beginning and ending of ages. I do not believe He is a sleeping God who woke up one day and made the world in six days and went back to sleep. What He has done and will do throughout all the countless ages to come is beyond my imagination, and as He has not revealed it no one can know, but eternity is a long time and it is not reasonable to believe He is now sleeping, and that He will not frequently do many things as great or greater than making the earth; things that will be the beginning of an endless number of new ages. Angels are not self-existing being as God is, they were created by God; therefore, their creation may have been the beginning of an age in Heaven. Heaven itself was created; only God is self-existing, unchanging and without a beginning. All the things that God created that we know about and all the beings, angels and mankind, were not created at the same time, there is no reason to believe that God will not go on creating both new things and new beings in the ages to come.

**PAST AGES, A PRESENT AGE, FUTURE AGES:** If, as many teach, "aion" did means "forever" or "eternity," then there would be past eternities, present eternities, and future eternities to come, both singular and plural. More than one eternity, as we use the word eternity today, is not passable.

**(1) SINGULAR:**

- **A past age, not a past eternity** (singular) Acts 15:18 *"From the beginning of the aion"* Ephesians 3:9; Colossians 1:26; Luke 1:55.
- **A present age, not a present eternity** (singular) Galatians 1:4 *"From this present evil aion"* Matthew 12:32; 13:22; 13:39; 13:40; 24:3; 28:20; Mark 4:19; Luke 1:70; Luke 16:8; 20:34; John 9:32; Acts 3:21; 15:18; Romans 12:2; 1 Corinthians 2:6; 2:8; 3:18; 8:13; 10:11; 2 Corinthians 4:4; Galatians 1:4; Ephesians 1:21; 2:2; 6:12; 1 Timothy 7:17; 2 Timothy 4:10. The present aion (age) is clearly distinguished from a past aion, or a future aion, not a past or future eternity.
- **A future age, not a future eternity** (singular) Luke 20:35 *"Worthy to obtain that aion."* Matthew 12:32; Mark 10:30 *"In the aion to come."* Luke 18:30; 20:35; Ephesians 1:21; 2:7; Hebrews 6:5.

**(2) PLURAL:** Of the one hundred twenty-seven times aion is used in the New Testament sixty-two are in the plural, more than one age, not more than one eternity, and in twenty-one others that there is more than one age when the plural is implied by "this aion" or "that aion," this age, or that age, not this or that eternity.

- **Past ages, not past eternities** (plural) Colossians 1:26 *"Hid from aions"* Luke 1:33; Hebrews 1:2; 11:3.
- **Present ages, not present eternities** (plural) Hebrews 1:2 *"By whom also he made the aions"* Romans 1:25; 9:5; 11:36; 16:27; 2 Corinthians 11:31; Hebrews 13:8.

- **Future ages, not future eternities** (plural) Galatians 1:5; Philippians 4:20; 1 Timothy 1:17; 2 Timothy 4:18; Hebrews 13:21; 1 Peter 4:11; 5:11; Revelation 1:6; 1:18; 4:9; 4:10; 5:13; 5:14; 7:12; 10:6; 11:15; 14:11; 15:7; 19:3; 20:10; 22:5. It may be that what we think of as eternity as being one endless time period will be an infinite number of aions (ages).
  - **Past, present, and future ages**, not past, present, and future eternities. "Throughout all ages" Ephesians 3:21 King James Version.

**(3) DOUBLE SINGULAR: age of the age** (aiona tou aionos) Hebrews 1:8.

**(4) SINGULAR AND PLURAL: age of the ages** (aionos ton aionon) Ephesians 3:21 .

**(5) DOUBLE PLURALS: ages of the ages** (aionas ton aionon) Revelation 20:10, 1 Peter 4:11.

In the Bible there are:

1. Aion (age) in the **singular**—65 times
2. Aions (ages) in the **plural**—62 times
3. Aions (ages) in the **past**—plural
4. Aion (age) in the **present**—singular
5. An aion (age) **to come**—singular
6. Aions (ages) **to come**—plural, more than one age is yet to come
7. The **ends** of the aions (ages)—plural, more than one age that ends

If aion means eternity then these passage would be saying:

- "Upon whom the ends of the **eternities** have come" (1 Corinthians 10:11).
- "That He might deliver us from this present evil **eternity**" (Galatians 1:4).
- "Not only in this **eternity** but also in that which is to come" (Ephesians. 1:21).
- "That in the **eternities** to come" (Ephesians 2:7).
- "The mystery, which for **eternities** has been hidden" (Ephesians 3:9).
- "Having loved this present **eternity**" (2 Timothy 4:10).
- "Powers of the **eternity** to come" (Hebrews 6:5).
- "But now in the end of the **eternity** (Hebrews 9:26).
- We understand the **eternities** have been prepared by the word of God" (Hebrews 11:3).

The Greek is "unto the aions of the aions." It is not "ever plus ever," not one "ever" added to another "ever" as in the King James Version. It is ages that last **unto**, not a plural of eternities which none can end. "*Forever and ever*" is a contradiction of itself. When a word is plural it can only be finite for only finite things can have the plural; there cannot be more than one infinite eternity; not more than one forever. There cannot be eternities after eternities. An age or ages will fit into eternity, but eternity will not fit into an age. Eternity is infinitely bigger than an age. Neither can one eternity fit into another eternity, or two eternities exist at the same time. Neither can one eternity come after the end of another eternity.

HENRY THAYER, "*For ever* (aionas) *AND* (ton) *ever* (aionon)" (Revelation 4:11), "The double plural," "A Greek—English Lexicon Of The New Testament," page 19.

Both Greek words are in the plural; "ever" that is used in the King James Version is singular; there is no plural of "ever" in English; it cannot be translated "for everS and everS." The "and" that is between the two everS is from "ton" and it never means "and" in the Greek. "*For ever and ever*" totally changes what the Greek says.

As there is no word in the Hebrew Old Testament for "eternity." "Ages" more than one long period of time followed by more long periods of time might have been the

nearest concept the early Hebrew people had to "eternity" as we understand the English word "eternity" today. **Can "olam" or "aion" ever mean eternal as the word is used today?** Endless is not inherent in either of the two words and in over 90% of the times they are used it is unquestionably that they mean a limited time—a time that has ended or will end. When they are applied to God (as in Exodus 3:15; Genesis 21:33) and things that are intrinsically endless, it is claimed aion—age takes on a meaning not inherent in the word itself, but from the thing that is endless, but it is more likely that God was speaking to them using the only words that they would understand, words with nearest concept the early Hebrew people had to an eternity without beginning or end—ages followed by more ages, an endless number of ages one after another after another. The concept we have of eternity was not in the Old Testament and may not have come about until after the New Testament. In the Greek New Testament God is the “king of the ages (aion),” not “king eternal” as in the King James and other translations.

- 1 Timothy 1:17: ***“To the King of the ages*** (aion), *the incorruptible, invisible, only wise God, [is] honor and glory—to the ages (aion), of the ages (aion)! Amen*” Young’s Literal Translation.
- ***“Now to the king of the ages”*** Alfred Marshall, “Parallel New Testament In Greek and English.”
- See “The Englishmen’s Greek Concordance” by George V. Wigram, page 20.
- ***“Now to the King of the ages”*** Recovery Version.
- ***“Now to the King of the ages”*** Hugo McCord, church of Christ, “McCord’s New Testament Translation,” published by Freed—Hardeman College.
- ***“So to the king of all the ages”*** “The New Testament In Modern English,” J. B. Phillips.
- ***“To the King of ages”*** New American Bible, Catholic.
- ***“To the King of the ages”*** Revised Standard Version, New Revised Standard Version.
- ***“He is the King of the ages”*** The Living Bible.
- ***“Now may the King of the ages”*** The Christian Bible.
- Jude 1:25 : ***“To (the) only God Savior of us through Jesus Christ the Lord of us (be) glory, greatness might, and authority before all the age and now and unto all the ages.”*** Alfred Marshall, Parallel New Testament In Greek and English.
  - ***“To the only wise God our Savior, [is] glory and greatness, power and authority, both now and to all the ages! Amen”*** Young’s Literal Translation.
- Hebrews 1:2: ***“Through whom (Christ) also he made the ages.”***
- Hebrews 11:3: ***“By faith we understand that the ages have been framed by the word of God.”***
- Revelation 15:7: ***“God, who is living to the ages of the ages.”***
- 1 Peter 4:11: ***“Jesus Christ, to whom is the glory and the power—to the ages of the ages.”***
- Revelation 2:12: ***“The blessing, and the glory, and the wisdom, and the thanksgiving, and the honor, and the power, and the strength, [are] to our God—to the ages of the ages!”***
- Revelation 1:6: ***“To him [is] the glory and the power to the ages of the ages! Amen.”***

- 2 Corinthians 11:31: *“The God and Father of our Lord Jesus Christ—who is **blessed to the ages.**”*
- Romans 16:27: *“To the only wise God, through Jesus Christ, to him [be] glory **to the ages.**”*
- Romans 5:9: *“God blessed **to the ages.** Amen.”*
- Romans 1:25: *“God blessed **to the ages.** Amen.”*

After the coming of Christ, when we are told by many that time will have ended and eternity will have begun, the very next thing is a “day,” a period of time that will have both a beginning and an ending, the Judgment Day. This “day” will be in what we now call eternity, after time, as we know it has ended, after this age has ended.

Perhaps the most common argument is that “aion” has both (1) a finite meaning and (2) infinite meaning. Unlimited duration when it is speaking of God, limited duration of things that have a perishable nature, or a limited duration, as the priesthood of Aaron, the covenant of circumcision, the three days Jonah was in the belly of the whale, etc., that it must take on an infinite meaning when speaking of things not of this earth; the problem of this seems to be that **even when speaking of things not of this earth, of the time after the Judgment Day, even of God (1 Timothy 1:17; 2 Timothy 4:18; and many more times age is used in the plural) Ages being in the plural when speaking of God is hid by most English translations, it would make a plurality of eternities, one eternity after another eternity, then more eternities after them, even after the Judgment Day it would make there be eternities after eternities.**

1 Peter 1:25: *“The word of the Lord abides for ever (aeon—age).”* God’s word—the New Covenant will abide as long as the New Covenant last, to the end of this age—end of the world (age). *“But the things that are revealed belong unto us and to our children for ever (olam-age—Hebrew the same as the Greek aeon-age) that we may do all the words of this law”* Deuteronomy 29:29. The Law belonged to them for an age, but that age has passed away; it was only for that age, not forever. All that is in the New Covenant are ours to do for this age, we will not take the Lord’s Supper after the end of this age; we will not remember His death *“Till He come”* (1 Corinthians 11:29), not after He comes. The Lord’s Supper is now the *“word of the Lord”* that abides for this age, not without end, not for eternity (all the ages to come). Just as the *“word of the Lord”* on keeping the Sabbath Day abided for that age, and it passed away when the age of the Law passed away, *“Go into all the world, and preach the gospel to the whole creation”* (Mark 16:15) will also abided to the end of this age, and will pass away when this age is over. There will always be a *“word of the Lord”* in all ages to come, but not the same *“word of the Lord”* as is in this age or was in pass ages. *“The word of the Lord remains unto the age”* Marshall’s Parallel Greek English New Testament.

*“The saying of the Lord doth remain—to the age”* Young’s Literal Translation.

ALEXANDER CAMPBELL said of *aion*, "Its radical idea is indefinite duration." An age is always a period of time that can be long or short, but ages always has both a beginning and an ending."

MARVIN R. VINCENT: "Word Studies In The New Testament" Notes On *Olethron Aionion* (eternal destruction). **"The word always carries the notion of time, and not of eternity. It always means a period of time.** Otherwise it would be impossible to account for the plural, or for such qualifying expressions as this age, or the age to come. It does not mean something endless or everlasting. To deduce that meaning from its relation to *aei* is absurd; for, apart from the fact that the meaning of a word is not definitely fixed by its derivation, *aei* does not signify endless duration. When the writer of the Pastoral Epistles quotes the saying that the Cretans are always (*aei*) liars (Tit. 1:12), he surely does not mean that the Cretans will go on lying to all eternity. See also Acts 7:51; 2 Cor. 4:11; 6:10; Heb 3:10; 1 Pet. 3:15. *Aei* means habitually or continually within the limit of the subject's life. In our colloquial dialect everlastingly is used in the same way. 'The boy is everlastingly tormenting me to buy him a drum.' In the New Testament the history of the world is conceived as developed through a succession of aeons. A series of such aeons precedes the introduction of a new series inaugurated by the Christian dispensation, and the end of the world and the second coming of Christ are to mark the beginning of another series. Eph. 1:21; 2:7; 3:9,21; 1 Cor. 10:11; compare Heb. 9:26. He includes the series of aeons in one great aeon, '*o aion ton aionon*, the aeon of the aeons (Eph. 3:21); and the author of the Epistle to the Hebrews describe the throne of God as enduring unto the aeon of the aeons (Heb 1:8). The plural is also used, aeons of the aeons, signifying all the successive periods which make up the sum total of the ages collectively. Rom. 16:27; Gal. 1:5; Philip. 4:20, etc."

NOTE: Marvin R. Vincent in "Word Studies In The New Testament" list three series of ages—not three series of eternities. The three are:

1. A series of ages that precedes the Christian dispensation.
2. A new series of ages inaugurated by the Christian dispensation.
3. The end of the world and the second coming of Christ are to mark the beginning of another series of ages.

TAYLER LEWIS: Lange's Commentary on Ecclesiastes, pages 44—51 says there were numberless ages before our world was created; during this world there are ages, and there will be numberless ages after the close of this world.

DR. EDWARD BEECHER: "All attempts to set forth eternity as the original and primary sense of *aion* are at war the facts of the Greek language for five centuries, in which it denoted life and its derivative senses, **and the sense eternity was unknown.**" Christian Union, 1873.

PROFESSOR KNAPP, author of a Greek New Testament used in many colleges and universities as a textbook. **"The pure idea of eternity is too abstract to have been conceived in the early ages of the world, and accordingly is not found expressed by any word in the ancient languages.** But as cultivation advanced and this idea became more distinctly developed, it became necessary in order to express it to invent new words in a new sense, as was done with the words *eternitas*, *perennitas*, etc. **The Hebrews were destitute of any single word to express endless duration...the Hebrews and other ancient people have no one word for expressing the precise idea of eternity."**

MARVIN R. VINCENT about *aion*—age: "The word always carries the notion of time, and not of eternity, it always means a period of time" "Word Studies in the New Testament."

***Aionios*** (the adjective form of the noun *aion*) is used 71 times in the New Testament and in the King James Version is translated (1) age, (2) eternal, (3) for ever and ever, (4) course, (5) for ever, (6) evermore, (7) everlasting, (8) world, (9)

beginning of the world, (10) world began, (11) world without end. Adjectives never have a meaning that is totally different from the noun from which it came.

- Week (noun), weekly (adjectives)
- Hour (noun), hourly (adjectives)
- Year (noun), yearly (adjectives)
- Month (noun), monthly (adjectives).

In the King James Version the adjective *aionios* is changed to “eternal” many times; eternal is not a translation of *aionios*. It would be more like the Greek to translate the adjective of the noun *aion* “age” into “ageless.” “*I give unto them ageless (aionios) life, and they shall never perish*” (John 10:28). They shall never age, never grow old, shall never die (perish). Also in Luke 10:25; 18:18; 18:30; John 3:15; 3:16; 3:36; 4:14; 4:36; 5:24; 5:39; 6:27; 6:40; 6:47; 6:54; 6:68; 10:28; 12:25; 12:50; 17:2; 17:3; Acts 13:46; 13:48; Romans 5:21; 6:22; 6:23; 2 Corinthians 5:1; Galatians 6:8; 2 Thessalonians 1:9; 2:16; 1 Timothy 1:16; 6:12; 6:16; 2 Timothy 2:10; Titus 1:2; 3:7; Hebrews 5:9; 9:12; 9:15; 13:20; 2 Peter 1:11; 1 John 1:2; 2:25; 3:15; 5:11; 5:13; Jude 1:21. In none of the 71 times *aionios* is used in the New Testament eternal is not a translation of it. Heaven is a wonderful place where the saved will be ageless, never grow old, never be sick, and never die. “*And the witness is this, that God gave unto us ageless (aionios) life, and that life is in his Son. He that has the Son has the life; he that has not the Son of God has not the life*” (1 John 5:11-12).

Olam—for an age, not forever.

- The Law of Moses was forever (*olam*), King James Version, but it ended.
- The Jews were to possess the land forever (*olam*), King James Version.
- Temple rituals were to continue forever (*olam*), King James Version, but they ended.
- Sacrifices were to last forever (*olam*), King James Version, but they have ended.
- Circumcision was forever (*olam*), King James Version, but it ended when the Law that commanded it ended.
- David's throne was forever (*olam*), King James Version, but it ended.

**FOREVER—UNTO THE AGES: (A) “Unto the ages”** *eiv touv aiwnav* Wigram (“The Englishman's Greek Concordance,” page 19), footnote in American Standard Version “**Gr. unto the ages.**” Alfred Marshall in “Parallel New Testament In Greek And English” translates *eiv touv aiwnav* “**unto the ages.**”

1. Luke 1:33 “*Over the house of Jacob forever (eiv touv aiwnav-unto the ages).*”
2. Romans 1:25 “*Who is blessed forever (eiv touv aiwnav-unto the ages).*”
3. Romans 9:5 “*God blessed forever (eiv touv aiwnav-unto the ages).*”
4. Romans 11:36 “*To whom be glory forever (eiv touv aiwnav-unto the ages).*”
5. Romans 16:27 “*Through Jesus Christ forever (eiv touv aiwnav-unto the ages).*”
6. 2 Corinthians 11:31 “*Which is blessed for evermore (eiv touv aiwnav-unto the ages).*”
7. Hebrews 13:8 “*Yesterday, and to day, and for ever (eiv touv aiwnav-unto the ages).*”
  - All seven “forever” are three words in the Greek, not one or two words as in the King James Version.

**(B) “Unto the ages of (the) ages”** *eiv touv aiwnav twv aiwnwn* is used **twenty-one times in the New Testament**, seventeen times it is applied to God or

Christ, one time to Satan, one time to worshipers of the beast, one time to the great harlot, and one time to those who are in the book of life.

- Alfred Marshall translates it, "**Unto the ages of the ages**," "Parallel New Testament In Greek And English," page 747. "*To whom (be) the glory unto the ages of the ages. Amen*" Galatians 1:5.
- Adam Clarke translates it, "**To the ages of ages.**"
- Robert Young translates it, "**To the ages of (the) ages.**" Young's Analytical Concordance to the Bible, page 310, and in "Young's Literal Translation."
- Ashley S. Johnson, "**Ages of ages, or ages upon ages**" Founder, and president of the Johnson Bible College.
- Jamieson, Fausset, and Brown, "**Unto ages of ages.**"
- The Amplified Bible, "**Through all the ages of the ages**" Galatians 1:5.
- The Christian Bible, "**For the remaining ages of the ages**" Galatians 1:5.
- New American Standard Version, "**Even to the end of the age**" Matthew 28:20 and in many other passages.
- New Revised Standard Version, "**End of the age**" Matthew 28:20 and others.
- New International Version, "**To the very end of the age**" Matthew 28:20.
  - Strong's word #165, Aion "**An age**" Comp 5550 "A space of time"

**(1)—(17): The seventeen times "unto the ages of the ages—eiv touv aiwnav twv aiwnwn" that are applied to God or Christ** from Young's Literal Translation. In the same way that saying God was the God of Israel does not mean He was not also the God of the other nations, to say He is now the God of this age does not mean He was not the God of all the other ages that have been before, and the God of this age, and will not be the God of all ages that shall come after this age. He is the God of Abraham, but also the God of David, and the God of Paul. He is the God of this age; **God is the God of the ages, all the ages, past, present, and future.** There are three main ages that covers all the time of this earth. (1) The Patriarchal Age: From Adam to the giving of the Law, when God spoke directly to men, mostly to the fathers. (2) The Law Age: From the giving of the Law to the death of Christ. (3) The Christian or Church Age: From Christ to the end of this age at end of this world. These ages are often subdivided into smaller ages; for example, the Law is often divided into the Judges, the United Kingdom, and the Divided Kingdom. How many ages there might have been before the earth, and how many there will be after it ends we have no way of knowing, but the Bible speaks often of "ages to come" after this Christian age that we are now in. "*And raised us up with him, and made us to sit with him in the heavenly places, in Christ Jesus: that in the ages (aions) to come he might show the exceeding riches of his grace in kindness toward us in Christ Jesus*" (Ephesians 2:6-7); after the end of the earth it seems that there may be more ages with God over them, He will always be the God of the age that is. **The concept we have of eternity was is not in the Old Testament, and it may not have come about unto after the New Testament; if there is a word in the Greek language**

that was used in the time of the New Testament with today's meaning of eternity it was not *aion-age*.

**YOUNG'S LITERAL TRANSLATION:**

**TO CHRIST—"unto the ages of the ages—*eiv touv aiwnav twv aiwnwn*"**

(1) Galatians 1:5: "To whom is the glory **to the ages of the ages**. Amen."

(2) 2 Timothy 4:18: "And the Lord shall free me from every evil work, and shall save me to his heavenly kingdom; to whom is the glory **to the ages of the ages!** Amen."

(3) Hebrews 13:21: "Make you perfect in every good work to do His will, doing in you that which is well-pleasing before Him, through Jesus Christ, to whom is the glory **to the ages of the ages!** Amen."

(4) 1 Peter 4: 11: "That in all things God may be glorified through Jesus Christ, to whom is the glory and the power **to the ages of the ages**. Amen."

(5) 1 Peter 5:11: "To Him is the glory, and the power **to the ages and the ages!** Amen."

(6) Revelation 1:6: "To him is the glory and the power **to the ages of the ages!** Amen."

(7) Revelation 1:18: "And he who is living, and I did become dead, and, lo, I am living **to the ages of the ages**. Amen! And I have the keys of the hades and of the death."

(8) Revelation 11:15: "And the seventh messenger did sound, and there came great voices in the heaven, saying, 'The kingdoms of the world did become those of our Lord and of His Christ, and he shall reign **to the ages of the ages!**'"

**TO GOD OR CHRIST OR BOTH—"unto the ages of the ages—*eiv touv aiwnav twv aiwnwn*"**

(9) Philippians 4:20: "And to God, even our Father, is the glory **to the ages of the ages**. Amen."

(10) 1 Timothy 1:17: "And to **the King of the ages**, the incorruptible, invisible, only wise God, is honor and glory **to the ages of the ages!** Amen."

(11) Revelation 4:9: "And when the living creatures do give glory, and honor, and thanks, to Him who is sitting upon the throne, who is living **to the ages of the ages**."

(12) Revelation 4:10: "Fall down do the twenty and four elders before Him who is sitting upon the throne, and bow before Him who is living **to the ages of the ages**, and they cast their crowns before the throne."

(13) Revelation 5:13: "To Him who is sitting upon the throne, and to the Lamb, is the blessing, and the honor, and the glory, and the might **to the ages of the ages!**"

(14) Revelation 5:14: "And the four living creatures said, 'Amen!' and the twenty-four elders fell down and they bow before Him who is living **to the ages of the ages**."

(15) Revelation 7:12: "Saying, 'Amen! The blessing, and the glory, and the wisdom, and the thanksgiving, and the honor, and the power, and the strength, are to our God **to the ages of the ages!** Amen!'"

(16) Revelation 10:6: "And did swear in Him who doth live **to the ages of the ages**, who did create the heaven and the things in it, and the land and the things in it, and the sea and the things in it."

(17) Revelation 15:7: "And one of the four living creatures did give to the seven messengers seven golden vials, full of the wrath of God, who is living **to the ages of the ages**"

These passages may simply be saying, as long as this age last, God will be the God of it. Christ will reign as king and priest in the kingdom unto He has abolished all rule and authority, unto He has put all His enemies under His feet. The last enemy to be abolished is death (1 Corinthians 15:20-28). As long as this age lasts, He will reign "unto the ages of ages." At the end of this creation (or "age"), Christ "shall

*deliver up the kingdom to God...then shall the Son also himself be subjected to him that did subject all things unto him, that God may be all in all" (1 Corinthians 15:24-28). "Our Lord and Savior Jesus Christ; to him [is] the glory both now, and to the day of the age! Amen" (2 Peter 3:18 Young's Literal Translation).*

**"I AM"** God does not change with the passing of time; God is always the *"I Am."* God is now, He was God at anytime we call the past, He is God. At anytime we call the future He is the *"I Am"* (Exodus 3:14). *"Before Abraham was born, I am"* (John 8:58). This seems to be saying God is always the God of now, always the *"I Am."*

Death and the grave will last only *"to the age of the ages."* After the end of this creation (age) they will not exist. Saying God is the God of this creation from its beginning unto it end is not to say He was not God before its beginning and after its end. He is the God of this age and all other ages. Revelation 7:12 Saying, *"Amen, the blessing, and the glory, and the wisdom, and the thanksgiving, and the honor, and the power, and the strength, (are) to our God to the ages of (the) ages. Amen."* Also for all ages that have been and will come after the end of this creation (age), God will always be the *"I Am"* of all ages.

After this world ends that God will not ever be doing nothing, but that He will always be doing things that have a beginning and an end as great as the creation of this earth, and its end. There will always be things that have a beginning and an end, always be ages. Just as angels may have seen this creation, the saved may see new creations that God will always be doing. The lost, the dead will miss all this. O that I may live in such a way that I will live, and I will always see the great things God will be always doing in all the ages to come. We sometimes think of God too small for we think of Him as only having to do with our world, our creation; and in all endless time before He made this world we think He did nothing and will do nothing after the end of this world. As great as that would make Him, it still would make Him small in comparison with what He is; makes His power small in comparison with what it is.

**"UNTO THE AGES OF (THE) AGES"** The other four of the twenty-one passages.

**(18) Revelation 14:11: "Unto the ages of (the) ages" is applied one time to worshipers of the beast, not to the beast.** *"And the smoke of their torment doth go up TO ages of ages; and they have no rest day and night, who are bowing before the beast and his image, also if any doth receive the mark of his name."* Footnote in the American Standard Version, *"Gr. UNTO the ages of the ages."* This smoke goes up **UNTO** *"the ages of the ages,"* not without an end, not **IN** *"the ages of the ages,"* not **IN** any ages after *"the ages of the ages."* The time that (1) those on earth that worship the beast have no rest and (2) the smoke goes up are both explicitly stated to be a limited period, *"UNTO the ages of the ages."* See notes above. Most commentaries say the beast is pagan Rome. No worldly government will last for eternity; will not be **IN** all the ages that are to come after the world has ended. Would

it be possible to make a bigger change in God's word than was made when "UNTO the ages of the ages" was changed into two eternities "forever and ever"?

**(19) Revelation 19:3: "Unto the ages of (the) ages" is applied one time to the great harlot.** "And a second time they said, 'Alleluia;' and the smoke doth come up to the ages of the ages" See notes above on Revelation 14:11.

**(20) Revelation 20:10: "Unto the ages of (the) ages" is applied one time to Satan.** "And the Devil, who is leading them astray, was cast into the Lake of Fire and brimstone, where (are) the beast and the false prophet, and they shall be tormented day and night to the ages of (the) ages." See notes above on Revelation 14:11.

**(21) Revelation 22:5: "Unto the ages of (the) ages" is applied one time to those who are in the book of life.** "And night shall not be there, and they have no need of a lamp and light of a sun, because the Lord God doth give them light, and they shall reign to (TO or UNTO) the ages of (the) ages." No matter what view you have, this may be one of the most difficult passages in the Bible.

**The most common view:** This is speaking of the saints in Heaven after the judgment. This view would change the reign of the saints to be in the "ages of Ages" not "unto the ages of the ages." It makes the reign of the saints start after its end. The King James and other translations remove this difficulty by mistranslating.

**Another view:** Christ is now both king and priest unto the church. He is now our high priest (Hebrews 8:1). "For He must reign, till he has put all his enemies under his feet" (1 Corinthians 15:25). When all his enemies are under his feet and the last enemy, death, has been abolished, then He shall deliver up the kingdom to God and be subjected to Him (1 Corinthians 15:23-28). Christ is now our high priest (Hebrews 2:17; 3:1; 4:14; 4:15; 5:1; 5:5; 5:10). He is "a priest forever (aion-age) after the order of Melchizedek" (Hebrews 5:6). "A high priest for ever (aion-age) after the order of Melchizedek" (Hebrews 6:20). "A priest for ever (aion-age) after the order of Melchizedek" (Hebrews 7:17). "You are a priest for ever" (aion-age) (Hebrews 7:21). Christ is now reigning as our high priest, but will He be our high priest after the judgment when there is no sin; therefore, no need for a priest? "And did make us kings and priests" (Revelation 1:6). Those in Christ now reign as kings and priests. "For you were slain, and did purchase unto God with your blood men of every tribe, and tongue, and people, and nation, and made them to be unto our God a kingdom and priests; and they reign upon the earth" (Revelation 5:9-10). **All Christians are now kings and priests, and they now reign upon the earth as long as there will be an earth, but will Christians be kings and priests after the judgment when they are not "upon the earth"?** Will there be any need for priests in Heaven when there will be no sin? Christ will be our Lord in Heaven, but maybe not our high priest. Christian now reign as kings and priests unto the ages of ages, but whatever we will be in Heaven, it does not look as if there will be any need for priests. In this age, those in Christ have Him as their light (John 8:12; 9:5; 11:10; 12:36) and He shines

the same always. There is no nighttime when He shines less. **The reign of those in Christ as kings and priests "unto the ages of the ages" may be over when their eternal life in Heaven begins in the ages of ages. They shall reign unto the ages of (the) ages (22:5) "Unto the ages" is before the time many believe Hell will begin. It is now.**

**A third view:** Most likely the right one. This passage is symbolic, not to be taken literally. The first two views both make the wording be literal, but just as most of this book is in symbols, this may also be symbols, and it is no more to be taken literally than a woman arrayed with the sun (Revelation 12:1), or any of the other symbols in the book.

- Whatever view of this passage you may take, faithful Christians will be with Christ "**in the ages to come**" (Ephesians 2:7) after this age has ended.

That *aion* means forever when it is used with reference to the life of the believer, and that it takes on a meaning of unlimited time that is totally different from its meaning is without precedent with any other word; this dual definition came about by those trying to explain some passages that are difficult to those that believe there is a soul that is now and always will be immortal after it leaves the person it is now in, but it seems to me that it makes more problems than it helps. If God in His revelation to us used a word to sometimes mean a limited time with a beginning and an end, and at other times used the same word to mean an unlimited time without beginning or end, no one could know what He said to us, could not know when this word was limited, or when it was unlimited without an inspired person to tell us. It is obvious that forever or eternal with the meaning that eternal has today is a mistranslation of *aion* (age). Three days (Jonah 2:6) or a lifetime (Exodus 21:6) is not eternity.

Whatever view you take, Revelation is in a book of symbols that most of them are difficult to understand, and it is unwise to base any doctrine on the interpretation of difficult symbols, and less than unwise to make the interpretation of symbols over rule the plain statements of the Bible.

KENNETH FORTIER, a member of the church of Christ says in "Church Doctrine's: Right Or Wrong?" page 28, 2007.

- The Bible says nothing about eternity, as the word eternity is understood today.
- The Bible describes nothing as being eternal, not the world, not the universe.
- Eternity is not a subject of revelation in the Bible; it is a subject of philosophy.

"If *aion* sometimes means a limited and sometimes an, unlimited time, then we need a pope, or a church, or human tradition to tell us what it means in each case, and divine inspiration vanishes, and is replaced by corrupt human mentality." Unsearchable Riches, volume 27, page 175.

**ETERNAL** (*aionios*, the adjective of *aion*) **LIFE:** In about 43 times *aionios* is the life Christ promised to those who obey Him. "*And in the age (aion) that is coming, life age-during (aionios) life (zoe)*" (Young's Literal Translation) Mark 10:30. "*And a certain ruler questioned him, saying, 'Good teacher, what having done—shall I*

*inherit life age-during (aionios)?” Luke 18:18. “Upon hope of life age-during (aionios), which God, who doth not lie, did promise before times of ages” Titus 1:2. Also in Matthew 19:16; 25:46; Mark 10:17; 10:30; Luke 10:25; 18:30; John 3:5; 3:16; 3:36; 4:14; 4:36 5:24; 5:39; 6:27; 6:40; 6:47; 6:54; 6:58; 17:2; 17:3; Acts 13:46; Romans 2:7; 5:21; 6:22; 6:23; Galatians 6:8; 1 Timothy 1:16; 6:12; 6:19; Titus 3:7; 1 John 1:2; 2:25; 3:15; 5:11; 5:13; 5:20; Jude 21.*

**WHAT DO WE MEAN BY “ETERNALITY”** Time we understand. Divisions of time that has a beginning and ending as an “age” we can understand. We can only think of eternity in relation to time, of eternity as an elongation of time; in trying to tell what eternity is we often hear, “After a billion years we will have no less time then when we first begin;” we cannot even think of eternity without thinking of it in relation to time. We can understand ages followed by more ages as was used in the Old Testament, but how do you say how long eternity will be? Can anything or person that had a beginning be eternal? If so, then the definition of eternity we often hear, “Without beginning or ending” could not be right when it is applied to any created thing, angel, persons, worlds, etc.

If there were no measurement of time, then there could not be “ages to come” after the resurrection and judgment, but the Bible speaks repeatedly of ages to come after the Judgment Day. Ages have a beginning and ending; therefore, an age last only for a length of time, they are not without both a beginning and an ending. After the judgment there will be the beginning and ending of ages just as there is now.

CAMPBELL SKINNER DEBATE on Everlasting Punishment, “Because there is no word in the English language which fully expresses what that word in its original sense implies. Had it been lawful to have coined a new word to express *aionion* in English, perhaps *agica*, or *age-lasting*, would have been near it...if *aion* means *age*, and its plural *ages*, (which none either will or can deny,) then *aionion* must mean *age-lasting*, or duration to the *age* or *ages* to which the thing spoken of relates,” page 141. (Note: To *aion* (age) some add “during” and some add “lasting,” “age-during” or “age-lasting.” Neither one is in the Greek, both are an addition to “age”—*aion*).

Terms that describe the saved after this age. “*Everlasting (aionios—age) habitations*” (Hebrews 9:15) “*And because of this, of a new covenant he is mediator, that, death having come, for redemption of the transgressions under the first covenant, those called may receive the promise of the age-during inheritance*” Young’s Literal translation.

- “Everlasting (aionios—age) consolation” (2 Thessalonians 2:16). “*And may our Lord Jesus Christ himself, and our God and Father, who did love us, and did give comfort age-during, and good hope in grace*” Young’s Literal translation.
- “Eternal (aionios—age) inheritance” (Hebrews 9:15). “*And because of this, of a new covenant he is mediator, that, death having come, for redemption of the transgressions under the first covenant, those called may receive the promise of the age-during inheritance*” Young’s Literal translation.
- “An eternal (aionios—age) weight of glory” (2 Corinthians 4:16-18). “*Wherefore, we faint not, but if also our outward man doth decay, yet the inward is renewed day by day; for the momentary light matter of our tribulation, more and more exceedingly an age-during weight of glory doth work out*

- for us—we not looking to the things seen, but to the things not seen; for the things seen [are] temporary, but the things not seen [are] age-during” Young’s Literal translation.
- “A building from God, a house not made with hands, eternal (aionios—age), in the heavens” (2 Corinthians 5:1-2). “For we have known that if our earthly house of the tabernacle may be thrown down, a building from God we have, a house not made with hands—age-during—in the heavens, for also in this we groan, with our dwelling that is from heaven” Young’s Literal translation.
  - “And to Him who is able to establish you, according to my good news, and the preaching of Jesus Christ, according to the revelation of the secret, in the times of the ages (aionios), having been kept silent, and now having been made manifest, also, through prophetic writings, according to a command of the age-during (aionios) God, having been made known to all the nations for obedience of faith—to the only wise God, through Jesus Christ, to him [be] glory to the ages (aion). Amen.” (Romans 16:25-26).
  - “And the God of all grace, who did call you to His age-during (aionios) glory in Christ Jesus, having suffered a little, Himself make you perfect, establish, strengthen, settle [you]; to Him [is] the glory, and the power—to the ages (aion) and the ages (aion)! Amen” (1 Peter 5:10-11).

The root word in Greek from which aion (age) comes from is “oon.” It is used eight times in the New Testament, and it always means a period of time, never time without end. Mark 15:8; Acts 7:51; 2 Corinthians 4:11; 6:10; Titus 1:12; Hebrews 3:10; 1 Peter 3:15; 2 Peter 1:12.

Words that teach an endless duration that are applied to God and the saved, but are never applied **to the lost**.

#### TO GOD

- (1). Romans 1:23 “The glory of the **incorruptible** (aphthartos) God.”
- (2). 1 Timothy 6:16 “Who only has **immortality** (athanasin).”
- (3). Romans 1:20 “Even his **everlasting** (aidios) power and divinity” Aidos is used only two times in the New Testament and is speaking of God, and in Jude 6 of the everlasting (aidios) bonds that now keep the angels that sinned only to the judgment.
- (4). 1 Timothy 1:17 “Now unto the King eternal **immortal** (aphtharsia), invisible, the only God.”

#### TO CHRIST

- (1). 2 Timothy 1:10 “Who (Christ) abolished death, **and brought life and immortality** (aphtharsia) **to light**.”
- (2). Hebrews 7:3 “Abides a priest **continually** (dieenekes).” “But he, when he had offered one sacrifice for sins **for ever** (dieenekes), sat down on the right hand of God” (Hebrews 10:12). “For by one offering he has perfected **for ever** (dieenekes) them that are sanctified” (Hebrews 10:14).
- (3). Hebrews 7:16 “After the power of an **endless** (akatalutos—indissoluble) **life**.” The only time akatalutos—indissoluble is in the New Testament it is applied to Christ.

**TO MAN**, Both ahannasia or aphtharsia are never applied to mankind that are not in Christ.

- (1). 1 Corinthians 9:25 “Now they do it to receive a corruptible crown: but we an **incorruptible** (aphthartos).”
- (2). 1 Corinthians 15:42-44 “So also is the resurrection of the dead. It is sown in corruption; it is raised in **incorruption** (aphtharsia); it is sown in dishonor; it is raised in **glory**; it is sown in weakness; it is raised in **power**; is sown a natural body; it is raised a **spiritual body**.”
- (3). 1 Corinthians 15:52-54 “For the trumpet shall sound, and the dead shall be raised **incorruptible** (aphthartos), and **we** shall be changed. For this corruptible must put on **incorruption** (aphtharsia), and this mortal must put on **immortality** (athanasia). But, when this

corruptible shall have put on **immortality** (athanasia) then shall come to pass the saying that is written, **death is swallowed up in victory.**"

(4). 1 Peter 1:3-4 "Beggat **us** again unto a living hope by the resurrection of Jesus Christ from the dead, unto **an inheritance** (aphtharton) **incorruptible** (aphthartos), **and undefiled, and that fades not away, reserved in Heaven for you**" (not reserved for a soul).

(5). 1 Peter 5:4 "And when the chief Shepherd shall be manifested, **you** shall receive the crown of glory **that fades not away.**"

(6). Romans 2:7 "To them that by patience in well-doing seek for glory and honor and **incorruption** (aththarsia), eternal (aionies) life."

(7). 1 Thessalonians 4:17 "Then **we** who are alive and remain shall be caught up together with them in the clouds to meet the Lord in the air, and thus **we** shall **always** (pantote) be with the Lord." "Seeing he (Christ) **ever** (pantote) lives" (Hebrews 7:25).

(8). Ephesians 2:6-7 "And raised **us** up with him, and made **us** to sit with him in the heavenly places, in Christ Jesus: **that in the ages** (aions) **to come** he might show the exceeding riches of his grace in kindness toward **us** in Christ Jesus." Ages is more than one age to come after this age is gone, not more than one eternity, and not more than one world—King James Version.

- o In the "age" after this age there will be "life" for those in Christ.

- o In all the "ages" after that age there will be "life" for those in Christ.

(9). Luke 20:34-36 "The sons of this age (aion) marry, and are given in marriage, but they that are accounted worthy to attain to that age (aion), and the resurrection from the dead, neither marry, nor are given in marriage: for **neither can they die any more**: for they are equal unto the angels; and are sons of the resurrection."

(10). 2 Corinthians 4:16-18 "Wherefore, **we** faint not, but if also our outward man doth decay, yet the inward is renewed day by day; for the momentary light matter of our tribulation, more and more exceedingly an age-during (aionies) weight of glory doth work out for us we not looking to the things seen, but to the things not seen; for the things seen [are] temporary, but the things not seen [are] age-during (aionies)" (Young's Literal Translation).

(11). 2 Peter 1:4 "That through these **you** may become partakers of the divine nature."

(12). 1 John 3:2 "Beloved, now are **we** children of God, and it is not yet made manifest what **we** shall be. **We** know that, if he shall be manifested, **we** (not souls) shall be like him; for **we** shall see him even as he is."

(13). Revelation 2:7-11 "To **him** who over comes, I will grant to eat of the tree of life...Be faithful until death and I will give **you** the crown of life...**He** who overcomes shall not be hurt by the second death." "He" the person, not a soul that left the person when the person died.

(14). Acts 26:18 "That they may receive remission of sins and an inheritance among them that are sanctified."

(15). John 8:51 "If a man keep my word, he shall never see death." John 8:52 "Shall never taste death."

(16). Romans 8:13 "Shall live."

(17). John 10:28 "They shall never perish."

(18). John 11:26 "Shall never die."

(19). Romans 8:23 Christian are, "Waiting for our adoption."

(20). Romans 8:17-18 "That we may be also glorified with Him...with the glory which shall be revealed to us-ward."

**Every Scripture that speaks of human immortality is always speaking of the person putting on immortality at the resurrection, or the person being changed**

from mortal to immortal, and never of a soul that is now as immortal as it will ever be.

Every Scripture that speaks of human immortality is always speaking of the saved, never the lost.

Not one passage applied *athrarsis*, *aphtharton*, *aidos*, *athanasia*, or *akatalutos* to the lost, neither before nor after the Judgment Day.

## CHAPTER NINE

**UNIVERSALIST—The "age lasting" Hell** "What shall be the end of Them that obey not the gospel of God?" 1 Peter 4:17

Universalist (sometimes called "Restoration" and "Unitarian Universalist") is mostly a reaction against the god that was taught in the Dark Age and by Calvinism, they believe that all souls will end up saved, that no soul will end up in Hell, that it is not possible for a soul that is in any person, not even the worst person that ever lived to not go to Heaven. Whether death is death, or if death is only separation, they believe no one will die or be forever separated from God; therefore, there is no death, no wages of sin, and there will be no second death after the Judgment Day.

**UNIVERSALIST BELIEVES THERE IS NO DEATH:** There seems to be some who believe in a universal salvation mixed in many denominations, also there are Universalist groups like the "Tentmakers" with the one thing all have in common is the belief in universal salvation. There seems to be two kinds of Universalist. (1) Some who do not believe in any kind of Hell, and that all sins are paid in full in this lifetime. (2) Some who believe there will be a Hell, but a very different Hell than the Protestant versions for it will last only for an "age," and will be more of a disciplinary character than punishment. Both destroy the character of even the worse the sinner and turn them all into them saints.

They do much writing to prove the word that is translated everlasting, eternal, forever, age, and world in the King James Version, is from the Greek word "aion," which means "age." In Matthew 24:3 the King James Version says, "*end of the world*," but the New King James Version, New American Standard Version, New International Version and many more say "*end of the age*." They have written hundreds of pages to prove that "aion" means, "age," and their purpose were to prove that Hell would last for only an age. Not one of the repeatedly times "aion" is used says anything about Hell, *aion* (age) is not used in the same passage with any of the four words translated Hell in the King James Version (*sheol*, *hades*, *Gehenna*, *Tartarus*).

Without proving there is a Hell, and without "age lasting" (*aion*) being used with any of the four words that are mistranslated Hell, they make a Hell that is "age lasting," with both a beginning and ending, a Hell that is not everlasting. They have

immortal souls in their "age lasting" Hell without proving the lost has an immortal soul that will live forever after the judgment.

**THE BIG PROBLEMS FOR UNIVERSALISM TO BE TRUE THEY MUST PROVE:**

**(1) IMMORTALITY:** That the lost have a soul in them that is now immortal, and this deathless something that is in a person cannot die, and it will outlast the Hell they believe to be only "age lasting." **For a soul to now have never ending life is as immortal as immortal can ever be. If a soul that is now in any person will never die, and all souls will live forever in Heaven, how could all souls not have eternal life? How much more immortal could a soul that is in a person already be, or ever will be even without the resurrection?**

**(2) NO DEATH PENALTY:** Universalist teach that there is no death, that souls of all who do not believe on Christ will not perish, but all souls will have eternal life the same as souls that that were in those who do believe (John 3:16). There is no death or destruction in the Universalist system, just eternal life for all souls, it makes no difference what a person may believe or do in this lifetime, after the death of the persons the souls that were in them will have eternal life in Heaven, but only eternal life for the immaterial something that had been in a person, not life for the person. Souls that are in all must be immortal for Universalism to be true; unless all have a soul in them that is deathless, all souls will not end up in Heaven. They believe "*wages of sin is death*" to no soul, not even one soul.

**(3) HELL:** Although some call it a place of an "attitude adjustment," even if it is only "age lasting," and it will be more of a disciplinary character or "attitude adjustments" than punishment, there is nothing about an "age lasting" Hell, or about a time or place of "attitude adjustment" in the Bible; they had have added both (1) an age, and (2) a place to make possible the salvation of all souls after the persons are dead for all souls or spirits that are not saved in this life—time; they have added an "age" after death out of thin air.

**BIBLE: ————— Resurrection—Judgment—Second death**

**UNIVERSALIST: — Resurrection—Judgment—Attitude Adjustment Age—Heaven**

**THE SHORT HELL—Resurrection—Judgment—A Short Hell—Second death**

**CATHOLIC: Death—Purgatory—Heaven**

- All three add a time (age, Hell, Purgatory, or whatever name they call it) that is not in the Bible. All three have those souls that are in them being tormented for a time, some a short time, some for a much longer time unto they, not Christ, pay for their own sins. Universalist say the lost will not be slain or killed but after an "age of attitude adjustments" (that seems to be about the same as the Catholic Purgatory) "all," even the most evil will be just as saved as those that believe Christ.

**(1). IMMORTALITY:** Those that believe there is an immortal being now in a person that cannot ever die are divided into two groups.

(1) Those that believe there is an immortal soul in all persons, and only a few of these souls will live in happiness after the death of the persons they were in, but

most souls will live in endless torment after the death of the person if that person did not save them by believing.

(2) Those that believe there is an immortal soul in all persons, but God is not an evil being and He will not endlessly torment any of these immortal beings, but at some time after the resurrection these souls will be saved if they were not saved by persons they were in.

Both of these two groups, (1) those that believe all have a soul that is now as immortal as God, that God will endlessly torment, (2) and those that believe all have a soul that God will save stand only if there is a soul in a person that is now deathless, and that deathless soul that is now as immortal as God will not die when the person dies. If there were not an immortal soul that lives without the person after his or her death then both groups would fall; their belief totally depends on deathless souls being real living beings. Both believe that every soul is deathless, and agree that there is an immortal soul in each person that will live after the person is dead. They only disagree on how and where a deathless soul that they believe is now just as immortal as God and that soul will live after the person it had been in is dead. If souls were now just as immortal as God, those souls would have to live someplace; one group believes God would have to torment them; the other group believes God will have to save them.

Both believe that for a soul that all souls are now just as immortal as God there is no death; "*the wages of sin*" cannot be death; both believe immortal souls cannot be destroyed and that not even God can destroy them. Both were founded on the pagan Platonic teaching of a deathless immortal soul that is trapped in a person unto the death of the person.

**Universalist must prove that all men now have an immaterial living something they call "soul" and that this something will live in a person unto the death of the person, then after the death of the persons there will be an "attitude adjustment for deathless souls," after which all souls that had been in the unsaved dead persons will be saved.**

In the "Debate on the Destiny of the Wicked" between George T. Carpenter of the church of Christ and John Hughes of the Universalist Church, 1875, Hughes said, "The soul, the principle of animal life. The spirit, the 'inward man,' the real man, to be invested in the resurrection with a new, spiritual body; clothed with immortality, to live forever in the spirit world."

Even so, most Universalist seems to be just as unsure of what is in a person that they think has immortality, a soul or a spirit, as are most Protestants who believe something that is in a person is now immortal and it will not die; therefore, this immortal something that is now in a person, whether this something is a deathless soul or a deathless spirit, it must live forever somewhere.

Universalist must prove that Christ will give "*eternal life*" to the spirits that are in all, even those souls that were in persons that did not come to Him (John 5:40). They

know this, and they know that all persons will not come to Christ in this lifetime; therefore, they have made up an "age" after the resurrection, which is not in the Bible, in which they think the spirits that were in all the lost will be taught about Christ, and all these spirit will come to Christ.

**(2). THE DEATH PENALTY MUST BE PROVED NOT TO BE DEATH:** Universalist **must** do away with the Bible teaching on death. There can be no wages of sin, as they believe there is no death for souls or spirits. The only real difference with them and unconditional Protestants is where they think an immortal, no substance, invisible souls or spirits will end up.

- PAUL: "The wages of sin is death."
- MANY OF THE PROTESTANTS: "The wages of sin is a lost of well being by a deathless soul being separated from God and being forever tormented by Him.
- UNIVERSALIST: "The wages of sin is an 'age-during correction' or 'whatever kind of attitude adjustment necessary,' then Hell will end for all deathless soul, and all souls that underwent the attitude adjustment will be moved from Hell (or whatever name Universalist call that place) to Heaven.
- **Both must make death not be death, both must find a way to change death to life.**

(1) After the death of the person unconditional Protestants put souls that were in some persons in Heaven, and souls that had been in some persons when the persons were alive are put in Hell; all souls are believed to be deathless and have eternal life both before and after the death of the persons they were in.

(2) After the death of the person Universalist puts souls that were in all before the death of the persons are now put in a place that is not in the Bible to be taught; after the souls suffer for a while all souls will have eternal life.

- Both must do away with death. Both must deny the Bible when it says, "*The wages of sin is death.*"
- Both believe, "*You shall not surely die,*" that from the day of your birth there is a something in you that after your death this something will go on living, it will never be destroyed, and it is not possible for it to die, it must live forever.

**Some Universalist believes the second death make a spirit that is in a person alive.** They teach after the second death, the spirits that were in all the lost persons will be made alive. The spirit that they believe to be already deathless and immortal will then be made alive! Universalist believes that when death the last enemy is destroyed, an immortal spirit that is now in a person cannot be dead; they think the end of death must give life to the already immortal spirits that was in all dead persons. **The Universalist believes the second death to be the end of death, not the end of souls that were in sinner.** They seem to think that when "*death shall be no more*" (Revelation 21:4) could only mean that the deathless souls of all who had died will have been raised from the dead, and all that ever lived the souls that were in them would have to be alive, for if any souls were dead it could not be said there is no more death. On this they seem to be unsure; they believe all

souls to be deathless, but say these deathless souls that are dead will be "made alive" by the end of death.

**It is the sinner that will die** (Revelation 21:8), **and when there is no more sinners left to die there will be no more death, no more will be dying.** The wages of sin is death. It is the sinner who will be paid the wages of their sin, which is death. Universalist makes death pay the wages of the sin of the sinner, and the souls that were in sinners pay nothing; **there would then be no difference in a sinner and a saint.** Death is an enemy and will be destroyed, but Universalist make there being "*no more death*" into a gateway to Heaven for souls that are now in all sinners, and God will forgive all sins of the worst sinner even if they rejected Christ all their life. **Does death mean the end of life, or does death mean the beginning of eternal life?** Death, the last enemy will be abolished (1 Corinthians 15:26); Universalist makes the abolishment of death be a resurrection to eternal life of souls or spirit that they say are not dead, a resurrection of all the deathless, bodiless souls or spirits of all the lost that are now the enemies of Christ. John said of unbelievers and murderers, "*Their part shall be in the lake that burns with fire and brimstone; which is the second death,*" but the Universalist changed this and say it is anyone being dead that will end, and all that have "*their part*" in the lake will be made alive at the death of the lake of fire (which they say will be the end of death by which they mean the end of anyone being dead)!

**Death means the end of life, not the beginning of an immortal life for a deathless soul that already has immortality,** but they must find a way to do away with the second death. They believe souls that were in the lost are all now alive someplace, are now alive in Hell or whatever name they give it, but they are not in Heaven until their souls undergo an "attitude adjustments;" then they will have their name in the book of life and never die, that the second death will be the end of death (the end, or death of death, not the death of souls that are in sinner); for death to end they believe that life and immortality must be given to souls that are in all, and death being abolished must mean eternal life in Heaven for all souls!

- Universalist believes that souls of, "*The fearful, and unbelieving, and abominable, and murderers, and fornicators, and sorcerers, and idolaters, and all liars*" will be made alive in Heaven, and that it will be only death, not the spirits that were in dead persons, that will be cast into the lake of fire, and then souls that were in all will be alive forever when death is brought to an end by being cast into the lake of fire.
- The Bible says, "*The fearful, and unbelieving, and abominable, and murderers, and fornicators, and sorcerers, and idolaters, and all liars, **their part** (the persons that did these sins, not souls that could not commit fornication) shall be in the lake that burns with fire and brimstone: which is the second death*" (Revelation 21:8). Both (1) death (2) and the lost are both cast into the same lake of fire (Revelation 20:14-15); therefore, if the lake of fire is the end of death (Revelation 20:14), it is also the end of the lost persons that are cast into it (Revelation 20:15; 21:8), and it is undeniable that God says the same thing will

happen to both death and the lost persons, both will be brought to an end by being cast into the lake of fire, which is the second death.

**(3). THE HELL PROBLEM:** If Universalists call it an age lasting Hell or an age lasting something else, they still have a place where souls that were in all the lost to go after the judgment for an "age;" they have made Hell into an age lasting place where the immaterial souls of all the lost will be unto they are corrected, and then all the immaterial something will go to Heaven. What if some would not repent then? Will God make these souls repent against their will, repent of the sins of the person they were in, not their own sins?

GARY AMIRALTY, a Tentmaker Minister in an e-mail to me said, "Most universalists I know who believe in 'age-during correction,' do NOT see it as God torturing people in a literal lake or anything like that, they see it as simply correcting or teaching them further."

G. JESSUP: "We can be sure there will be judgment, punishment, corrections, or whatever kind of 'attitude adjustments' necessary for the unbelievers according to their works, and for some it could be very long and painfully excruciating: but forever?"

He did not give one passage from the Bible to prove this "attitude adjustment" place, and I cannot find where universalists try to prove there will be a place of "attitude adjustment" after death in any of their writing. Maybe the reason they do not is that they know there is no proof. If they had proof, I am sure they would put it in large print. That there will be a second chance after death is opposed to what is taught in the Bible, but universalists believe there will be a second chance for all souls, and that no soul will be able to say no.

He has a place where souls suffer unto they suffer enough to pay for the sins of the person they were in; that souls go into a place much like the Catholics Purgatory where they suffer and pay for sins; these sins were not paid for and blotted out by the blood of Christ as was the sins of those persons that believed in this lifetime.

If, as some Universalist say, this place of suffering for souls after the death of the persons they were in is the lake of fire, then the lake of fire is made into a literal place with literal suffering for immaterial souls, but the fire in it cannot be literal fire for if it were it would literally do what fire does, burn up anything cast into it.

**(1) They must prove that souls that were in all the lost are now alive someplace, that there is such a place whatever name they give it.**

**(2) That these souls will be there for only an "age" of disciplinary training, a training that all souls that were in lost persons must go through just because they were in persons that did not believe, for the sins of the person, not their own sins.**

**(3) And that they all these souls will suffer during this "attitude adjustment," unto they repent and they will all end up in Heaven.**

They must disprove the "Hell" that many Protestants believe, but at the same time prove there is some kind of a place that is not Heaven or Earth that is an "age lasting" place that is not eternal. As is shown in the above quotation Universalists do not believe any soul will forever be in the lake of fire that they do not believe is a literal lake of fire. They do not believe the Protestant view of Gehenna; therefore,

they must prove that after death God will torment souls they believe to have been in all who do not believe in Christ in this lifetime, some souls for a short time, some will be tormented more, some tormented much more extremely.

I have not seen where they say why there will be a judgment. Maybe for God to decide how much He will have to torment them, and how much He will torment Satan and his demons to make them repent. Whatever forms the Universalist says the torment will be, physical, mentally, or whatever, it would still be God doing the tormenting.

**Universalist must prove that there will be an "age" of attitude adjustment.** They say there has been many "ages," and will be an "age" after death and before Heaven in which "judgment, punishment, corrections, or whatever kind of 'attitude adjustments' necessary for the unbelievers according to their works" takes place." They reason that there must be such an age for those who do not come to Christ in this life must have a time to come to Him. All must accept Christ, and most do not in this life. It is a made up age, which is not found in the Bible, not one word about it. **Until they prove there will be such an age, they are on a make believe foundation. There is no place called Hell in the Bible, whether it is an age lasting attitude adjustment, or everlasting life with torment.**

- **Protestants changed the second death into eternal life in Hell for a soul or a spirit that had been in all those that never believed in God.**
- **Universalist changed the second death into a place where everyone that never believed in God, the souls that were in them will somehow be made believers and moved to Heaven with eternal life.**
- **Both Universalist and Protestants must prove the platonic doctrine that all are born with something that is in them that is not subject to death, that mankind has something in them that is now immortal that animal do not have.** Both the doctrine of Hell and the Universalist doctrine that souls that are in all will be saved are founded on an assumption that a person has an immaterial, invisible, immortal soul in them that cannot die, and this immortal, deathless soul must live forever somewhere.
- **Both must deny that death is a real death because a soul will never die.** Death cannot be the wages of sin for all will have the gift of eternal life; therefore, a soul of no sinner can pay the wages of sin if it is death. Universalist point to Romans 6:23 to prove there is no Hell, but they do not believe it when it says, "*the wages of sin is death.*"
- **Both must deny that the penalty of sin is death.** The Protestant does away with death by making death into an eternal life of torment in Hell, a life that is separated from God; Universalist cannot have death being death or an eternal life separated from God; therefore, they must do away with death. They try to do this by making the end of death mean all souls that had been in all persons (souls that now has eternal life) would all be given eternal life in Heaven. Both turn death into life, but both do it in different ways. Both make souls that were in the unsaved dead persons be living at different places. **For both, if "*the wages of sin is death,*" if death were really death, it would completely destroy both; therefore, both try to destroy death by making death be life for a deathless soul.** Universalist take from the Platonic doctrine that when a soul is set free of the body, that soul will in time return to God, death becomes the instrument of salvation for all.

- **According to Protestants, the wages of sin is eternal life with torment.**
- **According to Universalist, the wages of sin is eternal life without torment, even eternal life to those who reject Christ.**
- **Both must deny that die, perish, destroyed, lost, and death are not used with their true meaning, and must believe that they are only used in a peculiar or theological sense; therefore, they could not be understood without help from someone who is inspired. Both believe that a soul that is in a person will never die. According to both, "the wages of sin is death" is not death to any soul.** Just as with innate immoralists, Universalist must redefine many words, life, death, die, dead, destroy, perish, destruction, consumed, kill, end, burned up, and sleep, must **all** be redefined in a way that the world does not use them. See chapter two and three.

Whatever name they give it, they must prove there is a place of punishment, or whatever they call it where those not saved will be between the Judgment and Heaven; a place that is not on earth, or not in Heaven.

Bible:—Judgment—then Heaven or second death

Universalist:—Judgment – some kind of place wherever it is – then Heaven, but no second death

**UNIVERSALIST USE OF "ALL"** The way Universalist use "all" seems to be their main argument. "But what it really says is IN CHRIST...ALL A-L-L ALL shall be made ALIVE! Then each of the ALL in his own order" (from one of their web pages, "Can this be true?").

They ask questions like: God will have all to be saved (1 Timothy 2:4); can His will be thwarted? Jesus came to save all (John 12:47); will He succeed? Jesus is the savior of all the world (1 John 4:14); why don't you believe it? And many more like these. Their thinking seems to be that Christ came to save **all**; and if He does not do it in this lifetime, then after the death of the person He must save souls that were in lost persons. This would be great if it was true, but nothing is said about a soul that is in anyone being saved after his or her death. They know that most do not believe in Christ in this lifetime; therefore, they **must** make **all** souls believe at some time after death. What will happen after death? Christ says, *"For the hour comes, in which all (all persons) that are in the tombs shall hear his voice, and come forth: they that have done good, unto the resurrection of life; and they that have done evil, unto the resurrection of judgment"* (John 5:28-29). There is nothing said about anyone being saved after death. The lost persons are raised to judgment, not souls that are not dead, but are resurrected from the dead anyway, and not souls that already have eternal life are given a second eternal life. *"Now is the acceptable time: behold, now is the day of salvation"* (2 Corinthians 6:2). God loves **all**, and Christ died for **all**, but **all** will not come to Him. He made a person where he or she could choose to, or choose not to. Universalist teaching is that God will show His love to **all** in a way that **all**, even Satan, will love Him. To so overpower the freewill of a person is the same as making them love Him when they could not help it. It would be the same thing as taking their freewill away. This "attitude adjustments" must be strong enough to overpower the spirits that were in the most evil; therefore, they are made to believe even against their will. They make up both (1) this "attitude adjustments," (2) and the

both the time and the place where it takes place. Hell, are whatever they call it, because they must have both a time and a place if souls that were in all are to have this "attitude adjustments" to be saved is not in the Bible.

**UNIVERSALIST TEACHING OF ALL WILL BE SAVED** makes much of the Bible be foolishness, vain babbling, meaningless, or just an outright lie. It makes:

(1). Satan's greatest lie would be no lie, but is the truth. If all will be saved, no one will die. Satan told the truth; but when God said they would die, He is the one who told the greatest lie (Genesis 3).

(2). God said, *"The fearful, and unbelieving, and abominable, and murderers, and fornicators, and sorcerers, and idolaters, and all liars; **their** part shall be in the lake that burns with fire and brimstone; which **is the second death**"* (Revelation 20:8). Universalist says, "Not so God, all will be saved. None will die the second death, for there cannot be a real second death, souls that are in all will have eternal life in Heaven."

(3). No broad way *"that leads to destruction, and many are they that enter in thereby"* (Matthew 7:13).

(4). **No death.** Whatever you think death is, whether death is death, or if death is just a separation from God, no soul will be dead; no soul will be separated from God. Death could not death. The wages of sin could not be death (Romans 6:23); the wages of sin could not be separation from God. *"The wages of sin is death"* must be changed to some "kind of 'attitude adjustments' age necessary for the unbelievers according to their works," which will last for an "age"; but the wages of sin cannot be a real death that will be forever. While this attitude adjustment age is going on, souls that were in the dead persons must be very much alive, just as alive as they will be when the attitude adjustment age is over; **if the wages of sin is not death, does sin have no wages?**

(5). *"But he that obeys not the Son **shall not see life**"* (John 3:36) must be changed to, "But he that obeys not the Son, even he that denies the Son, a spirit that was in that person that obeys not the Son **shall see eternal life.**"

(6). They use *"all made alive"* to teach all the lost will have immortality. When they make *"all made alive"* to be all will be given endless life at the second coming of Christ, there cannot be a judgment or a second death. All will be saved. No need of a Judgment Day to judge some good and some bad, it is made to be useless for both those who believe in this lifetime, and those who do not believe will be the same, all will be saved. They over look the fact that **the "all" Paul is speaking of are all the saved, all** saints who are asleep in Christ, and **all** saints who will be living at His coming. Nothing is said in that passage about **all** the ones who are not in Christ; they will be raised to judgment, not life at the resurrection; they are not **now in Christ**, and they never will have the "life" Christ gives to those who obey Him. Their names are not in the book of life. *"For we are a sweet savor of Christ unto God, in them that*

are saved, and in them that perish: to the one a savor from death unto death; to the other a savor from life unto life" (2 Corinthians 2:15-16). Christ will raise the lost persons from the dead, but only to be judged and return to the dead "from death unto death"; and there will never be another resurrection.

(7). "I tell you Nay: but, except you repent, you shall all in like manner perish" (Luke 13:1-5). Universalist says not so Jesus, all souls will be saved; no soul will perish. It can be asked of them as they ask, "Did Christ not know what He was saying; why don't you believe Him?" Even they cannot deny that Christ said, "Except you repent, you shall all likewise perish," just as did the Galileans that were killed and their blood mingled with the sacrifices. Why do they not believe Him? How do they change "perish" into "you shall all likewise be saved even if you do not repent"?

(8). "Not every one that says unto me, Lord, Lord, shall enter into the kingdom of Heaven; but he that does the will of my Father who is in Heaven. Many will say to me in that day, Lord, Lord, did we not prophesy by your name, and by your name cast out demons, and by your name do many mighty works? And then will I profess unto them, I never knew you: depart from me, you that work iniquity" (Matthew 7:21-23). How could Christ have been so wrong? How could He not know that the Universalist says **all** will enter into the kingdom of Heaven? Why would Christ be telling them that in the Judgment Day after the resurrection not all will enter into the kingdom of Heaven?

- **Universalist:** All that work iniquity will enter into the kingdom of Heaven.
- **Christ:** Not all will enter into the kingdom of Heaven (Matthew 7:21-23). Why do they not believe Him? Why would Christ tell those that "work iniquity" to depart from Him? Did He not know all will be saved, and all will come to Him?

(9). They must change the words of Christ. "He that believes and is baptized shall be saved; but he that believes not shall be condemned" must be changed to, "He that believes and he that believes not shall both be saved." Why do they not believe Christ? Why do they make, "Shall be saved," and, "Shall be condemned" both mean, "Shall be saved"?

(10). Makes being a Christian and living for Christ be no better than not being a Christian. Souls that are now in all persons are going to end up being saved regardless of what the person dose or dose not do. Makes taking the Gospel to the lost a waste of time; souls that are in all are going to be saved anyway, and those who do not hear the Gospel may spend less time in the age lasting Hell, and may have less torment than will those who hear and reject the Gospel; therefore, taking the Gospel to them may do more harm to most than it will do good. Because most that hear the Gospel will not believe it and will reject Christ, most will be made to suffer longer in the "age lasting attitude adjustment" place than they would if the Gospel were not taken to them and they never rejected Christ.

(11). God give His Son to save "*whosoever believeth on Him.*" (John 3:16), but they must believe in their lifetime, and many do not. "*Without faith it is impossible to be well-pleasing unto God*" (Hebrews 11:6). God will not raise them and save everyone after He torments them for an age. He will not take away their freewill and make them believe.

(12). Paul said they who practice the works of the flesh **shall not** inherit the kingdom of God (Galatians 5:16-24). Universalist says Paul was wrong, they who practice the works of the flesh shall inherit the kingdom of God after they spend some time in some kind of torment having an "attitude adjustments."

(13). Christ said, "*He that obeys not the son shall not see life,*" (John 3:36). Universalist says they will see life. How could those who shall not see life, and shall not inherit the kingdom of God have everlasting life in the kingdom they shall not inherit (Matthew 7:21-23)?

GARY AMORALITY in an E mail to me June 15, 1999, said, "You've taken a big step out of Hell, but you still leave Jesus as a sinner. He didn't accomplish what He came to do...save the world. If He fails in His mission, He can't be the Messiah."

**How does Universalist think Jesus is a sinner?** Gary said, "But you still leave Jesus as a sinner." Jesus had no sins of His own and even if He saved no one, not one person, He had no sins, and not giving eternal life to those who do not believe in Him does not make Him a sinner as Gary Amorality said it would.

**Universalist** says God is a God of love, and He will not kill any; all will be saved. They overlook the fact that He is also a just God, and sin must be paid for with death (Romans 6:23). The death of the sinner is just if it be death in this life, or if it the second death at the judgment for **all** who has not had their sins washed away by the blood of Christ; for **all** have sinned; therefore, it is just for them to receive the wages of their sins. If they have not had their sins washed away by the blood of Christ, raised with Christ in baptism, the sinner will die. Death is sure and just for them. Throughout the Old Testament, God destroyed those who rejected Him, as in the flood, or when He ordered the destruction of the Amalekites. He never tormented His enemies, He destroyed them; their life ended. Death was the way God dealt with His enemies then, and the way He will deal with them at the judgment. He will destroy them with death, the second death, not torment them forever, or for an age.

Universalist may think this cruel, but it is justice, not cruelly. God would not be God if He were not just? If He had no law, which has a penalty for not keeping it, He could not rule and there would be no sin. There is sin, and its penalty is death.

E. PETAVEL, D. D.: "In the first place we complain of its relative novelty. It does not appear in the history of doctrine until the beginning of the third century. Barnabas, Clement of Rome, Hermas, Ignatius, Polycarp, Justin Martyr, Theophilus of Antioch, Irenaeus, all the first fathers of the church are Conditionalists. Not one of them taught Universalism. Merely the first slight traces of the doctrine are contained in the writings of Clement of Alexandria." *The Extinction Of Evil*, page 90, 1889.

**CAN ANYONE BE SAVED WITHOUT THE NEW BIRTH?** *“Jesus answered and said to him, ‘Truly, truly, I say to you, unless one is born again, he cannot see the kingdom of God...I say to you, unless one is born of water and the Spirit, he cannot enter into the kingdom of God,’”* Where Jesus said “cannot” many make many exceptions, some of which without the new birth would put many more in Heaven than will be there by the new birth.

ONE EXCEPTION: Some say there is an “age of accountability” where all will go to Heaven without the new birth if they die before they reach it. How can anyone even know that there is such an age, or how can anyone know what that age is when nothing is said about it in the Bible? It is added even by those who say they do not add to the Bible, and it puts many in Heaven without the new birth; world wide it would put more in Heaven than the new birth. It would put one in Heaven that died the day before reaching that age, and another in Hell that died the day after. This exception is nothing more than an attempt by those that believe in an immortal soul that is not subject to death to keep billions of children out of the fiery Hell and from being tormented by God. This exception put billions in Heaven without the death of Christ for it claims that the billions will be in Heaven because they have no sins and have no need to be saved by the blood and death of Christ.

ANOTHER EXCEPTION: Many believe it would be unjust of God to endlessly torment the billions and billions of the world that never know anything about Christ; therefore, never had a chance to believe in Christ and be born again. Even though most of this billions and billions worship other gods they will somehow end up saved in Heaven without the Bible, without the new birth, without having faith in Christ.

- This one makes it better to live in a part of the world where the Gospel is not known for many more from that part of the world will be in Heaven than will be from where it is well known.

PERHAPS THE BIGGEST EXCEPTION: Universalism believes all that never heard the Gospel and all that did hear it and rejected it will be given another chance after death, a chance that will be so strong that none can reject it, all, even a soul that had been in the most evil person will be made to be saved, not one soul will be able to continue in the unbelief of the person it that it had been in, even Satan will be made to be saved.

- This exception makes it both (1) OK to do what ever you want to, you will be saved anyway. (2) Of not much if any use to take the Gospel to the lost for they will be saved if you do or if you do not.
- All are an attempt to put all in the narrow way and none in the broad way (Matthew 7:13).

W. P. STRICKLAND: “Perhaps no form of error has ever been devised so perfectly adapted to deceive the lovers of sin, as the one under consideration. It at once addresses itself to the depraved appetites and passions of men; and is so admirably adjusted to this end, that it inspires a fallacious hope in which there is no reason, and for the support of which there is no evidence” From introduction to “Universalism Against Itself,” 1883. It does this by telling the sinners they can sin all they wants to and will still end up in Heaven.

**END NOTE:** The Universalist teaching that all souls that had been in all persons, without exception, will end up saved has had a negative effect on their membership, and they survived by many of the Universalist merging with the Unitarians and became the Unitarian Universalist Association Of Congregations.

Many in the Church of God and Congregation of God also teach there will be "an opportunity for salvation" after the resurrection, but unlike the Universalist, they believe some souls will reject it, and for those souls that do there will be the second death, not being eternal tormented by God.

# CHAPTER TEN

## The Results Of Attributing Evil Pagan Teachings To God By Religious People

This God slandering Dark Age doctrine of Hell makes God evil, cruel, sadistic, and fiendish. By some unknown and twisted reasoning it is assumed that for God to be just He must forever torment souls that had been in the lost persons for His justice demands this; how does "God is a just God" demand that there is a Hell, or prove there is a Hell? From the first sin, God's sentence to Adam was not eternal torment but death. Throughout the Bible the sentence for sin is always death, not torment. *"The wages of sin is death."* That His justice demands that He must forever torment souls that were in unbelievers is without any foundation in His word. To put it pure and simple, it is a doctrine of man and it makes God evil, cruel, and fiendish for if the punishment exceeds the crime by millions of times, it is injustice, not justice. It is this pagan doctrine that has made many atheists.

If a man should put a single person in a dark pit that had raped and killed his wife, and torment him day and night for ten years, most would condemn him to the hottest part of "Hell." Yet, some teach that God made mankind knowing that most of them would be lost, and many millions would never hear His word; yet He knew before He made them that He was going to torment them worse than anything we can imagine, not for ten years, but for time without end, for all the ages to come. If they were right it would be God doing the tormenting; God would be the one who makes the fire and keeps it burning forever. Many try to justify God for doing more than any man can do, and being more cruel and sadistic than the most evil man could ever be by saying we cannot understand the evil of sin. The God of the Bible is a God of love and justice, not as many make Him, sadistic, fiendish, cruel, evil, and in character much like Satan. It is a certainty (1) that in the Hell that is preached today no one will be corrected by the torment, (2) that no one in Hell will ever be corrected by Hell; therefore, it can only be sadistic, and there is no way that endless sadistic torment of most of mankind by God would not make Him sadistic; much of today's preaching makes God both evil and sadistic. What ever is unjust is unjust; the only way that God's justice could be different from our justice is for His justice to be what we would call injustice; the only way we can understand what justice is would make the God of many into an evil Devil.

**THE ULTIMATE EVIL:** "The idea of never-ending conscious agony is so completely revolting to our instinctive moral and judicial senses that we could fittingly call it the ultimate evil. If we're

honest about the matter, this is exactly what it is. After all, is it possible to come up with a worse notion than perpetual fiery conscious misery—with no merciful respite or end to the suffering? The mere idea is so disturbing that it makes it a very hard subject to discuss calmly. How can anyone with an ounce of human compassion contemplate the idea dispassionately when the view of ceaseless torture is so profoundly disturbing?" From chapter eight of: [www.hell-know.net/](http://www.hell-know.net/)

**THE DEPRIVED, REVOLTING EVIL:** "To torment a child that dies without ever knowing anything about God or His word forever day and night with a torment worse than any pain we can have on this earth would not be 'justice,' but sadistic. What kind of a person could love a God who was tormenting his wife and children with more pain than anyone has ever had in this life? When we are in Heaven, do you think we will be singing of God's love and mercy while He is cruelly tormenting most of mankind and many you now love, your wife or husband, your father and mother, your child, your friend? Is there a greater perversion of Scripture than to attribute such characteristics to God? Is it reasonable to believe that the righteous in their glorified state can be indifferent to, and unaffected by, the endless sufferings of countless millions of their fellow beings, among who would probably be found parents, children, husbands, wives, etc.? Is it possible that they will be destitute of deprived of qualities which are considered most lovely and godlike in this life; viz., piety, sympathy, compassion, commiseration for others' woes, etc.? Will insensibility to the woes of the wretched ever become a virtue? Will that which is a vice in this life, become a grace in the glorious future life?" From a web page by "Ron" which is no longer on the net.

Today, many think that the electric chair or hanging of a person who has killed many is inhumane though it takes only a few seconds; but these same people see no inconsistency in believing it is just for God to torment the same person, even if that person has never heard His word, with a torment which they say is much worse than the few seconds would be, and this torment by God will not last only for a few seconds, but for an endless eternity.

**THE PAIN OF HELL ACCORDING TO BELIEVERS IN HELL:** "If all the pains, sorrows, miseries and calamities that have been inflicted upon the sons of man...should meet together and center in one man they would not so much as amount on one of the least of the pains of hell." Thomas Brooks.

**More Cruel And Sadistic Than Any Heathen God:** According to Calvin his god that is believed in and worshiped by many is a god many times more evil, more cruel, and sadistic than any heathen god. Before the Calvin god made the world, he rigged the outcome and chose to make most of mankind to be lost before he made them. According to Calvin his god even made it impossible for most to believe, but will torment them forever for not believing. The torment by the worshipers of heathen gods soon ended with death of the ones being tormented, but Calvinism teaches their god made most men, many millions, just so he could torment them without end for eternity "for his good pleasure." According to Hell fire Calvin teachers, this torment will be many times worse than any torment by the worshipers of heathen gods; and will never end in the death of those being tormented. How could any person who has an ounce of compassion love and worship such a god?

Those who believe in the Calvin god say this god chose you to be saved, or to be lost before he made the world. If you are one of the few chosen by this evil god to be

saved, even if you live in the most out of the way place in the world and never know of God or Christ, when the time comes for you to be saved you will be. You can do nothing about it, and you cannot say no. If you are one of the many he chose before you were born to torment forever, there is no use to send preachers to you; there is no use for you to read the Bible or do anything; there is nothing you or anyone can do. According to Calvin this god made you just because he wants to torment you forever, and he will. Such a god is like a very rich ruler who torments a thousand people "for his good pleasure" and enjoyment, and chose you to make rich and happy. He would not be worthily of your love, but only your contempt. To destroy those who chose to be evil is one thing; but to make them be evil before they were born, and then torment them without end with more pain than they can know in this lifetime for being what he made them to be is not justice. He would be an unjust and evil god. He made them evil and gave them no chance not to be, and then torments them for being what He made them to be. If you put a person who worked in a store in the electric chair for unknowingly short changing a person one cent, your injustice would not equal that of a god that made one person just so he could torment that person for endless ages. Those that believe as Calvin did say their god did this with most of mankind.

Most are filled with grief when a loved one or friend has some sickness that makes them suffer, even when they know the suffering will soon end with death. Yet, they worship a god who they believe will take pleasure in making their loved one suffer, and in the suffering of billions without end; not only will he take pleasure in it, he will be the one that is tormenting there loved one and friends and making them suffer, and he made them just so he could torment and make them suffer. **Calvin did not get his doctrine from the heathens for the heathens had no doctrine as cruel, as fiendish, as black, or as unjust as his god is.**

**A SCANDAL AGAINST THE ALMIGHTY:** "For were a woman to commit a crime against her husband, and he punishes her by holding her hand in the fire until the flesh burned off the bones, he would be pronounced one of the most cruel beings in the world; and if he were to escape justice, he would be hunted as a wild beast; and when brought to trial and condemned, he would be pronounced worthy of thrice the punishment that the law could inflict. And he would have been tried and condemned by men, most of whom, perhaps, believed that God would take that same woman, for that same crime that she had committed against her husband, and put—not only her hand, but her whole self into a Lake of Fire and Brimstone;—not for half an hour—not for a day—not for a year—nor for ten thousand years only, but for all Eternity. Also, that this Burning of her in a Blazing Hell would be so agreeable to the determination of the Almighty that no pity could be excited, no mercy shown; but that there, in that Lake of Fire she should gnash, and groan, and wail Eternally. Oh! How horrid the picture! And what a terrible crime, even in the light of their own actions, to charge God with such cruelty!" John Kent, "Eternal Burning, A Scandal Against The Almighty," 1879.

**A GOD OF INFINITE HORROR:** "That God would rise the wicked and give them immortality only to torment them in a devil's hell unendingly is both gross and vulgar, even blasphemous. Such

a God is not the one described in the Bible...If the God of heaven subjects innumerable billions to unending and indescribable torment, it can only be seen as the one infinite horror." Leroy Garrett, Restoration Review, November 1990.

**A MOCKERY OF TRUTH AND A BLASPHEMY AGAINST DEITY:** "My opponent will make an effort to try and demonstrate that our loving, compassionate, merciful God will be content with nothing less than the perpetual, never diminishing, horrific *torture* of the vast majority of mankind. Not only is that *not* what the Scriptures teach, it has the distinct disadvantage of portraying our God as a *Monster* the likes of which the human mind cannot even conceive. It is to proclaim a God foreign to the inspired revelation. Thus, it is a mockery of Truth and a blasphemy against Deity." Al Maxey, Maxey—Thrasher Debate on the Eternal Destiny of the Wicked by two ministers of the church of Christ at: <http://www.zianet.com/maxey/MxThrshr.htm>—I recommend this debate to all members of the church of Christ of which he is a member, and to all who want the truth.

**WORST THAN GODS OF PAGANISM:** "Paganism in its worst forms has never surpassed, if it has equaled, the savage and terrible descriptions which have been given by Christians of their God. The character ascribed to Him; the dreadful wrath and vengeance with which He is moved; the cold and malignant purpose of creation in regard to million of souls; the stern severity and gloom of His government; the horrible and never-ceasing tortures which He will inflict on His helpless, children—all this, and much more of like character, defies the power of language to set it forth in its true light, or to present it in a manner adequate to its shocking revolting reality." Thomas Thayer, "The Origin, And History Of The Doctrine Of Endless Punishment."

**MAKES THE UNIVERSE A THEATER OF CURSING AND BLASPHEMY:** "What, then, is the doctrine of endless misery? Stripped of all its drapery, it is no more or less than this: That a large part of the human family are doomed to suffer the most intense and indescribable torments as long as God shall exist, without the least hope or possibility of being benefited by their sufferings. In some part of this beautiful universe, God has prepared an awful, dismal, burning hell, and there countless myriads of human beings shall weep and groan, unpitied and unrelieved, while ceaseless ages shall roll; and when ten thousand times ten thousand years shall have passed, they shall have as long to suffer as if their sufferings had but just began. And, then, to think of the number of the lost to remember that there are on this earth not less than eight hundred millions of human beings, and that out of these there are not more than fifty millions that can be saved, upon the broadest system of partialism; and that, by consequence, there must be more than seventy thousand souls going down to hell every day; and, then, to think of **ever and ever, but he who shall reject it, and prove himself ungrateful to his Maker, inasmuch as he has been created and has not recognized Him who bestowed the gift upon him, deprives himself of continuance forever and ever.** And for this reason the Lord declared generations that have past, and reflect upon the vast and countless multitudes that must be congregated in that huge reservoir of tears and woe; the very thought bears the lie upon its front. The degree of the punishment outrages all ideas of proportion between guilt and punishment, and the number of the victims shocks all feelings of humanity or mercy. It makes the universe a theater of cursing and blasphemy, rather than a field for the display of the boundless perfections of a merciful and benevolent Creator." I. D. Williamson, An Examination Of The Doctrine Of Endless Punishment, 1860.

JONATHAN EDWARDS: "The world will probably be converted into a great lake or liquid globe of fire, in which the wicked shall be overwhelmed, which will always be in tempest, in which they shall be tossed to and fro, having no rest day or night, vast waves and billows of fire continually rolling over their heads, of which they shall forever be full of a quick sense within and without; their heads, their eyes, their tongues, their hands, their feet, their loins and their vitals, shall forever be

full of a flowing, melting fire, fierce enough to melt the very rocks and elements; and, also, they shall eternally be full of the most quick and lively sense to feel the torments; not for one minute, not for one day, not for one age, not for two ages, not for a hundred ages, not for ten thousand millions of ages, one after another, but for forever and ever, without an end at all, and never to be delivered."... "The woes of sinners in hell will not be a cause of grief to the saints in heaven but of rejoicing. Though they hear you groan, and sigh, and gnash your teeth, these things will not move them at all to pity you. After your godly parents have seen you lie millions of years, or ages, in torment, day and night, they will not begin to pity you then. They will praise God that His justice appears in the eternity of your misery. The torments in hell will be immeasurably greater than being in a glowing oven, a brick kiln, or fiery furnace."

DR. SPURAEON, the celebrated Baptist preacher: "Only conceive that poor wretch in the flames, who is saying, 'Oh, for one drop of water to cool my parched tongue!' See how his tongue hangs from between his blistered lips! How it excoriates and burns the roof of his mouth, as if it were a firebrand! Behold him crying for a drop of water! I will not picture the scene! Suffice it for me to close up by saying that the hell of hells will be to thee, poor sinner, the thought that it is to be forever! Thou will look up there on the throne of God, and it shall be written 'For Ever!' When the damned jingle the burning irons of their torment that will say 'For Ever!' When they howl, echo cries 'For Ever!'"

EBENEZER ERSKINE in "The Judgment," "How shall the adulterer satisfy lust when he lies on a bed of flames? The swearer shall have enough of wounds and blood when the devil shall torture his body and rack his soul in hell. The drunkard shall have plenty of his cups when scalding lead shall be poured down his throat, and his breath draw flames of fire instead of air."

BENSON: "He will exert all his divine attributes to make them as wretched as the capacity of their nature will admit... They must be perpetually swelling their enormous sums of guilt, and still running deeper, immensely deeper, in debt to divine and infinite justice. Hence after the longest imaginable period, they will be so far from having discharged their debt that they will find more due than when they first began to suffer." He has God charging interest on the debt of the suffering sinner owes Him at such a high rate that the sinner gets more behind as time goes on. If the punishment exceeds the crime by billions of times would it be justice or injustice?

- Such a doctrine as this would have God demanding a punishment that ever His omnipotence would not be ever able to punish a sinner enough to pay for his or her sins.

DR. E. BEECH: "Involves God, his whole administration, and his eternal kingdom in the deepest dishonor that the mind of man or angel can conceive, by the violation of the highest and most sacred principles of honor and right, and on the scale of infinity and eternity" page 225. "The human mind cannot be held back from abhorring such a theory, except by the most unnatural violence to its divinely inspired convictions of honor and right" page 306, Conflict of the Ages.

**What kind of justice is this?** To fill many books with the most harrowing descriptions of torment would not equal the torment we are told that God will give to a soul that had been in just one person for all eternity. After a soul had been in someone who never knew of God in their lifetime on earth, when that soul has been in torment in for trillions times trillions of years because the person it was in did not believe in God, we are told that soul will still have eternity with not one second less time to suffer. Those who believe in Hell say, "It is justice." My question to them is how do they know it to be justice, where did God tell this to them? It being justice is something they had to make up to try to justify the heathen Hell, even when it make

God be much more evil than Satan. They are saying, “Stepping on a person’s lawn may get you a disapproving look, but stepping on God’s lawn will get a soul that is in you eternal torment by God.” No one could know this without a revelation from God, and there is no such revelation, it is an addition, it is making God evil just to justify their evil teaching.

The claim that the endless torment of the lost gives glory to God makes God barbaric beyond any heathen god. **Do you wonder where in the Bible they found things like the devil pouring scalding lead down the throat of a soul, and many millions of like things? The answer is that they are in the same passage where they found Hell, and the same passage where they found the name of Hell. They found them in the teaching of men, not the Bible.**

J. W. McGARVEY and E. D. SLOUGH: *“It has been very vehemently argued and insisted upon, that such punishment for sin would be unjust on the part of God, because the penalty would be far beyond the demerits of the sin for which it was inflicted. To inflict punishment such as is described in the Bible upon a human being, and that continuing without end, for the sins which he committed during the brief stay which he experienced here on earth, is out of all proportion, when viewed as a matter of justice. Justice demands that the penalty shall be proportioned to the crime. Well it does look that way; it undoubtedly does. No father would inflict that kind of punishment upon his son for any conceivable offense against the father, it is argued, and I believe that is true. I would hate to see the man that would. He would not be my friend. It would show not only a want of justice, but an audacious rebellion against all sense of the goodness and mercy and love, of which we have already spoken. But now then, whilst it does appear that way; and if I were the Judge I would not give that sentence; if I had the trial of the matter, I am sure that I would not allow that sentence to be passed’* McGarvey’s Sermons, page 31. I would like to fill two chapters on that extract from McGarvey’s sermons. Here is material for a whole volume. Never was a more formidable argument uttered against the theory we are opposing than this pathetic confession. I wish I had space to demonstrate that God is as good as McGarvey tried to believe him to be. I would that I could cause you to see that McGarvey felt his whole nature revolting against the notion he was defending...McGarvey has used his powers of reason, and his mature judgment, upon this theory of retribution, and he found it repulsive to his soul. That it was, to his judgment, out of all proportion when viewed as a matter of justice. Watts was not infallible, but if that principle he introduced is correct, *‘that God himself has never given revelation contrary to our sense of right or reason,’* then here is one of the ablest defenders of that system who has entered the pulpit in a century, with his fingers emphasizing with emotional gestures to a great audience, in Louisville, Ky., that it is out of all proportion when viewed as a matter justice—and if any one else but God, he would hate to see him, etc. That it would be a rebellion against all we know of the word justice. This coming from so great a scholar as McGarvey makes it the most pathetic and serious. And it makes it more obviously false when presented with a touch of the poet’s brush. McGarvey offers an apology for it. How? *‘Well, who am I? I am a sinner.’* And therefore the sinner has never learned what justice is, and cannot judge between what would be right and what would be grossly unjust. No. But here, God has not left us in the dark as to the meaning justice, when He has taught it with untiring patience to His weak creatures, and now He asks us to judge if He has not dealt justly with us. McGarvey counted himself no greater sinner than other Christians. The Church of God is supposed to be a holy temple, a righteous people, loving justice and mercy—A fit habitation of God through the spirit, filled with God’s thoughts, full of knowledge of God, to which McGarvey has attained a

reasonably high degree. And it is to such men as he, as well as all degrees below him, that this punishment, such as he believe the Bible to teach, if executed by a father against a son for any conceivable offense, would be an audacious rebellion against the goodness and mercy of love, And it is to such men, who are capable of sound judgment, that God challenges to show where He is unjust and to use their own power to test Him. Then there must be something out of joint with the theory, charging God with such principles of conduct toward His own creatures, utterly repugnant and audacious to the intelligence of man, when viewed as matters of justice. Surely, that which rebels against the common sense of man could not become a virtue in Heaven. For however frail we may be, there is an inhered sense of right in us, cultivated by our education and associations. And between that sense of right and the idea of endless misery the chasm is so vast and unfathomable that even the mind of McGarvey saw it as span less as eternity. And his judgment crumpled up into that of a defenseless child, saying I don't know how it can be." E. D. Slough, "Indictment Of Eternal Torment—The Self-negation of a Monstrous Doctrine," pages 218—200, 1914, church of Christ. This book is free on line at: [www.robertwr.com/EternalTorment.htm](http://www.robertwr.com/EternalTorment.htm)

E. PETAVEL, D. D.: "The lamentable results of the Platonic doctrine may be seen in the theology of a Tertullian and an Augustine, –theology called orthodox, –which makes the God of love an Executioner whom innumerable victims will curse eternally. Such a doctrine is a burden even to its adherents. It has drawn from them admissions, which we are bound to record. Henry Rogers declared that *'for his part he would not be sorry to see every child die at the age of four years.'* Albert Barnes admits, with a soul full of anguish that he cannot understand why there are men destined to suffer forever. *'The Gospel,'* says Isaac Taylor, *'fills us with a universal sympathy which sometimes make us regret that it must be true in all its teaching.'* Calvin himself cannot refrain from confessing that the decree of God concerning sinners seems to him horrible...In a word, the traditional dogma conducts to pessimism by making evil eternal. **What has been the result? Extremes meeting, the doctrine of eternal suffering has led to Universalism.** More or less secretly many of the partisans of the traditional dogma, unable to hold it any longer, have quitted their position, to embrace the hope of a universal salvation; while others wander in the penumbra of eschatological skepticism" *The Extinction Of Evil*, page 78, 1889.

**THE CAUSE OF ATHEISM AND STUMBLING IN MANY Matthew 18:6 A DOCTRINE THAT MAKES ATHEISTS: God has been made so cruel, and this doctrine is so unthinkable that it has probably created more atheists, and caused more weak believers to fall away than any other false teaching.** The dread of Hell has caused misery and mental anguish to countless millions; **instead of the horror of Hell turning many to God to escape eternal torment, many millions have been turned away from such an unjust God.** The doctrine of Hell is one of Satan's best tools to turn many away from Christ. Do you want to give an account to God at the judgment for teaching it and for placing a stumbling block before many? No heathen religion has a god as unjust and fiendish as many "Christians" make their God.

ROGER E. DICKSON: "This would only lead to the fact that God is also fiendish, that is, He takes delight in the punishment of the wicked. A billion earth years from now He would be this cosmic sadist who continually went to some far corner of existence to make sure the lost were still tormented for their forty or fifty years of ignorance a billion earth years in the past. In another billion years He will check again, and then, again and again. Is this the type of god we proclaim to the world? Is this the god of love, mercy, and justice that we read about in the Bible? This is not God,

but a god some have created after their own vengeful nature” Life, Death and Beyond, page 163, Star Bible Publications, Inc. church of Christ.

NICHOLAS BERDYAEV: “I can conceive of no more powerful and irrefutable argument in favor of atheism than the eternal torments of Hell,” in “Russian Theologian.”

TIM CROSBY in “Ministry.” “As a child, Robert Ingersoll heard a preacher proclaim the doctrine that God subjects sinners to unending torment in hell. Ingersoll decided that if God were like that, then he hated Him. Later he wrote of this belief that it 'makes man an eternal victim and God an eternal fiend. It is the one infinite horror. **Below this Christian dogma, savagery cannot go.' There are substantial moral and logical difficulties in believing in a God who tortures His enemies forever. Like Ingersoll, thousands of thinking men have turned away from such a God.**”

EDWARD WHITE: “It cannot be denied that the frightful doctrines on the future of humanity...supported by the general authority of nearly all Christendom for at least fourteen centuries, are regarded with contemptuous skepticism by the bulk of the existing male population of Europe, who assigns these articles of 'the faith' as the chief reason for their ever extending and fierce revolt against Christianity” Life In Christ, page 65, 1878. This book free on line at: <http://www.robertwr.com/LifeinChrist.htm>

GEORGE STORRS: “Ye shall not surely die, had its origin with the old serpent, I cannot divest myself of the conviction that the notion that wicked men will be kept eternally alive in torments, and never die, had its origin from the same source, as it appears to be a perfect fac-simile; **and that it was invented to inspire hard thoughts of God and keep men from turning to Him by repentance and faith, or confidence, and acknowledging their sins against the God of love. And I solemnly believe, this doctrine has kept more away from God, and driven them into infidelity, than any other doctrine that was ever promulgated. I am solemnly convinced that it has done more to destroy men than all other errors put together.**” The Harvest Herald, Sermon Two, page 1.

CLARK PINNOCK: “Everlasting torture is intolerable from a moral point of view because it pictures God acting like a bloodthirsty monster who maintains an everlasting Auschwitz for his enemies whom he does not even allow to die. How can one love a God like that? I suppose one might be afraid of him, but could we love and respect him? Would we want to strive to be like him in this mercilessness?” Four Views On Hell, pages 149, 1992. Our intuition completely rejects the idea that anyone, human or divine, who endlessly inflicted pain on another, could be called “good.”

I. D. WILLAMSON: “Of all the sources of sorrow, this is the deepest and I do not exaggerate when I say, that it cause more fear, more anxiety, more despair, and wets the green earth with more tears, than any other cause under the high canopy of heaven.” “An Examination of the Doctrine of Endless Punishment,” 1860.

**God is not a God of terror; not a cruel and evil being this doctrine makes Him to be. Do you think He will say to those who teach He is unjust, "Well done, good and faithful servant...enter you into the joy of your Lord" (Matthew 15:21)? Is it not a sin to teach God is an evil tormenter that will torment even those that never heard of Christ or the gospel?**

If the reason anyone converts is because of a fear of Hell, his or her conversion is just superficial, not real, not because he or she had a love for God, just afraid of being tormented in Hell. A conversion because of the fear of Hell makes a hypocrite,

not a Christians. The harm that has been done by the heresy of a deathless soul that God must torment is beyond belief.

**DILEMMAS OF THEIR OWN MAKING:** The doctrine of Hell puts those who teach it in dilemmas from which they have no way out.

**(1) Dilemma number one:** According to most who believe in Hell only a few will escape it, but many that believe in Hell say all who die before the age accountably will escape Hell and will go to Heaven. By their own teaching, the Abortionist maybe sending more to Heaven, and saving more from Hell than preaching is. Yet, many preachers that teach "Hell" with all its horrors bitterly oppose abortions, which by their own teaching, is saving more from "Hell" than they are. Why? According to their own teaching, in the US alone by abortion millions of souls have been sent to Heaven, but the souls in most of them would have ended up being in eternal torment if they had lived. If I believed their teaching about Hell, I would be all for a sure way to save souls that are in millions of people from an eternity of torment and put these souls safely in Heaven.

**(2) Dilemma number two:** Many pagans count girl babies of little or no use, and kill many of them. For centuries, millions of girl babies in China have been killed at birth. Today, because of the law in China of one child per family, many girl babies are being killed at birth by parents who want a boy. According to the teaching of those who believe in Hell there are millions of souls that were in Chinese girls in Heaven that would have been tormented in Hell if the girls that they were in had lived, but not many souls that were in Chinese boys are in Heaven.

**(3) Dilemma number three:** According to them, souls that were in the children killed in the Old Testament in Gehenna would be blessed by the children not having a few years of life with pain and problems, these souls will forever live with God in Heaven.

There are many more dilemmas like these. Souls in how many children have been sent to Heaven by wars? How many souls were send to Heaven when the two A-bombs were dropped in world war two; do we need more wars and bombs to keep more souls out or Hell and to send more to Heaven? How many souls will be in Heaven because the children they were in had no food or some sickness? By their teaching, a soul that was in a child that was killed or dies soon after birth is blessed over souls in those that live, for most of them that do not die as a child a soul that was in them will live forever in torment, and all those souls that were in a child that dies when they are a child will live forever in Heaven. According to their own teaching (if they were right), Heaven would have more souls that were in the persons that were killed as a child than by all the preaching.

Annihilation is God giving people freedom to choose not to accept Christ and the life He died to give them. Their not-accepting Christ and life means they have chosen to accept death. God gives them their choice, and lets them pay the wages of their sin, death, for they have chosen not to let Christ pay it for them. He is a just God, not a cruel sadistic God who will torment forever. Some say, "God is a God of justice and sin must be paid for, or God would not be just." Yes, but being sadistic is not justice in anyone's book, and the very fact that He is just would not let Him cruelly and sadistically torment souls forever without end. The wages of our sins were paid by the death of Christ; those who have not been baptized into His death

will pay for their own sins in the second death, not by having scalding lead poured down his or her throat for all eternity. God made all out of nothing and has the right to send any back to nothing. Sending those back to nothing that choose to not give Him the worship He is entitled to is His right, and there is nothing cruel about it; they have the life He has given to them, and have chosen to live it for themselves.

**MAKES GOD HAVE A DOUBLE STANDARD. One for Him and another for us.** What would be wrong for us to do, for us torment all that do not believe, is made to be right and good for God to do "for His good pleasure" on a scale that is infinitely greater than would be possible for all men combined to do.

**Many have tried to lessen the cruelty in a number of ways.**

(1) Perhaps the most common one is to make Hell be only in the mind of the lost.

BILLY GRAHAM said, "I have often wondered if Hell is a terrible burning within our hearts for God, to fellowship with God, a fire that we can never quench."

This does not help any and maybe makes it crueler. Mental pain is as bad and sometimes worse than physical pain. God tormenting most of mankind by making them live in mental pain for eternity would not make Him any less cruel.

(2) Some have tried to justify this cruelty by saying the punishment must fit the crime. They are saying that if a person commits a crime against a person he or she does not know, it is not as bad as the same crime would be if committed against his or her mother, and the same crime committed against God is infinitely worse, but no one could know this without a revelation from God; where in God's word does He say the same trespasses become infinitely worse when it is against God? Jesus teaches that what ever we do or do not do for mankind we do or do not do it for God (Matthew 25:40-45), and He makes no distinction as to whom the sin was against. **For centuries many of the best thinkers in the orthodox churches have tried to find a way to justify Hell.** I think the best they have done is to say the same crime/sin committed against an infinite God demands an infinite punishment, and God would not be just if He did not torment souls that had been in the lost forever; they have tried to make it look as if God has no way out and must torment souls in Hell. What revelation do they have that makes God be wrong when He said, "*The wages of sin is death*"?

**First:** they are speaking where the Bible does not say anything, and they are making God be bound by their theology; therefore, they give God no choice, making God be bound to forever torment all souls that are in most of mankind all to justify their "Hell."

**Second:** God's law in the Old Testament had the same punishment if the sin were against man or against Himself. To lie was the same if the lie were to a person or to God. His law was an eye for an eye no matter whom the sin was against. Their theology makes it be one eye if the lie were told to a person, but if the same lie were told to God it would be an endless number of eyes.

Throughout the Old Testament, God destroyed His enemies, Sodom and Gomorrah, the flood, drowning in the Red Sea, etc. He did not torment them forever. The Bible does not teach it is the character or nature of God to torment the lost.

**Third:** If any sin against an infinite God demands an infinite punishment of eternal torment in Hell, all have sinned. If the payment for our sin against an infinite God is eternal torment, Christ did not pay it for us. If the payment is death, Christ did pay it for us, He died our death.

**Fourth:** God made us and if He had chosen not to give anyone eternal life, to let us pass out of exists, to return to not existing, He would still be a good and merciful God for giving us the life we have. But, God has given us much more if we will only believe and obey Him. He has given His only Son that we may be given life, not death. He has saved us from the wages of sin; the death that we deserve and given us life.

**Fifth:** Who could love and worship a God that according to traditional doctrine would have made our father, mother, wife or husband, our children, and many we know and love just so He could torment them, and give them no change to not be tormented.

Not only is Hell an addition to the Bible but also Hell is many times crueler than anything the pagans ever even thought of. Because for most it is something that is far away, and not something they can see now, I do not think they can see how cruel they are being to most, or how cruel they are making God be. Because it is something that is not real to them, they are able to tell themselves "it is justice." If the Hell they teach was real, and they could look over into it and see God tormenting souls that were in most of mankind in the terrible way they now teach that He will be doing, they would be terrified of such an evil being as they say their God is. **How can anyone not see this?**

**Believing in Hell and the doctrine of an immortal soul that cannot die, and it must forever be tormented is as heartless as any person can be, and is loving, and is worshiping the most cruel, sadistic, and fiendish of all Gods. If being created in the image of God means there being a soul in them that cannot die, but it must forever be tormented, then being in the image of God is a curse for souls that are in most of mankind;** it would have been better for them to be as animals are. God made all things that are, if Hell did exist, it could only have been God that thought it up and made it.

**Do those who teach the doctrine of Hell really believe in Hell?** The plain inference is that most do not believe in it. They see some of their family, their friends, those they work with, or that lives next door that they say these souls that are in them are going to Hell at the death of the persons, but do little or nothing about it. If they really believe in Hell when they see unsaved people they know, and see loved ones are dying all around them, why do they do so little to save the souls in them? They seem to care more about what is on television than they do about the endless torment of those souls in those they say they love, and the countless millions of others souls. How many are there that call them self Christian, but have never warned even one person about this horrible place they believe most souls are going to, that work with some daily for years but never say anything to them about the endless torment that they say they believe souls that are in their loved ones will have?

## **The Saints In Heaven Are Deprived Of Qualities God Has Given To Us, Sympathy, Pity, And Love For Others.**

SAMUEL HOPKINS: "The smoke of their torment shall ascend up in the sight of the blessed forever and serve as a most clear glass always before their eyes to give them a constant, bright, and most affecting view... **this display of the divine character and glory will be in favor of the redeemed, and most entertaining, and give the highest pleasure to those who love God, and raise their happiness to ineffable heights. Should this eternal punishment and this fire be extinguished, it would in a great measure obscure the light of Heaven and put an end to a great part of the happiness and glory of the blessed.**" "The works of Samuel Hopkins, D. D." page 458.

What kind of sick man could get the highest pleasure from seeing a cruel God doing his cruel work on billions of souls, and even on souls that had been in many he or she knows and loves? He makes the souls in Heaven that had been in the saints be deprived of qualities God has given to us, sympathy, pity, love for others, caring for others; he makes souls to be cruel monsters that delight in the pain of others, and loves to hear the groans of those they now love, and the groans of the countless millions of souls that were in the lost. He makes the saints in Heaven be taking satisfaction from seeing a cruel God inflict endless pain without end on those who they loved on earth, and makes them be more cruel and blood thirsty then those in Rome who took satisfaction in seeing lions eating Christians.

**Saints On Earth Become Like The God they Worship:** (See "The Crusades, bloody Mary" in this chapter).

"I am reminded of this talk show, which showed a group of religious 'Christians' screaming at people in a department store parking lot. Waving their bibles, they were shouting lines like 'You're all going to hell!' (Of course what they really meant by this was 'You're all gonna be tortured forever and ever!') Needless to say, they looked like hideous fiends, and to think that such people actually believe they're obediently doing God's will. *What deception.* I can't help but be a mite suspect of the character of those who *unswervingly* defend the eternal torture doctrine...I personally believe that these people who staunchly support eternal torture—these folks who almost seem to relish the idea of human beings consciously roasting in agony for all eternity and who become ridiculously irate when a fellow Christian rejects such a ghastly view (even though based upon a thorough biblical analysis)—I believe that such people have given reign to their flesh in this one area. Their very character must be questioned; it has somehow become warped and perverted. I say this because they would zealously do everything in their power to oppose supporters of everlasting destruction. Some go as far as to teach that adherents of literal destruction aren't even saved, that they aren't fellow brothers and sisters in the Lord. Such people have such a sinister, repulsive, hostile air to them that I wouldn't doubt that, if this was the Inquisition era of medieval infamy, they would not hesitate to put to death or torture adherents of everlasting destruction" From chapter eight of a web page: [www.hell-know.net](http://www.hell-know.net).

JONATHAN EDWARDS: "The smoke of their burning flesh shall be as a sweet smelling savor in the nostrils of the Almighty." "Sinners in the Hands of an Angry God."

What you believe about your God shows what kind of God you worship. What do you think about a person that gets angry and hits a person over and over and over?

Do you worship an angry and vindictive God, and will the smoke of burning flesh forever be as a sweet smelling savor in the nostrils of your God?

Summary: **The real issue in the doctrine of Hell is:**

(1) **The nature of God.**

(2) **And the nature of those that believe it.**

Is He a God of love and mercy, or is He a cruel, sadistic, and fiendish God to most of mankind, and made them just so He could torment them, and He gives them no chance to not be tormented, and He will not ever let them die? Those who believe in such a God must defend everlasting torment, and the God who made most of mankind knowing that He would torment them forever; according to the Calvin and Jonathan Edwards versions of Hell, this God will delight in it, and according to creeds, Augustine, Spurgeon and many others, those in Heaven would find delight in seeing those in Hell being roasted in fire. Such a God and Heaven cannot be defended. A God with such vindictiveness is a totally contradiction to the God who would have all men come to repentance. God is not an eternal prison keeper who loves to torment all that are in His prison. Most that believes all persons have an immortal soul dwelling in them also believes in an eternal Hell, and in eternal punishment that has no purpose, a punishment that is not proportionate to the sin, and in a god with a nature that the basest of men would not defend; eternal torment in Hell requires a god that is so dreadful that it make many reject him and his bible.

**When I gave up the evil God of Hell, and believed in the true God, it brought a peace and joy I never believed possible. I now worship a God who is worthy of being loved and worshiped.** Those that go to church because of a fear of punishment in Hell cannot have such joy: it is no wonder that many that are not Christians believe Christianity is a religion based on fear.

#### **THE FATE OF THOSE WHO ARE NOT IN CHRIST:**

(1). **UTTERLY DESTROYED** (Acts 3:23).

(2). **DEATH** (Romans 6:23; 6:21; 7:5; 4:17; 8:6; 1 Corinthians 3:22).

(3). **MUST DIE** (Romans 8:13; John 8:24; 6:50). This is not the first death, which comes to all, to both those who are saved and those who are lost (Hebrews 9:27), but is the **SECOND DEATH** (eternal nothingness) (Revelation 21:8). All will die once, but the lost will die twice.

(4). *"And when sin is accomplished, it brings forth **DEATH**"* (James 1:15).

(5). *"Condemned them to **EXTINCTION**"* Revised Standard Version (2 Peter 2:6). To have their very existence made to be no longer existing.

(6). *They "are **WORTHY OF DEATH**"* (Romans 1:32).

(7). **PASSES AWAY** (1 John 2:17).

(8). Their **END is DEATH** (Romans 6:21-22).

(9). Their wages for sin "**IS DEATH**" (Romans 6:23).

(10). They "**MUST DIE**" (Romans 8:13).

(11). *"Their **END is DESTRUCTION**"* (Philippians 3:19).

(12). *"Whose **END is TO BE BURNED**"* (Hebrews 6:8).

(13). *"**Everlasting DESTRUCTION**"* (2 Thessalonians 1:9).

- (14). **"Sudden DESTRUCTION"** (1 Thessalonians 5:2-3).
- (15). **"Swift DESTRUCTION"** (2 Peter 2:1).
- (16). **"Will reap DESTRUCTION"** (Galatians 6:8).
- (17). **"DESTRUCTION of ungodly man"** (2 Peter 3:7).
- (18). Are on the broad way leading to **DESTRUCTION** (Matthew 7:13-14; Philipians 3:19; 1:28; 2 Peter 3:7).
- (19). God will **DESTROY** (1 Corinthians 3:17; 2 Peter 2:12).
- (20). Will be **"DESTROYED"** like Sodom (Luke 17:29).
- (21). **BRING TO NOTHING** (2 Thessalonians 2:8).
- (22). Will be **TURNED TO ASHES** like Sodom and Gomorrah (Peter 2:6).
- (23). Will **"BE BURNED UP"** (2 Peter 3:10).
- (24). Will **"PERISH"** (John 3:16).
- (25). Will be **"SLAIN"** (Luke 19:14).
- (26). Will be **"THROWN AWAY"** (Matthew 13:18).
- (27). They **"SHALL NOT SEE LIFE"** (John 3:36; 5:40; 1 John 3:15).
- (28). **DO NOT HAVE THE "LIFE"** Christ gives to them that obey Him (John 3:36; 5:21; 5:24; 5:29; 5:40; 6:27; Matthew 19:29; 1 John 5:12).
- (29). Will **LOSE LIFE** (Matthew 10:39).
- (30). Will have **NO ACCESS TO THE TREE OF LIFE** (Revelation 2:7; 22:2; 22:14).
- (31). Will be **BLOTTED OUT OF THE BOOK OF LIFE** (Revelation 3:5).
- (32). Shall **PASS AWAY** in **"the Day of Judgment and DESTRUCTION OF UNGODLY MEN,"** the **"heavens shall pass away...shall be dissolved...burned up"** (2 Peter 3:7-13).
- (33). Will be **"DEVOUR"** (American Standard Version) **"CONSUME"** (New American Standard Version) (Hebrews 10:27; 12:29).
- (34). **Fate of the wicked in the parable**—always destroyed, death, not tormented.
- **HEWN DOWN AND CAST INTO THE FIRE** *"Every tree therefore that brings not forth good fruit is hewn down, and cast into the fire"* (John the Baptist to the Sadducees and Pharisees, Matthew 3:10; Christ in the Sermon on the Mount, Matthew 7:19). A tree cut down and burned is total destruction of the tree, not endless torment of the tree.
  - **THEY WILL BURN UP like the useless chaff of wheat** (Matthew 3:12, Luke 3:17).
  - **BURNED like weeds, tares, and bad fish** (Matthew 13:30-50).
  - **Like harmful plants will be rooted up** (Matthew 15:13).
  - **Cut asunder like the unfaithful servant** (Matthew 24:45-51).
  - **Cut down like useless fig tree** (Luke 13:6-9).
  - **SLAIN (killed) like enemies** (Luke 19:27).
  - **Cast out and KILLED like the unfaithful husbandman** (Luke 20:9-17).
  - **Are BURNED UP like withered branches** (John 15:6).

If the above language does not denote the utter and complete destruction of the wicked, what language could God have used that would? None. There is no process known to mankind that is more like total destruction of the wicked than the total destruction of plants by fire; there is no hope of any life for a plant that has been totally burnt up by fire. Those who try to explain away the above would try to explain away any language that could be used.

- (35). **Fate of the wicked in the Old Testament**, the fate of people and nations in this lifetime.

- *"Behold the day comes, it burns as a furnace and all the proud and all that work wickedness shall be stubble; and the day that comes **shall burn them up**, says the Lord of hosts, that **it shall leave them neither root nor branch**" (Malachi 4:1-3). Probably symbol language of the nation of Israel triumphing over an evil nation. Burn up a plant and leave it neither root nor branch, and nothing will remain of it. Nothing will remain of the nation. If this were speaking about souls after the Judgment, those souls in Heaven will be in Hell walking on the ashes of the souls of the wicked. *"And you will tread down the wicked, for they shall be ashes under the soles of your feet on the day which I am preparing"* (Malachi 4:3). When this passage is applied to Hell, as it often is, it would be a Hell that is nothing like the Hell that it is being misused to prove.*
- The wicked *"shall soon **be cut down like the grass**"* (Psalm 37:2).
- *"Shall be cut off...**shall not be**"* (Psalm 37:9-10).
- *"Will be as nothing"* (Isaiah 41:11).
- *"Become **as if they has never existed**"* (Obadiah 16).
- *"Shall perish...in smoke shall they **consume away**"* (Psalm 37:20).
- *"They shall **be destroyed**"* (Psalm 37:38). *"**Altogether destroyed**"* New Revised Standard Version.
- Shall *"**melt away**"* (Psalm 112:10; 68:2).
- *"But the way of the wicked **will perish**"* (Psalm 1:6).
- *"But all the wicked, He **will destroy**"* (Psalm 145:20).
- *"Whoever has sinned against Me, **I will blot him out of My book**"* (Exodus 32:33).
- *"The wicked is **reserved to the day of destruction**"* (Job 21:30).
- *"They are **like the chaff** which the wind drives away"* (Psalm 1:4).
- **Souls shall die** (Genesis 3:3; Ezekiel 18:4; 13:19).

(36). Add to this the fact that Hell is not in the Bible, not the name, or the concept; nothing is said about God tormenting anyone after the judgment; nothing is said about the wicked after the second death, and you have a clear picture of the fate of the wicked. **God could not have said in human language any clearer or stronger what the fate of the wicked will be. If you think it could be said any more clearly, try it. You cannot do it. Between the statements of the inspired writers of the Bible above, and today's uninspired teaching of men, there is an enormous discrepancy and contradiction that cannot be explained away.**

Our choice is **life** or **death** (see Deuteronomy 30:19-20). To **live** or **die** (Ezekiel 18:20), an eternal life in Hell forever being tormented by God is not one of our choices.

*"But even if we are an angel from heaven should preach to you a gospel contrary to what we preached to you, let that one be accursed! As we have said before, so now **I repeat**, if anyone preaches to you a gospel contrary to what you received, let that one be accursed"* (Galatians 1:7-8). Is there another time Paul said something so serious that he repeated it? If *"the wages of sin is death"* and someone preaches to you "the wages of sin is eternal life in torment" that one should be accursed of preaching a gospel contrary to that which Paul preached.

#### **AFTER THE RESURRECTION THE FATE OF THOSE WHO ARE IN CHRIST.**

- (1). **Eternal life** (Romans 6:23).
- (2). *"**Shall inherit eternal life**"* (Matthew 19:29).
- (3). After the judgment they *"**shall go away into eternal life**"* (Matthew 25:46).

- (4). **Will "have eternal life"** (John 3:5).
- (5). **Christ will raise them up on the last day** (John 6:40).
- (6). **Will be immortal after the resurrection** (1 Corinthians 15:51-56).
- (7). **Will have incorruption** (1 Corinthians 15:42).
- (8). **Will have glory** (1 Corinthians 15:43).
- (9). **Will be like Christ** "*We shall be like him; for we shall see him even as he is*" (1 John 3:2).
- (10). Are **"heirs according to the hope of eternal life"** (Titus 3:7).
- (11). **Will have a spiritual body** (1 Corinthians 15:44).
- (12). **"And as we have borne the image of the earthy** (The earthly flesh and blood body of Adam was made to live on this earth but it "*cannot inherit the kingdom of God*" 1 Corinthians 15:50), **we shall also bear the image of the heavenly"** (Shall be like the spiritual body of Christ for life in Heaven) (1 Corinthians 15:47-56).
- (13). **"Will never perish"** (John 10:28).
- (14). **Forever with the Lord** (1 Thessalonians 4:17).
- (15). **MANY MANSIONS IN MY FATHER'S HOUSE: "In my Father's house** (Who is in Heaven Matthew 5:16; 5:45; 5:48; 6:1; 6:9; 7:21; 10:32-33) **are many mansions...I go to prepare a place for you."** Where did Christ go to prepare a place for us? In the mansions in His Father's house in Heaven.
- "*For it was not David who ascended into heaven, but himself says: "the Lord said to my Lord, sit at my right hand, until I make your enemies a footstool for your feet."*" Acts 2:34-35)
  - "**And if I go and prepare a place for you,** (A place in my Father's house in Heaven) **I come again, and will receive you unto myself; that where I am there you may also be** With me in the place I go to prepare for you in My Father's house in Heaven (John 14:1-3).
  - **But now I go unto him** (unto My Father who is in Heaven) **that sent me"** The word—Christ who was with the Father in the beginning and has always been a heavenly being with God became flesh, and dwelt among us (John 1:14; John 16:5). He is no longer flesh, but has now gone back to Heaven to prepare a place for the saved and will come back for them.
  - "*He who overcomes, I will grant to him to sit down with Me on My throne, as I also overcame and sat down with My Father on His throne*" (Revelation 3:21). Christ is now on His Father's throne in Heaven where He went to prepare a place for us; you cannot prepare a place in a place that is not a place, Heaven is a real place with a real place prepared for all the faithful.
- (16). **FLESH AND BLOOD CANNOT INHERIT THE KINGDOM OF GOD:** "*And as we have borne the image of the earthy* (flesh and blood), *we shall also bear the image of the heavenly.* Now this I say, brethren that **flesh and blood cannot inherit the kingdom of god;** (our bodies in the image of Adam made for this earth are not suitable for Heaven) *neither do corruption inherit incorruption* (neither can our corruptible bodies in the image of Adam inherit in the heavenly realm). *Behold, I tell you a mystery: We all shall not sleep,* (shall not die) *but we shall all be changed,* (all the saved that are asleep when Christ comes, and all the saved that are alive) *in a moment, in the twinkling of an eye, at the last trump: for the trumpet shall sound, and the dead shall be raised incorruptible,* (raised in the heavenly image of Christ, not in the corruptible image of Adam which they had when they died). *For this corruptible must put on incorruption,* (this earthly body in the image of Adam must put on incorruption, a spiritual body in the image of Christ. Adam never had a spiritual body before or after he sinned), *and this mortal must put on immortality* (this mortal

body which is the body we now have must be changed to an immortal spiritual body which will not be the body of this earth that we now have). *But, when this corruptible shall have put on incorruption, and this mortal shall have put on immortality, then shall come to pass the saying that is written, Death is swallowed up in victory*" (1 Corinthians 15:50-54). In this passage Paul is telling the Corinthians what their bodies will be after the resurrection.

- It cannot be "*flesh and blood*" for flesh and blood cannot inherit the kingdom of God (1 Corinthians 15:50).
- It cannot be a body of "*corruption*" in the image of Adam for a body of corruption cannot inherit incorruption (1 Corinthians 15:50-54).
- It cannot be the mortal body that we now have for this mortal body must put on immortality (1 Corinthians 15:53-54).

(17). *"We that are alive, that are left unto the coming of the Lord, shall in no wise precede them that are fallen asleep. For the Lord himself shall descend from heaven, with a shout, with the voice of the archangel, and with the trump of God; and the dead in Christ shall rise first; then we that are alive, that are left, shall together with them be caught up in the clouds (to meet Him in the air and will have a body not of this earth) to meet the Lord in the air: and so shall ever be with the Lord"* (1 Thessalonians 4:16-17).

(18). *"Beloved, now we are children of God, and it has not appeared as yet what we shall be. (we know what the image of Adam is for we now have it. His image was flesh and blood both before and after he sinned, and we know that we now have his image, a body of flesh and blood, but we do not now know what the spiritual body in the image of Christ will be like.) **We know that, when He appears, we shall be like Him because we shall see Him just as He is**"* (1 John 3:2).

(19). **WILL BE LIKE ANGELS:** *"The sons of this age marry and are given in marriage, but those who are considered worthy to attain to that age (the age to come. Not all will be worthy to attain to it) and the resurrection from the dead, neither marry, nor are given in marriage; for **neither can they die any more, for they are like angels, and are sons of God, being sons of the resurrection**"* (Luke 20:34-36). Like the angels, the saved will have a body that will be suitable for Heaven; not an earthly being, and will no longer have a body in the image of Adam made for this earth, but will have a spiritual body in the image of Christ. **Angels have never had an earthly body in the image of Adam. When we are like angels we will not have an earthly body in the image of Adam.** Adam was made of the earth, and he had a flesh and blood body, and Eve was made from his body before their sin, they never had a spiritual body or a body like the angels. To have a body like Adam before he sinned would be to have a flesh and blood body and be male and female. It would be nothing like the Angels.

(20). *"Blessed be the God and Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, who according to his great mercy begat us again unto a living hope by the resurrection of Jesus Christ from the dead, **unto an inheritance incorruptible, and undefiled, and that fades not away, reserved in heaven for you, who by the power of God are guarded through faith unto a salvation ready to be revealed in the last time**"* (1 Peter 1:4).

(21). **Seek the things above:** *"If then you have been raised up with Christ, keep seeking the things above, where Christ is, seated at the right hand of God. Set your mind on the things above, not on the things that are on earth. For you have died and your life is hidden with Christ in God. **When Christ, who is our life, is revealed, then you also will be revealed with Him in glory**"* (Colossians 2:1-4).

(22). **We now bear the image of the earthly (Adam) we shall bear the image of the heavenly (Christ):** *"And just as we have borne the image of the earthy, we shall also bear the image of the*

heavenly" (not the flesh and blood image of Adam before or after he sinned, not an earthly body, not a body of dust) (1 Corinthians 15:48).

### **WHEN:**

When will we receive the crown of righteousness? 2 Timothy 4:8.

When is the Judgment? Revelation 20:12.

When will we see Christ? When will we be like Christ? 1 John 3:2.

When will death be destroyed? 1 Corinthians 15:54-56.

When will the saved put on immortality? 1 Corinthians 15:50-53.

- The when is at the resurrection, not at death.

**AN ETERNITY IN HEAVEN OR ON EARTH:** Some ask, "An eternity in Heaven doing what?" I ask them, "An eternity on earth doing what?" I have not seen anywhere that they say what they think we will be doing on earth for an eternity. Take whatever they think there will be to do on earth for eternity and multiply it by a 100, or 10,000, or even by 100,000 and you will not have all that we will be doing in Heaven for an eternity. All the best of this earth will be gone. There will be no marriage; therefore, no family life (Matthew 22:30), no sea (Revelation 21:1); therefore, nothing that has to do with the sea, no boating, no fishing, no sunset over the water, etc. Multiply the beauty of earth by 100,000 or more and you still will not have the beauty of Heaven.

### **LIFE ON THIS EARTH—versus—LIFE IN HEAVEN**

(1). Life on this earth: a natural body—versus—after the resurrection: a spiritual body (1 Corinthians 15:42-58).

(2). Life on this earth: a mortal being—versus—after the resurrection: an immortal being.

(3). Life on this earth: image of Adam—versus—after the resurrection: image of Christ.

There are three major views of the fate of the lost after death. There may be many variations on each, not to over simplify, but I think all the variations will be on one of the three.

1. God made most of mankind to be tormented forever.
2. God will save all mankind no matter how evil they are.
3. The wages of sin is death for those not in Christ.
  - a) The eternal home for those in Christ will be on earth.
  - b) The eternal home for those in Christ will be in Heaven.

When Christ came to earth He became "*flesh and blood*" in the image of Adam, **Christ is to come back to and forever be a king on this earth was true He would have to forever be "*flesh and blood*" in the image of Adam.**

Christ said, "*Rejoice, and be glad, for your reward in Heaven is great*" (Matthew 5:12), and in the same lesson said, "*Glorify you Father who is in Heaven*" (Matthew 5:16), and "*Make no oath at all, either by Heaven, for it is the throne of God, or by the earth, for it is the footstool of His feet*" (Matthew 5:34-35). In the same lesson Christ said, (1) Heaven is where our reward will be; (2) Heaven is where God is; (3) Heaven is the throne of God.

**A SUMMARY OF WHERE THE DEAD ARE.** Four views on what happens at death, each one is in sharp conflict with the other three, and makes the other three not possible. Yet, the same preachers put a spirit that had been in the dead in three places simultaneously.

- (1). The spirit of all returns to God – misused to prove all have an immortal soul.
- (2). The spirit that was in the dead are alive in sheol.
- (3). The spirit that was in the saved will go directly to Heaven at death, and a spirit that was in the lost the lost will go directly to Hell at death.
- (4). All the dead persons are asleep unto the resurrection; it will be persons that will be resurrected, and persons that will be in Heaven, not souls.

**GOD HAS SPOKE In The Clearest Way That Is Possible With Human Language.** *"For the living know that they shall die: but the dead know not anything, neither have they any more a reward; for the memory of them is forgotten...for there is no work, nor device, nor knowledge, nor wisdom, in Sheol, where you go" (Ecclesiastes 9:5-10). "His breath goes forth, he returns to the earth: in that very day his thoughts perish" (Psalm 146:4). "So man lies down and rises not: till the heavens be no more, they shall not awake, nor be roused out of their sleep" (Job 14:12).* If you read God's word and you still believe a person now has an immortal soul dwelling in them; and that soul is not subject to death, there is no human language God could use to tell you otherwise. You have believed men and Satan, and will not hear God.

There is nothing hard to understand about the nature of a person, or the fate of the wicked. It takes much help from theology to not understand the clear teaching of the Bible. Much help to make many believe Satan's lie over God's word. Much help for anyone to not be able to see the simple truth when he or she reads the Bible.

**Could God have given His revelation about the fate of mankind after death in a way that all could understand it?** The answer is yes; God could and did choose words, parables, symbols, and metaphors that clearly teach the death of, not the eternal torment of the lost. The unsaved die, perish, are destroyed, and are lost. The obedient are saved from death, and given life and immortality at the judgment. God could not have said it any clearer. If you think He could have, try to say it any clearer. The words and expressions are used that put the truth beyond all possibility of question. Eternal life with torment would not be death.

**Be honest with yourself, with God, and go to His word with honesty, love, and reverence.** Can pagan teachings, which are promoted in the name of Christ, result in knowledge of the truth that can save?

**Do you want to die? When the Bible says, "The wages of sin is death," it literally means what it says, "The wages of sin is death" not eternal life in torment.** Do you want to face God's wrath at the judgment and be found not fit to live? Do you want to know that the second death will be an eternal end of you? If not, then: hear and believe (Romans 1:16; Hebrews 11:6). Repent (Luke 13:5). Die to

sin, and through baptism be buried and raised to walk in newness of life with Christ (Romans 6:1-23; Mark 16:16; Acts 2:38 John 3:5). *"For if we have become united with him in the likeness of his death (through baptism), we shall be also in the likeness of his resurrection"* (Romans 6:5). *"God gave unto us eternal life, and this life is in his Son. He that has the Son has the life; he that has not the Son of God has not the life"* (1 John 5:11-12). Live faithfully unto death, and receive the crown of life and immortality at the resurrection (Revelation 2:10; 1 Corinthians 15:52-55; John 5:21). *"But they that are accounted worthy to attain to that world (age), and the resurrection from the dead...neither can they die any more: for they...are sons of God"* (Luke 20:35). *"It was necessary that the word of God should first be spoken to you. Seeing you thrust it from you **and judge yourselves unworthy of eternal life, lo, we turn to the Gentiles"*** (Acts 13:45-48). **The question is not where will you spend your eternity, but will you have an eternity.**

*"For our citizenship is in heaven, from which also we wait for a Savior, the Lord Jesus Christ; **who WILL transform the body of our humble state into conformity with the body of His glory"*** (Philippians 3:20-21). *"To him that overcomes, to him will I give to eat of the tree of life, which is in the Paradise of God"* (Revelation 2:7). **The resurrection of the dead totally destroys the doctrine that a person now has an immortal soul that has been dwelling in them from their birth. If anyone had a soul in them and that soul is alive and in Heaven, that soul could not be resurrected from the dead, that soul would have no need of the resurrection.**

#### **A SUMMARY OF SOME OF THE EVILS OF THE DOCTRINE OF ETERNAL TORMENT.**

(1). If there is something in a person and only that something will be in Heaven or Hell is a soul and it cannot die, then the wages of sin cannot be death; the wages of sin is changed to eternal life in torment for a soul.

(2). Unconditional immortality makes God more cruel and sadistic than any heathen god. It teaches God made man knowing most would not and could not be saved, knowing that He himself was going to forever torment them.

(3). Makes existence be a curse. Most will live a few years as a frail being with many pains, etc., then die and a soul that was in them will forever be in more torment than anyone in this lifetime has ever had. The immortal soul doctrine dooms souls that are in more than nine-tenths of the human race to endless torment.

(4). Unconditional immortality inflicts a useless, fiendish suffering that will benefit no one, not God who is doing the tormenting, not souls that He is tormenting, not souls in Heaven who will be seeing souls that had been in their loved one being tormented by God, no one will be benefited by endless misery.

(5). Unconditional immortality leads to unbelief. More atheists and hypocrites have been made by the teaching of the horrors of Hell than any other teaching. It has turned many millions away from such an unjust God.

(6). Unconditional immortality is heathen in its origin. It was brought into the church by the so-called "church fathers" from Pagan philosophers as Socrates.

(7). The fruits of unconditional immortality. John Calvin burned Servetus to death over a slow fire, then he wrote a book, "A Faithful Account Of The Errors Of Servetus, In Which It Is Proved That Heretics Ought To Be Restrained By The Sword;" in Calvin's argument with the Anabaptists he uses such words as ignorant babbles, evil, nefarious herd, dregs, insanity, etc. Catholics, Bloody Mary, and many others killed millions just because they did not believe this bloody teaching of the unconditional immortality of souls; they ask why should anyone have any compassion upon these that God is not going to have any compassion. Pagans with all its horrors furnish no equal to the butchery and cruelty of the Roman Catholic Church in their torment and murder of men, women, and children in the Dark Age.

**A BRIEF SUMMARY OF SOME OF THE MAIN POINTS OF THIS BOOK.** All four times that soul (nehphesh) is used in Genesis one it is used referring to animals not to a person Strong's Hebrew word #5315—"a breathing creature, i.e. animal." Animals were souls, living beings, before any man existed.

In ten of the first thirteen times soul (nehphesh) is used it is used referring to animals.

In Genesis 9:4-16 the same word is used for both man and animals seven times in the same passage.

Up to Genesis 27:4 for hundreds of years nehphesh is translated *soul*:

- Only four times out of twenty-two in the King James Version.
- Only one time out of twenty-two in the New King James Version.
- None in The New International Version and most others translations.

**The "soul" and "eating of blood."** Is the immortal "soul" (nehphesh) in the blood?

**Animals are "souls"** nehphesh—living creature. Animals **are** souls—a living being, not animals **have** souls—an immaterial, invisible, no substance, deathless something.

**If a soul can die it cannot be immortal.** Can whatever is intended by the Hebrew word "nehphesh" die? In over 320, over one-third of the about 870 times that soul (nehphesh) is used:

- A soul is already dead.
- A soul can die, or can be killed.
- A soul can be sought to be killed.
- A soul can be affected.
- A soul can be smote.
- A soul can be cut off.
- A soul can be murdered.
- A soul can be delivered from death.
- A soul can be buried.
- A soul can be hungry.
- Have an appetite, be thirsty, and eat meat.

In most of these passages the translators of the King James and other translations have hidden from the readers that the very thing they believe to be immortal and cannot die does die by translating "nehphesh" into "life," "person" and many other words.

Nehphesh (soul) is translated:

(1). **Life** about 122 times.

- (2). **Person** about 26 times.
- (3). **Mind** about 15 times.
- (4). **Heart** about 15 times.
- (5). **Personal pronouns** 44 plus times (yourselves, themselves, her, me, he, his, himself).
- (6). **All others**, about 200 times (man, creature, living being, own, any, living thing, lives, the dead, dead body, kills, slays, slay him, mortally, discontented, ghost, breath, will, appetite, hearty desire, desire, pleasure, lust, deadly, fish).

**All 870 times have one thing in common, they are all associated with the activity of a living being, including both persons dying, and animals dying, and nehpesh never implies anything about life after the death of any living being, all the 870 times are all speaking of living beings that will die, not of an immortal deathless something in a living being.**

**Bible words must be changed to mean the exact reverse of their real meaning.** God must be made to say one thing when He intended the exact opposite of what He said.

- **Death** must be changed to life— an endless life of being tormented by God.
- **Destruction** must be changed to indestructible—destruction is made to mean all souls will be kept alive in torment.
- **End** must be changed to endless.
- **Kill** must be changed to never able to be killed—never able to end life.
- **Sleep** must be changed to always being awake in Heaven of Hell.
- **Consumed** must be changed to never able to be consumed.
- **Perish** must be changed to imperishable—always perishing for all eternity but never perished.
- **Burned up** must be changed to always burning, but never burned up.
- **Destroy** must be changed to indestructible.

A soul that was in a person going to Heaven at the moment of death makes the judgment of a soul that was in that person be at the death of the person, not at the second coming of Christ, and makes the resurrection of a deathless soul impossible; only the dead can be resurrected; a soul that is not dead cannot be raised from the dead. Who do you believe, Christ or the Platonic philosophy of the survival of a soul after it leaves the dead person it was in?

When unconditional immortality says a soul is the real person and can never die, that the soul of Christ, which was the real Christ, was alive before the resurrection on the third day, that only the body of flesh dies, it makes the real Christ to have never died, only a body of flesh died; therefore, the real Christ never died for us, and we are still in our sins. An immortal undying soul makes death, the wages of sin, and the resurrection impossible. Who do you believe, God or Satan? **The resurrection taught in the Bible is a resurrection of the dead. There cannot be a resurrection of a deathless soul; anything that is alive cannot be raised from the dead. It is the person that will be saved or lost: it is the person that will be raised from**

**the dead and judged for what the person did or did not do; it is the saved person that will be given immortality, not a pagan Dark Age soul.**

*"But now has Christ been raised from the dead, the first fruits of them that are asleep. For since by man came death, by man came also the resurrection of the dead. For as in Adam all die, so also in Christ shall all be made alive. But, each in his own order: Christ the first fruits; then they that are Christ's at his coming."* **Could Paul have been any more specific? ONLY THROUGH THE RESURRECTION AT THE SECOND COMING OF CHRIST WILL ANY PERSON HAVE ANY LIFE AFTER DEATH.**

Not one word is said about the pagan immortal soul, or about God tormenting many billions of nonexistent souls for an endless eternity. Or not one word about in the entire Bible about the nonexistence place where God will be tormenting these nonexistent souls.

## CHAPTER ELEVEN

### HISTORICAL PROOF OF THE CHANGING OF THE TEACHING OF THE BIBLE

*"But I fear, lest by any means, as the serpent beguiled Eve in his craftiness, your minds should be corrupted from the simplicity and the purity that is toward Christ" (2 Corinthians 11:3). "For the time will come when they will not endure the sound doctrine; but, having itching ears, will heap to themselves teachers after their own lusts; and will turn away their ears from the truth, and turn aside unto fables" (2 Timothy 4:3-4). "But there arose also prophets also among the people, as among you also there shall be false teachers, who shall secretly bring in destructive heresies, denying even the Master that bought them, bringing upon themselves swift destruction" (2 Peter 2:1-2).*

### The heathenizing of the church in the medieval Dark Age

The Bible teaching were changed by bringing into the church the doctrines of Purgatory, the sale of indulgences, an immortal soul, Hell, going to Heaven or Hell at death without the judgment, worship of Mary and saints, Nether World, Holy Water, forbidding eating of meat on Friday, candle-burning, and many other teachings.

**CHURCH FATHERS:** The early so-called church fathers, Clement of Rome (said to be a companion of Paul), Ignatius (killed A. D. 107), Theophilus (died A. D. 181), Justin Martyr (killed A. D. 166), Tatian, Irenaeus, and others of the second century writers believed in conditional immortality. It was not until the end of the third century that the doctrine of an immortal soul gained much of a foothold in the church. The immortal soul doctrine is not in the writings of the first centuries. Tertullian near the end of the third century is the first to say anything about it, and then he made it clear that his opinion was that of Plato, and it was not the opinion of Christ.

J. A. BEETH summed it up very well. **"The phrase, the soul immortal, so frequent and conspicuous in the writings of Plato, we have not found in pre-Christian literature outside the influence of Greek philosophy; nor have we found it in Christian literature until the latter part of the second century. We have noticed that all the earliest Christian writers who use this phrase were familiar with the teaching of Plato; that one of these, Tertullian, expressly refers both the phrase and doctrine to him; and that the early Christian writers never support this doctrine by appeals to the Bible, but only by arguments similar to those of**

**Plato...We have failed to find any trace of this doctrine in the Bible...It is altogether alien, both in phrase and thought, to the teaching of Christ and His apostles"** Immortality Of The Soul, pages 53, 54.

JOHN HANCOCK PERTTINGELL: "The philosophy of Plato concerning the nature of man—so flattering to his pride, but so inconsistent with the simple teaching of God's word—has been a fruitful source of error and confusion in the church. Notwithstanding Paul warned the early Christians against it, they soon fell under its corrupting influence and suffered it to mold and shape their whole system of doctrines. Although we have rejected some of the grosser errors of the Papal church, and modified others to bring them into a better harmony with the spirit of the age, our Protestant notions of the intermediate state and the final destiny of man, and our interpretation of the teaching of the Scripture on these questions, are still controlled to a great extent by the same philosophy...*but the doctrine of the resurrection itself*, as taught in the Scriptures, out hopes for any life whatever beyond the present, and on which the early Christians fastened their hopes, is either denied altogether or reduced to an unmeaning pageant. And so, deprived of all its real significance and power, this great doctrine has fallen into neglect." "The Life Everlasting, What Is It? Whence Is It? Whose Is It?" Pages 86—87, J. D. Brown Printer, 1883.

TERTULLIAN is truthful about where his belief came from and said he based it on Plato, not the Bible. He said, "For some things are known even by nature: the immortality of the soul, for instance, is held by many...I may use, therefore, the opinion of a Plato, when he declares, 'Every soul is immortal'" Ante-Nicene Fathers, Volume 3, about A. D. 220, page 1916.

JUSTIN MARTYR: Killed about A. D. 166. The Greek doctrine of an immortal soul was believed by some in his time and opposed by him and others of the Church Fathers. He said, "**For if you have fallen in with some who are called Christians, but who do not admit this...who say there is no resurrection of the dead, and that their souls** (he used the Greek word psukee, not the English word soul), **when they die, are taken to heaven; do not imagine that they are Christians.**" The First Apology Of Justin, Edinburgh Edition, page 480. He is saying those who believe the dead are alive any place before the resurrection do not believe in the resurrection, and because they do not believe in the resurrection they are not Christians even if they think they are.

IRENAEUS MARTYR: Died about A. D. 202, a pupil of Polycarp, Martyr A. D. 147 said, "Some who are reckoned among the orthodox to go beyond the prearranged plan for the exaltation of the just, and are ignorant of the methods by which they are disciplined beforehand for incorruption; they entertain heretical opinions. **For the heretics...affirm that immediately upon their death they shall pass above to heavens. Those persons, therefore, who reject a resurrection affecting the whole man**, and do their best to remove it from the Christian scheme, know nothing as to the plan of resurrection" Ante-Nicene Fathers, Erdmann Publishing, Volume one, page 560. "It is the Father of all who **impart continuance forever and ever to those who are saved. For life does not arise from us, nor from our own nature**; but it is bestowed according to the grace of God. **And therefore he who shall preserve the life bestowed on him, and give thanks to Him who imparted it, shall receive also length of days forever** to those who showed themselves ungrateful towards Him: 'If you have not been faithful in that which is little, who will give you that which is great?'—indicating that those who in this brief temporal life have shown themselves ungrateful to Him who bestowed it, **shall justly not receive from him length of days forever and ever.**" Edinburgh Edition, Volume 1, page 252. "Continuance forever and ever" should have been translated "continuance ages and ages."

ORIGEN Died A. D. 235: Mosheim said, "The foundation of all his faults was, that he fully believed nothing to be more true and certain than what the philosophy he received from Ammonius taught him respecting God, the world, souls, demons, etc. and therefore he in a measure recast

and remolded the doctrines of Christ after the pattern of that philosophy" Historical Commentaries, Volume 2, page 159.

The early non-inspired writers used Bible statements, which are used by both sides. Two examples:

**(1). An example:** When an early writer quoted Matthew 10:28, "God is able to destroy...soul (psukee)," it is used today by the unconditional immoralists to prove the church fathers believed God will not destroy a soul (psukee-life), and by the conditional immoralists to prove the church fathers did believe God can and will destroy a soul (psukee-life). Both sides assume that the early non-inspired writers understood the word psukee, and other words just as they do. Therefore, both sides have many of the same quotations from the early writers. The first and second century writers used Greek, and the word they used was "psukee"—life, not the English word "soul"

- First: Unconditional immoralists translate "psukee" (life) into "soul" and then apply today's English meaning, an undying something that is in a person to "psukee."
- Second: Conditional immoralists read the same writers and say the early writers used "psukee" (life) as the Hebrew word "nehphesh" is used in Genesis, a *"living creature."*

**(2). Another example:** When Matthew 5:22 is quoted by the church fathers, they wrote in Greek and used "Gehenna" just as Christ did. Some English translations of the church fathers change Gehenna into Hell. They change the word the church fathers used, Gehenna, a proper noun, the name of a particular place into another proper noun, the name of another particular place (Hell) just as the King James Version did. Whether the early writer used "Gehenna" or whether Gehenna is changed (mistranslated) into "Hell" makes the church fathers say what the translator wanted them to say; by changing the Greek word "Gehenna" into the English word "Hell, what the church fathers said is changed from being a place on this earth, Gehenna, to being a completely different place named Hell that we are told is not on this earth; (1) the place, (2) the location of the place, (3) the name of the place are all changed.

**The view of the church fathers on death** according to Henry Constable in "The Duration And Nature Of Future Punishment," 1871.

- **Barnabas**, Died A. D. 90. Believed the penalty of sin is **eternal death**.
- **Clemens Romanus**, Died A. D. 100. Believed the penalty of sin is **eternal death**.
- **Hermas**, Died A. D. 104. Believed the penalty of sin is **eternal death**.
- **Ignatius, Martyr**, Died A. D. 107. Believed the penalty of sin is **eternal death**.
- **Polycarp, Martyr**, Died A. D. 147. Believed the penalty of sin is **eternal death**.
- **Justin Martyr**, Died A. D. 164. Believed the penalty of sin is **eternal death**.
- **Theophilus of Antioch**, Died A. D. 183. Believed the penalty of sin is **eternal death**.
- Athenagoras, Died A. D. 190. Believed "**you shall not surely die.**"
- Tatian, Died A. D. 200. Believed "**you shall not surely die.**"
- **Irenaeus Martyr**, Died A. D. 202. Believed the penalty of sin is **eternal death**.
- **Clemens Alexandrinus**, Died A. D. 212. Believed the penalty of sin is **eternal death**.
- Tertullian, Died A. D. 235. Believed "**you shall not surely die.**"
- Hippolytus, Died A. D. 235. Believed "**you shall not surely die.**"
- Origen, Died A. D. 253. Believed **universal restoration**.
- **Amobios**, Died A. D. 303. Believed the penalty of sin is **eternal death**.
- Augustine, Died A. D. 430. Believed "**you shall not surely die.**" The Encyclopedia Britannica says of Augustine, "He fused the religion of the New Testament with the Platonic tradition of Greek philosophy."

JOSEPH AGAR BEET: "The prevalence, in the Christian Church, of the doctrine of the immortality of the soul is due probably to the immense influence of Augustine. This great father was familiar with the systems of the Greek philosophers; and among these gives the palm to

Plato," "The Last Things," page 199, 1898. Augustine was not the first to teach this Pagan doctrine, but his influence was much more than the others and became the teaching of the Catholic Church.

From the above, it is clear that it was not until near the end of the second century that, "The wages of sin is eternal life with torment" was first believed, and then at first by only a few. By teaching the resurrection, both the Bible and most of the early Church Fathers denied emphatically the unconditional immortality of a soul.

JOHN H. OGWYN: "The story of the Christian church between Pentecost of 31 a. d. and the council of Nicea in 325 A. D., almost 300 years later, is an amazing story. **It is the story of how yesterday's orthodoxy became today's heresy and how old heresies came to be considered orthodox Christian doctrine. It is the story of how church tradition and the teaching of the bishops came to supersede the word of God as a source of doctrine. It is a story that is stranger than fiction, yet is historically verifiable.**" "God's Church Through The Ages."

HENRY CONSTABLE, A. M.: "Educated in Platonism, they (church fathers) did not like to renounce it, and flattered themselves that they might, with great advantage to the cause of Christianity, bring at least a portion of their old learning into its service. Some brought less, some more, according as they were more or less thoroughly acquainted with Christianity. But on one point they were substantially agreed. All of them, with Tertullian, adopted in the sense of Plato **Plato's sentiment—'Every soul is immortal.'** On this point Plato took rank, not among prophets and apostles, but above all prophets and apostles. A doctrine which neither Old Testament nor New taught directly or indirectly, nay, which was contrary to a great part of the teaching of both, these Fathers brought in with them into the Church, and thus gave to the old Sage of the Academy a greater authority and a wider influence by far than he had ever attained or ever dreamed of attaining. It was in effect Plato teaching in the Church, under the supposed authority of Christ and his Apostles, doctrine subversive of, and contrary to, the doctrine, which they had one and all maintained. This dogma of Plato was made the rigid rule for the interpretation of Scripture. No Scripture, no matter what its language, could be interpreted in a sense inconsistent with Plato's theory. Christ, and Paul, and John, all were forced to Platonism. The deduction of reason, half doubted by Plato himself, was by these Platonizing Fathers palmed off on men's minds as the teaching of revelation. What Socrates taught with faltering tongue, what Plato held in one place and rejected in another, what Cicero hoped might be true while he dreaded that it might not, Tertullian and Augustine taught as in indubitable truth" Duration And Nature Of future Punishment, page 247, 1871.

HENRY CONSTABLE, A. M.: "While far the greater number taught that death was for all, sooner or later, an eternal sleep, there were 'high spirits of old' that strained their eyes to see beyond the clouds of time the dawning of immortality. Unable, as we are able, to connect it with God as its source, and with his promise as our assurance they framed the idea of an immortality self-existing in a soul itself. Plato, in his 'Phædo,' has given us the marvelous reasoning of Socrates, and Cicero has exhibited the argument in his 'Tusculan Questions.' According to it, a soul is possessed of an inherent immortality. It is of necessity eternal. It could have no end: no death. What was true of one soul was true of all souls alike, whether good or bad. They must live somewhere, be it in Tartarus, or Cocytus, in Pyriphlegethon, or the happy abodes of the purified. This sublime philosophical idea passed readily and early into the theology of the Christian Church. We find it running throughout the reasoning of Athenagoras and Tertullian, of Origen and Augustine. **Heedless of Paul's warning voice against philosophy, they became the feeble apes of Plato. They applied their theology, as his philosophy, to all souls alike—to those of the reprobate as of the redeemed.** They taught that the life of the former must be as eternal as that of the latter. A moment's reflection will show us that a dogma of this kind could not remain idle.

It must influence most powerfully in one direction or in another this whole question of future punishment. It must mold the entire doctrine of the Church upon the subject. According as men connected it with one truth of Scripture or another, it must give rise to two different and opposite schools of thought. Connect the immortality of a soul with the Scriptural doctrine of the eternity of punishment, and you inevitably create the dogma of eternal life in misery, i.e. of Augustine's hell. Connect it with the other great truth of Scripture, the final extinction of evil and restoration of all things, and you as inevitably create Origen's Universal Restoration. For each of these opposing theories there is exactly the same amount of proof, viz: Plato's dogma and a dogma of the Bible; and, **if Plato's dogma could be proved to be a Scriptural doctrine, then by every law of logic Scripture would be found supporting two distinct and absolutely contradictory theories. Accordingly, this philosophical idea of Plato is found pervading and influencing the interpretation of Scripture from the second century down to our own day.** The Fathers, as a general rule, considered the question of future punishment under the impression that every soul of man was immortal...But in supposing that God gave to a soul at its creation an inalienable immortality, i.e., an immortality not affected by any conduct upon man's part, of which no creature could deprive it, and of which God would not deprive it, **they in effect laid down a dogma which had the very same influence upon their views of future punishment as if they had adopted the dogma of Plato to its fullest extent.**" Duration And Nature Of future Punishment, 1871.

W. ENFIELD: "Very soon after the rise of Christianity, many persons, who had been educated in the schools of the philosophers, becoming converts to the Christian faith, the doctrines of the Grecian sects, and especially Platonism, were interwoven with the simple truths of pure religion. As the Eclectic philosophy spread, Heathen and Christian doctrines were still more intimately blended, till, at last, both were almost entirely lost in the thick clouds of ignorance and barbarism which covered the earth." "The History Of Philosophy."

"The doctrine of hell evolved long after the core doctrines of the historic Christian faith were established. The views of the early Church fathers about hell were far from unanimous. It took the Christian community hundreds of years to come up with a consensus on the issue. The majority view—that hell is a place of eternal fiery torment—emerged only after a long debate within the Church. By the Middle Ages, the concept of a fiery underworld had become a dominant element in people's minds." <http://www.inplainsite.org>

The doctrine of Hell has been strongly opposed from the time it was first brought into the church by the church fathers, but in the last fifty years the opposition is rapidly growing in the Protestants churches and particularly in the church of Christ. As a result of the rapid growth in opposition to the God slandering doctrine of Hell two books by those who believe in Hell have been written. "Hell of Trial: The Case for Eternal Punishment" by Robert A. Peterson, and "Hell Under Fire" which is ten essays by ten orthodox Protestant authors all defending Hell that is now under attack by many. The names they give to their books shows the doctrine of Hell is being strongly opposed and rejected by many.

To fully document the apostasy that took place is beyond the scope of this book, but I have given enough to show those who have never read the history of the early church that there was a great apostasy with many changes in the beliefs and doctrines. The falling away Paul foretold did happen. *"Let no one in any way deceive you, for it will not come unless the apostasy comes first, and the man of lawlessness is revealed, the son of destruction, who opposes and exalts himself above every so-called god or object of worship, so that he takes his seat in the temple of God, displaying himself as being God. Do you not remember that while I was still with you, I was telling you these things? And you know what restrains him now, so that in his time he may be revealed. For the mystery of lawlessness is already at work, only he who now restrains will do so until he is*

*taken out of the way. And then, that lawless one will be revealed whom the Lord will slay with the breath of His mouth and bring to an end by the appearance of His coming; that is, the one whose coming is in accord with the activity of Satan, with all power and signs and false wonders, and with all the deception of wickedness for those who perish, because they did not receive the love of the truth so as to be saved. And for this reason God will send upon them a deluding influence so that they might believe what is false, in order that they all may be judged who did not believe the truth, but took pleasure in wickedness"* (2 Thessalonians 2:3-12; See 1 Timothy 4:1-3). This apostasy led to the church of the Dark Age with its Pope who sits in the place of God and is worshiped as God. Paul said the falling away would come. History says it did come. The Catholic Church says there was no falling away. The Protestant Reformation says there was an apostasy, but they reformed the Catholic Church with many churches that teach many conductivity things.

HOMER HAILEY said, "Attitudes were no longer as they were in former years, and the pattern was altered. The pristine simplicity was gradually marred and covered, until little of the original simple plan of God could be recognized."

THAYER, THOMAS BALDWIN: "Any one at all familiar with the writings of the ancient Greeks or Romans, cannot fail to note how often it is admitted by them that the national religions were the inventions of the legislator and the priest, for the purpose of governing and restraining the common people. Hence, all the early lawgivers claim to have had communications with the gods, who aided them in the preparation of their codes. Zoroaster claimed to have received his codes from a divine source; Lycurgus obtained his from Apollo, Minos of Crete from Jupiter, Numa of Rome from Egeria, Zaleucus from Minerva, &c. The object of this sacred fraud was to impress the minds of the multitude with religious awe, and command a more ready obedience of their part. Hence Augustine says, in his 'City of God,' 'This seems to have been done on no other account, but as it was the business of princes, out of their wisdom and civil prudence, to deceive the people in their religion; princes, under the name of religion, persuaded the people to believe those things true, which they themselves know to be idle fables; by this means, for their own ease in government, tying them the more closely to civil society.' Pages 81—82." Plato himself is exceedingly inconsistent, sometimes adopting, even in his serious discourses, the fables of the poets, and at other times rejecting them as utterly false, and giving too frightful views of the invisible world. Sometimes, he argues, on social grounds, that they are necessary to restrain bad men from wickedness and crime, and then again he protests against them on political grounds, as intimidating the citizens, and making cowards of the soldiers, who, believing these things, are afraid to die, and do not therefore fight will. But all this shows in what light he regarded them; not as truths, certainly, but as fictions, convenient in some cases, but difficult to manage in other." *The Origin and History of the Doctrine of Endless Punishment,* Page 95, 1881. The rulers of old and even Plato did not believe the doctrine of endless torment that they used to keep the people in line, but they were used by the Dark Age Catholic Church to put endless torment into the church.

The second coming of Christ and the resurrection has been made to have little or no value by the doctrine of all souls that had been in the dead going to Heaven at death, or after spending some time in Purgatory. The heart of the beliefs and hopes of the early church, the coming of Christ and the resurrection from the dead, was put into the background. The Church was not faithful one day and an apostate church the next day. The falling away took centuries. There were many changes, and every change had many who fought it. But, the falling away did come. The teaching of Christ on the resurrection of the dead was replaced by the teaching of Plato (the Heathenizing of the church with the pagan teaching of an immortal soul). One by one, at first only a few in a congregation, but eventually the entire congregation were teaching the doctrines of man that destroyed the teaching of Christ.

(1). TERTULLIAN: Often known as the father of the Latin Church. "How indeed, shall the soul mount up to heaven, where Christ is already sitting at the Father's right hand, when as yet the archangel's trumpet has not been heard by the command of God. When as yet those whom the coming of the Lord is to find on the earth, have not been caught up into the air to meet Him at His coming, in company with the dead in Christ, who shall be the first to arise? To no one is heaven opened" Treatise on the Soul, Chapter 55. The Catholic Church would now call anyone who teaches this a heretic (See 1 Thessalonians 4:13).

(2). MARTIN LUTHER: "Solomon judged that the dead are asleep, and feel nothing at all. For the dead lie there accomplishing nether days nor years, but then they are awaked, they shall seem to have slept scarce one minute." "An exposition of "Ecclesiastes or the Preacher" 1573. In Luther's Defense, proposition 27. "Now, if one would say that Abraham's soul lives with God but his body is dead, this distinction is rubbish. I will attack it. One must say, 'The whole Abraham, the whole man shall live.' The other way you tear off a part of Abraham and say, 'It lives.' This is the way the philosophers speak: 'Afterward the soul departed from its domicile,' etc. That would be a silly soul if it were in heaven and desired its body" Luther's Works, Volume 54, page 447. **Luther called the theory of the immortality of the soul the "monstrous fables that forms part of the Roman dunghill of decretals."** E. Petavel, The Problem of Immortality, page 255.

(3). PAUL ALTHAUS: "The hope of the early church centered on the resurrection of the Last Day. It is this which first calls the dead into eternal life (1 Cor. 15; Phil. 3:21). This resurrection happens to the man and not only to the body. Paul speaks of the resurrection not 'of the body' but 'of the dead.' This understanding of the resurrection implicitly understands death as also affecting the whole man...Thus the original Biblical concepts have been replaced by ideas from Hellenistic Gnostic dualism. The New Testament idea of the resurrection, which affects the whole man, has had to give way to the immortality of the soul. The Last Day also loses its significance, for souls have received all that is decisively important long before this. Eschatological tension is no longer strongly directed to the day of Jesus' Coming. *The difference between this and the hope of the New Testament is very great*" "The Theology Of Martin Luther" pages 413—414, 1966.

(4). JOHN WESLEY: "It is indeed generally supposed that the souls of good men as soon as dislodged from the body, go directly to heaven, but this opinion has not the least foundation in the oracles of God" From Wesley's sermon on Luke 16:23.

(5). WILLIAM TYNDALE translated the first English New Testament: "In putting them (sleeping souls) in heaven, hell or purgatory, you destroy the arguments wherewith Christ and Paul proves the resurrection...if the souls be in heaven, tell me why they be not in as good a case as the angels be? And then what cause is there of a resurrection...The true faith put forth the resurrection, which we be warned to look for every hour. **The heathen philosophers, denying that, did put that the souls did ever live. And the pope join the spiritual doctrine of Christ and the fleshy doctrine of philosophers together: things so contrary that they cannot agree...**And because the fleshy-minded pope consented unto heathen doctrine, therefore, he corrupted the Scripture to establish it. If the souls be in heaven, tell me why they be not in as good case as the angels be, and then what cause is there of the resurrection?" Book. 4, chapter 4, pages 108—109, 1530, and also in Burns, "Christian Moralism," page 99. Tyndale (like Luther) said it was heathen philosophers and the Pope, not the Bible that taught, "Souls did ever live."

(6). JOHN DARBY: "We would express our conviction, then the idea of the immortality of the soul has no source in the gospel; that it comes, on the contrary, from the Platonists, and that it was just when the coming of Christ was denied in the church, or at least began to be lost sight of, that the doctrine of the immortality of the soul came in to replace that of the resurrection. This was

about the time of Origen." "The Hopes of the Church of God," only in the early editions, in later editions what he said was changed by other persons.

Greek philosophy of an immortal soul was first bought into the church by the so-called church fathers that were believers in the Greek philosophy, and were only partly converted. They know more about the teaching of Plato than they did of Christ. It did not become commonly accepted until after Tertullian in the third century. It was fought bitterly by Martin Luther, William Tyndale, and many others as being a part of the false Catholic doctrine. It was eventually accepted by most Protestant Churches, but only after a long fight. Most today know little or nothing of all this, and think the doctrine of an immortal soul was held by almost all, even back in the Old Testament.

NOTE: The teachings of many founders of the Protestant Reformation are an embarrassment to the Protestant Churches today, which bear their name and or claim them as their founders. The teaching of the churches they founded now makes them be heretics. Their own churches would now call anyone teaching the same as Luther and Wesley heretics.

Calvin might have been the leading influence in turning the Protestant Reformation back to Catholicism. Dr. Joseph Priestley said, "Had it not been for the authority of Calvin, who wrote expressly against soul sleep, **the doctrine of an intermediate conscious state would, in all probability, have been as effectually exploded as the doctrine of purgatory itself**" Works, Volume 5, page 229, 1818.

(7). JAMIESON, FAUSSET AND BROWN: "**Nowhere is the immortality of the soul, distinct from the body, taught:** A notion which many erroneously have derived from heathen philosophers. Scripture does not look for the anomalous state brought about by death, as the consummation to be earnestly looked for (2 Cor. 5:4), but the resurrection." Notes on 1 Corinthians 15:53.

(8). STRONG: "**A breathing creature, i.e., animal...**" word number 5315, "Strong's Exhaustive Concordance Of The Bible." A breathing creature is an earthly being, not an immortal no subject something, but who knows what the something is.

(9). W. E. VINE: "A Noun **soul; self; life; person; heart...**it occurs over 780 times in Old Testament...**the noun refers to the essence of life, the act of breathing, taking breath...**in its primary sense **the** noun appears in its first occurrence in Gen 1:20; 'the moving creature that has life,' and in its second occurrence in Gen 2:7; 'living soul... **however, in over 400 later occurrences it is translated 'soul.'** while this serves to make sense in most passages, it is **an unfortunate mistranslation of the term.** The real difficulty of the term is seen in the inability of almost all English translations to find a consistent equivalent or even a small group of high-frequency equivalents for the term. The KJV alone uses over 28 different English terms for this one Hebrew word. **THE PROBLEM WITH THE ENGLISH TERM 'SOUL' IS THAT NO ACTUAL EQUIVALENT OF THE TERM OR THE IDEA BEHIND IT IS REPRESENTED IN THE HEBREW LANGUAGE...**in narrative or historical passages of the Old Testament, **nepes can be translated as 'life' or 'self'** as in Leviticus 17:11; 'for the life of the flesh is in the blood... **needless to say, the reading 'soul' is meaningless in such a text...**the versions vary widely in the reading of nepes, with the more contemporary versions casting widely for meaning," page 237 Old Testament, "Vine's Complete Expository Dictionary Of Old And New Testament Words." It did not change its meaning in the second part of the Old Testament, but the translators of the early English Bibles had to put in their beliefs, and later translators, those that are called "the major translations" have only partly gotten away from this mistakes, but a few of the latest translations have almost made it; they have reduced the number of times soul is used from over 400 down to a very few times.

(10). THAYER: "1. Breath...a. the breath of life...b. life...2. The soul...a. the seat of the feelings, desires, affections, aversions (our soul, heart, etc.)." "A Greek—English Lexicon Of The New Testament."

(11). ROBERT YOUNG, author of Young's Literal Translation of the Bible: "Animal soul...Nehphesh" page 917 "It (nehphesh) does not denote the immortal part of man, but his animal life." "Young's Analytical Concordance To The Bible."

(12). FUNK AND WAGNALL ENCYCLOPEDIA: "The Christian doctrine of the immortal soul has been strongly influenced by pagans such as Plato and Aristotle."

(13). ADAM CLARKE: "The doctrine of the resurrection appears to have been thought of much more consequence among the primitive Christians than it is now! How is this? The apostles were continually insisting on it, and exciting the followers of God to diligence, obedience, and cheerfulness through it. And their successors in the present day seldom mention it! So apostles preached, and so primitive Christians believed; so we preach, and so our hearers believe. **There is not a doctrine in the gospel on which more stress is laid; and there is not a doctrine in the present system of preaching which is treated with more neglect**" Commentary on I Corinthians 15.

(14). DR. SHIRLEY GUTHRIE: "The belief in the immortality of the soul. This doctrine was not taught by the biblical writers themselves, but was common in the (pagan) Greek and oriental religions of the ancient world in the Christian church was born. Some of the earliest Christian theologians were influenced by it, read the Bible in the light of it, and introduced it into the thinking of the church...According to this doctrine, my body will die but I myself will not really die...What happens to me at death, then, is that my immortal soul escapes from my mortal body. My body dies but I myself live on and return to spiritual realm from which I came and to which I really belong...Death does not mean that the immortal divine part of us has departed to live on somewhere else. It means that life has left us, that our lives have come to an end...According to Scripture my soul is just as human, creaturely, finite—and mortal—as my body. It is simply the life of my body...We have no hope at all if our hope is in our own in-built immortality" Christian Doctrine, page 378.

(15). WILLIAM ENFIELD: "Very soon after the rise of Christianity, many persons, who had been educated in the schools of the philosophers, becoming converts to the Christian faith, the doctrines of the Grecian sects, and especially Platonism, were interwoven with the simple truths of pure religion. As the Eclectic philosophy spread, Heathen and Christian doctrines were still more intimately blended, till, at last, both were almost entirely lost in the thick clouds of ignorance and barbarism which covered the earth" History of Philosophy (In the Dark Age – West).

(16). THOMAS BALDWIN THAYER: "But slowly the corruption spread, and little by little the Pagan dogma ginned upon the Christian doctrine, till at last, partly in consequence of personal quarrels among those concerned, the primitive teaching on this point was condemned in a Church council held A. D. 553 (or 540); and the doctrines of endless punishment sanctioned as a fundamental article of Christ faith. I repeat again, it is truly wonderful, considering, the general corruption of the church in these centuries *that it should take five hundred years for this favorite Pagan dogma to get itself established as orthodoxy!* Yet such is the fact." "The Origin and History of the Doctrine of Endless Punishment," page 202—203, 1881.

(17). HOMER HAILEY: "Time passed and innovations came into the Church. When untaught individuals became nominal Christians, changes were made. Attitudes were no longer as they were in former years, and the pattern was altered. The pristine simplicity was gradually marred and covered, until little of the original simple plan of God could be recognized. Ambitions began to manifest themselves when pagan philosophies became a substitute for the word of God. Over

time, darkness descended upon the face of the earth and the light of truth was covered by ignorance and superstition" From my class note in 1957 at Florida Christian College, (church of Christ).

(18). JERRY CROSS: "When Jesus was on earth he didn't speak of immortality, but rather of eternal life. The Greeks taught that the soul had a natural and innate quality to enable it to pass through death and resist corruption. But, Jesus taught that our 'immortality' is anchored in a life-relationship with God. Jesus was a teacher of 'eternal life,' but Plato of the 'immortality of the soul.' Today these expressions are often confusingly used as synonyms. Yet, they spring from two different sources, one from Greek philosophy, and the other from New Testament Christianity... **It is very easy to read the term 'soul' or 'spirit' in the English Bible and impart modern western philosophical beliefs into the terms.** With Plato and (much later) Descartes, Western thinking became very much dualistic in its view of man. A person is composed, according to this view, of material, extended, substance (body) and immaterial, non-extended, substance (mind). The soul is the imperishable element that is housed in a bodily prison. Therefore, **when western man hears the term 'soul,' he thinks of that element of himself that is confined within his body that is destined to live forever. The presentation of 'soul' in the Hebrew Old Testament is quite different however...the Old Testament presents man as an 'animated body' which is a 'complex of parts, drawing life and activity from a breath-soul, which has no existence apart from the body'"** Magnolia Bible College 1984 Lectures, page 48 and 49, (church of Christ).

(19). SAMUEL DAWSON: "You may be surprised to learn that most, if not all, of our popular concepts of Hell can be found in the writings of Roman Catholic writers...None of our concepts of Hell can be found in the teaching of Jesus Christ! You know how indignant we get at the mention of purgatory—we know that's not in the Bible. You may also find out that our popular concepts of Hell came from the same place that purgatory did—Roman Catholicism" "Jesus' Teaching On Hell," page 13. A free copy of this book at: [www.gospelthemes.com](http://www.gospelthemes.com); no longer on the web. (church of Christ).

(20). CURTIS DICKINSON: "There is not one scripture to support the idea that man is an immortal soul living for the moment in a temple of clay, and that when the body dies the man goes on living...It might come as a surprise to some to know that the term immortal is never used in scripture in connection with soul or man's spirit" "What The Bible Teaches About Immortality And Future Punishment," page 8 and 9, 1984, (church of Christ).

(21). JOHN SCOTT: "Genesis 2:7 is the classic statement of the uniting of flesh and spirit. Here, we have the creature of flesh and bone created from the dust and then brought into a living existence by the Lord blowing into man's nostrils the breath of life. The phrase 'became a living soul' is the same Hebrew phrase used in verse 19 referring to 'every living creature,' that is, to the beasts and birds as other forms of life. In this sense of the word then, man is not distinguished from the animal world as far as life is concerned by the use of these special terms ...The nehphesh may even be said to die (Judges 16:30), but **nehphesh is never used of the spirit of the dead; in fact, nowhere is the suggestion made that the soul survives the man whose life it was in the Old Testament"** Harding Graduate School Lectures, 1971, pages 130—131, Gospel Advocate Company, (church of Christ).

(22). ROGER DICKSON: "A general meaning would be that the soul has reference to any animate being of life that has sense perception ... thus, the soul would be the life principle of an individual" "Life, Death and Beyond," Biblical Research Library, page 45, (church of Christ).

(23). ELIAS SMITH: Often referred to as "Elder" Elias Smith. "This year, in June, my attention was called to think of the real state of the wicked after the last judgment. Before this time, I had taken for truth the old pagan doctrine of 'eternal misery' for the wicked. In June, 1804, being in Mr.

Holmes' bookstore, in Boston, I asked him if he had any new publications. He handed me Evan's Sketch. On opening the book my eyes first fixed on the word, 'destructionists.' I read one page, and concluded, people who held the wicked would be destroyed, were in strange error, as no such thing ever before entered my mind. I bought the book. Often after that the destruction of the wicked would pass through my mind, though I supposed eternal misery was recorded in the Bible. In April 1805, I concluded one day to take my Bible and concordance, and find eternal misery, and not have my mind any longer troubled about destruction. I examined the words misery, miserable, and miserably; and found there was not one place in the Bible where the word was used to describe the state of man beyond death. Next I looked for the word torment, and found that was limited, and that there was no torment mentioned beyond the Day of Judgment. I then looked at the words destroy, destruction, death, second death, perish, consumed, perdition, burnt up, end, etc. I examined the similitudes used to describe the end of the wicked, such as chaff and stubble burnt up; dry trees cast into the fire, and tares burnt up; the fat of lambs consumed, whirlwinds, a dream, and noise. All these things proved to me that at the last judgment, the wicked would be punished with everlasting destruction, which would be their end. My mind was settled upon the subject; but concluded to keep my discovery to myself; as the people were almost distracted with having so many new things...that all rules but the Bible was useless, and that salvation was free for all. My first preaching and writing disturbed the clergy and the wicked; the next disturbed the Baptists, and I was about certain, if this were known, it would disturb my brethren with whom I was connected. I kept it back as long as duty would suffer me, and was constrained at last to make it known, or preach no more. It made some stir, but people bore it as well as could be expected. Soon after preaching it, I wrote and published five sermons upon the subject, which has never been answered to this day." The Life, Conversion, Preaching, Travel, and Sufferings of Elias Smith, 1886, page 347, (church of Christ).

(24). AL MAXEY: "The Maxey—Thrasher Debate" A debate on the eternal destiny of the wicked between two Gospel preachers, church of Christ. "'Then the Lord God formed man of dust from the ground, and breathed into his nostrils the breath of life; and man became a living SOUL/being' (Genesis 2:7). Some traditionalists virtually equate this last phrase (living soul) with 'immortal soul.' But, that is NOT what the passage says. God put breath within this body and the body became a living being. The exact same words are used of animals in the Scriptures. Further, it doesn't say man was GIVEN a soul. It says man BECAME a soul. Big difference!" (church of Christ) Free on the web at: <http://www.zianet.com/maxey/MxThrshr.htm>

(25). ROBERT DOZIER: "Dozier—Johnson Debate," The eternal destiny of the wicked by a Gospel preacher, church of Christ. "But Gehenna was all about destroying that which was dumped there. There were not cries of never ending conscious pain coming out of the bodies cast there. No conscious torment, just destruction of trash, carcasses of animals, and some dead human bodies. It was all about death and destruction. That is what those who heard Jesus speak of Gehenna would think of. Jesus spoke of the wicked and lost as being cast into Gehenna AFTER God killed them (Luke 12:5)." (church of Christ) Free on the web at: <http://groups.yahoo.com/group/Religiousdebates/message/1408>

(26) MOSES E. LARD: "'For the wages of sin is death' it always pays. Whether the sinner stipulates for his wages or not, he is sure to receive it. What the wages of sin are, the apostle here tells us: it is eternal death. How astounding the fact that so many should serve for such a reward!" Commentary on Romans from "The Restoration Library" page 218, 1875, Gospel Light Publishing Company, and also his book "Do The Holy Scriptures Teach The Endlessness Of Future Punishment?" I have been unable to find a copy of his book but found this about it by Steven Clark Goad in "church of Christ Christian Podcast." He said in a recent conversation he had with Jimmy

Allen of Harding University, Jimmy Allen said that he was rethinking and restudying the traditional understanding of Hell. That Jimmy Allen of Harding University shared with him more that confidentiality he would not be allow to repeat, but Jimmy Allen at Harding University sent him a copy of a paper by Moses E. Lard, 1879, "Do the Holy Scriptures Teach the Endlessness of Future Punishment?" Steven Clark Goad said this booklet by Moses E. Lord is a magnificent word study of the Greek word *aion* draws many of the conclusions he had outlined at:

<http://www.godsmessagetheweb.net/2010/07/25/thoughts-on-punishment-of-the-wicked/> This booklet by Lard points out that his understanding is not new or something a few harebrained fanatics have recently thought up to stir controversy, (church of Christ).

(27). F. LaGARD SMITH: Teacher at David Lipscomb University, "If, as we are told at funerals, our loved ones are already in heaven with Jesus, what is the purpose of Christ's Coming and the Resurrection?" *After Life, A Glimpse Of Eternity Beyond Death's Door*, (church of Christ).

(28). R. L. WHITESIDE: "If you serve sin, you need not doubt as to what your wages are to be, nor as to whether you will be paid in full. The final reward for your service to sin is eternal death" *A New Commentary On Paul's Letter To The Saints At Rome*, page 142, 1945, (church of Christ).

(29). B. W. JOHNSON: "*For the wages of sin*. Sin is a master of his servants and pays wages. The wages is *death*, one of the saddest, but profoundest truths of the world. But the *gift of God*. God gives to those who turn from sin, life eternal" *The People's New Testament With Notes*, Gospel Light Publishing Company, (church of Christ).

(30). E. M. ZERR: "It denotes, therefore, that a life devoted to the service of sin will earn or merit the wages of death, not physical death, for all have to go through that, but the second death, designated in Revelation 21:8." *Bible Commentary*, Volume 5, page 360, copyrighted 1952 by E. M. Zerr, (church of Christ).

(31). LEROY GARRETT: "**Nowhere in Scripture will you find the idea that God bestows upon the wicked everlasting (unending) life or immortality so that he can then torment them forever in hell fire. The wicked die forever for two reasons: they do not have the gift of immortality, and they have to receive the wages earned for their life of sin, which is death.**" *Restoration Review*, November 2990, "Is Hell Fire Endless?" (Church of Christ)

(32). STEVEN CLARK GOAD: "Our present traditional view of hell, borrowed from Catholicism and paganism, is no more biblical than their doctrine of limbo," "Thoughts on Punishment of the Wicked," church of Christ Christian Ekklesia Podcast (church of Christ).

<http://www.godsmessagetheweb.net/2010/07/25/thoughts-on-punishment-of-the-wicked/>

(33). JEREMY K. MORITZ: "I grew up in the church. For many years, I believed in the traditional view of Heaven and Hell—that souls are taken from the body immediately following death and are placed in either Heaven or Hell where they will spend eternity in bliss or unending torture. This is what most of the Christian church right now believes. For the last six or seven years, however, I have found countless scriptures that have changed my thinking considerably in this area. It seems to me that nearly the entire Bible teaches that eternal life is only experienced in Heaven, that Hell is a place of complete destruction and annihilation." page 1 "HELL: Eternal Torment or Complete Annihilation?" "I cannot think of a more devastating slander that could be associated with someone's name than the one that Christians have attributed to God. Just think of the worst, cruelest, most wretched human beings in earth's history: Attila the Hun, Benito Mussolini, Genghis Khan, Joseph Stalin, Saddam Hussein, and others. More than likely, Adolf Hitler was the first name to come to mind. But even the ruthless Hitler had not the heart to do the kind of things that are being accredited to the name of God. Nothing that his victims experienced can even come close to the pains that must be present in the common Christian perception of Hell." (church of Christ)

At: <http://www.jeremyandchristine.com/articles/eternal.php>

(34). ASHLEY S. JOHNSON: "Does the doctrine of endless punishment harmonize with the fundamental principles underlying God's government that the hopelessly wicked, the incorrigibly wicked, shall be blotted out? Trace his dealings with the nations through the centuries. On this principle he destroyed the antediluvians (Gen. 5:1-7; 7:1-24). Also Sodom and Gomorrah (Gen., 18:20,21). Also Korah and his rebels (Num., 16:31-33). Also he made provision for the utter destruction of idolaters (Deut., 12:13-18). Also the Egyptians (Ex. 14:1-31). Also Babylon (Isa., 13:19-20. Moses predicted the destruction of the incorrigible (Deut. 18:18, 19). So did Peter (Acts, 3:22-23). John had a vision of the day (Rev. 3:13-21). Why should this be God's method of getting rid of the wicked all through history if he is to suddenly change it at the Judgment Day, and consign all his sinful creatures to torment and punish that all alike and that without end? I cannot answer. Can you?" Founder and president of the Johnson Bible College, "The Resurrection And The Future Life," page 432—433, 1913, Knoxville Lithographing Company, (church of Christ).

(35). DILLARD THURMAN, Brown Trail Church of Christ: "The hope and aspiration of many has been shifted from His coming again to receive His own, to an immediate immortality and heavenly bliss immediately at death! Jesus DID NOT promise that!" Gospel Minutes, Volume 34, Number 5, February 1, 1985, (church of Christ).

(36). E. D. SLOUGH: "Punishment lasts so long as its results last, and where death has been administered for the satisfaction of crime, **the punishment continues till life is restored, and if never restored, it is an everlasting punishment.** Lost of property, loss of liberty, loss of life, may all be meted out to the transgressors under the label of punishment. And death as the capital punishment, legalized on the statutes of all civilized nations of the world, is the highest punishment man can inflict—or so recognized,—being the deprivation of life, the first source of all pleasures and enjoyments, and recognized as being forfeited for certain crimes." "The Indictment Of Eternal Torment—The Self-negation Of A Monstrous Doctrine," page 196—197, F. L. Rowe, Publisher, 1914, (evangelist, church of Christ). On line at: [www.robertwr.com/EternalTorment.htm](http://www.robertwr.com/EternalTorment.htm)

(37). KENNETH D. FORTIER: "Everyone who gets thrown into this lake of fire will suffer death—the second death! Remember, they have already died physically, and were also spiritually dead, and are now resurrected to face judgment as Jesus told us in Matthew 25:46. And that judgment's sentence of those not found written in the book of life it to be thrown in the Lake of Fire where they will be burned up completely and suffer the consequence which is death. And death is the opposite of life! In this we see very plainly that the wicked or unredeemed will not be raised to life to suffer end-less in the Lake of Fire; for to do so they would have to have immortality!" "Church Doctrine's: Right Or Wrong? (You Decide)," page 97, 2007, iUniverse Inc., (church of Christ).

(38). OREN ORAHOOD and many other in the restoration movement and after (church of Christ).

(39). JACOB BLAIN: "**I take the liberty to affirm that it is rank Sadduceeism to assert that God cannot raise the dead—the whole man—from unconscious 'dust,' to which he has 'returned,' as God said he could, and continue his *identity*. It plainly contradicts the Bible to say that such a resurrection would be a 'new creation.'**" "Death Not Life: Or, the Theological Hell and Endless Misery Disproved," page 30. Would this not be saying God couldn't raise the dead, that He cannot raise you; that He can only keep a soul that was in you alive, a deathless soul that was never dead; therefore, a soul cannot be resurrected from the dead. It will be persons that are resurrected and judged, not souls. "*I will give unto HIM that is athirst of the fountain of the water of life freely. HE that overcomes shall inherit these things; and I will be HIS God, and HE shall be my son. But for the fearful, and unbelieving, and abominable, and murderers, and fornicators, and sorcerers, and idolaters, and all liars, THEIR part shall be in the lake that burns*

*with fire and brimstone; which is the second death*" (Revelation 21:6-8). Dose any one believe that souls, which we are told are immaterial; therefore, cannot have a body, but that these souls with no bodies can commit fornication; that deathless souls that cannot die will die the second death? **It was persons, not souls that did all these evil things; the resurrection, judgment, and the second death will be persons, not souls (if there were any such beings) that are not dead and cannot be resurrected or die.**

(40). ROBERT CAPON: "One last theological point while we are on the subject of resurrection and judgment. Perhaps the biggest obstacle to our seeing the judgment of Jesus as the grand sacrament of vindication is our unfortunate preoccupation with the notion of the immortality of the soul. The doctrine is a piece of non-Hebraic philosophical baggage with which we have been stuck ever since the church got into the wide world of Greek thought. Alone with the concomitant idea of (immediate) 'life after death,' it has given us almost nothing but trouble: both concepts militate against a serious acceptance of the resurrection of the dead that is the sole basis of judgment" Parables of Judgment, page 71, Eerdmans, 1989.

**Life is the most important possession we have. Without it there is nothing; it is a glorious gift from God, death takes that gift of life away. Only by the resurrection at the second coming of Christ will anyone have life after death.** The resurrection is an absolute necessity to any life after death is made impossible by the Plato's Platonic theory of an immortal soul that at the death of the person a soul leaves the person that it was in and only that soul lives without the dead, unresurrected person, the person is dead forever.

**You are the one who will choose what it will be for you, life, or death?** EITHER an endless life that is much better then the best that life can be on this earth, OR an endless nothing.

---

#### APPENDIX ONE

From the introduction to "The Indictment Of Eternal Torment—The Self-negation Of A Monstrous Doctrine," E. D. Slough, F. L. Rowe, Publisher, pages 9—18, 1914, evangelist, church of Christ. On line at: <http://robertwr.com/EternalTorment.htm>

"During the Dark Ages, when superstition and tyranny reigned over the better judgments of men, dominating every civil right of liberty, and subduing ever aspiration to advance intellectually, the gospel light was in chaotic blackness, handicapped by an intolerant mob of ungodly and profane rulers, whose highest ambition was to reduce humanity to a condition of absolute serfdom and ignorance, that they might eternally fleece them of their gold and their blood, that they themselves might revel in beastly sensuality and luxury. So that age is a historical reality, the blackest, the most inhuman, the most vile, and intolerant that ever disgraced the ledger of events. And a memorial to all coming ages of the fruits of ungodliness.

Under such a series of profligacy, licentiousness, idolatry, ignorance, and superstition, nothing could result but the very condition that did result. And the very horror of it all, it all occurred under the garb of religion. In that sacred name, which has been a thousand times desecrated, dungeons have been prepared, fires have been kindled for martyrs, and every device genius could contrive was made the tool of usurpation and diabolical power to suppress the liberty of thought, that the mind of men might be effectually bound in the fetters of espionage to serve the god of greed, and the Lucifer's called priests and rulers. And even a mind with a tendency to reason for itself was persecuted and intimidated from every source by the instruments of brute degenerates, and has accomplished just what these men anticipated—**A plane where the few do the thinking for the many.**

Eventually, this resulted in a revolution, costing the blood of countless hosts of men and women and children, and because of the confusion of mind, it broke up into numerous factions and parties,

each confined and circumscribed by the same principles which had dominated their rights under the galling yoke that had just been thrown off. And with them also, a departure from set rules and fixed principles, was another denunciation, and so sensitive to those creeds where those parties that they would shrink back from one of their member who would have the audacity or courage to question their truths as they would from a leper or an infectious disease. Sheltered thus under religious zeal, the hearts of men become congealed and settled into a condition of mimics, rejecting all ideas not in harmony with that of their own teacher.

An inquisition of chains and torches is not less preferable than the perpetual subjection to doctrines, which palsy the mind; and against which men dare not lift a voice lest they be deemed as heretics, and a menace to the cause of Christ. This age of the world, prolific with the religious 'isms' of men, eager to separate themselves in the livery of sect, and follow a favorite crowd under which they were reared, **is the true menace to the cause and progress of truth.**

Thus far I have spoken in a general way. But there is a particular way to which I wish to call your attention. For so long as men close their eyes to possible light, they cannot see. Out of this mass of Egyptian darkness light is slowly evolving. I can see the breaking of the dawn, and the reflected rays of light shooting over the hills! But with this twentieth century civilization, we (the Church of Christ) dare not say we have reached the summit of knowledge, the pinnacle of perfection. To do so would be an expression of egotism, for all who have scanned the word of God will be constrained to say with Paul, 'Oh, the depths of the riches both of wisdom and knowledge of God, how unsearchable his judgments and his ways past finding out.'

Men of renown and scholarship have for ages sought for proof on the pages of nature's book, for the immortality of the souls of all men. My aim will be to show they have all alike failed. Truth is modest in the presence of great men. Speculation is the field of their exploration. No wonder these profound thinkers are baffled to astonishment as they wrestle with the deep things of God, building as they do great structures upon the passing phantoms of the brain. The popular feeling that somehow by irrevocable fate, or unchangeable law, once in being always in being. The delusion which tells of an inborn principle in man both immortal and indestructible, that as we depart here instantaneously awake in a new world with new power and realizations, **and upon which fabrication has been built eternal torment, purgatory, and a host of other doctrines**, have been sounded out from out pulpits, periodicals, funeral sermons and fireside talks. It has permeated every village and hamlet; it is world wide in its scope, and its defense.

We charge our neighbors with crooked reasoning. They can justly retort, thou art the man. For we are no less bound up with early training than those whom we criticize. We dare not raise the voice against the tenets of faith more than they, without expecting in return a volley denunciation and contempt. Picturing the future of the unsaved with all the horror that words can employ, an eternity of woe and misery, and everlasting existence of torture. **And the very illustrations used to prove it are a positive denial of it.** And yet I presume not one of them has noticed it, because they use the same proofs over and over.

Often have my friends exhorted me to be cautious in the agitation of convictions contrary to the established teaching of the Church; that it would be in opposition to all the scholarship of the world. That I would be practically alone, and bring the scorn of the religious world upon me. Yet those same friends would give a world painting of eternal torment that would make Hopkins turn over in his grave and give a sigh of relief. Henceforth let the logically remove the serious objections against their peculiar tent, with the word of God, rather than by scholastic writers. Thought it be an error, they would not call a long nurtured theory in question in fear of combating scholarship. Verily, scholarship will not tear down its own building. Shall we muzzle out inherited right of freethinking and free speaking and bow to the mandates of theological speculations? Shall we decide that

investigation of disputed points of the Bible ought to be suppressed to honor the scholarship back of them? There is no delusion in the name of religion preached among men that has no scholarship back of it. Then why oppose error at all? Though I should get no hearing, I prefer to be alone in the truth, than with the multitude in error. But I am not alone. Thousands are in sympathy with these arguments, many of them representing the highest channels of learning. But, on the other hand, thousand of great learned men have lived in error all their lives, and never able to come to the knowledge of the truth. While many of the weak and lowly have found the truth and laid hold of it. If all ages of the world many thing have been withheld from the wise and prudent, and revealed unto babes. Learning too often leads to speculation, rather than an earnest search for the truth. For that reason truth in the hands of an intellectual dwarf has often been a source of much annoyance to the mighty.

Some place great weight on the number of people believing in this theory. No weaker argument could be brought forth. Numbers prove nothing to be true. They only prove popularity. Not a dogma taught in the world without finding its friends. Many of the most absurd tenets are advocated by millions. Mahometanism with 176,834,000, Confucianism with 256,000,000, Hindooism with 190,000,000, Buddhism with 147,900,000, Polytheism with 117,681,000, Catholicism with 230,800,000—what a strong argument this would be if there was any proof in numbers. What a weak argument Protestantism with 90,000,000, could bring against it, and the Church of Christ but in insignificant number even of those. These statistics are taken from the New National Encyclopedia, Vol. 1, page 2175.

An argument founded on the basic principles of a proposition, principles, which are self-evident, the ultimate conclusion, if we reasons soundly, will be the truth.

“If we would act like sincere searchers for truth, we should survey every argument with a careful and unbiased mind, whether it agree with our former opinion or no. We should give every reasoning its full force, and weigh it in our sedatest judgment...The best way to try the arguments brought against our own opinions is to sit down and endeavor to give a solid answer one by one to every arguments brought by the author to support his doctrine. And in this attempt, if we find there are some arguments, which we are not able to answer fully to our own minds, we should then begin to bethink ourselves, whether we have not hitherto been in a mistake, and whether the defender of the contrary sentiments may not be in the right. Such a method as this will forbid us to pronounce at once against those doctrines, and those writers, which are contrary to our sentiments. And we shall endeavor to find solid arguments to refute their position before we establish ourselves in a contrary position...In the composure of men remember, it is not their reason but your own that is given you to guide you when you come to the years of discretion. Never apply yourselves to read any author with a determination beforehand either for him or against him, or with a settled resolution to believe or to disbelieve, to conform or oppose whatsoever he saith. But always with a design to lay your mind open to truth and to embrace it wherever you find it, as well as to reject falsehood, though it appear under ever so fair a disguise.” Watts on the Mind, pages 248—251—274.

I care not for the contempt this will bring forth. I ask only that this be subjected to the most vigorous test by an honest heart. If you are right you will see my error; if I am right you will see your own error, so after all some good may be accomplished. The line drawn deep, broad and distinct, and on every page we will know just where we stand. The Bible cannot agree with ‘Tom and Dick’ if ‘Tom and Dick’ do not agree with one another. But ‘Tom and Dick’s’ faith should not have any intrinsic weight on the subject. We protest against their policies. **They have confused the public mind by grinding out of their theological burrs, new meanings into common words.** They have thrown false colors over the scriptures. They have inherited in a large measure their faith, and

in this way religious heredity has muzzled the powers of their reason. **So why let Tom and Dick forever close our eyes and seal our mouths, dictating to us a religious teaching? On its very face it is an obvious farce and an extravagant burlesque on the great architect of the universe.**

The issue before us in this work is that unfounded theory of 'natural immortality, or the deathless nature of the soul,' which if ever established must include the dog and the bear. Let that dogma be confirmed and the whole structure of eternal torment must stand forever unscathed. Fundamental to the entire doctrine is this theory. If it stand, the conclusion is inevitable. **If it falls, the whole fabric built upon it crushes into atoms.**

Reader, if you will kindly indulge me the time, I will build a wall against that error, towards which the powers of scholasticism will blow their mighty blasts in vain. And the theory of eternal torment, growing of necessity out of the notion that a spirit of man is indestructible, will be shown to be the grossest error that ever cast a shadow over the fair universe of God. An error that has been pounded and 'propounded' into the hearts of men and women, both in and out of the church, from the days of Socrates, 500 years before Christ, down to the twentieth century. You dare not deny that Socrates and Plato, his pupil, are the originators and perpetrators of this doctrine. And it is further seen by men as apparently confirmed by the parables and metaphors of revelation.

Someone may ask what does it matter if we do believe it? **It matters much.** Let me point you to some of its mischief. **What caused Universalism to rise up and deny the future retribution?** That very doctrine of natural immortality. How did it cause it? This way—they believed a spirit is indestructible. They saw a furnace of fire in scripture opening its jaws to receive countless hosts. They know the fire could only torture such a spirit. They saw no release from it: they saw in the distant eternity the writhing millions of humanity no nearer the end of their suffering than when they entered. They thought '**horror!**' Such would make God a tyrant, more terrible than a thousand inquisitions of the Dark Ages. They cried 'absurdity.' They cried right, too. So they devised a crude escape. They figured it all away, and agreed to take all men into heaven irrespective of moral qualification. All punishment became to them reformatory, and, ultimately, the last man would depart for glory.

**From whence came the soul-benumbing ingredients of Calvin's Eternal Election** of much of the human race to everlasting misery in a lake of fire, regardless of moral attire, choice, or conduct. Came it not from the gangrenes of putrescent mental sore? Came it not from a scattering mind, incapacitated to gather, associate and concentrate evidence? With him, the deathless nature of the soul was a profound reality—it was unquestionable—to doubt was to exhibit weakness. He saw God revealed in scripture with powers sweeping all infinity. He saw some intimations of an election, a pre-election, a foreknowledge, and following this lead he unconsciously forced to the grossest absurdity the mind of man can entertain. Lay your premises in error, and draw your conclusions in harmony, and you have a falsehood masquerading in your brain in the guise of the angel of truth.

**What caused induced the rise of 'spiritualism?'** That dark, deceitful pretense of talking with the dead. Any one may talk to the dead, but the dead answers not. These people also were repulsed by the doctrine of endless misery, and immediately rejected the Bible, but held tenaciously to the eternal perpetuity of the spirit of man, and invented a diabolical fare for its chart of unseen activity. Notwithstanding the Divine denunciations against it as the work of devilish agencies.

**Upon what is 'Purgatory' and 'Saint Worship' founded?** Are not its entire fortifications resting upon that one delicate thread? These delusive and pernicious evils of Catholicism, destined to drag man and women, boys and girls down to an irredeemable fate, under the 'spell' that a

failure here means but a little longer term of purification in the fires of Purgatory.

**Again, from that theory, legions of infidels and atheist have been created: besides, thousands more have wandered off into every form and bypath of delusion.** Denying the conclusions and consequences to which the theory leads, man have given wings to scores of false notions withdrawing from it entirely, or making some sour of apology for God as did Thompson in the 'Theism,' 'that it belongs to the necessities of existence and cannot therefore be otherwise.'"

---

#### BIBLIOGRAPHY

Early in the Reformation there were many who did not believe, "*You shall not surely die,*" but the Church of England opposed them. A few of the many books by well known ministers, teachers, professors, Doctors, mostly orthodox Protestants or church of Christ ministers teaching that mankind does not have a being in them from birth that is immortal. That life after death is dependent on the resurrection, not on an immortal soul.

1. Tertullian, "Treatise on the Soul" Chapter 55
2. Martin Luther, E. Petavel, "The Problem of Immortality" page 255
3. John Wesley, "Wesley's sermon on Luke 16:23"
4. William Tundale, "Christian Moralism" page 99
5. Ashley S. Johnson, "The Resurrection And The Future Life" 1913, church of Christ
6. Elias Smith, (Often referred to as "Elder" Elias Smith) "The Life, Conversion, Preaching, Travel and Sufferings of Elias Smith, 1886, church of Christ
7. Homer Hailey
  - (1) "God's Judgments and Punishments," President of Bible at Florida College, 2003, church of Christ
  - (2) "Revelation, An Introduction and Commentary," Baker Book House, Hailey was dean of Bible at Florida College, church of Christ
  - (3) "Revelations" Baker Book House, 1979, church of Christ
  - (4) "Now Mine Eye Seeth Thee, A Commentary On Job" Religious Supply, Inc. 1994, church of Christ
8. F. LaGard Smith, "After Life, A Glimpse of Eternity Beyond Death's Door," 2003, Lipscomb University, church of Christ
9. Jerry Cross, "Magnolia Bible College 1984 Lectures" page 48 and 49, church of Christ
10. Ashley S. Johnson,
11. "Ages of ages, or ages upon ages," Founder and president of the Johnson Bible College, church of Christ
12. "The Resurrection And The Future Life," 1913, Founder and president of the Johnson Bible College, Knoxville Lithographing Company, church of Christ
13. E. D. Slough, "Indictment Of Eternal Torment—The Self-negation of a Monstrous Doctrine," 1914, church of Christ, <http://www.robertwr.com/EternalTorment.htm>
14. Jimmy Allen, "Fire In My Bones," and "What is Hell Like?" Professor Emeritus of Bible – Harding University, 2004, church of Christ
15. J. W. McGarvey, President of Sacred History in the College of the Bible, Standard Bible Commentary, 1916, Standard Publishing Company, church of Christ
16. J. W. McGarvey, President of Sacred History in the College of the Bible, McGarvey's Sermons, Standard Publishing Company, church of Christ
17. Jeremy K. Moritz, "HELL: Eternal Torment or complete Annihilation?" church of Christ
18. Steven Clark Goad, "Thoughts on Punishment of the Wicked," church of Christ Christian Ekklesia Podcast, church of Christ
19. "Only in Christ" (2002) Star Bible Publications, church of Christ
20. William Robert West, "A Resurrection To Immortality," church of Christ
  - (1) First edition, Author House Publishing, 2004
  - (2) Second edition, Xulon Press, 2006
  - (3) Third edition, Infivity Publishing, 2008
  - (4) Fourth edition, WestBow Press, a division of Thomas Nelson, 2011
  - (5) Fifth edition, Tate Publishing, 2014
  - (6) Sixth edition, "Life In Christ," Author House Publishing, 2015
21. William Robert West, "The Rapture And Israel," CreateSpace Press, 2011, church of Christ
22. Moses E. Lord,
  - (1) "Do The Holy Scriptures Teach The Endlessness Of Future Punishment?" church of Christ
  - (2) Commentary On Romans from "The Restoration Library," Gospel Light Publishing Company, church of Christ
23. Al Maxey, "The Maxey—Thrasher Debate," church of Christ
24. Robert Dozier, "Dozier—Johnson Debate," church of Christ
25. Edward Fudge, "The Fire That Consumes" 1982, church of Christ
26. Roger E. Dickson,
  - (1) "Life, Death, and Beyond," Star Bible Publications, Inc. 1998, church of Christ
  - (2) "Eschatology A Sturdy Of God's Judgments," Biblical Research Library, Star Bible Publications, Inc., 1997, church of Christ
27. John Scott, "Harding Graduate School Lectures" 1971, church of Christ
28. Samuel G. Dawson, "Jesus' Teaching on Hell" 1996, church of Christ
29. Alexander Campbell,
  - (1) "Popular Lectures And Addresses," Harbinger Book Club, church of Christ
  - (2) "The Christian System," page 3, Gospel Advocate, 1970, church of Christ
  - (3) "Five discourses On Hell" <http://www.cimmay.us/campbell.html>, 1848, church of Christ
  - (4) "Campbell Skinner Debate On Everlasting Punishment," College Press, 1840, church of Christ
  - (5) Preface to "The Living Oracles," Gospel Advocate Company, 1826, church of Christ
30. Micah Redding: "There Is No Hell (parts 1—6) at: <http://micahredding.com/blog/2008/09/15/there-no-hell-part-1>, church of Christ

31. T. Pierce Brown, "Soul and Spirit" Gospel Advocate, June 14, 1979, church of Christ
32. Mike Willis, "Commentary On Paul's First Epistle To The Corinthians," 1979, Guardian of Truth Foundation, church of Christ
33. Cecil Willis, "But What About the Thief on the Cross?" Guardian of Truth Foundation, church of Christ
34. John T. Willis, "The Living Word Commentary On The Old Testament – Genesis, Sweet Publishing Company, 1979, Church of Christ.
35. Guy N. Woods, "What Is The Soul Of Man," Gospel Advocate, 1985, November 21, church of Christ
36. B. W. Johnson,
  - (1) "Christ and the Future Life' 1891, church of Christ
  - (2) "People's New Testament With Notes," church of Christ
37. Carl Holladay, "The First Letter of Paul to The Corinthians," 1979, Abilene Christian University Press, church of Christ
38. McCord, Guardian of Truth, "Lexicons Can Be Wrong," 1996, church of Christ
39. Samuel Csonka, "Guardian of Truth," now "Truth Magazine," "The Doctrine of Annihilation" page 16, January 5, 1995, church of Christ
40. Marc W. Gibson and Harry Osborne, Truth Magazine, "The Serpent That Was Not There," page 458, August 7, 1003, church of Christ
41. Dillard Thurman, Gospel Minutes, Volume 34, Number 5, February 1, 1985, West Freeway Church of Christ
42. Dr. Bert Thompson, Ph. D
  - (1) "Reason and Revelation" May 2000, church of Christ
  - (2) "The Origin, Nature, and Destiny of the Soul," Apologetics Press, Inc. 2001, church of Christ.
43. George Lemasters, "Florida College Annual Lectures," 1975, church of Christ
44. Ron Halbrook,
  - (1) "Florida College Annual Lectures," 1986, church of Christ
  - (2) "Sodom and Gomorrah..." Guardian of Truth, October 3, 1991, church of Christ
45. George Lemasters, "Florida College Annual Lectures," 1975, church of Christ
46. Robert C. Welch, "Florida College Annual Lectures," 1975, church of Christ
47. Florida College Annual Lectures, 1994, "Overcoming With The Lamb," church of Christ
48. Robert Turner, Florida College Annual Lectures, 1986, church of Christ
49. Thomas Andrews, Florida College Annual Lectures, 1997, church of Christ
50. C. Hamilton, Truth Commentaries—1 Peter" Guardian of Truth, church of Christ
51. Al Maxey, Reflections, Issue 46, June 6, 2003, church of Christ
52. James Burton Coffman, "Commentary On Luke," 1975, Firm Foundation Publishing House, Abilene Christian University, church of Christ
53. A. M. Ogden, "The Avenging of the Apostles and Prophets," Ogden Publications, 1985, church of Christ
54. James H, Jacobsen, "Voice Of The Seventh Angel" New Jerusalem Publications, 1999, church of Christ
55. Jim McGuiggan, "The Book Of Revelation" 1976, Star Bible Publications, church of Christ
56. Ralph F. Brashears, "The Revelation Of The Christian Age," Vantage Press, 1989, church of Christ
57. John F. Floyd, "I, John to the Seven Churches," 1994, Star Bible Publications, church of Christ
58. Gregory L. Swango, "The 3 Worlds of Eternity," Star Bible Publications, 2001, church of Christ
59. Ferrell Jenkins, "The Old Testament In The Book Of Revelation," 1972. Florida College Bookstore, church of Christ
60. Newton W. Allphin, "Visions Unveiled or The Revelation Explained, 1945, Star Bible Publications, church of Christ
61. J. W. Roberts, "The Revelation to John," 1974, Abilene Christian University Press, church of Christ
62. Frank Walton, Florida College Lectures 1994, church of Christ
63. H. Leo Boles, The Gospel According To Matthew, Gospel Advocate, 1954, church of Christ
64. Almon L. Williams, Florida College Annual Lectures, 1986, Church of Christ
65. Leroy Garrett, "Is Hell Fire Endless?" "A Definition Of Hell," Restoration Review, November 1990, church of Christ
66. Cecil Hook, "Free As Sons" and "Free In Christ," "Eternal Life Not Offered Before Christ" <http://www.freedomsring.org/>, church of Christ
67. John Scott, "Harding Graduate School Lectures," 1971, Gospel Advocate Company, church of Christ
68. Hugo McCord, "McCord's New Testament Translation of the Everlasting Gospel" 1988, Freed-Hardeman College Press, church of Christ
69. E. M. Zerr, Bible Commentary, Cogdill Foundation Publications, 1994, church of Christ
70. Steven Clark Goad, "Thoughts on Punishment of the Wicked," church of Christ
71. Thomas P. Connelly—Nathanies Field, "Debate On The State Of The Dead," 1852, Christian Church
72. Dr T. W. Brents, Gospel Sermons, 1918, Gospel Advocate Publishing Co, church of Christ
73. Johnie Edwards, "What Death Says," June 7, 2001, Truth Magazine, church of Christ
74. B. Reeves, Guardian of Truth, 1996, church of Christ
75. Foy E. Wallace, Jr, "God's Prophetic Word," church of Christ
76. Foy E. Wallace "The Book Of Revelation," Wallace Publications, 1966, church of Christ
77. N. W. Allphin, "Visions Unveiled, or The Revelation Explained," 1985, Star Bible Publications, church of Christ
78. Dr T. W. Brents, Gospel Sermons, 1918, Gospel Advocate Publishing Co., church of Christ
79. Walter Scott, "The Gospel Restored," Old Paths Book Club, 1836, church of Christ
80. James D. Bales, "The Hub Of The Bible Or Acts Two Analyzed," Lambert Book House, 1960, church of Christ
81. Guy N. Woods, "What Is The Soul Of Man," Gospel Advocate, 1985, Number 21, church of Christ
82. Dyrel Collins,
83. Immortality: Only In Christ," 2002, Star Bible Publications, church of Christ
84. "Conditional Immortality," 2002, Star Bible Publications, church of Christ
85. Kenneth D. Fortier,
  - (1) "Church Doctrine's: Right Or Wrong?" 2007, iUniverse Publishing, [www.kenfortier.com](http://www.kenfortier.com), church of Christ
  - (2) "What The New Testament Says About Death," "Three Types Of Death," A Preliminary Study on The Biblical Meaning of 'Soul,'" "The Word (3) Hell" "The Soul and Immortality,"
  - (4) The Origin Of Hell," "Immortal Soul Concepts,"
  - (5) The Rich Man And Lazarus," "Reasons Conditional Immortality is Scriptural,"
  - (6) "A Preliminary Study of the Greek Word Thousand and Thousands," MANY MORE all free on line at [www.kenfortier.com](http://www.kenfortier.com)—church of Christ
86. Curtis Dickinson,
  - (1) "What The Bible Teaches About Immortality And Future Punishment," 1984, church of Christ

- (2) "Immortality? Not Yet!" "Life Through Christ's Atonement,"  
 (3) "Hell and High Water," "Immortality,"  
 (4) "The Debt Christ Paid,"  
 (5) "Hell: What Is It?" MUCH MORE by Curtis Dickinson free on line at: <http://kenfortier.com/site/cdickinsonarticles-> - church of Christ
87. Steve Jones, "Natural immortality: Is It Christian Doctrine?" at [www.kenfortier.com](http://www.kenfortier.com) - church of Christ
  88. A. W. Fowler, "Jesus' Promise To The Dying Thief," at [www.kenfortier.com](http://www.kenfortier.com) - church of Christ
  89. Jesse B Ferguson, "Spirit Communion," 1854, church of Christ
  90. Stephen Wiggins, Firm Foundation, 2006, church of Christ
  91. Joe R. Everett, "Watering Down Hell," Cedar Park church of Christ
  92. J. F. Watson, "After Death Part 1: Hell," Uniontown church of Christ
  93. Robertson L. Whiteside, A New Commentary On Paul's Letter To The Saints At Rome, page 142, 1945, church of Christ
  94. R. L. Whiteside, "Kingdom Of Promise and Prophecy," 1956, church of Christ
  95. A. M Morris, "The Prophecies Unveiled," Old Paths Book Club, 1914, church of Christ
  96. "The Doctrine Of Last Things," 1986 Florida College Annual Lectures, Cogdill Foundation Pub, church of Christ
  97. "Reemphasizing Bible Basics In Current Controversies," 1990 Florida College Annual Lectures, church of Christ  
 1996 Florida College Annual Lectures, church of Christ
  98. "The Bible Doctrine of Sin," 1997 Florida College Annual Lectures, church of Christ
  99. George S. Lemasters, "Heaven and Hell," 1975 Florida College Annual Lectures, church of Christ
  100. Chris Reeves, "Eschatology, A Study of Last Things," Memorial Blvd church of Christ
  101. C. S Henry, D. D., "The Endless Future Of The Race," D. Appleton And Company, 1879, Abilene Christina College Library
  102. George T. Carpenter, church of Christ, John Hughes, Universalist Church, "Debate On The Destiny Of The Wicked," 1875, Central Book Concern Publishers, 1875
  103. C. R. Nichol, "The Nichol - Bradley Debate," Published by Mrs. C. R. Nichol, 1907, church of Christ
  104. L. S. White, "Russell—White Debate," F. L. Rowe, Publisher, 1908, church of Christ
  105. Thomas B. Warren, Ph. D., "Immortality," National Christian Press, Inc., church of Christ
  106. Robert L. Kramer, "Is The Soul Of Man Immortal?" Present Truth, Volume 10, Number 2, church of Christ
  107. Philip Edgcumbe Hughes, "Between Death and Resurrection, Present Truth, Volume 10, Number 2, church of Christ
  108. Robert R. Taylor, Jr., "The Bible Doctrine Of Final Things," Taylor Publications, 1993, church of Christ
  109. Mack Lyon, "Life, Death, and Beyond," Publishing Designs, Inc., 1994, church of Christ
  110. Leon Crouch, Th. D., "An Introduction To Eschatology," Star Bible Publications, church of Christ
  111. Moses Stuart, "Future Punishment," Old Paths Book Club, 1954, church of Christ
  112. Stanley E. Sayers, "The Nature Of Things To Come," Firm Foundation Publishing House, 1972, church of Christ
  113. John A. Welch, "The Unquenchable Fire And The Never Sorrowing City," Faith and Facts Press, 1981, church of Christ
  114. Gregory L. Swango, "The 3 Worlds Of Eternity," Star Bible Publications, 2001, church of Christ
  115. George C. Stewart, "Our Reigning Kind And Returning Lord," Star Bible Publications, 1998, church of Christ
  116. Charies Burke, "Our Immortality Of Life," church of Christ
  117. Matt Dabbs, "Do Animals Have a Soul?" Northside church of Christ, St Petersburg Florida
  118. Grover Stevens, "Is There a Burning Hell?" church of Christ
  119. Don K. Preston, "A Study of the Resurrection," church of Christ
  120. David Brown, D.D., "Christ's Second Coming," Old Paths Book Club, 1953, church of Christ
  121. James D. Bales, Professor of Christian Doctrine Harding College, "The Hub of the Bible," Lambert Bok House, 1960, church of Christ
  122. Roy H. Lanier, Sr., "The Timeless Trinity," 1974, church of Christ
  123. C. R. Nichol, "Nichol—Hensler Debate, Nichol Pub. Co., church of Christ
  124. Batsell Barrett Bztxer. Ph. D., David Lipscomb College, "If I Be Lifted Up," Gospel Advocate Company, 1956, church of Christ
  125. James Burton Coffman, "Old Testament Commentaries, Job," Abilene Christian University Press, 1993, church of Christ
  126. "The Spiritual Sword" Volume 36, January 2005, Number 2, "Eternal Punishment," Cetwell church of Christ
  127. Perry B Cotham, "After Death...What Then?" 1970, church of Christ
  128. James M. Tolle,  
 (1) "Christian Destiny" Tolle Publications 1970, church of Christ  
 (2) "The Second Coming of Christ" Alexander Street church of Christ
  129. V. E. Howard,  
 (1) "Resurrection And The Judgment" Central Printers and Publishers, 1975, church of Christ  
 (2) "Where Are The Dead?" Central Printers and Publishers, church of Christ
  130. R. W. Grimsley, "The State Of The Dead And The Resurrection" Quality Printing Co. Inc., church of Christ
  131. Gregory L. Sharp: "The Justice of God and Hell," Truth Magazine, 1991, page 582, church of Christ
  132. John Bland, "Hell? No!," church of Christ
  133. Fred P. Thompson, "What The Bible Says About Heaven And Hell," College Press, 1983, Christian Church
  134. Charles R. Gresham, "What The Bible Says About Resurrection," College Press, 1983, Christian Church
  135. Kenny Boles, "What The Bible Says About The Afterlife, The Life To Come," College Press, 2010, Christian Church
  136. Russell Boatman,  
 (1) "What the Bible Says: The End Time" 1980, Christian Church  
 (2) "Beyond Death: What The Bible Says About The Hereafter," 1980, Christian Church
  137. Don DeWalt, "The Nature of Man, Who Am I?" The End Time, College Press, 1983, Christian Church
  138. Robert Young,  
 (1) Analytical Concordance To the Bible," Wm. B. Eerdmans Publishing Co., 1964  
 (2) "Young's Literal Translation," Public Domain
  139. D. Barry, "Conditional Immortality, Biblical Proof of Annihilation in Hell," <http://www.jewishnotgreek.com>
  140. Timothy J. Barnett, "Endless Hell Ended," 1979, <http://endlesshellended.com/>
  141. Dr. Joseph Priestley, "Corruptions Christianity" in Works (1818), Volume 5

142. R. O. Overton, "Man's Mortality," 1643
143. John Milton, "Treatise of Christian Doctrine" Volume. 1
144. John Jackson, "A Dissertation on Matter and Spirit," 1735, "The Belief of a Future State" 1745, "A Clear Distinction Between True and False Religion" 1750
145. Dr. Joseph Priestley, "Disquisitions Relating to Matter and Spirit" in Works, Volume 3
146. Bishop Edmund Law, "The State of the Dead," 1765 (Appendix)
147. Archdeacon Blackburne, "A Short Historical View of the Controversy Concerning the Intermediate State" 1765
148. Samuel Bourn, "Christian Doctrine of Future Punishment" 1759
149. Dr. William Whiston, "The Eternity of Hell— Torments Considered" 1740
150. Prof. Henry Dodwell, "The Natural Mortality of Human Souls" 1708
151. Dr. William Thomson, "The Thought of Death" in the Bampton Lecture, 1862
152. Archbishop J. Tillotson, Works, 1717, Volume 1
153. Dr. William Coward,
  - (1) "A Survey of the Search After Souls,"
  - (2) "Further Thoughts Concerning the Human Soul" 1703
154. Henry Layton, "A Search After Souls" 1706
155. Clark Pinnock, "Four Views On Hell" 1992
156. Dr. Edward White,
  - (1) "Life in Christ" 1846, <http://www.robertwr.com/LifeInChrist.htm>
  - (2) "That Unknown Country,"
  - (3) "Immortality, a Clerical Symposium,"
  - (4) "The Unspeakable Gift" (1884),
157. Wolcott H. Littlejohn, "Life Only In Christ or Immortality Not A Birthright But A Gift From God" Harvard Book Store, 1855
158. Dr. John Thomas, "Final extinction of wicked; immortality a gift through Christ"
159. H. H. Dobney, "Notes of Lectures on Future Punishment" 1844
160. John Miller, "Are Souls Immortal?" Evangelical Reform Pub. Co., 1887
161. Archbishop R. Whately, "A View of the Scriptural Revelations Concerning a Future State"
162. Sidney Hatch, Th. M., "Daring to Differ: Adventures in Conditional Immortality" 1991
163. James Panton Ham, "Life and Death; or, The Theology of the Bible in Relation to Human Mortality" 1849
164. Charles F. Hudson,
  - (1) "Debt and Grace as Related to the Doctrine of a Future Life" 1857
  - (2) "Christ Our Life, The Scriptural Argument for Immortality Through Christ Alone" 1860
165. Samuele Bacchiocchi, "Immortality or Resurrection?" 1997
166. Dean Frederick W., "Farrar, Mercy and Judgment" 1881
167. Dr. Robert W. Dale, "Edward White, His Life and Work" 1902
168. J. W. Hanson D.D., "The Hell Bible"
169. Henry Constable,
  - (1) "Hades: or the Intermediate State of Man" 1878,
  - (2) "The Duration and Nature of Future Punishment" 1871
170. Jacob Blain, "Death Not Life: Or, The Theological Hell and Endless Misery Disproved"
171. Willam R. Huntington, "Conditional Immortality," Ichthus Publications, 1878
172. Bishop John J. S. Perowne, "Hulsean Lectures on Immortality" 1868
173. Sir George Stokes,
  - (1) "That Unknown Country (A Symposium)" 1889,
  - (2) "Immortality, a Clerical Symposium,"
  - (3) "Conditional Immortality" 1897
174. Dr. W. A. Brown, "The Christian Hope" 1912
175. Dr. R. F. Weymouth translated The New Testament in Modern Speech. Note on 1 Corinthians 15:18: "By 'perish' the Apostle here apparently means 'pass out of existence'"
176. Dr. William Temple,
  - (1) Christian Faith and Life" 1931;
  - (2) Drew Lecture on Immortality, 1931,
  - (3) "Nature, Man and God" 1953
177. Dr. Aubrey R. Vine, "An Approach to Christology" 1948
178. Dr. Lyman Abbott, "That Unknown Country" 1889
179. Dr. Emmanuel Petavel—Ollieff, "The Struggle for Eternal Life" "The Extinction of Evil" 1889, "The Problem of Immortality"
180. H. Pettingell,
  - (1) "The Theological Trilemma (Endless Misery) Universal Salvation, or Conditional Immortality" 1878,
  - (2) "The Life Everlasting: What Is It? Whence Is It? Whose Is It?" 1882,
  - (3) "The Unspeakable Gift" 1884,
181. Eric Lewis, "Life and Immortality" 1949. "Christ, the First Fruits" 1949
182. Dr. Basil F. C. Atkinson, In "The Pocket Commentary of the Bible" Part One: Book of Genesis, 1954 Comment on Genesis 2:7
183. DR. T. A. Kantonen, "The Christian Hope" 1954
184. DR. D. R. G. Owen, "Body and Soul," 1956
185. William Enfield, "History of Philosophy"
186. Paul G. Humber, "Terminal Hell, Eternal Paradise," 2013
187. John Locke, "Reasonableness Of Christianity," 1695
188. John Millton, "State of the Dead"
189. Dr. Reinhold Niebuhr, "The Nature and Destiny of Man," 1955, Gifford Lectures at Edinburgh, 1939
190. Thomas Thayer, "Origin And History Of The Doctrine Of Endless Punishment" 1881

191. W. T. Berger, *The Wages Of Sin And Everlasting Punishment*, 1886
192. Walter Balfour, "An Inquiry Into The Scriptural Import Of The Words, Sheol, Hades, Tartarus And Gehenna" 1854
193. Leroy Edwin Froom, "The Conditionalist Faith of Our Father: The Conflict of the Ages Over the Nature and Destiny of Man," Volume one
194. Philip Schaff, *History Of the Christian Church*, New Schaff—Herzog Encyclopedia of Religious Knowledge
195. Randy Klassen, "What Does The Bible Really Say About Hell?" Pandora Press, 2001
196. Horace L. Hastings,
  - (1) "Pauline Theology, Or The Christian Doctrine Of Future Punishment As Taught In The Epistles Of Paul," 1853
  - (2) "After The Verdict," Himes Publications 1982
  - (3) "The Last Judgment, New Testament Facts vs. Modern Fiction," Himes Publications, 1982
197. James Herman Whitmore, "The Doctrine Of Immortality," Kellaway and Co.,
198. Glen A. Adams and W. E. Fox, "The Judgment," 1981,
199. Robert L. Whitelaw, "Death, Resurrection, Immortality, Judgment," Grace Abounding Ministries, Inc., 1988
200. Babu G Ranganathan, "Conservative Theologian No Longer Believes Eternal Torment," <http://www.ideamarker.com>
201. Anthony F. Buzzard M.A., "What Happens When We Die? A Biblical View of Death and Resurrection" 2002, [www.restorationfellowship.org](http://www.restorationfellowship.org)
202. Allen Webster, "Hell Disappeared And No One Noticed"
203. Wilbur M. Smith, "The Biblical Doctrine Of Heaven," Moody Press, 1974
204. Henry Hamlet Dobney, "On The Scripture Doctrine Of Future Punishment, An Argument (1850)" Kessinger Legacy Reprints, 1850.
205. J. M. Denniston, "The Perishing Soul According To Scripture," pages 55—56, Longmans, Green, and Co., 1874
206. Thomas Davis, "Endless Sufferings Not The Doctrine Of Scripture," ULAN Press, 1867
207. Steve Gregg, "All You Want To Know About Hell," Thomas Nelson, 2013
208. Chas. L. Ives, "Bible Doctrine Of the Soul," 1873
209. Aaron Ellis, "Bible Vs. Tradition," Bible Examiner, Second Edition, 1853
210. Stewart Salmond, "The Christian Doctrine Of Immortality," 1901
211. J. Webb Mealy, "The End Of The Unrepentant." Wipf & Stock, 2013
212. C. F. Hudson, "Debt and Grace, As Related to the Doctrine of a Future Life," Ulan Press, 1857

=====

**DOWNLOAD THE FREE PDF BOOK "Life in Christ, Resurrection and Immortality" 907 pages** By William Robert West  
 Free at: <http://www.robertwr.com/resurrection.pdf>

---

**PRINTED COPY "Life In Christ—Resurrection and Immortality" William West – Author House Publishing, 2015: 907 pages: \$31.93**  
<http://bookstore.authorhouse.com/Products/SKU-001051199/Life-In-Christ.aspx>

---

**PRINTED COPY FROM BOOKSTORES ON THE WEB: At Amazon.com**  
[http://www.amazon.com/Life-Christ-William-Robert-West-ebook/dp/B016FI3MUU/ref=sr\\_1\\_1?s=books&ie=UTF8&qid=1444607570&sr=1-1&keywords=Life+in+Christ+william+robert+west](http://www.amazon.com/Life-Christ-William-Robert-West-ebook/dp/B016FI3MUU/ref=sr_1_1?s=books&ie=UTF8&qid=1444607570&sr=1-1&keywords=Life+in+Christ+william+robert+west)

---

**KINDLE EDITION \$3:99:** [HTTP://WWW.AMAZON.COM/LIFE-CHRIST-WILLIAM-ROBERT-WEST-EBOOK/DP/B016FI3MUU/REF=SR\\_1\\_1\\_TWI\\_KIN\\_1?S=BOOKS&IE=UTF8&QID=144460791&SR=1-1&KEYWORDS=LIFE+IN+CHRIST+WILLIAM+ROBERT+WEST](http://www.amazon.com/Life-Christ-William-Robert-West-ebook/dp/B016FI3MUU/ref=sr_1_1?twi_kin_1?s=books&ie=UTF8&qid=144460791&sr=1-1&keywords=Life+in+Christ+william+robert+west)

---

**At Booksamillion.com/** <http://www.booksamillion.com/p/Life-Christ/William-Robert-West/9781504950701?id=6013937360175>

---

**Or free html:**

- CHAPTER ONE:** The reinterpretation of the nature of man: <http://www.robertwr.com/>
- Soul in Genesis, Soul in the New Testament, Old Testament words, which are translated life, spirit, breath, or soul, are all used referring to both a person and animals, Soul in the Old Testament.
  - Soul in the New Testament, Plato's immortal soul versus Christ's life and resurrection, Historical proof of reinterpretations of the Bible. The great confusion—Soul or Spirit or

**CHAPTER TWO:** Life or death? <http://www.robertwr.com/life.html>

**CHAPTER THREE:** The reinterpretations of the great doctrines of the Bible.  
<http://www.robertwr.com/immortal.html>

**CHAPTERS FOUR, FIVE, SIX, AND SEVEN:** <http://www.robertwr.com/hell.html>

- Chapter Four: From where came hell? The given no chance Hell, Edward Fudge's Short Hell, The Changing Hell, The Vanishing Hell.
- Chapter Five: Sheol, Hades, Tartarus, and the Nether World. A soul is the image of Adam.
- Chapter Six: The thirty-one passages where Hell is used in the King James Version.
- Chapter Seven: A Strange and Unexplainable Silence.

**CHAPTERS EIGHT, NINE, TEN, AND ELEVEN:**

<http://www.robertwr.com/heaven.html>

- Chapter Eight: The interpretation of figurative language, metaphors, and symbolical passage.
  1. Part one: The intermediate bosom, the rich man, and Lazarus.
  2. Part two: The symbolical pictures of Revelation versus a literal interpretation.
  3. Part three: Forever and ever of the King James Version.
  4. Part four: Israel's destruction, her weeping, gnashing of teeth, outer darkness, A. D. 70
- Chapter Nine: Universalist: The "age lasting" Hell.
- Chapter Ten: Evil Pagan teachings that are attributed to God.
- Chapter Eleven: Historical proof of the changing of the teaching of the Bible

---

**OTHER WEB SITES of William Robert West, church of Christ**

**"THE RAPTURE AND ISRAEL" can be downloaded free at:** <http://www.robertwr.com/rapture.html>

THE PRINTED BOOK AT: <https://www.createspace.com/3457158>

AT BOOKSTORES ask for ISBN 978-1452895352

- Ch. 1 After the Judgment where will we spend eternity?
- Ch. 2 When will the secret rapture come to pass? Will you miss it?
- Ch. 3 Will there be cars without drivers after the rapture?
- Ch. 4 What is the battle of Armageddon?
- Ch. 5 Is Armageddon coming soon?
- Ch. 6 Will Israel be restored? Will there be a worldwide conversion of Jews?
- Ch. 7 Will the temple be rebuilt in Jerusalem?
- Ch. 8 Will animal sacrifices be restored?
- Ch. 9 What are the signs of the second coming of Christ?
- Ch. 10 Who are the 144,000?
- Ch. 11 Will there be one, two, or three resurrections?
- Ch. 12 What is the "time of the Gentiles"?
- Ch. 13 What is the "gap" theory?
- Ch. 14 Who is the thirteenth tribe?

<http://www.robertwr.com/ReadMyEMtailandReviews.html>

<http://www.robertwr.com/twentyfourHells.html>

=====

**"THE INDICTMENT OF ETERNAL TORMENT: THE SELF-NEGATION OF A MONSTROUS DOCTRINE,"** by E. D. Slough, a preacher in the church of Christ, F. L. Rowe Publisher, 1914. I have put this book on the web free at: <http://www.robertwr.com/EternalTorment.htm>

For e-readers: <http://www.scribd.com/doc/162824865/Eternal-Torment-A-Monstrous-Doctrine-by-E-D-Slough>

**"LIFE IN CHRIST"** by Edward White was published in 1875 may have been one of the first major protest against the doctrine of an immortal soul. For the most part this book teaches the truth on the doctrine of the soul and Hell however there are a few things in it that are unbiblical. I have put this book on the web free at: <http://www.robertwr.com/LifeInChrist.htm>

For e-readers: <http://www.scribd.com/doc/173926706/Life-in-Christ>

---

FOUR GOOD WEB PAGES BY MEMBERS OF THE CHURCH OF CHRIST.

(1) Articles by Ken Fortier and C. Dickinson <http://kenfortier.com/site/articles>

(2) "The Maxey—Thrasher Debate" A debate on the eternal destiny of the wicked between two Gospel preachers.  
<http://www.zianet.com/maxey/MxThrsr.htm>

---

(3) <http://www.jeremyandchristine.com/articles/eternal.php>

(4) <http://www.robertwr.com/godsjudgment.htm>

---

A web page of a friend who is not a member of the church of Christ <http://www.jewishnotgreek.com/>